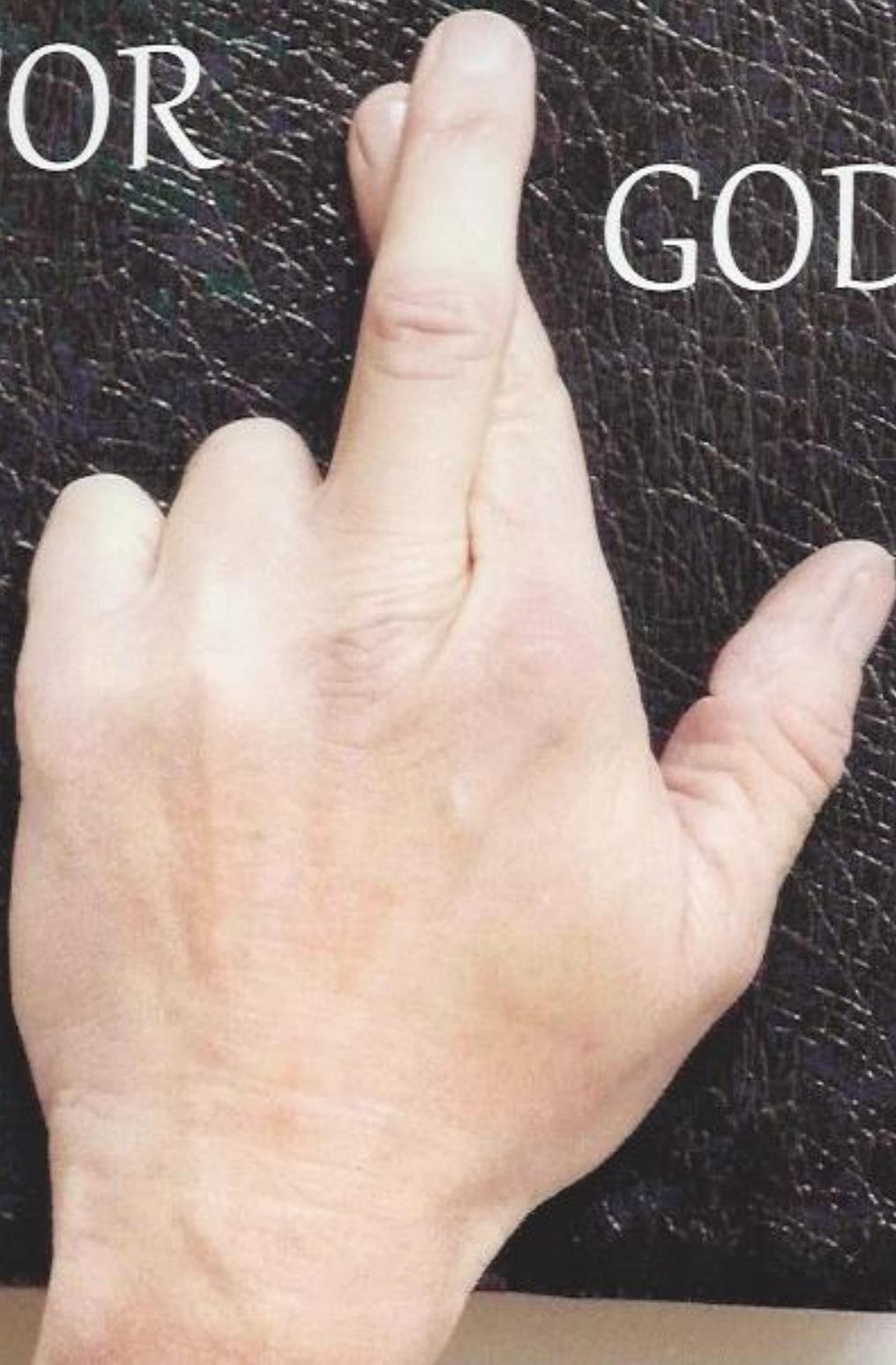


LYING
FOR GOD



LYING FOR GOD: WHAT ADVENTISTS KNEW AND WHEN THEY KNEW IT!

11TH EDITION

BY

KERRY B. WYNNE

**B.A., ENGLISH & HISTORY (1970 & 1972), PACIFIC UNION COLLEGE
M.A., EDUCATIONAL ADMINISTRATION, ANDREWS UNIVERSITY (1978)**

WILLIAM H. HOHMANN

B.A., THEOLOGY, AMBASSADOR COLLEGE (1976)

ROBERT K. SANDERS

FOUNDER OF TRUTH OR FABLES.COM

LARRY DEAN

**RETIRED DEFENSE ATTORNEY
INDEPENDENT RESEARCHER & CULT ANALYST**

ELCE "THUNDER" LAURISTON

FORMER SDA DANIEL AND REVELATION SPEAKER

D. M. CANRIGHT (POSTHUMOUSLY)

**CHIEF OPPOSER OF SABBATARIANISM
DURING ELLEN WHITE'S LIFETIME**

UNIQUE PORTIONS COPYRIGHT BY

KERRY B. WYNNE

2016

General Chapter Outline

Section 1

- Introduction to the 11th Edition - 5
- Chapter 1: Adventist Sunday Law Paranoia - 7
- Chapter. 2: Is the Weekly Sabbath Established in the Creation Narrative - 18
- Chapter. 3: Refutation of Cotto – The Sabbath in Genesis - 66
- Chapter. 4: Barriers to Sabbatarian Theology - 102
- Chapter. 5: The Exodus Journey - 120
- Chapter. 6: Sabbath Not an Issue at the Worldwide Church Councils - 125
- Chapter. 7: Ignoring Eastern Christianity for 175 Years - 132
- Chapter. 8: Book of Jubilees Annihilates Pet Adventist Sabbath Myths - 167
- Chapter. 9: The Realities of Church History - 178
- Chapter. 10: More Key Barriers to Sabbatarian Theology - 200
- Chapter. 11: Barriers to the Sabbatarian-Friendly Interpretation of the Prophecies of Daniel - 219
- Chapter. 12: Biblical Barrier – The Lords Day in Revelation - 240
- Chapter. 13: Tertullian – Sabbatarian or Anti-Sabbatarian - 242
- Chapter 14: The Lunar Sabbath Wreaks Havoc with Adventism - 247
- Chapter 15: An in Depth Examination of Colossians 2.14-17 - 285
- Chapter 16: Are There Two Classifications of Annual Sabbaths in Colossians 2.14-17-new - 291
- Chapter 17: Logic-Common Sense- The Law-And the Covenants - 315
- Chapter 18: Sabbath not a Law for Christians - 325
- Chapter 19: Why the Sabbath Cannot be a Moral Law - 336
- Chapter 20: What Gods Law Is - 342
- Chapter 21: Noahide Law and Israels Dual Court System Deflate Sabbatarianism - 346
- Chapter 22: What Did Jesus Say - 361
- Chapter 23: History's Greatest Religious Cover-Up - 367
- Chapter 24: Hellenized Jews – The Septuagint, and the Passover –
Annihilating Bacchiocchis Jewish Persecution Theory - 374
- Chapter 25: Examining the Tangled Roots of the Hebrew Roots Movement (new) – Klayman - 386
- Chapter 26: Sabbath Keeping in the Early Church (new) – Klayman - 415
- Chapter 27: Israel's Restoration: The Key to End-Time Events (new) – Klayman - 425
- Chapter 28: The Anti-Christ: Islam or the Papacy? - 431
- Chapter 29: Is Israel the Church? (new) – Klayman - 451

Section 2

EGW and Her Enables with Introduction - 459

Chapter 1 The Prophetess from Hell - 462

Chapter 2 Was William Miller a White Collar Criminal - 498

Chapter 3 EGW Falsifies the History of the Reformers - 507

Chapter 4 The Two Faces of Frank M. Wilcox - 513

Chapter 5 The "Genocide Exception" to the Sabbath - 526

Chapter 6 Real History of the Sabbath and Adventism- (Revised 11th Edition) - 535

Chapter 7 EGW Makes Billions for the Church with her Un-biblical Tithing Doctrine - 597

Chapter 8 The Remnant – A Lexical and Exegetical Analysis. (New, 11th Edition) - 602

Chapter 9 Unparalleled Hypocrisy and Its Fruits - 612

INTRODUCTION TO THE 11TH EDITION OF LYING FOR GOD

In 1995 The Worldwide Church of God stunned the Christian world by renouncing Sabbatarianism and walking straight toward the Gospel. Nothing like this had ever happened in the history of the Christian faith. This unparalleled event took place because Church leadership had received a copy of *From Sabbath to Lord's Day*, published in 1982 by a team of Evangelical biblical scholars headed by D. A. Carson. Church leadership also studied the anti-Sabbatarian book, *Sabbath in Crisis* (which was later renamed *Sabbath in Christ*), by former Adventist, Dale Ratzlaff.

This event could not have been more terrifying to Seventh-day Adventist leadership. Why? Because these two denominations had evolved out of a single group of Sabbath-keeping Advent believers who survived the Great Disappointment of 1844 together. They were sister churches with the same Sabbatarian heritage.

From Sabbath to Lord's Day represented the most definitive polemic against Sabbatarian theology ever written. Each chapter addressed a specific error promoted by the late Seventh-day Adventist Sabbath scholar, Dr. Samuele Bacchiocchi, as presented in his 1977 book, *From Sabbath to Sunday*. The Carson team demonstrated with both accumulated knowledge of Hebrew linguistics and new research by their own experts in Hebrew linguistics that the Hebrew texts of Genesis 2, Exodus 16, and Exodus 20 prove beyond any shadow of a doubt that Moses specifically excluded the possibility of a Sabbath ordinance at Creation in writing the *Pentateuch*. No one to date has been able to put together a credible working belief model that supports Sabbatarianism without a Creation origin for the Sabbath ordinance.

Additionally, the Carson team examined every available conspiracy-apostasy theory that sought to explain the phenomenon of "Sabbath abandonment" by the early church and refuted each one to the point of over-kill.

It would seem that no more books against Sabbatarian theology needed to be written after 1982. But Adventist leadership pretended that *From Sabbath to Lord's Day* had never been written and refused to follow in the footsteps of its sister denomination.

The *Lying for God* research project began over ten years ago. This book is now directly written by a core team of five or six researchers. As of 2015 certain elements of the team's research are guided and reviewed by an elite core of top European and Israeli scholars who occupy top positions in academia. Additionally, *Lying for God* is INDIRECTLY "written" by a "team" of Seventh-day Adventist apologists who challenge our research methods and findings, as well as indirectly by a number of Former Adventist researchers who review, critique, and supplement our project.

Why the name? One of the main themes of the book is to demonstrate **what** Adventist leaders knew and **when they knew it** about the impossibilities of its Sabbath, Ellen White, and Investigative Judgment doctrines. The entire history of Adventism represents a level of willing deception and cover-up such as there has never been exhibited by any quasi-Christian denomination. Nothing else even comes close. Top Adventist leaders have almost always known that Ellen White was a fraud. Since 1919 Adventist leaders have acknowledged in secret that she is a fraud. By 1915 these leaders knew that its Sabbath doctrine was biblically and historically impossible, and by 1982 they knew that in the original Hebrew text it is clear to the point of over-kill that there was no Sabbath until the Exodus.

Lying for God begins where the Carson research project ended. Carson and his associates destroyed the very roots of Sabbatarian theology. Our research team has blasted away the soil that fed those roots with definitive arguments that defy refutation and which Adventists have never encountered before.

Like Carson's 1982 book, each chapter has been written by a different author and targets a specific subject area of the Sabbatarian belief model. Also, like Carson's book, there is some overlap of topic coverage and even some difference of opinion. All of the more controversial chapters have been peer reviewed by the entire team of co-authors, and some of the chapters have been written with the guidance of a team of expert scholars from Europe and Israel who have taken a special interest in our work. These scholars became interested in our project when they had an opportunity to examine the blatantly dishonest historical information presented in Ellen G. White's book, *The Great Controversy*, and Samuele Bacchiocchi's book, *From Sabbath to Sunday*.

In regard to our co-authors peer review, If the team cannot agree that a new chapter is almost certainly likely to be the best possible truth available, the chapter is not published. In fact one chapter prepared for this 11th Edition was not published

because it failed this standard.

The purpose of the book is to deal with issues that relate to Sabbatarian theology in general and to the Seventh-day Adventist version of it in particular. Since Ellen G. White, the church prophetess of Adventism, claimed that God showed her in a vision that Christians should keep the Jewish Sabbath, her false prophetic claims are fair game. And since Adventists are finding that there is no specific biblical or historical support for the idea that Christians must keep the Jewish Sabbath, increasing numbers of them are claiming that the “Church” is “Israel,” and that because of this “replacement,” the fact that the Sabbath was given only to Israel is not a problem for Sabbatarians. Therefore, we have new chapters, authored by our new Jewish Studies director, Martin H. Klayman, which deal with Replacement Theology and its required cognate concept, the Hebrew Roots Movement.

Things are not going well for the Seventh-day Adventist Church in areas with readily accessible Internet service. The evidence that the anti-Christ of the End Times is Islam—not the pope of Rome—is almost overwhelming. With its focus on the pope and the Catholic Church, Adventism has remained in ignorance of the fact that Bible prophecy is focused on the role that Israel will play in End Times events. Adventism taught that Jerusalem would never be rebuilt. To the consternation of the followers of Ellen White, the Jews return to their homeland in 1948. As of 2016 the Jewish Sanhedrin has met with a delegation of Erdodan’s Islamic clerics to discuss the rebuilding the “Prophet” Solomon’s Temple as a memorial to world peace. Their common ground is the belief that “God has no Son.” At the same time Erdogan and his Islamic clerics refer the deadly wound Islam suffered in 1923 with the signing of the Treaty of Lausanne, in essence identifying itself as the entity Christians equate with the anti-Christ. Our new 11th Edition covers this topic in depth. If the anti-Christ is Islam, the prophetic foundation of Adventism implodes, since Ellen White taught that the Catholic Church “changed” the Sabbath and that in End Times, Protestants will join Catholics in hunting down and killing those who will not renounce the “Sabbath” and worship with the “beast” on Sunday.

New chapters by Martin Klayman and our prophetic analyst, Larry Dean, explain the prophecies that control the events that are unraveling in Israel today.

The Year 2016 had not been a good year for Adventism. Bible prophecy about Israel is playing out in a spectacular way. The anti-Christ has been identified, and he is not the pope. Even the Muslims are talking about rebuilding the “Prophet” Solomon’s Temple, and the armies of the world are gathering near the Golan Heights which is close to the Valley of Armageddon. And if the anti-Christ of End Times is not the pope, Ellen White, whose End Times scenarios revolve around the pope’s role in enforcing a Sunday law on the world, is shown, once more and in another way to be a false prophet.

Adventists believe that before the end of time, the pope will be chasing them up into the mountains and killing them because they keep the Sabbath. A smart Adventist, then, would have a secret hide-away in the mountains to which he or she could escape. We believe that Adventists on the run are far more likely to die as a result of a nuclear explosion that results from the conflict between the anti-Christ as Israel at the Battle of Armageddon. And right now, the armies of the world are perched across of the Valley of Armageddon, which is adjacent to the Golan Heights, and which contains one of the largest petroleum reserves in the world.

Meanwhile, Adventist leaders are asleep at the wheel. The followers of Ellen White, in general, have no clue about what is really going on because their shepherds have directed them to focus their attention on the pope as the center of the End Times events.

Lying for God is not an easy read for anyone. Keep in mind that Adventism had had 150 years to perfect the art of putting together an invincible-looking belief model. Adventists have had these 150+ years to do what they do best. By contrast we are asking our readers to spend enough hours to read 600+ pages. Think of it as a college level course on the problems with Adventism. For many Adventists, who have been cognitively conditioned to think that there is no possibility that its Sabbath doctrine could be wrong, there is no easy way to study his or her way out of the heresies of Adventism. The Seventh-day Adventist belief system is highly complex, so please read the entire book through. We cannot address all the issues at one time-- just one at a time. Wait till you have read the entire book from cover to cover and then see if you cannot agree that we have succeeded, together with the D. A. Carson team of decades ago, in dismantling the Adventist belief model one piece at a time.

CHAPTER ONE

ADVENTIST SUNDAY LAW PARANOIA

**Roman Catholic Sabbath-keeping Churches in Ethiopia!
Pope Establishes Sabbath-keeping Catholic Church in Eritrea in 2015!
Catholic Canon Law Makes Sunday Laws Impossible!
What Samuele Bacchiocchi Really Learned in Rome!**

by Larry Dean, J.D.

CHRISTIANS KILLING CHRISTIANS OVER SUNDAY KEEPING?

ADVENTIST SUNDAY LAW PARANOIA

Larry Dean J.D.

One man esteemeth one day above another: another esteemeth every day alike. Let every man be fully persuaded in his own mind. — Romans 14:5

The Seventh-day Adventist Church has spent billions and billions of dollars on the gamble that Colossians 2:14-17 does not mean what it says. This passage from St. Paul's writings labels the weekly Sabbath a "shadow," or symbol, that pointed forward to Christ and which became obsolete at the Cross. Paul warned Christian believers not to enforce Sabbath-keeping on other Christians. On the official website of the Roman Catholic Church, this text is one of several prominent ones used to explain why it abandoned Sabbath-keeping for Sunday observance. Ironically, some of these billions of dollars that Seventh-day Adventists are gambling with are being used to produce media presentations that warn its followers that a Sunday law is about to be passed, just like Ellen White said it would. One presentation predicts that Christ's Second Coming will occur before the Year 2020. These media releases teach what Ellen White taught, and that is that soon their Protestant friends will be joining civil authorities and the Catholics in the hunting down and killing of the Sabbath-keepers who refuse to worship on Sunday.

Figuratively speaking, stop for just a moment and put this cult-like theology in your pipe and smoke it!

Ellen White's version of Sabbatarianism takes the Sabbatarian heresy to a new level of complexity that leaves ordinary Sabbath-keeping denominations with their feet firmly planted on Planet Earth and sky-rockets Adventism into another universe where you can make something true just by saying it. Ellen White called the 7th day Sabbath the "seal of God." According to her cultic theology, Sabbath-keepers will have the seal of God written on their foreheads whereas Sunday observers will have the Mark of the Beast written across theirs.

As of July 2015 Adventists are in a world-wide panic. Why? Because the pope has just issued an encyclical on the topic of world environmentalism. He made the "mistake" of mentioning that Planet Earth needs a rest from the pollution caused by man just like the Jews needed the rest from Egyptian slavery that God gave Israel in the form of its Sabbath system— a system which also included giving fields a rest from planting every seven years. Then the pope "blundered" into upsetting the Adventists by commenting that Planet Earth needs a restoring power from God, similar to the spiritually restoring power of the Eucharist— and pointing out that Catholics partake of this sacrament every Sunday. He might even have implied that Catholics worshipping on Sundays might help to heal the Planet because they corporately partake of the restoring power of the Lord's Supper on this day.

What we have just explained is a bit oversimplified, but it is a fairly reasonable representation of what he said. To get the pope's exact shades of meaning, please take a few minutes to see how Adventists have taken the pope's statement out of context, completing their unfortunate twisting job between a set of ellipses. Follow this link:

<http://advindicate.com/articles/2015/6/28/the-popes-encyclical-and-the-mark-of-the-beast>

Then please take a few minutes to see what the pope actually said by following this link:

http://w2.vatican.va/content/francesco/en/encyclicals/documents/papa-francesco_20150524_enciclica-laudato-si.html

Scroll down and read paragraphs 236 and 237, both of which EMPHASIZE that Sunday is only important insofar as it is the day of the week when the Eucharist is dispensed. The Adventist commentator above dishonestly eliminated the first sentence of the paragraph #237:

"On Sunday, our participation in the Eucharist has special importance."

And the Adventist commentator also dishonestly eliminated the last sentence of paragraph 237:

"And so the day of rest, centered on the Eucharist, sheds its light on the whole week, and motivates us to greater concern for nature and the poor."

Read the entire paragraph, which also lauds the 7th Day Sabbath.

How could anyone hallucinate that this Church wishes to punish Adventists for worshipping on the 7th Day, when that Day is effusively lauded in its own Papal encyclical?

THE STRANGE CASE OF THE ETHIOPIAN CATHOLIC CHURCH

Has the Whore of Babylon gone “soft” on its goal of exterminating Sabbath-Keepers?

Roman Catholicism Strongly Opposes Endorses Sabbath-Keeping

We already suspected the papacy of going long in the tooth, given the wild popularity of Saturday Catholic masses in North America. The idea of the wily Whore of Babylon seeing the error of its ways, and embracing Sabbatarianism was unthinkable in Ellen’s day and time. Nowadays, “Seventh-Day Catholicism” is routine and popular. But do not jump to the conclusion that this is a recent development. The germane question is not whether “the Pope is Catholic?” It is whether the Pope is a secret closeted Sabbath-keeper.

We have discussed at length the strange phenomena of the Ethiopian Orthodox Church in a later chapter. That church claims it has the Ark of the Covenant and historical roots in a torrid romance between King Solomon and the Queen of Sheba. Since it has never been in communion with the Pope, Ellen assumed that its long-standing tradition of Saturday Worship was a bitter bone of contention between itself and Rome.

What if we were to tell you that Rome has **strongly** encouraged Saturday worship in Ethiopia? You would think we are kidding, wouldn’t you?

We are not kidding.

The Ethiopian Catholics have had a long and sometimes stormy relationship with Rome, but lately they have kissed and made up and are enjoying the finest marital bliss:

“With Islamic attacks up to 1531 threatening Christian Ethiopia, an appeal from the Emperor to the Portuguese brought support to defeat the [Adal Sultanate](#) in the [Ethiopian–Adal War](#). Jesuit missionaries came with the Portuguese to Ethiopia.

“The Emperor [Susenyos](#) was converted primarily by Father [Pedro Páez](#). In 1622, Susenyos made Catholicism the state religion. The next year, [Pope Gregory XV](#) named [Afonso Mendes](#), a Portuguese Jesuit, Patriarch of the Ethiopian Church. A formal union in 1626 was declared when Patriarch Mendes came to the country.”

Yep, it turns out the Pope has always **LOVED** the Sabbatarian Worship tradition of the Ethiopian Catholic Church. It has officially stated that it would be a “tragedy” if that church were to adopt “Latin practices” such as exclusive Sunday worship, and abandon its tradition of 7th day Sabbatarianism. The following quotes are straight from the Catholic Education Resource Center:

“[The Ge'ez Ethiopian Rite is a variation of the Alexandrian Coptic Rite with Syriac and Jewish influence. Judaism was practiced by some Ethiopians before the arrival of Christianity, and pocket communities of Jewish Ethiopians still exist. The Church there is unique in retaining circumcision, dietary laws, and both Saturday and Sunday Sabbath.](#)”

“[Genuine apostolic tradition is preserved in the Eastern Catholic Churches. Insofar as some have drifted toward Latin practices, they've abandoned the unique traditions passed on to them by their founding apostles. **This is a tragedy for all Catholics.** Unity, again, is not uniformity. The Catholic Church is universal, and in its God-ordained diversity, there is great strength.” \(emphasis added\)](#)”

The Pope has strongly-denounced the killing of Sabbatarian Ethiopian Christians by the Islamic State:

“[It makes no difference whether the victims are Catholic, Copt, Orthodox or Protestant,” Pope Francis said in his message. “Their blood is one and the same in their confession of Christ!”](#)”

And just when you think the pope has gone completely bananas with his open and enthusiastic support of 7th Day Sabbatarianism in Ethiopia, he crazily turns around and starts a **brand-new** 7th-day Sabbatarian church in Eritrea in 2015. Recall that the Catholic Church of Ethiopia is Sabbatarian, so expanding it into Eritrea is the same thing as starting a new Sabbath-keeping Roman Catholic Church in Eritrea:

“[According to a January 19 announcement from the Holy See Press Office, Pope Francis has separated the four Eritrean eparchies \(dioceses\) from the Ethiopian Catholic Church and has created a new metropolitan *sui iuris* church for Eritrea. The Pontiff has named Bishop Menghesteab Tesfamariam of Asmara, Eritrea’s capital, as the church’s first metropolitan archbishop. The metropolitan archbishop of Asmara will henceforth be head of the church.”](#)”

There you have it. Straight from the horse's Pope's mouth. Not only does the Roman Catholic Church embrace the Ethiopian Catholic Church, but also regards them as being fully in communion with Rome. And not only does it specifically endorse its Sabbatarianism, but it officially believes it would be a "tragedy for all Catholics" **if its Ethiopian brethren were to abandon 7th Day Sabbatarianism!** Finally, the pope has vehemently-denounced the murder of Sabbatarian Ethiopian Christians. And now, to add insult to injury, he just started a brand-new 7th-day Sabbatarian church in Eritrea. Yet, Ellen White claimed that the pope had a primitive version of the National Sunday Law in effect 400 years ago under which Sabbatarian Christians were supposedly persecuted. Keep reading, because in a later chapter we will unpack her ludicrous claim as nothing more than elaborate fiction.

THE EUCHARIST: THE ANATHEMA OF SUNDAY LAW PARANOIA

Things seldom get crazier than this. Several of the Catholic Church's official websites explain its abandonment of Sabbath-keeping on biblical grounds, including its compliance with St. Paul's pronouncement in Colossians 2:14-17 that the Sabbath is an obsolete ordinance that must not be forced on other Christians. In fact, the Catholic websites stand for the proposition that Sunday worship had commenced before Colossians 2:14-17 was written. Adventists teach, amazingly, that the Catholic Church changed the Sabbath from Saturday to Sunday, and they offer Sabbath-keeping as a kind of sacrament around which all of their lives must revolve. By contrast, the Catholic, Eastern Orthodox, Anglican and most Lutheran churches offer the Lord's Supper, the Eucharist, as the sacrament around which all of their lives revolve. They celebrate the sacrament of the Eucharist every Sunday just like Adventists keep the Jewish Sabbath every Saturday.

Seventh-day Adventists, although not entirely alone in doing so, accuse the Catholic Church of blasphemy in regard to the Eucharist, because it teaches that the bread and the wine literally become the flesh and blood of Jesus Christ during the partaking of the Lord's Supper. This is an interesting accusation because IF there is such a thing as *transubstantiation*, only Jesus Himself— God Almighty— could possibly do the creating that would make the communion bread and wine into His very own flesh and blood.

A deeper-than-usual theological analysis of Colossians 2:14-17 demonstrates that it is probably the Adventists who are the REAL blasphemers. Because it probably takes a bad motive to sin in the full sense of the word, we are not saying that individual Adventists are committing sin by keeping the Sabbath. They have been cognitively conditioned to believe that St. Paul didn't mean what he said. Just like it is possible to tell a white lie without sinning, it is possible to commit a White blasphemy without sinning. Let us consider an example of a benign white lie. Your aunt makes a terrible apple pie and asks you how you like it. It tastes bad. You respond, "You must have used a very special recipe to make this pie. Thanks for going to all this trouble."

Here is an example of a White blasphemy. In Colossians 2:14-17 St. Paul clearly labeled four Jewish ordinances obsolete shadows that represented (pointed forward) to Christ but which vanished with the brightness that burst forth out of the tomb on Resurrection Morning. This concept should not be difficult to understand because animal sacrifices, which also represented Him, ended at the Cross.

A forceful point in this theology is that the inspired writer of the *Book of Hebrews* uses the same word for "shadow" to refer to the obsolescence of animal sacrifices as Paul used to label the Jewish dietary laws and three kinds of Sabbaths as "shadows." This interesting fact is forcefully made at Catholic Answers.Com:

#6 Tim Staples-El Cajon, California-Catholic Answers Blogger

In response to an inquiry by "Brian:"

Actually, Col. 2:16-17 is very clear.

"Therefore let no one pass judgment on you in questions of food or drink or with regard to a festival or a new moon or a Sabbath. These are only a shadow [Greek: skia] of what is to come; but the substance belongs to Christ" (Col. 2:16–17).

St. Paul calls the Sabbath and dietary laws "only a shadow." It is interesting to note that the inspired author of Hebrews uses the same Greek word (skia, or "shadow") for the Old Covenant sacrifices that are no longer binding on Christians either:

"For since the law has but a shadow [skian] of the good things to come instead of the true form of these realities, it can never, by the same sacrifices which are continually offered year after year, make perfect those who draw near" (Heb. 10:1).

All Christians agree that the sacrifices of the Old Covenant were “shadows” of the one and true sacrifice of Christ. But many, like you, Brian, do not make a similar connection and see that the Old Covenant Sabbath is also a shadow of its true fulfillment in the New Covenant.

EVERYTHING that pointed forward to Christ ceased to exist after the Cross. This fact should be a theological no-brainer. These four Jewish ordinances were the Jewish dietary laws, the annual Sabbath feast days, the monthly New Moons, and the weekly Sabbaths of the Decalogue.

To pivot their entire worship around something that used to represent the Reality of Christ's sacrifice but which no longer exists is very much like saying that Christ's death was not good enough to fully atone for our sins. Sadly, Sabbath-keeping implies that the believer needs Christ's sacrifice PLUS something else — Sabbath-keeping— to suffice. It is almost like you walk into a room where the real Elvis Presley is waiting to autograph his record album for you. You walk right past him and walk up to a real-life-sized photo prop of his likeness and start weeping at the sight of it because you believe he died years ago in the plane crash that killed rock stars Buddy Holly, the Big Bopper, and Richie Valens.

The denial of the sufficiency of Christ's death on the Cross is a serious problem with Adventist theology. Ellen White taught that Christ's atonement for us was not complete until 1844 when He supposedly left the Holy Place to go into the Most Holy Place in the Heavenly Sanctuary. Therefore, Adventists believe that everyone's salvation was hanging in limbo prior to 1844.

In a very real sense, Adventists offer the followers of Ellen White a non-existent shadow as the single most important “SACRAMENT” of their lives. The life of an Adventist revolves around the Jewish Sabbath. At the same time they deny the real power of the Eucharist, claiming that the presence of Jesus is not really in the bread and the wine. As a false substitute, Adventists claim that Sabbath-keeping has special restorative powers.

In the original churches, which we define as the Roman Catholic, the Eastern Orthodox, and Anglican in particular, the lives of the believers revolve around the TRUE SACRAMENT — the Eucharist, or the Lord's Supper. In the thinking of these historical Christian churches, Jesus is literally present in a profound way in the elements of the bread and wine. As the famous psychologist, Carl Jung, discovered in his research, Christians from churches whose lives revolve around the Eucharist have fewer psychological disorders, are much happier, and have fewer crises of faith than the believers of other churches. Jung said something to the effect that partaking of the Eucharist seemed to perform some kind of good magic in the lives of Christian believers.

Continuing our brief lesson in theology, the Greek word Paul used for the term, “shadows,” in Colossians 2:14-17 is exactly the same word the inspired author of the *Book of Hebrews* used to label animal sacrifices as obsolete ordinances that ceased at the Cross. Since by the Law of Moses there is no valid Sabbath day without double animal sacrifices, ALL of the shadowy Jewish ordinances ceased to exist at the Cross. One can refrain from work on Saturday, but it is not really “keeping the Sabbath” because no Sabbath exists to “keep.” Worse yet, when it comes down the bottom line of biblical analysis, a Christian keeping the Jewish Sabbath is like a Christian sacrificing an animal to offer propitiation for his or her sins.

No wonder Seventh-day Adventists will NEVER concede that Paul meant what he said in Colossians 2:14-17! No wonder they cling to their bankrupt claim that the Ten Commandments are the “transcript of God's character,” so they can never be changed or altered without opening the flood-gate to sins like murder and adultery!

Adventists have spent millions of dollars paying their bewildered theologians to find a work-around for this devastating passage. Yet, every SDA attempt to find a work-around has gotten its biblical scholars into deeper and deeper trouble, and the only escape from it, as you will see later, requires that SDA theologians to flatly contradict Ellen White and Judaize Christianity by creating the embarrassing cognate that the Jewish sacred feast days must also be validated into the Christian dispensation.

In our discussion of Ellen White's concept of Sunday laws, the Mark of the Beast, and Sunday-keeping believers uniting with civil authorities to kill Sabbath-keepers in the End Times, the contrast between the false sacrament of the Sabbath and the true sacrament of the Eucharist as practiced by the historical Christian churches is one of the keys to understanding why the Catholic Church could not possibly pass a Sunday law that fulfills Ellen White's prophetic requirements.

PUTTING THE SABBATH BACK INTO ITSELF WITH SUNDAY LAW PARANOIA

Since Ellen White prophesied that Sunday laws would come into existence “shortly” and within the life-times of the Adventist believers of her day, even if a Sunday law were passed today it would not represent a fulfillment of a prophecy of one of her prophecies. She died in 1915, but she began prophesying the virtually immediate coming of the Sunday laws many decades before her death.

The fact that there could never be a real Ellen White-type Sunday law means trouble for Adventists, to say nothing of the fact that her failed predictions prove her to be a false prophet. They need Sunday laws so they can use circular logic to validate its Sabbath doctrine back into itself. As the decades have gone by since Ellen White's death, the theological noose has gotten tighter and tighter around the throat of her Sabbath doctrine. It is now, of course, in a fatal choke-hold. Adventists have never been more in a position to need a Sunday law threat to keep Ellen White's followers believing that there is nothing wrong at all with the Sabbath doctrine. Their reasoning goes like this. If Sunday were not a false substitute for the real “Sabbath,” Satan would have no interest in forcing people to worship on it!

Sunday laws were enacted long before the time of Ellen White, but they never had anything to do with a so-called “change” of the day. The first Sunday law enacted by the Roman Emperor, Constantine, in 321 CE, simply guaranteed that all Christians, and especially the slaves, could worship on the day that Christians had observed for the previous 300 years—Sunday, or the Lord's Day.

Furthermore, our research indicates that it is impossible for anyone to “change” the biblical Sabbath from one day to another because the biblical Sabbath was lunar-based. This fact may seem incredible to our target audience at this point, but hold your judgment till you have seen our evidence made to the point of over-kill that this is true. Then take a look at our documented proof that the General Conference of Seventh-day Adventists has fought desperately to keep the truth about the lunar Sabbath from its flock for at least the last 100 years.

With the biblical Sabbath, the four Sabbaths in every month were synchronized to the first sighting of the new moon. The predecessors of the Adventists, the Millerites, as well as the pioneers of Adventism, knew that the particular Sabbath that Jesus rested in the tomb after His crucifixion did not fall on a Saturday. And they knew exactly why that was the case.

The Sabbath wasn't changed and **COULD NOT HAVE BEEN CHANGED**, since, like a ping-pong ball, it jumped around from one day to the next according to any fixed calendar scheme. **All of this adds up to the fact that a Sunday law passed today is no proof whatsoever that the Sabbath got changed in the past.** All it would mean is that some Christians had become terribly misguided and tried to force other Christians to follow their own ideas about how to worship God. Both Catholics and Protestants have done this kind of thing before, but in other ways.

CANON LAW VERSUS THE IDEA OF AN ELLEN WHITE SUNDAY LAW

Catholic Canon Law forbids the dispensing of the Eucharist to non-Catholics who have not been baptized into the Church. The Catholic Catechism explicitly states that the Eucharist is the center of “worship” on Sundays. This “worship” occurs seven days a week in most Catholic Churches, including the Saturday mass which is now routine in most of them.

We suppose that Catholics who choose to attend mass on Saturdays could be considered Seventh-day Catholics.

A key component of the Adventist National Sunday Law conspiracy theory is that Adventists will be forced — upon penalty of death — to “worship” on Sunday. In other words, The National Sunday Law will require Catholic Churches to dispense the Eucharist to Adventists (otherwise, how could they “worship” on Sunday?), even though Catholic Canon Law explicitly forbids it. Canon Law dictates that a Catholic Priest be defrocked if he knowingly dispenses the Eucharist to a “heretic” or an unconfirmed baptized Catholic person. (Confirmation is the oiling ritual that one receives after Catholic baptism.) The Catholic Church recognizes Adventist baptisms, but requires Adventists to complete the RCIA course and be confirmed before he or she can partake of the Eucharist:

<https://www.archbalt.org/evangelization/worship/rcia/upload/Validity-of-Baptisms-and-Confirmation.pdf>

Additionally, three Popes in a row have explicitly and unequivocally-condemned the Death Penalty as punishment for even the most heinous murders. Recall that Ellen White prophesied that the Death Penalty would be meted out against obstinate

Adventists who refuse to “worship” on Sunday. The US Conference of Catholic Bishops is mulling a proposal to refuse the Eucharist to Catholic Politicians who support the Death Penalty (like they already do for Catholic Politicians who support abortion. The Catholic position on the Death Penalty can be found here:

<http://www.usccb.org/issues-and-action/human-life-and-dignity/death-penalty-capital-punishment/>

And here:

<http://www.usccb.org/issues-and-action/human-life-and-dignity/death-penalty-capital-punishment/catholic-campaign-to-end-the-use-of-the-death-penalty.cfm>

Not only is the present pope, Pope Francis, unequivocally opposed to the Death Penalty, he is opposed to a Life Sentence that precludes any possibility of Parole.

<http://www.catholicnews.com/data/stories/cns/1404377.htm>

Why do Adventists refuse to acknowledge such insurmountable barriers to a National Sunday Law as predicted by Ellen White?

Sunday "Worship" pursuant to the Canon Laws of both Catholicism and Eastern Orthodoxy requires partaking of the Eucharist. No Eucharist = no "worship." No Eucharist = No "Sunday Observance." In neither Roman Catholicism nor Eastern Orthodoxy is Sunday— the day, Sunday, itself— viewed as a sacrament in and of itself. It is only the Eucharist that gives the day any meaning that it has. To partake of the Eucharist means undergoing full conversion with a valid Chrismation, since Adventist baptisms are valid baptisms under the Canon Law of both denominations. Thus, Adventists are precluded from "Sunday Worship" or "Sunday Observance," since they are absolutely precluded from the Eucharist. A National Sunday Law would require a Catholic Priest to perform actions which his Church's Canon Law prohibits!

Next, it is anticipated that Adventists will probably argue that Catholicism would simply force them to be baptized as part of the "Mark of the Beast." The Canon law and pronouncements from the Vatican II is flatly unanimous that forced baptisms are invalid, and invalid baptisms preclude one from the Eucharist:

<https://ronconte.wordpress.com/2011/06/06/can-an-adult-be-validly-baptized-against-his-will/>

"The center of this union lies in the reception of the sacrament of the Eucharist during Mass, which is both a confession and embodiment of unity with the Roman Catholic Church." - See more at:

<http://www.uscatholic.org/church/2011/08/can-catholic-receive-communion-protestant-church#sthash.w0DKBsZW.dpuf>

See also:

<http://canonlawmadeeasy.com/2007/07/05/can-a-non-catholic-receive-holy-communion-in-a-catholic-church/>

Can. 842 §1. A person who has not received baptism cannot be admitted validly to the other sacraments.

§2. The sacraments of baptism, confirmation, and the Most Holy Eucharist are interrelated in such a way that they are required for full Christian initiation.

http://www.vatican.va/archive/ENG1104/_P2T.HTM

On many different levels, Adventists are precluded from participating in the Catholic Eucharist, which is how "Sunday is observed" by all Roman Catholics. Adventists well-know this problem. This is why the first and last sentences of the cited **Advindicate** article were removed and replaced with ellipses. Adventists are explicitly precluded from receiving "The Mark of the Beast" under Catholic Canon Law.

ADVENTIST COUNTER ARGUMENT: PAPAL LAWLESSNESS

Catholics are real sticklers about following their own canon laws. Catholics have done some bad things in the past, but in doing so they were actually, for the most part, following canon law. In fact as a result of the Catholic Church's embarrassment about some of its evil deeds, its canon laws have been modified, especially over the last 500 years, to make sure that such abuses will not happen again. For example, new light on the Catholic Church's conduct during the Spanish Inquisition demonstrates that it followed its own canon law to the letter. This fact is now demonstrable since the

Internet has opened up the court records for each person who went on trial during this time in Spanish history.

Adventist apologists will claim that since the pope is the “lawless man of sin,” he will do anything he jolly-well pleases. However, this failed escape route ignores over a thousand years of Catholic church history. Popes who violated canon law were deposed or even assassinated. Remember that canon law has nearly equal status with the Scriptures. Canon law states that only the pope has the authority to authorize the dispensing of the Eucharist. This is why, for example, Rome persecuted the Waldenses. The Waldenses rejected the pope’s authority, and the Eucharist was being dispensed by non-Catholic priests or pastors. There is no evidence that the Waldenses ever kept the Jewish Sabbath according to the results of research conducted over the last 150 years by a variety of scholars.

ADVENTISM'S SAMUELE BACCHIOCCHI “PLAN” BACKFIRES!

In the early 1970's it appears that the General Conference of Seventh-day Adventists worked with Andrews University to send a promising young scholar, Samuele Bacchiocchi, to a Catholic University in Rome to see if he could find proof in the depths of the Vatican's library that the Roman Catholic Church changed the Sabbath like Ellen White said they did. The problem was that her claim that the Catholic Church changed the Sabbath from Saturday to Sunday strongly disagreed with all the known facts of history as determined by both ecclesiastical and secular historians over the last 1,500 years.

When Samuele Bacchiocchi graduated from the Gregorian Pontifical University at the Vatican in 1974 the General Conference installed him as a theologian and professor at Andrews University. He presented himself, and the Church presented him, as the first non-Catholic scholar to graduate from a Catholic University in its history. He and the University implied that the Catholic Church had endorsed what he taught in his doctorate dissertation, which he quickly adapted into a book he entitled, *From Sabbath to Sunday*, as being fully in line with Catholic thought. When his book was published in 1977, he and Andrews University implied that, thanks to his access to special ancient documents that were only accessible to a very select group of high-level scholars, Bacchiocchi had found the “smoking gun” that proved that Christians abandoned the Sabbath as the result of a complicated conspiracy-apostasy.

It wasn't very long until Adventists realized that the Church had made a terrible mistake in appointing him to the University. His book openly took issue with Ellen White's “inspired” authority. She said the Catholic Church changed the Sabbath. Bacchiocchi said the Catholic Church could not have been the entity that changed the Sabbath, and he offered several other theories of how the Sabbath might have gotten changed as the result of a sinister, non-biblical conspiracy. She said the Sabbath in the third position in Colossians 2:14-17 was merely another reference to a “ceremonial” Sabbath. Bacchiocchi said that the Sabbath in this third position was a reference to the weekly Sabbath of the Decalogue, and that it could not possibly refer to anything else. This list goes on.

Soon informed Adventists everywhere were expressing astonishment that the Church had not fired Bacchiocchi! Never in the history of Adventism had any scholar challenged Ellen White's prophetic claims and escaped being fired. Never! No wonder Adventists were astonished that he kept teaching at Andrews year after year and nothing happened! Unless you have been a nearly life-long Seventh-day Adventist you may have difficulty comprehending just how incredible this situation was!

We sent a private investigator to the Gregorian Pontifical University. Among other things, we found out that Bacchiocchi's claim that he was the first non-Catholic scholar to graduate from the University is an unequivocal falsehood. Non-Catholic scholars of any religious or non-religious persuasion have always been admitted. The “Greg” had a Jewish professor who died in 1959, after an illustrious career of teaching and research. Prior to 1965, Gregorian Pontifical University accepted anyone who had grades good enough to be admitted. After 1965 the University actively sought after and recruited non-Catholic students, including, Muslims. In fact, a look at a list of students who graduated in the years prior to and including the year he graduated; 1974, suggests that it is highly likely that Samuele Bacchiocchi sat in classes beside students who were Muslim women. Actually, the head of the 300 Million Eastern Orthodox Church (Patriarch Bartholomew) graduated from “The Greg” (as it is known in Rome) long before Bacchiocchi did.

In addition, in the wake of the Vatican II, Rome “threw open its windows to the world” with its *Nostra Aetate* Declaration. *Nostra Aetate* was implemented via a foundation that dispenses lucrative scholarships to thousands of Muslims, Protestants and Jews to study at one of the seven Pontifical universities in Rome. Bacchiocchi's attendance at Pontifical Gregorian was simply the result of changes made by Vatican II in 1965. Bacchiocchi's attendance at “The Greg” was pursuant to a well-known Vatican policy change.

BACCHIOCCHI STUDIED CATHOLIC CANON LAW

Additionally, Bacchiocchi's doctoral degree mandated substantial coursework in Canon Law, so he was well-aware of the impossibility of Roman Catholicism participating in either the inception or the implementation of a National Sunday Law. The Pontifical Gregorian is not only a top-notch Pontifical University, but it is the Vatican's top university for the study of Canon Law. It is the only one of seven Pontifical Universities in Rome where one can become a Canonical and practice Canon law before the Vatican's Ecclesiastical Courts. Bacchiocchi's degree in Church history could not have been earned without this substantial coursework in Canon Law. He well knew that Catholic Canon Law made a National Sunday Law impossible. He kept his lip zipped about this explosive issue throughout his entire tenure at Andrews University.

Seventh-day Adventists have their own "canon" laws, and sometimes following their own canon laws also results in the doing of evil. For example, SDA "canon" law stipulates that no Adventist can work for the Church who does not believe that Ellen G. White was a true prophet of God and that the Doctrine of the Investigative Judgment is biblical.

As a result of following its own canon-like laws, it had no choice but to defrock Desmond Ford at Glacier View in 1980. Dr. Ford openly taught that the Doctrine of the Investigative Judgment was not biblical and even that it was anti-Gospel. When the General Conference fired Dr. Ford, it deprived him not only of his job, but of his pension. It didn't matter that the 200 some delegates to his hearing at Glacier View agreed with him on six out of eight of his points that that the Doctrine of the Investigative Judgment had serious problems. Church law says an Adventist pastor cannot continue in the employment of the Church unless he accepts this doctrine. It might have been wrong for the Church to fire him, but it was fully within the provisions of Church "canon" law. And in a very real sense of the word, the Adventist Church had every "right" to defrock him.

ADVENTIST WORK-AROUND FOR THE CANON LAW ARGUMENT

For the moment, let us turn our focus from the Bacchiocchi fraud and look at how Adventist apologists have attempted to get around the canon law barrier. Typically they would cite a typical Protestant reference, such as the following one, that equates St. Paul's reference to the "man of sin" with the pope:

<https://www.christiancourier.com/articles/677-study-of-pauls-man-of-sin-a>

"The Romish movement **has exhibited a disposition of lawlessness throughout its history.** Could any citation more clearly illustrate the spirit of lawlessness than this declaration regarding the papacy? "The pope doeth whatsoever he listeth [wills], even things unlawful, and is more than God" (quoted by Newton, p. 456). Attwater, a Catholic writer, has shown that, according to Roman Catholicism, "Tradition," i.e., the voice of the church, is superior to the Scriptures (pp. 41-42). That is the very essence of lawlessness."

Adventists believe that since the Papacy is truly "lawless," canon law would not stop Rome from implementing a National Sunday Law. Adventists will argue the absurdly-dishonest "history" found in **The Great Controversy** to demonstrate that the Papacy indeed has been "lawless," and therefore their own canon law will be no barrier to the enactment of a national Sunday law. This unfortunate approach ignores the guiding principles of the concept of legal *realism*.

Undoubtedly, the Roman Church has behaved heinously, sinfully and despicably at many junctures in its history. Catholics will readily admit that there have been some truly evil Popes, and Pope Francis has made it clear lately that the Church has a lot to apologize for, and he has been apologizing a lot. But whether the Church has had a long history behaving despicably and sinfully is not the correct question. **The question should be: Has the Papacy behaved "lawlessly?"** In other words, has the Papacy bound itself to follow its own set of Canon laws, and punished violators of those laws?

Undoubtedly the answer to that question is a resounding YES.

Right or wrong, a fundamental principle of Roman Catholicism that has been affirmed over and over again throughout history has been to enforce its own laws.

Some cases in point: Its retaliation against the Protestant Reformation (and the sacking of Constantinople in 1204 to "punish" Orthodox Christianity; and the excommunication order of 1054 against the Orthodox Patriarch. Catholics have acknowledged that these were truly dark and evil times in the Church History, and I would agree. But that is not the relevant

question. **Did the Church behave lawlessly?** And the answer, unfortunately is a resounding NO.

They were punishing Protestants and Orthodox for their perceived violations of canon law! And because the behavior was so obviously despicable and evil, canon law was eventually modified to prohibit further behavior of the sort.

Next we turn to two other infamous and sordid episodes in its history: The Inquisition and the Crusades.

The evidence is so overwhelming that Canon Law was applied strictly and followed to the letter during the Inquisitions, that any counterargument is just absurd and comical. The evidence that Canon Law was followed strictly and to the letter during the Inquisitions is simply voluminous and unanimous. Many of the court documents from the Inquisition are now readily available on-line and demonstrate a fundamentally fair court system, especially for its time. You can hate the result and find that it was appalling and evil (and I do, even though I also believe that ***The Great Controversy's*** depiction of it is a colossal fraud, complete with gross exaggeration and out-right lies.) But you cannot argue that the Inquisitions were an example of lawlessness, because they most assuredly weren't. They were sticklers for a careful and exacting application of canon law.

The Crusades have undergone much revisionist historical analysis lately, using modern theories of Just War, and modern notions of appropriate conduct of war. The Crusades are widely-viewed by historians as credible cases of clear-cut self-defense by a Europe that perceived itself under siege by Islamic armies. The actions taken by the Crusaders comport with Just War theories AND appropriate battlefield conduct that was in play at the time. The Crusades again were horrifying and despicable to modern sensibilities, but they adhered to the larval concepts of International law that were predominant at the time. War has never been a day on the beach. Compared to the behavior of many other medieval armies (particularly the sack of Constantinople by the Turks in 1453), the Crusades were mild.

Newton, in the above quote, was simply wrong about Rome behaving lawlessly, and in violation of its own Canon Law. The quotes are fundamentally dishonest about Rome's position of "tradition" versus the "Bible." Rome does NOT think that "tradition" is superior to the Bible, let alone in opposition to the Scriptures. That assertion is simply dishonest and ridiculous: ***Rome teaches that the Bible IS part of tradition!*** Like it or not, the Catholic position on tradition simply cannot be reduced to a simplistic one-line argument. If anything, Catholicism's emphasis on "tradition" powerfully demonstrates their adherence to "law." Tradition both constrains and guides its behavior. Furthermore, when Catholics discuss "tradition," Canon Law and its development is emphatically part of that tradition. For a good example of Catholic arguments about Scripture versus tradition, read this: <http://www.catholic.com/tracts/scripture-and-tradition>

So far as we know this kind of critical thinking has never been applied to the Adventist concept of Sunday laws. To our Adventist readers, especially, we point out that Seventh-day Adventists have been taught a history of Sabbath abandonment which is nothing more than a highly imaginative fairy tale. Again, the Catholic and Eastern Orthodox position on the "change" of the Sabbath is that the Church did so on biblical grounds and that this "change" was immediate. The official position of Eastern Orthodoxy is that Sunday Worship commenced on Resurrection Morning, and the first Easter ("Pascha" for Eastern Christians) took place exactly one year later. This is reflected in Acts 12:4, which references "Easter" in the King James Version and the Catholic Bible; and "Pascha" in the Orthodox study Bible.

The position of ecclesiastical and secular historians is also that Sabbath abandonment was immediate. The hostile witness of Adventist historians, J. N. Andrews, Samuele Bacchiocchi, and others, testifies to the fact that Seventh-day Adventists have always known that Sabbath abandonment was immediate; that the early Christians claimed biblical principles; and that there was never any controversy over the Jewish Sabbath during the entire history of the early church. Furthermore, Adventists have always known that when the first Sunday law was passed by the Roman emperor, Constantine in 321 CE, it was not enacted to CHANGE Christianity's day of worship, but to protect the ability of Christians to worship on the day upon which they had always worshiped— the Lord's Day, or Sunday.

WHAT BACCHIOCCHI LEARNED AT THE GREGORIAN PONTIFICAL UNIVERSITY

Previously we explained that Bacchiocchi discovered, during his doctoral studies, that the Roman Catholic Church could not possibly have changed the Sabbath. The first pope was seated around 600 CE and he learned that Sunday observance was wide-spread by 100 AD and virtually universal by 140 CE. His book, *From Saturday to Sunday*, offered several other theories to suggest that even if the Catholic Church did not do it, the Sabbath did get changed and that it got changed as the result of a sinister conspiracy/apostasy. He specifically stated that in this he disagreed with Ellen White.

Previously we explained that Bacchiocchi was required to take a substantial amount of course work in Catholic canon law. Therefore, he would have to have known that the Catholic Church would never — and could never— enact a Sunday law that would represent a direct fulfillment of a prophecy of Ellen G. White.

Next, Bacchiocchi had to have known that the official position of the Catholic Church has long been that it abandoned the keeping of the Jewish Sabbath on biblical grounds.

What would be the first place a student would consult if he were to write a dissertation on the Sabbath as it relates to Catholicism? The *Catholic Encyclopedia*, of course! The original *Catholic Encyclopedia* was published in 1912, three years before Ellen White died in 1915. Here is what it says about the biblical basis for the Catholic Church's Sabbath abandonment:

The Sabbath in the New Testament.—Christ, while observing the Sabbath, set Himself in word and act against this absurd rigorism which made man a slave of the day. He reproved the scribes and Pharisees for putting an intolerable burden on men's shoulders (Matt., xxiii, 4), and proclaimed the principle that "the sabbath was made for man, and not man for the sabbath" (Mark, ii, 27). He cured on the Sabbath, and defended His disciples for plucking ears of corn on that day. In His arguments with the Pharisees on this account He showed that the Sabbath is not broken in cases of necessity or by acts of charity (Matt., xii, 3 sqq.; Mark, ii, 25 sqq.; Luke, vi, 3 sqq.; xiv, 5). St. Paul enumerates the Sabbath among the Jewish observances which are not obligatory on Christians (Col., ii, 16; Gal., iv, 9-10; Rom., xiv, 5). The gentile converts held their religious meetings on Sunday (Acts, xx, 7; I Cor., xvi, 2), and with the disappearance of the Jewish Christian churches this day was exclusively observed as the Lord's Day.

So! Dr. Bacchiocchi goes to Rome and finds out that there is no support for anything Adventism had taught about Catholics and the so-called “change” of the day. His doctoral dissertation has to be reviewed by a committee comprised of some of the best scholars in the world. How is he going to get something through the University's dissertation committee which appears, at the same time, to support the Seventh-day Adventist historical fairy tale? The result was his 1977 book, *From Sabbath to Sunday*. It Judaized Christianity to the point of absurdity by claiming that although the Sabbath of Colossians 2:14-17 was a reference to the weekly Sabbath of the Decalogue, Paul validated its observance into the Christian dispensation by merely condemning the extra rules and regulations that the Judaizers had supposedly heaped on top of these ordinances rather than the ordinances themselves.

A THEORY: WHY DR. BACCHIOCCHI DID NOT GET FIRED

The SDA Church sent Bacchiocchi to Rome to find support for its theory that the Catholic Church “changed” the Sabbath. He found out just the opposite— that the Catholic Church cited biblical reasons for its immediate abandonment of the practice. He also knew that the SDA Church had collaborated with him in perpetrating the deception that he was the first non-Catholic scholar to graduate from the Gregorian Pontifical University.

As Bacchiocchi's controversial career began to unfold, and he directly and indirectly challenged the prophetic claims of Ellen G. White, Church leaders probably came to him and said something like, “Dr. Bacchiocchi, you have to stop providing our flock with facts that prove that Ellen White is a false prophet. If you don't stop it, you know what has happened to every other scholar in the Church who has ever challenged Ellen White's authority as a prophet of God.” To which Bacchiocchi might have countered with something like this: “If you fire me, I will not have any reason not to “talk.” Am I am certainly capable of spilling the beans that NOTHING that Ellen White said about the Catholic Church and the Sabbath is in any way or shape the TRUTH. Furthermore, I might even tell everyone about the whopper we cooked up about me being the first non-Catholic to graduate from the University.”

If something like this little discussion ever did take place — and we do not know that it ever did for sure — the Church's representative probably said something like, “OK. You win.”

CHAPTER TWO

**IS THE WEEKLY SABBATH ESTABLISHED
IN THE GENESIS CREATION NARRATIVE?**

IS THE WEEKLY SABBATH ESTABLISHED IN THE GENESIS CREATION NARRATIVE?

Thou camest down also upon mount Sinai, and spakest with them from heaven, and gavest them right judgments, and true laws, good statutes and commandments: And madest known unto them thy holy sabbath, and commandedst them precepts, statutes, and laws, by the hand of Moses thy servant: — Nehemiah 9:13-14

Jewish linguists have always understood that there is no Sabbath ordinance expressed or implied in the Genesis Creation story. This fact is demonstrated the point of over-kill by the text of the *Mishnah*. Recently this key Hebrew document was translated into English by the world-renowned Israeli Hebrew linguist, Dr. Reuven Brauner. Now its content is readily available to English researchers and the news is fatal to Sabbatarian theories of belief. It proves, for example, that since before the time of the Judges, the Hebrews did not see a Sabbath ordinance in Genesis, did believe that the Sabbath was given to Israel alone, and that since the foundation of the Jewish nation, the penalty for Gentiles within its borders who presumed to adopt the Sabbath without converting fully to Judaism were to be stoned to death. Furthermore, the facts surrounding the preservation of this oral tradition (finally written down around 200 CE) proves that these three beliefs had been unchanged for thousands of years.

To top it all off, with the help of a number of European and Israeli scholars, we have put together a set of facts that demonstrate beyond any reasonable doubt that Jesus made a statement to His disciples that both validated the truth of the *Mishnah's* teachings and the view of the Pharisees that the *Mishnah* was divinely inspired nearly to the same degree of the Torah itself!

Here is how Jesus did this. The Pharisees were the only Jewish sect that believed God inspired the decisions of the judges of Israel's Dual Court System on a day-to-day basis. At the same time the Pharisees rejected the idea that the other oral traditions, such as the *Talmud*, were "inspired." Jesus told His disciples to obey the teachings of the Pharisees, although at the same time he warned them not to exemplify their actual behavior¹. The *Mishnah* was a big deal to the Pharisees. They believed that it was nearly impossible to implement the laws of the *Torah* without utilizing its inspired companion, the *Mishnah*. They believed what is written in the *Pentateuch* and that God directed the establishment of Israel's court system and promised that He would guide the legal decisions of the judges on a daily basis. The *Mishnah* is a record of Jewish legal precedence that goes back beyond the time of Samuel to the time of Joshua and the Exodus. For example, the laws that God inspired the judges of Israel to write were so strict about warfare against Heathen nations— even very wicked nations (of which there is no record after the time of the conquest) where Israel went into such a nation and killed every man, woman, child, and animal, and so on. The judges in Israel's court system would never consider implementing the provisions of the *Torah* without referring to the legal precedence established by its sacred companion, the *Mishnah*.

There is abundant evidence that God never intended the Torah to stand alone and that He guided the decision-making of Israel's judges down through the thousands of years of the existence of the Jewish nation. For example, the Torah had a provision that Israel could destroy every man, woman, child, and animal of morally rotten societies that might threaten Israel. However, the rules of the *Mishnah* for engaging a Heathen nation were so strict and benevolent that after the period of the Conquest chapters in Israel's history, there is no record that Israel ever did such a thing.

We cannot emphasize more strongly that once all the facts are known, Jesus clearly validated the truths of the teachings of the *Mishnah*. Unfortunately for Sabbatarians, its teachings are fatal to the Sabbatarian doctrine that the Sabbath is a universal moral requirement. Israel, from the very beginning, established a dual court system.

When a Gentile citizen of Israel came before a judge, that judge used only the seven laws of Noah (explained elsewhere in this book), or the Noahide laws, to determine innocence or guilt. When a Hebrew citizen of Israel came before a judge, that judge used the full 613 rules and regulations of the *Torah*.

There was no Sabbath commandment in the Noahide laws. The legal precedence in the *Mishnah* specified that a Gentile who embraced the Sabbath without fully converting to Judaism (which would have required submitting to the Ordinance of Circumcision) to be stoned to death. Why? Because the Jewish nation took Moses at his word when explaining that God had established the Sabbath to be a barrier that kept Jews and Gentiles as socially isolated as possible. The Sabbath was a symbol of the unique relationship between God and the Nation of Israel.

1 [Matthew 23:13-32](#)

This remarkable coming together of information simply must represent the single most powerful blow against the idea that Christians must observe the ISRAELITE/JEWISH Sabbath. It is time that the leaders of Sabbatarian groups like the Seventh-day Adventists, the remnants of Armstrongism, as well as the less cultic Sabbatarian groups like the Seventh-day Baptists to raise the white flag of surrender and face the fact that, like Paul said, no day is any more sacred than any other day. (See Romans 14.5.) By this point in time, we no longer are limited to providing evidence against Sabbatarianism. We have as close a thing to absolute proof against it as is humanly possible to devise. The idea that Christians must keep the Jewish Sabbath no longer has even an ounce of respect.

We have only been able to bring you this astonishing and definitive turn of the Sabbath-Sunday Question with the help of a handful of European and Israeli scholars who have taken a keen interest in the research that we have been doing to update the *Lying for God* project. It all seemed to begin with our co-author, Larry Dean, who ended up submitting two books to some European and Israeli scholars: Ellen White's, *Great Controversy*, and Dr. Samuele Bacchiocchi's *From Sabbath to Sunday*. These highly respected academics were incensed by the blatant twisting of the plainest facts about the history of the early church, which they knew a great deal about. One Ph.D., an expert in church history and who fluently speaks and writes something like eight different languages, took an intense interest in helping us when she determined that the research represented by Dr. Bacchiocchi's book, which he claimed was based on his doctoral dissertation from the Pontifical Gregorian University at the Vatican, was so poor that it never would have passed the scrutiny of his dissertation committee. Your four co-authors would probably not have had the resources to put these things all together without the help of these noted historians, linguists, and Israeli experts in Jewish language and culture.

In particular, the astonishing historical fraud perpetrated by the late Seventh-day Adventist prophetess, Ellen G. White, is both daring and blatant. She fraudulently ignored the mountain of evidence that has always been available to any interested person that the early church abandoned Sabbath-keeping on purely biblical grounds. From the days of the early church the fact of no Sabbath in Genesis was one of the key arguments used by the early fathers to explain why the first Christians did not observe the Jewish Sabbath. The last of the early fathers, the Venerable Bede, explained how the Hebrew linguistics of Genesis forbid the placement of the origin of the Sabbath ordinance at the time of Creation. Down through the REAL history of the Christian Faith, Christians rejected the keeping of the Jewish Sabbath on biblical grounds. The first Protestant church, the Lutherans, spelled out its biblical basis for its rejection of Sabbath-keeping in the *Augsburg Confession*. The great reformers looked at Sabbath-keeping, rejected it on a multi-faceted biblical basis, and wrote about the FACT of no Sabbath in Genesis. In the post King James Era of Charles I of England, intense pressure from two very different Sabbatarian factions forced the Sabbath Question on the king and the entire Nation of England. King Charles I turned to his court chaplain, Peter Heylyn, and ordered him to conduct an exhaustive study of every written, relevant thing that touched on the issue of Sabbath-keeping for Christians. Heylyn's colossal work, *The History of the Sabbath*, objectively reported the evidence both for and against the Sabbath, and the evidence against it was overwhelmingly clear. There was virtually no evidence that the first Christians abandoned Sabbath-keeping for anything other than a large number of biblical facts and principles, and no evidence that this Sabbath abandonment represented a turning away from biblical truths. The Crown rejected Sabbath-keeping for the Church of England, and the idea that it was required was rejected solely on definitive biblical and historical grounds. Ellen White condemns herself as a deceiver by failing to report to her followers these things when she wrote her falsified history of the Sabbath in *The Great Controversy*. There is, now, no way for anyone to deny this fact since this information is readily available. Thanks to entities like Google Books, these works have been digitized and posted on the Internet for everyone who has an interest to study.

Even a contemporary of Ellen White, Robert M. Cox who compiled the largest inventory of Sabbath-related research assembled to that date and is vastly larger than Heylyn's work, reported virtually everything available from both camps from the beginning of the Christian Faith through the mid-1800's. His final two page assessment of his two-volume encyclopedic work summarized by stating his inventory of Sabbatarian ideas had not turned up any real evidence that the early church abandoned Sabbath-keeping for anything other than biblical reasons and that there was no evidence that the Sabbath had ever been changed. We must censure Ellen White for her historical lying. Prophets of God do not do such things.

For a long time opponents of Ellen White, such as D. M. Canright, have known that her historical theories were nothing but fairy tales and the intense research on this subject that has been conducted since 1977 proves that her book, *The Great Controversy*, represents intellectual fraud on multiple levels. In fact, the only "competition" for the most warped revisionist religious history ever written is Joseph Smith's *Book of Mormon*. Other researchers have identified significant portions of his

writings that Ellen White copied but said came directly to her from the throne of God.

In the past the followers of Ellen White had little access to legitimate historical sources. Although the Age of the Internet has changed all this, her claim to be a Messenger of God— His Hand-maiden— combined with stories of the unprecedented manifestations of supernatural power by those that attended her public visions, has caused most Adventists to down-play any evidence against the legitimacy of her prophetic claims. The record of the witnesses who testified regarding the supernatural element of her ministry— both her supporters and opponents— continues to give Seventh-day Adventists a dangerous sense of well-being in the midst of a storm of evidence that she was a fraud. Also remember that Satan himself masquerades as an angel of light².

It was this limited access of the common person to accurate historical information during Ellen White's day and age that enabled her pull off such a deception. She twisted the facts to make it look like Christians abandoned Sabbath-keeping as a result of a sinister apostasy-conspiracy, when nothing could be further from the truth. Adventists have been reading her signature book, *The Great Controversy*, for the last 150 years, just like the Mormons have been reading Joseph Smith's *Book of Mormon* ever since he supposedly discovered the Golden Plates under a tree. Both these books seek to create false histories that supposedly show that Christianity apostatized very early. To the Mormons, Mormonism was God's replacement for Christianity, and one that restored the true worship of God. Similarly, to the Adventists, Adventism was God's replacement for Christianity that restored the true worship of God.

The combination of the fact there is no Sabbath in Genesis and Moses' clear teaching in the Pentateuch that the Sabbath was given to Israel and Israel alone makes the whole question of Sabbath-keeping irrelevant for Christians. If Adam, Eve, Seth, Enoch, and Abraham were eternally saved without keeping the Sabbath, it seems odd that Seventh-day Adventists and Armstrongites would dare teach that Sabbath-keeping is a critical component of Christian belief and practice. It seems even stranger that they would teach, as they do, that the United States of America will enact Sunday laws that will soon force everyone to worship on Sunday. This teaching is beyond bizarre. According to Ellen White, the United States would soon become the world leader of a program to hunt down and kill Sabbath-keepers who will not join everyone else in worshipping on Sunday.

Moving back to the significance of Dr. Reuven Brauner's translation of the *Mishnah*, recall that this book of Jewish legal precedence proves that from the very beginning of the Jewish legal system— one which was established by God and guided by Him— Israel utilized dual courts, one for Jewish citizens of Israel and one for Gentile citizens of Israel. Israel's Gentile citizens were held accountable only to the Seven Laws of Noah, whereas the Jewish citizens of Israel were held accountable to the full 613 laws of the Torah. The Seven Laws of Noah did not include a Sabbath commandment. In fact, going back to the earliest recorded laws of Israel— at least as far as the time of the Judges— Gentiles who presumed to keep the Jewish Sabbath were to be stoned. Adventist apologists claim that this idea of stoning Gentiles was invented and added to the *Mishnah* around 200 AD as a result of a Jewish backlash against the damage Christianity had inflicted on Judaism— but the facts of how the *Mishnah* was maintained intact as a sacred oral tradition over thousands of years and then finally written down around 200 AD, blocks this Sabbatarian escape route.

As a result of a set of remarkable connections, Dr. Brauner agreed to work with our new co-author, Larry Dean, to know with certainty whether the “original” Hebrew text of Genesis 2 contains a Sabbath ordinance that is either expressed or implied. His response was that there is no Sabbath ordinance to be found within the account of the days of Creation, and he has helped us understand how the characteristics of the Hebrew language do not allow it. Here is that exchange in e-mail responses between Dr. Brauner and Larry Dean dated between November 13 and November 15, 2015. They have been edited slightly but only to present the exchange of questions and answers in an easy-to-read format without repetition. To almost everyone else in the world but Sabbatarians, Dr. Brauner's expert testimony would settle the Question forever:

DEAN: One chapter in our book deals with the question: Does the wording of the first two chapters of the *Book of Genesis* regarding the events of the seventh day, establish a weekly Sabbath ordinance at the time of Creation? The larger theme of our book is whether or not Christians are required to keep the Jewish Sabbath. In light of your spectacular treatment of the issue in your translation of the *Mishnah*, it seems clear that Gentiles were forbidden to keep the Sabbath. This is a position we strongly agree with.

BRAUNER: Our Jewish Sages learned the commandment to observe the Sabbath from Exodus 23:12 where the language is, “You shall rest on the Seventh Day,” and Exodus 20:8, with “Remember the Sabbath in its holiness.” The verses in Genesis are considered the historical basis for the later-stated commandments, merely setting the stage for its rationale, as it were. In Jewish law, the typical learning of when a statement in the Torah is understood to represent a “commandment” follows certain principles which include (A) verses which provide the historical/religious basis, and then (B) a direct positive or negative commandment.

Regarding non-Jews observing the 613 Commandments, it is explicit in Jewish law that the Commandments were given specifically to the Jewish people. Non-Jews are not obligated to observe but seven key Commandments, and non-Jewish observance of any of the others is a serious violation. As strange as this may seem, the reason that the 613 Commandments were directed only to Jews is that they are not universal and they underscore the special bond God has with the Jewish people and the special responsibilities Jews have to God. This is not to say that non-Jews cannot become close to God, enjoy His blessings, etc., but merely it states the unique role the Jewish people have with God. It is not negative in any way. Judaism encourages non-Jews to do what THEY have to do, and what they are commanded, i.e. the Seven Commandments of Noah, and not usurp the Jewish role. For this reason, non-Jewish observance of uniquely Jewish Commandments is technically forbidden by Jewish Law, and this includes detailed observance of the Sabbath as would a Jew. If a non-Jew feels the need to observe the Sabbath “properly,” he has to convert to Judaism— something which he, ironically, is not encouraged to do, but may do so if he really feels compelled.

DEAN: Biblical scholars going back as far as the Venerable Bede, who wrote around 700 CE, have noticed that there is no “evening and morning” suffix following the biblical account of what happened on the 7th day of Creation, but there is after the account of what happened on each of the previous six days of Creation. This fact seems to represent an indicator that signals the reader the rest is unbound, beginning on that day and lasting forever, which would suggest that only this one seventh-day, and not subsequent multiples of it, was set aside as a memorial to God’s finishing of the creation of Planet Earth.

BRAUNER: In Ancient Hebrew, EVERY word or absence thereof, is significant. However, I do not see how the absence of the evening/morning language has anything to do with Sabbath observance. You will have to explain as to how you derive this. But, as I said, those particular verses in Genesis are not composed with any directive or command embedded in the text. They are just stating facts. As to why the evening/morning language is absent, there are many possible reasons.

One reason could be that the Hebrew words “Erev” (evening) and “Boker” (morning) can also mean “mixture” and “examination”, the latter term implying ‘clarification of a circumstance’ as one who sees something which appears to be confused will see the distinct elements which comprise it when looking closely examining it (See my work on Shoroshim at www.halakhah.com for the roots of these words.)

In effect, the Creation process was that at the beginning of each of the Six days, substances were all mixed up and confused. The component elements were not as yet refined and defined so as to be distinguishable and unique beings unto themselves.

For example, we see that it says, at the beginning of the Second Day, that the firmament was “within” the water, and then God separated it out. He then separated the waters from the waters and the water above the firmament from the water below it. Or on the Fourth Day, God separates the Day from the Night, and so forth.

In effect, what we see is that God first creates jumbled, confused, mixed components which He then separates into pieces and gives distinct functioning. This can be seen for each of the Six Days if you carefully read the text.

Thus, although it says Evening and then Morning, the text is really saying that “there was mixture, there was separation.” – i.e. first there was mixture (evening when the day and night “mix”, and then morning when the sunlight shines and things which were murky and hard to see suddenly become vivid and clear).

This is why it first says evening and then morning. First situations are confused for the observer, he is uncertain as to what he is actually looking at, and it may even become impossible for him to see it as the night falls and it gets darker. But then, as morning and sunrise approaches, he begins to see things as they really are!) Such can be implied from the Hebrew text. (Incidentally, the Hebrew word “Erev” is more precisely “twilight”).

Now, this analysis is not applicable for the Seventh Day as no such creative creating was done. The Day exists as an independent entity, and there was no mixture at its beginning, so there is no separation process. As such, the Seventh Day stands unique as it was complete from the beginning and no processing took place thereon. For that reason, it is worthy of being sanctified as a special and holy Day, and no need for an “evening” and a “morning.”

However, as I have explained, no Commandment to sanctify the Day can be in any way implied from the Genesis text. At this point in the “evolution,” if you will, of God’s directives to mankind and later the Israelites, there is no requirement for Man to sanctify the day. This God did on His own.

Here we have it from a leading Israeli Hebrew language scholar. There is no higher authority to turn to for expertise in understanding the Hebrew linguistics of the *Book of Genesis*. There is no Sabbath ordinance explicit or implied in *Genesis*. The Sabbath is exactly what Moses taught Israel that the Sabbath was— a sign between God and Israel that would set them apart from every other nation on the face of the Earth.

One of the themes of this book is to demonstrate how dangerous it is for Sabbatarians to build an entire Bible doctrine on one single Hebrew text that is packed with meaning that defies translation into other languages. (Ultimately, for nearly self-evident reasons, the heretical doctrine that the Sabbath has universal jurisdiction over all nations, tongues, and peoples is fully dependent on a Creation origin for the Sabbath ordinance.) It has been said that Hebrew is the language of God, and while the Hebrew language evolved out of the Canaanite family of languages into Ancient Hebrew at some time after the reign of King David, it seems that God must have lead in its evolution. Why? Because Ancient Hebrew has a nearly miraculous ability to communicate complex ideas, despite the fact that it is, by its very structure, a very primitive language. Hebrew is one giant paradox in this respect. Hebrew has become a key language for the sciences within just the last decade or so because it seems to have more in common with mathematics than it does with other languages. It even communicates ideas by words that are left out but could have been present, which is not characteristic of English. In fact, in English one of the poorest arguments, judged by standards of logic, is one made from silence. Not so in Hebrew.

An example of how full of meaning Ancient Hebrew can be as a result of its linguistic attributes is the origin and development of the Hebrew myth of Lilith. According to this myth, Adam had two wives. The first one was named Lilith. She refused to take a submissive role, rebelled, and tempted Adam's second wife— the wife who replaced her— by appearing to her as the Serpent. All of this seems crazy to Christians, and this story is virtually incompatible with Christian thinking. Keep in mind that we are reporting this Jewish myth to illustrate a point about the amazing ability of the Hebrew language to communicate ideas through cues that are invisible to a non-native reader. Hebrew scholars see that there are three distinctively different Creation stories within the first few chapters of Genesis and that these accounts of Creation differ significantly in describing the circumstances of the creation of Adam's wife. In the Creation account that talks about what happened when God introduced Eve to Adam, what Adam said compared Eve to a previous, similar experience. Interestingly, there is a clear reference to Lilith in the *Book of Isaiah*. This reference is to one of her other names.

These facts, including the reference to her in *Isaiah*, do not validate the truth of the Lilith myth, but they do demonstrate that it was sufficiently regarded that it had become an integral part of Hebrew thought and culture by the time of Isaiah. Our point is that Adventist scholars seem to know only enough about Hebrew linguistics to get themselves into a lot of trouble. By contrast, Israeli scholars, like Dr. Brauner, are Jews who speak Hebrew every day. While the Hebrew language used in

Israel now has a larger vocabulary and has evolved rapidly since it became the official language of the new Nation of Israel, it is still close enough to the Ancient Hebrew that the Jews of today can read the old language with a reasonable degree of success. (Recall that Hebrew was resurrected by the Jewish people and declared to be its national language around the time the Nation of Israel was founded in 1948.)

The Hebrew language is laden with meaning that is invisible when translated into any other language. It's characteristics

suggest a nearly supernatural ability to pack a lot of meaning into a few words, or even into a lack of words. It is worth saying it a second time that we are not teaching that Adam had two wives. (For more information on the linguistics of Genesis that have helped the Hebrews create this myth, do an Internet search for the Legend of Lilith.) The obvious lesson, here, is that non-Jewish scholars who think they know enough about Ancient Hebrew to conjure up a Sabbath presence in Genesis 2:1-2 first need to spend a decade in Israel studying the language from competent Jewish instructors and to learn to speak the language fluently themselves.

As we document elsewhere in this book, the word, “rested” should have been translated “ceased.” The open-ended nature of the “rest” of Genesis 2:2-3 is widely acknowledged by biblical scholars. As we point out elsewhere, the word should have been translated as “ceased.” See G.C.D. Howley, gen. ed., *A Bible Commentary for Today: Based on the Revised Standard Version* (London: Pickering & Inglis, 1979), p. 136. See also D. Guthrie and J. A. Motyer, eds., *The New Bible Commentary Revised* (Grand Rapids: Wm. B. Eerdmans Publishing Co., 1970), p. 83. As we will point out shortly, even the Venerable Bede understood this concept as early as 700 CE.

As it turns out, the absence of the evening and morning suffix does not function as a special Hebrew literary device to limit or unlimit the events of the 7th day as we have claimed in several previous editions. In this particular matter we owe Sabbatarian apologist, Brenden Knudson, a huge apology. In the past he has been forced to expend a lot of effort debunking this claim, and now we find out that he was right and we were wrong. However, since the rest discussed in Moses' description of the events of the 7th day of Creation refers only to the cessation of God's creative activities, the absence of the evening and morning suffix after the description of the events of the 7th day *does* seem to function like something more akin to symbolism that enhances something that is already self-evident. Furthermore, Bede helps us understand **that it is probably only the missing evening that is significant in this case.**

Recall that Dr. Brauner says that the absence of the evening and morning suffix clause likely serves to differentiate this day of Creation from all the previous ones. We apply this principle like this. After each day that God actually created something, he ceased, or “rested,” over-night. He didn't create anything on the 7th day, so when He ceased, or “rested” on that entire day to celebrate the completion of Planet Earth, that rest was permanent since He did not create anything the next day or on any subsequent day. There was no “evening” on His rest because “the sun never went down on that “rest.” He never stopped stopping.

Additionally we now have the definitive word from Dr. Brauner that there is no Sabbath ordinance expressed or implied in Genesis 2 and proof from the *Mishnah* that the Hebrews understood this fact and additionally believed that the Sabbath, not given till the Exodus, was given to Israel and to Israel alone.

The Venerable Bede (672-735 CE), the most respected of the fathers of the early church and the last scholar considered to be a father of the early church, called attention to that missing evening and morning clause and focused on the symbolic absence of the evening part:

Source: *Bede: On Genesis*, by Calvin B. Kendall; Google Book, pp. 95, 97:

[2.3a] And he blessed the seventh day and sanctified it. He did this namely with that blessing and sanctification which he revealed more fully to his people in the Law, saying, Remember that you keep holy the Sabbath day. Six days shall you labour, and shall do all your works. But on the seventh of the Sabbath of the Lord your God, you shall do no work. And a little further on, For in six days the Lord made heaven and earth, the sea and all things that are in them, and rested on the seventh day. Therefore the Lord blessed the seventh day and sanctified it. Truly this blessing and sanctification of the seventh day was done as a type of a greater blessing and sanctification. For just as the blood of the Lord's passion, which had to be poured out once for the salvation of the world, was signified by the frequent, indeed, daily sacrifices under the Law, so also by the rest of the seventh day, which always used to be celebrated after the works of the six days, was prefigured [by] that **great day of the Sabbath**, on which the Lord was to rest **once** in the grave, after having completed and perfected on the sixth day all his works, by which he restored the world, long since lost, which he had completed on the sixth day. On that day [ed. Note: The Great Sabbath observed once a year by most of the early churches, and especially the Eastern church] also, being mindful, as it were, of the old work, he declared in clear language that he now completed the salvation of the world. For when he had taken the vinegar, he said, It is consummated. And bowing his head, he gave up the ghost. But also this sanctification and blessing of the seventh day, and the rest of God on that day after his works, signified that they were

exceedingly good, because each of us after good works, which he himself works in us both will and to accomplish, struggles toward the rest of heavenly life in which we may enjoy his eternal sanctification and blessing. **Hence it is proper that this seventh day is not described as having had an evening.**

The above passage is packed with significance, especially since SDA Sabbath scholar, Dr. Samuele Bacchiocchi, released his iconoclastic defense of the Sabbath in 1977, *From Sabbath to Sunday*. Researchers have poured over vast numbers of historical sources to see if they could find any evidence that the early Christians ever kept the Jewish Sabbath in significant numbers. As we will explain later, once the terminology of the language they used when they used the word “Sabbath” is understood, it always seemed to mean, in one way or another, Sunday. Some early Christian writers began referring to Sunday as the Sabbath. When they talked about the Lord's Day, it always referred to Sunday. Then, in other cases, reference was made to the Sabbath Festival, which was celebrated once or twice a year in one form or another, especially by the Eastern churches. In the case of this passage from Bede's work, he is referring to the *Great Sabbath*, which was celebrated once a year around Passover-Easter. This “Sabbath” celebrated the last Sabbath ever (truly) observed in the world— the Sabbath night Jesus spent in the tomb— as well as the fact that Jesus, that very night, went down into Hades and preached the Gospel to the people who perished at the time of the Flood. (This “Great Sabbath” of the Eastern Orthodox Churches is presented elsewhere in this book, and you can study it in depth a *Wikipedia*, article, “Holy Saturday.” Also, you may wish to study the definition of the Greek work, *Hades*, which referred to the underworld where the dead existed.)

As noted earlier, various other scholars have recognized the significance of the absence of the evening and morning from the 7th day. In the article, “From Sabbath to Lord's Day: A Biblical and Theological Perspective,” authored by A.T. Lincoln— Chapter 12 in D.A. Carson's book, *From Sabbath to Lord's Day*, 1982— we find this observation on page 348:

Elsewhere in Genesis 1 and 2 there are explicit commands for the first pair to follow. Not only is there no explicit command and no use of the term “Sabbath” there is also no mention of humanity. **The depiction of the seventh day in the schema is solely in terms of God.** The climax of God's creative activity is not the creation of male and female so much as His own triumphant rest. It is true that His blessing and hallowing of the seventh day are not meant to be considered simply in a vacuum but have some relation to the created world. What is critical, however, is the nature of that relation. The seventh day is to be seen as representing the completion of the whole creation, and therefore in its blessing the whole creation is blessed. This day is related in this way to the other six, and yet at the same time is different, **for it has no boundaries.** The six days have their goal in a day that is different from the others and this is the force of the hallowing or sanctifying of the seventh day. Creation, therefore, is blessed with special reference **to its goal, God's rest**, which is set apart in some sense for all His creation including man and woman; but the precise sense awaits further unfolding. This is the relation of God's seventh day to humans; anything further must be read into the text and is often read back into it from Exodus 20:11. Claus Westermann, however, in his commentary on Genesis remarks judiciously that one can find here neither an institution of nor a preparation for the Sabbath but that its later establishment is reflected.

The Seventh day of Creation was simply a boundary between the days that God created Planet Earth and the one day that He stopped working on the Planet Earth project. Note that after all, the rest of the 7th day of Creation turns out to have no boundaries on it, and that this fact is clearly established, not by Hebrew linguistics, but by logic and common sense.

THE CONCEPT OF PROLEPSIS

Some scholars have proposed the idea that since Moses wrote about both the events of Creation and the Exodus, that in his mind, he was thinking about the events of the 7th day of Creation as a flash-forward to the giving of the Sabbath commandment at the time of the Exodus, and that his view of the whole story is why he worded things in such a way that could even tempt a few people to think they saw a Sabbath ordinance in the Creation story. While this concept, called *prolepsis*, makes a lot of sense, Sabbatarian apologists do not like it. An example of literary prolepsis would be something like, “I was a dead man as soon as the murderer walked into the room with an assault weapon.” In a prolepsis, the event is said to have taken place before it actually does.

Here are the objections of Brandon Knudson, who is a controversial Adventist and does not in any way represent the official Seventh-day Adventist denomination, and who has some degree of knowledge about Hebrew linguistics. In fact Knudson has been brave enough to dialog with us at length about Hebrew linguistics, so our readers will find his point-of-view

mentioned and reviewed frequently in the pages to come:

KNUDSON: Wynne's claim that the author of Genesis could still be thinking of the blessing and hallowing of the 7th day of Creation as a flash-forward to the giving of the Sabbath Commandment at Mt. Sinai is ridiculous in view of the book-end restrictions of the author of Genesis' use of the restrictive literary devices of *merismus* and *inclusio*. The use of these twin literary devices is mutually exclusive of *prolepsis*. His arguments side-step the real issue, which is the barrier to prolepsis imposed by *merismus* and *inclusio*. Wynne has ignored it completely by merely insisting on *prolepsis* as if these "excluding" literary devices do not exist. Again, he appeals to expert opinion to support his conclusions rather than the evidence itself.

The chiasmic [often saying the same thing twice but in somewhat different ways] structure of the account of the 7th day of Creation within the inclusion between its book-ends gives emphasis to the main point that the 7th day is blessed and set aside [made holy], which proves that this blessing and hallowing of the 7th day of Creation was equivalent to making it into a Sabbath concept because these things happened within the time-frame of the narrative. This represents a fatal blow to the desperate need of the authors of *Lying for God* to project this blessing and hallowing far into the future at Mt. Sinai. The chiasmic structure of the last verses of this inclusion looks like this:

A1 --- Thus the heavens and the earth were finished, and all the host of them.

A2 ----- And on the seventh day God finished His work that He had done,

B ----- and He rested on the seventh day from all His work that He had done.

X ----- So God blessed the seventh day and made it holy,

B ----- because on it God rested from all His work that He had done in creation. A1` -- These are the generations of the heavens and the earth when they were created, A2` ----- in the day that the LORD God made the earth and the heavens.

AUTHORS: We don't NEED to project the blessing and hallowing of the 7th day of Creation far into the future. We are not denying that the blessing and hallowing of it took place at Creation. However, what got blessed and hallowed was only ONE SINGLE DAY in the history of Planet Earth— the 7th day of Creation. It is Knudson who is ignoring the real evidence, which is expert scholarly opinion from multiple sources, which point to the possibility of the use of prolepsis. It is the strength of this scholarly opinion that has contributed to shaping our point of view. Both the concepts of book-ending and *prolepsis* are literary devices common to many languages. (Book-ending, according to Knudson, as discussed elsewhere, the concept that it is a characteristic of Hebrew writing to enclose an account of something with a phrase at its beginning and then again at its end which creates a unified, self-contained account with boundaries.) If the author of Genesis 2:2-3 actually did use prolepsis here, he did so because writers have the creative power to write things any way they please. We acknowledge that book-ending exists in literature. However, our position is that book-ending does not have the magical powers of exclusion that Knudson ascribes to it. In fact if it did, Knudson has hog-tied himself into a huge blunder of logic, as we will explain shortly.

Any events can be placed between the two ends of a book. Furthermore, we do not insist that prolepsis is necessarily present in this case. We present *prolepsis* only as a possibility— perhaps even a likely possibility— that is compatible with the fact that the blessing and hallowing of that one, single day cannot repeat itself at recurring intervals when only one day in the history of Planet Earth was blessed and there is no command, expressed or implied, to do such a thing. Only the 7th day of Creation week was memorialized, and the memory of that one single day would last forever. Once genuinely and permanently blessed, that one day is always blessed. Once set aside, that one day remains set aside forever.

Furthermore, if we follow Knudson's logic to the furthest possible extent, his book-ending theory means that the passage could not provide for a recurring Sabbath day because such a thing would fall outside the boundary established by the book-ends!

Since neither Knudson nor the authors of this paper are experts in Ancient Hebrew, both parties are dependent on expert testimony when it comes to Hebrew linguistics. The experts have spoken and what they have said is not acceptable to

Sabbatarians. Knudson's reaction is to deny the evidence of experts he cannot refute, along with a thinly veiled *ad hominem*.

The 7th day of Creation lasted only 24 hours, but the *memory* of it will last forever. The day a person graduates from college is a very blessed day, and the day for the graduation ceremony is set aside by college leadership. A college graduate will always remember that day without the need for any weekly, monthly, or annual rituals.

KNUDSON: The Hebrew language in setting apart or sanctifying of the Seventh day testifies to an immediate and cyclical "part of the whole" which God claimed ownership over at the climax of His creative works.

AUTHORS: The question is whether God set aside one day in the history of Planet Earth to memorialize His creation of Planet Earth, or whether He set aside, on a cyclical basis, every 7th day thereafter. Since the passage is telling us only what God did, the idea that God would initiate His own personal resting every seventh-day thereafter is not hardly even possible. And since God's rest from creating Planet Earth began on that 7th day and never ended, that resting, by the very nature of things, could not occur on a cyclical basis as Knudson has claimed and we have documented elsewhere. As contributor Bill Shirley, points out, Cessation from creating Planet Earth does not mean that God was idle:

In his defense Jesus said to them, "My Father is always at his work to this very day, and I too am working." — John 5:17:

KNUDSON: The fact that the Hebrew word for day, יוֹם (*yom*), has been categorically established as including "evening and morning" over the preceding six ordinal references rules out any attempts to protract the seventh *yom* into an indefinite, unending eternity. An ordinal day has already been defined six previous times as "evening and morning". By the time we get to the seventh, the word is pregnant with this undeniable meaning. A study of the literary features of the Genesis 1:1-2:4 *inclusio* demonstrates the internal reasons for breaking with the pattern on the seventh day.

WYNNE: Again, as we have said many times, and will continue to point out even more times, anti-Sabbatarians are not trying to stretch the day out forever. By the very nature of things, the MEMORY of that day lasts forever in the mind of humanity, and GOD'S REST extends from that day forward since he never stopped stopping His work of creating Planet Earth. One does not need any *inclusio* to see this fact.

HOHMANN: Brendan Knudson's conclusion appears to dismiss Hebrews 4. Indeed the "day" began and ended, but there is a bit more to the story, for there is a spiritual aspect to this day also, hinting at the nature of the "day" of God's rest, entered into by the faithful, while it is still called "To day" as related in Hebrews 4. God's rest then is not limited to any one day, or multiple of days. Some will enter into God's rest "To day". Some will enter into God's rest "tomorrow" when it then becomes "To day". The weekly Sabbath that Sabbatarians so desperately need to find in Genesis 2, which was to be a shadow of God's rest, is not there. What is there is tripped over and unrecognizable due to its association with faith, whereas points of law are not of faith, according to Paul. The Sabbatarian's distinctive is, after all, the Sabbath, and without it, they have no distinctive, and the obvious becomes painfully clear and unavoidable; their whole theology is built on lies, and they have been partakers of those lies.

Knudson also insists that *that* seventh day cannot extend out to an indefinite, unending "day" but then turns around and insists it does so, as a weekly Sabbath. Hmmm.

KNUDSON: Some say that since the Seventh day in the Genesis account is not explicitly called the Sabbath by Moses, that the Sabbath did not exist at that time. This argument fails to acknowledge something very important in the Hebrew. There is some debate as to whether the noun *šabbāt* (שַׁבָּת) derives from the verb *šabat* (שָׁבַת) or vice versa. However, Moses clearly sees that the meaning of the Sabbath derives from the act of God's resting on the Seventh day of Creation. Therefore whether the noun or verb came first, in the mind of Moses, it is clear that the action precedes that name. Therefore it is not imperative that the noun be present in the Genesis account because it is represented there by the verb.

AUTHORS: Even if you grant Knudson that this word is actually best translated as "rest," it does not help his claim that it represents a reference to a cultic, ritual requirement. Recall that Dr. Brauner says that in the Hebrew language, Hebrew laws are virtually always accompanied by a direct command to do a particular thing, and that almost always those commands are accompanied by a statement of the rationale for the implementation of that requirement. However, experts agree, as noted

elsewhere, that the word translated “rest” in Genesis 2 more accurately means “cessation” or “stopping.” God STOPPED creating on the 7th day. (Note that a variation of this assertion by Knudson will appear later in this book and will be addressed by a response that is very similar to this one.) Again, Knudson is fighting the wrong battle. No one questions the fact that the 4th Commandment of Exodus 20 is based on the concept of “rest.” God CEASED creating on the 7th day. The RESULT was an eternal REST from creating Planet Earth. The real battle is over whether that one single day in the history of Planet Earth, the 7th day of Creation, is indicated in Genesis 2 to be a formal institution that repeats itself through eternity every 7th multiple day of that one 7th day of Creation. However, if we are going to use word definitions to determine whether or not Moses labeled the 7th day of Creation a formal institution, the true meaning of the word “rest” is critical, and that meaning is more akin to “stopping.” Even preferred translations of the text in Exodus 20 render the word as “stopping.”

Furthermore, we demonstrate elsewhere that this Hebrew word cannot mean “rest” in the sense of “repose.” Again, it is more accurately translated “ceased.” This fact is an important distinction for the real battle, because if the word really means “ceased,” and it does mean “ceased,” then the 7th day is seen merely as a boundary day between the days God created Planet Earth and the days to follow when He did not. Once it is seen that the 7th day is merely a **boundary marker** to separate the days of Creating from the days of not creating, it is easier to understand that this boundary day—this ONE AND ONLY DAY IN THE HISTORY OF PLANET EARTH—is what got blessed and set aside to be remembered forever, just like God’s ceasing from creating Planet Earth never ceased. It was a BOUNDARY DAY that got blessed and set aside to be remembered forever, and this boundary between the days spent creating and the one day spent by God resting may be indicated by the absence of the evening and morning clause, according to Dr. Brauner. (Note that this is a very different thing than claiming that the absence of the evening and morning clause removes a boundary for the resting that took place on the 7th day.)

KNUDSON: This is confirmed in a very powerful way by a choice between the two accounts which not only reveals that it was understood the verbal action of God’s *šabaṭ* to be sufficient in Genesis 2 to represent the noun *šabbāt*, but confirms that the meaning of the verb *šabaṭ* in Genesis 2 means “Rested” and not “Stopped” or “Ceased”.

AUTHORS: Not so. The experts do not agree with Knudson. No one without the absolute compelling necessity of a favorable assumption would conclude that the verbal action represented by the action verb form “ceased” in Genesis 2 is sufficient to represent the noun form of the word in Exodus 20, which stands for a formal religious ceremony that is incorporated into an official treaty between God and Israel. It is one such assumption after another that is necessary to imagine a formal Sabbath institution in Genesis. By expert definition of the word in Genesis 2, the word translated “rest” cannot mean repose. Once gain, we cannot seem to repeat it enough times. It simply means “ceased.”

What rule of linguistics, English or Ancient Hebrew, enables a verb to “stand” in the place of a noun and mean exactly the same thing? Think of the sentence, “I will gun you down.” The assailant might not have a gun at all. He might be using a water pistol or water cannon. **A verb cannot reliably stand in the place of its associated noun.** Along the same line, the process of making a gun can never be the gun itself. Recall from our Hebrew definitions from *Brown-Driver-Briggs* that REST is an alternate reading of a “**secondary**” meaning of this word. It is labeled “God’s rest” through context—not from its root meaning—since the context of the statement is labeled as being an action of God. The Qal primary meaning is CEASED:

Qal 27 Perfect 3 masculine singular שָׁבַט Genesis 2:3 +; 3 plural שָׁבְטוּ Lamentations 5:14, etc.; Imperfect 3 masculine singular יִשְׁבֹּט Hosea 7:4; יִשְׁבֹּט Proverbs 22:10 2t.; 3 feminine singular תִּשְׁבֹּט Leviticus 26:35; תִּשְׁבֹּט Leviticus 26:34; Nehemiah 6:3 +, etc.; —

1 cease: (absolute 13 t.) of seasons Genesis 8:22 (J); manna Joshua 5:12 (P), etc., Isaiah 14:4 (twice in verse); Nehemiah 6:3 +; with מָן Hosea 7:4 3t. [Ed. Note: First, original meaning of the Qal form.]

2 desist from labour, rest: [Ed. Note: Second meaning of the Qal form.]

with מָן (of God) Genesis 2:2,3(P). [Ed. Note: The ceasing of God.]

The noun, “Sabbath,” is the word that stands for a cultic ritual (ceremony) characterized by a cycle of six days of work followed by one day of rest that functions to set Israel aside from every other nation on Earth and to remind Israel of the moralistic obligations represented in the nine other commandments in the treaty that God made with Israel at Mt. Sinai.

KNUDSON: There is a word in the Exodus Sabbath commandment which is foreign to the Genesis Sabbath account. God (the speaker of the Ten Commandments) uses a different word for "rested" in Exodus which is *nûaḥ* (נָח). This word does not have a semantic range which extends to mean "stop" or "cease", but its meanings when in the Qal stem are "to rest", "to repose", "to remain", "to settle down", "to be quiet." This gives a final blow to those who would deny that *šabāt* in [Genesis 2:2-3](#) means simply "stopped" or "ceased". Had God wished to convey this, there were other synonyms which would have retained that semantic overlap, yet *nûaḥ* excludes this meaning altogether.

AUTHORS: A significant number of authorities disagree with Knudson. We have touched on this subject a little so far. Note that *The Hebrew-Interlinear Bible* at [Scripture 4 All](#) translates Exodus 20:11 word equivalent as follows:

That six of days he-made Yahweh the heavens and the earth the sea and all of which in them he-**is-stopping** in the day of the seventh on so he blessed Yahweh.

One possible reason why the secondary reading of CEASE is to be preferred in this case is that this word is of Late Hebrew derivation. The "original" text of Exodus 20 is in Ancient Hebrew. While this question can only be settled ^{2.11}₂₂ by a scholar who is truly an expert in Ancient Hebrew, we present this possibility for your consideration. Notice this entry from *Brown-Driver-Briggs* for *Strong's* Hebrew word #5117, which can be located at:

<http://biblesuite.com/hebrew/5117.htm>:

נָח verb rest (Late Hebrew id.; Aramaic נָח ; Phoenician נַח noun rest; possibly also verb נָח (Iph. Perfect), compare Levy cited CISi. 118 Lzb322; Assyrian *nāhu*, rest (*inūh*), and derivatives; Ethiopic: be extended, long, rarely rest; Arabic IV. is make camel lie down on his breast; resting-place of camel, compare Doughty Arab. Des. i, 397, ii, 63, 486, 642);

Elsewhere we provided two other sources which prefer the stopping/ceasing meaning to the repose meaning. The fact that several expert sources prefer the stopping/ceasing meaning suggests that there may be textual indicators that have led them to prefer the secondary meaning over the primary meaning in this context. Again whether God actually rested on the 7th day of Creation is not a pivotal issue **because the Genesis passage in question tells us about what God did**. The account does not even tell us that Adam and Eve rested with God or that they were supposed to do so on subsequent multiples of 7 days. Furthermore, God gave the sun and moon to help humans keep track of time. **If there had been a Sabbath for them to keep, it would most likely have been kept according to the lunar calendar. All Sabbatarians except for Lunar Sabbatarians would be keeping the wrong day by now, and would have no clue which day was an exact multiple of seven days to the 7th day of Creation.**

Note that whether Knudson is right, the whole issue is relevant ONLY to the naming relationship between the two similar words as spelled out in Genesis 2 and Exodus 20. As far as the logic of determining whether the 7th day in Genesis 2 is a formal institution characterized by subsequent eternal pattern of exact multiples of the number seven, this issue tells us nothing.

KNUDSON: The real question, though, is WHY, with all the identical terms used in both [Genesis 2:1-4](#) and [Exodus 20:8-11](#), did God not choose to break the pattern by exchanging *nûaḥ* for *šabāt*. The reason is simple and seals the fact that the Sabbath existed from Creation. The noun *šabbāt* in Exodus was already the equivalent of the verb *šabāt* and it appears a deliberate choice to have these two words be linked up. Had the verb *šabāt* been used, it would have more naturally been linked through comparison to the *šabāt* in Genesis 2, however by using *nûaḥ* it is made certain that the proper name for the day in Exodus would be linked to the action of God in Genesis.

AUTHORS: Knudson is trying to tell us that by simply using the "nuah" form of the Hebrew word for resting, rather than the form of the word that usually means simply "ceased," Moses effectively placed the proper noun, "Sabbath," into Genesis 2. This assertion represents a whopping assumption. Not only does this claim not interface properly with the fact that the word in Genesis translated "rest" actually means "ceased," but it conflicts with the naturally occurring result of God stopping His creating and never creating again, which self-evidently means that His rest from creating Planet Earth could not possibly repeat itself on a cyclical basis. This is a complicated way to say that God's rest was unbounded and therefore would last

forever in this context. Parallel to this unlimited concept is the one that the memory of this ONE SINGLE DAY IN THE HISTORY OF PLANET EARTH is also ordered by God to last forever. In no way does the use of the word “nuah” seal the fact that the Sabbath existed from Creation.

The real issue never has been, and never will be, whether or not God “rested” after He ceased Creation on the Ceasing Day. No one questions whether the basis for the Jewish Sabbath is or is not based on the concept of God’s ceasing or resting. Of course the end result of ceasing was REST. The story is about what God did—not what man was supposed to do. And if man was to follow God’s example, he would never work another day in his life after the 7th day of Creation.

KNUDSON : Those who say that the Seventh day of Creation was not the same as the Sabbath do so in ignorance of the deliberate association of the name of the day by the time of Moses to the original action of God. The Hebrew makes it clear that the Seventh day of Creation was the first Sabbath by the presence of the verb from which the name takes its meaning.

AUTHORS: If it is a verb, it means that God rested. Again, there is no indication that humans are supposed to follow His example. Even if He did rest on the 7th day in the literal way Sabbatarians hope for, His act of resting would not create a cultic ordinance for people to practice without a direct command and without a rationale for the requirement. Furthermore, there is no literary convention or device in any language that enables a verb to fully function as a noun. Let someone provide even one legitimate example of such a thing in the language of his or her choice, and we will likely be able to demonstrate that the claim is false.

KNUDSON: As an added note, the choice not to use the noun Sabbath in Genesis 2 is a further argument against alleged prolepsis, for it would be more natural in prefiguring the Sabbath commandment to use the proper name at the later time, rather than leave out the name in its original setting before it had become an established moniker for the day.

AUTHORS: While not necessarily creating a situation that could actually be labeled a prolepsis, the word translated as “therefore,” in Exodus 20 is a Hebrew literary device which appears to be included in the Sabbath commandment to indicate that the object at hand, the Sabbath ordinance, is MODELED after something that took place in the past. A model of something cannot concurrently be both the object and the model of itself. It would seem that since God exists in the past, the present, and the future all at the same time, He would have chosen to direct Moses to use the noun form of the “rest” word for the world’s first religious ordinance if He had intended to make Sabbath-keepers out of Adam and Eve. And, again, as we have said before, acknowledging a “nouncially” expressed reference to God’s rest does not create an example for man to follow without an express command to do so and a rationale for the giving of that command. Later, in our treatment of the Hebrew linguistics of Exodus 20, we will explain how the word “therefore” in this context indicates that something is modeled after a prior event. The word “therefore” in Hebrew apparently does not have exactly the same meaning it does in English. After all, the word “therefore” is simply a translation of a Hebrew word in the first place, which opens up the possibility for an inexact or incomplete meaning.

KNUDSON: One of the last things that can be drawn out of the Exodus Sabbath Commandment is that the same word for the “work” of God during Creation Week is used for the “work” of man. Thus the Sabbath Commandment also sees man as the image of God in terms of work, further strengthening the idea that God’s resting on the Seventh day of Creation was as an example for Adam and Eve.

AUTHORS: For this argument to have any semblance of validity, there would have to be different Hebrew words for work done by God and work done by human beings. Is not “work” work whether God does it or man does it?

KNUDSON: The second reading of the 10 Commandments in Deuteronomy admonishes Israel to keep the Sabbath in order to help them remember that it was God who rescued them from Egyptian slavery. There are good reasons why the anti-Sabbatarian argument that the Sabbath commandment does not apply to Christians because they had never been slaves in Egypt is not a valid argument. (1) Moses is simply adding some social commentary of his own. (2) The social context of Moses’ sermon was different. In the case of Exodus 20, God’s law is being proclaimed as a statement of His character and which apply to everyone who will ever live on Planet Earth. In Deuteronomy, Moses is addressing a Hebrew audience alone, and his remarks are specifically targeted at that special group of people.

AUTHORS: Apparently it is supposedly an invalid argument because Knudson doesn’t like it. Call it social commentary if it doesn’t agree with the Sabbatarian point-of-view, but call it truth from God if, on the surface, a text seems to support your

personal agenda. Moses has been on the mountain with God. Therefore he understood the mind of God in regard to His rationale for giving Israel the Sabbath ordinance. A different social content for Moses' discourse to the people would not change the basic reasons why God gave the Sabbath to Israel. God seems to have compensated the Hebrews for their 400 years without rest with a special provision for getting all the rest for labor they need. Christians have not, as a group, particularly been denied the physical rest that they need under comparable conditions. What is good for the goose may not be good for the gander.

The Ten Commandments represented a political treaty between God and the nation of Israel— not a dedicated code of moral laws. Israel, like all other nations, had the Noahide laws— laws which were little more than expressions of moral cause and effect. The Ten Commandments were modeled exactly after the treaties being drawn up by Israel's neighbors. (Full explanation of this will be documented later.) If the Ten Commandments are a transcript of God's character, as Ellen White foolishly said, then His character can accommodate fornication, polygamy, and homosexual activity because these sins are not proscribed by the Ten Commandments. Yes, Moses, in his discourse about the Ten Commandments, was addressing Israel alone. According to Jewish thought, as exemplified in the teachings of the *Mishnah*, Gentiles will be eternally saved if they keep the basic laws that God had given to the world by the time of Noah.

HOHMANN: Note also that Knudson offers a premise without evidence (again), treating the Ten Commandments as “a statement of God's character” without providing any supportive evidence for this premise. A faulty premise often is followed by a faulty conclusion. This premise serves only as an attempt to circumvent the context and the first rule of proper biblical scholarship: Who is speaking, and who is being addressed? Furthermore, God's “character” or better stated, His attributes, cannot possibly be contained in or restrained by this Ten Commandment “box”. Knudson's statement does help to expose the paradigm of the Sabbatarian regarding the importance of the Ten Commandments, taking it way beyond what it was intended and represented in relation to the Hebrews to whom they were given. To put this in a proper context, Jesus credits Moses, and not God, as having given the Law to the Hebrews. There is a reasonable expectation that if the Ten Commandments, and the rest of the Law possessed near the importance the Sabbatarians give it, Jesus would have related this in His teachings as recorded in the Gospel accounts.

COTTO'S RESPONSE TO THE CHALLENGE: A SERVING OF BALONEY

Amidst this background of ecclesiastical knowledge and a mountain of biblical evidence to the contrary, Sabbatarian apologists, Edwin M. Cotto and Brendan Knudson, have sought to convince us that the Sabbath is found in Genesis 2. In subsequent pages we will continue to provide both evidence and proof that no Sabbath ordinance exists in Genesis and that it is impossible to legitimately proof-text it backwards into Genesis. Even Catholic scholars understand the biblical reasons for Sabbath abandonment. While a number of unauthorized spokespersons for the Catholic Church have claimed that the Mother Church changed the Sabbath by arbitrary ecclesiastical authority alone, their official position, expounded on the official website of the Catholic Church, is that the Sabbath was abandoned for the same biblical reasons cited by Protestant and Orthodox scholars.

OTHER ASPECTS OF HEBREW LINGUISTICS: ROOT STRUCTURES

Moses not only used important Hebrew literary conventions in Genesis 2, but also in Exodus 16, and Exodus 20 to clarify that the Sabbath did not exist until the time of the giving of the Manna. Since these Hebrew literary devices convey their meanings through ways that are uniquely characteristic of Ancient Hebrew, they are invisible to those who lack advanced training in it. There is no better example of this than the evidence for the Jewish Lilith Myth which is uniquely Hebrew in its origin and development. At this advanced level of linguistics, one must possess a native command of the language.

Although Ancient Hebrew utilized idioms, most of the linguistic devices that preclude a Sabbath ordinance prior to the Exodus are NOT idioms. Also word usage is critically important, one example being that in Ancient Hebrew the simple phrase, “Sons of God” always referred to the “Watchers,” or fallen angels. This phrase, in fact, was ubiquitous in Hebrew writing and culture. As much as it is theologically uncomfortable, Moses, the presumed author of Genesis, stated that fallen

angels— not descendants from Adam's good sons— mated with human women and produced giants— the Nephilim. If the student of the Bible does not understand this simple fact of Hebrew word usage, one might be able to interpret Genesis 6 as telling a story about the sons of Adam's good son looking on the daughters of Adam's bad sons, mating with them as they chose, resulting in amazingly large human offspring. Ask yourself for a moment, how would humans mating with humans produce such a thing? Again we catch Ellen White demonstrating her ignorance when she commented on Scripture while claiming that the information came from God in vision.

A guidebook to Ancient Hebrew idioms is useless to identify the many other kinds of literary devices that Moses used in Genesis 2, Exodus 16, and Exodus 20 to clarify that the Sabbath commandment given at Mt. Sinai was merely modeled after Creation Week. One example of a non-idiomatic indicator is that in Ancient Hebrew, the lack of a definite article before a noun signifies that the whole idea is new. This particular indicator has critical implications for determining what Moses conveyed about the Sabbath in the *Pentateuch* (the first five books of the Old Testament), but it is neither an idiom or an aspect of Hebrew syntax.

You can't argue with the way people use their own language. When Moses, the assumed author of Genesis, assembled oral traditions and/or cuneiform tablets that had been passed down to him, and authored the remaining books of the Pentateuch, he was so successful in wording the Sabbath-related passages in Genesis 2, Exodus 16, and Exodus 20 that those who have possessed a native-like understanding of Ancient Hebrew have not been able to find any trace of a weekly Sabbath in Genesis. This fact is validated by reviewing thousands of years of rabbinical writings and oral tradition, including one oral tradition Jesus recommended that people follow its teachings— the *Mishnah*.

THE EVER-CHANGING NATURE OF LANGUAGE

The Canaanite-based language spoken by the Children of Israel during the time of the Judges seems not to have fully evolved into the Ancient Hebrew until sometime after the kingdoms of Judah and Israel had become established. Over the hundreds and hundreds of years that transpired between the early kingdoms and the various periods of captivity, Ancient Hebrew evolved into “Modern” Hebrew. These Hebrew languages were very different from one another, including some of their written characters. Dr. Reuven Brauner says that many non-Hebrew linguists looking at the history of the development of the Hebrew language make too much of these differences. In fact he says that if you can read Modern Hebrew, you can usually read Ancient Hebrew with some difficulty.

Modern Hebrew had a long life-span, but by the time of Christ, the Jews, with the exception of specially trained rabbinical scholars, did not know Hebrew. They were speaking Aramaic. Both the ancient and modern forms of Hebrew were known only to the rabbis. The Old Testament, whether written in Ancient Hebrew or Modern Hebrew, had to be translated again into Aramaic. Recall that Jesus read Scriptures about Himself from Aramaic scrolls in the synagogue. Some rabbinical scholars were responsible for keeping the knowledge of Ancient Hebrew alive, and they used it for specialized work such as studying the *Pentateuch* in its “original” language. Unfortunately, many Christian scholars have attempted to study the Ancient Hebrew text of the Pentateuch without sufficient training. The results have been disastrous.

The wording of Genesis 2 is unfavorable to the Sabbatarian belief model, especially in view of the fact that Exodus 16 utilizes a full set of specific indicators to clarify that the Sabbath commandment was being introduced for the first time. This fact is not surprising, since, as we recall, the Israelites under the direct leadership of God did not keep their first Sabbath until the 31st day of the Exodus. Additionally, Exodus 20 contains four Hebrew usage indicators which clarify that the Sabbath ordinance was a new concept that was merely *modeled* after Creation week. We will explore these things in detail later.

Scholars are also faced with the challenge that God spoke to the Hebrews in anthropomorphic and cultural terms they could understand. For example, when God talked with Moses, He expressed human-like emotions such as jealousy or anger. Let us not think for a moment that the purity and selflessness of God's “jealousy” or “anger” could be fully represented by the use of these human terms.

In the Creation story, Moses described God's Creative work in terms of the action-based language that his readers would understand. However, since the record of the *Pentateuch* may have evolved from Egyptian (or something else) through the Canaanite family of languages into the Ancient Hebrew language, we should not assume that the anthropomorphic explanations of His activities in Genesis 1 & 2 can be taken with the degree of literalization that would provide a solid basis for

the formulation of a universally applicable Christian doctrine that requires Sabbath-keeping. The literalness of God's "resting" is essential to the concept of Sabbatarianism, yet it collapses unless these anthropomorphic representations can be taken to represent the full reality of His actions. The nature of the Ancient Hebrew language does not give us license to do so. We will be taking a look at these limitations of Genesis 2 shortly.

THE ORIGINAL LANGUAGE OF THE PENTATEUCH?

Recent archaeological discoveries silence the skeptics by validating the Bible story of King David. However, these findings also indicate that the language during the time of the Judges had not yet evolved into Ancient Hebrew. In fact, Ancient Hebrew did not evolve from its precursor languages until some time after the time of King David and King Solomon. Inscriptions dug up in cities dated to near the time of King David are currently undecipherable, even though there are some rough similarities between the characters they used and those of Ancient Hebrew. The language in which the Pentateuch was originally recorded was almost certainly not Ancient Hebrew. This evidence gives us plenty of reasons to make us even more reluctant to construct a major Christian doctrine on two isolated verses from the Pentateuch.

Reflecting on Judaism.Com is a Jewish website that focuses on the theological issues within Judaism. The question of the original language of the Pentateuch is a sensitive one among Jewish scholars. In his essay on the question of the original language of the Torah, lay scholar, Woolf Abrahams, reports that he submitted this question to a variety of Jewish scholars and found no consensus. One professor he consulted, an anonymous orthodox Jewish professor of Jewish History at an Israeli University, provided these comments regarding the question:

The question has some merit but is problematic because you do not define what you mean by Torah. The Torah (as in the Pentateuch) informs us that what was given at Sinai (and this presumes that the events described in the Torah are historical – a rather difficult presumption) was the 10 commandments only. It is pretty clear that the Torah (as we have it now) was written down in stages at a much later period (probably after the setting up of the two kingdoms of Israel and Judah) when Hebrew would have been the spoken language, hence it is written in Hebrew. The stories about Abraham and co [Company?] were told and written down in Hebrew without anyone questioning what languages were spoken at that time. The authors had a few other things on their minds when they compiled the Pentateuch... Hence, even the 10 commandments as they appear in the Pentateuch reflect different oral traditions and transmission; hence, it is impossible to know in what language they originally appeared. They were clearly translated at some stage into Hebrew in two similar but slightly different versions as can be seen in Exodus and Deuteronomy. I hope that is helpful.

<http://www.reflectingonjudaism.com/content/was-torah-written-hebrew>

RESEARCH BARRIER:

OSTRICH THEOLOGY: THE DIMINUTION OF D. A. CARSON

In 1982 a group of biblical scholars under the leadership of D.A. Carson published research that demonstrated conclusively that the linguistics of the Ancient Hebrew text of Genesis 2, Exodus 16, and Exodus 20 unequivocally prove the Sabbath did not exist until the time of the Exodus. Additionally, we have other evidence from the Pentateuch that this is so, including the chronology of the Exodus journey.

Without a Creation origin for the Sabbath, the idea that Christians must keep the Jewish Sabbath implodes. If Adam, Eve, Enoch, and Abraham were saved without keeping it, it becomes a very difficult matter to construct a theological model that requires Christians to keep it in order to be saved. Around 2013 we noticed a new paper at the Adventist Defense League's website entitled, "The Sabbath in Genesis." It was authored by Edwin M. Cotto. In a subsequent chapter we will examine each of his arguments in detail. For now we will continue to present some concepts that are essential to this evaluation. Another Sabbatarian apologist, Brendan Knudson, has contacted us with information that he hopes will refute our rebuttal of Cotto's work. We have expanded our coverage to include our responses to his rebuttals.

Cotto released his defense of the Sabbath-in-Genesis theory over thirty years after a team of biblical scholars, working under the leadership of Evangelical scholar, **D.A. Carson**, published their definitive findings in regard to the Sabbath-

Sunday question in the 1982 book, ***From Sabbath to Lord's Day***. Carson published this research as a rebuttal to the 1977 book published by SDA Sabbath scholar, Dr. Samuele Bacchiocchi, ***From Sabbath to Sunday***. Carson and his associates laid out a formidable case against Bacchiocchi's research methods and conclusions, each chapter having been researched and written by outstanding scholars with expertise in each area impacted by Dr. Bacchiocchi's claims. Cotto writes as if he is unaware of their work.

While Bacchiocchi explored a variety of Sabbath-Sunday issues in ***From Sabbath to Sunday***, his main focus was to re-establish the credibility of the idea that the so-called "change" of the Sabbath was the result of sinister forces conspiring to destroy the true worship of God. In his doctoral studies at the Gregorian University at the Vatican, he discovered that the Seventh-day Adventist teaching that the Catholic Church "changed" the Sabbath was wrong. He was forced to concede that this "change" happened hundreds of years earlier. One of his theories was that the Church at Rome "changed it" between 100-140 CE because it feared that the Roman Empire's persecution of Jews would be extended to Christians because of the SUPPOSED common link of the Sabbath. (The first pope was seated about the year 600 CE.) Another of his theories was that Mithraism— or sun worship— had become popular by this time and had influenced Christians to adopt the same day of worship for utilitarian purposes. These and his other theories had been thoroughly debunked by the Carson team and a variety of other scholars. Bacchiocchi's book, ***From Sabbath to Sunday***, was published in 1977. Virtually all of these conspiracy theories are outlined and refuted in ***Lying for God***.

SDA leaders have known for a long time that Ellen White was dreadfully wrong about the Catholic Church changing the Sabbath. Subsequent to the release of Bacchiocchi's 1977 book, ***From Sabbath to Sunday***, SDA Sabbath scholars began developing their own alternate conspiracy theories. Even the General Conference developed one with a team approach. A plausible Sabbatarian-friendly theory was desperately needed for two reasons. **First**, Carson and his associates had thoroughly discredited Bacchiocchi's ideas, leaving in disrepute the entire concept that sinister forces had worked together to change the Sabbath from Saturday to Sunday. **Second**, Bacchiocchi's theories conflicted with what Ellen White claimed God told her. Any new theory would have to solve both issues for Adventists, but such was never achieved. Most Seventh-day Adventists, including the majority of the clergy, are unaware of this unsavory history because the source for Sabbath-related things is sifted through the restrictive knowledge filter of the Seventh-day Adventist Church (note that information control is a practice of cults).

The Carson scholars drew from the greatly improved understanding of the diversity of the early church to demonstrate that these conspiracy theories were historically impossible and that the scholars of the Early Church had been articulate in spelling out the biblical reasons for Sabbath abandonment. Unfortunately, Seventh-day Adventist apologists have never acknowledged the existence of Carson's comprehensive research or made any effort to refute it, despite the passage of over 30 years. This is the epitome of Ostrich Theology.

Some years ago, two prominent SDA apologists, confronted with our summary of Carson's work in ***Lying for God***, challenged the validity of our position on the Hebrew linguistics of Genesis 2, Exodus 16, and Exodus 20. We asked them to find a Hebrew scholar to refute Carson, but no one came forward until Brendan Knudson, who, professing a working knowledge of biblical languages, reviewed our work. One of the two apologists who challenged us prior to Knudson had told us that the only Hebrew scholar he knew was a former Hebrew professor of his, **Dr. A. Jerry Gladson**, who very soon afterward abandoned Adventism. (We note that Dr. Gladson was fired by Southern Adventist University for his views on the Doctrine of the Investigative Judgment.) He was awarded a Ph.D. in Old Testament Studies from Vanderbilt University and served there as Adjunct Professor of Old Testament Language and Literature upon the completion of his studies.

In light of Carson's unchallenged and definitive work, Cotto has been obligated to uncover hidden content, unknown to or misunderstood by the Carson scholars, and found strictly within Genesis 2:2-3, that would cause an expert in Ancient Hebrew to "see" in Moses' account of what God did on this one day an example of what man should do at every interval of seven days thereafter. As of the 10th Edition, Cotto and other Sabbatarian apologists are faced with the finality of the statement of one of the world's most respected Israeli linguists, Dr. Reuven Brauner, that there is no Sabbath expressed or implied in the Genesis record. At the same time, the intense research that has been done on Colossians 2:14-16 since 1977 is definitive in its results. There is no respectable way to evade the fact that St. Paul commanded the apostolic church not to impose Sabbath-keeping on the Gentiles coming into the Faith. To all of this, the latest research our team of co-authors has completed since the publication of the 8th Edition has turned up the fact that double animal sacrifices were required to validate the Sabbath ordinance, which, together with the fact that the Sabbath in Colossians 2:14-17 was a symbol

(shadow) of Christ, just like the animal sacrifices; so Christians observing the Sabbath are unwittingly practicing a type of blasphemy that severely diminishes the power of Christ's sacrifice on the Cross. We will have more to say about this later.

HEBREW LINGUISTICS BARRIER:

A Study Of Three Key Words In Genesis 2:2-3

Before launching into a further study of the Hebrew linguistics of Genesis 2, Exodus 16, and Exodus 20, the meanings of a certain number of Hebrew words must be clear. Without the knowledge of what these words mean when used within the text of Genesis 2:2-3, it is difficult to comprehend just how weak a case there is for a Sabbath in Genesis. Our own study of Hebrew linguistics clashes sharply with what Sabbatarian apologists have historically claimed regarding their meanings. This information is now widely available on the Internet, so there is no reason why Sabbatarians and anti-Sabbatarians should differ on these definitions. Let us make one thing perfectly clear. The absolute proof that there is no Sabbath in Genesis is found within the text of Exodus 16. While we believe there is powerful evidence within Genesis 2 itself that there is no Sabbath presence, it might fall short of absolute "proof." Neither Sabbatarians nor anti-Sabbatarians can prove their case from Genesis 2 alone. On the other hand, we can, and will, demonstrate conclusively that the proof is in Exodus 16 and that the content of Genesis 2 and Exodus 20 provide irrefutable proof that there is no Sabbath in Genesis 2. We begin with an analysis of a literal translation of Genesis 2:2-3 from the Ancient Hebrew by Jeff Benner of www.ancient-hebrew.org:

GENESIS 2:2 AND 2:3

And He will much-FINISH (verb) Elohiym in the Day the SEVENTH BUSINESS-him WHICH he did DO (verb) and he will CEASE (verb) in the DAY the SEVENTH from ALL BUSINESS-him WHICH he did DO (verb).

And he will much KNEEL (verb) Elohiym AT DAY the SEVENTH and he will much SET APART (verb) AT him GIVEN THAT in-him he did CEASE (verb) from-ALL BUSINESS-him WHICH he did-FATTEN (verb—in the sense of "to fill up") Elohiym to DO (verb).

Note that the story we find here has no information useful for developing Christian doctrine. In Exodus 20 and other passages of the Pentateuch, Moses presented the Sabbath as an institution designed to set Israel apart from everyone else. Additionally, the Law of Moses specified that neither Jew nor proselyte could keep the Sabbath without first complying with the Ordinance of Circumcision, an ordinance God gave to His Chosen People at the time of Abraham. In the case of Genesis 2, he simply tells the story of what **God did** on this **one** day in the history of Planet Earth. As we point out elsewhere, **the account doesn't even say that Adam and Eve rested in celebration with God**, or that the celebration was to be repeated every seven days thereafter.

These following three things tend to indicate Genesis 2:2-3's lack of support for Sabbatarianism: (1) The Ancient Hebrew verb for "set apart" cannot mean "set aside for religious services." (2) The Ancient Hebrew verb translated "cease" likely does not mean "rest" in the English sense of "repose." (3) The lack of the evening and morning suffix, in effect, LIMITS the blessing and setting aside to this one day because it EXTENDS its MEMORY from this one point in time on a continuum which projects into the future with no boundaries. Since this **one** day has been blessed forever, it is impossible to bless it or set it aside ever again. The story of the seventh day of Creation tells us only what GOD did on it. But let us pretend for a moment that man is supposed to follow God's example. If they were to do what He did, they would never work another day on Planet Earth. Such a conclusion follows the principles of logic and common sense.

The 7th day's status of being blessed and set aside to be remembered forever resulted from direct assignment by God. By contrast, His eternal resting/ceasing merely resulted from the fact that He didn't do any more creating. No special linguistic indicator is needed to communicate the fact that God's cessation from creating Planet Earth was finished forever.

THE WORD "BLESSED"

The meaning of the word translated "blessed" is clear in both Hebrew and English. *Sabbatarians want the fact that the 7th day of Creation was blessed to mean that every subsequent recurring interval of it was also "blessed."* How would anyone come to this conclusion based on the passage itself if they had not heard about the Sabbath commandment that came into

existence thousands of years later? The reality of the situation is that one day in the history of Planet Earth got blessed and set aside to be remembered. By the very nature of things, that memory can last forever, or at least as long as there are any people left to read about it in the Book of Genesis. Logic suggests that God would want His human creatures to remember that He created the world every day of the history of the World. It was God Who was doing the resting, and His rest from creating Planet Earth, by the very nature of it, could not stop and start every seven days.

It is always important, as we have said before, to keep in mind that **Moses was telling a story about what God did—not what Adam and Eve did, or what they were supposed to do in the future.**

BRENDAN KNUDSON'S OBJECTIONS: THE WORD “BLESSED”

KNUDSON: The word “blessed” is parsed as Piel Imperfect 3rd Person Masculine Singular. If the author of Genesis had used the perfect tense of this word, it would have implied a completed action. However, the imperfect refers to an on-going action that was not completed. This implies that every 7th day thereafter was specially blessed. The Piel verbal form intensifies the verb so that in this instance, the full force would be represented in the phrase, “He caused to be blessed,” rather than simply “He blessed.”

AUTHORS: Simply intensifying the recognition of one single day in the history of Planet Earth does not turn it into a recurring cultic ritual. There is no logic to this assertion at all and no magic to explain how simply making one day stronger than the other ones could cause it to replicate itself after intervals of a certain integer. There is no textual support for a recurring re-blessing and re-setting aside of subsequent seventh days.

Furthermore, the assumption that God intended to establish the length of a “week” at seven fixed days appears to be contrary to God’s explanation of how man was to keep track of time. The minimum measurement of time specified by God was to be marked by the Moon, or roughly 30 days. Before the Great Flood, one orbit of the moon might have equaled 1/12 of a solar year. The only other time marker God specified was the Earth's orbit around the Sun, which seems to have been, in the very early days of Earth's history, or roughly 360 days. There is no indication that God cared about how man divided up the approximately 30 days of the lunar month except that He gave the moon four phases in which it appears to look the same for seven days at a time. It is not safe to make assumptions about things for which we have no proof when it comes to establishing Bible doctrine. We only know one thing for certain, and that is that at Mt. Sinai, the Mountain of the Moon, a mountain which sat at the edge of the Wilderness of the Moon, God did specify a seven day length week with a recurring Sabbath. We do know another thing, and that is that the lunar calendar was ubiquitous in the ancient world. There was simply no other way to keep track of time. Therefore, it is difficult to go against the logic that suggests that God would specify the time-table for the keeping of the Sabbaths in any other way but His world clocks.

Since virtually every ancient civilization in the world utilized lunar calendars, why would we expect still earlier, nomadic clans and small cities had developed a fixed calendar? Recall the implications of the fact that when God called Abraham, He called him out of a Heathen culture that had almost completely forgotten the worship of the True God.

KNUDSON: The imperfect tense of the verb, blessed, **IMPLIES** an on-going action that was not completed, and this fact **IMPLIES** that every 7th day thereafter was specially blessed.

WYNNE: This suggestion is little better than linguistic fantasy. It most certainly does not do that. If you submitted this idea to a jury of 12 disinterested persons, the majority of them would say that there was insufficient evidence to prove such a thing. A more reasonable explanation of its implications would be that since that one day in the history of Planet Earth would remain blessed forever, the memory of its blessing would never be completed, since the memory of it would never end.

Exodus 16 does not merely imply that the Sabbath is being given for the very first time. It states this fact unequivocally when you combine the description of the events that took place with the defining clarity of Hebrew linguistics. The faint suggestion of a Sabbath presence that might possibly be assumed back into Genesis 2:2-3 holds no water against the absolutes of Exodus 16 and the strong evidence that the Sabbath was **MODELED** after Creation Week found in Exodus 20. Add that to a host of biblical impossibilities that in themselves would contraindicate the idea that Christians must keep the Sabbath, and there is no justification for reading a Sabbath into Genesis. Even Jesus excluded the application of the Sabbath to the Gentile “dogs” when He clarified through the cultural terminology of His day that the Sabbath was given

only to "man"— or to the Jews only. Recall that to the Jew, all the other people on Earth were subhuman.

To meet Knudson on his own ground, however, recall that his concept of the book-ended *inclusio* of Genesis 2:2-3 requires that the events told about therein must be interpreted as having completely taken place within the 24-hour boundaries of that *inclusio*. Which of his perceived principles of Hebrew linguistics is stronger? The *inclusio*, or the tense of the verb? If it is the *inclusio*, the possibility that the passage could discuss repetitive rituals that extend beyond the bookend is excluded.

The practical way of looking at the question of whether the Piel verbal form suggests a 7th day ceremony that must be observed at every 7th day thereafter for eternity is like this. The author of Genesis 2:2-3 is telling us the story of what God did on this day of Creation. We are only assuming that God must have spent some special time with Adam and Eve on the 7th day to celebrate His creative achievement. No matter HOW INTENSE the blessing of this one and only special celebration the tense of the verb makes it, it does not turn a picnic lunch that He might have celebrated with Adam and Eve into a cultic institution that requires everyone in the world to stop working on the 7th day of a seven-day week or face death by stoning. The Heathen around Israel did not keep the Sabbath. Israel was never sent to rebuke all the heathen people around them because they broke the Sabbath. On the other hand, Israel's prophets were sent to Israel to rebuke the Hebrews for Sabbath-breaking.

THE WORD "REST" ("CEASED")

The word for "rest" used in Genesis 2 means "to cease" or "to stop." In Genesis 2, it is the "Qal" form, which has its own specific variant definitions. Note that it is only the **alternate** reading of the **second** definition of the "Qal" form that actually means "rest" in the sense of repose. The word simply means to "cease" or "stop." In Exodus 20, the word commonly translated as "rested" CAN mean "repose," but some authorities point out that its meaning is more precisely rendered as ceasing or stopping. (We will have more to say about this in our section on Exodus 20.) With Creation's 7th day, the ceasing, or stopping—or even the resting—took place on one single day. There is no suggestion here that man is supposed to stop doing anything. The story tells us about what God did. The passage doesn't even tell us that Adam and Eve rested that day because this part of the story was not about them. God's rest from that Creation lasts forever. The **memory** of this ceasing was to last forever. The day itself, however, was 24 hours in duration, like all the other days of Creation. Informed Sabbatharians do not teach that the 7th day of Creation was unending.

STRONG'S CONCORDANCE WORD #7672 – SHABATH

shabath: to

Original Word: שָׁבַת

Part of Speech: Verb

Transliteration: shabath

Phonetic Spelling: (shaw-bath')

Short Definition: to

BROWN-DRIVER-BRIGGS - SHABATH

shabath: to

Original Word: שָׁבַת

Part of Speech: Verb

Transliteration: shabath

Phonetic Spelling: (shaw-bath')

Short Definition: to

71 שָׁבַת verb cease, desist, rest (As šabātu, probably cease, be completed DIWB ZimKAT 3. 593 (JenZA iv (1889), 277 f. is skeptical); Arabic: cut off, interrupt; Late Hebrew has שָׁבַת neglect, etc., Aramaic שָׁבַת cost of

neglect); —

Qal 27 Perfect 3 masculine singular *שׁ* Genesis 2:3 +; 3 plural *שָׁבוּ* Lamentations 5:14, etc.; Imperfect 3 masculine singular *יִשְׁבוּ* Hosea 7:4; *יִשְׁבֹּת* Proverbs 22:10 2t.; 3 feminine singular *תִּשְׁבֹּת* Leviticus 26:35; *תִּשְׁבֹּת* Leviticus 26:34; Nehemiah 6:3 +, etc.; —

1 cease: (absolute 13 t.) of seasons Genesis 8:22 (J); manna Joshua 5:12 (P), etc., Isaiah 14:4 (twice in verse); Nehemiah 6:3 +; with *מָן* Hosea 7:4 3t. [Ed. Note: First, original meaning of the Qal form.]

2 desist from labour, rest: [Ed. Note: Second meaning of the Qal form.]

a. with *מָן* (of God) Genesis 2:2,3(P). [Ed. Note: The ceasing of God.]

b. *מָן* omitted, *ב* temporal Exodus 23:12 (E), Exodus 16:30; Exodus 34:21 (J), Exodus 31:17 (P); *בְּקָרְיִשׁ וּבְקָצִיר שׁ* Exodus 34:21 (J; i.e., even in these busy seasons).

Above Credit: www.BibleSuite.Com

The *Encyclopedia Biblica* provides a somewhat different perspective on the meaning of the words that are translated "rest" and "Sabbath." Its article on the origin of the Sabbath references Marcus Jastrow, a Hebrew linguist, who believed that the root word for this family of words was associated with the concept of propitiation. Jastrow notes that the Hebrew language is part of the Canaanite language family. The Canaanites, a Semitic people, seem to have utilized a pagan Sabbath system based on the four phases of the Moon and a day between each of those four phases that separated them which was reserved for cessation of various kinds of activity based on superstition:

It is also mentioned, in the *Encyclopedia Biblica*, that "the Hebrew *Sabbathon* conveys the idea of propitiation or appeasement of divine anger and [it] is...the opinion [of Professor Jastrow] that the Hebrew Sabbath (i.e. CREATION Sabbath) was originally a *Sabbathon*— i.e. a day of propitiation and appeasement; marked by atoning rites...it was celebrated at intervals of seven days, CORRESPONDING WITH CHANGES IN THE MOON'S PHASES, and was identical in character with the four days in each month, i.e. 7th, 14th, 21st, and 28th! (The MacMillan Company, 1899. P. 4180).

The same encyclopedia adds (p. 4173) that:

The word "Sabbath" is a feminine form/word. The ROOT (of Sabbath) has NOTHING to do with resting in the sense of enjoying repose; in transitive forms and applications, it means: "to sever"; "to put an end to"; intransitively, it means "to desist" — "to come to an end." In a transitive sense — "the divider" — indicates the Sabbath as dividing the month. It certainly cannot be translated "The Day of Rest."

There is an on-line version of the *Encyclopedia Biblica*. Our readers would find its section on the origin of the Sabbath to be very informative. Interested readers may find it by doing an Internet search for "Encyclopedia Biblica On-line." Note that not only does the word translated "rest" in Genesis 2 suggest "stopping" or "dividing," rather than reposing, but the division it accomplishes is MONTHLY rather than daily. It is an interesting finding because the concept does not seem to fit with dividing the week, which would seem to be its most likely meaning in its immediate context. It would seem a big stretch to say that it divides the month, although the Sabbath concept is based on a monthly set of events, including the four phases of the moon, divided by the four phases of the moon into a month. Also, while the root of this family of words is feminine, suggesting its connection with the moon, the form of the word used in this Genesis passage is, as Knudson points out, a masculine form.

At the same time we cannot help but find it very interesting that the pagan Sabbath system was utilized by various societies from which Hebrew culture and language developed and that their Sabbaths were on exactly the same days, and even the high Sabbath of the month— the 15th day— was the same; and that God gave the Hebrews their Sabbath on the same day as the pagan high Sabbath. This is all more than enough for all of us to swallow, whether we are Sabbatarian or anti-Sabbatarian.

KNUDSON'S OBJECTIONS: THE WORD "REST"

KNUDSON: Not only does the word translated REST mean "repose," but the fact that this word is parsed

entirely as Qal Perfect 3rd Person Masculine Singular causes it to represent a completed action. That is, the "rest" was begun and finished on the day in question. Because of this fact, anti-Sabbatarians are wrong to teach that the 7th day of Creation was unending and that God's rest, therefore, lasted forever. The Hebrew does not say that God rested from the Seventh day onwards—only at a time within the Seventh day period of time between the book-ends. So we have several indicators which point to the idea that the rest of the Seventh day was limited to that day alone.

WYNNE: Perhaps the reason why it is a completed action is that the word should be more accurately translated "ceased," as we have pointed out so many times. If God ceased on the 7th day, the act of ceasing might better be understood in that perhaps it takes only a moment for someone to stop what he or she is doing, whereas the rest that results can last indefinitely. Perhaps God ceased, which took only a moment— an action which could be construed as arriving quickly at a state of completion. However, there is no possible way to say that the ceasing from labor, or the "resting" from it, ever got completed, since God never went back to work on creating Planet Earth. If your rest is complete, that means you had to have gotten back to work. I don't know of any well-informed anti-Sabbatarians who teach that the 7th day of Creation is a day that lasts forever.

The ceasing, or the stopping, of work could have been limited to that day alone.

In keeping with the concept that the best rendering of this word is "ceased," anti-Sabbatarians are happy with the understanding that this action was completed within this 24-hour period of time. Here is an illustration. A man is chopping wood. His wife calls him in for supper. There is an actual moment when he stops using the ax, lays it down on the ground, and heads toward the house. The act of ceasing took place in a moment— the moment he laid the ax down on the ground. However, the resting from the work of chopping wood was still in effect when he walked into the kitchen. As always, what anti-Sabbatarians are trying to get across is that this account tells what God did—not what man is supposed to do. Even if God's action was taken as an example for Adam and Eve, they would have been required to stop what they were doing and never work again. Remember the example of Jesus cursing the fig tree. Just because his ceasing/resting is mentioned in a narrative that also mentions that Adam and Eve were made in God's image does not mean that they must repeat His action at every 7th interval thereafter—book-ends or no book-ends.

One way to check one's logic is to follow an argument to its greatest possible extent. Note that if Knudson's book-end theory is correct, it would seem that the blessing and hallowing of the 7th day could not apply to any time after the terminal book-end.

HOHMANN: So, we are to believe that God is not resting/ceasing forever in relation to that Creation, but the seventh day, as a Sabbath, which is not even addressed here, mysteriously does last forever, all from the narrative here in Genesis 2? Pull the other leg. Again, Knudson is appealing to his own authority in matters where he claims that an appeal to any other authority is to avail ones-self of a logical fallacy. There is a disjoint in logic with Knudson. God ended His work of Creation on or by that seventh day. He did not pick up where He left off on the next day, whether we want to call it day "8" or a new day "one". That Creation was finished; over with, and duly noted and memorialized for all eternity.

KNUDSON: The Hebrew word translated "rested" in Genesis 2:2-3 does not simply mean "ceased." Since it implies a formal period of rest, anti-Sabbatarians are wrong to teach that the 7th day of Creation simply represents a boundary day between God's creative activities and His non-creating activity. There are linguistic indicators that it is an extended ceasing that is spread out over the 24-hour period of the "yom" day, which, again, is book-ended to form an *inclusio*. This special resting makes it a good candidate for being the first Sabbath ever observed, and it precludes the anti-Sabbatarian claim that this passage could be used to teach that the rest that man is required to "observe" is merely an eternal spiritual rest.

WYNNE: The trouble, here, is that the act of ceasing only takes a moment but the rest from it can last forever. Informed anti-Sabbatarians do not teach that man is required to observe some kind of eternal spiritual rest to honor the 7th day. No resting is required of man at this point. The discussion is about God's rest— not man's. Again, for multiple times, the rest of Genesis 2 is God's rest— not man's rest. In any case, how could simply extending the special resting to cover 24 hours of this one day make it a good "candidate" for the first Sabbath? This argument simply doesn't follow. Anti-Sabbatarians do not have to demonstrate that God's resting was less than 24 hours to muster a solid defense. What He did is not indicated to be a pattern for man to follow. God stopped "working" and never worked again at creating Earth. The Seventh day of Creation

was never a candidate for the first Sabbath, much less a good one. The story is about what God did. Genesis 2:2-3 doesn't even say that Adam and Eve rested on the 7th day. Adam and Eve did not even qualify to keep the 7th day of Creation as a Sabbath ordinance, had one even existed at the time, because they had not worked for the previous six days. There can be no Sabbath without six days of prior work according to the details of the Sabbath commandment found in Exodus 20. Not only is the form of the word translated "rest" better translated "ceased," but the context, content, and structure of the passage support the concept that the 7th day WAS a boundary day between God's creating activity and his cessation from that creating activity. God did not indicate that man was to rest on the 7th day of Creation or on any subsequent multiple of it. Nor did He specify that man must conduct some kind of spiritual rest from that day on in order to memorialize the day upon which He ceased creating Planet Earth.

HOHMANN: Again, Knudson resorts to himself as his own authority, which when applied to anyone else is a logical fallacy. Regardless, it would appear that Knudson attempts to redefine his opponent's position (again) by saying we claim this is about "observing" an eternal spiritual rest, when in fact what is believed and taught is that this represents a rest one enters into through faith, as contrasted to the weekly Sabbath that was not entered into through faith, and was indeed a shadow of this rest we call "God's rest," which the author of Hebrews points out is entered into while it is still called "To day". Is this too cryptic for Sabbatarians? That seventh day shows having an open end through the lack of the phraseology found at the end of the other days, so that we understand that God is still in that rest, and we can enter into His rest while it is still called "To day" regardless of which day of the week it presently is. "To day" God is still in His rest. In an allegorical sense, He is still in that "day" of rest. The Sabbath, like so many other symbols found in Scripture, serves as a type or "shadow" of something spiritual; in this case it typifies a rest or ceasing that is permanent, as compared to the temporary rest or cessation from labor such as the Hebrew (Jew) enjoyed, and which came about, not every day, but once every seventh-day after 6 days of working. Faith had nothing to do with whether they entered into the weekly Sabbath. It came about, regardless. When the day was over, the Israelite had to resume a work that was vain in nature, eventually leading to death, despite their best efforts! Our assurance through faith is that we have passed from death to life. We no longer live and toil in a vain existence, seeing as our lives are now hidden in Christ. Our lives have meaning and purpose, where God is at the center of our existence. Can those who blindly kept the shadow weekly Sabbath, whose works God called ". . . evil even from their youth" have any true spiritual value? No more so than one who refrains from murdering another who still possesses that heart of stone in which one harbors hatred for another.

Lastly, I cannot help but wonder, if a Genesis weekly Sabbath was indeed established for mankind, why was God so cryptic about it that it requires such linguistic gymnastics to flesh it out of the narrative? With all the importance Sabbatarians attach to a Genesis Sabbath, there is an expectation it would be plainly so stated. God could hardly have been more explicit in the instructions given to the children of Israel. But here, in Genesis, the narrative requires contortions of interpretation by the Sabbatarian. It all begs the logical question, "How would one go about establishing a false belief held to be true when there is no plain statement to that effect? Answer? Pretty much the way we see Sabbatarians make the case for a weekly Sabbath instituted at Creation week!

KNUDSON: The close proximity of the account of God resting on the 7th day the fact that the newly created mankind were created in God's "image" shows that what God does at this point is exemplary for what mankind must do. Furthermore, the word translated REST—does not merely mean "ceased." Therefore, this passage teaches that all people must rest like God did on every 7th interval from the 7th day of Creation.

WYNNE: It does nothing of the sort! If I should bump into a bank robber, we are in close proximity with each other. However, the fact that we are in close proximity with each other does not mean that I am supposed to follow his example and rob a bank. Again, if Adam and Eve did what God did, they would have ceased all activity and never worked again. There is no known literary convention in English that establishes that the mention of two such things close together in a written work creates the requirement that an action by the former must be performed by the latter, much less at recurring intervals. What's with this fantastic claim? I suspect that there is no such literary convention in Ancient Hebrew either. Two writers of the Gospels tell about how Jesus cursed a fig tree. Jesus' disciples were in very close proximity to Him when He performed this surprising action. If we apply Knudson's principle to the cursing of the fig tree, all followers of Jesus would have to curse a fig tree.

HOHMANN: Another logical fallacy is a "Non Sequitur." This is where a conclusion is drawn that is not supported by the context. Knudson claims that because Moses mentions two things close together in the narrative—that God rested on the

7th day and that God created man in His image—it was Moses' intent to indicate that man was to follow God's example. This non-following il-logic is exactly the sort of wishful thinking you would expect from someone who is trying to make a case for a belief for which there is no "Thus saith the Lord." Do we see any evidence from Scripture this was the case then? Do we see Adam and Eve resting every Sabbath thereafter? Do we see any examples of anyone else prior to Exodus 16 getting the message that God needs be emulated in this regard? The straight facts without extrapolation state that God quit working on that seventh day and that He blessed and sanctified the day on which He quit His work of creating. Anything concluded beyond the scope of this is merely speculative and assumptive. These are methods commonly employed in deceptions. If we were to follow this kind of twisted logic we would be obligated to sacrifice one of our sons because God sacrificed His son and instructed Abraham to do the same!

THE WORD "SANCTIFIED" [HALLOWED]

Using the dictionary definitions below as a reference, observe that the form of the word translated "sanctify," means "consecrated" or "dedicated." The author of Genesis in this passage states that this one single day has been dedicated, or "set aside." The meaning that it is "set aside for a holy purpose" is permitted by this form of the word. In Exodus 20:8 however, the form of this word used is different, and it can mean something akin to being "set aside to be observed." We maintain that the word, "qadash," in Genesis 2:2-3 indicates that this one, single day in the history of Planet Earth was set aside for the holy use of "memorializing" God's completion and cessation of creative activity. Please study the following Hebrew dictionary definitions from two authoritative sources:

Gen 2:3 (KJV) ³And God^{H430} blessed^{H1288} the seventh^{H7637} day^{H3117}, and **sanctified**^{H6942} it: because^{H3588} that in it he had rested^{H7673} from all^{H3605} his work^{H4399} which^{H834} God^{H430} created^{H1254} and made^{H6213}.

STRONG'S #6942 – QADASH

qadash: to be set apart or consecrated Original Word: **קָדַשׁ**

Part of Speech: Verb

Transliteration: qadash

Phonetic Spelling: (kaw-dash')

Short Definition: consecrate

Word Origin

denominative verb from [qodesh](#)

Definition: to be set apart or consecrated

NASB Translation

(1) become consecrated (2), become defiled (1), become holy (1), consecrate (43), consecrated (35), consecrates (7), consecration (2), declare holy (1), dedicate (2), dedicated (8), dedicating (1), holier (1), holy (5), keep (1), keep it holy (2), keep the holy (3), made it holy (1), manifest my holiness (2), prepare (2), prove myself holy (2), proved himself holy (1), purified (1), regard as holy (1), sanctified (9), sanctifies (10), sanctify (12), set them apart (1), set apart (4), set apart the consecrated (2), show himself holy (1), transmit holiness (2), treat me as holy (3), treated as holy (1), vindicate the holiness (1), wholly dedicate (1).

Credit: BibleSuite.Com

BROWN-DRIVER-BRIGGS – QADASH-STRONG'S HEBREW WORD #6942

Another source, *Brown-Driver-Briggs*, gives the following definitions. Note that a secondary use of this word can mean "to set aside for religious services," but this definition is EXCLUDED from Genesis 2:2-3 but is accepted in Exodus 20 and other later texts. The first meaning of the exact form of the word as used in Genesis 2 is "to set apart." Editor's notes are in red type and separated from the sources by brackets. Note that this word has at least three forms and that sometimes the different forms have variants with their respective definitions. The following entry, for example, lists two variants of the Pi'el form with their different meanings and the texts in which those variants are found:

verb denominative be set apart, consecrated (Gerber^{238ff}); —

Qal Perfect3masculine singular ק' [Exodus 29:21](#); suffix קדשתיך [Isaiah 65:5](#); 3masculine plural קדשו [Numbers 17:2](#); **Imperfect**3masculine singular י' קדש [Samuel 21:6](#); יקדש [Exodus 29:37](#) +, etc.; —

1. *be set apart, consecrated, hallowed, of shew-bread* [1 Samuel 21:6](#) (dubious Passage, but compare especially RS^{Semitic i. 436; 2nd ed. 455} [also Dr^{sm.293}], who proposes יקדש); Aaron and his sons by blood [Exodus 29:21](#) (P); other persons [Isaiah 65:5](#) (Di; but

Pi`el Gei RS^{Semitic i. 431; 2nd ed. 451} Che Du Buhl).

2. *be hallowed, by contact with sacred things, and so tabooed from profane use, of forfeited to sanctuary* [Exodus 29:37](#); [Exodus 30:29](#); [Leviticus 6:11](#); [Leviticus 6:20](#) [Numbers 17:2](#); [Numbers 17:3](#) (P), [Haggai 2:12](#).

3. *consecrated, tabooed (above)* [Deuteronomy 22:9](#) (law against mixtures).

Niph`al Perfect. 3 masculine singular נקדש [Isaiah 5:16](#); [Exodus 29:43](#), etc.; **Imperfect**3masculine singular ויקדש [Numbers 20:13](#); 1singular אקדש [Leviticus 10:3](#); **Infinitive construct.** suffix הקדש [Ezekiel 36:23](#); [Ezekiel 38:16](#);

1. *shew oneself sacred, majestic:*

c. ב' person, + לעיני [Ezekiel 20:41](#); [Ezekiel 28:25](#); [Ezekiel 36:23](#); [Ezekiel 38:16](#); [Ezekiel 39:27](#); with ב' [Isaiah 5:16](#); [Ezekiel 28:22](#), compare [Numbers 20:13](#) (P).

2. *be honoured or treated as sacred* נכבד [Leviticus 10:3](#) (P); opposed to חללשם [Leviticus 22:32](#) (P).

3. *be consecrated, dedicated, by* י' כבוד [Exodus 29:43](#) (P).

Pi`el Perfect3masculine singular קדש [Numbers 6:11](#); [1 Kings 8:64](#), etc.; **Imperfect**3masculine singular יקדש [Genesis 2:3](#) +, etc.; **Imperative** masculine singular קדש [Joshua 7:13](#); קדש [Exodus 13:2](#), etc.; **Infinitive construct** קדש [Exodus 29:1](#) +, etc.; **Participle** מקדש [Exodus 37:28](#); suffix מקדשכם [Exodus 31:13](#) +, etc.; — **[Note Genesis 2:3 uses this variant of the Pi`el form, which means, “be consecrated, dedicated, by]**

1. *set apart as sacred, consecrate, dedicate:*

a. places: Sinai [Exodus 19:23](#) (J), alter, etc., [Exodus 29:36,37](#); [Exodus 30:29](#) (P), tabernacle, etc. [Exodus 40:9,10,11](#); [Leviticus 8:10,11,15](#); [Numbers 7:1](#) (twice in verse) (P); tent of meeting [Exodus 29:44](#) (P); place of sacrifice [1 Kings 8:64](#) [2Chronicles 7:7](#); gate [Nehemiah 3:1](#) (twice in verse); — [Ezekiel 7:24](#) see מקדש below

b. wave-offering [Exodus 29:27](#) (P).

c. persons: priests [Exodus 28:3,41](#); [Exodus 29:1,33,44](#); [Exodus 30:30](#); [Exodus 40:13](#); [Leviticus 8:12,30](#); firstborn [Exodus 13:2](#) (P); keepers of ark [1 Samuel 7:1](#).

d. 7th day (by God) [Genesis 2:3](#); [Exodus 20:11](#) (P). **[Ed. Note: Gen. 2:3 simply means “set apart—not set apart for sacred services.]**

2. *observe as holy, keep sacred:* feasts, Sabbath [Exodus 20:8](#) = [Deuteronomy 5:12](#) (Decal.), [Jeremiah 17:22,24,27](#); [Ezekiel 20:20](#); [Ezekiel 44:24](#); [Nehemiah 13:22](#); fast [Joel 1:14](#); [Joel 2:15](#); year of Jubilee

[Leviticus](#) [HYPERLINK "http://interlinearbible.org/leviticus/25-10.htm"](http://interlinearbible.org/leviticus/25-10.htm)25:10 (P); so עזרה לבעל [Kings 10:20](#).

[Editor's Note: this is not the variant of the pi`el form used in Genesis 2:2-3. Therefore, it cannot mean observe as holy, or keep sacred; so it is not a responsible interpretation to try to make it mean that the day was set aside for sacred services.]

3. *honour as sacred, hallow:*

a. God [Deuteronomy 32:51](#), his name [Exodus 36:23](#).

b priest [Leviticus 21:8](#) (H).

4. *consecrate* by purification:

Credit: BibleSuite.Com

KNUDSON'S OBJECTIONS

KNUDSON: The word translated as “HALLOWED” is parsed as Piel Imperfect 3rd Person Masculine Singular. If the author of Genesis has used the perfect tense of this word, it would imply a completed action. However, the imperfect refers to an on-going action that was not completed. This word, properly understood, implies that every 7th day thereafter was specially set aside. The implications of the tense of the verb—a grammatical consideration—trumps everything else. Again, the Piel form of the verb intensifies it so that it is most fully represented by the translation, “He caused to be set apart.”

AUTHORS: Of course the day was set apart! No one is arguing that the 7th day did not get set apart. But the on-going action that was not completed sounds perfectly natural in the context that when a day is set aside from all the other days, the action has continuous results that CANNOT be completed because that set-aside day is suspended in the action of being set aside. But the claim that the use of a tense that means the action was not completed possesses no such magic to transform one day into an endless number of days, much less days that can figure out the neat trick of jumping over six days at a time and landing on the 7th interval of the initial one. How could Knudson explain the logic of this claim? There is no explanation—just a wish and a hope. If the writer’s intent was not to indicate that this one day was set aside by God, no day would have been set aside to later tempt someone into thinking that the writer’s intent was that this one day and every multiple of it thereafter was to be set aside.

In Genesis 2:2-3 the writer does not seem to be trying to say anything profound. He reported what God did on that day. It was set aside as a day that was to be remembered. It was set aside for this express purpose before there was a Jewish Sabbath, and it is still set aside to be remembered after the Sabbath perished at the cross. There is nothing to stop it from being remembered. Christians still remember it even though they don’t keep the Jewish Sabbath.

Creation Week was a member of a set of things God could have chosen to use as a model to design and implement a cultic ritual to remind the Hebrews that He had rescued them from Egyptian slavery. For example, He could have made a five day week based on the four sides of a pyramid for working with the pinnacle point at the top representing the day when their labor stopped as a model for the Sabbath. Also, the four phases of the Moon are approximately seven days in length, and God indicated in Genesis 1 that He gave Planet Earth, the moon, and the sun to mark the times for sacred days. Also, our research suggests that it is highly likely that the Hebrews were familiar with a seven-day sabbath concept because there is evidence that the Egyptians utilized a pagan lunar sabbath system while the Hebrews were there.

As always, we are back to a key point of contention. Knudson is a linguist with an impressive knowledge of the Hebrew language. The problem is that he has just enough knowledge to get himself into trouble. Few rabbis in Israel today have an expert knowledge of Ancient Hebrew, and Knudson would like us to think that he knows enough about this language to act as his own authority in translating its special shades of meaning to us? As a general rule, informed rabbis throughout the history of Judaism have not taught that the Sabbath existed before the giving of the Manna. Again, the translation of the *Mishnah* by Dr. Reuven Brauner into English now provides English-speaking scholars with proof that the Jews have always held that Gentiles who lived within the borders of Israel were accountable to the Seven Laws of Noah, which did not include a Sabbath commandment. Recall that Israel, from the very beginning of its history, believed that Gentiles who attempted to keep the Sabbath were to be stoned. Why should Knudson expect to be able to win, on his own steam, against a long and distinguished history of Jewish opinion to the contrary? We have referenced these authorities and others who testify that there is no Sabbath in Genesis. We have also reported the views of other scholars who have explained the significance of the naturally occurring, unbounded rest of God discussed in regard to the seventh day of Creation.

KNUDSON: In his paper, “The Sabbath and Genesis 2:2-3,” H. Ross Coe, a Seventh-day Adventist writer, defends the presence of a Sabbath in Genesis very well, using arguments from Hebrew structure and grammar. You need to read his paper. His arguments from Hebrew grammar and structure are strong.

WYNNE: Understanding this next quote from Coe’s paper, some knowledge of Hebrew’s fine shades of meaning inherent within the tense of Hebrew verbs is needed. I adopted the following explanation from an authority on Hebrew grammar,

Ronald J. Williams of the University of Toronto in his *Williams' Hebrew Syntax*, Third Edition, by Ronald J. Williams, University Of Toronto Press, Inc., 2007, which is available on Google Books: FACTITIVE PIEL FORM – If a verb has a factitive meaning in the Piel, then the subject of the verb in the Piel causes its direct object to enter a state that can be described by the same verb in the Qal. For example, the subject of the Piel in “he glorified” causes the direct object to enter the state described by that verb in the Qal, as in “he was glorious”. CAUSATIVE PIEL- Whereas “factitive” refers to causing a state, ‘causative’ refers to causing an action. Causative verbs are rare in the Piel and Pual. The subject of a causative verb causes the direct object to do some action. For example, in “They made him sing,” the subject “they” causes the direct object “him” to do the action “to sing,” so the verb “to make” has a causative meaning in that sentence.

Coe, our SDA apologist, argues that the tense of the verb chosen by the writer of Genesis 2:2-3 indicates a degree of immediacy plus an element of a declarative announcement which, to him, conclusively demonstrates that the 7th day was made into a Sabbath ordinance on that very day. Note that we are not able to print the Hebrew characters in this extensive quote from Coe, so Coe’s quote is modified for best understanding without them. We are talking about the Hebrew word for “set aside” in both cases:

The clearest evidence in favor of the Sabbath as a Creation ordinance comes from a close study of the statement, “and he sanctified it” in Genesis 2:3.

Some interpreters have attempted to separate the divine sanctification of the seventh day from the institution of the Sabbath. For example, R.J. Griffith has suggested that at Creation “God blessed and set apart the day for its future use as a day of rest and worship for Israel under the Law . . . In like manner He set apart Jeremiah while in the womb (Jer. 1:5), though his ministry as a prophet did not commence until years later [Richard James Griffith, “The Eschatological Significance of the Sabbath” (Th.D. dissertation, Dallas Theological Seminary, 1999), 32, 43-49].]

The difference between Jeremiah and the seventh day is that Jeremiah had to be born, grow, and mature before he could assume the prophetic office, whereas the seventh day is an impersonal abstract object that does not require growth or maturity. However, the most basic problem with this proposal is that it automatically equates the use of the Piel stem [of the Hebrew word to sanctify in Genesis 2:3] with the use of the Hiphil stem of the same verb in Jeremiah 1:5.

Stative Qal verbs . . . form factitives in the Piel and causatives in the Hiphil [Bruce K. Waltke and M. O’Connor, *Introduction to Biblical Hebrew Syntax* (Winona Lake, IN: Eisenbrauns, 1990), 400,437.] It is true that factitives and causatives lie so close together in meaning that often “the English tends to blur the distinction [Ibid., p. 438]. However, a good case has been made that there is a real distinction, consisting primarily in the notion that Piel factitives “direct attention to the results of the situation apart from the event,” while Hiphil causatives refer to “the process” involved [Ibid.]. The use of the Hiphil stem [of this verb] in Jeremiah 1:5 would thus stress the process by which YHWH set Jeremiah apart as a prophet even before birth, irrespective of when he might actually assume the prophetic office. However, the use of the Piel stem of [the word for sanctified] in Genesis 2:3 would stress that here is an action whose results are evident immediately, and the canonical picture of the Creation origin of the Sabbath would be clearly affirmed. (H. Ross Coe, “The Sabbath in Genesis 2:2-3, Andrews University Seminary Studies, Vol. 41, No. 1,5-12. Copyright Andrews University Press, 2003.)

It was immediately evident that this one day—the 7th day of Creation—was considered by God to be such a special day that it was to be set aside to be remembered forever, but what kind of magic is present that turns one day into unlimited multiples of itself that go on forever? Perhaps Coe has presented a good case for the 7th day of Creation receiving special recognition at the very time of Creation, but he has not provided any evidence that would explain how the blessing and memory bestowed upon this one day would magically travel six more days down the line and jump on the next 7th day and continue to do that forever—even after this world’s sun grows cold and the eternally saved are living on a new planet going around a new sun in another dimension in another universe. What would happen to the memory of this day on the six days in between? Coe continues:

It is possible to specify the significance of the use of the Piel stem of [the word “sanctified”] in Genesis 2:3 even further. “The factitive Piel can be the result of a sensory causation, causation, a mental change or a speech act that reflects a mental change [Waltke and O’Connor, p. 401]. In cases of psychological causation, the Piel is designated as estimative, while in cases of linguistic causation, it is designated as

declarative/delocutive [Ibid., p. 402]. Apart from Gen 2:3 and the reference of Exodus 20:11, the Piel stem of is used, with a period of time as its object, a total of thirteen times in the OT. There is no instance of a "real" factitive Piel in this list, as is to be expected, given the abstract nature of time. However, it is used as an estimative Piel eight times and as a declarative Piel five times. In Genesis 2:3 and Exodus 20:11, the estimative use of the Piel can be ruled out since these texts do not state that God sanctified the seventh day by stopping all activity on it. Instead, they state that he sanctified it because he then ceased his work. Accordingly, the Piel in these instances must be declarative, with an emphasis on the public proclamation of the sanctity of the seventh day right at the time of Creation." A grammatical analysis of the statement, "and he sanctified it [the seventh day]"; Gen 2:3) thus provides persuasive evidence in favor of the Sabbath being presented here as a Creation ordinance. (H. Ross Coe, "The Sabbath in Genesis 2:2-3," Andrews University Seminary Studies, Vol. 41, No. 1,5-12. Copyright Andrews University Press, 2003.)

No matter how loud you shout something—no matter how magnificently you proclaim something from the top of a mountain—it cannot transform ONE day of resting in the history of Planet Earth into an unlimited number of days of resting in the future. If the memory and blessing of this ONE day is to be remembered forever, the blessing and memory of it have to sit on top of every single day thereafter. This understanding dove-tails nicely in relation to Psalms 95 and Hebrews 4, which teach that Israel never achieved the rest that God had planned for them, Sabbath or no Sabbath.

If the Bible story took us only as far as the crossing of the Red Sea, it would never occur to anyone that multiples of the 7th day of Creation were intended in Genesis 2:2-3. Where is the "Thus saith the Lord" content in Genesis 2:2-3 to establish a doctrine that would affect Jews and non-Jews beyond the known Universe for eternity? It just isn't there! The story of the Exodus so clearly excludes the possibility of a Creation origin for the Sabbath that any attempt to read one into it suggests that Sabbatarianism is a wishful doctrine in search of support.

HOHMANN: What we have witnessed so far in this dialog is a case where very specific recent linguistic studies of Hebrew and the precursors of Ancient Hebrew by both rabbinical and Christian scholars with expert backgrounds are summarily dismissed and replaced by extremely general linguistic concepts theorized by non-expert Sabbatarian apologists. What is lacking by the pro-Sabbatarian crowd is any scholarly rebuttal of the linguistic findings by these experts that point out the impossibility of a Creation content in Genesis that would establish a weekly Sabbath. Instead, they offer up a parallel examination of Genesis 2, drawing opposite conclusions. This approach does not demonstrate proper biblical scholarship and hermeneutics. It does demonstrate what is commonly practiced as a form of indoctrination. Proper scholarship demands

that one examine ALL the evidence to the contrary, and explain, convincingly, using the proper methods of scholarship, why and how the evidence to the contrary does not actually contradict one's position. This has not been done by these Sabbatarian apologists. The linguistic studies of Carson, et. al. were simply dismissed out of hand. They are treated as though they do not exist. The unspoken claim that results is that all the other Hebrew scholars— admittedly with a greater background and understanding regarding Hebrew and the linguistics of Hebrew— got it wrong! It is a fiat declaration, pulled out of thin air. Again, Sabbatarians have provided nothing of substance to demonstrate why and how the greater experts down through history are wrong. All they have done is offer up an alternative linguistic interpretation that contradicts the findings of both Jewish and Christian scholars throughout history. Sabbatarians have a vested interest in the outcome, and judging by the other doctrines they hold true, and the scholarship behind them, we would do well to take what they say and teach with the proverbial grain of salt.

We need to ask though a fairly logical question, availing ourselves of our critical thinking skills. If the weekly Sabbath was indeed established on that seventh day of the Creation Week, why not a simple declaration to that effect? Why would God disguise something as "important" as the Sabbath, and force us to reject the simple sense of the text in question for a more convoluted interpretation? Of those seven days of this "Creation Week", God blessed and sanctified the seventh or last day of this progression of days. God "set apart" that seventh day. But the SDA interpretation redefines what it means to be "set apart" by claiming it now "includes" every seventh day thereafter! Once you start redefining how words are defined, making exceptions to them; compromising with them, you will in turn compromise with more, and this is how some deceptions take root and grow. God sanctified that seventh day. He set it apart. He made it unique. The bottom line fact here is that these SDA apologists are negating what God has declared. They are adding the weekly Sabbath to a day that God set apart, claiming the two are in "fact" the same thing. You have to reject what God did in order to accept what the SDA apologists are trying to do. Who then are you going to believe? If the seventh day was "sanctified" then it was set apart as unique in and of

itself. It cannot be a part of a recurring day or event and remain sanctified.

KNUDSON: Thus the sum of the evidence is that the *inclusio* serves as a pattern for the continuation of the blessing that began on the initial Seventh day of Creation. The Seventh day of Creation was set aside from the week as holy and the imperfect form of the verb shows that this incomplete action continues in every subsequent week. The Hebrew grammar and literary techniques used by Moses are unequivocal on this point. Without an anti-Sabbatarian bias, it is clear that God intended to spend time with humanity on every Seventh-day after the first one. All the features of this passage come together to show that the Sabbath was an institution God instituted for his *imago dei* to repeat after Him.

AUTHORS: It does no such thing. The pattern of recurring Sabbath days you want to see here would fall outside of the book-ends. You can't have your cake and eat it too. What continues is God's rest, since we are not talking about any rest of any kind for man. No verb tense is capable of empowering the word "sanctify" to first set aside this one seventh-day and then cause that same sanctification to leap over six more days, land on the next 7th day multiple of itself, and then follow this pattern forever after. This is not even a new trick for a new dog to learn. And how could all of the verb tenses and structures Knudson talks about add up to demonstrate, unequivocally, that God intended to spend special time with the human race every seventh-day thereafter? This assumption is as imaginative as it gets.

Unfortunately the Hebrew grammar and literary techniques used in Genesis 2:2-3 do not produce an unequivocal statement useful to either side based on this one word alone. Following this method of Bible study, one could prove anything from the Bible. If it isn't there, just put it there!

Putting a halt to all this speculation is Jesus' own statement that the Sabbath was made for man—thus powerfully communicating to His hearers via the cultural "language" of His time that the Heathen "dogs" were excluded. If Jesus had not done so with this statement, confining the application of the Sabbath to Jews only by excluding the Gentile "dogs," the Jews would have attempted to stone Him for blasphemy. The Jews of His day knew that the Sabbath was for Jews only and that a Gentile must become a proselytized convert to keep the Law of Moses, including the Sabbath. The penalty for Gentiles who kept the Sabbath without being circumcised was to be stoned to death.

Colossians 2:14-17 forbids the church to require Sabbath observance of its new Gentile converts. Furthermore, in all the lists of sins spelled out in the New Testament, Sabbath-breaking is not even mentioned once.

God rescued the Israelites from the slavery of Egypt. Deductive exegesis readily demonstrates that the Ten Commandments are equivalent to the Old Covenant, the work of Robert K. Sanders being particularly definitive in this case. Sabbath keepers "forget" to "remember" the command that God gave in the Ten Commandments to "remember that they were slaves in Egypt as the reason for "observing" the Sabbath.

Deut. 5:15 (NIV) ¹⁵*Remember that you were slaves in Egypt and that the LORD your God brought you out of there with a mighty hand and an outstretched arm. Therefore the LORD your God has commanded you to observe the Sabbath day.*)

(See http://www.truthorfables.com/Sabbath_Not_A_Law.htm)

God said that the Old Covenant was to be replaced with a new covenant that would be very different. Only the Old Covenant included the Sabbath. Furthermore, Sabbath-keeping was permitted only for those who were circumcised whether they were Hebrews or proselytes. The Council of Jerusalem decided against circumcision for the Gentiles, thus settling the Sabbath question forever. You would expect that if the Sabbath were an eternally binding requirement for the people of God, the apostles would have noted it as such when it came to teaching the Gentiles.

The Sabbath ordinance is NOT in Genesis 2:2-3. If there was a Sabbath commandment given during Creation Week, the passage does not tell us so. It doesn't specify that Adam and Eve rested on it, much less what they were supposed to do thereafter. God accomplished the memorialization of this one day by indicating that the blessing of it was to be remembered without boundaries. This one day was to be remembered as long as there would be people to hear about it. Scripture is full of both evidence as well as proof, that the Sabbath did not exist until the Exodus and that it represented a temporary cultic ritual imposed on Israel between Sinai and the Cross. At the Cross all 613 requirements of the Law of Moses as a codified law perished for Israel.

Claiming one must keep the Sabbath in order to be saved or to maintain one's salvation is to falsify the Gospel, no matter how well-intended that belief might be. Salvation is by Grace alone³. Even the act of mustering up the Faith to obtain that Grace has no merit since without the work of the Holy Spirit, a person would not even be interested in mustering it. If you were to ask a Sabbatarian within the SDA Church if believers are saved by faith, the answer will be “yes” until you ask them what happens to their salvation if they should quit keeping the Sabbath. They will avoid answering the question because there is no answer. If you get an answer, it won't make sense. You can't have your cake and eat it too. Either you have to DO something to be saved or you DON'T HAVE TO DO ANYTHING to be saved. The Sabbath is something you must DO. It is not like the other nine of the Ten Commandments will tell us what we are NOT TO DO.

If you try to make the case that all mankind is obligated to keep the Sabbath, you open up at least two more theological problems. First, Christians are dead to sin. The Christian covenant declares that God no longer remembers one's sins. A Sabbath requirement resurrects a Christian back to sin, and makes God out to be a liar, where He does remember sin after all. There is much, much more involved than the Sabbatarian wishes to address regarding the consequences of a Sabbatarian theology.

John 3:16 - 21 (NIV) ¹⁶“For God so loved the world that he gave his one and only Son, that **whoever believes in him shall not perish but have eternal life.** ¹⁷For God did not send his Son into the world to condemn the world, but to save the world through him. ¹⁸**Whoever believes in him is not condemned,** but whoever does not believe stands condemned already because he has not believed in the name of God's one and only Son. ¹⁹This is the verdict: Light has come into the world, but men loved darkness instead of light because their deeds were evil. ²⁰Everyone who does evil hates the light, and will not come into the light for fear that his deeds will be exposed. ²¹But whoever lives by the truth comes into the light, so that it may be seen plainly that what he has done has been done through God.”

Acts 16:29 - 34 (NIV) ²⁹The jailer called for lights, rushed in and fell trembling before Paul and Silas. ³⁰He then brought them out and asked, **“Sirs, what must I do to be saved?”** ³¹They replied, **“Believe in the Lord Jesus, and you will be saved—you and your household.”** ³²Then they spoke the word of the Lord to him and to all the others in his house. ³³At that hour of the night the jailer took them and washed their wounds; then immediately he and all his family were baptized. ³⁴The jailer brought them into his house and set a meal before them; he was filled with joy because he had come to believe in God—he and his whole family.

Rom 5:9 - 11 (NIV) - ⁹**Since we have now been justified by his blood,** how much more shall we be saved from God's wrath through him! ¹⁰For if, when we were God's enemies, we were reconciled to him through the death of his Son, how much more, having been reconciled, shall we be saved through his life! ¹¹Not only is this so, but we also rejoice in God through our Lord Jesus Christ, through whom we have now received reconciliation.

The second problem is that under the terms of the New Covenant, it is the Holy Spirit—not the “Law”—that guides the Christian in all things. Those who are living in Christ and saved by Grace are those who follow the leading of the Holy Spirit. If Christians are supposed to keep the Sabbath, then the expectation would be that the Holy Spirit would be guiding them to keep it in the manner established in Scripture. However, the Sabbatharians of today do not keep the Sabbath in the manner prescribed by Scripture. They “keep” the Sabbath according to the dictates of men, or more specifically, Ellen G. White, and ignore both the Old Covenant requirements and what Jesus, the “Lord” of the Sabbath, had to say in regards to keeping the Sabbath. Jesus healed on the Sabbath. Larry Dean points out that none of the healing miracles Christ performed would be allowed on the Sabbath at Seventh-day Adventist Hospitals, according to the Church's own written policy. This greatly flawed Sabbath-keeping is certainly no evidence that they are being led by the Spirit! Sabbath-keepers are supposed to stay in their own dwellings, yet Sabbath-keepers drive to church on Saturday. Also, no fires were to be lit on the Sabbath. Every time the furnace comes on in an Adventist Church during the winter, a fire has been lit. (May the pilot light have been started on a week-day!) If the furnace is one of those new gas types with automatic ignition and no pilot light, the Sabbath is broken every time the furnace kicks on! The list goes on and on!

SHIRLEY - Keeping a Sabbath requires that no one should work for you, not even the menservants or maidservants. So to

3 Ephesians 2:8-9 – (Note: **through faith** which is the gift of God. Pray for faith.)

keep a Sabbath with electricity to flip the electric circuit breaker on Friday evening because people are working to keep that electricity flowing! Turn off the gas, water, and Internet. All these services employ people to keep them running on Saturday.

HOHMANN: Reiterating what Knudson wrote here: "[Without an anti-Sabbatarian bias, it is clear that God intended to continue to spend time with humanity on every Seventh-day after the first one.](#)"

Adam and Eve were in the presence of God as long as they were there in the Garden of Eden. The setting there is before man's fall. There was no need to wait for the Sabbath for God to spend time with "humanity." What we are seeing here is Knudson's pro-Sabbatarian bias coming through in his accusative language against the anti-Sabbatarian position, where the believer is always now in the presence of God, God now dwelling in the believer.

THE ORIGINS AND DEVELOPMENT OF ANCIENT HEBREW

Rabbinical Judaism gives 1391 to 1271 BCE as a likely life-span for Moses, and Christian tradition has assumed a much earlier date (www.crystalinks.com, article, "Moses"). A primitive form of what might possibly be a precursor to Ancient Hebrew appears to have begun to emerge from the Canaanite family of languages not long before the time of King David. This proto-Hebrew language developed into its final Ancient Hebrew form sometime after the reign of King David. Looking at things from the perspective of this time in Israel's early history, the evolution of the language would have been slow. Each generation of scribes might have had to up-date the language in increments, but they would have no trouble understanding the current version they were working with and up-dating it to a somewhat more "modern" usage, much like the Bible was up-dated from something like the *King James Version* to *The New International Version* that many use today.

The concept that the Hebrew language had not fully evolved into Ancient Hebrew by the time of King David is verified by recent archaeological discoveries of artifacts with inscriptions that date back to the 10th Century BCE, including one found at a dig in a village believed to have been built near the time of the early Kingdom of Judah. While these discoveries have helped establish the authenticity of the biblical stories of the first kings of Judah, they reveal that the written form of the language was only remotely similar to Ancient Hebrew. In fact these inscriptions are currently undecipherable as of July 2015.

The Canaanite group of languages formed a branch of the Northwest Semitic family of languages (*Wikipedia* article, "Hebrew Language"). From Moses through the period of the Judges, the descendants of Abraham spoke a precursor to Ancient Hebrew. The original language that Moses used to compile *Genesis* from a collection of cuneiform tablets and oral tradition might have been a form of Egyptian or a still earlier form of one of the Canaanitish family of languages. It may have been translated and re-translated many times as the language spoken by Israel evolved during the period of the Judges up through and beyond the time of King David when it finally got into the Ancient Hebrew language that we think of as its "original" language.

The scribes responsible for safe-guarding the Pentateuch (the first five books of the Bible credited to Moses' authorship) over the centuries between the Exodus and the Captivity undoubtedly confronted significant challenges. **This fact should make us more reluctant than ever to formulate a globally applicable Christian doctrine on parts of the Pentateuch that are just telling a story.** It is one thing to base a Christian doctrine on a statement credited to God that reads with perfect clarity, such as "Thou shalt not steal," but it is another thing to base the doctrine that all people must keep the Sabbath for now and eternity on a passage that tells the story of what God did on a certain day in the history of Planet Earth. All other facets of Scripture teach that the Sabbath was for no one else but the children of Israel. Even Jesus excluded the Heathen "dogs" from the Sabbath. The only possible hope Sabbatarians have to make the Sabbath a universal requirement is to prove there is a Sabbath at Creation. This simply cannot be done without violating proper methods of interpretation and scholarship.

The fact that Moses' books probably went through additional steps of translation prior to settling into its Ancient Hebrew form does not provide any support for the skeptical point of view that the events he described were not real. Even if all of the Book of Genesis came to Moses in oral form, this would be an inadequate excuse to disbelieve the truth of what he wrote. Scholars understand that in many primitive societies, important histories have been memorized word-for-word and passed down from one generation to the next. This process was considered to be sacred.

One of the world's greatest guitarists has an amazing photographic memory. It is not unreasonable to assume that in the early generations of human history, a high percentage of the population had photographic memories that would facilitate the

maintenance of highly accurate oral histories.

Furthermore, it is far more likely that Moses assembled the *Book of Genesis* from cuneiform tablets that were handed down to the patriarchs, then to Joseph in Egypt, and were preserved by the Hebrews during their captivity. The astonishing thing is that modern archaeology has known since no later than 1936 that writing on cuneiform tablets was a normal every-day thing 1,000 years prior to the birth of Moses. For example, wives would write letters to their businessmen husbands across the country, sending it via the postal service. A typical letter might read something like, “My dear husband, the kids are doing fine and all is well here at home. I hope you are making lots of money for us wherever you are. And. By the way. Could you stop at the bazaar on the way home and get me a swath of purple so I can make me and the girls matching dresses? May the gods be with you, and may I see your face soon. Sincerely, your loving wife, Zeldessa.”

In 1936 an archaeologist by the name of P. J. Wiseman published a book entitled *New Discoveries in Babylonia about Genesis*. He had been digging up cuneiform tablets for years in Babylonia and surrounding areas. He noted that the *Book of Genesis* appeared to have been assembled from a set of cuneiform tablets that were likely passed down to him through time and that Moses put them together in chronological order. He pointed out that just like the cuneiform tablets place the title announcement at the end of side two, so the various sections of *Genesis* that are so obvious upon analysis always place the title notice at the end, rather than the beginning, of the section. For example, if the text of *Genesis* says something like, “These are the generations of Noah,” this notice describes what comes before it rather than what comes after it. All in all, Wiseman’s findings should have silenced the higher critics who complained that it looked like *Genesis* was written by multiple authors—because the evidence points strongly to the idea that it indeed *was* written by many different writers on cuneiform tablets and that Moses was simply the compiler. What is exciting about all of this, however, is that the evidence suggests that Moses had written records as well as oral tradition to provide him with the basis for the *Book of Genesis*.

For the purpose of this book, the implication is this: Moses got at least some of his information from human sources—not from a direct revelation from God—for the *Book of Genesis*. While Christians believe that God had His hand in this process, it is even more dangerous than we may have realized to base key Christian doctrines on isolated, obscure passages from the *Pentateuch*. We had better take Moses for his word. He clearly identifies what information came directly from God in his writings. We must now assume, thanks to Wiseman’s work, that anything else came from a long heritage of cuneiform tablets that began to be written by the patriarchs for at least 1,000 years prior to Moses.

As the *Pentateuch* was up-dated from one of the Canaanite languages over time into Ancient Hebrew, nothing was placed in the text of *Genesis* 2:2-3 to suggest that the seventh day was more than 24 hours in length. Nothing was said about either God or man “kneeling down” on every interval of the 7th day of Creation. This day was to be set aside forever to be remembered as the day the creating of Planet Earth was completed. Moses was telling a story, choosing his words carefully to prevent his future readers from seeing things in his account that weren’t there. In the translation up-dates between the *Exodus* and the time when the *Pentateuch* took its final shape in Ancient Hebrew, the translators were successful in preserving these key distinctions.

Because Moses wrote both the account of Creation and the giving of the Law from Mt. Sinai, he likely recognized the need to make these critical clarifications with the appropriate language “tools” he had at his disposal. If these tools were not characteristic of the original language Moses used, the translators who brought the books of Moses into the Ancient Hebrew used the tools they had to make clear what they understood Moses to mean. Note that if this is the case, they were closer in time to the earlier languages that it might have been written in—perhaps like the translators of the *New International Version* are in relationship to the translators of the *King James Version*.

Thanks to the inspiration of God through Moses and/or the translators between Moses’ original language and the Ancient Hebrew, Israel and its Levitical and rabbinical scholars never generally believed the Sabbath was intended for anyone else but them, and they generally always believed the Sabbath was introduced for the first time in the history of the world with the giving of the Manna. **if you want to understand the perspective of Bible writers on the Sabbath, you must understand the perspective of the Jews on the Sabbath. Why? Because those who preserved the Bible were JEWS.**

HEBREW LINGUISTICS BARRIER:

Cultural Factors And Word Usage Influences On Translation

Other than a misreading of *Genesis* 2:2-3, the only other Bible text that appears on the surface to teach a universal Sabbath

requirement is **Mark 2:27**. All other Sabbath-related passages band together to form a sturdy chain of concepts which work together to teach that the Sabbath was a distinguishing identifier for Israel between Mt. Sinai and the Cross. In **Mark 2:27**, Jesus said that the Sabbath was “made for man.” Later we will demonstrate that by indicating that the Sabbath was intended for the Jewish “humans,” versus the Heathen “dogs,” Jesus restricted the application of the Sabbath ordinance to the Jews. In doing so, Jesus validated the principle that the Sabbath is subordinate to the Ordinance of Circumcision. He also most likely prevented Himself from an attempted stoning, since the slightest suggestion that the Gentiles were included in the ordinance of the Sabbath would have incited the crowd like almost nothing else.

Recall that elsewhere Jesus illustrated the principle that the Sabbath is subordinate to the Ordinance of Circumcision when He called attention to the fact that the Jews circumcised a male child on the 8th day of his life even if that eighth day fell on the Sabbath. It is Jeff Benner of the Ancient Hebrew Research Center, who says that it is not possible to understand Ancient Hebrew without knowing its cultural context. His definition of some Hebrew or Greek words differ in some cases from those of other scholars because he has applied cultural studies to understand the various influences which affected what the Old Testament writers wrote.

Language changes significantly even over a few centuries. In the King James Era the word "let" meant to hinder or prevent. Now, less than 500 years later it means the opposite— to allow or permit. Imagine a language that changed like this for thousands of years, and you will understand how language’s constant change creates problems for translators working millennia later! Take the epic poem, *Beowulf*, which is believed to have been composed between the 8th and 11th centuries. Most of its content was written in Old English. Although the language is “English,” it is mostly unintelligible to the modern English reader. Today, even a person who speaks English as his or her native language will have to read an English to English translation of it to get very much out of the story.

BENNER ON TRANSLATING ANCIENT HEBREW

Until the early 1980’s Sabbatarians never had to face the findings of advanced Hebrew linguistic studies to any significant degree. Benner teaches that Ancient Hebrew communicates meaning **through structural patterns and usage conventions that transcend word translation accuracy or the understanding of idioms**. Readers with a strong interest in understanding these principles should study his work at the Ancient Hebrew Research Center:

http://www.ancient-hebrew.org/1_about.html

Sabbatarians, including Cotto, Knudson, and other Sabbatarian apologists, failing to understand these key principles, cannot accept the fact that their compelling need to read a recurring blessing and hollowing of the 7th day every seventh day is negated by a non-idiomatic meaning indicator that is not spelled out concretely in Hebrew characters.

The more one reads Benner’s explanations of the difficulties involved in translating Ancient Hebrew into Modern English, the greater the linguistic barriers to finding any real substance in Genesis 2:2-3 appear. According to Benner, Ancient Hebrew is put together using “root” structures. English and other modern languages are more expressively flexible, but not necessarily more “poetic.” Languages based on root structures approach the communication of ideas differently than languages that have different operational principles. **Benner says that in many cases accurate translation of Ancient Hebrew into modern languages is not even possible.**

And, as we mentioned before, Ancient Hebrew is very different than the Modern Hebrew language that evolved from it, including its written characters. Even a modern Jewish scholar may or may not have expertise in Ancient Hebrew. If a significant number of Jewish rabbinical scholars have not completed advanced studies in Ancient Hebrew, it is unreasonable to suppose that more than a tiny fraction of Christian scholars would have this degree of Hebrew expertise. By the time of Jesus even Modern Hebrew was no longer spoken. Jesus read to the people in a synagogue from a scroll written in Aramaic. Only specially trained rabbis understood the Hebrew and used it for religious studies. Israel as a nation wrote and spoke Aramaic during the time of Jesus. The scrolls were written in Aramaic, and the rabbis read the Scriptures to the people in Aramaic. Benner clearly does not say that a mechanical translation such as his can communicate all the meaning intended by the writer. At his website he says:

[Because the meaning of a Hebrew word cannot be conveyed completely through one or two English words, each word found in the MT \[Mechanical Translation\] will be included in the dictionary. This dictionary will](#)

more accurately define each word within the context of Ancient Hebrew language and culture."

Benner also has this to say about translating Ancient Hebrew into modern languages:

The Hebrew language, as is the case with every language, is closely tied to the culture the speakers and writers belong to. When reading the Bible, whether in Hebrew, English or any other language, it is essential that it be read through the eyes and mind of the Hebrew culture and not one's own culture.

With this new understanding of ancient biblical languages it is easy to see that much that goes into producing a translation of the Bible is unknown to the typical reader. Most Christians assume modern translations represent a close equivalent of the author's original intent. A good example of this fallacy, as I mentioned before, is that once the Jewish culture during the time of Jesus is understood, we see that when He told the Jews that the Sabbath was made for man, speaking in Aramaic, of course, He was excluding the Gentile "dogs".⁴ **In this particular case an understanding of what Jesus really said is fully dependent on knowing the language's cultural context.** Jesus spoke these words in Aramaic and His words were recorded in the original language of the Gospel writer who recorded the story. **Note that in this case, the importance of the culture in which His words were formulated transcends the importance of the language in which it was spoken, or even the language in which it was recorded.** However, the solution is not to modify the translation process. The student of the Bible must make up the difference by striving to understand the influences that produced what the writer penned.

The fact that SDA scholars could conclude that "man" in this passage means "all mankind" is the result of examining the passage without examining the cultural influences that shaped its wording. It is only one example of their tendency to use shoddy methods of textual analysis whenever doctrines critical to their theology are at stake. The SDA have had a culture of biblical interpretation from its inception that is so poor that even similar sounding words were grounds for a particular interpretation, with no proper examination of the etymology of the words. For example, Easter in the SDA theology is associated with *Eostre* which they define as the goddess of spring, of pagan origination. Yet *Webster's Dictionary* provides this etymology of the word:

Middle English *estre*, from Old English *ēastre*; akin to Old High German *ōstarun* (plural) Easter, Old English *ēast east*.

The true connection is in regards to the association of sunrise in the east with the resurrection or rising of Christ. There is no other legitimate association of the "Easter" in the Christian faith. What this demonstrates for our readers is the proclivity in the SDA culture to use whatever association or interpretation they desire, despite the reputability of the method, in order to achieve the desired outcome; in this case the "poisoning of the well" when it comes to the observance of the resurrection of Christ with the associative word/term, Easter. Is it any wonder or surprise then, given the culture of the SDA, that they would also use whatever means possible to find a Sabbath instituted at Creation when their theology demands it?

Because of the significant differences between Ancient Hebrew, Modern Hebrew, English, and the cultures they represent, a mechanical translation of one isolated passage of Genesis is insufficient to support the doctrine that God requires all Earthlings to keep the Sabbath for eternity.

SCHOLARS ARE NOT INFLUENCED BY GREEK CULTURE IN THEIR HEBREW TRANSLATIONS

The Sabbatarian allegation is that the Jews do not believe the Sabbath was a Creation ordinance because they were influenced by Greek culture and that this interference has biased the thinking of rabbinical scholars from classical times onward. They allege the following:

There are two broadly different Jews living today both biased in perspective viewpoint on Ancient Hebrew. Modern Jews are broadly influenced by Greek thinking. Ancient Hebrew thinking is based on Eastern values which original Hebrew was. Modern scholars doing any Bible study think in terms of Greek culture, not the ancient Hebrew culture.

To the contrary, it is the more mature knowledge of ancient Hebrew culture and linguistics among Christian scholars that has

4 Matthew 15:22-28 – an example of the Hebrew attitude toward Gentiles

sealed the doom for Sabbatarian theology.

Our Adventist apologist has the “Veil of Moses” over his eyes (See II Cor. 3). Rabbinical scholars did not conclude that the Sabbath was given only to Israel as a result of Greek cultural influences. They studied the Old Testament and arrived at conclusions based on their knowledge of the historical development of their own cultural, linguistic, and scriptural heritage. So far as we can tell, Rabbinical scholars have always understood, in general, that there is no Sabbath in Genesis. Genesis 2 indicates this fact right in the passage itself. They did not need any help from Greek influences to see the following principles that are fatal to Sabbatarian theology: (1) No Creation origin for the Sabbath. (2) Sabbath as a sign to set Israel apart from all the other nations of the world. (3) No Sabbath-keeping for Jews or proselytes without circumcision. To the contrary, Cotto demonstrates the Sabbatarian tendency, based on SDA internal “cultural” influences, to produce a claim that is couched in an accusation. The proper tools of biblical investigation are thus circumvented. The accusation, however, backfires on its accuser.

Additionally, Christians understand that the Old Covenant was represented by and is essentially equivalent to the Ten Commandments, and the Scriptures teach that the Old Covenant would be done away and replaced with something radically different—in other words, a New Covenant would replace the Ten Commandments. (This concept is another entire study in itself.)

Many of the fathers of the early church understood these things. The vast majority of the reformers understood these things, and some of them wrote about the obsolescence of the Sabbath, including Martin Luther and the Lutherans who drafted the *Augsburg Confession*. Biblical scholars from the era of Charles I of England on down through the contemporaries of Ellen White in the mid 1800's understood and wrote about these principles. Unfortunately, a largely uneducated band of people during the mid-1800's who knew nothing about biblical languages or the real principles of Bible study and interpretation read the Ten Commandments and **failed to understand who God was speaking to and under what circumstances. These people were the pioneers of Adventism.**

IMPLICATIONS FOR THE CONCEPT OF SOLA SCRIPTURA

The allegation by poorly informed Sabbatarian apologists is that the Jews view the Sabbath as a law for Jews only because they see the *Talmud* as more important than the *Torah*, and the *Talmud* promotes this view. Cotto believes, therefore, that this view is not based on the principle of “*Sola Scriptura*,” i.e. “the *Torah* and the *Torah* alone.” He adds, **[“The Bible must be its own interpreter!”](#)**

The Sabbatarian argument from the *Talmud* is unfortunate and results from a lack of knowledge. Elsewhere we explain how Jesus' directive that His followers were to do what Pharisees taught but not do what they actually did indicates that Jesus taught that the *Mishnah*— not the *Talmud*— was the inspired oral tradition. This, as we explain, is because the Pharisees were the only sect of Judaism which believed that the *Mishnah* was inspired. While they exhibited a certain amount of respect for the other sacred oral traditions, they tended to reject the idea that the other works were similarly inspired. The *Mishnah* clearly records the fact that this record of the legal precedence of the dual court system of Israel, established at the command of God Himself with the promise that He would guide the decisions of the judges who enforced the laws of the Nation of Israel, teaches that there was no Sabbath at Creation and that it was given only to the Jews.

“The Bible and the Bible alone” is a dangerous idea if Benner's precautions are not observed. The Bible cannot be properly understood without a comprehensive knowledge of the culture that produced it and a native-like understanding of the language. One must also consider to whom God was speaking and under what circumstances. Again, there is no better example than the “Dogs versus Jews” cultural understanding that shows us that Jesus did define the Sabbath as strictly for Jews in Mark 2:27, as contrasted to the SDA cultural interpretation of “man” that is based solely on their need. Recall that **even the Canaanite woman who came to Jesus for help for her demon-possessed daughter understood that Jews regarded them a “dogs” in Matt. 15:22-28.** The Sabbatarian dodge regarding the interpretation of “man” (Gr. *Anthropos*) actually supports the “Dogs versus Jews” interpretation as *anthropos* does not always translate as “all men” but rather can and does refer to just one man or to any subset of men, such as the Jews. The fact that the Greek word chosen here being *anthropos* only supports the Aramaic/Hebrew concept of “dogs” being exclusionary regarding the rest of mankind. Sabbatarian apologists ignore the cultural and linguistic considerations in favor of their desired preconceived agenda.

Properly understood, the books of Moses alone provided all the proof necessary to see that neither Jews nor converts to Judaism were permitted to keep the Sabbath without first meeting the requirements for circumcision.

This principle is part of the Law of Moses and is illustrated by both the record of Old Testament Scripture and the rabbinical writings. Recall, once again, that Jesus commented on the subordination of the Sabbath to the ordinance of circumcision when He called attention to the fact that according to the Law of Moses, a male child is to be circumcised on the 8th day of his life even if that 8th day falls on the Sabbath. When the Council of Jerusalem decided that the Gentiles should not be subjected to the Ordinance of Circumcision, the entry sign to the old covenant law, Sabbath-keeping was declared officially closed for the Gentiles in the early church as a result. In reality it was finished for all when Christ died on the cross.

Some scholars find evidence that the part of the *Didache* which documents Christians meeting for worship on Sunday was written as early as 53 AD. Paul's last epistle was authored around 63 AD. It was St. Paul who commanded the early church not to enforce Sabbath-keeping on Christian believers in Colossians 2:14-17.

The Jews are correct, therefore, in believing that the Sabbath was only for them. Only the Jews observe circumcision as a religious rite.

THE INFLUENCE OF PRECONCEIVED IDEAS & BELIEFS

Often, beliefs and ideas personally held by someone studying Ancient Hebrew or its translations affect his or her reading of key passages. One Sabbatarian apologist declares that the Sabbath is a moral law because he thinks he has found evidence that our bodies are designed to rest every 7 days in order to maintain good health. He says, "The 7 day bio-rhythm clock is genetically wired into man." Then he references an article in *Discover Magazine*, entitled "Reading Your Body Clock with a Molecular Timetable Inspired by Flowers."

We studied this article and found that it says nothing about a **weekly** body rhythm. Instead it discusses a daily body rhythm and provides evidence that trying to work against this daily rhythm is detrimental to one's health. As an example, the author mentions lack of sleep— a 24-hour rhythm controlled by an astronomical pattern. Interestingly, there is a body "rhythm" of approximately 28 days with women of child-bearing age. There is no such thing as a 7-day body cycle so far as we know. If any of our readers can provide proof of a 7-day body rhythm, I invite them to submit the research. Even if there was, a good scientist would ask if that rhythm was not induced by the body constantly following a seven-day pattern of activity and would theorize that if a person operating in a culture with a 10-day week would not also create a 10-day rhythm for the self.

Moses explained God's two reasons for giving the Sabbath ordinance to the Hebrews: **(1)** To help them remember that He created them. **(2)** To keep the memory of the fact that He rescued them from slavery in Egypt. The Sabbath rest was given to them as a form of restitution for the 400 years their slave masters did not let them rest. Christians were never slaves in Egypt and they do not need compensation for prior suffering.

No person raised in a Heathen land wakes up to the conclusion that he or she needed to rest one day out of seven, much less determines which one of those days was the "right" one— unless he or she gets a little help from a Seventh-day Adventist missionary. A desire to believe a certain doctrine, as well as one's personal belief about various related things, can dangerously affect how a person reads a passage of Scripture whether that Scripture is studied in Ancient Hebrew or its translation.

CORRELATION WITH OTHER ANCIENT SOURCES

Many extra-biblical sources, including Jewish and non-Jewish, can help with an understanding of biblical languages including Ancient Hebrew, Modern Hebrew, Aramaic, and Greek. The Christian Bible, the Canon, came about as a result of decisions made by human beings during the first few centuries of the Christian Faith. While Christians believe that God led the process of selection, some inclusions and exclusions suggest that this selection was not perfect. For example, Martin Luther objected to the inclusion of the *Book of Revelation*. The *Book of Enoch* has some key relevance to the question of whether or not Christians should keep the Jewish Sabbath. It was rejected by Western Christianity but is included in the canon of one of the Eastern Orthodox Churches— The Coptic Church of Egypt. After the resurrection of Christ the Jews rejected the *Book of Enoch* because some of its prophecies seemed to foretell events related to the life of Christ. It's content provides compelling evidence that the patriarchs and the predecessors of the Hebrew people utilized a lunar calendar— not surprising because the world seems to have known no other way to track time back then. More importantly, it provides compelling evidence that there was no Sabbath

prior to the Exodus.

The Book of Enoch includes an extensive discussion of the importance of the four phases of the moon and the lunar calendar. The implication of its content is that the affinity for the 7-day week came not from the dim memory of a Genesis Sabbath but from the observation of the four phases of the moon— that the concept of a seven-day week likely developed for astronomical reasons. Your authors observe that the journey of the moon seems to have little movement for seven days at a time, or, as we would say, it goes through four “phases.” Quoted in the canonical *Book of Jude* and purportedly written by Enoch, the 7th from Adam, most scholars believe it was put together from a number of sources about 200 BCE. It makes no reference to the Sabbath or the Mosaic Covenant. Fragments of *The Book of Enoch*, were featured in a recent national exhibit of the *Dead Sea Scrolls*, and one of those fragments included a discussion of lunar-related topics. *The Book of Enoch* paints a picture of a pre-Exodus world that is fully devoid of the concept of a Creation-based Sabbath.

The absence of any reference to the ordinance of the Sabbath is remarkable regardless of when *The Book of Enoch* was written. If it was written during the pre-Flood time of Enoch, it provides additional evidence— not proof— that the Sabbath was completely unknown to the descendants of Adam and Eve, Noah, and Abraham. If the story was fabricated by some well-meaning rabbis a few hundred years before the birth of Christ, those who put it together were careful to make their work appear to be credible by avoiding any mention of things that did not exist at the time of Enoch— no Sabbath, no Decalogue. At the same time this book focuses on the theme of righteousness, discusses the importance of keeping the moralistic laws of God, and delineates what those laws include. The moralistic laws discussed in *The Book of Enoch* seem to parallel those of the Noachian laws— laws that the Jews believed applied to non-Jews and the observance of which would assure a non-Jew eternal life in Paradise. Either scenario provides additional evidence that the Jews did not believe the Sabbath originated at Creation and that this belief was a part of Jewish thinking no later than 200 BCE. And what about the prophecies of Christ? Jewish scholars suggested that portions of the *Book of Enoch* were written after the life of Christ until fragments of the book were found along with the Dead Sea Scrolls, which effectively dated the writing of it to no later than 200 BCE.

Such information from these other perspectives should make those who study the books of Moses either in Ancient Hebrew or a translation in his or her own language want to be very careful not to read his or her own preconceived ideas into the text.

THE HEBREW LINGUISTICS OF GENESIS 2, EXODUS 16, AND EXODUS 20

This section enables our readers to participate in a real theological exercise. They are now familiar with some of the key principles of Hebrew linguistics. More elements of Hebrew linguistics will be provided along the way as needed to address each pro-Sabbatarian assertion articulated by Edwin M. Cotto in his paper, “The Sabbath in Genesis,” which is posted on the Adventist Defense League’s website.

Another Sabbatarian apologist, Brendan Knudson— a biblical scholar with credentials that suggest competency in biblical languages— has challenged us along the way, so we are responding to his pro-Sabbatarian contributions as well. More recently, Knudson seems to be working in close association with the Adventist Defense League and Edwin M. Cotto. Brendan Knudson is a controversial figure in Adventism. Your present authors hasten to mention that we are aware that neither Cotto nor Knudson officially represent the Seventh-day Adventist Church. Their pro-Sabbatarian views may or may not reflect the official Adventist position on these issues. We have a great deal of respect for the quality of their scholarship, especially in view of their choice to defend an extremely difficult theological position. You can read Knudson’s refutation of our book by going to the Adventist Defense League’s website. Visitors to their website are invited to return for additional updates which are already being readied for posting. However, some years later, such have not been posted.

Note that there will be some repetition of some of the information we have already provided to fit everything into this chosen format. This repetition, which we have tried to keep to a minimum, will help to cross-reference concepts that may initially seem unrelated but which are, indeed, very much interlocked.

COTTO: The Hebrew word, “Shabbath,” that Moses used in Exodus 20:8 is not found in Genesis 2. Although Anti-Sabbatarians use this as proof that the first appearance of the Sabbath ordinance is found in Exodus 16, the existence of the Sabbath in Genesis 2 has been acknowledged by both Seventh-Day Adventists and Sunday-observing scholars.

AUTHORS: Cotto hasn't been reading the right books. The quality of one's sources is important. As a claim of evidence, it stands on very shaky ground when you realize you can make a similar claim regarding "experts" who believe the earth is flat, or that of some scientists and others who insist man never walked on the moon.

Since few biblical scholars have the expertise in Ancient Hebrew to evaluate what is and what is not in Genesis 2:2-3, the opinion of scholars without this advanced Hebrew training can vary widely. The Sabbatarian knowledge filter has not allowed him to find out, for example, that the Sabbath-Sunday Question was completely resolved back in the 1600's when there was a huge crisis which nearly turned England into a Sabbath-keeping nation. One large faction wanted King Charles I, the successor to King James, to require the Church of England to impose the observance of the Jewish Sabbath on the entire country. At the same time the large population of Puritans was pressuring him to require Sunday to be kept in much the same way the Jews kept Saturday. King Charles I turned to his court chaplain, Peter Heylyn, a well-respected biblical scholar, and demanded that he research the subject. Heylyn investigated and reported on every significant historical and biblical fact relating to the Sabbath-Sunday Question that was available up to that time.

By the time Peter Heylyn's exhaustive Sabbath research was published in 1636 (*History of the Sabbath*), he had a vast amount of information to report, including conclusive arguments in favor of an Exodus origin for the Sabbath and proof that the Hebrews did not keep their first Sabbath until over a month after they left Egypt. Thanks to Heylyn's definitive work, the Sabbath-Sunday issue remained largely dormant for the next 200 years. Of course there have always been small enclaves of Sabbath-keeping Christians; this 200 year period of church history was no exception. Note that Sabbatarians often quote Heylyn out of context to support Sabbatarian ideas; a further example of Sabbatarian "culture" when it comes to evidence. Heylyn reported on all three sides of the issue, so isolated passages from his book can be irresponsibly used to support the Sabbatarianism which he wrote to refute.

The Sabbath-Sunday Question did not come to the forefront of Christian controversy again until the late Seventh-day Adventist Sabbath scholar, Dr. Samuele Bacchiocchi, began to confront the clergy of the world with his iconoclastic views through the mass marketing of his 1977 book, *From Sabbath to Sunday*. Bacchiocchi's work was thoroughly refuted by D.A. Carson, who headed a group of some of the finest biblical scholars in a top priority project to evaluate Bacchiocchi's theological ideas and twisted view of the status of the Sabbath during the first thousand years of the Christian Faith. They published their findings in their 1982 book, ***From Sabbath to Lord's Day***, which included a comprehensive debunking of the idea that there is Sabbath content in Genesis 2:2-3.

Much background information is needed to grasp the water-tight case for the Exodus 16 origin of the Sabbath. As we mentioned earlier, under God's direct leadership the Children of Israel treated Friday nights and Saturdays like any other days of the week until the 31st day of their journey out of Egypt. They left Egypt on a Thursday night and traveled for several days into the wilderness at the onset of their journey, marching and working on Friday nights and Saturday. It is inconceivable that God would lead His people to transgress a so-called "eternal, moral law" just because it wasn't convenient for Him to stop the action so His people could "keep" the Sabbath. Weeks later the Hebrews arrived at the Wilderness of the Moon [Sin] on a Saturday night about 5 pm, having marched across the desert on Friday and Saturday, and didn't keep the Sabbath until a week later. The biblical account of the first Sabbath reports that some of the people behaved as if they had never heard of it before, even collecting firewood on it after God specifically told them not to. (There is no indication that these people were put to death by stoning, which would be in keeping with our expectations of how we might think God would deal with first-time offenders). Recall, also, that God explained the Manna collection laws on the Saturday evening they arrived at the Wilderness of Sin, but He did not introduce the Sabbath Obedience Test until the following Friday—the day before they actually kept their first Sabbath. See:

<http://www.bible.ca/archeology/bible-archeology-exodus-route-travel-times-distances-days.htm>

THE HEBREW LINGUISTICS OF EXODUS 16:

Evidence From Definite Versus Indefinite Articles

A Hebrew keeper of the written records who lived in ancient Israel would instantly recognize that the text of the *Pentateuch* was carefully worded to clarify that the Sabbath was introduced for the first time in Exodus 16. A biblical scholar who wrote during the time of Ellen White, Robert Cox, F.S.A. (Scotland), published a comprehensive two-volume report on the Sabbath-

Sunday Question in 1865. The Seventh-day Adventist Church was organized in 1863. While Cox was reporting on the fatal-to-Sabbatarianism implications of Hebrew linguistics and the chronology of the Exodus on the Sabbath-Sunday Question, Ellen White was spinning her scripturally unsupportable, imaginative tales about Adam and Eve, Enoch, and Abraham keeping the Sabbath. Sabbatarians sometimes quote Cox out of context because like Heylyn, he reported on all sides of the Sabbath controversy. I quote Cox from his 1865 edition of the *Literature of the Sabbath Question*, published that year in Edinburgh by MacLachlan and Stewart, and in London by Simkin, Marshal, and Company— available to all readers as a Google Book:

In the Hebrew phrase here (Exodus 16 verse 23] translated, “the rest of the holy Sabbath,” and in that translated “a Sabbath” in verse 25, and “the Sabbath” in verse 26, the article is wanting; and consequently, instead of using the *definite* English article in the first and third instances, our translators [probably referring to the King James Version] ought to have used the *indefinite*, as they have done in the second instance. The words in verse 23 mean literally, “A resting of a holy Sabbath to Jehovah is tomorrow.” In verse 29, where the article *is* prefixed in the original, we have a correct translation in the phrase “*the* Sabbath,” the institution thus being now spoken of as known to the hearers. This distinction between the 29th and the previous verses in regard to the article, is preserved in the Septuagint, and also in De Wette's translation. Geddes inconsistently gives “a Sabbath” in verse 25 and 29, and “the Sabbath” in verse 26.

The true rendering of these verses ought to be kept in mind while judging whether or not the Sabbath is in this chapter spoken of as an institution previously known to the Israelites. In reference to that question, see Gen. ii. 3 (p. 3); Exod. xx.8-11 (p. 11); Deut. v. 12-15 (p. 25; Neh. ix.14 (p. 35); Ezek. xx. 12 (p. 44).

Here is an explanation that will help us understand why a proper translation of the definite versus indefinite article was so important to Cox. In the English language an ARTICLE modifies a noun (the name of a person, place, or thing), making it either indefinite (“a” or “an”) or definite (“the”). Unlike English, Hebrew does not have an indefinite article— just a definite article.

Credit to: www.hebrew4christians.com/grammar/grammatical_terms

The linguistic term ANARTHROUS means, in reference to a noun, that it does not have an article, definite or indefinite, before it (e.g. the Sabbath or a Sabbath).

Nouns that do not have an article before them in Hebrew are generally translated into English with the indefinite article (e.g. “a” or “an”). However, in the case where the anarthrous nouns are qualitative, the Hebrew noun is often translated without any article.

Credit to: www.hebrew4christians.com/Grammar/Grammatical_terms

In Hebrew, the occurrence of an anarthrous noun (one without any kind of an article associated with it) carries the significance that the whole idea is new. It is of great significance, then, that the Hebrew word for “Sabbath” in Exodus 16:23, Exodus 20:10, and Exodus 35:2-3 is articular in construction. There are only four places in the Pentateuch where this particular form of the Hebrew word for Sabbath is found, again **indicating that the noun is a new thing.** In the three latter instances this anarthrous construction occurs within a formula (= Work six days, but on the seventh there is a rest.) The combination of the anarthrous construction within a specified formula gives even more support for the likelihood that the intention of Moses was to emphasize that the concept of the Sabbath was new.

There is significant academic recognition of this important characteristic of the Hebrew language. It was researched in depth by **Harold H.P. Dressler** as part of the Carson project. In 1982, he was teaching Old Testament as Associate Professor of Biblical Studies at Northwest Baptist Theological College in Vancouver, BC, Canada. His paper, “The Sabbath in the Old Testament,” is one of the chapters in the book, ***From Sabbath to the Lord's Day*** (1982), edited by **D.A. Carson**. Dressler provided these scholarly references in footnote number 39, p. 37 in ***From Sabbath to Lord's Day***:

³⁹ The anarthrous construction carries significance (i.e. “The whole idea was new”) **as pointed out by G. Rawlinson, Exodus (London: Kegan, Paul, Trench & Co., 1906), p.52; A. Dillman, Die Bucher Exodus und Leviticus (Leipzig: S. Hitzel, 1897), p. 175; P Heinisch, Das Buch Exodus (Bonn: Hanstein, 1934), p. 133; G. Henton Davies, Exodus (London: SCM, 1967), p. 140.** This construction of the word [Hebrew characters not renderable in our word processing program, the particular form of the word Sabbath found in this passage] occurs only four times in the Pentateuch, Exodus 16:23; 20:10 (followed in v. 11 with an articular construction) and Exodus 35:2 (followed in v. 3 by an articular

construction). In the latter three instances this construction occurs within a formula: “six days work may be done, but on the seventh day there is a Sabbath . . .” The anarthrous construction in Exodus 16:23, 25 is unique and may, therefore, well signify the newness of an idea.

The www.Bible.Ca staff completed an exhaustive linguistics study that provides even further evidence that the Sabbath was introduced for the first time in Exodus 16. Combined with our understanding of the significance of the anarthrous construction of nouns in Hebrew, it is clear that the majority of the scholars who translated the Hebrew texts of the Old Testament into English have recognized the existence of this usage indicator for a long time.

The first time any Jewish holy day is mentioned in Scripture, it always lacks the definite article, as in “**a sabbath.**” After the holy day is introduced and established, the definite article is used, as in “**the Sabbath.**”

Thereafter, the the Jewish holy days are never introduced the first time in Scripture with the definite article “the” but with the indefinite “a” or “an.”

This powerful argument provides more than ample evidence that the weekly Sabbath did not exist before Exodus 16:23.

What makes it irrefutable is the fact that every Jewish Holy Day follows this same pattern!

FIRST TIME: tomorrow is a Sabbath: Ex 16:23

SUBSEQUENT MENTION: the Lord has given you the Sabbath: Ex 16:29

FIRST TIME: A solemn rest “a” holy Sabbath: Ex. 16:25

SUBSEQUENT MENTION: “the” Sabbath: Ex 20:11

SUBSEQUENT MENTION: “the” Sabbath: Deuteronomy 5:12

FIRST TIME: “a” memorial: Exodus 12:14

SUBSEQUENT MENTION: afterward, “the” Lord’s Passover

FIRST TIME; “an” holy convocation:

SUBSEQUENT MENTION: “the” day of Pentecost: Acts 2:1

FIRST TIME; Unleavened bread: “a” feast: Ex 12:40

SUBSEQUENT MENTION: afterward, “the” feast: Lev. 23:6

FIRST MENTION: “an” altar Gen. 8:20

SUBSEQUENT MENTION: “the” altar: Gen. 8:20

Not all English translations follow this principle with 100% accuracy, however. In Exodus 16 the NIV appears to supply the indefinite article correctly, whereas the King James Version does not. Here is a comparison of the same passage in both translations:

NIV translation of Exodus 16:21-26:

Each morning everyone gathered as much as he needed, and when the sun grew hot, it melted away.
²²On the sixth day, they gathered twice as much—two omers [b] for each person—and the leaders of the community came and reported this to Moses. ²³He said to them, “This is what the LORD commanded: ‘Tomorrow is to be **a** day of rest, **a** holy Sabbath to the LORD. So bake what you want to bake and boil what you want to boil. Save whatever is left and keep it until morning.’” ²⁴So they saved it until morning, as Moses commanded, and it did not stink or get maggots in it. ²⁵“Eat it today,” Moses said, “because today is **a** Sabbath to the LORD. You will not find any of it on the ground today. ²⁶Six days you are to gather it, but on the seventh day, **the** Sabbath, there will not be any.”

And they gathered it every morning, every man according to his eating: and when the sun waxed hot, it melted. ²²And it came to pass, that on the sixth day they gathered twice as much bread, two omers for one man: and all the rulers of the congregation came and told Moses. ²³And he said unto them, This is that which the LORD hath said, Tomorrow is **the** rest of the holy Sabbath unto the LORD: bake that which ye will bake to day, and seethe that ye will seethe; and that which remaineth over lay up for you to be kept until the morning. ²⁴And they laid it up till the morning, as Moses bade: and it did not stink, neither was there any worm therein. ²⁵And Moses said, Eat that to day; for to day is **a** Sabbath unto the LORD: to day ye shall not find it in the field. ²⁶Six days ye shall gather it; but on the seventh day, which is **the** Sabbath, in it there shall be none.

KNUDSON'S OBJECTIONS

KNUDSON: The argument from anarthrous construction, which in Hebrew suggests that the whole idea is new, is highly questionable. Even Wynne's expert witness, Harold H.P. Dressler, quoted in D.A. Carson's (editor) book, *From Sabbath to Lord's Day*, is tentative in his mention of this idea, stating only that "The anarthrous construction in Exodus 16:23-25 is unique and may, therefore, well signify the newness of an idea." He even delegated the mention of this to a footnote, suggesting that it wasn't particularly important.

WYNNE: Did Knudson not see the list of respected scholars who have noticed the existence of the anarthrous construction argument? I will list them for emphasis:

as pointed out by G. Rawlinson, *Exodus* (London: Kegan, Paul, Trench & Co., 1906), p.52; A. Dillman, *Die Bucher Exodus und Leviticus* (Leipzig: S. Hitzel, 1897), p. 175; P Heinisch, *Das Buch Exodus* (Bonn: Hanstein, 1934), p. 133; G. Henton Davies, *Exodus* (London: SCM, 1967), p. 140.

The arguments available to support the concept of no Sabbath before the giving of the manna are so strong that these other arguments were the focus of Dressler's work. The complete quote of Dressler's footnote lists support for his idea from four prominent biblical scholars who wrote between 1897 and 1967 on two different continents. Dressler appears to be utilizing scholarly restraint—a trait that both Knudson and the four of us could strive better to emulate. Dressler is also correct. This argument is not conclusive in itself. Combine it with all the other elements of Hebrew linguistics that factor into an analysis of the question at hand, and there is complete agreement between all of them. A consistent pattern of evidence in favor of the fact that the anarthrous concept is valid emerges from the total view.

HOHMANN: Taking one argument of many, and one piece of evidence from among much, and disparaging this one item does not in turn discredit all the evidence and proofs available. You will find this approach to be a common ploy whenever people are defending a weaker position. In turn, they demand that every point of "evidence" that they produce be addressed. They never admit to being wrong, no matter how persuasive and airtight the evidence. Knudson offers no explanation as to *why* Dressler is wrong. He sees no reason to truly address the evidence. He merely dismisses it based on the perception of it all being of minor importance and lacking credibility. If we were to treat the Sabbatarian's arguments in such a manner, they would be screaming foul.

Knudson offers no evidence from any credible sources that would disparage the significance of the anarthrous construction in these key texts. What is self-evident to anyone, willing to look at all the available examples, is summarily dismissed by Knudson based solely on his own bias.

KNUDSON: Two important books about Hebrew linguistics do not say anything about the significance of anarthrous construction, including *A Grammar of Biblical Hebrew* by Paul Joüon and Takamitsu Muraoka and *An Introduction to Biblical Hebrew Syntax* by Bruce K. Waltke and M. O'Connor.

WYNNE: This concept of anarthrous construction is not an attribute of grammar. Nor is it related to "syntax" if syntax is defined to be "the way sentences are put together." More properly it is to be understood as a meaning indicator or a "writing convention." Knudson is not comparing apples to apples. Elsewhere we have supplied a list of scholars who observed that in Hebrew, the first mention of a sacred day or feast is virtually always introduced with a definite, anarthrous article. Here is a list of scholars we list elsewhere who observe that this characteristic of Moses' writing means that Moses indicated that

there was no Sabbath prior to Exodus 16. We are listing it for the third time with the following entry:

as pointed out by G. Rawlinson, *Exodus* (London: Kegan, Paul, Trench & Co., 1906), p.52; A. Dillman, *Die Bucher Exodus und Leviticus* (Leipzig: S. Hitzel, 1897), p. 175; P Heinsich, *Das Buch Exodus* (Bonn: Hanstein, 1934), p. 133; G. Henton Davies, *Exodus* (London: SCM, 1967), p. 140.

HOHMANN: For someone who at first was intent on making an accusation regarding the alleged use of a logical fallacy; “an appeal to authority”, Knudson has now availed himself of a number of true logical fallacies. Here, we see an attempt to provide evidence based on a negative – an argument based from silence. Can we ask a few logical questions? Does the omission of evidence in one book negate the evidence of another? Is Knudson offering us a reasonable explanation regarding the actual evidence, or is he seeking ways to disparage the evidence through association or the lack of association with other scholars in the field? This comes across more like a dodge rather than a scholarly response.

KNUDSON: There is a logical reason for the anarthrous use of šabbāṭ in these texts - that the word šabbāṭ was an intrinsically definite noun! Divine names, Human names, Place names, most pronouns, unique appellatives, certain cosmological elements and human institutions, unique titles are all intrinsically determinate – not needing the article! The anarthrous use of šabbāṭ in its first literary reference by that name in Exodus 16 (and many places thereafter) shows that it was already an established institution recognizable by the Hebrews! The use of the article with šabbāṭ after it has been mentioned in the context without the article is not uncommon in Hebrew. In such cases it acts as a weak demonstrative.

AUTHORS: By the time of the release of the 9th Edition, Knudson and his associates have had at least three years to provide us with an affidavit from a qualified expert in Hebrew with expertise in Ancient Hebrew that anarthrous indicators in Hebrew do not exist. If in every case self-evidently important Hebrew nouns do not need to be introduced by an article, why do subsequent mentions of Jewish holy days ALWAYS have the definite article before it and the introduction of a new ones do not? It would appear Knudson is attempting to utilize a **general** principle of Hebrew linguistics to challenge a **specific** Hebrew literary convention—a convention that can be easily validated by checking out how the mention of Jewish holy days is handled in the original Ancient Hebrew text or a Hebrew-English interlinear translation. Since the OT Scriptures are fairly clear about the order in which the Jewish holy days feast weeks were given, we can validate the principle of anarthrous indication with a high degree of consistency.

In fact, if Knudson is correct in that well-established proper nouns do not need to be introduced by an article, he bestows an ever higher degree of credibility to our theory of anarthrous construction. It would mean that in every instance Old Testament writers went out of their way to make an exception to a general grammatical rule to comply with a special rule that regulates how the mention of Jewish holy days is to be handled in Hebrew. To the contrary, it appears that the SPECIAL principle in each verifiable case trumps the GENERAL principle. If a Jewish holy day, such as the Sabbath, is self-evidently important and needs no article before it, we should never find a mention of it that has an article before it. Would not the presence of such an article suggest, in this case, that the holy day was not self-evidently important, at least at the time of its introduction?

The only claim we have really made is that in every case, when a Jewish holy or feast day is mentioned in the Old Testament for the very first time, it is preceded by an indefinite article and that every subsequent mention of it features a definite article in front of it. (Actually, you may recall that in Hebrew there is no such thing as an indefinite article, but rather in the case where an indefinite article would precede it in English, no article precedes it at all. In a proper English translation, the presence of the equivalent of an indefinite article is indicated by the article “a,” as in “a Sabbath.”) Before incorporating the argument from anarthrous construction, we took the time to work through a Hebrew-English Interlinear Bible to see if we could find even one instance where a Jewish holy or feast day did not follow this principle, and we could not find one as long as common sense linguistic principles of context were considered.

We cannot speak for Hebrew nouns in general. Knudson comments about the example of the word, altar, mentioned in the early chapters of Genesis. The rule is followed even there, but he argues that the concept of an altar was probably in place before the altar was mentioned in the story. Whatever, the best way to refute Knudson’s argument is to find an example of where a Jewish holiday, feast, or holy day is mentioned for the very first time in the original Hebrew that is preceded by a definite article. We make no claims for ordinary nouns. To do so would seem to present an unreasonable task for any Hebrew writer, who would have to look at every noun he used to make sure that if he had never mentioned it before, he

could not put an article ("the") before it.

HOHMANN: A question arises after all this banter with Knudson and Cotto regarding these issues surrounding the Sabbath and whether or not it was instituted at the time of the Creation Week. Did the founders of the SDA movement, when they adopted the belief they should keep the Sabbath, understand and use these arguments put forward by Knudson and Cotto, to support their claims and beliefs? No. The organization and leadership adopted the Sabbath, without all this "advanced" knowledge of Hebrew semantics and linguistics, and despite all the research on the subject done up to that point. And now that even more evidence has been uncovered since the inception of the SDA, is it any surprise that "experts" would arise, using "evidence" that did not exist at the advent of Adventism to combat the increase of knowledge surrounding Hebrew? To any disinterested third party, what is going on should be obvious. A questionable belief was adopted, and now, as more and more evidence arises refuting the validity of the belief, "defenders of the faith" find ways to invalidate the mounting evidence. Their assertion: Experts outside Adventism are not really experts. Those who were educated by the SDA and were greatly respected at one time suddenly lose credibility when they leave the organization. Truth only comes from within, and nothing derived from the outside, even by ex-members, ministers, and theologians, is to be trusted. This is nothing but a veiled attempt to control the information on the subject, which is typical of a cult.

A NEW TESTAMENT EXAMPLE OF THE SIGNIFICANCE OF DEFINITE VERSUS INDEFINITE ARTICLES

Thomas Preble was the first Millerite to write in favor of keeping the Jewish Sabbath. It was his pro-Sabbath tract entitled, "*Tract, Showing That the Seventh Day Should Be Observed As the Sabbath*," reprinted from an article he had published in the early Advent publication, *Hope of Israel* in the Feb. 28, 1845 issue, that influenced the parents of J. N. Andrews, the future wife of Uriah Smith, and Joseph Bates to become Sabbath-keepers. It was Joseph Bates who introduced the Sabbath to Ellen White. However, he kept the Sabbath only until mid-1847, at which time he repudiated his own work. (Credit to <http://www.imsmedia.org/adventist-pioneers/thomas-m-preble>.) In 1867 he published an expose of the cult of Adventism entitled ***The First Day Sabbath Clearly Proved***. You can find it in Google Books. While he incorporated many of the same anti-Sabbatarian concepts that are used against the 7th day Sabbath doctrine today, his main thesis was that at the Cross, the Jewish Sabbath of the 7th day of the week ended, and the Christian "Sabbath" began. He called attention, among other things, to the fact that in Genesis the only principle for Sabbath-keeping is that the human race should work six days and rest one day. His argument is difficult to follow, but fighting to understand it is worthwhile for many reasons:

Did the Lord Jesus keep the seventh-day Sabbath? He evidently did, as he was "made under the law" (Gal. 4 : 4), and was "circumcised;" He no doubt observed the Sabbath, as it ought to have been observed at that time; although his manner of keeping it, however, was such that the Pharisees accused him of breaking it, because he did not observe their traditions, which they had connected with the observance of that day. There is no doubt but the women mentioned in Luke 23:55, after they had "prepared spices and ointments" for the body of Jesus, returned and rested the Sabbath-day according to the "commandment ;" yea, the "fourth commandment."

Good, says the Sabbatarian. And I too say, Good; because I have no doubt of its truth. But when this matter shall be critically examined, I think all candid minds will acknowledge that this was the last seventh-day Sabbath ever kept according to the commandment: as I believe the following facts will abundantly prove. The original Greek words for Sabbath, as found in the New Testament, in their singular and plural form, are *Sabbaton*, and *Sabbata*. The number of times these words occur in the New Testament is sixty-eight. They are found in different books, as follows : in Matthew, eleven times ; in Mark, twelve times; in Luke, twenty times; in John, thirteen times; in Acts, ten times; in 1 Corinthians, once; and in Colossians, once. These words are transferred (not translated) into our English version, in all, fifty-nine times; and thus called Sabbath, or Sabbath-days, etc. But the translators saw fit to render the word *Sabbaton*, by the word "week," in nine cases out of the whole number sixty-eight, and these nine cases are found in the following places: in Matthew 28: 1; Mark 16: 2, 9; Luke 18: 12; 24: 1; John 20:1, 19; Acts 20:7; 1 Corinthians 16:2. In Matthew it reads, "In the end of the Sabbath [*Sabbaton*], as it began to dawn toward the first [day, is a word supplied by the translators] of the week [*Sabbaton*], came Mary," etc. In Mark: "And very early in the morning, the first of the week [*Sabbaton*], they came," etc. "Now when Jesus was risen early the first of the week [*Sabbaton*], he appeared," etc. In Luke: "I fast twice in

the week [*Sabbaton*], I give tithes," etc. Now upon the first of the week [*Sabbaton*], very early in the morning," etc. In John: "The first of the week [*Sabbaton*] cometh Mary Magdalene early," etc. "Then the same day, at evening, being the first of the week [*Sabbaton*], when the doors were shut," etc. In Acts: "And upon the first of the week [*Sabbaton*], when the disciples came together to break bread," etc. In 1 Corinthians: "Upon the first of the week [*Sabbaton*] let every one of you lay by him in store," etc. Now let us turn back to Matthew 28:1, and see if we can ascertain the true import of this word "week," as it has been thus found in the cases above referred to. It appears that the word *Sabbaton*, as found in this verse, occurs twice, and in both instances it is in the plural, form ; and this being the case, the true rendering of the passage requires us to read it, in substance, like this: At the end of Sabbaths, in the beginning of the first of Sabbaths, etc. Or as Mark has it: And very early in the first of Sabbaths (lit. of one of Sabbaths), etc. But Luke and John appear to have it still stronger: And in the first of the Sabbaths, etc; **the definite article the being placed before the noun *Sabbaton***. Now it is evident that if the translators had transferred the word *Sabbaton*, in these nine cases just examined, as they did in the other fifty-nine instances above referred to, then we should have had less difficulty than we now have, and we should see that at the end of the seventh-day Sabbaths (or at the end of the Jewish Sabbath — which was given to the "children of Israel" to be a "sign" unto them "throughout their generations"— there would be the beginning of the Lord Jesus Christ's day, or "Sabbath." **Or in other words, where one series of days ended, there another series of days began.** And this change of days was marked by the most important events that ever transpired in the history of man. "The veil of the temple was rent in twain," "the middle wall of partition" between Jews and Gentiles, was "broken down," and thus they were "made both one."

Here are our observations:

1. This theory deserves some consideration, but it needs to be evaluated by linguists who have special training that gives them a near-native understanding of biblical languages.
2. Biblical scholars are interested in the significance of definite versus indefinite articles even in different languages. It is not safe to ignore the implications of these articles, but arguments based on them are probably insufficient to prove a point without support from other textual evidence.
3. Literal translation of words and phrases from one language into another is often impossible. Notice that the King James translators had to make decisions about how the words for Sabbath in Greek were to be TRANSFERRED into English. It is not safe to build key Bible doctrines on just one, or even just a few, texts that are not definitive when taken in themselves and in their context.

DETAILED ANALYSIS OF THE MANNA AND SABBATH OBEDIENCE TESTS

J. N. Andrews, the first Advent Movement Sabbath scholar, theorized that some aspects of the "Manna Test" given to the Hebrews in the early verses of Exodus 16 suggest that the Israelites were already familiar with the Sabbath. He pointed out that God didn't seem to feel the need to explain His reason for the six days of work followed by one day of rest at that time. Our analysis of his manna argument resulted in these findings that are not favorable to this claim:

1. There is no indication in the Exodus 16 verses to specifically suggest that the people were familiar with the Sabbath concept. **If the Israelites were familiar with the Sabbath, they would not need to have been told not to gather manna on the 7th day, since that would represent work.**
2. The Hebrews had just come out of Egypt, which utilized a 10-day week. This is probably the reason why the first mention of the Sabbath in Exodus 16 is the full form of the word, meaning: "*a sabbatical celebration, a holy Sabbath*" (Dressler, "The Sabbath in the Old Testament," Chapter 2 in D.A. Carson (ed.), *From Sabbath to Lord's Day*). **Note that we also have to consider the possibility that the Egyptians may have utilized a pagan sabbath system of four sets of seven days each tied to the lunar month.**
3. In Exodus 12, when God explained His instructions for the ordinance of the Passover, He did not mention the Sabbath Day when one would expect Him to have done so. He instructed them to continue

preparing food on the seventh day of the Passover Week— a task forbidden by the Sabbath-keeping laws
He gave them later:

“This is a day you are to commemorate; for the generations to come you shall celebrate it as a festival to the LORD - a lasting ordinance. For seven days you are to eat bread made without yeast. On the first day remove the yeast from your houses, for whoever eats anything with yeast in it from the first day through the seventh must be cut off from Israel. On the first day hold a sacred assembly, and another one on the seventh day. Do no work at all on these days, except to prepare food for everyone to eat—that is all you may do. Exodus XII, 14-16 (NIV)

4. The Manna obedience test stands on its own without any dependence on the Sabbath because during the week the Hebrew people were instructed to gather no more than an omer for each person. A significant number of the people broke this new law right away, gathered more than they needed for the next day, and found that the extra portions rotted.

Then said the LORD unto Moses, Behold, I will rain bread from heaven for you; and the people shall go out and gather a certain rate every day, that I may prove them, whether they will walk in my law, or not. – Exodus 16:4

5. Andrews says this chapter suggests that the Israelites were familiar with the work-six-days/rest-on-the-seventh-day pattern because they did not agitate for an explanation regarding it. Arguments from silence are among the weakest ones. Note that God seems to have chosen the 7 days of Creation because it was an easy formula to remember. It would seem that if God spoke something to any of us out of a cloud and it was readily understandable, we would not agitate for an explanation of it. God is a good communicator—the best ever. (Again, we must consider the possibility that a seven-day lunar week of a pagan sabbath system was in use in Egypt during the time of their bondage. In this case they would not need an explanation of the work-six-days-and-rest-the-7th-day principle either.)

6. The wording of the passage identifies the Sabbath requirement as an obedience test. If the Israelites were keeping the Sabbath up to that point, they would have had their obedience tested continually along the way. Perhaps a different kind of obedience test would have been appropriate in that case.

7. Recall one more time that expert sources see evidence that the Egyptians, like many of the civilizations of the time, observed a pagan “Sabbath” that was based on the four phases of the moon and elements of fertility rites. It is entirely possible that when God gave the Sabbath to Israel on Mt. Sinai, He took a cultural concept that they were already familiar with, cleansed it of its pagan and fertility connotations, and presented it to Israel in a newly redeemed and holy form.

BRENDAN KNUDSON’S OBJECTIONS

KNUDSON: Perhaps the clearest evidence that the Sabbath preceded the giving of the manna is the conversation God has with Moses at the start of the chapter which gives the reason for the giving of the manna.

Exodus 16:4 - "Then the LORD said to Moses, 'Behold, I am about to rain bread from heaven for you, and the people shall go out and gather a day's portion every day, that I may test them, whether they will walk in My Law or not.'"

AUTHORS: Because Knudson assumes that there was a Sabbath prior to the Exodus, he views Moses' instructions regarding the Manna as primarily a Sabbath obedience test. Observe that at the beginning of the week, shortly after the Children of Israel arrived at the edge of the Wilderness of Sin and complained that God had called them out of Egypt to starve them to death in the desert, God gave Israel Manna, along with collecting and keeping instructions which included acquiring a double portion on the 6th day of the week. At this point God said nothing about the double portion having to do with a Sabbath that would occur on the 7th day. All week long the Israelites tested God by deviating from His Manna-collecting instructions, finding that if they collected more than an omer per person, and kept it overnight, the excess spoiled. It was not until the 6th day of that first “Manna week” that God explained that this double portion was in preparation for a

new special day He called the "Sabbath."

The Sabbath concept focused on the cessation of labor whereas the Manna collection instructions regulated a work process. Some of the Israelites collected excess Manna in defiance of God's special instructions.⁵ Then, some of them gathered firewood on the Sabbath in defiance of God's special instructions.⁶ **There were two obedience tests, and Israel failed them both.**

Combining both the Manna and Sabbath regulations, there were a number of rules, or "laws" that Israel could break and did break. He had commanded them to collect the manna and keep the Sabbath. Knudson's claim that God was chiding them for breaking a Sabbath commandment that existed prior to the Exodus is completely unnecessary and adds things to this passage of Scripture that are not there.

The plain sense of the use of the term "law" here would indicate that whatever God commanded of them or instructed them to do was "law." It could also easily connote that which was to follow; a codified law to govern them. If, from the perspective of God, they could not follow the simple commands and instructions being given them regarding the manna and the Sabbath, He could hardly expect them to keep any other commands and instructions that were to follow. The example here revolving around the Sabbath and the manna "test" indicates that they were not going to walk in His law. It should be noted that Christians are called to walk in faith and that the Christian law is a law of faith (Rom. 3:27). The Old Covenant law is described by the apostle Paul to not be of faith. Romans 3:27 covers another relevant issue:

Where is boasting then? It is excluded. By what law? of works? Nay: but by the law of faith. –
Romans 3:27 (KJV)

In the law of faith, there is no boasting. In the law of works (do this, don't do that; keep this) one could conceivably boast, such as a boast in keeping the Sabbath. Do Sabbatarians boast in the Sabbath? Most assuredly. It is their distinctive. It is what they claim provides the basis to separate a real Christian from a false one. One of the real issues here is whether Sabbath-keeping relates to faith, or a practice that has the potential for boasting.

KNUDSON: Some rabbinical writers think they see evidence that the Sabbath pre-dated Exodus 16 in Moses' account of his observations of the cruelty of the Egyptian slave masters and his intervention in one particular case.

Here is what Knudson says, which can be found in his rebuttal of *Lying for God* posted at the Adventist Defense League's website:

In my recent research I've come across two further hints, recognized by Jewish commentators, to Sabbath Reform instituted by Moses among the Hebrews prior to the giving of manna.

Exodus 2:11 - "One day, when Moses had grown up, he went out to his people and looked on their burdens (seḇālāh), and he saw an Egyptian beating a Hebrew, one of his people."

Hebrew scholars discern two different occasions in this verse. That is, they see that it speaks on one occasion of Moses going out to his people when he "looked upon their burdens", and a later occasion where "he saw an Egyptian beating a Hebrew, one of his people." The syntax tends to confirm this, as evidenced by the repetition in the final clause "one of his people" which would be unnecessary if it were part of the former thought.

The *Shemot Rabbah*, a midrash on Exodus dating to the 10th to 12th centuries, offers this comment for when Moses "looked upon their burdens", while he was considered a naturalized Egyptian:

"And he saw his brothers, with their burdens. He saw that they had no rest, so he went to Pharaoh and said: 'If one has a slave and he does not give him rest one day a week he dies; similarly, if you will not give your slaves rest one day a week, they will die'. Pharaoh replied: 'Go and do with them as you wish'. And Moses ordained for them the Sabbath for rest." (*Shemot Rabbah*, 1:28)

In this Hebrew commentary, the Sabbath is seen as early as predating the Exodus. The Sabbath becomes

5 Exodus 16:19-20

6 Numbers 15:32-36

an issue of contention while in slavery in Egypt. The conflict comes to a head when Moses returns to deliver Israel.

Exodus 5:5, 9 - "And Pharaoh said, 'Behold, the people of the land are now many, and you make them rest (šabat) from their burdens (seḅālāh)!' ... 'Let heavier work be laid on the men that they may labor at it and pay no regard to lying words.'"

"This is to teach us that the Israelites possessed scrolls with the contents of which they would expect deliverance, every Sabbath, assuring them that the Holy One Blessed be He would redeem them. Thus, because they rested on the Sabbath, Pharaoh said to them: 'Let heavier work be laid upon the men and let them not expect deliverance from false words. Let them not expect deliverance, or be refreshed on the Sabbath day.'" (*Shemot Rabbah*, 5:18)

Here we can see that the issue of the burdens (seḅālāh) of the Israelites has been resumed and Moses has been teaching that they should rest (šabat) from their labours. Thus we have another example that in the Hebrew teachings, the Sabbath predated the giving of the Manna.

AUTHORS: The only sacred work Jesus validated was the *Mishnah*. He gave no such approval to the midrashes, the Talmud, or any other body of Jewish knowledge, whether written or in the form of a sacred oral tradition. A logical conclusion is that Jesus knew that there was erroneous information in these other Jewish sources, so He did not validate them.

KNUDSON: It can be seen here that God already considered the Sabbath His law which He intended to test/train them in by the giving of the Manna. Combined with the fact that the first reference to šabbāt is without the article and therefore considered an established proper name, it is evident that the Sabbath pre-existed the Manna as God's Law and as we have seen, that ordinance was established during Creation week. The first references by name to šabbāt in Exodus 16:23-26 lack the article not because something new is being introduced, but because even at this stage it was already considered a proper noun. In looking at the example given of the first explicit mention of an altar in Genesis 8:20 in light of the sacrifices implied in Genesis 3 and 4 and the mention of 7 of every clean animal being taken onto the ark, we can see that altars were implied to have existed from the fall of man. Indeed, the context of the passage, with the introductory reference by God that He was to "test them" according to His "Law". All of this fits with what we learned by studying the Hebrew of Genesis 1-2 in Creation week where God instituted the Sabbath as an example for His "Image" in Adam and Eve to keep to.

AUTHORS: We addressed Knudson's theory earlier. To our rebuttal, we add the fact that all the other holy days given to Israel subsequent to the giving of the Sabbath reflect the fact that their first mention has anarthrous construction and every subsequent mention of it is preceded by a definite article. It is wrong to add words to Scripture. Where is the "Thus saith the Lord" for the idea that merely mentioning the Sabbath in the same story that discusses the fact that Adam and Eve were made in God's image requires that man follow God's example of resting? With this assumed license to add words to Scripture, Knudson can make God's Word teach anything he wants. Here is an example of this kind of thinking taken to the level of the absurd. In the same New Testament story about how Jesus was taken prisoner in the Garden of Gethsemane, it states that Judas went out and hanged himself. Therefore, we illogically "conclude" that if a Christian leader is ever taken captive in the presence of his followers, they are to go out and hang themselves also.

SHIRLEY - There is nothing in the text of Genesis 2:1-2 to indicate that man was to follow God's example in regard to the resting that He did on the the 7th day. One of the ways Ellen White and her enabling theologians like to insert this idea is based on the principle that since man was created in God's image, man is expected to follow God's example in every possible way. Based on Psalm 104:2, Ellen White, for example, taught that Adam and Eve were clothed in robes of light before they sinned, but this claim is contrary to the plain explanation given in Genesis 2:25. This is nice wishful thinking in regard to the SDA view of the Sabbath, but one way to test a principle is to take it to the ultimate extent to see if the end result can be considered to be logical. In this case, it does not seem so. Should man follow God's example to create a Universe, forgive sins, or make the sun's shadow go back ten steps, as God did in Isaiah 38:8? Of course not! Assumptions, as we have noted elsewhere, lead to wrong systems of belief.

HOHMANN - Knudson's function here is to serve as a representative of the SDA in the capacity of defending the SDA. His "client" is a church corporation. In this portion of the "trial" expert testimony has been presented which Knudson has attempted to refute. But unlike a trial, Knudson is not only defending the SDA, he is defending himself. We could ask whether Knudson is defending a church corporate or truth, and whether there is a conflict of interest in this regard. His

opponents at this point in this trial of sorts are not defending any particular church corporation. What then are they defending? Ultimately, the truth of the Gospel message – salvation through faith ONLY in Christ and the attendant grace of God that follows. A belief that Christians must keep and observe the Sabbath is incompatible with the Gospel. It is in conflict with the Gospel, and the evidence of Scripture bears this all out, for the Scriptures do not conflict with the Gospel; they are in harmony with it, and the evidence uncovered and presented by the “anti-Sabbatarians” demonstrates this again and again. Anything added to the Gospel, claimed to be necessary for salvation, falsifies the Gospel. E.G. White declared in her writings the necessity of keeping the Sabbath in order to be saved. This is the same thing as the SDA making the declaration. And yet, there is duplicity within the organization, for they also teach, or give lip service, to the Gospel message while elsewhere offering up caveats regarding the necessity of keeping the Sabbath for the same purpose; salvation. It comes down to “who are you going to believe?” The message of Christ or the SDA?

CHAPTER THREE

**A POINT-BY-POINT REFUTATION OF EDWARD M. COTTO'S
PAPER, "THE SABBATH IN GENESIS"**

A POINT-BY-POINT REFUTATION OF EDWARD M. COTTO'S PAPER, "THE SABBATH IN GENESIS"

COTTO: The 4th commandment points us back to Creation Week. The question, "Is the Sabbath in Genesis?" Is fully Answered right here in the Fourth commandment itself.

He quotes Genesis 2:3,

"and God blessed the seventh day, and sanctified it; because that in it he had rested from all his work which God created and made." Then he quotes Exodus 20:10, "But the seventh day is the Sabbath of the LORD thy God."

He says that the definite article, "the," indicates that the Sabbath has been present since Creation.

AUTHORS: Wrong! The definite article "takes us back" only as far as Exodus 16.

We thank Cotto for acknowledging that a definite article before a Hebrew holy day indicates that it was introduced previously and the reciprocal that the lack of an article (anarthrous construction) before it indicates that it had not existed previously. The use of the definite article here does indicate the previous existence of the Sabbath, but only back to the events of Exodus 16 where it was introduced for the very first time in the history of the world WITHOUT an article before it. Furthermore, Cotto seems unaware of the possibility that Moses might have been speaking about the blessing and hallowing of the 7th day in Genesis 2:2-3 in terms of *prolepsis*.

A few weeks later, Israel kept the Sabbath at the foot of Mt. Sinai. At this time the Sabbath ordinance was given formal status and codified into covenant law. It is no surprise after reviewing the chronology of the Exodus that Carson's linguistic work would conclusively demonstrate that Moses, in his wording of Exodus 20, used a set of indicators to clarify that the Sabbath ordinance was merely MODELED after Creation week.

The MODELING of the Sabbath commandment after the seven days of Creation is a key point in comprehending why one cannot proof-text a Sabbath back *into* Genesis. A model is not the thing itself. The object used as a model and the model itself can have significant differences, just like a plastic model of a 1957 Chevrolet might not have a working motor. Since we are discussing a comparison between the real thing, (the Sabbath commandment) and a model for it (the structure of the days of Creation), whether God actually reposed on the 7th day of Creation is not a deal breaker.

Recall that in Exodus 20 Moses used a word that is closer to meaning "ceased" than "reposed." Some scholars do not accept the "reposed" reading. In either case the comparison does not have to be exact. On the 7th day of Creation, God "knelt down" on it. Perhaps, like an attorney, God might have been said to have "rested" [set down] His case after He summed up the events of His work in creating Planet Earth. The Bible tells us that God sits on His throne, and some day He may appear to us sitting on a throne so we can relate to His presence in a way that we can comprehend. But does God, Who created gravity, need that gravity to hold down the throne that He presents Himself sitting on to His created beings? All we really are told about the seventh day of Creation is that God stopped creating.

The 4th Commandment required the Israelites not only to stop their worldly activities, but to fully rest (in the sense of repose) for the entire day. Also, they must work in the previous six days. Also, they were not supposed to leave their dwelling places. If Sabbatarians kept the Sabbath according to its requirements, they would stay in their homes from sundown on Friday night to sundown on Saturday night.

One Adventist apologist argues that some historical sources suggest that Egypt utilized a seven-day week during the Egyptian captivity. He suggests that we are picking the source that is most convenient to our point of view when we argue that the Hebrew people were accustomed to a 10-day week in Egypt. Chapter Two of Carson's book, "The Sabbath in the Old Testament," written by Harold H.P. Dressler, says, "Their sojourn in Egypt had taught them the ten-day week," and quotes Egyptologist, Richard A. Parker, "*The Calendars and Chronology, Legacy of Egypt* (Oxford University Press, 1971, p. 17) where Parker adds, "The seventh-day was called "part day." If Parker has identified the names given to each of the 10 days of the Egyptian week, he would appear to be knowledgeable.

At the same time we recognize that the Hebrews may have kept track of a 7-day week while in slavery, whether the

knowledge of it came from oral history, astronomy, or both. We simply do not know.

These various Hebrew literary conventions are detailed by Carson and his associates in their 1982 book, ***From Sabbath to Lord's Day***.

We also must mention that there is evidence that the Egyptians utilized a sabbath system based on the four phases of the moon. Later we will present the evidence for a pagan lunar sabbath system in Egypt during the captivity.

COTTO: The fact that God blessed the 7th day is evidence that He gave every 7th day thereafter a special status. Not only did He bless it, but he hallowed it.

How could blessing one single day bless multiple days thereafter? This idea makes no sense. Before every meal Christians ask God to bless their food. There is no doubt that He blesses it. But blessing the food for one meal does not bless every meal thereafter. Only by taking what we know about the model of the days of Creation (the Sabbath commandment of Exodus 20) and reading its characteristics back into what it was modeled after (the seven days of Creation) can we read a special status for every 7th day after the 7th day of Creation. This approach seems to put the cart before the horse.

The Hebrew language is known for its poetic qualities— particularly for its use of parallelism, or the saying of the same thing in two somewhat different ways. There are some differences between the meaning of “blessing” and “hallowing,” but in view of the fact that Moses is telling the story of what God did, and not what man was supposed to do, it is only speculation that Moses intended two separate theological distinctions in regard to sacredness of this one day. It is difficult to imagine how Cotto might think that the blessing of the day plus the hallowing of it adds up to something that means the same thing as adding the phrase suffix about the “evening and the morning.”

The significance of the absence of the evening and morning suffix after the account of the events of the 7th day is that it applies the blessing and hallowing only to one 24-hour period of time and memorializes that one day for eternity. Every day that comes after it has this memory resting on top of it. There is no place to “put” any additional memorialization on top of any subsequent day because there is no room for it. Again, this fact is nothing profound in view of the fact that we are reading a story about what **God did** on one single day in the history of Planet Earth. Why is this so difficult to comprehend?

HOHMANN: Cognitive Dissonance can be defined in part as believing in two (or more) things at the same time that are mutually exclusive. That is, both cannot be true at the same time. Cotto chooses to state the seventh day of creation week was “hallowed”. He does not state what is recorded in the KJV in that this seventh day was “sanctified”. The seventh day of Creation Week was “set apart” as a special day, unique and contrasted to the other six days. Yet, Cotto and other SDA also insist on violating this sanctity of that seventh day by coupling it with the weekly Sabbath! How can this day be sanctified; set apart, and yet be a part of a weekly recurring Sabbath? Logically, it cannot. The SDA apologists continually “play it both ways” depending on the issue at the moment. It was shown that this seventh day, being devoid of the suffix phrase regarding the evening and the morning causes the day to have no end, remaining set apart for all eternity, and the SDA cries foul. Then they insist it, as the weekly Sabbath day, it remains separate and unique for all eternity.

COTTO: The Sabbath day is present in Genesis 2 because God used a similar form of word in Exodus 20 for the Sabbath (Shabbath) that Moses used for “rest” in Genesis 2. This proves that the seventh-day of Creation is the Sabbath of the Moral Law.

HOHMANN: First, Nowhere in Scripture are the Ten Commandments referred to as “Moral Law”. Taking that Law and chopping it up into categories is a man-made convention. It was a covenant law, where transgressing any one point of law, despite any artificial category, resulted in being guilty of the entirety. See James Chapter 2.

By claiming the Ten Commandments to be “Moral Law” the Sabbath slips in under the radar as a moral law based solely on its proximity to the other nine.

The Ten Commandments are not “Moral Law”. They are points of law that deal with man's *immorality*. Keeping the Ten Commandments never made anyone moral, or proved anyone to be moral. This is a fundamental error of the SDA and other similar groups; the belief that merely “keeping” points of law, such as the Sabbath, imputes moral status. One could comply with the command not to murder, yet harbor hatred in their heart, which is the spirit of murder, making one guilty before God as though they had committed murder. Likewise the balance of the Law of Moses is not “ceremonial” Law exclusively, for there

are points of law that continue to address moral issues in the rest of the Law.

WYNNE: Yes, Moses used a different form of the same word in these places. However, Hebrew usage conventions give different meanings to these different forms of this word, so it is more like Moses used different words. The Hebrew word translated into English as “rest” is in the **verb** form of that word. It means TO CEASE. The verb form of the Hebrew word is not used here to mean REST. Moses said that God STOPPED on that day. It is far from accurate to say that the verb form of a Hebrew word and the noun form of it have the same exact meaning.

By contrast the form of the same word that is used in Exodus 20 is a **noun**, which **can** mean REST. Chapter Two in ***From Sabbath to Lord's Day***, pages 22-23, “The Sabbath in the Old Testament,” authored by Harold H.P. Dressler, observes the following. (Footnote #30 is typed afterward because it provides additional clarification.) Also please observe that some sources appear to render the Hebrew characters from right to left as they would appear in a Hebrew manuscript, whereas other sources show them from left to right as they would be if they were written in English:

A question that must be discussed in connection with the origin of the Sabbath is the etymology and meaning of the word שָׁבַת (Hebrew word translated “rest”). Lexicographers group it with the verb שָׁבַת (to cease, stop; to stop working, celebrate, to rest). Hehn emphasizes that the meaning “to rest” is foreign to this verb; the nature of **sbt** is “to cease, to be finished (J. Hehn, *Siebenzahl und Sabbat*, p. 101. Schmidt sees no original interdependence between the verb שָׁבַת and the noun “Sabbath”; there is only a very early connection (W. H. Schmidt, *Die Schöpfungsgeschichte der Priesterschrift* (Neukirchen-Vluyn: Neukirchener Verlag, 1964), p. 156. From the etymology, Beer and Mahler understand the action of “being complete” (G. Beer, *Schabbath-der Mischnatractat “Sabbath”*, p. 13; E. Mahler, *Der Sabbath*, p. 239.) De Vaux points out that the noun formation from the verb שָׁבַת is irregular; “the regular form would be shebeth.” In its grammatical form it “ought to have an active meaning, signifying ‘the’ day which stops something, which marks a limit or division...” (R. de Vaux, *Ancient Israel*, p. 476). The Sabbath would thus be a day that marks the end of the week or the ceasing of the week’s work.³⁰

³⁰(R. North, *Derivation*, p. 186, especially note 3: “sbt” has nothing to do with resting in the sense of enjoying repose . . . It certainly cannot be translated as “the day of rest.” This latter statement can be questioned [however] since it is based on the etymology rather than the usage of the word.

There is insufficient support for the idea that Moses meant that God indicated that He wanted the Hebrews to rest on the Sabbath because He had reposed on the 7th day of Creation. Most likely, in Exodus 20, Moses indicated that Israel was to repose on the Sabbath because God CEASED, or STOPPED creating Planet Earth on the 7th day of Creation. Once more, this distinction is not pivotal because Genesis 2:2-3 tells the story about what God did and says nothing about what man is to do— not even that Adam and Eve rested on it. Furthermore, God's cursory acknowledgment of the boundary characteristics of the 7th day of Creation, indicated by His kneeling down on it for a moment, does not favor the suggestion of a grandiose purpose for it. The day had minimal significance in itself, only becoming an icon when it became part of what God used as a model for the Sabbath commandment later. In an action language, as Ancient Hebrew is, it would seem that if God had wanted to elevate the 7th day of Creation to a momentous event that would affect the universe for eternity, He would have said something like, “God threw the 7th day up to the top of a mountain that reached above the clouds and touched the stars.”

Since there is no evidence that God reposed on the 7th day of Creation, the suggestion that God would be bound by His own law to keep His own Sabbath appears doubly incredible. We are talking about the I AM, the Great Creator God Who is all powerful and omniscient. Christians have no trouble believing that God can meet privately with each one of us when we arrive in Heaven. If we worship a God Who can be everywhere at once and answer everyone's prayers at the same time, what sense is it to talk anthropomorphically about God as if He were chained to the time constraints of a day on Planet Earth? For all we know, God was creating ten billion universes at the same “time” He was creating Earth. We are not told that part of the story. Jesus tells the Jewish Sabbath keepers that He and the Father work on the Sabbath. Jesus called what he was doing “work.”

John 5:17-18 - In his defense Jesus said to them, “My Father is always at his work to this very day, and I too am working.” ¹⁸For this reason they tried all the more to kill him; not only was he breaking the Sabbath, but he was even calling God his own Father, making himself equal with God.

Notice that John observes that Jesus did, in fact, break the Sabbath. Clearly the Sabbath can't be a "moral" law if God Himself violated it. Kerry Wynne tells the following story about God's ability to be everywhere:

Some years ago my step son, Kevin, began to attend the independent Bible church my wife and I had joined after leaving Adventism. After attending several Sunday services he gave his heart to Jesus. After a few more months, the sermon on a particular Sunday morning was about healing. It was not a healing service. After the pastor finished his sermon, he suddenly paused and said, "I seem to be impressed that there is a person in this room who has a problem with his arm— perhaps his wrist or shoulder. Let us raise our arms to Jesus and ask Him to heal that person." Years earlier Kevin had broken his right elbow in five places, having one of the most severe fractures his doctor had ever seen, but Kevin had no money for surgery. The result was his arm had only 30% of its normal range of motion. It was pitiful to see him bowling or playing any kind of sports, and hundreds of people were daily witnesses to his severe handicap. Kevin, seated beside me, raised his crooked arm and prayed that the person the speaker was referring to would be healed. Since the pastor had suggested a problem with the wrist or shoulder, Kevin wasn't thinking that his elbow was included. He remembered praying something like, "Lord, please heal that person, and if You aren't too busy, You might think about healing my elbow also. My life would be so much easier if you did." Nothing seemed to happen in the sanctuary, but when we got out to the coffee bar in the lobby, Kevin came running up to me, shouting excitedly, "Kerry, Kerry, I've been healed! Look at my arm! I can touch my shoulder now!" To my utter astonishment he reached up and put his hand on his shoulder—something that was impossible only moments earlier! This miracle required the creation of new bone, sinews, and ligaments out of nothing—*ex nihilo*. As a result of this undeniable miracle, many individuals came to Christ, including a number of people who were about as un-churched as a non-believer could be. If God could not be everywhere at once and could not do everything at once, it is too incredible to believe that the only thing in the Universe He was doing at that moment was healing Kevin's elbow?

One of the unfortunate effects of the development of the Sabbatarian heresy is the harboring of a highly anthropomorphic concept of God. God spoke to humans in ways that they could understand Him. It is profitable for God to speak of Himself in terms that his human creatures can understand, but it is dangerous for humans to limit God by ascribing human attributes to Him that He does not possess. Not only do we have the problem of translating Ancient Hebrew into our modern languages, but we have the challenge of avoiding the error of finding anthropomorphic statements in Scripture and throwing them back at Him under conditions that do not apply. God can CEASE but He cannot REST because He never becomes weary. Therefore, there are limitations to how far one can take God's analogy between the ceasing on the 7th day of Creation and the Sabbath rest of the 4th commandment. Kerry Wynne provides the following illustration of the limitations of anthropomorphic analogies:

My wife and I have a little Cockatiel. When Sunny the Cockatiel gets on top of a chair, he thinks he's king of the roost. If anyone walks by him, he spreads out his wings and flaps them at the "challenger." Sometimes I show him that I am the alpha bird by putting my arms at my side and flapping my elbows at him. He acknowledges my challenge by flapping his wings at me with even greater force. I have gotten down to the bird's level of communication, but I am not an "Alpha Bird", and I don't have real wings any more than God needed to repose after creating Planet Earth.

The arguments for translating this key word, "ceased," rather than "rested" are strong, but they are not beyond question, as noted by the scholar, R. North (*Derivation*, p. 186) above. However, when the special elements of the Hebrew linguistics in Genesis 2, Exodus 16, and Exodus 20 are viewed as a whole, it is clear that Moses deliberately worded his writing to make sure his readers would not think they could see a Sabbath ordinance in Genesis 2.

COTTO: The fact that God gave the Sabbath from Mt. Sinai with thunderings and lightnings should be enough evidence for anyone that Christians must keep the Sabbath. This is so easy to understand that even a child can grasp it.

He quotes Psalm 119:89: "For Ever, O LORD, thy word is settled in heaven."

HOHMANN: Ergo, if you cannot grasp this, you are dumber than a child. Or rather, this line of reasoning would be typical of a child.

WYNNE: Cotto again resorts to a logical fallacy; a "Non Sequitur" if you will. It is quite a leap here to conclude from the thunderings and lightnings of this event in turn signaled God's requirement of these commandments as binding on all

mankind, but it is common for falsehoods to be propagated in this fashion. As William Hohmann observes, Cotto's conclusion also ignores the context leading up to this momentous event, where God said it was all for the purpose of insuring the people believed and followed Moses! Do we believe God, or Cotto?

God's children, the Jews, have always understood that the Sabbath was given as a sign to set them apart from every other nation. They were a very stubborn, idolatrous people devoid of the spirit of God and had been immersed in a heathen culture for hundreds of years. As a people, the Children of Israel came directly out of heathenism even as when God directly intervened and called Abraham out of the abject Heathenism of Ur of the Chaldees.

A good show of power and fireworks was just what they needed. Down through time our Jewish brethren deserve credit, however, for being able to take into account not only what God said, but to whom He said it— as well as to consider the context of time, place, and circumstances of the occasion—to figure out that the Gentiles were not a party to Sabbath observance. The other nations of the world were accountable to the Law of the spirit; intent of heart or conscience:

Romans 2:14-15 - For when the Gentiles, which have not the law, do by nature the things contained in the law, these, having not the law, are a law unto themselves: ¹⁵Which shew the work of the law written in their hearts, their conscience also bearing witness, and their thoughts the mean while accusing or else excusing one another.

Once an expert in the law wanted Jesus to tell him what he must do to have eternal life. Jesus questioned him as to what was written in the law and how he read it. He responded saying to love the Lord with all your heart, strength, and soul, and mind and love your neighbor as yourself. Jesus then told him to "do this and live."

Luke 10:25 - 28 (NIV) ²⁵On one occasion an expert in the law stood up to test Jesus. "Teacher," he asked, "what must I do to inherit eternal life?" ²⁶"What is written in the Law?" he replied. "How do you read it?" ²⁷He answered: "'Love the Lord your God with all your heart and with all your soul and with all your strength and with all your mind'; and, 'Love your neighbor as yourself.'" ²⁸"You have answered correctly," Jesus replied. "Do this and you will live."

If the Jews had been willing to obey these two commands God would not have needed to give them even the Ten Commandments. Even having the Ten Commandments, the Old Covenant Jews broke all Ten throughout their history. They did not have the "heart" to follow God.

○ that there were such an heart in them, that they would fear me, and keep all my commandments always, that it might be well with them, and with their children forever! – Deuteronomy 5:29

COTTO: Proof that the Sabbath is in Genesis is found in the Fact that God both Blessed and Sanctified the 7th day of Creation Week. In fact, God kept the 7th day of Creation Week as the first Sabbath because He stopped the secular work of creating the world and performed spiritual work on the First 7th day in the history of the world. Take note that after "the heavens and the earth were finished" –verse 1, God still had one more work to get done on the seventh day. The beginning of verse 2 reads, "And on the seventh day God ended his work which he had made..." One may ask, "What other work did God do on the seventh day and does this not violate it as a day of rest?" We answer, no, because the work he did on the seventh day was not secular work, for verse one already tells us that the heavens and the earth were already "finished." The work he did on the seventh day is answered in verse 3.

AUTHORS: God is a Spirit, so everything He does can be considered to be "spiritual." Cotto's insistence that God actually rested on the 7th day of Creation is embarrassingly anthropomorphic. Cotto implies that God was forced by His own new "rule" to keep His own Sabbath. We may say that God rested, but He doesn't need to take physical rest because He doesn't get tired or weary. In a sense, God can do "anything," but only in a sense. For example, He can't turn East into West because West would become East and only the name would change. C.S. Lewis once said that nonsense is nonsense even when you are talking about God. If you follow what we have learned about the meaning of the Hebrew word translated "rest" in Genesis 2, you will recall that the word in its verb form means "ceased." We believe that God is fully capable to ceasing one kind of activity and beginning another. Moses identified the 7th day as the day when God stopped.

We must keep in mind two key points about what Moses said in reference to this 7th day of Creation week: **(1)** He is telling

his readers about what God did— not what Man should do. It was His celebration. (2) He had Moses leave off the suffix phrase, "and the evening and the morning were the 7th day," after his account of the events of the 7th day. Cotto says that this omission is compensated for in other ways, but his argument is invalid. We Anti-Sabbatarians thank him for admitting that the non-inclusion of this meaning suffix is a serious danger to his position, but we can't "compensate" him in this regard. The blessing and hallowing does not substitute for the absence of the "evening and morning" suffix.

As we have discussed a number of times previously, the absence or presence of this after-clause (suffix) is a specific Hebrew literary modifier, and its absence or presence after a day, or *yom*, is designed to indicate whether its attributes are restricted to its boundaries or whether license exists to extend the implications of those events beyond it. There is no comparable meaning indicator in the English language because the two languages have fundamentally different structures. The blessing and hallowing (sanctification) of this one 24-hour period of time has, by the use of this literary device, been indicated to have no boundaries. The *memory* of these attributes—not the day itself— continues forever. Because these attributes are already there, and will always be there, they cannot be specially placed or transferred to a 7-day interval thereafter, or to any other interval, or at ANY other time thereafter without violating the sanctification of that day. The blessing and hallowing of that particular day is a "done deal." In no way does this concept imply that God did not cease his creative activities on the literal 24-hour period of the 7th day of Creation, or the possibility that he rested in a literal way by celebrating the completion of His work with Adam and Eve.

The author of Genesis knew that his readers would not question the idea that God spent less than 24 literal hours refraining from creative activity, but he seemed to have "worried" that some of them might try to turn his story of one celebration day into an unlimited number of them. The Holy Spirit led the writer of Genesis to go out of his way to clarify this point. Sabbatarians represent a small minority of Christians who have chosen not to get this point.

We also reiterate that this seventh day was indeed "sanctified" and as such, cannot be a recurring event and remain sanctified contextually.

COTTO: The fact that God blessed the Sabbath day in Genesis 2 proves that the Sabbath lasts forever because the Bible teaches that whatever the Lord blesses is blessed forever.

AUTHORS: He then quotes a number of proof-texts to support this concept, including I Chronicles 17:27.

God blessed Judas Iscariot in many ways when he was in the presence of Jesus. Just getting to be with Jesus—the Creator of the Universe—was a blessing, but the blessing did not last very long.

Adventists should be especially familiar with the fact that Bible writers often used the term "forever" in relative ways. For example, they seem to understand this fact when it comes to how they handle what they want the Bible to say about Hell fire lasting "forever." They teach that the Hebrew word in these cases translated "forever" means something like "to keep going until the process reaches its completion." Adventists do not want to believe that the wicked spend eternity in an unpleasant place because their critically important Doctrine of the Investigative Judgment would not work. There are a number of examples of the relativity of "forever" in Hebrew usage.

Meredith G. Kline discovered that the Mosaic Covenant was modeled after the covenant treaties of Israel's neighbors. The language of these covenants featured pronouncements that their provisions would last "forever", but these "forever" provisions were subject to revision as future circumstances would dictate. Quoting Kline, A.T. Lincoln, cited in the D.A. Carson (editor), ***From Sabbath to Lord's Day***, in his chapter entitled, "From Sabbath to Lord's Day: a Biblical Perspective," pp. 352-353:

Kline has pointed out similarities in this aspect of permanence between ancient near eastern treaties and the biblical covenants. Such treaties often spoke of their term as being valid down through following generations "forever," and yet these treaties were subject to the revision of the suzerain because of changing circumstances. Kline points out that the biblical covenants and these various aspects can similarly be said to be "forever" and yet subject to change according to God's sovereign purposes in accomplishing redemption in the midst of the historical process. In later Judaism, with the increasing emphasis on Torah, any such notion of change was lost sight of and the law was held to be permanent and eternal, continuing into the age to come. But as part of the Mosaic covenant, and like the elements of the tabernacle, the priesthood, and the offerings, the Sabbath itself can be seen to be eternal and to have continuing validity through the fulfillment of the type. In particular, in Hebrews 4, the resting place of the land and the physical rest of the Sabbath are seen to be types of God's eternal rest from the beginning.

HOHMANN: There are a number of issues to be addressed in relation to Cotto's claim here. First, he refers to the seventh day of creation as the Sabbath. It is not "the" Sabbath. It is the seventh day of Creation Week. Next, He states God blessed and sanctified that seventh day of Creation Week. Next, he makes the claim that whatever God blesses stays blessed. He offers evidence to support his claim citing I Chronicles 17:27:

Now therefore let it please thee to bless the house of thy servant, that it may be before thee for ever:
for thou blessest, O LORD, and it shall be blessed for ever.

We could ask, what is the condition of David's house today, right now? We might be hard pressed to say the house of David is blessed at this moment, but the whole concept is rendered moot, for what was blessed here was the seventh day of Creation Week, and we have repeatedly shown that it indeed was blessed AND SANCTIFIED – set aside, separate and distinct from all other days previous to it, and after it. What we witness here is an attempt at "Transference Theology" and rather blatantly at that. That day, in that context, was set aside as unique. Attaching the weekly Sabbath to it removes this contextual uniqueness and separateness.

Cotto's use of this reasoning is also reminiscent of similar claims regarding the Sabbath and the Law or Ten Commandments, devoid of any proper hermeneutics. It is claimed by some SDA's that the Ten Commandments are eternally binding on mankind because they were engraved in stone, reflecting the durability and "everlasting" quality of stone as a medium for recording them. It is a convincing argument, but deceptive also. Stone does deteriorate. Do we have the tablets today, or copies written down originally in a book that has been copied down through the ages? Just because an argument sounds reasonable does not mean it is credible evidence. God blessed many things. God sanctified that seventh day. One does not cancel out the other. Nowhere do we see a statement in Scripture that blessing something means the item or person blessed will in turn remain eternally, nor does it follow that the Sabbath being blessed means it applies to all mankind. This is no way to build one's belief system, based on assumptive reasoning.

COTTO: Even after the entrance of sin, the Sabbath remained blessed.

AUTHORS: This is another logical fallacy– circular reasoning– because it assumes that there was a Sabbath in existence at the time of Creation to be blessed. **We have PROOF from Hebrew linguistics that the Sabbath did not exist until the Exodus. We have EVIDENCE from Exodus 20 that this is the case, and we have the suggestion from the text of Genesis 2:2-3 that there is no Sabbath mentioned therein. The Abrahamic Covenant did not include it, and the Sabbath was not kept until the 38th day of the Exodus journey.** The Abrahamic Covenant was limited to circumcision and the promise that if his descendants were faithful to God, they would possess the Land of Canaan forever. Even after the Sabbath ordinance was placed in the Mosaic Covenant, it remained subject to and dependent upon the observance of the Ordinance of Circumcision. The Law of Moses is a fully integrated covenant whole. If you break one of that covenant law, you have broken the covenant. If for no other reason than this, there can be no Sabbath-keeping without circumcision. The Covenant Law of Moses contains 613 laws that many Jewish scholars view as fully equal in importance. Textual studies of both the Old Testament and New Testament prove the subordination of the Sabbath to the ordinance of circumcision– a fact which is one of the three key fatal flaws of the Sabbatarian belief model. Cotto's claim is a Non Sequitur; it is not relevant.

COTTO: Another connection between the seventh-day of Genesis and the Sabbath commandment of Exodus 20 is that Moses said it was the 7th day that the Lord "blessed" because He had rested on that day. How is it that the anti-Sabbatarians continue to say that the Sabbath of the 10 commandments is not the 7th day "Sabbath" of Creation Week when the word of God itself shows that the blessing of the 7th day of Creation Week endured till the Sabbath commandment was given? As I have pointed out before, I Chronicles 17:24 [27] says that what the Lord blesses is blessed forever.

HOHMANN: The cited passage does not "say" what the Lord blesses is blessed forever. It is an appeal to God to bless David's "house" forever. Even if we take a more liberal view of the passage, one still cannot conclude that everything God blesses remains blessed forever. And, there is still the issue of what this Hebrew word translated "forever" actually means, for olam [owlam] can and does mean; an indeterminate amount of time that does eventually end.

WYNNE: Cotto is still working from the false premise that every seventh day from Creation Week was a blessed "Sabbath" day. He now claims, based on this premise, that whatever God blesses remains blessed forever. There is no Bible text that says this. Cotto is implying this from the text:

Let it even be established, that thy name may be magnified forever, saying, The LORD of hosts is the God of Israel, even a God to Israel: and let the house of David thy servant be established before thee. ²⁵For thou, O my God, hast told thy servant that thou wilt build him an house: therefore thy servant hath found in his heart to pray before thee. ²⁶And now, LORD, thou art God, and hast promised this goodness unto thy servant: ²⁷Now therefore let it please thee to bless the house of thy servant—that it may be before thee forever: for thou blessest, O LORD, and it shall be blessed forever. – 1 Chronicles 17:24-26

Cotto must find a credible biblical principle that indirectly supports his desired view. He goes to an unrelated text to acquire a general principle that he hopes will provide this INDIRECT support. The indirect support he attempts to use is the illogical principle that *everything* God blesses is blessed forever. For example, after the flood God blessed Noah and his three sons. Ham saw Noah's nakedness while he was sleeping off being drunk with wine. Noah cursed Ham to be the slave to his brothers. Obviously Ham was not blessed by God forever unless being a slave to your brothers is a blessing!

Gen. 9:24-27 (NIV) - ²⁴When Noah awoke from his wine and found out what his youngest son had done to him, ²⁵he said, “Cursed be Canaan! The lowest of slaves will he be to his brothers.” ²⁶He also said, “Blessed be the LORD, the God of Shem! May Canaan be the slave of Shem. ²⁷May God extend the territory of Japheth; may Japheth live in the tents of Shem, and may Canaan be his slave.”

Cotto faces two barriers with his claim. **First**, as we have noted earlier, Moses' purposeful non-inclusion of the phrase, “and the evening and the morning” after the 7th day, serves to give this one day attributes that were to be remembered (memorialized) forever. **Second**, Exodus 20 clarifies that the Sabbath commandment was only a model of Creation week. A model is not the thing itself. Even as a model, the Sabbath ordinance was not a full representation of the days of Creation Week. Genesis 2 says God simply ceased or stopped creating. Man could *not* create. God had worked/created for six days before the 7th day. Adam and Eve could only “work”, if at all, a small part of the week— perhaps not even a full day— but the 4th Commandment requires a full six days of work before any resting is permitted. Therefore, Adam and Eve could not have kept the Sabbath even if there had been one to keep.

Two different things got blessed between Genesis 2 and Exodus 20: **(1)** In Genesis 2 a single day to be remembered forever. In this regard, that seventh day was indeed blessed forever. **(2)** In Exodus 20, a “cultic” ordinance given by God to Israel, *modeled* after the structure of the days of Creation, designed to set them apart from every other nation on the face of the earth. (The possible use of the literary principle of PROLEPSIS suggests that this seventh day may not even have been blessed until the 10 Commandments were given at Mt. Sinai.)

The concept that the Sabbath commandment is a MODEL is the key to understanding the relationship between Creation week and the Sabbath commandment. Moses used several Hebrew literary conventions in Exodus 20 to clarify that the Sabbath ordinance was a MODEL of the days of Creation. **A.T. Lincoln**, the author of Chapter 12, “From Sabbath to Lord's Day: A Biblical and Theological Perspective,” of D.A. Carson's book, ***From Sabbath to Lord's Day***, page 349, comments on the linguistic aspects of Moses' account of the 4th Commandment in Exodus 20:

The last clause of Exodus 20:11 gives the reason for the Mosaic institution and takes up the terminology of blessing and hallowing from Genesis 2:2-3, now specifically applying these terms to the “Sabbath” rather than the seventh-day, and is not to be taken as implying that the seventh day of Genesis 2:3 was already the Sabbath set aside by God for humanity. As H.H.P. Dressler points out, the present commandment is based on a previous event, and the significance of the Hebrew construction translated as “therefore,” עַל כֵּן, is crucial to this interpretation, as it often functions to connect causally an event in the past with a situation some time later. [See first also R. Frankena, “Einige Bemerkungen zum Gebrauch des Adverbs ‘al-ken im Hebraischen,” *Studio Biblica et Semitica* (Wageningen, 1966, pp. 94-99)] In fact scholars often speak of an “etiology” when a present name or practice is explained on the basis of a previous event or story, and עַל כֵּן is one of the markers by which an etiology is recognized. Exodus 20:11 indeed contains in addition to this introductory formula a further feature typical of an etiology—the word play between “the seventh day” and “the Sabbath day.” Such etiological passages, after the introductory “therefore” or “consequently now,” can have the verb in the past tense without implying a strictly past meaning. The presence of the features in Exodus 20:11 suggest that it too is to be seen as providing an explanation of a present institution, the Mosaic Sabbath, by reference to a past event, God's seventh-day rest after the creation, utilizing the terminology of Genesis 2:3 and a play on words to make its point.

Again, note that one source renders the Hebrew characters from right to left and the other from left to right. You will need to scroll down to the beginning of the next page since the image will not fit on the bottom of this page. It seems that the Hebrew characters are like a combination of two Hebrew words which would be literally translated “ON-SO:” **Strong’s #H5921** (used as a preposition (in the singular or plural, often with prefix, or as conjugation with a particle following); above, over, upon, or against (yet always in this last relation with a downward aspect) in a great variety of applications:—above, according to (-ly), after, (as) against, among, and, X as, at, because of, beside (the rest of), between, beyond the time, X both and, by (reason of), X had the charge of, concerning for, in (that), (forth, out) of, (from) (off), (up-) on, over, than, through (-out), to, touching, X with.), and **Strong’s #H3651** (From **H3559**; properly set upright; hence (figuratively as adjective) just; but usually (as adverb or conjugation) rightly or so (in various applications to manner, time and relation; often with other particles):— + after that (this, -ward, -wards), as . . . **as, + [for-] asmuch as yet, + be (for which) cause, + following, howbeit, in (the) like (manner, -wise), X the more, right, (even) so, state, straightway, such (thing), surely, + there (where) -fore, this, thus, true, well, X you.**) [Emphasis from the author, credit to Strong’s.]:

The Hebrew-English Interlinear Bible posted at www.Scripture4All.org translates Exodus 20:11 literally to indicate that God commanded the Hebrews to rest on the Sabbath because He stopped on the 7th day of Creation:

All of which in them and·he-is-stopping in·the-day the·seventh on so He blessed Yahweh.

Exodus 20, therefore, does not provide any definite support for the claim that God actually reposed on the 7th day of Creation. God also told Israel to rest on the Sabbath to help them remember that He had rescued them from slavery. The Jews were required to rest every 7th day as much to help them remember their Exodus from Egypt as to remember that God stopped creating on the last day of Creation. **Unless we are presumptuous enough to step into God’s place and determine which reason was the most important for keeping the Sabbath, we must regard both reasons as equally important.** Christians, therefore, cannot remember the Sabbath for one of these reasons, so Sabbath-keeping cannot possibly apply to them.

In summary, Genesis 20 utilizes **four aspects** of the Ancient Hebrew language to clarify that the Sabbath commandment was merely *modeled* after Creation Week: **(1)** the word translated, “therefore,” indicates that something in the present is about to be explained by something that happened in the past, **(2)** the explanation of a present event is accomplished by comparing it with an older event, and; **(3)** the word play between the “seventh-day of Creation Week and the “Sabbath day” of the 4th commandment, which gives further evidence that an etiological explanation has just taken place. **(4)** As discussed in an earlier section, the form of the word translated “rest” is an irregular form of the verb, which is more closely related to the concept of CEASING rather than that of repose.

COTTO: If the Sabbath is a temporary institution, why did God bless it [the Sabbath] twice – once at creation and then again at Mt. Sinai?

WYNNE: Again, circular reasoning! He didn’t. There was no Sabbath to bless until the Exodus, and God blessed it then, in relation with the Hebrews and for the duration of the Old Covenant only.

AUTHORS: Consideration of the writer’s possible use of the literary device of prolepsis suggests that it might be that the 7th day of Creation was not even blessed or sanctified on the actual 7th day of Creation– that the author of Genesis 2:2-3 was looking at it from the perspective of when it was blessed at Mt. Sinai as he recalled his knowledge of both events. In any case, the blessing and hallowing were applied to one single day. By their very nature, these attributes would continue forever without boundaries. Once blessed by God FOREVER, always blessed by God forever. Once set aside to be remembered, always set aside to be remembered. **It is impossible to add these qualities to any day subsequent to it any more than a Hebrew birthright can be bestowed on the same eldest son every week by holding a self-invented ritual that Hebrew society had not mandated.**

At Creation, one single day was blessed and set aside to be remembered forever. At Mt. Sinai, a cultic ritual was established, based on the days of Creation as its model, and multiples of seven days were set aside and blessed.

COTTO: The fact that God blessed the Sabbath is sufficient to prove it lasts forever.

AUTHORS: We covered this one before. However, it is interesting to note how incomplete the Ten Commandments are. It

does not tell us it is a sin to abuse your wife or children, to own slaves, lose the family money gambling, not caring for the family needs, not helping people in dire need, kidnap people and hold them hostage, lie to others, hate those you do not agree with, drunkenness, gluttony, immodest dress, and the list can go on. Jesus gave a whole set of new “laws” on the Sermon on the Mount, and St. Paul listed 23 sins that would keep someone out of God's kingdom. The 10 Commandments were not complete or flexible enough to meet the needs of His people forever.

COTTO: The fact that God sanctified the 7th day of Creation indicates that it was set aside FOR SACRED SERVICES, which represents still more evidence that the Sabbath ordinance began at creation. “The reason why He blessed the seventh day but did not bless the previous six days was because He had a special purpose for the seventh-day, as will now be seen by His use of the word, “sanctified.”

AUTHORS: To follow is a Hebrew word study that demonstrates conclusively that the Hebrew word here for “set aside” cannot mean “set aside for sacred services.” The special purpose is only in a manner of speaking. The day that God created Eve was infinitely more special than the 7th day by almost any standard, human or divine. The 7th day of Creation did not become the focus of attention until the giving of the Sabbath commandment at Mt. Sinai which called attention to it as its model.

Now is a good time to review the mechanical translation of the passage once more. Notice, again, that the passage merely reports what God did. There is no mention of a Sabbath ordinance, much less any indication that God gave man an institution involving sacred services at this time. When God did give the Sabbath to Israel at the time of the Exodus, the sacred services associated with it included animal sacrifices and circumcision as specified in the Law of Moses. Note also that God never set aside a day for sacred services for his New Covenant believers:

GENESIS 2:2 AND 2:3

And He will much-FINISH (verb) Elohiym in the Day the SEVENTH BUSINESS-him WHICH he did DO (verb) and he will CEASE (verb) in the DAY the SEVENTH from ALL BUSINESS-him WHICH he did DO (verb).

And he will much KNEEL (verb) Elohiym AT DAY the SEVENTH and he will much SET APART (verb) AT him GIVEN THAT in-him he did CEASE (verb) from-ALL BUSINESS-him WHICH he did-FATTEN (verb—in the sense of “to fill up”) Elohiym to DO (verb).

You may recall that Cotto references the *Miriam-Webster's Dictionary's* definition of the word, “sanctified,” noting that in English it can mean (a) made holy or consecrated, or (b) set apart for sacred services.

The word, “sanctified,” came into the English language thousands of years after humans began having sacred services. The English meaning of the word, “to set aside for sacred services,” is only a secondary meaning of it, and would only likely have come into English usage as a result of the Judeo-Christian culture that English speaking peoples adopted after the spreading of the Gospel throughout Europe. Therefore, the English definition means nothing to us in our quest for the answer to the meaning of the Ancient Hebrew word used in Genesis 2:3.

You may recall that he cites the *Brown-Driver-Briggs Hebrew Definitions* for the Hebrew word, *qadash*, which is translated as “sanctified,” to mean (a) to consecrate, sanctify, prepare, dedicate, be hallowed, be holy, be sanctified, be separate, to be set apart, be consecrated.

We can accept the meaning of “set aside for a holy purpose,” which is what consecration means, as long as we remember that what got consecrated was one single day. When the American astronauts returned safely from their mission to the Moon, there was a ticker-tape parade for them in New York City. That one and only day in the history of the United States was set aside to memorialize the great accomplishments of these brave men. It was likely the only parade ever given for them, and we don't have parades to memorialize their accomplishments every week, or even every year.

Additionally he cites *Strong's Hebrew-Greek Concordance's* definition of the Hebrew word, *qadash*, as (a) a primitive root; to be (causatively make, pronounce, or observe as) clean.

As we mentioned before, Anti-Sabbatarians have no problem with this one day being made holy and set aside to be remembered forever. They do however object to adding things to this day, thereby negating its being set apart and distinct in

and of itself.

Finally, recall that neither *Brown-Driver-Briggs* nor *Strong's* reference defines Moses' Hebrew word, *qadash*, as "to set apart for sacred services." *Brown-Driver-Briggs* lists the secondary meaning of one of the forms of the word, *qadash*, to mean "to observe as holy, keep sacred," but you can see from a review of this reference that this form of the word was not the one used in Genesis 2. Even if it was, it is only the secondary meaning of this form of the word that can be used in reference to the keeping of other kinds of religious services.

observe as holy, keep sacred: feasts, Sabbath [Exodus 20:8](#) = [Deuteronomy 5:12](#) (Decal.), [Jeremiah 17:22,24,27](#); [Ezekiel 20:20](#); [Ezekiel 44:24](#); [Nehemiah 13:22](#); fast [Joel 1:14](#); [Joel 2:15](#); year of Jubilee [Leviticus 25:10](#) (P); so [עצרה לבעל 2 Kings 10:20](#). [Ed. Note: Observe once more than Genesis 2:2-3 is not listed for this form of the word, but Exodus 20:8 is.]

COTTO: There are several Old Testament texts that support the idea that "sanctify" means to set aside for a holy purpose, or even "set aside for sacred services."

AUTHORS: As we review these texts, keep in mind that the Hebrew definitions of the word *qadash* allow for "set apart" or even "set aside for a holy purpose." But not "set aside for religious services." A linguistic analysis of Genesis 2:2-3 allows for reading the passage that this one, single day was set aside for a holy purpose, but it does not allow for the Sabbatarian-friendly reading that the day was set aside perpetually for recurring sacred services. Sabbatarians like the idea of the sacred services reading because such a reading would make it a little easier to extend the idea of days with intervals of seven from the 7th day of Creation being set aside for sacred services also.

TEXT #1: And the LORD spake unto Moses, saying, (2) Sanctify [*qadash*] unto me all the firstborn, whatsoever openeth the womb among the children of Israel, both of man and of beast: it is mine. — Exodus 13:1-2

Cotto says, "Notice the word here is used in the context of sanctifying, or dedicating "all" the firstborn. It was announced by God that all the children be sanctified unto Him, and this demanded "all" the people to be involved, for they had to obey the Lord and bring in their children for dedication. All were to know that God was the owner of every firstborn, whether of man or beast."

Unfortunately, *qadash* is merely used here to mean only to "set apart." The first born were to be set apart, but they were not set apart for ceremonial use. The first born had a special position in the family, but they were not required to serve in the Tabernacle for the remainder of their lives. They lived ordinary lives except that the first male child got the birthright inheritance—hardly an example of "holy use" or a sacred service. It is acceptable to render the meaning of *qadash* as set aside for holy use, but not as set aside for sacred services.

TEXT #2: And Jehu said, Proclaim [*qadash*] a solemn assembly for Baal. And they proclaimed it. — 2 Kings 10:20

Cotto says, "When used here in the context of proclaiming a solemn feast, "all" the Baal worshipers of Israel were to be informed of this event and to attend it."

This is Cotto's only observation about this text. What is his point? Both Sabbatarians and Anti-Sabbatarians agree that the 7th day of Creation Week was set apart from the others. By its very nature, it was different than the other days. It is clear, once again, that *qadash* fits its Hebrew meaning of simply "set aside." The fact that the sentence conveys the idea that the day was set aside for a religious service is the result of the context in which the word was used and not a function of the specific meaning of the word, *qadash*, itself.

TEXT #3: And the LORD spake unto Moses and Aaron, Because ye believed me not, to sanctify [*qadash*] me in the eyes of the children of Israel, therefore ye shall not bring this congregation into the land which I have given them. — Numbers 20:12

Cotto comments further:

According to this verse, Moses and Aaron were to sanctify God "in the eyes of the children of Israel." So

we see that when the word "qadash" is used, it is to publicly announce or proclaim that something is set apart for holy use. All those involved were to be made aware of this announcement.

Again, it is okay to interpret *qadash* as to set aside for holy use. The above passage means that Moses and Aaron were to set God apart for receiving the honor and glory that was due to Him. We maintain that this word cannot mean “set aside for sacred services.”

TEXT #4: Moses said to the Lord, “The people cannot come up Mount Sinai, because you yourself warned us, 'Put limits around the mountain and set it apart as holy.’” — Exodus 19:23

A review of the Piel variation of the verb *qadash* is helpful in this case:

Pi`el – Perfect 3 masculine singular שָׁדַק Numbers 6:11; 1 Kings 8:64, etc.; Imperfect 3 masculine singular שֹׁדֵק Genesis 2:3 +, etc.; Imperative masculine singular שֹׁדֵק Joshua 7:13; שֹׁדֵק Exodus 13:2, etc.; Infinitive construct שֹׁדֵק Exodus 29:1 +, etc.; Participle שֹׁדֵקִי Exodus 37:28; suffix שֹׁדֵקִי Exodus 31:13 +, etc.; — [Note Genesis 2:3 uses this variant of the Pi`el form, which means, “be consecrated, dedicated, by]

1. set apart as sacred, consecrate, dedicate:

a. places: Sinai **Exodus 19:23** (J), alter, etc., Exodus 29:36,37; Exodus 30:29 (P), tabernacle, etc. Exodus 40:9,10,11; Leviticus 8:10,11,15; Numbers 7:1 (twice in verse) (P); tent of meeting Exodus 29:44 (P); place of sacrifice 1 Kings 8:64 2 Chronicles 7:7; gate Nehemiah 3:1 (twice in verse); — Ezekiel 7:24 see שֹׁדֵקִי below.

Here, Cotto attempts to draw a parallel between the setting aside of Mt. Sinai and the so-called setting aside of the 7th day of Creation for the Sabbath ordinance. The comparison works much better between the setting aside of Mt. Sinai for a one-time sacred event and the setting aside of the 7th day of Creation for a one-time sacred event. In regard to the 7th day of Creation, one and only one day was set aside—not multiples of it.

In Exodus 19:23, the word *qadash* is used only to mean “set aside.” In fact, in the Hebrew sentence, the “setting aside,” represented by the pi`el form of *qadash*, acquires its specific meaning of, to be SET ASIDE for a holy purpose, by a Hebrew word that follows it, and that modifies it, and conveys the concept of holiness— *u•qdashth•u*. Therefore, in this case the word *qadash* is dependent on the CONTEXT of the sentence to acquire any meaning that extends beyond simply “set aside.” Our reference here is available at the following link to this passage in the *Hebrew-English Interlinear Bible* at **Scripture4All**:

<http://www.scripture4all.org/OnlineInterlinear/OTpdf/exo19.pdf>

COTTO: The similarity of the Hebrew words for “rest” in Genesis 2 and Exodus 20 provides evidence that the word translated “rest” in Genesis implies a Sabbath rest.

AUTHORS: As we have pointed out previously, in Genesis 2, the word translated “rest” is the verb form of the word, and it likely does not mean “rest” in the form of repose. It simply means “cease” or “stop.” Also, as we have out-lined earlier, the form of the verb translated “rest” in Exodus 20 is the irregular form, which implies CEASING rather than REPOSE. Some authorities reject the idea that this passage in Exodus 20 means that God wanted the Israelites to rest on the Sabbath because He reposed on the 7th day of Creation.

What Cotto must do here, but cannot do, is to show that in Genesis 2:2-3, God told Adam and Eve to rest along with Him—impossible since the text does not even say that God Himself rested. Cotto comes up short again because the passage just says what God did. God had worked for six days, whereas Adam and Eve had existed and perhaps worked for one day. The 4th Commandment specifies that humans must work for six days, apparently just as God had worked for six days before He ceased working on the 7th day of Creation Week. Were the Sabbath commandment to have actually existed at the time of Creation, the six day work requirement would still have applied. There is no statement that Adam and Eve rested, ceased, or reposed on the 7th day of Creation as God did.

If there had been a Sabbath in Eden, and **if** God had rested on it, and **if** His resting had been intended as an example for man, the Hebrews would not have been directed by God to march across the desert without keeping every seventh-day as a Sabbath rest. **If** this were the case, God would have forced them to break a law that Sabbatarians claim represents an eternal, moral principle established at Creation.

Recall once more that in Exodus 20, the Ancient Hebrew word usually translated “rest” in the sense of repose can mean either to “cease” (as in stopping) OR “rest” (as in the sense of repose). *Gill's Exposition of the Entire Bible* makes this comment about the nature of God's “rest” in Exodus 20:11, and cites a text in Isaiah that points out that God never becomes weary:

and resteth the seventh day: which does not suppose labour, attended with weariness and fatigue; for the Creator of the ends of the earth fainteth not, neither is weary, Isaiah 40:28 nor ease and refreshment from it, but only a cessation from the works of creation, they being finished and completed, though not from the works of Providence, in which he is continually concerned: now this circumstance, before recorded in the history of the creation, is wisely improved to engage an attention to this command, and to the observation of it; there being an analogy between the one and the other, that as God worked six days, and, having done his work completely, ceased from it and rested, so it was fit and proper, that as the Israelites had six days allowed them to labour in, and do all their work, they should rest on the seventh, they and all that belonged to them, or had any connection with them.

God is making an analogy in anthropomorphic terms His people can understand. The reality of the matter is that God never wearies or needs rest. What He could do, as the Great I AM, was to cease creating, and that is exactly what He did. The multiple literary devices Moses used in Exodus 20 to clarify that the Sabbath commandment was merely modeled after the seven days of Creation suggest that Moses was comparing the two events loosely and that the preferred “reading” of the word is “ceased.” The Children of Israel were to cease their daily labors and rest on the Sabbath day.

It is okay when God chooses to speak to humans in anthropomorphic terms, but it is not okay for humans to impose anthropomorphic limitations on God.

COTTO: The Hebrew word for “sanctify” in Genesis 2 can have the meaning, “To keep or observe the Sabbath.” This is additional evidence that when God sanctified the 7th day of Creation, He was indicating to Adam and Eve how they were to make use of that holy day. “So while the Hebrew word 'Shabbath' is not found in Genesis, the Hebrew word 'shabbath' is, and its close connection and nearly same meaning is but more proof that the 'Sabbath day' rest is what is intended in Genesis 2:1-3.”

AUTHORS: We looked at this issue in a another section. Cotto is attempting to use a secondary meaning of the word, and on top of that he twists it by trying to apply it specifically to Sabbath observance. The Hebrews used their word for “sanctify” in conjunction with other sacred days and events that were “observed.”

Secondary meanings evolve within a language as it develops a history. Eventually a word that meant “set aside for sacred use” would come to be associated with the term, Sabbath, but it is pure assumption to think that the word “Sabbath” became associated with this form of the word, “sanctify,” at any time prior to the Exodus. Proof– not just evidence– is found in Exodus 16 that there was no Sabbath prior to the giving of the Manna and the Exodus.

The first meaning of a word is always the earliest definition which was created by the earliest common use of the word. Here are the two definitions given for this Hebrew word by *Brown-Driver, and Briggs*. In this case, the word “shabbath” is in its “pi’el” form:

1) Set apart as sacred, consecrate, dedicate:

2) Observe as holy, keep sacred

Note that *Strong's* does not list this secondary meaning for “shabbath” at all. Again, we have a problem with reading something back into Genesis 2 from later influences.

COTTO: The fact that the linguistic suffix, “the evening and the morning,” is missing from Moses' account of the events of the 7th day does not indicate that seventh day was meant to continue forever without an end. Moses put the meaning of the evening and morning into this passage in two different ways, and this proves that the Sabbath rest talked about in this passage doesn't simply mean only that God's rest would last forever like the anti-Sabbatarians would like to claim: (1) “In other words, the phrase "evening and morning" and the word "sanctified" parallel each other, for both do the same thing. They "set apart." It would have been redundant for Moses to use the phrase, “evening and morning,” when this is already implied by his use of the word "sanctified.” (2) The Hebrew word translated "day" is the Hebrew word "yom," and is "defined by evening and

morning in Genesis 1," says Brown-Driver-Briggs' Hebrew definition. If the combination of the "evening and morning" makes up the "yom" or day, take note, that this same word "yom" is also used in reference to the seventh day."

The lack of the evening and morning suffix memorializes the memory of this one single day forever by giving it the attributes of blessing and hallowing that can have no boundaries. The actions described by the narrative took place within a 24 hour period of time, but the memory of the blessing and setting aside of that one day would last forever. Once this one day has been blessed and set aside, it doesn't need a weekly cultic ritual to keep it blessed and set aside.

We thank Cotto for acknowledging that the problem of the missing "evening and the morning" suffix is dangerous to Sabbatarianism. He must convince us, therefore, that his effort to explain this problem away is credible, or he has lost the case. He has tacitly agreed to meet the Anti-Sabbatarians at this battle field and conceded that this territory is the key to winning the "war" over the question of whether there is a Sabbath in Genesis.

As we reviewed earlier, the Hebrew word translated as "sanctify" can mean "set apart," but not "set apart for sacred services." Therefore, the recognition that one 24-hour period of time in the history of Planet Earth included the concrete action of God setting down His creative "wand" and walking away from it, and kneeling down briefly on the day, does not imply the imposition of a weekly Sabbath ritual by any stretch of the prudent imagination. God's assignment of unlimited blessing and the reservation of this one 24-hour period of time in the history of Planet Earth to be memorialized without boundaries prevents the possibility that this blessing and setting aside could be applied to any future date, whether an exact interval of the 7th day of Creation or not. Even if the Hebrew word for "set aside" could have the meaning of "set aside for sacred services," which would indicate that there was a sacred service on the 7th day of Creation, no linguistic justification would exist for reading it to mean that there were to be religious services every seventh day thereafter.

Cotto emphasizes that the Hebrew word, "yom," is used in conjunction with a description of all the seven days of Creation since he is focused on demonstrating that the 7th day did not last forever. However, the word "yom" functions as a separator to differentiate 24 hour periods of time from one another. The non-inclusion of the suffix, "the evening and the morning" after the 7th day, does not function as a separator of 24-hour periods of time. Rather, it specifies that this time period of 24-hours has the abstract attributes of being blessed and set aside to be remembered forever and without boundaries. In doing so, it prevents the specific application of these attributes to any day beyond its 24-hour boundaries, whether recurring or not.

COTTO: On the fourth day of Creation; God created the sun; moon; and stars so that man would be able to read "days:" God said in Genesis 1:14, "Let there be lights in the firmament of the heaven to divine the day from the night; and let them be for signs, and for seasons, and for days, and years."

Quoting Cotto:

"After man sinned, these time-telling elements did not cease to exist. If therefore they were established to tell "time" and "days," and their existence continued on through the creation of man until today, then obviously the Bible does not really have to mention "days" after man sinned, for the existence of "days" is already implied through the testimony of these elements. This shows that the seventh day could not possibly have been created to be an unending day of rest, and therefore must have always been a 24-hour day, for these heavenly elements, which were created to read "days," existed even while Adam was in perfect harmony with his Creator."

Of course this celebration day was limited to 24-hours. It was the memory of its special significance that lasts forever.

William Hohmann points out that the author of Genesis explains what a day consists of as an EVENING and a morning, the evening listed first, which suggests that the movement of the moon, best visible at night, was used to indicate the starting boundary for each day.

We have examined the subject of the lunar calendar earlier in this book. We will expand on the subject now. Let us review the *New International Version's* translation of Moses' account of the events of the fourth day of Creation:

¹⁴And God said, "Let there be lights in the vault of the sky to separate the day from the night, and let them serve as signs to mark sacred times, and days and years, ¹⁵and let them be lights in the vault of the sky to give light on the earth." And it was so. ¹⁶God made two great lights—the greater light to

govern the day and the lesser light to govern the night. He also made the stars. ¹⁷God set them in the vault of the sky to give light on the earth, ¹⁸to govern the day and the night, and to separate light from darkness. And God saw that it was good. ¹⁹And there was evening, and there was morning—the fourth day.

The Hebrew word translated “as signs to mark sacred times” is “mow’ed,” *Strong’s* word #4150, which means an appointed place, time, or meeting. It would seem that if the Sabbath had been given to Adam and Eve, such a “sacred time” would have been synchronized to the Moon.

Once again by way of review, God gave the Sabbath to Israel from the Mountain of the Moon which borders the

Wilderness of the Moon. The Semitic word for moon is “sin,” so both the wilderness and the mountain were named after the Moon. Here is the history of the word's derivation from the *Wikipedia* article on “Sin (Mythology). It is interesting to note that the association between the word “sin” and the moon originated in the Land of Ur, the place where Abraham was dwelling when God called him to be the father of His special people. It is also significant to note that one of the Hebrew words for “moon” is equivalent to the word “sin”:

The original meaning of the name *Nanna* is unknown. The earliest spelling found in Ur and [Uruk](#) is [DHYPERLINK "file://vhadayclu4/wiki/Liste_der_archaischen_Keilschriftzeichen"LAK-32.NA](#) (where NA is to be understood as a [phonetic complement](#)). The name of Ur, spelled LAK32.UNUGKI =URIM2KI, is itself derived from the theonym, and means “the abode (UNUG) of Nanna (LAK-32)”.

The [pre-classical](#) sign LAK-32 later collapses with ŠEŠ (the ideogram for “brother”), and the classical Sumerian spelling is ^DŠEŠ.KI, with the phonetic reading *na-an-na*. The technical term for the crescent moon could also refer to the deity, ^DU₄.SAKAR. Later, the name is spelled logographically as ^DNANNA.

The Semitic moon god Su'en/Sin is in origin a separate deity from Sumerian Nanna, but from the [Akkadian Empire](#) period the two undergo syncretization and are identified. The occasional [Assyrian](#) spelling of ^DNANNA-*ar* ^DSu'en-*e* is due to association with Akkadian *na-an-na-ru* “illuminator, lamp”, an epithet of the moon god. The name of the Assyrian moon god Su'en/Sin is usually spelled as ^DEN.ZU, or simply with the numeral [30](#), ^DXXX.

[He is commonly designated as *En-zu*, which means "lord of wisdom". During the period \(c.2600-2400 BC\) that Ur exercised a large measure of supremacy over the Euphrates valley, Sin was naturally regarded as the head of the pantheon. It is to this period that we must trace such designations of Sin as "father of the gods", "chief of the gods", "creator of all things", and the like. The "wisdom" personified by the moon-god is likewise an expression of the science of astronomy or the practice of astrology, in which the observation of the moon's phases is an important factor.](#)

Nomadic people, like the Children of Abraham, before migrating to Egypt would have had no other way to keep track of time than the Moon and solar year. It seems unreasonable to think that nomadic people would have the ability over thousands of years to keep track of an exact 7-day interval to the 7th day of Creation, although this is a remote possibility. Is it possible that God synchronized the Jewish Sabbath to the Moon as a way of giving Israel something they could relate to as part of their culture? Israel’s neighbors kept track of time with lunar calendars, so far as we can tell. It would seem that virtually all ancient cultures did. If this is the case, it was similar to how God modeled the 10 Commandments after the treaties that were common to neighboring countries, by putting a ceremonial law in the middle of the operational laws.

Lunar Sabbatarians claim that there are 72 instances in Scripture where it can be reasonably deduced from near-by time indicators that these Sabbaths occurred on one of the fixed days of the lunar month upon which the lunar Sabbath days would fall. The *Jewish Encyclopedia* (1906), states that the Hebrews used a lunar calendar for the largest part of their early history. The scholarly respect it enjoys adds credibility to its position that Israel most likely determined its weekly Sabbath days by the lunar calendar. A later Jewish encyclopedia, *The Universal Jewish Encyclopedia* (1943), strongly supports the fact that Israel determined its Sabbaths according to the lunar calendar until sometime after the building of the Second Temple. Additionally, these encyclopedia articles provide a number of Old Testament texts that provide evidence that Israel kept its Sabbaths according to a variable lunar calendar. These texts will be presented as parts of quotes from those encyclopedia articles. At the same time, just like unauthorized Catholic officials have claimed in error that the Mother Church changed the Sabbath by ecclesiastical authority alone, so it is possible the find Jewish authorities who mistakenly

claim that Israel always used a fixed calendar to determine its Sabbath days as a result of a lack of proper research and knowledge. Robert K. Sanders observes that one Catholic apologist he has communicated with had this to say when asked the name of the Pope that changed the Sabbath to Sunday. He said, "If the Sabbath was changed to Sunday it would have had to have been Peter as he is the first pope." Robert Sanders observes that it is impossible for any church or person to alter a covenant made by God. Thus, neither Peter nor a pope changed the Sabbath to Sunday. The Sabbath just ended with the Old Covenant.

The first volume of the *Jewish Encyclopedia* was published in 1901 with the remaining volumes published by 1906. It is an authority of the highest level, so I find it difficult to dismiss the possibility of a movable Sabbath in Israel:

The origin of the Sabbath, as well as the true meaning of the name, is uncertain. The earliest Biblical passages which mention it (Ex. xx. 10, xxxiv. 21; Deut. v. 14; Amos viii. 5) presuppose its previous existence and an analysis of all the references to it in the Canon makes it plain that its observance was neither general nor altogether spontaneous in either pre-exilic or post-exilic Israel. It was probably originally connected in some manner with the cult of the moon, as indeed is suggested by the frequent mention of Sabbath and New-Moon festivals in the same sentence (Isa. i. 13; Amos viii. 5; H Kings iv. 23). The old Semites worshiped the moon and the stars (Hommel, "*Der Gestirndienst der Alten Araber*"). Nomads and shepherds, they regarded the night as benevolent, the day with its withering heat as malevolent. In this way the moon ("Sinai" = "moon ["sin"] mountain") became central in their pantheon. The moon, however, has four phases in approximately 28 days, and it seemingly comes to a standstill every seven days. Days on which the deity rested were considered taboo, or ill-omened. New work could not be begun, nor unfinished work continued, on such days. The original meaning of "Shabbat" conveys this idea (the derivation from "sheba" is entirely untenable). If, as was done by Prof. Sayce (in his Hibbert Lectures) and by Jastrow (in *American Journal of Theology*, April, 1898), it can be identified in the form "shabbaton" with the "Shabattum" of the Assyrian list of foreign words, which is defined as "um nuḥ libbi" = "day of propitiation" (Jensen, in "Sabbath-School Times," 1892), it is a synonym for "Azeret" and means a day on which one's actions are restricted, because the deity has to be propitiated. If, with Toy (in *Journal of Biblical Literature* xviii. 194), it is assumed that the signification is "rest," or "season of rest" (from the verb "to rest," "to cease [from labor]"; though "divider" and "division of time" are likewise said to have been the original significations; comp. also Barth, "Nominalbildungen," and Lagarde, "Nominal-bildung"), the day is so designated because, being taboo, it demands abstinence from work and other occupations. The Sabbath depending, in Israel's nomadic period, upon the observation of the phases of the moon, it could not, according to this view, be a fixed day. When the Israelites settled in the land and became farmers, their new life would have made it desirable that the Sabbath should come at regular intervals, and the desired change would have been made all the more easily as they had abandoned the lunar religion.

The following quote from the article, "Festivals," in the *Jewish Encyclopedia* gives us further insight regarding the concept of the "movable" Sabbath in early Hebrew culture:

The moon was the beneficent deity of the shepherds in the region and climate where ancient Israel had its ancestral home. Hence the many traces of lunar institutions in even the latest Israelitish cult and its phraseology; e.g., the "horn" (crescent), the "face" (of YHWH) in the benedictions, etc. The Sabbath, as marking the end of the week, reveals its lunar origin; the phases of the moon having taught the shepherds, whose weal or woe depended so largely upon the benevolence or malevolence of the night season, to divide the period elapsing between two new moons into four equal groups (weeks), the last day of each—in imitation of the moon's coming to rest, as it were—becoming the day of rest. Indications are not wanting that at first the New Moon festival was not counted among the seven days of the week (see Week); but after $7 \times 4 (=28)$ days had elapsed, one or two days were intercalated as New Moon days, whereupon a new cycle of four weeks began, so that the Sabbath was a movable festival. Later the week and the Sabbath became fixed; and this gradually resulted in taking away from the New Moon festival its popular importance.

As you will note from the emphasized content below, the 1906 *Jewish Encyclopedia* presents some Old Testament texts which appear to allude to the existence of a movable Sabbath. The *Jewish Encyclopedia* article, "Festivals," states:

Dissociated from the moon, the Sabbath developed into a day of rest for the workers and animals on the farm (Deut. v. 14; Ex. xx. 10). Traces of the old taboo are, however, still found. In Amos viii. 5 it is the fear of evil consequences that keeps the impatient merchants from plying their wicked trade. The multitude of sacrifices (Isa. i. 8; Hosea ii. 11) on Sabbath and New Moon indicates the anxiety on those

particular days to propitiate the deity. Closer contact with Assyrians and Babylonians from the eighth to the sixth century BCE probably revitalized the older idea of taboo. The assumption that the Hebrews borrowed the institution from the Babylonians, which was first suggested by Lotz (*Quaestiones de Historia Sabbati*), is untenable; but that the Exile strengthened the awe in which the day was held cannot be denied. It having become a purely social institution, a day of rest for the farmers, the taboo element in course of time had lost its emphasis. The Assyrians and Babylonians may have had similar days of abstinence or propitiation (the 7th, 14th, 19th, 21st, and 28th of the month Elul), and contact with them may have served to lend the Jewish Sabbath a more austere character. **The Assyrian calendar seems to disclose an effort to get rid of the movable Sabbath in favor of the fixed. If after the twenty-eighth day two days are intercalated as new-moon days, the 19th day becomes the 49th from the beginning of the next preceding month, as in the Feast of Weeks, in connection with which the emphasis on "complete Sabbaths" ("sheba' Shabbot temimot"; Lev. xxiii. 15) is noteworthy.** At all events, in the Priestly Code, Sabbath violation is represented as entailing death (Num. xv. 32-36). The prohibition against kindling fire (Ex. xxxv. 3) probably refers to producing fire by the fire-drill or by rubbing two sticks together; this was the crime of the man put to death according to Num. xv. 32-36, the "mekoshesh" (see also Bezah iv. 7), the presence of fire being considered, if the analogy with superstitious practices elsewhere is decisive, a very grave sign of disrespect to the deity.

In the article, "Holidays," from the 1943 *The Universal Jewish Encyclopedia*, the writer stated:

1. Sabbath and New Moon (Rosh Hodesh), both periodically recurring in the course of the year. **The New Moon is still, and the Sabbath originally was, dependent upon the lunar cycle. Both date back to the nomadic period of Israel.** Originally the New Moon was celebrated in the same way as the Sabbath; gradually it became less important, while the Sabbath became more and more a day of religion and humanity, of religious meditation and instruction, of peace and delight of the soul, and produced powerful and beneficent effects outside of Judaism.

(See *The Universal Jewish Encyclopedia ...: an authoritative and popular presentation of Jews and Judaism since the earliest times*, Volume 9, page 410, Edited by Isaac Landman, 1943.)

In Landman's article, "Week," (*Universal Jewish Encyclopedia*, Volume 10, page 482), he says this:

With the development of the importance of the Sabbath as a day of consecration and EMPHASIS laid upon the significant NUMBER SEVEN, the week became more and more divorced from its lunar connection, so that by the time of the second Temple it was merely a period of seven days and no longer depended on the new moon.

At the same time your authors concede that some Jewish authorities deny the concept of a lunar Sabbath, as in the following reference. Here, the historian states what is currently true about the way the Jews keep the Sabbath. He fails to tell his audience, however, that this was NOT the case prior to the building of the second temple:

"[The] Sabbath day does not depend on any calendar. It occurs every seventh day regardless of the lunar or lunar-solar calendars."

שְׁלֹמֹה צֵיטְלִין – Solomon Zeitlin, 1952, Jewish Historian, cited from:

<http://loudcry.org/sda/worlds-last-chance>

Thus, Knudson demonstrates only a partial understanding of the history of the lunar calendar in Jewish history.

Our research suggests that the affinity for a 7-day week among various early civilizations does not depend on a "dim" memory of the seven days of Creation as passed down through the earliest ages of human history, although such is possible. Since the Moon seems to come to a standstill for 7 days at a time during its 28-29 day cycle, a seven-day week would be more likely to develop and/or maintain its widespread usage in ancient cultures for astronomical reasons. How else could nomadic people keep track of time? It is extremely unlikely that the nomadic Hebrews had a written calendar to follow prior to being enslaved by the Egyptians. The phases of the moon provided the only way these nomadic people could keep track of time. Quoted in the *Book of Jude*, *The Book of Enoch* discusses the four 7-day phases of the moon. Supposedly written by Enoch, the 7th from Adam, most scholars believe it was put together from a number of sources about 200 BCE.

Aside from its calendar implications, the *Book of Enoch* is interesting because it makes no reference to the Sabbath or the Mosaic Covenant. Whether it was recorded in writing from an oral history passed down from pre-Flood times, or whether it was put together around 200 BCE, it demonstrates, in either case, that the Jews did not see a Sabbath or a Decalogue in existence prior to Mt. Sinai.

The evidence from the history of the calendars used by ancient civilizations in South America, China, and the Middle East that a major solar system event caused the lunar and solar calendars to get out of sync with each other between the 8th and 7th century BCE reconciles everything we know about Israel's abandonment of the lunar calendar after the building of the Second Temple. Suddenly the lunar calendar didn't work. Israel's ancient neighbors developed fixed calendars as a result, and after one or another of them took Israel captive, they forced the Jews to use the fixed calendars they had devised. The Jews acquiesced to this imposition because their lunar calendar didn't work right any longer. The lunar Sabbath feast days were out of sync with the weekly Sabbaths whereas in ancient times all the Sabbaths related to each other in 7-day intervals fixed to the new moon. A future section of this book will deal with the subject of the lunar Sabbath in more detail.

COTTO: "The most disturbing verse in the Bible for our critics is one they have no choice but to acknowledge. They have tried their very best; everywhere from saying it is all symbolic to saying that it is only applicable to the past. Some have gone to the extreme to, after finding no other way to escape this reality, accuse us of claiming or somehow supporting new moon observance."

AUTHORS: Cotto refers to Isaiah 66:22-23.

Just saying the words doesn't change the reality of this text. Non-scholarly writers would refer to this claim as a "whopper." To the contrary, this passage is one of the easiest Sabbatarian proof-texts to refute. Anti-Sabbatarians **do** demonstrate that **if** this passage is really about the Heaven of the Hereafter, it would unavoidably teach that both the weekly Sabbath and monthly New Moons will be mandatory in Heaven. It would also teach that Levites will serve in the heavenly Temple, and that anyone who doesn't live to age 100 is an accursed sinner. It would not be Heaven in the sense of an eternal Paradise. Isaiah 65 and 66 transcend chapter boundaries in a discussion of the future of Jerusalem. For an increased understanding of this prophecy, please read both chapters together. The question is, which Jerusalem— the capital city of Israel or the Holy City of Heaven? Among other lapses of logic, Sabbatarians have ignored a key word in this proof-text example— the word -AS-. Something that is COMPARED TO something else cannot be the thing itself. And, would accursed sinners be in Heaven?

COTTO: Yet no matter what the claim might be, the following verse is clear even to the eyes of a child, and is piercing through the hearts of the Sabbath's most valiant opponents. These verses are found in the book of the ancient prophet Isaiah:

Isaiah 66:22-23

²²For as the new heavens and the new earth, which I will make, shall remain before me, saith the LORD, so shall your seed and your name remain.

²³And it shall come to pass, that from one new moon to another, and from one Sabbath to another, shall all flesh come to worship before me, saith the LORD.

The argument is brought forth, that Isaiah uses common idioms to simply say that in the New Earth there will be constant worship, from week to week, and from month to month.

The key word, AS, makes Isaiah's statement into a comparison and signals the reader that the topic is NOT what happens in the New Earth. Let us analyze the passage to find out what Isaiah was talking about.

COTTO: "Little do they realize that by such a claim they actually debunk their own reasoning of the seventh day of Genesis 2:2-3. Let me explain. If the "Sabbath to Sabbath" reference in Isaiah 66:23 is merely to show how worship will be "from week to week" one has to admit that a week necessitates the seventh day, for without the seventh day, there could not logically be a "week." A week consists of "seven" days, and as much as there has to be a first day to begin a week, there must also be a seventh day to end it." Now, our opponents tell us that God will restore the "eternal rest" that our first parents experienced in the Garden, which means there will be no "weekly cycle," for, every day will be an eternal day of rest.

HOHMANN: What is happening here is that Cotto is engaging in some obfuscation, which unfortunately we find Sabbatarians doing historically as a matter of habit. Sabbatarians, such as Cotto, cite Isaiah 66 as being situationally, the time frame of the New Heavens and New Earth; a time after all else has happened in relation to physical mankind. Cotto is also saying that the position of the “anti-Sabbatarian” is based on their time frame, which it is not!

If the case could be made that “people” even after the culmination of all things are keeping the Sabbath, then what excuse could there possibly be for not keeping it now? But Isaiah 66 is not about the time extant after the establishment of the New Heavens and Earth. The reference here uses the future event as something sure to occur; something well established prophetically that without doubt will come about. What then is sure to occur? First, God's people and their offspring will endure in the same way; their “names” will endure.

Now, whether what follows also relates to v. 22 is irrelevant. The statements stand firm as declarations of what God will do, without question. All mankind; all “flesh” will come before God to worship Him. Where? When? The context would indicate this is shortly after the return of Christ and His battle with those nations assembled to oppose Him. Reference is made to “My holy mountain, Jerusalem” in v. 20. Those who opposed Him at his return are there, lying dead for all to see.

Finally, Cotto claims the validation of the Sabbath as a result of the weekly cycle being referenced in the passage. In order for there to be a week, there must be a Sabbath at the end of it. Taking this line of logic out to its logical conclusion, Cotto has validated the observance of New Moon observances. Regardless, a seven day week without the seventh day being a sanctified day, and a seven day week with a sanctified seventh day still results in a seven day week. What Cotto apparently cannot fathom is a seven day week where the seventh day is not, and was not, a holy day to be observed by all mankind. His paradigm forces him to see no other possibilities other than his own.

WYNNE: The structure of a 7-day week is self-evident. The problem is that the Book of Revelation tells us in relation to the New Heavens and Earth that there will be no night “there.” If there is no night, there are no “days,” because a day consists of both a period of daylight and a period of night time— an “evening” and a “morning.” Isaiah could not be talking about the Heaven of the Hereafter. Back on Earth, in the Jerusalem of Israel, there are real 24-hour days.

The “eternal rest” we are told will exist in Heaven is the rest from the nightmare of sin—not from activity, enjoyable labor, and adventure. Cotto is thinking about rest as a cessation of labor. It does not follow that a cosmic rescue from sin through redemption would have anything to do with a weekly cycle.

COTTO: However, if Isaiah tells us we will have a week to week worship experience, how can you have an eternal day, while at the same time you have a weekly cycle where one 24 day follows the next? It's impossible and illogical! You can't have on the one hand an eternal rest where the rest-day will never end, and in the other hand a "week to week" where by definition you must have each consecutive day end at the same time!"

WYNNE: No such conflict exists. The 7th day of Creation marked the beginning of God's eternal rest from creating Planet Earth. Since there is no night in Heaven, there can't be “days” as we think of them; so there can be no “weeks” as we think of them now. For the purpose of analysis, note that God's rest from creating Planet Earth is eternal whether our perspective is the Jerusalem of Israel or the Heaven of the Hereafter.

HOHMANN: The impossible and illogical situation is the creation of the SDA to begin with. It is a classic straw-man argument. It is the Sabbatarian that insists this is a post- New Heavens/ New Earth premise. The temptation here is to chide Cotto for being unable to comprehend something spiritual in nature. The author of Hebrews speaks of God's rest that God entered into on that seventh day of Creation Week, and associates this “day” as “another day” in chapter 4 besides the weekly Sabbath, which day is designated as: “To day”. “To day” (today) one can enter into God's rest. Tomorrow becomes “To day” when we are in that day, and the same condition remains extant regarding God's rest and entering into it. God will still be in His Rest tomorrow. People will still have the opportunity to enter into His Rest, through faith, tomorrow, when it is known then as “To day”. This concept is irrelevant to any association regarding a seven day week and worship of God during that week. Perhaps the problem with Cotto's comprehension is the association his church makes between “rest” and “worship”, having historically blurred the concepts together so much so that they no longer see a distinction, having redefined the Sabbath in this manner.

COTTO: “No doubt we will enter into the rest of the true heavenly Canaan, as taught in Hebrews 3 and 24, but the weekly rest, the memorial of God's Creation, will continue from week to week, only this time it will be a

memorial of God's "new" creation of the heavens and earth, for, says the apostle, "I saw a new heaven and a new earth... I make all things new." Revelation 21:1-5.

AUTHORS: We are hoping Cotto is not trying to get any support for Sabbatarianism from Hebrews 3 and 4. The author of Hebrews is comparing the rest of the saints from the agony of sin and a vain life to the rest from physical labor the Jews enjoyed on the Sabbath day. Heaven provides a wonderful rest from sin and its consequences, but this passage in the Book of Hebrews has nothing to do with a cultic Sabbath ritual requirement for Christians.

Isaiah and St. John are using the term "new heavens and earth" in different ways. Isaiah is using it as a COMPARISON to demonstrate how long the memory of the valiant and faithful Israelites will last—forever. St. John is referring to the thing itself—a REFERENCE.

Is Cotto using Revelation 21:1-5 as evidence that the Sabbath, which he refers to as the "weekly rest," will be observed in the New Earth? If so, this point of view betrays a very primitive view of the cosmos. If God is going to make both a new "heavens" and a new "earth," He might make them in a different dimension, or in a different galaxy. He might make them in some way that we have no capacity to understand now. Our sun has a limited lifespan, and so does Planet Earth. Our solar system will eventually burn out during our unlimited lifetime in Heaven. Perhaps Heaven is in a dimension that does not have much in common with the way we perceive things now. God is probably chuckling at our own ideas about the cosmos and thinking to Himself what a big surprise we will be in for later. When you read the description of the New Jerusalem, it is difficult to conclude the New Earth it resides upon is an actual physical planet.

Additionally, where is the biblical authority to declare that the significance of the Sabbath will be expanded to represent something far beyond its original purpose? The Sabbath was given only to Israel and to distinguish the Jews from all other nations on the face of the earth. It was a "shadow" of Christ which lost its meaning entirely when Christ appeared. Apart from the Nation of Israel, the Sabbath has no meaning. The Sabbath is a sign of the Old Covenant—a contract between God and Israel—which was broken when the Jews rejected Christ and crucified Him. Just like a marriage contract is null and void if a wife murders her husband, so the Old Covenant ceased to exist when Jesus was nailed to the cross. Sabbatarians however must expand and increase the overall concept of the Sabbath in order to continue justifying its observance. They must make it out to be much more than it really is. Imagine the results should the SDA Church, for example, admit the Sabbath was of no consequence in Christianity. No, their collective egos cannot accept the possibility. Therefore, the Sabbath will be defended and promoted at all costs and by any means, including unscrupulous ones.

COTTO: Isaiah 66:23 is very difficult for Anti-Sabbatarians to deal with. If Isaiah is depicting an event not too far from his time, but before the time of Christ, then why does he reference the same "new heaven and new earth" that John the Revelator cites?

AUTHORS: When you are using something as a COMPARISON, any time or distance works. Both writers mention the same Heaven of the Hereafter, but Isaiah is using this as a COMPARISON, whereas John is referencing the place itself. John does not compare it with anything.

Read this passage again and again notice the word, AS.

(22) For as the new heavens and the new earth, which I will make, shall remain before me, saith the LORD, so shall your seed and your name remain.

COTTO: And if that is symbolic, John's must also be symbolic, and there will not really be a new heaven or new earth."

AUTHORS: John makes no claim to be using his reference to the new heavens and the new earth as a comparison. Isaiah warns his readers that a COMPARISON is about to follow by prefacing his phrase with the word "AS". By contrast, Isaiah used his reference to the New Heaven and the New Earth to compare the length of time that Israel's faithful heroes **would be remembered to how long the new heaven and new earth would exist**. A COMPARISON is not like a SYMBOL.

If we take the prophecies of Isaiah 65 and 66 and relate them to what things would be like for the Jerusalem of Israel, everything he said makes sense **whether the prophecy is symbolic or literal**. On the other hand, if we try to apply these chapters to the New Jerusalem in Heaven, **nothing seems to work whether the thing is taken symbolically or literally**.

The Old Covenant provided for days of rest governed by the appearance of each new moon. However, by the time of Christ the importance of the reckoning of the new moon for Sabbath-keeping had virtually disappeared from mainstream Judaism. There is some evidence that the Jews of Christ's day were keeping the biblical, lunar Sabbath, but there are conflicting sources that suggest they were following a fixed calendar. As we will explain later in this book, it appears that the Sabbath of the Passover Week during which Christ was crucified did not fall on a Saturday. By contrast, the New Covenant provided for no rest days whatsoever, and certainly not ones determined by the movements of the sun and moon. Thus, no reckoning of the movements of the Sun and Moon, no Sabbath-keeping!

COTTO: "The accusation is hurled at us, that if it is all literal (and we don't subscribe to the entire chapter being literal), then there will be carcasses in the New Earth according to verse 24. But this does not move us, for the verse says that they "will go forth, and look upon the carcasses..." and we know that this will literally take place, for as New Jerusalem descends from heaven, God destroys the wicked (Revelation 20:9) and those inside the city walls will obviously be able to look outward at the transpiring event. This does not mean that their dead bodies will abide there forever, for the very word "carcasses" implies a "decaying body" that will soon disappear, as Malachi alludes to, "ye shall tread down the wicked, and they shall be ashes under the soles of your feet." Malachi 4:3.

Nothing is said about the New Earth other than to use it as a COMPARISON to demonstrate how long the memory of the faithful of Israel would be remembered. It is not obvious that in the Holy City of the Hereafter there would be any dead bodies lying around to observe from the city walls. In Revelation 20 John says that fire comes down and burns the wicked up. Fire destroys things quickly. There would be no dead bodies left to see for more than a few seconds after the destruction of the wicked. The application to the Heaven of the Hereafter doesn't fit. If we are talking about the Jerusalem of Israel on Earth, it is easy to visualize Israel's neighbors attacking Jerusalem and losing the battle. In this case it is easy to visualize dead bodies lying around outside the city wall and people looking down on the sordid scene.

COTTO: Both the "it is all literal" and the "it is all symbolic" positions are faulty, which is why we take up the "double application" position of this chapter, explained in more detail at another web page at this site titled: [Isaiah 66:23: New Moon observance.](#)

The primary symbolism of this passage is Isaiah's use of the enduring qualities of Heaven to **represent** how long those true to God would be remembered. There is nothing in the text or the context of Isaiah's statement that requires a double application. There is no possible way to link Isaiah's statement to Sabbath-keeping in Heaven or a New Earth. There is no harm done in thinking about this passage as a symbol of God's eternal victory as long as we keep in mind that almost any noble victory can be stretched to be used as a symbol of God's final victory over sin.

Biblical scholars tend to view Isaiah as a Messianic prophet. Many of his prophecies about the life of Christ were amazingly detailed. Theologian James Burton Coffman sums up the work of various biblical scholars in regard to chapters 65 and 66:

A summary of this chapter must be especially heeded in the interpretation of it. Adam Clarke declared that, "These last two chapters relate to the calling of the Gentiles, the establishment of the Christian church, the reprobation of the apostate Jews, and their destruction executed by the Romans." (*Adam Clarke's Commentary*, Vol. IV, p. 244.) Lowth concurred in this analysis. (*Robert Lowth's Commentary*, p. 402). "This final chapter points to the final days of Judah and the coming glory of Zion in the new dispensation." (Homer Hailey, *A Commentary on Isaiah: With Emphasis on the Messianic Hope*, p. 521)

<http://www.studyLight.org/com/bcc/view.cgi?book=isa>
<http://www.studyLight.org/com/bcc/view.cgi?book=isa&chapter=066>
<http://www.studyLight.org/com/bcc/view.cgi?book=isa&chapter=066>

As we mentioned before, it is entirely possible that all these things would take place somewhere else in the Universe, perhaps in a different dimension, where there is no night. Since it takes both nighttime and daytime to equal a "yom" day, there would be no days there. The idea of having a moon that rotates around Heaven just like the one that revolves around Planet Earth is unlikely. An interpretation like Cotto's does not follow the accepted principles of literary interpretation.

COTTO: Adam and Eve essentially broke the Sabbath commandments. ... Let us face the facts and see clearly that when James said that when we break even one of the commandments we have in essence broken them all

(James 2:10), he was not lying. Now the Law of God, says the Psalmist, is "perfect" --Psalm 19:7. It is also "holy" and perfectly "just" --Romans 7:12. Paul also says that where ever there is sin, there must also be a law, for "where no law is, there is no transgression." --Romans 4:15. He clearly said that, "by the law is the knowledge of sin" --Romans 3:20. So, when Adam and Eve sinned in the Garden of Eden, how did they know they actually sinned? Paul answer's that we have knowledge of sin by "the law." There must have therefore been a law in place when Adam and Eve sinned, for they clearly acknowledged their sin (Genesis 3:2, 3, 7).

AUTHORS: There was only one formal law in the Garden of Eden, and they knew EXACTLY what it was. They were not to eat of the Tree of the Knowledge of Good and Evil. It seems incredible that our first parents could not even "keep" one law.

The burden of proof is on Cotto to demonstrate from Genesis 2:2-3 alone that there were other formal laws imposed upon them, including Sabbath-keeping. Adam and Eve were not fallen beings in the beginning. They had no innate tendency toward evil. It is only speculation that pre-Fall beings or angels would need formal laws. No one can escape natural law, however, and it would seem that Adam and Eve would have a native understanding of cause and effect relationships which create the difference between right and wrong. Cotto speaks a certain kind of spiritual truth, but the application of it leads him to circular reasoning and dangerous assumptions.

The Adventist understanding of the concept of the LAW is simplistic. It ignores the multifaceted view of the term LAW held by the Jews. **Since the Bible was written by Jews, a failure to understand the way its Jewish authors thought about the LAW leads to a comedy of errors.**

HOHMANN: Cotto has just made a lot of claims, proof-texting his way through his claims. I'm going to break it all down, and address the individual points:

["Adam and Eve essentially broke the Sabbath commandments. ...Let us face the facts and see clearly that when James said that when we break even one of the commandments we have in essence broken them all \(James 2:10\), he was not lying."](#)

HOHMANN: James is referring to the Old "Covenant" Law. In a covenant, all conditions/requirements must be complied with or fulfilled, or the covenant is violated. Covenants also have legal parties to them, and the legal parties of that covenant were God and the Israelites. Cotto carelessly (?) slips the "we" in as parties to that covenant. He also implies Adam and Eve were party to that covenant! That covenant law required one not born of Israel to undergo circumcision in order to enter into that covenant with the Israelites and God. Were Gentile converts to Christianity required to undergo circumcision and keep the law? Not according to Acts 15. Was Adam circumcised? These facts of the law do not deter Sabbatarians. They simply redefine what the Law is for Christians, as well as Adam and Eve on the fly, here insisting that this law is the Ten Commandments, they being a separate law of sorts; a second or separate covenant, thereby chopping up the Law into the "Law of Moses" and the "Law of God" being the "Big Ten." What gets conveniently overlooked is James' statement from James Chapter Two that relates to the "whole" law that Cotto words as "them all" above. "Them all" refers to the entire Law– the 613 laws of Moses, or the Torah. It appears Cotto just violated the biblical admonition against adding to or taking away from Scripture! He has added Christians as well as Adam and Eve to that covenant law, and took away a lot of that law in this process also so as to leave standing the Ten Commandments for all mankind for all eternity. When James was speaking about breaking one point in the law he was not only quoting from the Big Ten but also a point from the rest of the law of the Old Covenant (James 2:8 - "Love your neighbor as yourself.") James was speaking to Jewish converts who prided themselves for keeping the law while they were actually breaking major portions of it, including the spirit of the Law, in a similar manner to many Seventh-day Adventists and other Sabbatarians.

Then there is the matter of what was actually ratified as the Old Covenant. It was the Book of the Law that was sprinkled with blood, along with the people, that made up the Old Covenant. There is nothing in either the Old Testament writings or the New Testament writings that treats the law as being two laws, or the Ten Commandments as a separate law. Again, it demonstrates the carelessness Sabbatarians resort to in order to hold to a false theology and belief system. We do not find God or Moses ratifying the Ten Commandments as a separate law set. How odd is this if the SDA's position were true regarding the Ten Commandments being a moral eternal law binding on all mankind! What an oversight on the part of God!

The "whole" Law is just that; the whole law – circumcision to sacrifices – 613 points of law of which only a fraction Sabbatarians attempt to keep. I say "attempt" because even when it comes to just the Ten Commandments, especially the

Sabbath commandment, they do not truly keep or comply with it according to Scripture. Paul wrote – and the SDA's are fond of citing Paul – where he stated that "not the hearers of the law are justified but the doers of the law" and yet they are blind to the FACT that they are not doers of the law, even if we pare it down to just the Ten Commandments. Their hospitals routinely violate the 6th Commandment. They neglect to keep the Sabbath in the manner prescribed in Scripture. They do keep it though in accordance with the commandments of men, that is, the dictates of their church leadership. They have trumped God when it comes to what they call the "Law of God".

Cotto cites part of Psalm 19:7 –

The law of the Lord is "perfect."

By omitting the rest of the sentence (an example of "taking away" and proof-texting) a desired interpretation and claim is made other than what the sentence and context actually declares:

The law of the LORD is perfect, converting the soul: the testimony of the LORD is sure, making wise the simple.

If one is careless, working from assumptive reasoning, they may well assume this is referring to the Old Covenant law, or perhaps as Sabbatharians would prefer, the Ten Commandments. But it begs a logical question. When did the Old Covenant law, or the Ten Commandments, ever "convert" a soul? Never! Conversion is the process by which one receives the Holy Spirit. They are "converted" into a son or daughter of God. Their minds are converted so as to conform to the will of God. God's Spirit is referred to in Scripture as a "law" which God places within the true believer who believes the true gospel. Sabbatharians, by the very fact they are Sabbatharians, buy into a false gospel of works, and as a result, refuse to acknowledge God's Holy Spirit as possibly being a guiding force and light in their lives, opting instead for the Old Covenant letter of the law, where they try to find justification for "keeping" the Sabbath. The distinctions made between the Old Covenant ministration of death and condemnation are blurred with the New Covenant law of faith; law of Christ; law of liberty; law that leads to life. The Holy Spirit is relegated to being merely a force of God, and not literally God. God in the form of the Holy Spirit must be diminished in order to magnify the Old Covenant law and Sabbath. Their Sabbath is elevated above God.

The following text is a favorite of Sabbatharians:

Romans 7:12 (NIV) - So then, the law is holy, and the commandment is holy, righteous and good.

I would simply point out that the sacrifices were holy, and the Law indeed was perfectly "just", justly condemning those who broke the law, to death. If you want justice, the Old Covenant law is for you. Personally, I prefer the grace, mercy and pardon from condemnation available in the "new" law of the Spirit, made possible by the substitutionary death and sacrifice of Christ.

The apostle Paul points out another quality of that Old Covenant law in II Corinthians Chapter 3. That law had a glory to it; but its glory was seen as waning; fading away and when contrasted to the New Covenant Law of the Spirit, which has a glory far superior to the glory of the Old Covenant engraven in stones. The glory of the new does not fade away, and when compared to the glory of the Old Covenant Ten Commandments, the glory they possessed is hardly any glory at all. He also says that where ever there is sin, there must also be a law, for "where no law is, there is no transgression" - Romans 4:15."

What accompanies transgression? Condemnation! A remembrance of sin. Paul, in Romans 8, informs us that there is no longer condemnation for the believer. Why? How? Because the believer is removed from the Law that was associated with sin and condemnation! Christians are not under the Law; freed from the law; dead to the Law. Sabbatharians work very hard at resurrecting Christians back to the Law, putting them under the Law; chaining them to the Law, all so that they can justify once more their adherence to their Sabbath.

COTTO: "He clearly said that, "by the law is the knowledge of sin" -Romans 3:20. So, when Adam and Eve sinned in the Garden of Eden, how did they know they actually sinned? Paul answer's that we have knowledge of sin by "the law." There must have therefore been a law in place when Adam and Eve sinned, for they clearly acknowledged their sin (Genesis 3:2, 3, 7)."

AUTHORS: After eating from the forbidden tree Adam and Eve's "eyes were opened". They then knew that they sinned by breaking God's command not to eat from the forbidden tree. Cotto in his haste twists the Scriptures to defend the old covenant law. He attempts to "stuff" it back into the Garden of Eden so as to establish the Sabbath ordinance:

Gen 3:7 (NIV) - ⁷Then the eyes of both of them were opened, and they realized they were naked; so they sewed fig leaves together and made coverings for themselves.

HOHMANN: Whereas before, Cotto tried to establish the Law as extant and in force after Christ's sacrifice ended it, he now tries to establish it as extant and in force before Moses even gave it, all for the sake of trying to help establish the Sabbath as a Creation ordinance. There indeed was a law to transgress for Adam and Eve, but not the law Cotto desires. It was, and is, the same law that has always existed as the base law to the Old Covenant law; a law of faith and the spirit.

Galatians 3:19 (KJV) - Wherefore then serveth the law? It was added because of transgressions, till the seed should come to whom the promise was made; and it was ordained by angels in the hand of a mediator. – Galatians 3:19

Sabbatarians insist this “law” that was added “couldn't possibly be the Ten Commandments”, so “law” gets redefined on the fly, as need sees fit. Yet, we never see examples of Israel, or Jesus in the New Testament writings make any mention or reference to there being but one Law.

This law of faith and the spirit deals with the heart and intent of heart. Here then, as they say in a mystery novel, the plot thickens. Adam was commanded not to eat of the fruit of the tree of the knowledge of good and evil, and that should he do so, in that day, he would die. He and Eve decided to eat of that fruit anyway, and the rest, as they say, is history. But WHY did they eat of that tree, even after being told it would result in death? The answer is of great importance, and addresses a LAW much greater in every way than the Ten Commandments and Sabbath. That law of FAITH. Adam and Eve, first and foremost, violated the law of faith. They did not believe God. They doubted God regarding what He said about that fruit and that tree.

Cotto makes mention of the Law making known good and evil; being a source of knowledge in this regard, but does not put two and two together, due to his Sabbatarian bias. The law of the Old Covenant is representative of that tree of the knowledge of good and evil. Like that tree, the fruit of the law is death. That law was given to faithless Israelites. It was, according to Moses, to be a witness against them, proving them to be faithless, stiff-necked and rebellious. But here's the “rub”. Keeping the Law does not prove one faithful, or righteous. You can refrain from murdering someone, yet still have hatred in the heart, therefore being in violation still of the law of faith and love. It is God's Spirit within the believer that makes all the difference here. Only with God's Spirit are we capable of living a life of love and faith; true faith, in God. All else is a shadow, or a counterfeit, including the Ten Commandments. Why would Christians, with the very Spirit of God in them, need to be told not to have other gods besides God, and be told – commanded – not to worship other gods? Why would they need to be commanded not to murder – an act of hatred? And why, WHY therefore, having this knowledge and understanding, would we need to be told to keep the Sabbath? The Sabbatarian puts the Ten Commandments above all else solely for the purpose of justifying Sabbath observance. But if you understand the above, and understand the “law” of faith and the Spirit, which necessitates love, then you can see why the apostle Paul refers to the law engraved in stone as being obsolete. It was a law for the faithless, and not the faithful (I Tim. 1:9-10).

Cotto might as well have gone one step further and claimed the devil sinned by transgressing that law also, which would back the Sabbath commandment up to even before that seventh day of Creation Week, but then he would have to deal with the obvious absurdity of the conflict of having the Law, with the Sabbath extant before that seventh day they claim instituted the Sabbath. Yet the devil did sin.

This law is the law of faith— the New Covenant law of faith that is associated directly with Christ, for you see, there were two trees in the Garden of Eden, and not just that tree of the knowledge of good and evil. There was that tree of life, representative of Christ and His law of faith— His law that leads to life; whose fruit is life, and not death.

The last few verses of the last book of the Bible forbid us to add or take away words from it. In two places of the old covenant writings, the same prohibition is given regarding God's inspired Word, the Scriptures. One can make the Bible appear to teach anything by adding or taking away words to Scripture. We only know of one command God gave to Adam and Eve at Creation. They were forbidden to eat the fruit of the Tree of the Knowledge of Good and Evil. Since there was no sin and no tendency toward evil, it is not productive to read back into the Garden of Eden the same set of rules and regulations that God needed to keep the stubborn and degenerate Hebrews under control. Take the command, “Thou shalt not commit adultery.” Adam and Eve had only themselves, so there was no one else to tempt them. Also, think of the absurdity of trying to apply the command, “Thou shalt not covet” in relation to the property of others. What about the commandment to honor your father

and mother? God was the Father of Adam and Eve. Did God have a wife, like the Mormons teach?

WYNNE: The Ten Commandments, with the exception of the Sabbath commandment, are explanations of natural cause and effect. It would be absurd to say that Adam and Eve were not subject to natural law. If you steal something that belongs to someone else, that person may fight you to get the item back, and one or both of you might die. St. John says that everyone who is born into this world is enlightened by the Holy Spirit. A Heathen born in the middle of the jungles of Africa has an innate sense that killing, stealing are wrong, and may even have a dim sense that sex outside of a committed relationship is wrong. However that same person will never conclude on his own that he or she must rest one day out of seven, much less figure out which one of those seven days is the “right one.”

Recall that about a month prior to reaching that camp, the Hebrews had left Egypt on a Thursday night around 5 pm. They traveled on Friday night and Saturday, and then for the next month, marching across the wilderness, camping along the way with no thought of Sabbath observance. About a month into their journey, they marched from a camp at the Red Sea until they arrived, about 5 pm, at the edge of the Wilderness of Sin, on a Saturday evening. They had marched on Friday, Friday night, and most of the daylight hours of Saturday at God’s express command. That Saturday evening, God gave the Israelites the rules and regulations governing the collection of the Manna, but there was no mention of the Sabbath at that time. The manna fell the next morning and every morning. What we would think of as Friday night of the week that followed their arrival at the Wilderness of Sin, God introduced the Sabbath to them. Now the reason for gathering a double portion the day before became apparent. They were to gather an extra supply for the Sabbath, as there would be none found on that day. Unlike the other days of the week, where any that was left overnight rotted and bred worms, this would not happen overnight when the Sabbath was the next day.

Among other things that indicate that the Hebrews knew nothing about the Sabbath until that Friday night, if they had been familiar with the Sabbath, they would not need to be told not to gather Manna on the Sabbath day.

As we have pointed out several times before, Genesis 2 tells us what God did in regard to resting on the 7th day of Creation, and the telling of what God did says nothing about what Adam and Eve were to do. Just because God did something doesn’t mean He was setting an example for Adam and Eve. For example, we are not instructed to follow the example of Jesus by refraining from marriage. None of us would be here if we did!

The people before the flood were guided in their morals by the laws that were a matter of conscience. God told Noah His Spirit would not always strive with man:

Genesis 6:3 (NIV) - 3 Then the Lord said, “My Spirit will not contend with humans forever, for they are mortal; their days will be a hundred and twenty years.” (Bible Gateway)

God never sent a prophet to threaten the pouring out of God’s wrath on a Heathen nation or city for Sabbath breaking. And also as we mentioned earlier, the **Book of Enoch**, which purports to have been written before the Flood, makes no mention of the Sabbath or the Decalogue, and whether it was written before the Flood or just a few hundred years before the birth of Christ, this fact still provides evidence that the Jews understood that there was no Sabbath prior to Exodus 16.

The Jews thought about Natural Law versus Torah Law before you can grasp what they meant when they mentioned The Law in their writings. **If you want to understand the Bible properly, it is a good idea to understand how the Bible writers thought about things, as well as the culture in which they wrote.**

The Jews taught that the LAW consisted of 613 equally important commandments, which included the 10 Commandments. It was the book of the law that was ratified as the old covenant, which book contained the Ten Commandments. If the 10 Commandments had been a morally complete set of laws, God would not have given Israel 603 additional laws which included moralistic laws that are not found in the 10 Commandments. If the 10 Commandments had been complete, St. Paul would not have given us several extensive lists of sins that will keep a person out of Heaven without ever mentioning Sabbath-breaking. As we have noted before, in Jewish culture the term “adultery” is very specific and cannot be generalized to be equated with other sexual sins such as fornication and homosexual activity. Evidence that this is true is that God chose to add prohibitions and additional sexual sins in the Law of Moses.

Cotto is attempting to apply a meaningful principle to the wrong situation. He demonstrates that Adam and Eve broke law, but he misses the mark in that there was no Sabbath law at the time to break.

COTTO: Jesus' statement in Mark 2:27-28 that the Sabbath was made for man and not man for the Sabbath proves that the Sabbath was given to everyone.

So far, we have witnessed Cotto make a number of claims of "proof" for Sabbath keeping that relied on dubious rationalizations and logical fallacies. Here, Cotto avails himself of a classic case of eisegesis [an improper textual study method] and then insists it represents proof. Let us examine his claim critically.

We have already discussed the historical and cultural aspects of this passage, that Gentiles were considered to be "dogs" and as such, subhuman as compared to the Jews. If Jesus were indeed claiming the Sabbath was made for all mankind, such a declaration would have elicited an angry response from those present. Along with this, we have the understanding of how "man" is used in regards to the Greek word man translated from: *Anthropos*. Cotto attempts to assign "all mankind" as the interpretation of the word in that context, when in fact the word *anthropos*, even elsewhere in the same narrative of Mark, shows how this word can mean anything from one man, as with the man with a withered hand whom Jesus healed, to any subset of men, to all mankind. Sabbatarians opt for all mankind, but they do not base this on any proper examination of the text, the text's context, or the culture that determined the connotative meanings connected with the term's use in the Israel of Jesus' day. They assign it this meaning simply because it dovetails into their theology model. This is a good example of how anyone can treat a passage of Scripture eisegetically instead of using proper methods of textual exegesis.

COTTO: The word "made" takes us back to Creation Week. In Exodus 16 the Sabbath was not "made." It was revealed and given as a commandment:

This ploy is just playing with semantics. We find some logical problems with this concept:

1. If Cotto concedes that God waited till Exodus 16 to "reveal" the Sabbath to the Hebrews, he also concedes that under God's direction His people broke the Sabbath for the first 38 days of their journey. Why didn't God reveal it to them before they left Egypt and promise to help them keep it faithfully during their travels? If He is right, we have some serious questions about God's character and the importance of the Sabbath commandment. It appears we don't have to keep the Sabbath unless it is convenient to do so.
2. If the Hebrews didn't know about the Sabbath until Exodus 16, it is unlikely that they ever knew about it. It is unlikely that they would forget completely about the Sabbath evening during 400 years of slavery in Egypt. Moses told the story of the Exodus with the Jewish calendar, and his dates for different events of the Exodus that prove that the Hebrews didn't keep the Sabbath until several weeks after their journey out of Egypt. This possibility by itself creates doubt about a Creation origin for the Sabbath.
3. If the Hebrews didn't know about the Sabbath till Exodus 16, and God gave Adam and Eve the Sabbath, at what point did mankind forget completely about it? Had it been forgotten about by the time of Abraham? Moses makes no mention of Sabbath-keeping by any party from Genesis 1 to Exodus 16.
4. Pioneer SDA Sabbath scholar, J.N. Andrews, explained what he thought the evidence was that the Hebrew people were familiar with the Sabbath when it was "reinforced" to them in Exodus 16. If Andrews is wrong, questions 1-3 continue to nag at us. (We evaluated his arguments elsewhere)
5. If something has to be REVEALED, by the very way the word is used in the English language, those to whom it is revealed must know nothing about it. If it was revealed to Israel at the time of the Exodus, they could not have known about it before. In the particular case of the Sabbath, even if by some incomprehensible provision the Sabbath had existed previously, and God hadn't yet told anyone about it, it would be meaningless for the sake of this argument. If they didn't know about it, regardless of why they didn't know about it, they couldn't be expected to keep it and they couldn't be held responsible for not keeping it.

Only important things are generally spoken of in terms of revelation, and the expectation is that when something is revealed to someone, that person will respond with a certain amount of awe and reaction. For example, if I reveal to a friend that his wife has been cheating on him, I would expect him to act with surprise, wonder, and anger— something that would not be genuinely possible if he already knew about her affair.

THE DEFINITE-INDEFINITE ARTICLE PROBLEM

We discussed this problem earlier. It is when one gets into the original Hebrew that Cotto runs into a formidable barrier when he tries to make the Sabbath exist prior to Exodus 16. When the Old Testament is read in Hebrew, every time God reveals a new festival or ordinance to Israel, it is introduced with an indefinite article, but each subsequent mention is introduced with a definite article. English translations are not always consistent in maintaining this usage designation, but the original Hebrew is virtually always consistent. I say virtually always because I have not found any report of exceptions in the original Hebrew. Notice that Moses introduces the first mention ever of the Sabbath in the Bible with the indefinite article, "a" Sabbath. The following is from the King James Version:

(25) And Moses said, Eat that today; for today is a Sabbath unto the LORD: to day ye shall not find it in the field.

(26) Six days ye shall gather it; but on the seventh day, which is the Sabbath, in it there shall be none.

(27) And it came to pass, that there went out some of the people on the seventh day for to gather, and they found none.

(28) And the LORD said unto Moses, How long refuse ye to keep my commandments and my laws?

(29) See, for that the LORD hath given you the Sabbath, therefore he giveth you on the sixth day the bread of two days; abide ye every man in his place, let no man go out of his place on the seventh day. (King James Version)

Notice that in Exodus 20:8-10 in the NIV version, the definite article is used, signaling the reader that the Sabbath has existed previously. There is no textual license in the Pentateuch to take this pre-existence any further back than Exodus 16. The passage is quoted in the NIV:

Exodus 20:8-10 (NIV) - Remember THE Sabbath day by keeping it holy. Six days you shall labor and do all your work, but the seventh day is A Sabbath to the Lord your God.

Notice also that the indefinite article before the second reference to "a Sabbath" is not in the indefinite form to signal the reader that it is a subsequent mention of the Sabbath. Instead, the second word, Sabbath, in this passage is equivalent to the generic word for rest. It means something that could be compared to saying, "The Sabbath is a rest to the Lord your God."

COTTO: In Exodus 20 it [the Sabbath] was not "made" either. There it was also "given," but this time as part of the Ten Commandments. The only place we are left with is Genesis 2:1-3.

AUTHORS: Cotto's logic, or lack of it, seems to go like this. *The Sabbaths mentioned in Exodus 20 and Exodus 16 were "given."—not MADE. The Sabbath had to have been MADE somewhere, and the only place left for it to have been MADE is Genesis 2.* This assumption represents a concession that it is not easy to find a Sabbath in Genesis 2, so the only way you can get one into it is to declare that it is the only place left for it to have originated. The Sabbath is not something that one would talk about in terms of coming into existence through being made. I can see God in the process of sculpturing Eve. However, in thinking of the words to describe how the Sabbath ordinance came into existence, one would tend to think of it in terms that it was "initiated" by Him or "implemented" by Him. It is unreasonable to think that you can get a Sabbath into Genesis 2 by the process of elimination. Regardless, the theological sleight of hand here does not eliminate the fact that the Sabbath indeed was "given", and it was given to the children of Israel, via a covenant no others being a legal party among men.

HOHMANN: In taking this line of logic out a bit further, we wonder about the commands that revolved around sacrifices. Were they "given" and "made" also? Unlike the Sabbath commandment, we find evidence from the beginnings of Genesis up to Exodus 16 of people practicing and partaking of sacrifices, before they were incorporated into the law. God sacrificed animals to provide Adam and Eve with coverings after they sinned, and sacrifices continued as a representation of Christ and His sacrifice for all mankind. Cotto would no doubt insist Christ's sacrifice signaled an end to animal sacrifices, seeing as they pointed to Christ's sacrifice. But, when confronted with the concept of the Sabbath as a shadow of Christ and the rest found in Him, there is a logical disconnect.

COTTO: [In regards to Mark 2:27] Since I have just proved that the Sabbath was made in the garden of Eden, Jesus linked the making of the Sabbath in Genesis two to the present weekly Sabbath of His day by saying that the Sabbath was made for man and not man for the Sabbath. The word Jesus used, man, to the great disappointment of our opponents, does not mean "Jew." Thayer's Greek New Testament definition tells us what this word means: *anthropos* (man): a human being, whether male or female, generically, to include all human individuals, in the plural, people. The word "Jews" or "Israel," are not included in the definition of the word, "man," translated from the Greek word, *anthropos*. The word simply means "mankind." This provides more evidence that the Sabbath existed in Genesis. Not only does Jesus direct our minds towards Creation Week, but He tells us that it was made for "man."

Then Cotto waxes eloquently, and we quote:

Who was the "man" back then, in Creation Week? You guessed it, Adam and Eve! Jesus was clear enough on this issue. Want to find the Sabbath in the book of Genesis? See what Jesus says! I'm sure our critics won't disagree with Him. Or would they?

AUTHORS: A study of Jewish culture and thought, gathered from the Four Gospels, rabbinical writings, and Jewish historical sources makes it clear that Jesus went out of His way to clarify to his Jewish audience that the Sabbath was only for Jews by excluding the Gentile "dogs", at the same time he said that the Sabbath was made for the Jewish humans. To the Jew, the Heathen were dogs, and not "men". The Heathen who lived among the Jews were painfully aware of this attitude. The Jews thought about them as dogs, spoke about them as dogs, and wrote about them as dogs. They never referred to them as "man" or "men", reflected in the Greek word *anthropos*.

Since Jesus did not wish to start a riot when he sought to explain the true nature of their Sabbath to them, He excluded the Heathen "dogs" from the Sabbath requirement. If Jesus had not excluded the Heathen "dogs" from the Sabbath ordinance, the Jews would have attempted to stone Him for blasphemy. Whether Jew or Gentile proselyte, neither could keep the Sabbath without first being circumcised, joining themselves to Israel. This fact clearly illustrates the subservience of the Sabbath ordinance to the Ordinance of Circumcision. The heathen "dogs" were referred to as the "uncircumcised" by the Jews, which was another way of saying that they were excluded from Sabbath-keeping and other aspects of Torah Law.

Please study Matthew's account of the healing of the Canaanite woman's daughter in the NIV translation, Chapter 15:

21 Leaving that place, Jesus withdrew to the region of Tyre and Sidon.

22 A Canaanite woman from that vicinity came to him, crying out, "Lord, Son of David, have mercy on me! My daughter is demon-possessed and suffering terribly."

23 Jesus did not answer a word. So his disciples came to him and urged him, "Send her away, for she keeps crying out after us."

24 He answered, "I was sent only to the lost sheep of Israel."

25 The woman came and knelt before him. "Lord, help me!" she said.

26 He replied, "It is not right to take the children's bread and toss it to the dogs."

27 "Yes it is, Lord," she said. "Even the dogs eat the crumbs that fall from their master's table."

28 Then Jesus said to her, "Woman, you have great faith! Your request is granted." And her daughter was healed at that moment.

Note that Jesus Himself tested her faith by referring to her as a "dog." Her reply indicates that she understood that the Jews thought of non-Jews as dogs.

Further, Cotto claims *anthropos* means "mankind". If this were true, then Scripture should reflect it as such, however:

Mark 3:1-3 (KJV) - And he entered again into the synagogue; and there was a man there which had a withered hand. 2And they watched him, whether he would heal him on the Sabbath day; that they might accuse him. 3And he saith unto the man which had the withered hand, Stand forth.

The Greek word here translated “man” is *anthropos*. Was all mankind standing there before Christ with withered hands? No? How can this be, when Cotto just claimed above that anthropos means all mankind?

COTTO: Abraham also kept the Sabbath. Genesis 26:5: Because that Abraham obeyed my voice, and kept my charge, my commandments, my statutes, and my laws.

Let us examine Cotto’s claims to support this notion.

COTTO: The covenant God made with Abraham is the same covenant that God made with Israel.

He quotes 1 Chronicles 16: 15-17:

1 Chronicles 16:15-17(15) - Be ye mindful always of his covenant; the word which he commanded to a thousand generations; (16) Even of the covenant which he made with Abraham, and of his oath unto Isaac; (17) And hath confirmed the same to Jacob for a law, and to Israel for an everlasting covenant. (King James Version)

First we must ask ourselves the question, is the reference to “Israel” in this passage a reference to the nation of Israel during and after the Exodus, or is it Hebrew parallelism that refers to Jacob’s alternate name of Israel:

Genesis 35:10 (NIV) - God said to him, "Your name is Jacob, but you will no longer be called Jacob; your name will be Israel." So he named him Israel. Genesis 35:10 (NIV)

Moses does not need much of an excuse to throw in a poetic parallelism in the passage that Cotto quotes. There are two possible excuses for doing so— (1) general parallelism for the covenant and oath similarity, and (2) God’s blessings to Jacob in the life he had before his name change and God’s blessings to him after his name change. All appearances suggest the author of Chronicles is talking about various laws and covenants God has given to the Children of Abraham over thousands of years. The parallelism between the LAW for Jacob and the COVENANT for Israel is unmistakable; even a covenant with Isaac gets honorable mention. Again, we have the parallelism of the COVENANT with Abraham and the OATH with Isaac. What a hodgepodge of information here! But let us say for both the sake of argument that the reference is, indeed, to the Nation of Israel which came out of Egypt. We concede that such is a likely reading. However, the Abrahamic Covenant and the Mosaic Covenant SHARED only two components— (1) the promise that if His people were faithful to Him, He would give them and their descendants the Land of Canaan to dwell in forever, and (2) the Ordinance of Circumcision.

Cotto quotes Genesis 17:7-11, but the simple meaning of the passage seems to have evaded him:

And I will establish my covenant between me and thee and thy seed after thee in their generations for an everlasting covenant, to be a God unto thee, and to thy seed after thee. ⁸And I will give unto thee, and to thy seed after thee, the land wherein thou art a stranger, all the land of Canaan, for an everlasting possession; and I will be their God. ⁹And God said unto Abraham, Thou shalt keep my covenant therefore, thou, and thy seed after thee in their generations. ¹⁰This is my covenant, which ye shall keep, between me and you and thy seed after thee; Every man child among you shall be circumcised. ¹¹And ye shall circumcise the flesh of your foreskin; and it shall be a token of the covenant betwixt me and you.

There is no license within this text or its context to see the Sabbath as a component of the Abrahamic Covenant. The Abrahamic and Mosaic covenants share the promise that their faithfulness will give them the land of Canaan forever, but not the Sabbath ordinance. **Abraham had natural law. He had the Law of the Spirit, but he did not have the 10 Commandments. Nor did he have the sign of the Mosaic Covenant—the Sabbath.**

There is one other item that Cotto's declaration forces as a conclusion if he were correct, and that is we would also, as a result of them having the same covenant sharing the Sabbath, be required to share in circumcision.

The witness of the Islamic Faith is another huge blockade to Cotto’s claim that the Abrahamic Covenant included the Sabbath commandment on the basis of the assumption that Abraham kept all of God’s “laws. Islamic scholars point out that the Sabbath was not part of the Abrahamic Covenant. Islam traces its origin back to Abraham and asserts, correctly so, that the descendants of Ismael shared the Abrahamic Covenant with the descendants of Abraham’s son, Isaac—that is the line that became the Jews. In addition to the Abrahamic Covenant, God made a covenant with Ismael, through

his mother, Hagar, to provide additional blessings and protection to her son's descendants. This information is widely available. Abraham is a prominent figure in the Islamic holy book, the *Quran*, and his excellent character forms the basis for Muslim moral values. This is what *Wikipedia* has to say about the relationship of Islam to Abraham:

Muslims believe that the prophet Abraham became the leader of the righteous in his time and it was through him that the people of both Arabia and Israel came. Abraham, in the belief of Islam, was instrumental in cleansing the world of idolatry at the time. Paganism was cleared out by Abraham in both Arabia and Canaan. He spiritually purified both places as well as physically sanctifying the houses of worship. Abraham and Ismail (Ishmael) further established the rites of pilgrimage,[7] or Hajj, which are still followed by Muslims today. Muslims maintain that Abraham further asked God to bless both the lines of his progeny, of Ismail (Ishmael) and Ishaq (Isaac), and to keep all of his descendants in the protection of God. They also believe that Muhammad is a descendant of Abraham through Ishmael. (Article, "Abraham in Islam")

Islamic clerics point out that the claim that God "rested" on the 7th day of Creation is absurd because the Scriptures teach that God, being Divine, needs no rest. At the same time, recall that the Hebrew word translated "rest" in Genesis 2 means "ceased" or "stopped," indicating that the 7th day was a dividing line between God's creative activity and, in reference to the creation of Planet Earth, His non-creative activity. They point out that there was no Sabbath until the Exodus and that the Sabbath was given to Israel as a special sign that applied only to them. For an interesting discussion of the Islamic view of the Jewish Sabbath, view the following blog, and if the link has gone cold by the time you read this, do an on-line search for the Islamic view of the Jewish Sabbath:

<http://www.shiachat.com/forum/topic/234926530-why-dont-muslims-observe-the-Sabbath/>

Once again we must conclude the Cotto's claim that Abraham kept the Sabbath is the result of wishful thinking and assumptions. Widely available sources indicate the contrary.

COTTO: The fact that Moses used the term, "declared," in Deuteronomy 4:13 to describe the covenant as being the 10 commandments is evidence that it was not given for the first time, but rather had been in existence prior to the giving of the 10 commandments on Sinai. The Hebrew word, "nagad," translated "declared" in this passage, is used throughout the old covenant in most cases in the context of declaring or making something known that has already existed.

Deuteronomy 4:13 (KJV) - And he declared unto you his covenant, which he commanded you to perform, even Ten Commandments; and he wrote them upon two tables of stone.

Quoting Cotto:

"Take note, dear reader, that Moses said God "declared" His covenant. The word "declared" implies it was not given "for the first time," but rather, as it has already existed, it was "declared" to them for their benefit. This is made more evident by the Hebrew word "nagad," which in the majority of times throughout the Old Testament is used in the context of declaring or making known something that already existed.

This claim would be labeled a "whopper" in common circles. A careful study of the linguistics of this word tells a very different story.

Here is the definition of the Hebrew word, "nagad:"

Brown-Driver-Briggs' Hebrew Definitions

נָגַד

1. to be conspicuous, tell, make known
 - a. (Hiphil) to tell, declare
1. to tell, announce, report
2. to declare, make known, expound

- 3. to inform of
 - 4. to publish, declare, proclaim
 - 5. to avow, acknowledge, confess 1a
 - b. messenger (participle)
 - c. (Hophal) to be told, be announced, be reported
- Origin: a primitive root
TWOT: 1289
Parts of Speech: Verb

Our research indicates that Cotto is not correct in stating that the Hebrew word, “nagad,” is frequently used to refer to something that previously existed. In fact, Moses used a FORM of this word that never seems to be used in connection with the revealing of mysterious things not known.

We studied an exhaustive listing of the use of this word with the help of *The Englishman’s Concordance* at **Bible Suite.Com**—via its Hebrew-English translation. It suggests that a better rendering of it would be that “nagad” is used when someone is telling someone about an interesting **event** that happened in the past. The idea of that thing being mysterious, concealed, or not understood is foreign to the use of this word. Since the past begins the very instant the present is over, this word is used when things happened all the way from moments ago to many years ago. The use of this word in this passage is not significant and is of no use to Cotto’s argument.

The form of this verb, “nagad,” that is often used to make known something from the past that is not understood, has been concealed, or is mysterious, is the Hiph`il [328] form.

Please note that even if the Hebrew word in Deuteronomy 4:13 had been Hiph`il [328], it is only its **second** meaning that is often used to make known something mysterious that existed in the past. Here is a complete listing of all the places in the Old Testament where **Hiph`il**₃₂₈ is used, and note that Deuteronomy 4:13 is **not** included in either list. It would have to appear in the second list to be of any help to Cotto’s argument.

1. tell, announce, report, usually human subject: Genesis 9:22; Genesis 24:23; Genesis 32:6; Leviticus 14:35; Judges 13:6; 1 Samuel 3:18; 1 Kings 1:23; Nehemiah 2:12; Esther 2:10 (twice in verse); Job 12:7; Psalm 142:3; Isaiah 19:12; Jeremiah 5:20; Ezekiel 24:19 +.

2. declare, make known, expound, especially of something before not understood, concealed or mysterious: Genesis 3:11; Genesis 12:18, etc.; 1 Kings 10:3 2Chronicles 9:2; a riddle Judges 14:12,15,16 (3 t. in verse); Judges 14:19; dream Daniel 2:2; secret Job 11:6, etc.; of ״ as revealing, Genesis 41:25; 2 Samuel 7:11; 2 Kings 4:27; Micah 6:8; Jeremiah 42:3; Psalm 147:19; of declaring by ״s agents Deuteronomy 5:5; Micah 3:8; 1 Samuel 15:16; 2 Samuel 24:13; Jeremiah 50:28; Isaiah 58:1; by divine. Hosea 4:12.

<http://biblesuite.com/hebrew/5046.htm>
<http://biblesuite.com/hebrew/5046.htm>

At the above source you can find a list of over 300 references to the word, “nagad,” and its meaning always seems to be that someone is telling someone else about an interesting but non mysterious event that happened in the past— even minutes ago, hours ago, or days ago. It appears that there are serious problems with Cotto’s effort to extract a Sabbatarian-friendly interpretation of Deuteronomy 4:13.

COTTO: In this text God refers to the covenant that Moses identifies as the ten commandments as “His covenant” rather than “their covenant.” This distinction is evidence that this reference was the covenant God made with Abraham.

Quoting Cotto:

Then notice that it reads, "His covenant." God made known "His" covenant to them. It is not "their" covenant, as our opponents would have us believe. No, it was "His" covenant, because this covenant of His was His before he declared it to the children of Israel, it was first a covenant between Him and Abraham!

HOHMANN: What of Deuteronomy 5:1-3? This covenant with the Sabbath requirement was not made with the fathers; the patriarchs, of which Abraham was one. How can Cotto conclude otherwise? And of course it was “His” covenant. He was the party of the first part, who would provide that which was the “consideration” upon completion of the covenant or compliance over time. They were required to meet certain conditions; perform certain tasks in return for the consideration; national blessings and God's favor. The contract had penalty clauses also, should they fail to perform that which was required of them that they agreed to, including being “consumed”.

WYNNE: This type of covenant is a formal agreement between two parties. Here is an example. Bill Gates and Steve Jobs had an agreement a couple of decades ago that Bill would loan Apple Computer millions of dollars and allow Apple to have a Mac version of Microsoft Office. Their agreement way back then set the stage for something no one would have predicted at the time. Who could have ever guessed that Apple Computer, which was nearly bankrupt when Bill lent Steve a hand, would eventually pass up Microsoft and become many times larger? His agreement would cost Bill more than he ever could have guessed at the time.

Cotto's manipulation of Scripture is highly imaginative, but there is no way he can make this argument credible. All the covenants were God's. He tailor-made them for each party He offered them to at various times. There is no basis in logic to make this leap of application other than Cotto's need to make it happen—that is, to somehow get a Sabbath to appear before the Exodus. “His” and “Theirs” are not terms that are designed, either in Hebrew or English, to establish a time relationship between events.

Furthermore, Deuteronomy 4:13 is not a good text for Sabbatarians to mention under any circumstance. It is the Achilles Heel of the pro-Sabbatarian teaching that the Old and New Covenants are essentially the same. This text equates the 10 Commandments with the Old Covenant. Scripture says that the Old Covenant was to be done away with, that it was faulty, and that it would be replaced with a new covenant that would not be like the old one. The Old Covenant did get replaced with the New Covenant, and the Sabbath is conspicuously missing from the new contract between God and His Christian believers. Even St. Paul's list of 23 sins that he said would be certain to keep someone out of Heaven does not include Sabbath breaking. Sanders observes that it was the same God (Jesus) who gave His people, in one dispensation, the Old Covenant, which included the Sabbath, and the New Covenant, which did not. He reasons that Jesus was not exhibiting forgetfulness when He failed to place the Sabbath commandment in the New Covenant. If Jesus had wanted His followers in the New Covenant dispensation to keep the Sabbath, He would have given them a clear command to do so, just like He did to Israel. In that case, the apostles would have expounded on it and preached its importance. Instead, we find, in the New Covenant dispensation the apostles telling the Gentiles that they did not have to keep the Law of Moses and St. Paul commanding the church not to require the Gentiles to keep the Sabbath.

Where there is no law there is no sin. The fact is obvious that there is no Sabbath keeping command in the New Covenant. Sabbatarians by preaching a dead law are preaching a false gospel—a “gospel” that is not taught by the Apostles. We challenge any student of the Bible to provide a “thus saith the Lord” text to support a New Covenant Sabbath Commandment! It isn't there. You have to resort to deceptive reasoning to make the case.

COTTO: When God said that the Mosaic covenant was not made with the fathers of the Hebrews, He only meant that it was not made with their ancestors who lived during the 400 years of slavery in Egypt. This would contradict I Chronicles 16:15-17, which says that the same covenant that was made with Abraham was made with Israel on Mt. Sinai. – In other words, the 10 commandments.

He quotes Deuteronomy 5:3 (KJV):

The LORD made not this covenant with our fathers, but with us, even us, who are all of us here alive this day.

Common sense tells us that Moses knew that God had made various covenants with his people previous to the one He made with Israel at Mt. Sinai. If it was the same covenant that God had made with Abraham, by the process of elimination, there is no other reason to explain why Moses would explain to the people that the covenant they had with God was not the same covenant that was made with their ancestors. One only need read the context of I Chronicles 16 to see what covenant is being referenced— the one that related to the promises revolving around the land Israel would eventually inhabit. See especially verses 18 and 19.

Again, the covenant made with Abraham and the covenant made with Israel at Sinai shared two components, but neither one was the Sabbath. What license does Cotto have to limit the “fathers” back only as far as 400 years? There is nothing in the text itself and nothing in its context to suggest that any provision of the Hebrew or the English translations of this passage would permit such a thing. You might as well invoke magic to intervene wherever you need it to bring about your desired result. Nothing is said about limiting it to a certain number of generations,” much less to the generations of four hundred years. This mistake is the result of his assumption that there was a Sabbath prior to their enslavement by the Egyptians. It is an error of logic created by circular reasoning. It is adding words to Scripture that are not there. Robert Sanders observes that Moses knew good and well who the Fathers of the Israelites were and these “fathers” started with Adam. If Moses intended to refer only to the Fathers starting with those who entered into Egypt, he would have said so and identified them as such. Furthermore, Moses knew The Law started with the Israelites.

We have seen that 1 Chronicles 16:15-17 talks about the fundamental covenant God made with both Abraham and Israel. If they were faithful to Him, He would give them the land of Canaan for a possession forever. Cotto’s limitation to 400 years is unacceptable because it demands a high degree of interpretive imagination. If Anti-Sabbatarians used similar license in interpreting a far-fetched idea like this to their advantage, the Sabbatarians would be howling. Unfortunately, Cotto is adding words to Scripture that are just not there. “Not with our Fathers” means exactly that. There is no biblical record of any person or nation having the Ten Commandment covenant before they were given through Moses to the Israelites.

However, Sabbatarianism might possibly not be dependent on a Sabbath in Genesis. If the Ten Commandments are actually one and the same thing as “God’s Law,” then everyone on Earth must still keep the Jewish Sabbath. No texts or additional concepts from the Bible would hold any water against the idea that Christians must keep the Jewish Sabbath. Hopefully, we have clobbered this heresy to its well-deserved ignominious death. The Gospel writers clearly stated that Jesus broke the Sabbath. Since Jesus did actually break the Sabbath, the heresy that the Ten Commandments equal God’s Law would make Him a sinner, which is an impossibility because Jesus was 100% God when He appeared to human beings in human form. In the next part of *VERDICT*, we will consider just about every biblical and historical barrier to Sabbatarianism that comes up in the Sabbath-Sunday debate.

Final thoughts on Cotto and Knudson:

Is the seventh day of Creation Week set up as a memorial throughout time, or not? If it is in fact the first weekly Sabbath in the time frame of these heavens and earth, then wouldn’t the memorial of it as the day wherein God ceased His work of Creation be trivialized? Are we to assume God ceased work then every seventh day as a result? This, of course, contradicts the Words of Jesus who informs us through John that God works on the weekly Sabbath, ergo how can that day of rest of God’s be equated as such?

Why do Cotto and Knudson work from the assumption that all mankind are to keep the Sabbath in the manner prescribed by Moses, if the Sabbath was extant from Creation, where we find no instructions as to its observance besides the implied “cease from work” on that day? Is/was preparing a meal “work” between Genesis 2 and Exodus 16? Did people, keeping the Sabbath from the beginning until Exodus 16 refrain from eating on the Sabbath? There are way too many gaping holes in this belief the weekly Sabbath has been extant and in force from the beginning as a Creation ordinance. There are no instructions regarding its observance. There are no examples of anyone actually keeping the Sabbath, and no specific statement to even keep it as a day of rest. Everything is dependent upon assumptions. And, as I have pointed out so many times before; assumptions lead to deceptions.

Why are Jesus’ instructions regarding the Sabbath not even mentioned? SDA routinely claim Jesus kept the Sabbath, yet Scripture reveals something else entirely. Jesus “worked” on the Sabbath, healing people. Jesus called this “work”. The laws revolving around the Sabbath in the Law state emphatically no one was to do “any” work. Jesus and the Jews of the time agreed that works based in mercy and compassion, such as rescuing an animal out of a ditch, did not violate the prohibition against work. Yet such actions constituted work. Jesus even pointed out that the Priests “profaned” the Sabbath and were themselves blameless in relation to sin. Yet their work was extremely physical and tiring; all done on the Sabbath! Jesus was pointing out something that both the Jews of His time, and Sabbatarians today are blind to.

One of the claims of the SDA is that the “Law of Moses” (sans the Ten Commandments, they being a separate covenant law binding on all mankind) was nailed to the cross, being collectively “ceremonial” law. This effectively does away with the

instructions that address how to keep the Sabbath, leaving it up to interpretation by who? The Sabbatarian groups themselves. Is there a problem with this? What of Jesus' comments to the Jews who made the Law of God "of no effect by their traditions" keeping points of law contrary to the intent of Scripture?

The SDA have developed a list of works one can perform on the Sabbath, as well as works that are prohibited that would make the Pharisees of old proud. And like the Pharisees and religious leaders of the time of Jesus, the focus is all wrong.

Jesus had two things of importance He spoke about in relation to the Sabbath. The first is that people are to no longer judge according to appearance, but rather to judge righteous judgment, understood to mean one is to judge based upon the heart and intent of heart. One who pulled an ox out of a ditch did so out of compassion for the animal in distress. The animal was hardly enjoying the repose the Sabbath day was to offer the animal. The focus of the person in such a situation was not a self-centered occupation.

Did not Moses give you the law, and yet none of you keepeth the law? Why go ye about to kill me? ²⁰ The people answered and said, Thou hast a devil: who goeth about to kill thee? ²¹ Jesus answered and said unto them, I have done one work, and ye all marvel. ²² Moses therefore gave unto you circumcision; (not because it is of Moses, but of the fathers;) and ye on the Sabbath day circumcise a man. ²³ If a man on the Sabbath day receive circumcision, that the law of Moses should not be broken; are ye angry at me, because I have made a man every whit whole on the Sabbath day? ²⁴ Judge not according to the appearance, but judge righteous judgment. – John 7:19-24

They didn't get it. Sabbatarians don't get it.

If righteous judgment is to judge according to the heart and intent of heart, then judging according to appearance is to judge unrighteous judgment. When a Sabbatarian looks upon another who is working at their job on the Sabbath, or out shopping on the Sabbath, the Sabbatarian concludes they are sinning. Why? Because they judge based on their own extra-biblical Pharisaical yardstick. Their own ministers work for pay on the Sabbath. They look to the "why" in order to make their determination between justified works and sin, still based on appearance.

At this point, I need to mention the other statement of Jesus in relation to the Sabbath that Sabbatarians reject in favor of their own contrived rules for observing the Sabbath.

¹⁰ And, behold, there was a man which had his hand withered. And they asked him, saying, Is it lawful to heal on the Sabbath days? that they might accuse him. ¹¹ And he said unto them, What man shall there be among you, that shall have one sheep, and if it fall into a pit on the Sabbath day, will he not lay hold on it, and lift it out? ¹² How much then is a man better than a sheep? Wherefore it is lawful to do well on the Sabbath days. – Matthew 12:10-12

¹ And he entered again into the synagogue; and there was a man there which had a withered hand. ² And they watched him, whether he would heal him on the Sabbath day; that they might accuse him. ³ And he saith unto the man which had the withered hand, Stand forth. ⁴ And he saith unto them, Is it lawful to do good on the Sabbath days, or to do evil? to save life, or to kill? But they held their peace. ⁵ And when he had looked round about on them with anger, being grieved for the hardness of their hearts, he saith unto the man, Stretch forth thine hand. And he stretched it out: and his hand was restored whole as the other. – Mark 3:1-5

Their focus was on the letter of the law; judging according to appearance, and Jesus equated this with hardness of heart. The "enforcers" and advocates of the Sabbath were hard-hearted and judging unrighteous judgment.

Jesus teaches them a concept they just could not wrap their legalistic heads and hearts around. It is lawful to do good or well on the Sabbath, as contrasted to doing evil. How does this relate to how the Hebrews kept the Sabbath? They were to keep the day holy. If doing good or well on a Sabbath is lawful, then it is doing evil on the Sabbath that actually results in profaning the Sabbath and not keeping it holy. Is there evidence to further support this conclusion? Yes.

¹³ If thou turn away thy foot from the Sabbath, from doing thy pleasure on my holy day; and call the Sabbath a delight, the holy of the LORD, honourable; and shalt honour him, not doing thine own ways, nor finding thine own pleasure, nor speaking thine own words: ¹⁴ Then shalt thou delight thyself in the LORD; and I will cause thee to ride upon the high places of the earth, and feed thee

with the heritage of Jacob thy father: for the mouth of the LORD hath spoken it. – Isaiah 58:13-14

Note the contrast of what was to be done in relation to the Sabbath, and not done. One was not to do their own pleasure, not doing their own ways, speaking their own words. They were to focus on making the Sabbath a delight by honoring God. Honoring God results in making that day a delight. Realistically, would not honoring God make every day a delight?

For the children of Israel and the children of Judah have only done evil before me from their youth: for the children of Israel have only provoked me to anger with the work of their hands, saith the LORD. – Jeremiah 32:30

The “works” of the Hebrews were evil “even from their youth”; the works of their hands.

What are the implications then for Christians? What about the works of a Christian? Can they be construed as evil and sin, if done on the Sabbath?

¹⁸ He that believeth on him is not condemned: but he that believeth not is condemned already, because he hath not believed in the name of the only begotten Son of God. ¹⁹ And this is the condemnation, that light is come into the world, and men loved darkness rather than light, because their deeds were evil. ²⁰ For every one that doeth evil hateth the light, neither cometh to the light, lest his deeds should be reproved. ²¹ But he that doeth truth cometh to the light, that his deeds may be made manifest, that they are wrought in God. – John 3:18-21

A believer's works/deeds are wrought in God. Can that which is wrought in God be sin? If we judge righteous judgment, looking to the heart and intent of heart, a Christian meets the requirements of Isaiah 58:13-14 cited above. A Christian seeks to honor God every waking moment. A Christian's life focus is on serving God and dedication to God. A Christian's actions or works are not geared to the self, but done in the furtherance of serving and honoring God. A Christian's life is hidden in Christ. The “old man of sin” has been crucified; that old self that was self-serving and living a life devoid of God in their life. The Sabbath for the believer now transcends any one specific “day” of rest or cessation of labor that was previously in vain, eventually ending in death. This one enters into God's rest He entered into on that seventh day of Creation through faith.

The Sabbatarian judges a work to be good or evil based on whether it is performed on a Sabbath or not. Jesus is stating a good work can be performed on the Sabbath, and an evil work cannot. A work is good or evil based on its own merits, and not according to what day it is performed. One looks to the intent of heart. One does not look to the day it was performed, which again is to judge according to appearance.

But those who insist on boasting in the self and the Law; those who wish to make merchandise of you; want to bring you under bondage... to them, using the weekly Sabbath as a means to that end, teaching you to judge according to appearance, and to ignore and avoid the instructions of Jesus regarding righteous judgment. If you accept their rationalizations regarding their alterations of Scripture that revolve around the Sabbath, you will in turn accept every additional alteration or subversion of Scripture. So who are you going to listen to? Who is your Lord? A Sabbatarian church corporate like the SDA, or Jesus the Christ? We, the “anti-Sabbatarian” writers of this book seek to point you to Christ; bring you to Christ and the rest found in Him. The SDA apologists seek to bring you to their church corporate and the temporary, physical rest found in the *weakly* Sabbath, along with the attendant condemnation you will bring upon yourself as a result. You cannot call good, evil. You cannot call evil, good.

CHAPTER FOUR
BARRIERS TO SABBATARIAN THEOLOGY

BARRIERS TO SABBATARIAN THEOLOGY

And remember that thou wast a servant in the land of Egypt, and that the LORD thy God brought thee out thence through a mighty hand and by a stretched out arm: therefore the LORD thy God commanded thee to keep the sabbath day. — Deuteronomy 5:15

BIBLICAL BARRIER:

THE SABBATH A MEMORIAL TO THE ESCAPE FROM EGYPTIAN SLAVERY

No Christian meets both qualifications for being a Sabbath-keeper. The first requirement, of course, is that a person must be able to remember that God created the world. Everyone can do this, so it might be construed as a possible argument to use in favor of the idea that everyone is supposed to keep the Sabbath.

However, the second thing a person must be able to do is to remember that God rescued him or her of Egyptian slavery. William Hohmann asks if today's Sabbath-keepers break the Sabbath when they fail to think about how God rescued them from Egyptian slavery. No gentile Christian or his ancestors has ever been rescued from slavery in Egypt by the miraculous power of God, so Christians do not meet an important qualification for those who were commanded to keep it— the Hebrews and their progeny. Note this passage from Deuteronomy:

(NIV) - Deuteronomy 5:12-15 - "Observe the Sabbath day by keeping it holy, as the Lord your God has commanded you. ¹³Six days you shall labor and do all your work, ¹⁴but the seventh day is a Sabbath to the Lord your God. On it you shall not do any work, neither you, nor your son or daughter, nor your male or female servant, nor your ox, your donkey or any of your animals, nor any foreigner residing in your towns, so that your male and female servants may rest, as you do. ¹⁵Remember that you were slaves in Egypt and that the Lord your God brought you out of there with a mighty hand and an outstretched arm. Therefore the Lord your God has commanded you to observe the Sabbath day.

Sabbath-keeping for Christians fails the logic test. As believers we are not "allowed" to take only the parts of Scripture that suit our own personal agenda and discard those that teach what we do not like. Israel was commanded to keep it as a memorial; a reminder it was their God who made heaven and earth and who rested on that seventh day, of which the Sabbath was a shadow of where they could rest from their labors and remember also that they and their ancestors who were slaves in Egypt worked without rest. Israel collectively often "forgot" all this— having abandoned God and His commands for them, having turned time and again to idolatry. Christians are not ancient Israelites, devoid of God's Spirit. True Christians, in possession of God's Holy Spirit, are not going to forget who their God is, and as such, do not need the memorial of a Sabbath as a reminder not to forget God. The Christian has entered into God's rest through faith, a rest that is permanent as contrasted to the weekly Sabbath rest which was temporary and merely a shadow of God's rest. (See: Psalms 95; Hebrews 4; Colossians 2:16-17.)

CONCEPTUAL BARRIER: Circumcision

We cover this subject from another perspective elsewhere. Here we will touch on what Adventists knew about the barrier of the Ordinance of Circumcision and when they knew it. We will also cover some Adventist objections, such as the less-than-stellar ones of the late SDA Sabbath scholar, Dr. Samuele Bacchiocchi.

A former Adventist researcher who has chosen to remain anonymous has found proof in the work of Seventh-day Adventist theologians Maxwell and Damsteegt that Seventh-day Adventists have known since no later than 1992 that the Jews have typically understood that observance of the Ordinance of Circumcision was a requirement for keeping the Sabbath. This unnamed former Adventist scholar, whose work we found posted at a website which examines the Sabbatarian views of the now defunct Worldwide Church of God, focuses on the research of these SDA biblical scholars, Mervyn Maxwell, and P. Gerard Damsteegt, eds., *Source Book for the History of Sabbath and Sunday*. Berrien Springs, MI: Seventh-day Adventist Theological Seminary, 1992.

So, if the Christians were worshipping on Sunday, why wasn't there an outcry in the Jewish church in Jerusalem? It was a church that most likely continued to meet on Saturday at the synagogue for several decades to hear the scriptures read. The reason they did not cry out in protest is because Jews believed then, and still believe now, that the Sabbath was given only to Jews. They NEVER expected Gentiles (which made up most of the early church) to keep the Sabbath. Notice the following passages:

“The children of Noah...were given seven Laws only, the observance of the Sabbath not being among them” (Midrash Deuteronomy Rabbah 1:21 [Soncino ed., p. 23], as quoted in C. Mervyn Maxwell and P. Gerard Damsteegt, eds., Source Book for the History of Sabbath and Sunday [Berrien Springs, Mich.: Seventh-day Adventist Theological Seminary, 1992], p. 75).

The Noachian laws are also listed in Midrash Genesis Rabbah 16:6 (Soncino ed., p. 131), Sanhedrin 56 a, b; and Midrash Song of Songs Rabbah 1:2(5) (Soncino ed. pp. 26-7) (ibid., p. 74). Gentiles could be considered righteous if they observed these laws, which did not include the Sabbath. Nor did they include restrictions about pork. Rabbi Judah could say that there was a time for the “sons of Jacob when unclean beasts were still permitted to them” (Hullin 7:6, as quoted in Maxwell and Damsteegt, p.74. The rabbis did not think that the Sabbath had been given to Gentiles: “Why does it say, 'The Lord hath given you' (Ex. 16:29)? To you hath he given it [the Sabbath], but not to the heathen. It is in virtue of this that the Sages stated [Sanh. 56b] that if some of the heathen observed the Sabbath, then not only do they not receive any reward [but they are even considered to be transgressing]” (Midrash Exodus Rabbah 25:11 [Soncino ed., p. 314], as quoted in Maxwell and Damsteegt, p. 74).

A non-Jew who observes the Sabbath whilst he is uncircumcised incurs liability for the punishment of death. Why? Because non-Jews were not commanded concerning it.... The Sabbath is a reunion between Israel and God, as it is said, 'It is a sign between Me and the children of Israel' (Ex. 31:17); therefore any non-Jew who, being uncircumcised, thrusts himself between them incurs the penalty of death.... The Gentiles have not been commanded to observe the Sabbath. (Midrash Deuteronomy Rabbah 1:21 [Soncino ed., pp. 23-4], as quoted in Maxwell and Damsteegt, p. 75).

The Jews understood that the Sabbath commandment was given only to Israel. The Jews traditionally thought in terms of two different sets of laws– the Noachian laws– which they believed were given to everyone, and the *TORAH* laws that they believed were given only to Israel at the time of the Exodus. Circumcision was not part of the Noachian Laws. It was part of Abraham's covenant, which is shared by both Jews and Muslims, both of which regard Abraham as the “father” of their religion. As we have pointed out elsewhere, Islam curiously has never demanded to share in the special sign between Jews and God: The Sabbath.

It is important to keep in mind that the Noachian laws are listed in the Pentateuch and fully explained in the sacred oral traditions that Jesus Himself validated when He instructed His followers to do everything the Pharisees told them to do, as we have documented elsewhere. The Pharisees were the only Jewish sect that considered the sacred oral traditions to be significantly “inspired.” All seven of these laws are found in the *Pentateuch* if you look carefully. Please note that the following quotes from the *Jewish Encyclopedia*, some are from traditional laws published by the Sanhedrin, so they originated later in the history of Jewish sacred traditional law. When Palestine came under Roman control, the dual court system of Israel as described in another chapter evolved into the Sanhedrin. By the time of Jesus, the Sanhedrin enforced Jewish laws within conquered Israel, but its ability to carry out a death penalty was subject to Roman approval.

Adventist apologists may be tempted to suggest that these interpretations were developed by the Jews at some time after the death of Christ after they had new reasons to feel animosity toward Christians. This escape route is blocked by the total history of the development of the Jewish sacred oral traditions. In another chapter, one authored by Larry Dean, examples from the *Mishnah* are presented. Keep in mind that by contrast, the *Mishnah* developed from exacting oral transmission standards over a period of nearly 5,000 years and which dated back to the time of Moses. Dean explains why the sacred oral traditions of the *Mishnah* were not written down until around 200 CE. These very ancient sacred oral laws provide every possible evidence that the Noahide laws ruled everyone in the world prior to the giving of the Torah from Mt. Sinai to the Hebrews and that these laws never included a Sabbath commandment. As Dean demonstrates so well, in the Nation of Israel, which set of laws, Noahide vs. Torah, was applied to individuals within its borders depended on whether that person was circumcised or not:

The Seven Laws

Laws which were supposed by the Rabbis to have been binding upon mankind at large even before the revelation at Sinai, and which are still binding upon non-Jews. The term ‘Noachian’ indicates the universality of these ordinances, since the whole human race was supposed to be descended from the three sons of Noah, who alone survived the Flood. Although only those laws which are found in the earlier chapters of the Pentateuch, before the record of the revelation at Sinai, should, it would seem, be binding upon all mankind, yet the Rabbis discarded some and, by hermeneutic rules or in accordance with some tradition (see Judah ha-Levi, “Cuzari,” iii. 73), introduced others which are not found there. Basing their views on the passage in Gen. II.16, they declared that the following six commandments were enjoined upon Adam: (1) not to worship idols; (2) not to blaspheme the name of God; (3) to establish courts of justice; (4) not to kill; (5) not to commit adultery; and (6) not to rob (Gen. R. xvi. 9, xxiv. 5; Cant. R. i. 16; comp. Seder Olam Rabbah, ed. Ratner, ch. v. and notes, Wilna, 1897; Maimonides, “Yad,” Melakim, ix. 1). A seventh commandment was added after the Flood—not to eat flesh that had been cut from a living animal (Gen. ix. 4). Thus, the Talmud frequently speaks of “the seven laws of the sons of Noah,” which were regarded as obligatory upon all mankind, in contradistinction to those that were binding upon Israelites only (Tosef., Ab. Zarah, ix. 4; Sanh. 56a et seq.).

He who observed the seven Noachian laws was regarded as a domiciled alien (Ab. Zarah 64b; see Proselyte), as one of the pious of the Gentiles, and was assured of a portion in the world to come (Tosef., Sanh. xiii. 1; Sanh. 105a; comp. ib. 91b; “Yad,” l.c. viii. 11).

Here is a more extensive quote from the *Jewish Encyclopedia* which supports the concept that the Jews are very serious about their belief that the Sabbath was given to Israel alone. This passage is particularly interesting because it has a direct bearing on the Sabbath question for Christians as viewed by the Jews (*Jewish Encyclopedia*, article, “Gentile,” section “Gentiles May Not Be Taught the Torah”):

Resh Laish (d. 278) said, “A Gentile observing the Sabbath deserves death” (Sanh. 58b). This refers to a Gentile who accepted the seven laws of the Noachidæ, inasmuch as “the Sabbath is a sign between God and Israel alone,” and it was probably directed against the Christian Jews, who disregarded the Mosaic laws and yet at that time kept up the observance of the Jewish Sabbath. Rabbina, who lived about 150 years after the Christians had changed the day of rest to Sunday, could not quite understand the principle underlying Resh Laish's law, and, commenting upon it, added: “not even on Mondays [is the Gentile allowed to rest]”; intimating that the mandate given to the Noachidæ that “day and night shall not cease” (=“have no rest”) should be taken in a literal sense (Gen. viii. 22)— probably to discourage general idleness (ib. Rashi), or for the more plausible reason advanced by Maimonides, who says: “The principle is, one is not permitted to make innovations in religion or to create new commandments. He has the privilege to become a true proselyte by accepting the whole Law” (“Yad,” Melakim, x. 9). R. Emden [An unrenderable Hebrew symbol follows the word “Emden,” ed. note] In a remarkable apology for Christianity contained in his appendix to Seder Olam (pp. 32b-34b, Hamburg, 1752), gives it as his opinion that the original intention of Jesus, and especially of Paul, was to convert only the Gentiles to the seven moral laws of Noah and to let the Jews follow the Mosaic law— which explains the apparent contradictions in the New Testament regarding the laws of Moses and the Sabbath.

In his classic “A Digest of the Sabbath Question,” former SDA theologian, Robert D. Brinsmead observed:

The Book of Jubilees (a Jewish pseudepigraphal work of the second century BC) says that “the Creator of all things.., did not sanctify all peoples and nations to keep Sabbath thereon, but Israel alone” (“The Book of Jubilees,” in *The Apocrypha and Pseudepigrapha of the Old Testament*, ed. R.H. Charles, vol. 2, Pseudepigrapha [Oxford: Clarendon Press, 1913], p. 15).

This same anonymous researcher also quotes biblical scholar, James Charlesworth, in support of his point that the Jews have always viewed the Sabbath as being given only to the Jews:

Further evidence of the antiquity of this rabbinic understanding comes from the second-century BCE book of Jubilees:

The Creator of all blessed it, but he did not sanctify any people or nations to keep the Sabbath thereon with the sole exception of Israel. He granted to them alone that they might eat and drink and keep the

As noted by Michael Morrison, who writes about the former Sabbatarian views of the Worldwide Church of God, it was the fact that the Jews understood that the Sabbath was only for the Jews that combined with the decision of the Council of Jerusalem not to require the new Gentile converts to be circumcised that prevented any controversy over the official discontinuance of the ordinances of circumcision and the Sabbath at that time.

See: [http://www.gci.org/law/Sabbath/history1"???](http://www.gci.org/law/Sabbath/history1)

Summarizing the research of SDA researchers, Maxwell and Damsteegt, and biblical scholar, Charlesworth, our anonymous former SDA scholar comments on their work as follows:

Based on these quotes above, we can see from the Jewish writings, and from the Adventist documents that the Gentiles were never expected to keep the Sabbath. This was the understanding of the Jews, to whom the Sabbath was given, and whom Christ never corrected on this matter. So, this begs the question, Why do Adventists and others keep the Sabbath rather than the Lord's day, which according to the writings of early Christians, was kept during the time of the Apostles?

Note: Unfortunately the link to this quote no longer works, so source identification at the time the 7th Edition was published is impossible.

We will spend a considerable amount of time examining the Circumcision-Sabbath connection because the concept is so critically important to the Sabbath question. A proper understanding of this principle helps us understand what St. Paul was thinking when he wrote about the law, circumcision, and the Sabbath. Paul was a Jewish lawyer, and he would have thought about these things the same way as other Jewish lawyers.

Apologists for Adventism point out that the mixed multitude were commanded to keep the Sabbath during the Exodus when the Manna was also given to the Hebrews, and that a very large number of these people were not circumcised at the time. This excuse works for about two weeks. At the time the Sabbath appears to have been merely an obedience test, like the Manna Obedience Test. However, when the LAW was given to them a short time later at Mt. Sinai, circumcision became a covenantal agreement between each individual Hebrew and God and the nation of Israel as a whole. The specifications of this treaty required circumcision in order to keep the Mosaic Law. Thereafter, Old Testament writers made note of how this concept was incorporated into universal practice in Israel.

We are much more interested in the entire concept as it developed through Jewish history because above everything else, we need to understand what St. Paul and the other apostles were thinking when they brought circumcision into discussions about the Law.

Israel viewed the Law of Moses as one integrated and inseparable body of 613 equally important "covenant" points of law. You break one of these 613 laws, and you have violated the covenant. The Decalogue was only a part of the Law of Moses, and it was strikingly incomplete. Rabbinical thought rejects outright the idea of "Ten Commandments," instead viewing the Decalogue as "Ten Categories" of the Mosaic Law. Take the Seventh Commandment that addresses the sin of adultery. Because of the very nature of Hebrew linguistics and culture, this commandment of the Decalogue, to our surprise, does not forbid sexual relationships between a man and a woman who are not married. By the very definition of the word "adultery", two unmarried persons cannot possibly commit the sin of adultery. Any attempt to say that adultery covers all sexual sins ignores the facts of Hebrew linguistics and culture. In English, fornication is the definition of a sexual relationship between a man and a woman who are not married. Even more striking is that the Decalogue portion of the Law of Moses does not address homosexual behavior or human sexual relations with animals. Rabbinical law draws a sharp difference between adultery and fornication, supporting this fact.

Evidence of the interpretive restrictions imposed by the existence of the separate definitions of these English words is that God chose to cover these additional areas of sexual sins— fornication, homosexuality, and bestiality— outside of the Decalogue "section" of the Law of Moses. The Jews believed that all 613 of these laws were equally important. Thus, when St. Paul says that circumcision is a token of bondage to the entire law, we are confronted with the principle that without the requirement for circumcision, there is no requirement for keeping the Sabbath because it is one of the most important

components of the Law of Moses. Abraham's covenant is explicit: Circumcision must occur on the 8th day. For Jews, that means that circumcision is the "front door" of the entire Mosaic law, since circumcision must occur on the 8th day, even if the 8th day was the Sabbath. Circumcision "trumped" the Sabbath's stern prohibition against "working" on the Sabbath. Keep in mind that the abrogation of the Decalogue at the cross did not cause natural law and/or the Law of the Spirit to cease:

Galatians 5:3 (NIV) - Again I declare to every man who lets himself be circumcised that he is obligated to obey the whole law.

The Torah, we must remember, contains the Sabbath Commandment and is included in the 613 laws of Moses. A Gentile only needed to swear before three "learned Rabbis" that he would abide by the Noahide Commandments in order to avail himself of all benefits of both Jewish citizenship and the Jewish afterlife. Circumcision was not necessary, and neither was Sabbath-Keeping.

Before the Law of Moses was given at Mt. Sinai, God required the foreigner who wished to participate in the Passover to be circumcised:

Exodus 12:48 (NIV) - "An alien living among you who wants to celebrate the LORD's Passover must have all the males in his household circumcised; then he may take part like one born in the land. No uncircumcised male may eat of it."

In the Old Testament we see that Gentiles were only required to keep the Sabbath if they chose to undergo circumcision and full-conversion to Judaism as we see in this passage from Isaiah 56— a text which Sabbatarians like to use to demonstrate the perpetuity of the Sabbath. This conclusion begs the logical conclusion regarding the perpetuity of sacrifices:

Isa 56:4 - 7 (NIV) ⁴ For this is what the LORD says: "To the eunuchs who keep my Sabbaths, who choose what pleases me and hold fast to my covenant— ⁵ to them I will give within my temple and its walls a memorial and a name better than sons and daughters; I will give them an everlasting name that will not be cut off. ⁶ And foreigners who bind themselves to the LORD to serve him, to love the name of the LORD, and to worship him, all who keep the Sabbath without desecrating it and who hold fast to my covenant— ⁷ these I will bring to my holy mountain and give them joy in my house of prayer. Their burnt offerings and sacrifices will be accepted on my altar; for my house will be called a house of prayer for all nations."

In our study of the problems of Sabbatarianism, our interest is as much in how the Israelites viewed the concept of the Law and its relationship to the Sabbath as we are in the actual teachings of the Scriptures regarding it. What we do know is that by the time of Jesus, the keeping of the *Torah*— the Law of Moses— was thought of to be for Jews only, and Gentiles were not welcome to participate in its ordinances unless they were circumcised and underwent full-scale conversion to Judaism.

The Council of Jerusalem made the decision not to impose circumcision on the Gentile converts, thus settling the Sabbath question forever. **The late SDA Sabbath scholar, Dr. Bacchiocchi teaches that the exemption (contrary to the law) for circumcision was for the Gentiles only and was still required for the Jewish Christians. (See Bacchiocchi's essay, "How Did Sabbath Keeping Begin," in the section titled, 'Attachment to the Law.')** If the issue involved here is truly a moral one, God could therefore not make a distinction between what Jewish Christians and Gentile Christians were required to do! What kind of theological nonsense is this in regard to the Gospel in which God and his Christian followers do not even differentiate between male and female, the free and the slave? We are at a total loss to see why Dr. Bacchiocchi would suggest such an idea. Dr. Bacchiocchi's willingness to split the requirement for Sabbath-keeping between the Jew and the Gentile is a desperate attempt on his part to extricate himself from the illogical web into which he has fallen. If the Jewish Christians elected to continue to keep the Sabbath and circumcise themselves, it was only because they chose to retain their Jewish identity and cultural connection. It had nothing to do with their conversion to Christianity. In essence, the Pharisees of Antioch in Acts 15 wanted the Gentile Christians to convert to Judaism as part and parcel of their conversion to Christianity. The Apostles at the Council of Jerusalem would have none of it.

The biblical understanding of circumcision as taught in Scripture and Jewish rabbinical writings is close to absolute proof that Sabbath-keeping ended at the cross and was officially put to rest at the Council of Jerusalem.

As we mention elsewhere, Jewish thought regarding Gentiles and the Sabbath is based on the Jewish belief that the

Sabbath was not given to Adam and Eve at Creation. Nowhere in the Book of Genesis is the Sabbath mentioned. Nobody is mentioned keeping it. No rules are set forth for keeping it in Genesis. Nowhere in Genesis does God command any Patriarch to keep it. Understanding the linguistics of their own Hebrew language, they clearly perceived that Moses worded his account of the events of the 7th day of Creation in such a way as to make certain they could not possibly read a Sabbath commandment into what he wrote. The complete absence of any mention of the Sabbath in the Book of Genesis loudly confirms the careful reading of the Creation events.

These concepts about what the Bible really teaches about the question of Sabbath-keeping for Christians from a combination of Jewish traditional theology and the Bible:

The Jews knew the Sabbath didn't begin at Creation.

The Jews believed the Sabbath was given to Israel and Israel alone.

Similarly, the gateway to keeping the *TORAH*, even for an Israelite, was circumcision. Circumcision represents the bondage of an Israelite to the *Torah*.

The Sabbath was not part of Noachian Law, which is self-evident from studying the Pentateuch, and which is evident from studying the sacred oral laws that Jesus validated when He told His followers to do everything the Pharisees told them to do.

God sent his prophets to rebuke many Gentile nations, but there is no record in the Bible that God ever rebuked them for Sabbath-breaking.

Jesus viewed both the Sabbath and circumcision to be ceremonial in nature. He did not condemn the Jews for breaking the Sabbath to circumcise a child on the 8th day following his birth according to the laws of Moses:

John 7:21-23 (NIV) - Jesus said to them, "I did one miracle, and you are all astonished. 22 Yet, because Moses gave you circumcision (though actually it did not come from Moses, but from the patriarchs), you circumcise a child on the Sabbath. 23 Now if a child can be circumcised on the Sabbath so that the Law of Moses may not be broken, why are you angry with me for healing the whole man on the Sabbath?"

The Weekly Sabbath is listed in Leviticus 23 as one of many ceremonial ordinances.

Note that the Jews knew which ordinance superseded the other when contests between circumcision and the Sabbath arose. Jesus recognized that the Law of Moses incorporated this hierarchy between the two ordinances. At the Council of Jerusalem, the Apostle Peter, through the inspiration of the Holy Spirit, was able to persuade the other apostolic leaders to avoid saddling the new Gentile converts with a burden that neither they nor their Jewish fathers were able to bear. Once the decision was made not to require the Gentile converts to be circumcised, the Sabbath question was settled forever. There was no chance (without ignoring the legalities of that covenant law) for the Sabbath question to surface again without first reviving the question over Christians undergoing circumcision. This understanding helps us to see why the requirement to keep the Jewish Sabbath was never indicated in any Scripture that post-dated this historic council.

The link between circumcision, the TORAH, and the Sabbath is clear.

Acts 15:4 - Acts 15:5 (NIV) - And when they were come to Jerusalem, they were received of the church, and of the apostles and elders, and they declared all things that God had done with them. 5 But there rose up certain of the sect of the Pharisees which believed, saying, That it was needful to circumcise them, and to command them to keep the law of Moses.

Both Christians and Jews understood that TORAH law was designed to keep Jews and Gentiles *separate*. The TORAH, with the Sabbath and its dietary laws, had to come to an end before the Gospel could include the Gentiles. While it may not matter what day Christians choose to worship God, choosing to retain the Sabbath as a day of rest is like rebuilding the same wall of separation that cost God so much to tear down. Here is how Paul talks about this concept in Ephesians Chapter 2:

(NIV)Therefore, remember that formerly you who are Gentiles by birth and called "uncircumcised" by

those who call themselves “the circumcision” (that done in the body by the hands of men)— 12 remember that at that time you were separate from Christ, excluded from citizenship in Israel and foreigners to the covenants of the promise, without hope and without God in the world. 13 But now in Christ Jesus you who once were far away have been brought near through the blood of Christ. 14 For He himself is our peace, who has made the two one and has destroyed the barrier, the dividing wall of hostility, 15 by abolishing in his flesh the law with its commandments and regulations. His purpose was to create in himself one new man out of the two, thus making peace, 16 and in this one body to reconcile both of them to God through the cross, by which he put to death their hostility. 17 He came and preached peace to you who were far away and peace to those who were near. 18 For through him we both have access to the Father by one Spirit. 19 Consequently, you are no longer foreigners and aliens, but fellow citizens with God’s people and members of God’s household, 20 built on the foundation of the apostles and prophets, with Christ Jesus himself as the chief cornerstone. 21 In Him the whole building is joined together and rises to become a holy temple in the Lord. 22 And in Him you too are being built together to become a dwelling in which God lives by His Spirit.

Jews and Christians can now eat together and worship together. The barrier erected by the Jewish ordinances of the Sabbath, the Jewish dietary laws, and circumcision have been destroyed by what happened at the cross.

The Jews, according to the sacred oral traditions passed down under the most exacting oral transmission standards, have virtually always believed that the Sabbath was given to them at the Exodus as a sign to differentiate them from all the other peoples of the world. In fact the very words of God Himself explain why He gave the Sabbath to Israel:

“Observe the Sabbath day by keeping it holy, as the LORD your God has commanded you. 13 Six days you shall labor and do all your work, 14 but the seventh day is a Sabbath to the LORD your God. On it you shall not do any work, neither you, nor your son or daughter, nor your manservant or maidservant, nor your ox, your donkey or any of your animals, nor the alien within your gates, so that your manservant and maidservant may rest, as you do. 15 Remember that you were slaves in Egypt and that the LORD your God brought you out of there with a mighty hand and an outstretched arm. Therefore the LORD your God has commanded you to observe the Sabbath day.” (NIV-Deuteronomy 5:12-15)

Israel was the only nation ever brought out of Egyptian slavery by God. The Sabbath part of the 10 Commandments would differentiate the Nation of Israel from all the other peoples of the world who were required only to keep the moralistic requirements of the Noachian laws.

Furthermore, Rabbinical Judaism taught that the Gentiles would be eternally saved if they kept the basic moralistic laws given to mankind in the Book of Genesis.

The Noachian Laws and how they were enforced were not detailed in the Old Testament as we know it and which both Jews and Christians accept as the inspired Word of God. We present the concept not as true doctrine, but as a way to understand how Jews thought about the subject of The Law.

It is no surprise that the Jews would view the Sabbath as their exclusive sign from God, since they read the books of Moses in their own language. The meaning indicators in Genesis 2 that are invisible to us are perfectly clear to rabbinical scholars who have had special training in the ancient form of the Hebrew language. They have recognized, “from the beginning,” that Moses contraindicated a Sabbath commandment at the time of Creation. In his classic “A Digest of the Sabbath Question,” Robert D. Brinsmead says:

[The Book of Jubilees \(a Jewish pseudepigraphal work of the second century BC\) says that “the Creator of all things., did not sanctify all peoples and nations to keep Sabbath thereon, but Israel alone” \(“The Book of Jubilees,” in *The Apocrypha and Pseudepigrapha of the Old Testament*, ed. R.H. Charles, vol. 2, Pseudepigrapha \[Oxford: Clarendon Press, 1913\], p. 15\).](#)

Jewish tradition taught that the “Noachian Laws” were given to every person on Earth around the time of the Great Flood. The key point, however, is that the Sabbath was not a part of the Noachian laws. Therefore, the Jews believe that the Gentiles who keep the Noachian laws will be saved without having kept the Sabbath or circumcision, and there is no indication in the rabbinical records that the Jews ever officially believed otherwise. God never sent an Israelite prophet to rebuke a heathen

nation or city for Sabbath-breaking, but He did so for disregarding the basic principles of REAL morality– in particular violence and sexual evils. **Thus, the Noahide Commandments were an earlier “shadow” of the Great Commission. The Great Commission commanded the Apostles to take the Gospel to ALL the Nations. In the Mishnah, the Jews were commanded to enforce and apply the simple moralistic rules of the Noahide Commandments to all “Nations.” If the Gentiles agree to abide by these simple Commandments, their lives were to be spared.**

The logic of set theory demands that one cannot use a trait that is characteristic of all the members of the set to create a subset. C.S. Lewis once said that nonsense is nonsense even when you are talking about God. One of the reasons God explained for giving the Sabbath to Israel was to create a sign that would differentiate them from all the other nations of the world. If all the nations, kindred, tongues, and people of the world kept the Sabbath, it would be impossible for God to use the Sabbath as a distinguishing sign. In fact God wished to keep Israel separate from the Heathen during the dispensation of the *Torah* (Exodus to the Cross) for good reasons. The Israelites were a stubborn and stiff-necked people according to God’s own assessment. He knew the Hebrews would easily be corrupted by associating with the Heathen. The ordinances of the Sabbath, circumcision, and the Jewish dietary laws placed a high wall of social separation between Israel and the Gentiles. If people don’t eat together, they are less likely to become friends. Along similar lines, the ordinance of circumcision made it a very painful process for the head of a Gentile household to make a decision to join an Israelite community and to live as a proselyte. Contrast this with God’s expressed New Covenant purpose to tear down this barrier between Jews and Gentiles after the cross. St. Paul was God’s specially designated ambassador of the Gospel to the Gentiles according to Scripture. We credit our reading of the works of Robert D. Brinsmead for the concepts I have mentioned in this paragraph.

It should be clear, now, that the Adventist interpretation that only the “ceremonial” laws were nailed to the cross is not possible for a number of reasons. The Sabbath was a ceremonial law designed to keep Israel and the Gentiles separate, and that barrier must come down if Jews and Gentiles are to be united in the Gospel. The Old Testament, as well as Jewish traditional theology, view the TORAH as absolutely inseparable covenant. No Jewish Scholar recognized a distinction between the “moral” and “ceremonial” components of the Mosaic Law, nor did any of them recognize a distinction between the “Ten Commandments” and the rest of the 613 Mosaic Commandments.

At least in the years subsequent to the writing of *From Sabbath to Sunday*, Dr. Bacchiocchi was fully aware of the Jewish concept of the circumcision-Sabbath connection, although he tried his best to discount it. In a later book he acknowledges that the opinion of Jewish rabbinical thought for hundreds of years before the birth of Christ was that the Sabbath was given to Israel at the time of the giving of the manna; that it was given only to Israel; and that circumcision was a prerequisite for both Israelites and proselytes to Judaism for keeping the Sabbath. Here is proof of what he knew, quoting a section of that book. Please keep in mind that the following statement is written by a pro-Sabbatarian, Seventh-day Adventist author. The trouble is that he wrote this at a time when he had unfettered access to scholarly studies that by that time had thoroughly disproved the concept that the Sabbath was a Creation ordinance. We are referring again to the definitive work of the D.A. Carson team. Dr. Bacchiocchi offers no proof that the Sabbath was a Creation ordinance, perhaps because there is no proof to offer and all the evidence is against this point-of-view. We do not approve of the content of the following quoted passage and it does not reflect the opinion of any of us four authors. The following quote is from Bacchiocchi’s book, *The Sabbath in the New Testament, Answers to Questions*, Chapter 8, “Questions About The Sabbath in the Old Testament,” posted at Dr. Bacchiocchi’s website, *Biblical Perspectives*.)

QUESTION:

Have not Rabbis and Church Fathers taught that the Sabbath is a Mosaic institution established by Moses for Israel alone? Does not this historical view negate the creation origin and universal validity of the Sabbath?

ANSWER:

Mosaic Institution. Some Palestinian Rabbis and some early Church Fathers did reduce the Sabbath from a creation ordinance for mankind to a Mosaic institution for the Jews. Their teaching, however, does not negate the validity of the Biblical view of the creation origin and universal scope of the Sabbath, because the teachings of the Scriptures are not "a matter of one’s own interpretation" (2 Pet 1:20).

Jewish Identity. Furthermore, note should be taken of the factors which contributed to the adoption of the Mosaic origin of the Sabbath. It was the strong desire to preserve a Jewish identity, at a time when

Hellenistic forces were pressing for the abandonment of the Jewish religion, that apparently led Palestinian Rabbis to reduce the Sabbath from a creation ordinance established for mankind to a Mosaic ordinance given exclusively to Israel.

Such a development occurred in response to the determined efforts of the Syrian king Antiochus Epiphanes to implement a program of radical Hellenization of the Jews through the prohibition of sacrifices and Sabbath-keeping (175 BC). The result was that many Jews fell away, "sacrificed to the gods and desecrated the Sabbath" (1 Macc. 1:43).

Pious Jews passionately resisted the Hellenization efforts of Antiochus Epiphanes, preferring to be slaughtered rather than desecrate the Sabbath (1 Macc. 2:32-38). The need to preserve a Jewish identity at that critical time inspired an exclusivistic and nationalistic view of the Sabbath.

The notion was introduced at this time by some Rabbis that the privilege of Sabbath-keeping was denied to the Gentiles and reserved exclusively for Israel. As stated in the book of Jubilees, "He [God] allowed no other people or peoples to keep the Sabbath on this day, except Israel only; to it alone he granted to eat and drink and keep the Sabbath on it" (2:31). If the patriarchs are sometimes mentioned as keeping the Sabbath, this is regarded as an exception "before it [the Sabbath] was given" to Israel.

A Secondary Development. The notion of the Sabbath as an exclusively Jewish institution, established not at creation for all mankind but by Moses for Israel alone, makes God guilty, to say the least, of favoritism and discriminatory practices.

It must be said, however, that the notion of a Mosaic origin of the Sabbath represents a late secondary development rather than an original tradition. This is borne out by the fact that in Hellenistic (Greek) Judaism the Sabbath was viewed as a creation ordinance for mankind. Moreover, even in Palestinian literature (both apocalyptic and rabbinic) frequent mention is made of God, Adam, Seth, Abraham, Jacob, and Joseph as scrupulously observing the Sabbath.

Apologetic Need. The early Fathers adopted the notion of the Mosaic origin and exclusive Jewish nature of the Sabbath, to challenge those Christians who defended the binding obligations of the Sabbath commandment in the Christian dispensation. The standard and frequent argument is that the patriarchs and righteous men before Moses did not observe the Sabbath, and thus the day must be regarded as a temporary ordinance, deriving from Moses, and enjoined exclusively on the Jews on account of their unfaithfulness.

The reduction of a creation ordinance to an infamous sign of Jewish disobedience may reflect the need for short-term apologetic arguments, but it lacks a comprehension of the permanent and lofty values placed upon the Sabbath by Scripture.

(Dr. Bacchiocchi, from *The Sabbath in the New Testament*, Answers to Questions, Chapter 8, "Questions About The Sabbath in the Old Testament," posted at Dr. Bacchiocchi's website, Biblical Perspectives.)

Again, our purpose in providing the above reference from Dr. Bacchiocchi is simply to show that he was well aware of facts that make his Sabbatarian views difficult to sustain.

As we mentioned in another chapter, Bacchiocchi seemed to be unaware that the Greek hatred of the Sabbath, circumcision, and the Jewish Food Laws continues unabated until this day. His is an odd "Judeo-centric" view of the conflict found in the Book of Maccabees. Adventism has fewer than 1,000 members in Greece today, and Greece has the lowest rate of circumcision in the Western World (less than 2 percent). Had not the Apostles swiftly abandoned the Sabbath, Circumcision and the Jewish Food laws at the Council of Jerusalem, Christianity would have quickly shriveled into an obscure sect of Judaism localized around Jerusalem. Simply put, Adventism is a non-starter in Greece because of the Sabbath and its adoption of the Jewish Food laws. The Greeks hate those Jewish traditions just as passionately today as they did 2,000 years ago. For the Apostles to have NOT abandoned the Sabbath, circumcision and the Jewish Food laws would have been direct disobedience to the Great Commission. Christianity would have never spread among the Greeks, had the Greeks been forced to comply with the Mosaic Law.

BRENDAN KNUDSON'S OBJECTIONS

KNUDSON: Just because the Jews believed that circumcision was a prerequisite to Sabbath-keeping does not make it true.

AUTHORS: Thanks for acknowledging that the Jews have believed that circumcision is a prerequisite to Sabbath observance. Additionally, it is odd for an Adventist to argue that circumcision was not a prerequisite to Sabbath Keeping, since Adventists erroneously – and without a stitch of proof in Genesis – argue that Abraham, Isaac and Jacob kept the Sabbath. Yet Genesis is clear that all of those Patriarchs were circumcised.

In order to understand a Jewish book like the Bible, you must understand Jewish language, culture, and history. We know that the Jews of Jesus' day believed that neither Gentile proselyte nor Jew could keep the Sabbath without being circumcised. Jesus Himself restricted the application of the Sabbath to Israel by excluding the Gentile "dogs." It was a group of Jews—the Apostles—who, in apostolic times, and under the guidance of the Holy Spirit, decided that the Gentile converts coming into the Church did not have to be circumcised. The issue of Sabbath-keeping never arose after the Council of Jerusalem. Even if the Apostles happened to be wrong in their beliefs, this was what they believed, and it was this belief that guided their thinking about what Jewish requirements would be appropriate for the new Gentile converts. More than anything though, they had the Great Commission, and Jesus' expression of the Great Commission was inconsistent with the Mosaic Law.

What they believed about the relationship between circumcision and Sabbath observance affected how New Testament writers thought and wrote about it. The truth of the concept is found throughout the Law of Moses. The interpretation of this principle is manifest in how the Jews implemented it throughout their recorded history. Jesus even commented on the relationship between the two ordinances when He pointed out to his Jewish audience that their practice was to circumcise a new baby boy on the Sabbath if the 8th day of his life fell on the Sabbath.

KNUDSON: The Bible demonstrates that Sabbath-keeping applied to the uncircumcised stranger who was passing through Israelite territory. The scope of the teachings of the *Pentateuch* about Sabbath-keeping seems to include both the circumcised foreigner and the uncircumcised foreigner.

AUTHORS: Gentiles working within the national boundaries of Israel on the Sabbath would make it difficult for their Jewish hosts to keep the Sabbath. Almost certainly the Law of Moses regulated the foreigner's activity on the Sabbath so the Jews could keep the Sabbath at all times, as well as to prevent a Jew from working by proxy through Gentiles. The Gentiles rested on the Sabbath only because Jewish law required them to appease their hosts while they were within their gates. When they left they were no longer bound by law to keep the Sabbath. They were no more "Sabbath keepers" than the animals within the gates of the Jews, who also rested/ceased. Imagine a Gentile merchant who wants to load the goods he purchased from an Israelite merchant on his camels after sunset on the Preparation Day. He wants his Jewish merchant to unlock the storehouse and help him load-up for the long journey back to the Kingdom of Sheba.

The Mosaic Law as interpreted in both the Mishnah and the Talmud demonstrate yet another outrageous falsehood of Adventism, and the *opposite* of what Knudson alleges. Recall that White stated that Jews could hire Gentiles to do work on the Sabbath that Jews were prohibited from doing:

As a consequence the people were dependent upon the Gentiles for many services which their rules forbade them to do for themselves. They did not reflect that if these acts were sinful, those who employed others to perform them were as guilty as if they had done the work themselves (*The Desire of Ages*, page 204, paragraph 1, Chapter Title: Bethesda and the Sanhedrin.)

Both Knudson and White have fallen into the notorious logical morass known as the "Myth of the Shabbos Goy," which is debunked here:

"The basic rule of thumb as far as having a gentile do work for a Jew on Shabbat is that if a Jew may not do it, a non-Jew cannot do it for him. This is true whether or not the Jew specifically asks the non-Jew to do the work or if the non-Jew does it on his own, whether the non-Jew is paid for his efforts or not."

"Therefore, they decreed that when a non-Jew performs work for a Jew on Shabbat, he becomes his agent for that action and it's considered as if the Jew performed the work himself."

http://www.chabad.org/library/article_cdo/aid/1140867/jewish/The-Myth-of-the-Shabbos-Goy.htm

KNUDSON: In this, we see that the Sabbath was binding upon the uncircumcised as well as the circumcised, thus demonstrating that its universal nature extended beyond the covenant God had established with Israel.

AUTHORS: God made no covenant with any other nation but Israel. The Law of Moses specified what was to happen within the territorial boundaries of His nation, Israel. The concept of national jurisdiction is recognized by the popular statement, “When in Rome, do as the Romans do.” The provision Knudson cites was enacted to enable the Jews within their own domain to keep the Sabbath without interference from their Gentile visitors. The law also prevented the Jew from using the Gentiles among them as proxy workers. Knudson draws a conclusion then that goes way beyond the confines stated in Scripture regarding the Gentiles who happened to be “within the gates” or borders of Israel. This restriction to territory within the confines of Israel hardly qualifies the Sabbath as being universal in nature.

The Sabbath was definitely a “religious” thing for the Jew, but it was merely a civil provision for the visiting Gentile. The Jew could be stoned to death for picking up firewood on the Sabbath, but there was no provision in the Law of Moses for stoning their Gentile guests who collected firewood on the Sabbath (unless of course the Gentile was doing it on behalf of a Jew). As demonstrated in the previous response, the Sabbath was only “binding” on a Gentile insofar as a Jew could not hire a Gentile to perform work on the Sabbath that a Jew was prohibited from doing.

SANDERS: Any Gentile or foreigner that wished to keep the Sabbath was required to obey all the Old Covenant laws which required circumcision. In Isaiah 56, we have the mentioning of the Eunuchs who kept the Sabbath. God told them that they must keep the covenant to be accepted and that the covenant requires circumcision.

Isaiah 56:4-5 (NIV) ⁴ For this is what the LORD says: “To the eunuchs who keep my Sabbaths, who choose what pleases me and hold fast to my covenant— ⁵ to them I will give within my temple and its walls a memorial and a name better than sons and daughters; I will give them an everlasting name that will not be cut off.

KNUDSON: From the time that the Israelites refused to enter the Promised Land at Kadesh, the Scriptures reveal that the Hebrews were forbidden from performing circumcision (Joshua 5:7) and the entire next generation who entered the promised land were not circumcised until they had crossed the Jordan (Joshua 5:2-4). Circumcision was required to partake of the Passover (Exodus 12:43-49) and they did not eat it during all the 40 years in the wilderness until the rite of circumcision was renewed (Joshua 5:11). This fact represents a final blow to the anti-Sabbatarian argument that the Bible concept of circumcision is a barrier to Sabbatarianism.

HOHMANN: Knudson takes great liberty with Scripture, drawing conclusions not necessarily supported by the text. It does not say the Hebrews were forbidden from performing circumcision. The narrative indicates it was something neglected by them. Israel had a nasty habit of forgetting the law given to them down through time. The same can be said for the Passover. Knudson assumes; draws out a conclusion, that they had not kept the Passover for those 40 years in the wilderness. All the narrative does tell us is that it was kept by them just prior to entering into the land, along with the next generation undergoing circumcision. Knudson wants desperately to turn this into the “last nail in the coffin” regarding the “alleged” connection between circumcision and Sabbath observance, when in fact all that is demonstrated is the Hebrew's proclivity at ignoring their own law. Here is the passage from Joshua 5 to study for yourself:

² At that time the Lord said to Joshua, “Make flint knives and circumcise the Israelites again.” ³ So Joshua made flint knives and circumcised the Israelites at Gibeath Haaraloth.

⁴ Now this is why he did so: All those who came out of Egypt—all the men of military age—died in the wilderness on the way after leaving Egypt. ⁵ All the people that came out had been circumcised, but all the people born in the wilderness during the journey from Egypt had not. ⁶ The Israelites had moved about in the wilderness forty years until all the men who were of military age when they left Egypt had died, since they had not obeyed the Lord. For the Lord had sworn to them that they would not see the land he had solemnly promised their ancestors to give us, a land flowing with milk and honey. ⁷ So he raised up their sons in their place, and these were the ones Joshua circumcised. They were still uncircumcised because they had not been circumcised on the way. ⁸ And after the whole nation had been circumcised, they remained where they were in camp until they were healed.

Note that this passage does not suggest or imply that God ordered Israel to cease practicing the ordinance of circumcision during their desert wanderings. It does not tell us why circumcision ceased during those 40 years. It is more reasonable to assume that the cessation of this practice was the result of the neglect of the practice by the people. What Knudson would need to support his objection is a text that records God forbidding circumcision around the time when the forty years of wandering in the desert began.

WYNNE: The root of Knudson's objection is based on the errant premise that the Sabbath ordinance is intrinsically moral. The Sabbath started out as an obedience test. Shortly thereafter it was elevated to the status of an obedience test that would distinguish Israel from all the other nations of the world. Because both are intrinsically "ceremonial," God can do what he wants to with them. The whole world did without a Sabbath for two-thousand years before God gave it to Israel. The whole world went without the ordinance of circumcision until God called Abraham out of Ur of the Chaldees. God would not be intermittent with moralistic laws. For example, He would not ever suspend the natural law against adultery. Imagine God punishing Israel by taking away the prohibition against adultery because they had been doing evil! Recall that once God did threaten to take away Israel's Sabbaths:

Hosea 2:11 (NIV) I will stop all her celebrations: her yearly festivals, her New Moons, her Sabbath days—all her appointed feasts.

Note that once Israel crossed the Jordan and became established as a nation, the hierarchy between circumcision and the Sabbath remained unchanged until the time of Jesus, with circumcision, a "ceremonial" point of law, taking precedence over the Sabbath. Circumcision remained the gateway to the privilege of keeping the Law of Moses, the Sabbath being the most significant seal of the contract between God and Israel from Mt. Sinai to the Cross. Circumcision may have fallen into widespread neglect during the Desert Wanderings because there was no functioning court system until the Children of Israel crossed the Jordan and established one!

KNUDSON: Exodus 23:9 - "You shall not oppress a sojourner (גֵר). You know the heart of a sojourner (גֵר), for you were sojourners (גֵר) in the land of Egypt."

This verse highlights how the Hebrews were in the position of *gēr* while they were in Egypt. It doesn't imply that they had adopted Egyptian religious practices, but speaks in the general sense of being foreigners. It is speaking of the vulnerable status of being a minority within another culture. Also, the command not to oppress the foreigner within the land must also embrace a universal sense inclusive of uncircumcised foreigners in the land. So we see that the Sabbath in Exodus 23:12 is for the uncircumcised stranger as well as the circumcised Hebrew.

In the Sabbath Commandment in Deuteronomy, we see again a social aspect of the Sabbath commandment with the commentary which shows that the rest of those mentioned alongside the Israelites was to be equal to the Israelites rest as it says synecdochally, "that your male servant and your female servant may rest as well as you". The Deuteronomic account also gives the larger context for the *gēr* by reference to the experience of slavery in Egypt.

In this, we see that the Sabbath was binding upon the uncircumcised as well as the circumcised, thus demonstrating its universal nature beyond the covenant God had established with Israel.

DEAN: For much of Israel's history, oral and written histories record key court decisions and the legal precedents that those decisions established. Down through the history of Israel, judges within that legal system referred to those records to help them make decisions in difficult situations that would be in keeping with the principles of the Torah. These records were collected and incorporated into a Jewish document called the *Mishnah*. The record of these oral and written traditions shows that Israel utilized two separate court systems— one for Jews and one for the Gentiles living within the borders of the country. The Gentiles were not held accountable to the TORAH. Instead, they were held to the Noachian laws. These Noachian laws were the foundation of all law systems, including the TORAH, but they did not include the Sabbath. As noted elsewhere in this book, the Jews have traditionally believed that Gentiles who kept the Noachian laws would be granted eternal life in Paradise. Here is a *Wikipedia* definition of the *Mishnah*:

According to Rabbinical Judaism, the Oral Torah (Hebrew: תורה שבעל-פה, Torah she-be'al-peh) was given to Moses with the Torah at Mount Sinai, as an exposition to the latter. The accumulated traditions of the Oral Law, expounded by scholars in each generation from Moses onward, is considered as the necessary basis for the interpretation, and often for the reading, of the Written Law. Jews sometimes refer to this as the *Masorah* (Hebrew: מסורה), roughly translated as tradition, though that word is often used in a narrower sense to mean traditions concerning the editing and reading of the Biblical text (see Masorah). The resulting Jewish law and custom is called *Halakha* (Hebrew: הלכה).

While most discussions in the *Mishnah* concern the correct way to carry out laws recorded in the Torah, it usually presents its conclusions without explicitly linking them to any scriptural passage, although

scriptural quotations do occur. For this reason it is arranged in order of topics rather than in the form of a Biblical commentary. (In a very few cases, there is no scriptural source at all and the law is described as *Halakha le-Moshe mi-Sinai*, law to Moses from Sinai.) The Midrash *Halakha*, by contrast, while presenting similar laws, does so in the form of a Biblical commentary and explicitly links its conclusions to details in the Biblical text. These *Midrashim* often predate the *Mishnah*.

The Mishnah also quotes the Torah for principles not associated with law, but just as practical advice, even at times for humor or as guidance for understanding historical debate.

In Israel's legal system Gentiles were held accountable ONLY to the Noahide laws, which did not include a Sabbath requirement. Correlating with and reinforcing this principle is that the Rabbis believed and taught that the Gentiles would be eternally saved if they kept the Noahide laws. The Sabbath was only binding on a Gentile insofar as a Jew could not hire a Gentile to perform work that a Jew was prohibited from doing on the Sabbath. Once again, the heart of the 4th Commandment is a prohibition against "working," and the Commandment facially includes "man-servants and maid-servants" in this prohibition. That includes Gentiles and "sojourners."

Our assertion that there can be no Sabbath-keeping without circumcision, therefore, is based on biblical evidence and is supported by Jewish written and oral tradition that Jewish authorities believe extends back as far as the period of the Judges.

RESEARCH BARRIER:

THE SABBATH IS ABOUT A TREATY WITH A CEREMONIAL REQUIREMENT IN THE MIDDLE

Robert Brinsmead's intense research prior to the publication of his 1981 essay, "Sabbatarianism Re-examined," brought to Adventists the fact that contemporary biblical scholars had discovered the fact that the 10 Commandments were modeled after the Hittite treaties of the time. (See *Law and Covenant in Israel and the Ancient Near East*, George E. Mendenhall, 1954; and "The Two Tables of the Covenant," Meredith Kline, *Westminster Theological Journal* 22 (1960) 133-146, both available on the Web). Brinsmead says:

The ceremonial nature of the Sabbath law has been confirmed by Mendenhall's 1954 discovery that the Ten Commandments conform to the structure of treaties between Hittite kings and their vassals. Annexed to the stipulations of a Hittite treaty was a provision for a periodic ceremony to rehearse the treaty between the lord and the vassal. Meredith Kline beautifully demonstrates that the Sabbath law in the middle of the Ten Commandments is the counterpart of a Hittite treaty memorial celebration with respect to its provision for the rehearsal of God's covenant. The Sabbath law, therefore, was a law requiring a ceremony of covenantal rehearsal.

The Sabbath was a ceremonial rite given to Israel to help the Chosen People remember that God was the One responsible for bringing them out of Egypt. It would be so very much like God to communicate His plan for them in the context of their contemporary culture because the people could understand it better. Moses, in Leviticus 23, lists the weekly Sabbath as one of the many ceremonial festivals given to the Israelite nation to be observed, labeling them "appointed feasts." The evidence in this section combines with the fact that a study of the Hebrew linguistics of the Creation Story illustrates the fact that the Sabbath could not have been a Creation ordinance. There are two fundamental reasons God listed for giving the Sabbath to Israel, and BOTH specifications have to be met for its consistent application: (1) to help Israel remember that God created the world, and (2) to help Israel remember that God rescued them from Egyptian slavery. At the time of Creation, there was no Egyptian slavery to be rescued from. The specifications for the use of the Sabbath cannot be met for anyone living before the time of the Exodus.

RESEARCH POTENTIAL BARRIER:

THE THEORY OF PROLEPSIS: A POSSIBILITY

One respectable but less-than-definitive argument against a Genesis origin for the Sabbath is the possibility that Moses used a literary device called prolepsis in Genesis 2:2-3 to show the relationship between the events of the 7th day of

Creation and the giving of the Sabbath commandment at Mt. Sinai. The Bible is literature. The books of the Bible share many attributes with world literature. We mentioned earlier that failure to understand the linguistics of the original language of the Pentateuch can lead to disaster. The same is true of a failure to understand it as a literary work.

One of our critics, Knudson, objects that the prolepsis argument is not a good one and claims that it has been thoroughly refuted. We have never claimed that it is a proven argument, and we fail to see how either Sabbatarians or anti-Sabbatarians could prove or disprove it. It is a definite possibility since Moses wrote about events that stretched from Creation through the giving of the 10 Commandments on Mt. Sinai.

The commentary on Genesis 2:3 in John Gill's Exposition of the Bible theorizes that since Moses wrote about both Creation and the Exodus, he was likely thinking about both events when he wrote Genesis and Exodus. It is entirely possible and consistent with other facts that He chose to show the relationship between the 7th day of Creation and the 4th commandment through prolepsis. *Merriam Webster's On-Line Dictionary* defines this term as "The representation of a thing as existing before it actually does or did so, as in "he was a dead man when he entered." [In regard to] literary [terminology], a figurative device in narrative, in which a future event is prefigured, such as "the destruction of the Vendôme Column and his part in it are foreshadowed in moments of haunting prolepsis."

The calculated risk we take in including this in our presentation is that our Sabbatarian brethren might think that we include it because we have nothing better to hold up as evidence against a Creation origin for the Sabbath. To the contrary, we are confident to present it because we are in the process of providing proof, not merely "evidence," that a Creation origin for the Sabbath is not possible. We demonstrate this fact, and not tentatively, from a study of the Hebrew linguistics of Genesis 2, Exodus 16, and Exodus 20. Quoting Gill:

And God blessed the seventh day, and sanctified it.

A day in which he took delight and pleasure, having finished all his works, and resting from them, and looking over them as very good; and so he pronounced this day a good and happy day, and "sanctified" or appointed it in his mind to be a day separated from others, for holy service and worship; as it was with the Jews when they became a body of people, both civil and ecclesiastical: or this is all said by way of prolepsis or anticipation, as many things in this chapter are, many names of countries and rivers, by which being called in the times of Moses, are here given them, though they were not called by them so early, nor till many ages after: and according to Jarchi this passage respects future time, when God "blessed" this day with the manna, which descended on all the days of the week, an omer for a man, and on the sixth day double food; and he "sanctified" it with the manna which did not descend at all on that day: besides, these words may be read in a parenthesis, as containing an account of a fact that was done, not at the beginning of the world, and on the first seventh day of it; but of what had been done in the times of Moses, who wrote this, after the giving of the law of the Sabbath; and this being given through his hands to the people of Israel, he takes this opportunity here to insert it, and very pertinently, seeing the reason why God then, in the times of Moses, blessed the Sabbath day, and hallowed it, was, because he had rested on that day from all his works, (Exodus 20:11) and the same reason is given here, taken plainly out of that law which he had delivered to them:

because that in it he had rested from all his work, which God created and made;

which shows, that this refers not to the same time when God blessed and hallowed the seventh day, which was done in the times of Moses, but to what had been long before, and was then given as a reason enforcing it; for it is not here said, as in the preceding verse, "he rested", but "had rested", even from the foundation of the world, when his works were finished, as in (Hebrews 4:3) even what "he created to make" V5, as the words may be here rendered; which he created out of nothing, as he did the first matter, in order to make all things out of it, and put them in that order, and bring them to that perfection he did.

<http://www.biblestudytools.com/commentaries/gills-exposition-of-the-bible/genesis-2-3.html>

It is possible, then, that Moses, writing about both events, comments on the blessing and the hallowing of the 7th day in Genesis 2 before it took place because in his mind he knew it had taken place in the future.

Knudson possesses a general knowledge of the Hebrew language. He does not, however, exhibit expert level knowledge of

Ancient Hebrew. Nor does he speak for the Seventh-day Adventist Church in any official capacity, especially in view of his recent highly controversial activities in regard to the White Estate. He has reviewed our work, having posted refutations of it on the Internet. His challenges are well-articulated, and we will present his objections with appropriate rebuttals throughout this up-dated version. Here are his objections in regard to the concept of prolepsis:

KNUDSON: The author's defense [Wynne's] that you can have your cake and eat it too in regard to the possibility that Moses referred to the blessing and the hallowing of the 7th day of Creation as a literary prolepsis— is double-speak and amounts to a concession that the blessing and hallowing would have to have taken place on the 7th day of Creation. This concession backs Wynne away from an argument he initially presented as a weighty one.

DEAN: Since the practice of the Sabbath obligation itself is nowhere mentioned in Genesis; and is not introduced until Sinai in Exodus; it is not “having your cake and eating it too” to admit that the 7th Day of Creation was hallowed. The “blessing and hallowing” of the 7th Day of Creation does not imply a recurring weekly 7th Day Sabbath. Nor can the language in any way be stretched that far. The Adventist insistence that the Sabbath is a “creation ordinance” is simply dishonest.

RESEARCH BARRIER:

MATTHEW 5:17-18 TEACHES US NOTHING ABOUT THE SABBATH

Both Sabbatarians and their anti-Sabbatarian opponents try to use Matthew 5:17-19 to support their points of view. Our assessment of this passage suggests that neither side can legitimately use it. This passage says nothing definite about the Sabbath question. It is very difficult to translate it from the original Greek into English:

Do not think that I have come to abolish the Law or the Prophets; I have not come to abolish them but to fulfill them. I tell you the truth, until heaven and earth disappear, not the smallest letter, not the least stroke of a pen, will by any means disappear from the Law until everything is accomplished.
(Matt 5:17-18 NIV)

Sabbatarians claim this text proves that the 10 Commandments will last until Heaven and Earth disappear, which takes the end of the Law and the Prophets way beyond the Cross. Adventists fail to acknowledge to reality that when the Jews thought about the Law, they were thinking of the entire Torah, which consisted to 613 rules and regulations that were considered to be equally important with no differentiation between moralistic and ceremonial precepts. Since Jesus expanded His saying to also include the “Prophets,” there can be no mistake that He intended to communicate the concept that the entire Torah was included as something that would not perish until all things were fulfilled.

Let's use some logic in our application of this passage to thinking about whether the Sabbath goes to Heaven with us. If the Sabbath were to survive into the New Earth, so would the annual Sabbath feast days and the monthly New Moon observances, along with the Jewish dietary restrictions. Imagine! No Pork-eating in Heaven? We are not so sure there will even be pigs there, and we wouldn't expect to eat them if they were. This line of thinking pushes us into crazy absurdities.

Adventists like to link this text with Isaiah 66 to prove that the Sabbath will be kept in Heaven, but this flawed approach ignores the fact that Isaiah seems to be telling Israel that the Hebrews who are faithful to God in the current moment of national distress they were experiencing as a nation will be remembered for their loyalty to Him for as long as the new Heaven and Earth endure. We cover Isaiah 66 in depth elsewhere. For the purpose of this topic, just keep in mind that if we meet Ellen White and the Adventists on their own ground, Ellen White taught (in error, of course) that the ceremonial laws, but not the Sabbath, were nailed to the Cross. Adventists historically have viewed the annual Sabbaths and New Moons as ceremonial laws that got nailed to the Cross. If Ellen White is to be believed by her own followers, there can be no New Moons kept in Heaven.

While we believe that Matthew 5:17-18 cannot possibly be utilized to teach the idea that the Sabbath goes to Heaven, we are reluctant, at the same time, to say with 100% assurance that the death of Jesus on the Cross represented the “fulfillment” to which Jesus was referring. However, the latter seems more plausible than the former if we were to be forced to choose between them.

Paul Kroll explains the problem and possible solutions in the following Internet article, “The ‘Law’ of Matthew 5:17-19.” A Google search will provide you with access to the entire paper, which is well-worth reading:

The meaning of “until everything is accomplished” has several possibilities. It is suggested by the Tyndale New Testament Commentary that the translation: “Until what it [the Law] looks forward to arrives” gives the best sense of this phrase. This links the thought with the idea of “fulfillment” in verse 17. This also seems to be the thrust of Paul’s comments regarding the relationship of the Law and Jesus’ earthly ministry (Galatians 3:19, 23-25).

The *Tyndale New Testament Commentary* expresses the interpretation of “accomplished” in these words:

The law remains valid until it reaches its intended culmination; this it is now doing in the ministry and teaching of Jesus. This verse does not state, therefore, as it is sometimes interpreted, that every regulation in the Old Testament law remains binding after the coming of Jesus. The law is unalterable, but that does not justify its application beyond the purpose for which it was intended (page 115).

The Tyndale commentary also makes the same point in these words:

This passage does not therefore state that every Old Testament regulation is eternally valid. This view is not found anywhere in the New Testament, which consistently sees Jesus as introducing a new situation, for which the law prepared (Galatians 3:24), but which now transcends it. The focus is now on Jesus and his teaching, and in this light the validity of Old Testament rules must now be examined. Some will be found to have fulfilled their role, and be no longer applicable...others will be reinterpreted (page 117).

This explanation must be the correct one, or else the early Christian church and the apostles violated Matthew 5:17-19 by telling gentile Christians that circumcision and keeping the Law of Moses was not necessary. The book of Galatians would also have been in error on this point. And the book of Hebrews would have been in extraordinary violation of Jesus’ words, too, since it states that the entire sacrificial system, the temple worship and Levitical priesthood had been annulled.

<http://www.gci.org/bible/matthew517>

St. Paul said that Christ is the end of TORAH law: Rom.10:4 (NIV): “Christ is the end of the law so that there may be righteousness for everyone who believes.” Under the New Covenant, the “Law of God” is written on the hearts of the people, this “law” being identified also as God's Spirit, and a new heart of flesh.

Bill Hohmann offers the following observation in his new blog-based book, *Christian Basics*, Chapter 5, “Methodology of Truth:”

One of the Sabbatarian legalist's favorite passages is Matthew 5:17-19 where it is concluded that the legalities of the law remain inviolate even down to the strokes of the letters of the law. Even a cursory examination of the passage shows this interpretation to be flawed. The context of what Jesus was referring to was the law and prophets. In this context it should be understood that this refers to the first 5 books, commonly called “the law” and the writings of the prophets being “the prophets” as well as the context of Scripture overall. Sometimes the term, “the law” could indeed refer to the entirety of the Old Testament writings.

There are no laws codified in the prophets. You cannot fulfill or destroy something in the prophets that is not there. What then is found in both the law and prophets that has the potential to be fulfilled or destroyed? Prophecies! Did Jesus state He had come to fulfill the prophecies that were written about Him in the law and prophets, that is, the Old Testament writings? Yes, He most emphatically did.

And he said unto them, These are the words which I spake unto you, while I was yet with you, that all things must be fulfilled, which were written in the law of Moses, and in the prophets, and in the psalms, concerning me. – Luke 24:44

What, then, is the excuse of the Sabbatarian for rejecting this explanation in light of Matthew 5:17? They point out that Jesus did not fulfill everything while He walked the earth in human form. Well then, what do they think the very next verse addresses? Things that were not fulfilled prophetically that are eschatological in nature that will be fulfilled later, at that time, before heaven and earth pass away.

Let's humor the Sabbatarian a bit here, seeing as they insist this is about the legalities of the law. When then is the conclusion in regards to verse 18? When heaven and earth passes, so too passes this law after it is “filled to the full.” So the law passes away; the same law they claim is eternal. Also, if this is all about

the legalities of the law being inviolate down to jots and tittles, what about the context of the same chapter where Jesus proceeds to alter points of that law way beyond jots and tittles, and even negating points of that law?

<http://asbereansdid.blogspot.com/2010/06/chapter-5-methodology-of-truth.html>

BIBLICAL BARRIER: The Torah Was To Be Temporary

As we demonstrated earlier, a careful analysis of Moses' account of the events of the 7th day of Creation in Hebrew shows that he went out of his way to indicate to his Hebrew readers that the recurring Sabbath rest did not start in Eden. We have also seen strong evidence that God communicated concepts to Israel in the context of their own cultural familiarity. The Ten Commandments were modeled after the treaties of their neighboring countries with a ceremonial component in the middle. The best evidence available to date is that the "Sabbath" concept was originally a Heathen idea based on the four phases of the Moon and fertility rites that God took, cleansed of its Heathen connotations, and presented to Israel fully redeemed and cleansed, and newly identified with the seven days of Creation Week as both a remembrance of God's creative power and a reminder that He had brought them out of Egyptian slavery.

Moses stated that the Covenant, which contained the new ceremonial weekly Sabbath, was not given before Sinai: Their fathers prior to Egypt did not keep the Sabbath: Deut. 5:2-3:

The Lord our God made a covenant with us at Horeb. The Lord did not make this covenant with our fathers, but with us, with all those of us alive here today.

God gave them the Sabbath law at Sinai. He did not remind them about it: Nehemiah 9:13-14:

You came down also on Mount Sinai, and spoke with them from heaven, and gave them just ordinances and true laws, good statutes and commandments. You made known to them Your holy Sabbath, and commanded them precepts, statutes and laws, by the hand of Moses Your servant.

It is clear that the Sabbath command did not exist before the Exodus.

In other chapters we will study more about the temporary nature of the TORAH. Colossians 2:14-17 tells us when the reign of TORAH law ended.

CHAPTER FIVE
THE EXODUS JOURNEY

THE EXODUS JOURNEY

From The Land Of Goshen To The Mountain Of The Moon

The Hebrews did not rest on the Sabbath prior to its introduction and the manna Sabbath “test.”

The Hebrews left Egypt on a Thursday night, marching and camping for a total of 38 days before they kept their first Sabbath, treating all the previous days of their journey the same in regard to travel and work. One week before observing the first Sabbath ever kept, they marched 20 kilometers from their camp by the Red Sea to the edge of the Wilderness of Sin, trampling on the 7th day of their week, arriving around 5 pm on the 31st day of their journey late that “Saturday” afternoon. That evening, God introduced the Manna Obedience Test to Israel, instructing them to gather daily an amount sufficient for their needs for one day, and that on the sixth day they were to gather a double portion in order to provide them with manna on the Sabbath, seeing as there would be none provided on that day. Critical thinking suggests that you cannot keep the Sabbath holy without having a preparation day before it. All work has to be completed before sundown on the 6th day.

Sabbatarian apologist, Brendan Knudson raises the following objections, which can currently (as of February 2015) be found at the Adventist Defense League's website:

KNUDSON – The Ox Was In The Ditch. In Bible, Jesus pointed out that the Jews believed that it was OK to pull an ox out of a ditch on the Sabbath, and Jesus seemed OK with this principle (summarization).

There are two problems with this rationalization. First, if the Sabbath were a “moral” issue, He could not possibly make an exception. For example, in a pinch, God would not allow adultery or murder under any circumstances. Second, God controls everything. No one can interfere with His will. God could easily have forced events to take place in such a way as to have the Hebrews leave after sundown on “Saturday” and to control the Egyptian chase with divine intervention that would allow for proper Sabbath-keeping, including a necessary preparation day on “Friday.”

KNUDSON – The idea that God forced the Hebrews to break the Sabbath is dependent on the assumption that the Hebrews were using a “solar” calendar in which each month was 28 days in length.

Until the history of the world moved up to the time of the civilizations of Babylon and Assyria, the only method of time keeping humans understood was that of the lunar calendar. The case for the universal use of lunar calendars prior to the time of the Babylonians and Assyrians is very strong, and later we present both evidence for and against this claim. (Reader's please withhold your judgment until you see our research on this subject presented in a later chapter.) The lunar month varied by up to several days in length with the extra days essentially discarded. The Egyptians, like all known civilizations at the time, used a lunar calendar. By the lunar calendar, the Exodus began on what we would call “Friday night,” and it is clear from Moses' account of the Exodus that the Hebrews marched the next day, which we would call “Saturday.”

KNUDSON – There is not enough detail in Moses' account of the Exodus journey to preclude the probability that Israel rested on every Sabbath between the Land of Goshen and their arrival at Mt. Sinai. The exact route and the location of Mt. Sinai are not known, so it is impossible to know for certain that Israel traveled on any Sabbath day en route.

This assertion is simply not true. Enough detail is given in the account to know for certain that Israel traveled on the Sabbath days. The giving of the Law from Mt. Sinai took place on the High Sabbath of the lunar calendar. At the time the Hebrews were slaves in Egypt, the Egyptians utilized a Sabbath system based on the four phases of the Moon and which was characterized by superstitious concerns and fertility concepts. (Again, documentation for this fact is available in a later section of this book.) Much more is known about the Exodus route than either Sabbatarians or higher critics (skeptics) would like to admit. The conservative biblical researcher, Steve Rudd, of Bible.CA has done an in-depth study of the Exodus route as its correlation with the lunar calendar. To see his work go to Bible.CA and review it. We will cover these things in greater detail later.

The Exodus journey has been considered a barrier to Sabbatarianism for at least several hundred years. A theologian characterized by Cox as “pious and profoundly learned”, Joseph Mede (d. 1638), developed evidence that the Israelites did not keep the Sabbath on their way from the Dead Sea crossing to the camp at the Wilderness of Sin. Here is what he said, quoted by Cox in *The Literature of the Sabbath Question, Vol. I*, pages 155-156. Keep in mind, for the moment, that the entire context of Mede's comments is an argument that the Christians are obligated to keep one day out of seven, since he

believed the Sabbath was probably "re-set" to the day the Hebrews marched out of Egypt at the time of the Exodus. However, we are mostly interested in Mede's analysis of the time and events of the journey from the Red Sea to Mt. Sinai that proves that the Israelites did not keep the Sabbath during the first 31 days of their journey:

Certain I am the Jews kept not that day for a Sabbath till the raining of manna. For that which should have been their Sabbath the week before, had they then kept the day which afterward they kept, was the fifteenth day of the second month, and which day we read in the 16th of Exodus, that they marched a wearisome march, and came at night unto the wilderness of Sin, where they murmured for their poor entertainment, and wished they had died in Egypt. That night the Lord sent them quails; the next morning it rained manna, which was the sixteenth day, and so six days together; the seventh, which was the twenty-second day, it rained none, and that day they were commanded to keep for their Sabbath. Now, if the twenty-second day of the month were the Sabbath, the fifteenth should have been, if that day had been kept before; but the text tells us expressly they marched that day; and, which is strange, the day of the month is never named, unless it be once, for any station but this where the Sabbath was ordained, otherwise it could not have been known that that day was ordained for a day of rest, which before was none. And why might not their day of holy rest be altered as well as the beginning of the year was (Exodus xii.2), for a memorial of their coming out of Egypt? I can see no reason why it might not, nor find any testimony to assure me it was not."

Cox comments that if this argument is sound, it endangers the idea that the Sabbath was a Creation ordinance. To his credit, Cox demonstrates his commitment to balanced reporting by mentioning that an opponent of Mede by the name of Stopford (*Scripture Account of the Sabbath*, Section X) had challenged the validity of one element of Mede's day and time calculations— a point which was non-essential to demonstrate that the Hebrews did not keep the Sabbath weeks into the Exodus journey. Paraphrasing Stopford, Cox says of Mede's position:

He [Stopford] contends that Mede (with whom Heylyn and Bramhall agree) mistakes in supposing that quails were sent on the evening of the fifteenth day, and manna the next morning.

When studying excerpts like this, context is critical. In the next passage from Cox, the setting for his comment (that Mede might be totally mistaken) is in reference to Mede's belief that because the Sabbath was given at Creation Week, but "re-set" at the time of the Exodus, Christians are morally obligated to rest one day out of every seven days and that which day of the week they rest on is not important. Cox is not saying that Mede's theory that Israel did not keep the Sabbath on the way from the Red Sea to Mt. Sinai is wrong, and he did not necessarily agree with him that the Sabbath was given at Creation Week:

But there is a more vital question, the decision of which in the negative might leave the whole reasoning of Mede without any foundation whatever. Is it allowable to assume that Moses, professing to repeat to the Israelites the laws inscribed on the tables of stone, omitted a part of the Fourth Commandment there written, and substituted something else in its place; expressly telling them at the conclusion of the ten, that the words just repeated were those which the Lord had spoken to them in the mount— to which He had there "added no more"— and which He had written on the tables of stone and delivered to Moses? (See Deut. v.22.) **In considering this question, it will not be overlooked by the careful student of the chapter [Exodus 16], that what it records is not a repetition of the Sabbath-law, in the sense of its re-enactment or re-imposition, but a retrospective narrative, orally given by Moses, of its enactment on the sole occasion at Sinai, in which narrative he included a historical repetition of the Ten Commandments which had been then and there proclaimed.** [Emphasis supplied].

While it is interesting to know what kind of information was available to Adventist leaders regarding the keeping of the Sabbath during this part of the Exodus journey in the past, it is enlightening to know what is available to them now. A number of exhaustive studies have been done by modern scholars who have more information about Hebrew culture and better analytical tools than ever before. Calculations done by the staff at **Bible.Ca** conclusively demonstrate the non-observance of any Sabbath for the first few weeks of their Exodus journey. The Hebrews left Goshen in Egypt on Nissan 14, a Thursday, and a Passover, and arrived at the Wilderness of Sin 31 days later on a "Saturday" evening about 5 pm. That evening, God explained the Manna Obedience Test, and the Manna fell the next morning—a "Sunday". It wasn't until the following "Friday" that God gave them the Sabbath Obedience Test. He explained the Sabbath along with instructions for gathering twice the normal amount of Manna that evening. Therefore, the first Sabbath ever kept in the history of the world was observed on the 38th day after the Hebrews left Egypt.

Since they did not arrive at the Wilderness of Sin until late Saturday afternoon, they marched on the seventh day of that week, the week before the first Sabbath was observed. No wonder the Jews have never believed that the Sabbath was a Creation ordinance! These calculations can be made with only a moderate level of knowledge about Hebrew history, culture, and calendars. These facts are especially compelling because the Hebrew people were led directly by God to treat all days the same for the first five weeks of their journey.

Before Mt. Sinai, the Sabbath represented nothing more than the second of two obedience tests. It was not until a few weeks later when, at Mt. Sinai, the Sabbath was incorporated into the treaty between God and Israel known as the 10 Commandments. Like the ordinance of circumcision and the Jewish dietary laws, the institution of the Sabbath was designed to set the Hebrews apart from every other society, forming a protective social barrier that would severely restrict their interaction with the Heathen. Regarding these cultic Jewish rituals, a scholar once observed that people who do not eat together seldom become friends.

If the Sabbath were a Creation ordinance with truly moralistic qualities, God would not have led His children out of Egypt without provision for keeping it every step of the way. Once, because of their sins, God seems to have threatened to take Israel's Sabbaths away.

Hosea 2:11 (NIV) - ¹¹ I will stop all her celebrations: her yearly festivals, her New Moons, her Sabbath days—all her appointed feasts.

There is some evidence that this text merely represents a prophecy of what would become of Israel's Sabbath system as a result of their disobedience, rather than an actual statement that God would specially intervene to take away their Sabbaths. During their various captivities, Israel undoubtedly experienced disruptions of their Sabbath-keeping. In either case, the adoption of the fixed calendar by their conquering nations around the time of the building of the second temple may have made it very difficult to keep the Sabbath as is was intended in the Law of Moses. In effect, they were forced to keep "Saturday" rather than the "Sabbath." All of this Sabbath chaos illustrates the fact that the Sabbath is characteristically ceremonial rather than moralistic. For example, if Israel was committing adultery and fornication "too much," God would not suspend the parts of the Law of Moses that forbid these sins. Not even God Himself can set aside or suspend moralistic laws because such laws are based on the natural laws of cause and effect.

Before the Hebrews left Egypt, the instructions God gave them regarding the keeping of the Passover Feast suggest that no Sabbath existed at that time. This feast was to last seven days, so whether a fixed or lunar calendar is used for our calculations, one of those days would have to have been a Sabbath – if there had been a Sabbath in existence at that time. The preparation of food was allowed on all of the seven days of the Passover feast. By contrast, cooking on the Sabbath was forbidden. For the Sabbath, the cooking must be done on the Preparation Day, or the sixth day of the week. If there was no sixth day of preparation, there could be no seventh-day Sabbath because food would have to be prepared for the people on it. While permission to prepare food on the Sabbath may have been granted in connection with some of the Jewish feast celebrations that God added later, the only national feast week God had given them up to the time of the Exodus was the Passover.

As our study unfolds it will become painfully clear that Exodus 16 provides water-tight proof – not merely evidence – that no Sabbath existed before the giving of the Manna. We do not use the term, proof, loosely. What this fact means is that any argument for the existence of the Sabbath prior to the Exodus must be remarkably clear, or it is hardly worth discussing. Also, any pro-Sabbatarian arguments must be able to stand on their own with evidence gathered only from Genesis 1 through Exodus 16. In view of the absolutes of Exodus 16, Sabbatarians should not expect to be taken seriously if their approach involves taking references to the Sabbath from beyond the account of the Exodus journey and stuffing them back into Genesis 2. In order for them to provide meaningful support for their agenda, they must demonstrate clear Sabbath content in Genesis 2.

All it takes is a brief survey of Genesis through Exodus 16 to see that there is nothing of this sort available to Sabbatarians. At the same time, there is only a limited amount of evidence available to anti-Sabbatarians, such as the four of us, to actually prove that there is no Sabbath content in Genesis. This evidence is found in part in that Moses used special literary devices to limit the blessing, hallowing, and sanctifying (the setting aside) of that day to that ONE day ALONE. We will explain these indicators and how they work subsequently. Meanwhile, let us turn our attention back to the Exodus journey.

God introduced the Sabbath to Israel as something new. The people acted as if it were something new – a stiff-necked and stubborn people testing the boundaries. Some individuals gathered firewood on that first Sabbath. They did so publicly. If the Sabbath had existed prior to Exodus 16, these offenders would have been stoned. The stubborn nature of the Hebrew people strongly suggests that if there were Sabbaths before Exodus 16, some of them would have tested God by breaking the Sabbath every chance they got; yet there is no record that God ever rebuked them for Sabbath-breaking prior to Exodus 16. Here is what the Law of Moses has to say about Sabbath-breaking:

Numbers 15:32 - 36 (NIV) ³²While the Israelites were in the desert, a man was found gathering wood on the Sabbath day. ³³Those who found him gathering wood brought him to Moses and Aaron and the whole assembly, ³⁴and they kept him in custody, because it was not clear what should be done to him. ³⁵Then the LORD said to Moses, “The man must die. The whole assembly must stone him outside the camp.” ³⁶So the assembly took him outside the camp and stoned him to death, as the LORD commanded Moses.

COMMANDMENTISM'S PARADOX: JESUS A LAW-BREAKER?

Think how bad the Exodus journey would make God look if the Sabbath had originated at Creation! Was He not powerful enough to control the events of the Exodus to provide for Sabbath-keeping, including, in each case, a Preparation Day? What kind of example would He have set for His people? Do God's children have to keep the Sabbath only when it is convenient? The Law of God existed before the Ten Commandments. During or before the age of Noah, God loosely codified these laws in what the Jews refer to as the **Noachidæ Laws**. As we will demonstrate later, these laws governed the entire human race, but they did not include a Sabbath commandment.

Everything we know about God's character screams out that He would not lead His people to break an eternally binding moralistic law. This fact explains several mysterious things that honest-at-heart, thinking Sabbatharians have secretly pondered. Why is there no mention of the Sabbath in Genesis? Why did God give Abraham a surgical procedure (circumcision) as a “seal” for his descendants instead of the Sabbath, which was never even mentioned? Why was Sabbath-keeping not included in a list of basic laws that God gave to Noah around the time of the Great Flood? Why did St. Paul instruct the early church not to require Sabbath-keeping of the new Gentile converts (Colossians 2:14-17)? And why did St. Paul not list Sabbath-breaking in any of the several lists of sins he discussed in his writings? In Galatians, St. Paul discusses the Christian's freedom from the “LAW,” and it is clear he is discussing moralistic, rather than ceremonial, laws because the example he cited was adultery. Yet in the same breath he explained that the Christian is not subject to the LAW, he gave a list of 15 sins that he said would keep a person from entering Heaven. Robert K. Sanders observes that in Romans 1:28-32 he listed 16 sins that were not mentioned in Galatians 5 and that he listed still more sins in Ephesians 4:25-32 – and that in all of these lists there is not a single mention of Sabbath-breaking. With all the sins that Paul's writings mention – which included sins of motive and omission in addition to the sins of commission that are the focus of the Decalogue – it is difficult to imagine how an objective Bible student could think that the 10 Commandments could be equated with “God's Law”. Jesus gave us additional spiritual “laws” in the Sermon on the Mount. St. Paul would be a blasphemer if he, as a mere human being, were to presume to add anything to God's Law.

There is no intellectually honest way to get around this fact. There were several occasions when either Jesus or His disciples broke the Sabbath. You can read about two of them in Matthew 12. On one particular Sabbath day, His disciples harvested grain as they walked through a field. Then they went to the synagogue where Jesus healed the man who had a withered hand. In neither case did Jesus deny that they were not really working. In John 5, Jesus healed an invalid at a pool on the Sabbath and was again accused of Sabbath-breaking. Note that John could have said that the Pharisees planned to kill Jesus because they **thought** He was breaking the Sabbath, but he chose to state that they were trying to kill Him **because** He had broken the Sabbath. Moreover, it appears that John worded his statement to reflect his own analysis:

John 5:16 (NIV) - So, because Jesus was doing these things on the Sabbath, the Jewish leaders began to persecute him. ¹⁷ In his defense Jesus said to them, “My Father is always at his work to this very day, and I too am working.” ¹⁸ For this reason they tried all the more to kill him; not only was he breaking the Sabbath, but he was even calling God his own Father, making himself equal with God.

CHAPTER SIX
THE SABBATH: A NON-ISSUE AT
THE WORLDWIDE CHURCH COUNCILS

By Larry Dean, J.D.

THE SABBATH: A NON-ISSUE AT THE WORLDWIDE CHURCH COUNCILS

By Larry Dean, J.D.

As we have said before, Ellen White's plagiarism is far from being her greatest sin. In fact, we may be the first who have bravely argued that she should have plagiarized **more**. In other chapters we have demonstrated that her sins of plagiaristic omission were at least as bad as her sins of commission. We thought we had seen it all when we caught her, red-handed, deliberately choosing not to plagiarize information about the Noahide laws and the Reformer's unequivocal-rejection of Sabbath-Keeping on **solā scriptura** grounds. Of course these are two things that we think Adventist members would find to be very interesting. But we were wrong. There was more serious plagiaristic omission to be uncovered.

One of White's great prevarications of history was her characterization of the early "worldwide" church councils— the Great Councils. All her available sources would have contained information that told her that there was no justification for presenting this amazingly untrue statement:

The arch deceiver had not completed his work. He was resolved to gather the Christian world under his banner and to exercise his power through his vicegerent, the proud pontiff who claimed to be the representative of Christ. Through half-converted pagans, ambitious prelates, and world-loving churchmen he accomplished his purpose. Vast councils were held from time to time, in which the dignitaries of the church were convened from all the world. In nearly every council the Sabbath which God had instituted was pressed down a little lower, while the Sunday was correspondingly exalted. *The Great Controversy*, P. 53

<http://text.egwwritings.org/publication.php?pubtype=Book&bookCode=GC&lang=en&pagenumber=53>

There are so many levels of outright deception in that statement, it is hard to know where to begin. We will begin with the fact that **none** of the Great Church Councils generally defined as the first Seven "Ecumenical Councils" **ever** discussed the Sabbath, or issued any new canon law on the issue for the first 800 years of Christianity. The Seven "Ecumenical Councils" are the only ones that remotely fit White's "worldwide" or "vast" descriptions, since the Christian church went through the Great Schism in 1054 AD, when Eastern and Western Christianity divorced for good. This is, incidentally, a fact of massive historical significance that is mentioned **nowhere** in White's writings. A comprehensive collection of the rulings of these Ecumenical Councils - known as "canons" - can be found here:

<http://www.intratext.com/X/ENG0835.HTM>

We spent many hours poring over the minutest details of the voluminous number of canon laws generated by those Councils. They covered every possible issue confronting the early church. ***The Sabbath is nowhere mentioned.*** Aside from a regional synod held in Laodicea in 365 AD, in what is now known as modern Turkey, only one of the other minor regional synods discussed the Sabbath. That was a minor regional Roman Catholic synod held in Toledo, Spain after the Great Schism, that governed **only** Western Christianity. The Synod of Laodicea has achieved near-mythical status among Seventh Day Adventists. The fact that it has such a status indicates a profound misconception of that synod's role, jurisdiction and scope of influence. We will discuss it later in this chapter.

That NONE of the Ecumenical Councils discussed the Sabbath, or issued canons on the subject, strongly indicates that there simply was no controversy on the subject. It suggests, instead, that Christians had abandoned Sabbath-keeping immediately after the Resurrection, which is the avowed position of the 300 million member Eastern Orthodox Church. Adventist leadership has been aware of Eastern Christianity's unequivocal-position on this issue since no later than 1915, and has never acknowledged that fact; let alone addressed the contention; let alone disputed the Eastern Church's contention; let alone refuted it. They simply ignored it all. Ellen White simply **never** mentions the Eastern half of the church anywhere in her voluminous writings on the Sabbath.

Strange, isn't it?

The Ecumenical Councils were focused on major doctrinal heresies that ranged from the Divinity of Christ to the Trinity, which were covered at the First Council of Nice in 325; to the Second Council of Nice that met in AD 787, which resolved the nagging issue of Icons versus Iconoclasm (images in the church) dispute with finality. The Sabbath was simply of no importance in any of the Great Councils. There literally was no interest expressed on the issue of Sabbath versus Sunday. It

was never mentioned! The history of the Councils— whether you review the actual canons of the Councils or eminent Protestant Historian Philip Schaff's, detailed and voluminous historical analysis— demonstrates a complete absence of any evidence that the Sabbath was **ever** discussed at any of the Councils, even in passing. Schaff's historical masterpiece can be found and downloaded free here:

<http://www.ccel.org/ccel/schaff/npnf214.html>

Schaff never mentions anything about any of the “vast” “worldwide” church councils discussing the Sabbath. We are left with the abiding conviction that Ellen White's description in the **Great Controversy** of these events is nothing short of a calculated, highly-intentional deception. In fact, early on in his analysis, Schaff joins with the Eastern Christian Church's assertion that Sunday worship commenced immediately at, or immediately after, the Resurrection. With the major deception within White's description now clearly established, we can unpack her statement and examine the rest of the numerous levels of intentional deception contained therein.

All of the first seven Church Councils were held in the Eastern half of Christendom. That makes sense, since the capital of the Roman Empire was in Constantinople (now modern-day Istanbul, the capital of Turkey) from approximately 330 AD until 1204 AD. As Rome's capital, Constantinople was Europe's largest and wealthiest city and was instrumental in the advancement of Christianity. The first seven councils were all held in what is now modern-day Turkey. **NONE** of them were held in Rome, or anywhere in what was known as Western Christendom:

First Council of Nicaea (325) (held at a mere “bedroom community” of Constantinople, near the modern-day city of Iznik in Turkey).

First Council of Constantinople (381) (present day capital city of Turkey, now known as Istanbul)

Council of Ephesus (431) (located about 200 miles south of modern-day Istanbul, on the shore of the Black Sea)

Council of Chalcedon (451) (located about 30 miles across the Bosphorus via ferry from Istanbul, yet still considered to be part of modern-day “metro” Istanbul)

Second Council of Constantinople (553)

Third Council of Constantinople (680)

Second Council of Nicaea (787)

The fact that ALL of the first seven Church Councils were held in what is now the modern-day Republic of Turkey; and NONE of them were held in Rome or anywhere near the territories of Western Christianity demonstrates the primacy of the Eastern Church, **which White never mentions anywhere in her writings.** A modern-day traveler in Turkey will be shocked by the close proximity of all of the cities in Turkey where these “worldwide” Councils were held. As the crow flies the distance between Ephesus (the southernmost Turkish city where a “worldwide” Council was held); and Chalcedon (the Northernmost “worldwide” council city); is less than 300 miles! It can be easily driven in a day's time, with plenty of time to stop and loiter at each one of them. In fact, Nicaea (where two of the Councils were held) is nothing more important than a mere suburb of Constantinople. By contrast, Rome is 853 miles from Constantinople (modern-day Istanbul), most of which is over water. Geography alone proves the overwhelming dominance of the Eastern Church at the seven “worldwide” Church Councils. The Eastern Church dictated the place and subjects to be resolved in the major councils, and convened the counsels exclusively in Eastern cities. Last but not least, the infamous (to Adventists) but obscure (to everyone else) Synod of Laodicea was held in a city that is located near Denizli in modern-day Turkey. Denizli is reached via a winding seven-hour drive from Istanbul, over two mountain passes. It's Far East location says a lot about the subjects it actually discussed.

It turns out that the “pope” was conspicuous by his absence at all seven “worldwide” Councils. Here's why:

["The Papacy had laid claim sporadically to the primacy of Christendom in earlier centuries \[than the fifth century\], but these claims had either been denied or ignored by those to whom they had been addressed. ... In the East \[the Popes\] were confronted by a theory of Church government which had a place for episcopal authority, but none for Roman Primacy." \(W.H.C. Frend, *The Early Church*, pp. 233, 235\)](#)

The complete dominance of Eastern Christianity and Rome's secondary role is demonstrated by the following brief descriptions of the seven Ecumenical ("worldwide") Councils:

- 1). The pope was completely absent from the **First Council of Nicea** (but sent some priests as legates). Both the controversy and the ultimate resolution of the controversy regarding the Divinity of Christ emanated from Alexandria, Egypt. The two antagonists were from Alexandria: Arius and Athanasius. Hence "Arianism" was declared to be a heresy, and Arius was condemned and excommunicated.
- 2). The pope was completely absent from the **First Council of Constantinople**, and did not bother sending a legate to represent Rome.
- 3). **The Council of Ephesus** (the Third Council) resolved a dispute where the main players were from Constantinople and Alexandria. The Pope sent a legate, but was not personally-present.
- 4). The **Council of Chalcedon** (the Fourth Council) once again featured an absence of the pope, who gave the convening of this important Council only his "reluctant approval." He did not bother to send his legate, let alone attend in person.
- 5). The **Second Council of Constantinople** (the Fifth Council) featured yet another nadir of papal power: not only did the pope not attend; he did not send legates; and furthermore refused to participate in the proceedings.
- 6). At the **Third Council of Constantinople** (the Sixth Ecumenical Council), papal influence over the Council reached an all-time low-point: the Pope, who did not personally attend the council, was charged and convicted of high treason *in Absentia*, and he was accordingly arrested, tried, condemned and sent into exile, where he soon died.
- 7). Pope Adrian 1 was invited to participate in the **Second Council of Nicea** (the Seventh Ecumenical Council), and gladly accepted. Once again, the pope sent legates to represent himself, an archbishop and an abbot. That was the last "worldwide" church council that would have fit Ellen White's description. Western and Eastern Christianity permanently split apart in the Great Schism, about 300 years after this last "vast" "worldwide" Council. Ironically, this Council focused on Icons. The Eastern Church still has them. The Roman Church's art form has evolved dramatically, and Rome no longer practices the introspective and mystical Byzantine iconography that was resolved at this Council.

Ellen's description of the first Seven Ecumenical Councils is a disturbing, vast tissue of fraud and carefully-concocted lies. None of the Councils were held anywhere near Western Europe. All of them were held in Modern Day Turkey, within 300 miles of each other. At none of them was the Pope personally present, let alone dominating the procedure. All of the Councils were presided over by Eastern bishops. They resolved issues that were rocking the Eastern Church. The pope sent legates to represent Rome at four of them. Two of them he did not participate in at all, and could not be bothered apparently to make an appearance via representatives. At one of them, a warrant for the pope's arrest was issued and that Pope was arrested and died, disgraced in exile. Most importantly, at none of them was the Sabbath mentioned, **even as a passing afterthought**. There simply was no controversy about the Sabbath that was worth discussing at a major council. It would have been a waste of time. That issue had been settled long ago, at the AD 50 Council of Jerusalem.

What REALLY Happened at Laodicea?

We turn next to Laodicea, which is located about seven hours of exhausting driving East from modern-day Istanbul, in modern-day Turkey. In Adventist lore, the Synod of Laodicea takes on immense and ominous importance. In reality, it was a small, obscure regional meeting where the Sabbath was discussed in passing. That it was discussed at all was a rather shocking variation from normal council practice, as has been demonstrated previously. A canon on the subject was issued. It was not one of the central themes of discussion among the delegates. Significantly, NONE of Laodicea's canons were adopted by the "worldwide" church, including the one on the Sabbath. This is another detail that Adventists do not comprehend. Any new canon that was issued by the councils had to be accepted by the local churches. The canons adopted by Laodicea were never adopted by the entire Christian church. They couldn't have been! They dealt mainly with

practice and behavior at the Eastern Divine Liturgy and said nothing about the Roman Latin Mass. Still, history is completely silent on any members of the church protesting Christianity's abandonment of the Sabbath, before or after this Synod. Ancient Sabbatarians left no written records, nor is any such protest group mentioned by any of the church historians. Nobody from Rome was in attendance at Laodicea. The attending bishops were all from the Eastern Churches. Church canons, which were the "work product" of the Christian councils, were listed in descending order of importance. The Canon No. 29, which generates delicious shudders of horror in all good Adventists, reads as follows:

[Christians must not Judaize by resting on the Sabbath, but must work on that day, rather than honoring the Lord's Day; and, if they can, resting then as Christians. But if any shall be found to be Judaizers, let them be anathema from Christ.](#)

<http://www.newadvent.org/fathers/3806.htm>

First and foremost, we have been unable to find a single instance where a Sabbath-keeper was anathematized for keeping the Sabbath. We are not saying it never happened. We just cannot find a case that substantiates that one did. That is probably because at this time and place, nobody would have dreamed of keeping the Sabbath, as it had fallen so completely into disuse. In order of importance, the Laodicean Canon #29 that condemns Sabbath-keeping pales in importance after a number of seemingly trivial canons that continue to carefully govern the conduct of participants in the Divine Liturgy to this very day, which is Eastern Christianity's equivalent of the Latin Mass.

Adventism's misconceptions about the place of the Sabbath in the deliberations at Laodicea are grounded in its studied-ignorance of the Eucharist. The Divine Liturgy consecrates the Eucharist. So the procedures of the Divine Liturgy were plainly the main topic of discussion at Laodicea, with the overwhelming number of Canons focusing on the subject. Things that were resolved at the Synod that have far more importance than the Sabbath include describing where the canonical singers are allowed to stand and sing during the Divine Liturgy (Canon #15); prohibiting back-to-back reading of the Psalms without intervening commentary (Canon #17); the timing of the prayers for catechumens (those studying for baptism) (Canon #19); prohibiting the deacon from sitting down in the presence of the Priest (Canon #20); prohibiting the sub-Deacon from touching the Eucharistic chalice (Canon #21); describing the clothing appropriate for chanters (Canon #23).

Adventists just don't "get" the Eucharist. It is impossible to fully-understand what the councils were up to unless one does. Nowhere in Ellen White's writings does one get the impression that she had the foggiest understanding of the Eucharist's place of primacy, which was really second to none in the first thousand years of Christianity. Nothing else really mattered, compared to the Eucharist. Ellen White's obvious ignorance about the Eucharist has catastrophic implications against the fulfillment of her scary prophecy about a National Sunday Law, as we have discussed elsewhere.

Minuscule rules regarding the most obscure parts of the Divine Liturgy (the Eastern "Mass") were more important in the deliberations of this obscure regional synod than was the Sabbath. Notably, most of the Canons applied only to the Divine Liturgy and NONE of them governed similar ritualistic conduct of the analogous Western Mass. Laodicea's canons could not have been accepted by the worldwide church, given its focus on the Divine Liturgy. Rome wasn't there, so the Catholic Mass was not discussed. It is obvious that the Laodicean Synod chiefly-governed internal conduct of the Divine Liturgy in the Eastern Churches, since only about 30 Eastern Bishops attended this obscure and remote meeting. It was held in the remotest, far eastern parts of Eastern Christendom, far away from the population centers around Constantinople, Ephesus, Chalcedon and Nicea. It was held in the backwaters of what the Bible calls "Asia Minor." This was a synod held out in the boondocks. One cannot help but be struck by the thought that Canon #29 was included as a trivial afterthought, likely without any debate or dissent. It was nothing more than a "throwaway line" passed thoughtlessly and without debate. The issue was delegated to a regional synod because it was too trivial to be discussed at one of the "Great Councils." Those Councils were reserved for the resolution of important heresies.

Another theory on why the Synod of Laodicea had this trivial discussion on the Sabbath in the first place was the widespread fear of Christians that their faith was be diluted if they participated in Jewish events and festivals. This fear was mixed by a healthy dollop of outright antisemitism. These fears and prejudices were articulated most famously by the celebrated Bishop of Constantinople, John Chrysostom, who was both the writer of the Eastern Orthodox Divine Liturgy and famously anti-semitic. Chrysostom was a considerably-gifted polemicist and rhetorician ("Chrysostom" is Greek for "Golden Mouth"), who was exiled a number of times by the emperor for his inflammatory and intemperate attacks on the empress. Christians attending Jewish festivals and ceremonies was one of his pet peeves:

The festivals of the pitiful and miserable Jews are soon to march upon us one after the other and in quick succession: the feast of Trumpets, the feast of Tabernacles, the fasts. There are many in our ranks who say they think as we do. Yet some of these are going to watch the festivals and others will join the Jews in keeping their feasts and observing their fasts. I wish to drive this perverse custom from the Church right now. My homilies against the Anomians can be put off to another time, and the postponement would cause no harm. But now that the Jewish festivals are close by and at the very door, if I should fail to cure those who are sick with the Judaizing disease. I am afraid that, because of their ill-suited association and deep ignorance, some Christians may partake in the Jews' transgressions; once they have done so, I fear my homilies on these transgressions will be in vain. For if they hear no word from me today, they will then join the Jews in their fasts; once they have committed this sin it will be useless for me to apply the remedy.

.....

Nothing is more miserable than those people who never failed to attack their own salvation. When there was need to observe the Law, they trampled it underfoot. Now that the Law has ceased to bind, they obstinately strive to observe it. What could be more pitiable than those who provoke God not only by transgressing the Law but also by keeping it?

<http://www.ccjr.us/dialogika-resources/primary-texts-from-the-history-of-the-relationship/247-chrysostom>

These things must be put in the context of the hostility which Jews themselves had against Christians and the fact that the Christian Fathers found abhorrent the rejection of the Messiah by the Jews. St. John's [Chrysostom's] statements are expressions of theological and "ideological" (if I may use this somewhat inappropriate modern term) outrage, and not of racism.

<http://orthodoxinfo.com/phronema/antisemitism.aspx>

For the early Christians, Sabbath-keeping represented nothing short of fraternizing with the enemies of Jesus Christ.

Finally, Canon #60 notes an earlier (and incomplete) version of the Biblical canon. The evolution of the Biblical canon was mentioned in all of the major Church Councils until the canon was finally closed in 396 AD. Understandably for Adventists, Laodicea's denunciation of Sabbath-keeping was far more important than its note on the evolving choices of the inspired books that would eventually compile the Bible.

In an irony of notable magnitude, Ellen White and her followers believe that the "vast," "worldwide" church councils' decisions regarding which books belong in the Canon were 100% inspired and accurate, while at the same time everything ELSE these Councils did was corrupt and manipulated by the papacy!

Ellen White's description of the first 7 Ecumenical Councils is nothing but a vast web of lies and a transparent tissue of fraud. At none of those "worldwide" Councils was the pope present. At none of them was the Sabbath discussed, even in passing. The Sabbath was simply not even a minor issue at any of them, which lends strong support to Eastern Orthodoxy and Protestant historian Philip Schaff's contention that Sunday worship commenced on Resurrection morning. Careful reading demonstrates that the Great Councils were focused on the Eucharist. It was the sacrament that obsessed the councils— not the Sabbath. The inference is overwhelming that any question about the Sabbath was resolved once and for all with finality at the AD 50 Council of Jerusalem, described in Acts 15. The regional Synod of Laodicea; which does not even rise to the level of being called a "Council," — let alone a "vast" one, let alone a "worldwide" one — focused primarily on minute details of rituals involved in the Eastern Church's Divine Liturgy. The details about how the Eucharist was to be consecrated in the Divine Liturgy dominated the Synod's discussion. The Sabbath was of less importance in the grand scheme of things, than was the spot where the chanters were to stand, or what they were to wear during the Divine Liturgy, or whether a Deacon could sit down in the presence of a Priest.

If you are not angry about the depths of Ellen White's dishonesty in her description of these Church Councils, you should be. What kind of a person would tell such obvious lies, with so much malice aforethought to people she must have known were mostly illiterate and uneducated, at a time when the truth was buried in stacks of dusty books at the local library? Telling such lies to farmers and other hard-working folk who had little, or no access to libraries and could not read even if they did represents a cynical and high-handed intent to take advantage of them by any means necessary.

When the entire subject is analyzed in all of its relevant aspects, it is simply startling that Ellen White cynically-resurrected Sabbath-keeping (the Judaizing Heresy) as a mere tool to exploit the unwary and the illiterate. And she did it by dishonestly

smearing the brave Christians who were brutally tortured for their faith and slaughtered at the hands of the Roman Empire. Many of these tortured and maimed bishops were at the First Council of Nicea, still bearing visible signs of their grisly torture:

“...But we must admire those also who suffered martyrdom in their native land; where thousands of men, women, and children, despising the present life for the sake of the teaching of our Saviour, endured various deaths...numberless other kinds of tortures, terrible even to hear of, were committed to the flames; some were drowned in the sea; some offered their heads bravely to those who cut them off; some died under their tortures, and others perished with hunger. And yet others were crucified; some according to the method commonly employed for malefactors; others yet more cruelly, being nailed to the cross with their heads downward, and being kept alive until they perished on the cross with hunger.

It would be impossible to describe the outrages and tortures which the martyrs in Thebais enduredOthers being bound to the branches and trunks of trees perished. For they drew the stoutest branches together with machines, and bound the limbs of the martyrs to them; and then, allowing the branches to assume their natural position, they tore asunder instantly the limbs of those for whom they contrived this.

All these things were done, not for a few days or a short time, but for a long series of years. Sometimes more than ten, at other times above twenty were put to death...and yet again a hundred men with young children and women, were slain in one day, being condemned to various and diverse torments.

We, also being on the spot ourselves, have observed large crowds in one day; some suffering decapitation, others torture by fire; so that the murderous sword was blunted, and becoming weak, was broken, and the very executioners grew weary and relieved each other.” Eusebius HE VIII.8-9

After giving some further descriptions of torture, Eusebius then goes on to say that even some of the Romans were put off by the hideous nature of the torments:

Therefore it was commanded that our eyes should be put out, and that we should be maimed in one of our limbs. For such things were humane in their sight, and the lightest of punishments for us. So that now on account of this kindly treatment accorded us by the impious, it was impossible to tell the incalculable number of those whose right eyes had first been cut out with the sword, and then had been cauterized with fire; or who had been disabled in the left foot by burning the joints, and afterward condemned to the provincial copper mines, not so much for service as for distress and hardship. Besides all these, others encountered other trials, which it is impossible to recount; for their manly endurance surpasses all description.

In these conflicts the noble martyrs of Christ shone illustrious over the entire world...and the evidences of the truly divine and unspeakable power of our Saviour were made manifest through them. To mention each by name would be a long task, if not indeed impossible.” Eusebius, HE VIII.12.10-11

<http://www.churchhistory101.com/century4.php>

Many a brave bishop attended the First Council of Nicea, bearing visible signs of beastly, inhuman torture. Eyes poked out with red hot irons! Brandings and limb amputations. Gruesome evidence of intense suffering! Many of them had watched their wives and children tortured and murdered for the Faith. They were held in awe by the assembled delegates, and honored as “the Marked Ones.”

These incredibly brave people are the same ones Ellen White flippantly charged with corruption, cowardice and low character for supposedly abandoning the Sabbath. To the assembled bishops at the First Council of Nicea, these “Marked Ones” were rightfully seen as genuine heroes, that preserved the Faith through the worst of horrifying persecution. Such cases of incredible, selfless bravery seemed deific in its nobility and grace, as the great early Christian historian Eusebius has pointed out. Some of the awe-struck bishops must have rubbed their eyes and taken a second look at the “Marked Ones.”

There was something strange about them. There was a strange light emanating from some of them. The Trinity being discussed was not an idle, distant dry theory. It was the life living inside them, and their passionate arguments were bright video games of rhetoric that lit up the nighttime sky over Nicea. They were already halfway ascended between Heaven and Earth. They were lit up with the divine light that passes all human understanding. They exuded heavenly peace and love.

Some of the “Marked Ones” were no longer entirely human.

CHAPTER SEVEN
IGNORING EASTERN CHRISTIANITY
FOR 175 YEARS

By Larry Dean, J.D.

IGNORING EASTERN CHRISTIANITY FOR 175 YEARS

By Larry Dean, J.D.

NOTE: In this chapter, using your control (CTRL) key when clicking on a superscript footnote number may open up the corresponding website.

D. M. CANRIGHT “OWNS” ADVENTISM

Despite the best efforts of DM Canright, Ellen White's chief antagonist during her life-time, Ellen White persisted in teaching that Christians abandoned Sabbath-keeping as the result of papal apostasy and conspiracy. Among other things, she taught that Constantine, the Roman emperor, “changed the day” in 321 CE. Her *de facto* chief historian, J. N. Andrews, conceded in 1859 that Sunday observance was widespread by 100 CE and universal by 200 CE. If Ellen White had not claimed that God Himself validated the view that the Roman Catholic (Western) Church was responsible for “changing” the Sabbath, we might be able to excuse her on the basis that neither she nor Andrews were scholars. Apparently whoever told White that the Western Church did this did not know that the Capital of Rome - and thus the center of gravity of Christianity - was in Constantinople from 330 CE until 1204.¹ This very concession on the part of Andrews —that Sunday observance was virtually universal within 200 years of the Resurrection—made Ellen White's theory of the so-called “change” of the Sabbath historically impossible. Adventism's theories on when and how Christians adopted Sunday worship are based solely on what occurred, or did not occur; inside the limited confines of Ellen White's skull.

Ellen White's and J.N. Andrew's deficits as historians are exemplified by their glaring absence of knowledge about the Egyptian Orthodox (Coptic Church), The Armenian Apostolic Church, the Assyrian Church of the East, and the Malankara-Syrian Church of India. Neither White, nor Andrews nor Adventist theologian Samuele Bacchiocchi ever mention these four Apostolic churches. They never mentioned them, because **none of these churches ever kept the Sabbath.** All four churches have deep roots into the first century of Christianity, and were founded directly by one or more of the original 12 Apostles. Alternatively, the Adventists knew, and made a command decision to withhold the evidence of these Apostolic churches from Adventist membership. As we have demonstrated elsewhere, that was an unfortunate and repeated tendency of Ellen White.

Very early Christian writings indicate that the Apostle Thomas went to India as a missionary in 52 CE (two years after the Council of Jerusalem). He started what is now known as the Malankara-Syrian Oriental Orthodox Church.² The Armenian Apostolic Church claims that it was founded in ancient Persia by the Apostles Bartholomew and Thaddeus immediately after the Resurrection in 33 CE.^{3 4 5} The Assyrian Church of the East similarly claims the same apostles founded it in 33 CE Persia, although it uniquely claims the additional contributions of Peter and Matthew. The Assyrians formed the first Christian empire, which predated the Roman Empire's embrace of Christianity by hundreds of years.^{6 7 8} Finally, the Apostle Mark was a missionary to Alexandria, Egypt, leaving Jerusalem in CE 42 and started a church now commonly known as the Coptic Oriental Orthodox Church.^{9 10} What is profoundly-interesting is these four churches were founded in virtual geographic and linguistic isolation from the big early Christian population centers of Constantinople, Jerusalem and Rome. Paul, the “missionary to the Gentiles,” had nothing to do with them. All four of these apostolic churches completely severed all ties with the rest of Christianity in the aftermath of the long-brewing Christological crisis that was resolved in the 452 CE Council of

¹ Notably, nowhere in Adventist theologian Dr. Samuele Bacchiocchi's “*From Sabbath to Sunday*” is the movement of the Roman Capital from Rome to Constantinople acknowledged, particularly on Pp. 184-188 in the Chapter titled “The Primacy of Rome.” http://www.friendsofsabbath.org/Further_Research/SDAs/sab2sun.pdf

² https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Malankara_Orthodox_Syrian_Church

³ https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Armenian_Apostolic_Church#Origins

⁴ <http://www.holytrinity-pa.org/files/holytrinity/files/looyo/looysoctdec13.pdf>

⁵ <http://www.stgregoryarmenian.org/faq1/>

⁶ https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Assyrian_Church_of_the_East#Early_years_of_the_Church_of_the_East

⁷ <http://www.aina.org/faq.html>

⁸ <http://www.independentsentinel.com/the-assyrians/>

⁹ https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Coptic_Orthodox_Church_of_Alexandria

¹⁰ <http://st-takla.org/Coptic-church-1.html>

Chalcedon.^{11 12} All of these churches adamantly insist they have worshiped on Sunday since their founding very early in the First Century by their respective Apostles, and no Adventist theologian or historian has ever bothered to dispute, let alone refute their contention. Both the Armenian and the Assyrian churches claim their founding within two years of the Resurrection. Their liturgical services, iconography and theological outlooks are culturally-unique, and bear scant resemblance to Roman Catholicism or Eastern Orthodox practices. No Egyptian Christians had formal ecclesiastical relations with Rome until the 17th Century, when a breakaway faction of the Coptic Church established communion with Rome.¹³ The Persian and Indian churches have had no similar relations with either the Roman bishop or the Roman emperor.

These four ancient churches stayed faithful to the doctrines presented by them by the respective founding Apostles, including the Lord's Day celebration of the Resurrection, the liturgy, and the Eucharist. They were geographically isolated and cut off from the Roman Empire prior to 451, and completely alienated from the rest of Christianity after 451.

The Sunday worship of the Syrian-Malankara Church, the Assyrian Church of the East, and the Armenian Apostolic Church could not have been caused by Constantine's 321 CE Sunday Edict, since ***India and Persia were not part of the Roman Empire, or subject to Roman law!***

All of these ancient Apostolic Church's' traditions of Sunday worship developed in virtual laboratory "double-blind" conditions, with no outside influence from the rest of Christianity, or the whims of the Roman Empire. Certainly, the Roman bishop had no effect or influence on them. The venerable Coptic Church has its own pope. The Syrian-Malankara Church existed on the faraway Malabar coast of India, far outside of the Roman Empire's jurisdiction. The Armenian and Assyrian Churches developed in exotic Persia, also far outside of the borders and jurisdiction of the Roman Empire. The Assyrian Christians evolved into a Christian empire that long predated Constantine's [Council](#) embrace of Christianity on behalf of the Roman Empire. Why would any of these churches obey the far away Roman pope? The Copts had their own pope to obey. The use of the word "pope" was not even used to describe the Roman bishop until the 11th Century.¹⁴ (the Bishop of Alexandria - i.e. the Coptic pope - was the first Christian leader to be called a "pope").

The Coptic Church harshly denounces Seventh Day Adventism as a non-Christian cult, and has aggressively sponsored language that would remove Adventists from Egypt's list of approved Christian organizations.^{15 16} This is a much more aggressive and abrasive stance than what has ever been taken by the Roman pope. The Coptic pope wants Adventism banned from Egypt for good. Adventist "sheep stealing" has resulted in a souring of the relations between Muslims and Copts in Egypt, causing Copts to be killed or persecuted.

You won't hear Adventists admit this, but the Coptic pope has been far more repressive to Adventism than the Roman pope ever was.

He is actually ***doing*** what Ellen White predicted the Roman pope would do "someday." This is known as a double "irony." Adventism's silence on this— given White's complete absence of any mention of the Coptic pope in ***The Great Controversy***— is deafening.

The history of these four relatively obscure churches irrefutably demonstrate that Christians worshiped on Sunday from the very beginning of Apostolic Christianity. They simply never adopted Sabbath-keeping, not even temporarily. They were founded outside of the Roman Empire and far away from Jerusalem, where neither the writ of the Romans, nor their Pagan practices, nor the Roman Catholic Church had any effect on how they evolved. India and Persia, after all, were never part of the Roman Empire and were certainly not under the jurisdiction of the Roman bishop.^{17 18} St. Paul died between 64 CE and 67 CE, and he would have written his last epistle shortly before that— perhaps 63 CE. Within only 40 short years after his death, probably all Gentile Christians as well as the vast majority of Jewish Christians were worshiping on Sunday. As the

11 https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Of_Chalcedon

12 http://orthodoxwiki.org/Fourth_Ecumenical_Council

13 https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Coptic_Catholic_Church

14 https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Pope#Title_and_etymology

15 <http://news.adventist.org/en/all-news/news/go/2003-01-13/egypt-coptic-pope-publicly-insults-seventh-day-adventist-church/>

16 <http://weekly.ahram.org.eg/2003/629/eg7.htm>

17 https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Indo-Roman_trade_relations

18 https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Indo-Roman_relations

four Apostolic Churches founded outside of the Roman Empire demonstrate, First Century Christians adopted Sunday worship because they were taught to do so by the original Apostles. Even Dr. Bacchiocchi conceded that Sunday observance was widespread by 100 CE and universal by 140 CE. Note that Andrews conceded four years before the organization of the Seventh-day Adventist Church in 1863 that Sunday observance was widespread by 100 CE.

Neither White, Andrews nor Bacchiocchi ever discussed the unrebutted-claims of the Coptic, the Armenian, the Assyrian and the Malankara-Syrian Churches that they were founded by the Apostles and worshiped on Sunday from the very beginning. White fantasized that all of Christianity was under the monolithic control of the Roman pope, and she appears to have been blissfully unaware that the Coptic Church had its own pope. The Roman pope couldn't have made a dent in the beliefs of the Egyptian, Persian, or Indian churches, even if he had wanted to. They were too far away, given the primitive travel and communication methods that were dominant during the first 1,000 years of Christianity.

The Indian, Egyptian and Persian churches worshiped on Sunday because that is what their respective missionary Apostle founders taught them to do. This conclusion is the only possible reasonable explanation. This is absolutely consistent with Acts 15, Colossians 2, the virulently anti-Mosaic Law themes in the Books of Romans and Galatians, and the repeated instances of Jesus' willful Sabbath breaking.

Dr. Bacchiocchi's 140 CE date seems especially cautious in view of the extensive writings of three of the earliest Christian writers, Ignatius of Antioch (d. 107 CE); Justin Martyr, writing in 155 CE, who was strongly anti-Sabbatarian; and Tertullian, who was born in 160 CE. Tertullian discussed at length the early church's understanding that the Sabbath was first given to Israel in Exodus 16, that the Sabbath was a temporary ordinance to regulate Israel between the Exodus and the cross, and that the Ordinance of Circumcision was required for Sabbath-keeping. He also explained that while Christianity's day of worship was uniformly on Sunday, Christians also celebrated "Christian Sabbath Festivals" with festivities on the two Saturdays that bookend Holy Week, the yearly week of celebration that lead up to Easter (in the Western traditions); and "Pascha" (in the Eastern traditions). Tertullian discussed how Christians should, or should not fast; and should, or should not kneel on these twice-a-year occasions. The Christian "Sabbath Festivals" celebrate the Resurrection of Lazarus on the day before Palm Sunday and the "Great Sabbath" (at the end of the week) that Jesus spent in the tomb. Neither event has any connection with the Jewish 7th Day Weekly Sabbath of the Old Testament or the 7th Day of Creation. They are creations of Christian tradition, with no scriptural warrant. Tertullian's writings sound very much like those of the new anti-Sabbatarians who have written about the subject after the Bacchiocchi Sabbath fiasco. We have examined Tertullian's anti-Sabbatarian leanings in another chapter. This additional, substantial volume of information is necessary because Sabbatarians quote one or more of his statements out of context to promote the erroneous idea that Tertullian was a Sabbatarian.

At the same time we have every right to question Dr. Bacchiocchi's scholarly integrity for not mentioning the substantial body of evidence that strongly suggests that Sabbath abandonment/Sunday observance took place almost immediately. By the time Dr. Bacchiocchi wrote *From Sabbath to Sunday*, historians had dated the *Didache*, which

documents Christians worshiping on the first day of the week, to as early as 50 CE and no later than 125 CE. More accurately, the *Didache* is an Early Church liturgical handbook that was widely-used in the First Century.

The variance of the estimated age of the *Didache* is the result of widely-varying views on the efficacy of liturgical transmission via oral tradition.¹⁹ The earlier dating suggests that the *Didache* was spread orally, as part of the memorized liturgy. The later dates reject the notion of oral transmission, and insist that the *Didache* - and its pronouncements - did not exist before it was put in writing.

Adventist pioneers might be excused from this oversight, since the *Didache* was not "re-discovered" until 1873.²⁰ But that is not an excuse that avails Bacchiocchi, writing in 1977. The *Didache* has sections that establish the practice of Christians worshiping on the first day of the week, which some researchers believe to have been authored around 70 CE. American scholars seem convinced that this section was probably written between 50 and 70 CE, whereas European scholars tend to think 70 CE. to 125 CE. Elsewhere, you will find our critique of SDA historian, J. N. Andrews' 1912 study on the *Didache*. If you look at our historical time-line in a subsequent chapter, you will see that in 1912 D.M. Canright was still bombarding Adventist leaders with the fact that Sunday observance happened almost immediately. Adventists should have raised the White flag of surrender to Canright, but instead they continued the myth that the papacy was to blame.

¹⁹ <http://www.earlychristianwritings.com/didache.html>

²⁰ <https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Didache>

As Robert D. Brinsmead so clearly illustrated in his paper, "Sabbatarianism Re-examined" (1981), a much clearer picture of the early church had emerged from continuing scholarly research by the 1960's, and this clearer understanding spelled disaster for Sabbatarians.²¹ Brinsmead presents the potent argument that the Gentile churches never kept the Sabbath and that the Jewish churches that continued Sabbath-keeping slid very quickly into fatal heresies.

Constantine's Sunday law of 321 CE didn't change the day of worship for Christians. It simply made it possible for Christian slaves (and others) to attend church without interference on the same day they had been worshipping on for 300 years—Sunday. History is devoid of protests from 4th century Sabbatarian Christians regarding this legal innovation. It is also silent on any negative enforcement actions against Sabbatarian Christians. Mind you, Christianity had just recently survived the most brutal tortures and mass executions the world had ever seen, and it had barely been legalized. Did Christians suddenly become cowards and buckle under Roman legal writ and abandon their cherished Sabbath? Adventists obsessively-focus on what is Constantine's most trivial pro-Christian accomplishment, which simply codified existing unanimous Christian practice. Then they ignore his undeniably-massive assistance to Christianity. After all, he only ended the deadly persecution of Christians:

He exempted the Christian clergy from military and municipal duty (March, 313); abolished various customs and ordinances offensive to the Christians (315); facilitated the emancipation of Christian slaves (before 316); legalized bequests to catholic churches (321); enjoined the civil observance of Sunday, and in company with an ordinance for the regular consulting of the haruspex (321); contributed liberally to the building of churches and the support of the clergy; erased the heathen symbols of Jupiter and Apollo, Mars and Hercules from the imperial coins (323); and gave his sons a Christian education."²²

In fact this same clearer understanding of the early church demonstrates that while the Jewish Sabbath-keeping Christians fell into serious heresies and were lost to Christianity within the first 200 hundred years, the vibrant Sunday-observing, Gentile churches supplied the Christian Faith with believers who maintained orthodox Christian doctrines and carried the Gospel to the world. In stark contrast to what Seventh-day Adventists teach their followers, Sabbath-keepers were not the heroes of the Early Church. The Jewish Sabbath-keeping Christians drifted into the fatal heresies of Ebionism and Gnosticism and gradually became extinct. Jerusalem today resembles the dusty "graveyard" of Jewish-Christianity.

THE UNIQUE CASE OF THE ETHIOPIAN ORTHODOX TEWAHEDO CHURCH

Of all of the "Oriental Orthodox" Churches that split away from the main body of Christianity in the schism after the 452 CE Council of Chalcedon, the 45 million membered Ethiopian Orthodox Tewahedo Church is the most unusual. Since Ellen White gave it such a fascinating, yet cursory treatment, we will begin by quoting her in full:

.... Others suffered in a similar manner for their fidelity to the fourth commandment. The history of the churches of Ethiopia and Abyssinia is especially significant. Amid the gloom of the Dark Ages, the Christians of Central Africa were lost sight of and forgotten by the world, and for many centuries they enjoyed freedom in the exercise of their faith. But at last Rome learned of their existence, and the emperor of Abyssinia was soon beguiled into an acknowledgment of the pope as the vicar of Christ. Other concessions followed.

An edict was issued forbidding the observance of the Sabbath under the severest penalties. But papal tyranny soon became a yoke so galling that the Abyssinians determined to break it from their necks. After a terrible struggle the Romanists were banished from their dominions, and the ancient faith was restored. The churches rejoiced in their freedom, and they never forgot the lesson they had learned concerning the deception, the fanaticism, and the despotic power of Rome. Within their solitary realm they were content to remain, unknown to the rest of Christendom.

The churches of Africa held the Sabbath as it was held by the papal church before her complete apostasy. While they kept the seventh day in obedience to the commandment of God, they abstained from labor on the Sunday in conformity to the custom of the church. Upon obtaining supreme power, Rome had trampled upon the Sabbath of God to exalt her own; but the churches of Africa, hidden for nearly a thousand years, did not share in this apostasy. When brought under the sway of Rome, they were forced to

21 <http://www.exadventist.com/home/articles/Sabbatarian/tabid/452/default.aspx>

22 http://www.ccel.org/s/schaff/history/3_ch01.htm

set aside the true and exalt the false sabbath; but no sooner had they regained their independence than they returned to obedience to the fourth commandment (*The Great Controversy*, 577-578).²³

First, White is to be commended for noticing (for the first time) that an Oriental Orthodox Church **exists**, although she never actually mentions that the Ethiopian Church belongs to that tradition. Otherwise, it is hard to know where to begin, but first and foremost White's overly-simplistic rendition of a very complex history and tradition is not at all fair to this proud and venerable branch of Christianity. Notice how she mentions no dates when the pope allegedly did his nefarious **Saturday**-crushing in Ethiopia? Watch closely as we unpack White's vivid fiction.

Ethiopia's conversion to Christianity can be traced to the early Apostolic age. (Acts 8:26-38)²⁴ But its conversion to Judaism hundreds of years before the time of Christ is the reason for its atypical 7th Day **Saturday** observance.^{25 26} While there are several theories about how the Ethiopians converted to Judaism at such an early time, one of those theories is that when the Queen of Sheba (Ethiopian) visited King Solomon, they had a hot romance. The Ethiopian story goes that she gave birth to a son when she returned to her country, and she and her son taught their people to worship the True God of Israel. Because this story also involves the Ark of the Covenant, it would make a movie that would draw a larger crowd than Harrison Ford's *Raiders of the Lost Ark*. We will share with you shortly the other theories about how Ethiopia became a country heavily populated with followers of Judaism, but for the moment let us focus on the story of how Ethiopian Orthodoxy adopted the "schizophrenic-like" idea that they needed to "keep" both Saturday and Sunday.

Since the Ethiopians were essentially "Jewish" and had practiced Judaism for many centuries before Christian missionaries arrived, they had an existing culture that had long venerated the 7th day of the week. When the Christian missionaries arrived both Jews and non-Jews were converted to the Faith. As a manifestation of cultural values, Orthodox leaders seemed to have decided to recognize the day while at the same time giving it Christian connotations. In the process Saturday lost almost all of its association with things Jewish.

In their treatment of the 7th day, the Ethiopian Orthodox leaders appeared to be following, in principle, in the same footsteps of the other Orthodox churches, which chose to recognize the 7th day of the week but with the Christian values of Lazarus Saturday and the Great Sabbath. Therefore, this highly unusual Orthodox church worships God on both **Saturday** AND the Christian Lord's Day but requires its people to WORK on Saturdays. We will say more about this idea of working on Saturdays later.

Significantly, Sunday has the clear dominance since it is the day of the week when the Eucharist is dispensed. Notice that we insist on calling the first of the two worship days "**Saturday**" like the Ethiopian Orthodox do, rather than "Sabbath" like Ellen White does. You will see why we insist on doing this when you see the Ethiopian Orthodox canon laws that regulate what happens in the country on Saturdays. Those Canon laws long predate the influence of the Roman Pope described by White.

If Adventists were ever to discover the facts of Ethiopian Orthodoxy, they would find their greatly cherished Sabbath day slighted even further. The Ethiopian Church has multitudes of other yearly holy days that do not necessarily fall on either Saturday or Sunday, including a whopping 33 holy days spent venerating Mary alone!²⁷ Given the massive number of holy and fasting days that must be observed that tend to fall outside of Saturday and Sunday, Saturday sinks even deeper down the list of which holy day the Ethiopian Orthodox Church values the most. That day is definitely not Saturday. It is, like most Christians everywhere— Sunday.

It is no exaggeration to argue that being an Ethiopian Orthodox Christian is a demanding, full-time career. By comparison, Adventists look like real slackers when it comes to holiness, as do all other Christians.

It is clear, then, that Ellen White made a serious error when she assumed that the Ethiopian Orthodox views on **Saturday** were synonymous with hers. The canon law of the Church is known as the "Ethiopian Orthodox Tewahedo Church Faith and Order," and we cite the relevant part of it two paragraphs below. It has been widely-available in written form since the early

23 <http://www.whiteestate.org/books/gc/gc35.html>

24 <https://www.biblegateway.com/passage/?search=Acts+8%3A26-38&version=NIV>

25 https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Solomonic_dynasty

26 <https://www.jewishvirtuallibrary.org/jsource/Judaism/ejhist.html>

27 <http://www.ethiopianorthodox.org/english/ethiopian/worship.html>

1200's, so Ellen would have been wise to have done a little more research before making her sweeping and erroneous statements. The Ethiopian Church does not even refer to Saturday as the "Sabbath."

Working is **mandatory** on Saturday under canon law, which would be an explicit violation of the 4th Commandment, according to Jews and Adventists! It would appear for all the world that Orthodox leaders went out of their way to distance their recognition of the 7th day from Jewish associations. This excerpt from the Ethiopian Orthodox Church's canon law also makes it clear that Saturday and Sunday are viewed as equally holy days. Scores of other holy days are discussed in the same section of canon law that are at least as important, or even more important, than Saturday and Sunday. Church attendance is mandatory on Sunday, but not on Saturday. Here is the canon law governing Saturday observance:

Christians must not stop work on Saturday, as the Jews do, but as Christians they shall work on this day. If among the [Christian] people some are found to behave like Jews, they will be driven away from the face of Christ. [. . .] Servants shall work for five days, but on Sundays and Saturdays they shall go to church to be instructed in the service of God, because the Lord rested on Saturday when He finished the creation of the creatures and He rose from death on Sunday. On all Saturdays, except the day of *Fesh*, and on all Sundays, you [i.e., priests] shall receive the Eucharist between you in the church and rejoice. In the chapter on fasting it is said that no one shall fast on Sundays and Saturdays, except the Saturday on which Our Lord Jesus Christ was buried in the tomb. (The Ethiopian Orthodox Tewahedo Church Faith and Order, pp. 114-115)²⁸

Get that? Refuse to work on Saturday **and the Church will excommunicate you!**

White's depiction of Rome's missionary efforts and ultimate influence of Rome with Ethiopia's emperor appears to be outlandishly dishonest. Where did she get her information? Was there a historian she found somewhere who wrote such nonsense? If she got this errant history from her attending angel—the one who appeared to her almost daily in the form of a young man for the first 26 years of her ministry—he didn't do his homework before he left the pearly gates of Heaven to minister to her on the day she wrote this section of *The Great Controversy*. Perhaps he burst into her Elmshaven upper-floor bedroom early in the morning, and she was too startled to take down what he said because she wasn't exactly prepared to entertain a male visitor.

Remarkably, **first** and foremost, the Ethiopian Orthodox Tewahedo Church's bishop was subservient to the Pope of Alexandria for the first 1600 years of Christianity—not the pope of Rome. **Second**, both Alexandria and Ethiopia broke completely away from the main body of Christianity in 452 CE. For almost 1,000 years, Rome made not the slightest effort to control the Ethiopian Orthodox Tewahedo Church, after it split from the rest of Christianity following the Council of Chalcedon. Sometime in the 1400's, Rome began sending Jesuit missionaries to Ethiopia, originally as a consequence of the Portuguese defense of Ethiopia against Islamic conquest in the Abyssinian–Adal war.²⁹ The resultant overwhelmingly-unsuccesful Catholic missionary effort ground to a sudden and catastrophic halt when Emperor Fasilides ascended to the Ethiopian throne in 1632. Emperor Fasilides summarily expelled all of the Jesuit missionaries, seized their land and property, and ordered that all of the Catholic books be burnt.³⁰

To take her historical blunder right over the top, all of this happened right in the middle of a period of time when White absurdly insisted that the Roman pope had "papal supremacy" and virtually ruled the world! Papal influence over Emperor Susenyos-Fasilides' father and predecessor lasted approximately ten years, and led to massive revolts and a nasty civil war that was not quelled until the offending pro-Roman emperor, Susenyos, abdicated after suddenly panicking and reinstating religious freedom for the Ethiopian Tewahedo Orthodox Church in a vain attempt to retain power.³¹

White is dishonest to claim that Saturday worship had anything to do with the repression of Ethiopian Orthodox Tewahedo Christianity by a pro-Catholic emperor. White's profound ignorance and twisting of the facts in regard to this issue— while claiming supernatural guidance for the material she was selecting for *The Great Controversy*— is simply astounding. **No Sabbatarian Christians were ever persecuted.** The severe anti-Sabbatarianism of Emperor Susenyos' misrule was

28 <http://www.ethiopianorthodox.org/biography/01thelawofkings.pdf>

29 https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Abyssinian%E2%80%93Adal_war

30 <https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Fasilides>

31 https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Susenyos_I

directed exclusively at the non-Christian “Falasha,” or “Beta-Israel” Jews.³²

In more recently history, an event took place that gives credibility to the idea that Judaism took a strong hold in Ethiopia long ago through a remarkable set of events. In 1984 a severe famine in Ethiopia threatened to cause widespread hardship and death for its population, which included its minority of Black Jews. This unique tribe of ancient Jews was summarily airlifted to Israel, and the refugees were granted automatic citizenship under Israel’s Right of Return.³³ See also the following *New York Times* story at this Internet address:

<http://www.nytimes.com/1984/12/11/world/airlift-to-israel-is-reported-taking-thousands-of-jews-from-ethiopia.html>

The hard-nosed Israeli government found the Falashas petition for Right of Return refugee status compelling on the basis of a number of fascinating theories:

- 1) The Beta Israel may be the lost Israelite tribe of Dan.
- 2) They may be descendants of Menelik I, son of King Solomon and Queen Sheba.
- 3) They may be descendants of Ethiopian Christians and pagans who converted to Judaism centuries ago.
- 4) They may be descendants of [Jews](#) who fled Israel for Egypt after the destruction of the First Temple in 586 BCE and settled in Ethiopia.³⁴

This airlift is one more remarkable set of circumstances that tends to give credibility to the possibility that the Ethiopian Jews were descendants of King Solomon, the Queen of Sheba, and their son. The Ethiopian Orthodox Church has “always” claimed that it has possession of the Ark of the Covenant. It claims that the Ark is in a basement fortress underneath a certain one of its churches. The Ark has always been protected by a single virgin monk who has been carefully-selected to guard the Ark **for life**. It is kept on an Island in a lake, where no woman has been allowed for centuries. The guardian of the Ark prays next to it constantly, and burns incense daily. All of the monks who have guarded the Ark have eventually gone blind.³⁵ The Ethiopian story goes something like this. When the Queen of Sheba and King Solomon’s son grew up, he wanted to see his father. He is said to have visited his father with a retinue of his warriors. As a godly prince he perceived that for some reason or another, the Ark was in grave danger. He had a copy of it made, snuck it into the Temple, and stole the real one, departing for home under the pursuit of his father’s army. So the story goes, he got away with the Ark and hid it from public view until this day:

[The Ethiopian Orthodox Church](#) ³⁶claims to possess the Ark of the Covenant, or [Tabot](#), in [Axum](#). The object is currently kept under guard in a treasury near the [Church of Our Lady Mary of Zion](#). Replicas of the Axum tabot are kept in every Ethiopian church, each with its own dedication to a particular saint; the most popular of these include Mary, George and Michael.

See the following reference for additional support for this legend:

https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Menelik_I

The prudishly-Victorian Ellen White must have been repelled and horrified by the flagrant sexuality inherent in the King Solomon/Queen of Sheba theory. However, for whatever reason it came to pass, the Judaism that was thoroughly entrenched in Ethiopian society was powerless to make Sabbatarians out of Christians when the Gospel of Christ showed up via Apostolic missionaries. With help from an “angel” guide, there would have been no excuse for her to teach that Sabbatarian **Christians** were persecuted in Ethiopia by a Roman pope. She simply made that up.

Last but not least, one of the most astonishing facts of Ethiopian history creates an irony that fully exposes Ellen White’s intellectually dishonest and distorted Sabbath-centric view of history. There exists a tiny, yet truly unique sect of Ethiopian

32 *The Beta-Israel (Falasha) in Ethiopia*, by Steven Kaplan, Pp. 92-93

33 https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Operation_Moses

34 <https://www.jewishvirtuallibrary.org/jsource/Judaism/ejhist.html>

35 <http://www.smithsonianmag.com/people-places/keepers-of-the-lost-ark-179998820/?=&preview=&pa=&page=6>

36 Stuart Munro-Hay, 2005, *The Quest for the Ark of the Covenant*, Tauris (reviewed in *Times Literary Supplement* 19 August 2005 p. 36)

Christianity that continues to practice circumcision, dietary laws, and worship on both Saturday and Sunday. This tiny sect is NOT a part of the much larger Ethiopian Tewahedo Orthodox communion. It is the Ethiopian Catholic Church, also known as “Ge’ez Ethiopian Rite.” ***Yet it is in full communion and affiliation with Roman Catholicism and in the good graces of the Roman Pope!***

Incredible!

DR. BACCHIOCCHI CONTINUES ADVENTISM’S CONSPIRACY TO HIDE EASTERN CHRISTIANITY

Adventist theologian Dr. Samuele Bacchiocchi’s book, *From Sabbath to Sunday*, unintentionally ignited the modern-day anti-Sabbatarian movement.³⁷ As we discuss elsewhere, it did so because it supported many of D.M. Canright’s caustic debunkings of the blatant misrepresentations in Ellen White’s Sabbath-centric faux history. Worse yet, Bacchiocchi’s extremely Judaizing “interpretation” of Colossians 2:16 manages to outrage both Evangelicals and “Historic” and “Traditional” Adventists. For purposes of this section, we will analyze his book from the standpoint of his involvement in Adventism’s long-term campaign to hide the existence and significance of Eastern Christianity from Adventist membership.

The main title chapters of Bacchiocchi’s Book are revealing.. **No Chapter is devoted to a discussion of Greek or Eastern Christianity and its dominance of Christianity for the first 1,000 years. No mention is made of the Capital of the Roman Empire being moved to Constantinople in AD 330, that sealed the East’s domination of Christianity.** The chapter headings alone demonstrate Bacchiocchi’s profound bias towards Rome :

- "The Jerusalem Church after A. D. 70"
- "The Church of Rome and the Sabbath"
- "The Primacy of the Church of Rome"
- "Sun-Worship and the Origin of Sunday"

The following analysis is difficult to follow unless you remain focused on what we are trying to show you is not there but should be there. All we could find were a few scraps—obscure references to various things— that merely hint at acknowledging the existence of a Church in the East. You might even wonder why we have included them until you realize that the point we are trying to make is that the dominance of Eastern Christianity during about the first 1,000 years of the Faith should have dominated his analysis.

Like an older child taking some gullible young children on the proverbial Snipe Hunt, Bacchiocchi decided to lead his trusting readers away from a place where they would have a real chance to stumble onto the real origin of Sunday observance.

While the last title is not about Rome, the contents are almost entirely devoted to the Roman Sun worship cult. There is just one footnote that references Helios, the Greek god of the Sun. The rest of the chapter and all of the rest of the footnotes discuss Roman Sun worship. There appears to be an unspoken ulterior motive behind this. Here it is:

[L.R. Farnell assumed "that sun-worship had once been prevalent and powerful among the people of the pre-Hellenic culture, but that very few of the communities of the later historic period retained it as a potent factor of the state religion." Our largely Attic literary sources tend to give us an unavoidable Athenian bias when we look at ancient Greek religion, and "no Athenian could be expected to worship Helios or Selene."](#)³⁸

In other words, Bacchiocchi probably took one glance at Greek Sun god worship (or the complete abandonment of any such worship by the Greeks, long before First Century Christianity); and wisely-decided that Roman Sun worship could be a more viable model on which to base a dubious Christian Sunday worship theory. In one of the few mentions of Greek Christianity outside of endnotes, Bacchiocchi attacks the idea that Eastern Christianity could have been the source of Sunday Worship:

³⁷ http://www.friendsofsabbath.org/Further_Research/SDAs/sab2sun.pdf

³⁸ <https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Helios>

Though the three New Testament references commonly quoted to substantiate an apostolic origin of Sunday observance belong to the geographic area of the Greek-speaking Christian communities of Greece ... or Asia Minor; there is a marked tendency in recent studies to attribute to the Apostolic community of Jerusalem the initiative ³⁹ (P. 131).

Next, Bacchiocchi adopts a truly bizarre theory that Greek bishops could have introduced Sunday worship when they "settled in Jerusalem."

Marcel Richard endeavors to show that the new day was introduced at this time not by the Church of Rome but by the Greek bishops who settled in Jerusalem. Owing to Hadrian's prohibition of Jewish festivals, they would have pioneered the new Easter-Sunday date to avoid appearing "Judaizing" to the Roman authorities. (page 181)

That begs the question, why would Greek bishops "settle in Jerusalem?" They were required to live in the cities of their Bishopric. This is why "cathedrals" are named as such, since a cathedral is the seat of the bishop. And Jerusalem had its own bishop in the First Century, which status was elevated to the Patriarch of Jerusalem in 530 CE. The first 16 Bishops of Jerusalem were Israelites, ***not Greeks***. ***The first ethnic Greek Patriarch of Jerusalem was not appointed until after the 452 CE Council of Chalcedon.***⁴⁰ That Bacchiocchi would have endorsed such a flagrantly dishonest and easily-refutable statement is just mind-boggling.

Next is an obscure footnote about the "Sabbath Festivals" that are so mystifying to Sabbatarians, but which are the Lazarus Saturday and the Great Sabbath festivals that book-end the Holy Week of Pascha ("Easter" in the West):

68. F. A. Regan, *Dies Dominica*, p. 60, raises a significant question: "Thus while protecting the practices of the Church from false and misleading influences, nevertheless the Church of the East was very solicitous in preserving the special reverence due to both Saturday (the Sabbath), and the Lord's Day. How is it then, one may rightly ask, that the day which the Church of the West kept as a fast day, the Church of the East celebrated as a festival? (page 203)

At least Bacchiocchi mentions the Great Schism, albeit in a footnote, which is better than the way that Ellen White and J.N. Andrews completely ignored it altogether. Here, Bacchiocchi tries to imply that the Schism was the result of Rome fasting on the Sabbath, and Constantinople not fasting. There were MANY more important issues that led to the Schism than the Sabbath, or whether to fast on it or not. Bacchiocchi does not mention the Patriarch of Constantinople's reply to the Papal excommunication order:

85....."[This treatise was composed in the form of a debate about the year 1054 by Cardinal Humbert.] The Cardinal had been sent by Pope Leo IX early in 1054 as papal nuncio to Constantinople to endeavor to bring back the Greeks into conformity with the religious practices of the Roman (Latin) Church. The mission however did not succeed. The treatise was composed as a further attempt to dissuade the Greeks from holding on to certain divergent religious practices such as the veneration of the Sabbath. The significance of the document for our study is twofold: (1) it substantiates the existing divergent attitude toward the Sabbath between the East and the West; (2) it quotes the earlier testimony of Pope Sylvester (ca. AD. 314-335) which offers additional insights into the motivations for the Sabbath fast." P. 205

It is incredible to think that Bacchiocchi didn't know better! The most heated dispute that provoked the split between Eastern and Western Christianity was Papal primacy and superiority. Other issues include the Pope's accusation that Constantinople was the source of most heresies and the use of unleavened bread on the part of the Latins.⁴¹

Here is Bacchiocchi's only mention of Constantinople (a mere footnote) in the entire book and it says NOTHING about it being the Roman Capital:

117. A fitting example is provided by the development of the patriarchal authority of the Bishop of Constantinople. At the Council held in that city in A.D. 381, he was given honorary pre-eminence after

39 http://www.friendsofsabbath.org/Further_Research/SDAs/sab2sun.pdf
http://www.friendsofsabbath.org/Further_Research/SDAs/sab2sun.pdf

40 https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Greek_Orthodox_Patriarch_of_Jerusalem#Patriarchs_of_Jerusalem

41 https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Michael_I_Cerularius

the Bishop of Rome, and in 451, in spite of the objections of the Pope, patriarchal powers were formally conferred upon him (canon 28); cf. *Dictionnaire de theologie catholique* (1908), s.v. "Constantinople," by S. Vailhe." P. 212

Bacchiocchi does not come right out and admit that Greek Christianity actually **existed**:

134. Bruce Metzger acknowledges that the need for Christians in the West to separate from the Jews provides "a reasonable historical explanation" for "the difference between East and West in the observance of the Sabbath.... In the West, particularly after the Jewish rebellion under Hadrian, it became vitally important for those who were not Jews to avoid exposing themselves to suspicion; and the observance of the Sabbath was one of the most noticeable indications of Judaism. In the East, however, less opposition was shown to Jewish institutions (*Studies in the Lectionary Text of the Greek New Testament*, 1944, II, sec. 3, p. 12)." P. 214

As both Canright and ourselves have demonstrated, Adventists perform extraordinary feats of concealment to hide the existence and significance of Eastern Christianity from Adventist membership, and its base of power in the Roman Capital of Constantinople. A book by an Adventist scholar that makes no mention of the fact that Constantinople was the Roman Capital between 330 AD and 1204 AD and almost no mention of Greek or Eastern Christianity deserves some sort of prize for obscurantism. Bacchiocchi's "Jewish Persecution Theory" is based on nothing but hot air.

THE SUPREMACY AND POWER OF GREEK CHRISTIANITY

Christianity hit ancient Greece like a nuclear carpet bombing. Within a short time after the Resurrection and Paul's Mars Hill speech, the Temple of Aphrodite at Corinth, perhaps the greatest center of religious prostitution in the ancient world, was in shambles. Also, within no more than 150 years, other temples to heathen gods were either destroyed, fell into disuse, or were little utilized. Even the temple of Poseidon south of Athens, where the Pagan sacrificial system was clearly spelled out, is believed to have been destroyed in the first century:

Both sanctuaries at Sounion declined and were eventually abandoned. The date of the abandonment of religious activity at Sounion can possibly be deduced from the removal of the temple of Athena Sounias as well as the sima from the Temple of Poseidon from Sounion to Athens. If the sima was actually recycled on the Temple of Ares, then the Temple of Poseidon must have been unroofed, and therefore religious activity at Sounion had probably ended by the middle of the 1st century A.D. (Dinsmoor 1974).⁴²

The Christian revolution in Greece was responsible for the swift, earth-shattering destruction of the Greek Pagan temple system. The vibrant Greek churches sent missionaries to Italy, and maintained the fledgling mission church at Rome. The Heathen temples of Rome quickly suffered the same fate as the Greek ones. The rapid destruction of pagan culture in Greece and Italy testifies to how real the resurrection of Christ was to these missionaries. (Recall that around 500 people witnessed the resurrected Christ shortly before He ascended to Heaven.) Later, a Roman emperor tried to revive the moribund Pagan religions. He failed miserably.^{43 44}

The speed at which Christianity changed Greek moral behavior is truly astonishing. For centuries Greek philosophers had waxed eloquently about the nobility of the soul and taught largely respectable moral values, based on reason alone. At the same time they counseled the temple prostitutes on how to conduct themselves. The thought that the Temple practices were intrinsically wrong or irrational apparently never occurred to these moral teachers. Christianity virtually exploded within Greek society and destroyed the resident Heathen culture in the process. Christianity was a revolutionary historical fact. It was the liberation of the human spirit. Paganism was elaborate, laughable fairy tales. It was cruel bondage for thousands of enslaved temple prostitutes.

Christianity made more headway in the Greek-majority provinces of the Roman Empire than anywhere else. It would take more than ten centuries for Italian Christianity to surpass that of Greek Christianity in power and influence, and by that time, Greek and Italian Christians had been observing Sunday for many centuries. As we have explained in detail elsewhere, the first seven ecumenical councils that were held in what is now the modern-day Republic of Turkey; were presided over by

42 <http://www.dartmouth.edu/~cpano/sounion/details/history.html>

43 <http://www.newadvent.org/cathen/08558b.htm>

44 <http://www.britannica.com/biography/Julian-Roman-emperor>

Eastern bishops. They resolved distinctly-Eastern disputes with solutions originating in the East. They feature an almost complete absence of the Roman bishop. Nowhere in Ellen White's books does she mention that the Capital of the Roman Empire was in Constantinople. It was moved there from Rome in 330 CE, because Constantinople had become the vibrant center of the explosive Greek Christian world.

Like Roman Paganism, Greek mythology contained references to gods who were part divine and part human.⁴⁵ The story of the God-Man, Jesus, made perfect sense to them. Mystery religions were centered on a belief that a god would die, perhaps in the fall and be resurrected, perhaps, in the spring. These mystery religions were so prevalent in Greek culture that St. Paul had to counsel Greek churches to keep its women distinctly in the background. (The mystery religions worshiped their savior-gods with fertility rites, and the women were always there at the gates to the mystery temples with their alluring invitations.) It was nearly a perfect fit for Greek thought. Furthermore, the concept of the Trinity made good sense to them because they had a definitely pantheistic view of the gods. The concept of three Gods in One was not very difficult for the Greek psyche to swallow. It was Greek terminology that dominated the theological debates at the First Council of Nicea— not Roman ones.⁴⁶ *Homoousia* was a revolutionary Greek concept, and the culmination of the Greek philosophical project. After Nicea, both Greek philosophy and paganism were simply spent forces. They were done.

At the very same time, Greek culture made the acceptance of the Jewish Sabbath, circumcision, and Jewish dietary laws impossible for most Greeks to swallow. Swine's flesh was viewed as the most noble of all meats. The Books of Maccabees (found in the Catholic and Orthodox Bibles, but not the Protestant ones) demonstrate that when Antiochus Epiphanes, a Greek king, sacrificed a pig on the altar of the Jewish temple, his reason for doing so was not to desecrate the temple and offend the Jews, but to honor his god with the only acceptable sacrifice.^{47 48}

Similarly, the Greeks worshiped the male human body as a beautiful and wondrous Creation of the god (or gods).^{49 50} They were repulsed by any mutilation of the male body.⁵¹ The Greeks exercised and bathed without any clothes on. If the apostles had persisted in imposing the Jewish rite of circumcision on them, Christianity would have gone nowhere.⁵² Of key importance is the concept that Gentiles must be circumcised and convert to Judaism before they can keep the Sabbath. These cultural trends are virtually impenetrable barriers to change in Greek culture to this day. Less than 2% of native Greek men are circumcised,⁵³ and many of the beaches— especially in the Balkans where Greek culture is the most intensely rooted— are nude swimming areas. Recent information from Greek Adventism reveals that there are only about 1,000 Seventh-day Adventists living in Greece, about 500 of whom live in Athens, and most of those members are non-ethnic Greek expatriates.^{54 55} Adventism's focus on the Sabbath and the Jewish food laws is a non-starter in Greece. Nothing has changed there in 2,000 years.

These strongly held attitudes of the Greeks betray a fierce loyalty to Greek culture and values that make them almost impervious to the acceptance of any other culture, specifically Jewish culture. It is of supreme importance to understand that for hundreds of years before Christ, Jewish society had become largely **Hellenized**. Many Jews within Palestine and those dispersed throughout the Roman Empire had adopted Greek values and had essentially discarded religious observance of the Mosaic Law.⁵⁶ The majority of Jews in Judea and nearly all of them in Greek areas had jettisoned the Mosaic Law by the time of Christ. The Pharisees of Christ's day were the heroes in the war against this creeping Hellenization of Judaism, and, therefore, champions of the Sabbath. They were seeking to restore the sacredness of the Sabbath within Israel. Keep in mind that the Jews didn't even speak "their own" language anymore. They spoke Greek. The apostles wrote their gospels

45 <https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Demigod>

46 <http://www.britannica.com/topic/homoousios>

47 <https://www.biblegateway.com/passage/?search=2%20Maccabees%206&version=GNT>

48 <https://www.biblegateway.com/passage/?search=2%20Maccabees%207&version=GNT>

49 http://ancienthistory.about.com/library/bl/bl_text_wsd_sec142.htm

50 http://ancienthistory.about.com/library/bl/bl_text_wsd_sec143.htm

51 <http://www.cirp.org/library/history/hodges2/>

52 <http://www.cirp.org/library/history/hodges2/>

53 http://www.photius.com/rankings/circumcised_men_country_ranks.html

54 <http://news.adventist.org/en/all-news/news/go/2004-08-08/greece-adventist-church-grows-to-500-members-nine-churches/>

55 <http://www.ted-adventist.org/countries/europe/greece>

56 <http://www.newworldencyclopedia.org/entry/Pharisees>

and epistles largely in Greek. The Jews could no longer speak or write their own language. If you believe in the Sabbath, the real heroes of John 5 were the Pharisees— not Jesus. The Pharisees promulgated rules and regulations about the Sabbath with the goals of making the Sabbath easier to keep, harder to convict anyone of Sabbath breaking, and extremely difficult to impose the mandatory death penalty. Their compassionate efforts to make the Sabbath more attractive to **Hellenized** Jews are well-documented in the *Talmud*.

While the Jews readily assimilated Greek culture, the reverse was not at all true. The Greeks, along with the Romans, contemptuously looked at Jews who kept the Sabbath as being lazy and silly, wasting a day in idleness. The Greek provinces of the Roman Empire assimilated the Gospel as preached by St. Paul so fast that the pagan system of worship was virtually banished from Greek society within 125 years. However, this huge societal change never would have happened if Paul had tried to push the Jewish Sabbath, the Ordinance of Circumcision, and the Jewish dietary laws on Greek Christian converts.

The Eastern Orthodox and Oriental Orthodox churches include the following: the Greek Orthodox Church, the Armenian Church, the Assyrian Church of the East, the Coptic Church of Egypt, the Orthodox Church of India, and the Russian Orthodox Church. As far as historians can tell, none of them have ever kept the Jewish Sabbath. The Greek Orthodox Church has kept good records of its history and creeds going back to the turn of the century after the birth of Christ, and what we find is that they only kept the yearly “Sabbath Festivals” during Holy Week, and only then on the most special days of their liturgical calendar.^{57 58}

Christianity “interfered” with the morals of Greek culture, but not with any other aspect of it. Sabbath-keeping would have wreaked havoc with its economics, and especially its trade. Imagine a merchant ship arriving at a Greek port, and the port was closed for the day! The Greeks thought the Sabbath was both lazy and stupid, and a profound insult to Greek pantheism. The Resurrection melted away their objections to a God firmly grounded in history, since nobody believed that the Greek gods had a historical basis. Jesus Christ was the fulfillment of the empirically-verifiable yearnings of the Greek philosophers. He was real.

It is no wonder, then, that the chief architect of modern Sabbatarianism, Ellen G. White, never mentioned the Eastern and Oriental Orthodox Churches in her history of the Sabbath as portrayed in her monumental work, *The Great Controversy!* The Eastern Church was the center of the Christian Faith for nearly 1,000 years, and it rejected Sabbath-keeping on biblical grounds. They simply obeyed the Apostles, and met on the first day of the week. In fact, there is a complete lack of historical evidence that any of the Eastern Churches *ever kept the Sabbath*. It is not a good area of history for Sabbatarians to investigate.

D. M. Canright confronted Adventist leadership of this fact well before the crisis of the 1919 Bible Conference. The next section in this chapter clearly spells out what Adventists knew and when they knew it about the impossibilities of Ellen White's theory that the Western (Roman Catholic) Church “changed the day.” No one understood this better than D. M. Canright— Ellen White's most significant contemporary critic. Significantly, our own research, done with full access to the resources available with today's Internet, substantiates the accuracy of his work to a very high degree. To follow is a chapter from one of his later works, brought up to date for our readers with annotations and a few minor corrections.

HOW SUNDAY OBSERVANCE ORIGINATED IN THE EASTERN ORTHODOX CHURCH

Chapter 7 From D. M. Canright's Book: *The Lord's Day From Neither Catholics Nor Pagans:*

An Answer To Seventh-day Adventism On This Subject.

Published in 1915

***NOTE: We have updated Canright's observations
with our italicized, blue-texted interlineations.***

⁵⁷ http://lent.goarch.org/saturday_of_lazarus/learn/

⁵⁸ https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Holy_Saturday

“This is a very important fact bearing on the Sunday question. Adventists are constantly pointing to "Rome," to the "Pope of Rome," to the "Roman Church," to the "Roman Papacy," to the "Roman Councils," and to the "Roman pagans "as the originators of Sunday observance. They publish "Rome's Challenge," "Rome's Catechism," etc. Their cause stands or falls with these claims. It is easy to show that all these assertions are groundless. The change of the day was made in the Eastern Greek Church in the time of the apostles, and was carried thence to Rome, not from Rome to the East. The proof of this is abundant.”

Both Ellen White and Bacchiocchi were “Papal-centric” in their single-minded obsession with Rome. This problem seriously-draws into question the integrity of their scholarship. White’s was based on her understandable ignorance of Church history and lack of formal education. Bacchiocchi, who had full access to many fine world-class libraries during his studies in Rome, had no excuse. His failure to address the Eastern Church in his Sabbath studies is unforgivable. The fact of the matter is that the “center of Christian gravity” and population was Constantinople, not Rome— from 330 CE until 1204 CE. This is never mentioned in Bacchiocchi’s Magna Opus “From Sabbath to Sunday.”⁵⁹ This easily explains the overwhelming dominance of the Eastern Church over the Western Church, and its complete dominance of all 7 of the major church councils.

“Generally people know little about the Greek Orthodox Church, if anything. Yet it is the oldest Church and numbers now 150 million members. Generally people suppose that Rome is the "Mother Church," which is not true. As we all know from the book of Acts, the Christian Church began in the East, in Asia, not in Rome.”

Greek Christianity birthed the massive Russian Orthodox Church, now more than 85 million members strong and which was a potent missionary force in Alaska during Ellen White’s and J.N. Andrew’s lifetimes. ⁶⁰ Neither of these Adventist pioneers mentioned either the Russian Orthodox Church or its missionary endeavors in Alaska. The effect that Greek Christianity had on the “Christianization” of Russia is fascinating: “The chronicles report that the Great Prince of Kiev sent embassies around the world to find the faith that best suited his nation and people. Traveling from nation to nation they visited Muslims and Jews at worship observing their forms of worship and pondering the way of life that each religion taught. The emissaries judged neither of these worthy religions suitable for Russia. Finally, they visited the city of Constantinople and attended Divine Liturgy in the great cathedral of Hagia Sophia. The Russians were dumbfounded by the richness and sublime beauty of the service, the church and the celestial singing of the Byzantine choirs in the lofty, domed cathedral. They breathlessly reported back to Kiev that in Hagia Sophia they were unable to tell if they were on earth or in Heaven. The choice was made, Byzantine Orthodoxy it would be.” ⁶¹

“It started in Jerusalem in the East; thence spread over Judea, Samaria, Asia Minor, Greece, Egypt, Damascus, and far-off Babylon on the Euphrates. Rome and the West came later.”

“Notice briefly; Jesus and all the apostles lived in the East, where the Greek language was spoken. Every book of the New Testament except Matthew was written in Greek. Revelation, written as late as CE 96, is in Greek. Largely the preaching of the apostles was in Greek. The Gospel began at Jerusalem in the East (Acts 2:1-11). Notice who heard that first sermon on Pentecost: "Parthians, and Medes, and Elamites, and the dwellers in Mesopotamia, and Judea, and Cappadocia, in Pontus, and Asia, Phrygia, and Pamphylia, in Egypt, and in the parts of Libya about Cyrene and strangers from Rome, Jews and proselytes, Cretes and Arabians, we do hear them speak in our tongues the wonderful works of God.”

*Some interesting side debates have sparked our idle interest, in light of these observations by Carright. Theologians are virtually unanimous that Paul did not write the **Book of Hebrews**. Classical rhetoricians are unanimous that he **DID** write it. Furthermore, the Eastern Churches have always accepted only the Septuagint LXX Old Testament, which was written entirely in Greek. The Protestant Bible is sourced in the Hebrew Old Testament. The Septuagint contained the so-called “Deuterocanonical” books, which*

⁵⁹ Notably, nowhere in Adventist theologian Dr. Samuel Bacchiocchi’s “*From Sabbath to Sunday*” is the movement of the Roman Capital from Rome to Constantinople acknowledged, particularly on Pp. 184-188 in the Chapter titled “The Primacy of Rome.”
http://www.friendsofsabbath.org/Further_Research/SDAs/sab2sun.pdf

⁶⁰ <http://www.akhistorycourse.org/articles/article.php?artID=201>

⁶¹ <http://www.pallasweb.com/ikons/russia.html>

*Protestants have derisively-denounced as "apocryphal" and "uninspired." Nobody disputes that they are accurate history, however. Furthermore, when Jesus and Paul quoted from the Old Testament, they always quoted from the Septuagint. The Books of Maccabees plainly spell out the fulfillment of the Daniel 8:14 prophecy of the "cleansing of the Temple," which occurred during the reign of Antiochus Epiphanes, when Judas Maccabees liberated the temple from Greek desecration. **Jesus endorsed this obvious interpretation of Daniel's prophecies when he celebrated Hanukkah in John 10:22-23. Hanukkah is a holiday that developed to explicitly-celebrate the liberation of the Temple and restoration of Jewish temple rites.** Adventism's 1844 and "Investigative Judgment" hoaxes were comically the direct result of Protestantism's unwise decision to adopt the Hebrew Old Testament and jettison the Septuagint. Canright's Protestant Bible was not an adequate resource for this most obvious refutation of Adventism's "central pillar." (See especially Chapter VII of [Seventh Day Adventism Renounced](#), by Canright)⁶²*

"Here were persons from far-off Parthia, Media, and Mesopotamia, away east on the Euphrates, about two thousand miles east of Rome; then comes Egypt and Libya; then Arabia; then Asia Minor; then Macedonia; then Crete - all these were in the East. Only one city in the West was named as being represented at Pentecost - Rome. These first converts carried the Gospel into all these far Eastern countries. The apostles soon followed and raised up Churches there. See where Paul went - Damascus, Arabia, Antioch, Ephesus, Troas, Corinth, Philippi, Galatia - all Grecian cities. Revelation is written to the seven Churches which are in Asia, none in Rome (Rev. 1:4). Peter's first letter seems to have been from Babylon (1 Pet. 5:13)."

All of the "Seven Churches" in the biblical-description of "Asia Minor" are located in the modern day Republic of Turkey, which did not exist when Canright was alive. Unfortunately, Ellen White never recanted her embarrassingly bone-headed endorsement of Josiah Litch's view that the Ottoman Empire collapsed in 1841.⁶³ It remains in [The Great Controversy](#) to this day. She was still alive when the supposedly "fallen" Ottoman Empire massively-defeated the combined armies and navies of Britain, France, Russia, New Zealand and Australia in World War 1.⁶⁴ The Ottoman Empire waited until 1923 to collapse, almost 80 years after White and Litch said it had. Furthermore, the Republic of Turkey "stepped into the shoes" of the moribund Ottoman Empire in 1923, and is now a vibrant economic powerhouse and staunch member of NATO.

"Paul was the first minister to visit Rome. This was not till CE. 65. (See Acts 28.) Even then Paul found only a few brethren at Rome, and these were Jews (Acts 28.), but no bishop or pope.

For three or four hundred years after Christ the Bishop of Rome had no authority even over a large share of the Churches at home in the West. Over the great Eastern Greek Churches the Pope had none whatever. On the other hand, for about three hundred years the Church at Rome was a Greek mission, supported and ruled over by the Greek Church, as we will soon see.

Long before Paul visited Rome great Churches of thousands had, for half a century, been established in the East, even in far-off nations outside the Roman Empire.

Notice another fact. All the first witnesses for the Lord's Day were not Romans, but Greeks living in the East. These were Barnabas, Justin Martyr, Dionysius, Ignatius of Antioch, Clement, Anatolius, Origen, Eusebius, etc. Not a single one of the first witnesses for the Lord's Day was a native of Rome. This speaks volumes as to the birthplace of Sunday observance. It was born in the East, not in Rome in the West.

What the Christian world owes to the Eastern, or Greek Church, is thus stated in the *Schaff-Herzog Encyclopedia*, Article "Greek Church": "This Church is the oldest in Christendom, and for several centuries she was the chief bearer [missionary] of our religion. She still occupies the sacred territory of primitive Christianity, and claims most of the apostolic sees, as Jerusalem, Antioch, and the Churches founded by Paul and John in Asia Minor and Greece. She produced the first Christian literature, Apologies of the Christian Faith, Refutation of Heretics, Commentaries of the Bible, Sermons, Homilies, and Ascetic Treatises. The great majority of the early Fathers, like the apostles themselves, used the Greek language. Polycarp, Ignatius, Clement of Alexandria, Origen, Eusebius, Athanasius, Basle, Gregory of Nazienzen, Gregory of Nyssia, Chrysostom, Cyril of Jerusalem, Cyril of Alexandria, the first Christian emperors since Constantine the Great, together with

⁶² http://members.tripod.com/~Help_for_SDA/SDAism-RENOUNCED-by-D-M-Canright.html#Chapter7

⁶³ <http://text.egwwritings.org/publication.php?pubtype=Book&bookCode=QSEW&pagenumber=50>

⁶⁴ <http://www.history.com/topics/world-war-i/battle-of-ga>

a host of martyrs and confessors, along with the Greek communion. She elaborated the ecumenical dogmas of the Trinity and Christology, and ruled the first seven ecumenical councils which were all held in Constantinople or its immediate neighborhood (Nicaea, Chalcedon, and Ephesus). Her palmy period during the first five centuries will ever claim the grateful respect of the whole Christian world."

The reader is directed to our comprehensive new chapter on the Seven Ecumenical Councils, where Ellen's fraudulent assertion that the Sabbath was "pressed lower and lower" is unequivocally-debunked. At none of the Ecumenical Councils was the Sabbath ever discussed. Perhaps Canright was merely being gentlemanly in not raising this glaring instance of Ellen White's dishonesty. One glaring omission in Canright's (and Ellen White's) historical analysis is the fact that neither discuss the obvious importance of the move of the Roman Empire capital from Rome to Constantinople in 330 CE, in the process moving the "center of Christian gravity" completely away from Rome until 1204.^{65 66}

"Notice that the Eastern, or Greek Church, ruled the first seven general councils which were all held in the East, none of them in the West, or papal territory. The date of these seven councils was CE. 325, 381, 431, 451, 557, 680, and 787. All these were dominated by the Eastern Greek Church, not one by Rome. They were presided over by Eastern Bishops, and resolved disputes that cropped up in the Eastern churches. These take us down this side [of] the latest date Adventists fix for the change of the Sabbath.

Hence, if the Roman Church, or Pope, or Papacy changed the Sabbath, it could only have changed it in the West, for it had no authority or influence over these hundreds of great Greek Churches in the East, many of them outside of Roman rule.

Canright is not correct here. All of the Greek Churches WERE subject to Roman Rule, and both Greek Christianity AND the Roman Empire were headquartered in Constantinople, not Rome as commonly assumed by Adventists.

The following is from the Right Rev. Bishop Raphael, head of the Greek Church in America. Few Protestants are aware of the importance and number of that great primitive Church. Read it:

'The official name of our Church is 'The Holy Orthodox-Catholic Apostolic Church.' It was founded in the time of the apostles and by the twelve apostles, Jesus Christ Himself being the Chief Corner Stone, beginning on the Day of Pentecost (Acts 2). Our Church has never been subject to the Roman Church or to the Latin Popes or to the Papacy. The Roman Church herself was a Greek mission for nearly three hundred years, and the Greek language was the tongue in which the Liturgy, or Mass, was said in the City of Rome.'

This statement of Canright struck us at first glance as obviously false. We knew that Latin very early on dominated the Roman Mass. But sure enough, the Roman Mass was pronounced in Greek for at least the first 200 years of Christianity: "It is certain that the liturgy at Rome was at one time said in Greek (to the end of the second century apparently)."⁶⁷ Canright's scholarship is validated.

"The first seven General Councils, beginning with Nicaea, CE. 325, on down to 787, which were the only General Councils acknowledged alike by Eastern and Western Christendom, were all held within the domain of the four ancient Eastern Patriarchates. They were dominated by the Holy Orthodox-Catholic Apostolic Church. Even the Popes of Rome, as in the case of Pope Leo in the matter of the exaltation of the Patriarchate of Constantinople to an equality in temporal and spiritual powers, to Rome (vide Acts of the Fourth General Council-Chalcedon), were compelled to assent, like all others, to the Decrees of the General Councils, which latter were always higher than Popes or Patriarchs.

"Rome never dominated any of the first seven General Councils; on the contrary, they dictated to her and in some cases, e. g., Pope Honorius, excommunicated and condemned Popes as heretics.

As we have pointed out elsewhere, all of the first Seven General Councils were held within a 200 mile radius of the Roman Capital in Constantinople. Rome was a whopping 800 miles away from

⁶⁵ <https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Constantinople>

⁶⁶ http://www.friendsofsabbath.org/Further_Research/SDAs/sab2sun.pdf (see especially Pp. 184-188 "The Primacy of Rome")

⁶⁷ <http://www.catholic-convert.com/wp-content/uploads/Documents/KyrieinGreek.pdf>

Constantinople. None of the disputes that obsessed the first Seven Councils originated from Rome, nor did Rome have much say, if any, in the doctrinal resolution of those disputes.

"The name 'Catholic' was common to all Orthodox Churches, Eastern or Western, Greek or Roman, for eight hundred years after Christ. Rome, in the West, exclusively assumed the name 'Catholic,' yet prefixing it by the appellation 'Roman,' by default on the part of the schismatics within her own patriarchate, in the sixteenth century; but the Holy Orthodox-Catholic Apostolic Church of the East has never from the first been known by any other name than 'Catholic,' nor has she set aside the title in any official document. It is her inalienable property as the Mother Church of Christendom (vide Nicene Creed, Article 9), which, without a single omission, has been from the first proclamation read in our churches. Rome and all Western Christian Churches have never denied to her the title of the 'Mother Church' nor 'Catholic.' Her Apostolicity and Catholicity have been and are acknowledged in all lands and in all ages.

"Our Church, which includes all the very first Churches founded by the apostles, such as Jerusalem, Antioch, Ephesus, Corinth, Alexandria, and even Rome, for the first three hundred years, has kept the 'first day of the week' as a day of rest and in holy remembrance of the Resurrection of our Blessed Lord from the dead. From the dawn of Christianity she bears witness that it has been the Sacred Day on which the faithful assembled for the partaking of the Lord's Supper, for the saying of public prayer, and the hearing of sermons.

The Persian and Indian Churches were also founded by some of the original 12 Apostles, and are adamant they worshiped from their foundings on Sunday, as taught to them by their founding Apostles.

"Our Holy Traditions, the Sub-Apostolic, Anti-Nicene and Sub-Nicene Fathers, as well as all of our historians, also bear testimony to this fact. Under the head of the Fourth Commandment in our Catechism, which is accepted by the whole Holy Orthodox Catholic Apostolic Church, this instruction is given. And both the Roman Church and all other Churches which regard the authority of antiquity, calling themselves Protestant, agree on this very fact, viz., that the Lord's Day (the first day of the week) has been observed from the morning of the Resurrection till this moment.

This is the "money shot," a historically bulletproof claim that remains unchallenged to this day by Adventists.^{68 69} Adventism has known about this claim since Canright first included these quotes in his book around the turn of the century, and Ellen White never acknowledged these claims of the Greek Church, let alone addressed them, let alone disputed them, let alone refuted them. They stand unchallenged by the founding Prophet of Seventh Day Adventism and Adventist Sabbath Scholar Dr. Samuele Bacchiocchi.

"The Holy Orthodox-Catholic Apostolic Church consists to-day of not only the four ancient Patriarchates of Constantinople, Alexandria, Antioch, and Jerusalem, but of the great Churches of Russia, Greece, Serbia, Bulgaria, Romania, Montenegro, Albania, Cyprus, Mount Sinai, and the four independent Churches of Austria, etc., and here in America, under the Holy Synod of Russia, a prosperous Mission, consisting of different national Churches, which extends from the northern limits of Canada to the City of Mexico. All these Churches are equal in authority and united in Doctrine, Discipline and Worship. She is the same Church without break, in her succession of bishops, traditions and teaching, from the days of the twelve apostles, when they met in the Upper Room at Jerusalem before there was ever heard of or thought of a Pope in Rome, and when St. James, spoken of as the first Bishop of Jerusalem, presided over the council of the Apostles and Brethren, when they considered the admission of the Gentiles into the Christian Faith.

"The Holy Orthodox-Catholic Apostolic Church has never perceptibly changed in Doctrine, Discipline or Worship since Apostolic Days, and numbers to-day about 150,000,000 members."

NOTE: The Eastern Orthodox Church today has around 300 million members, roughly-doubling in size since Canright's day.⁷⁰ Neither Ellen White nor Canright seemed to be aware of the existence of the Oriental Orthodox Church, which today boasts some 84 million members.⁷¹ Oriental Orthodoxy has not been in communion with, or under the control of either Rome or the Eastern Church since the CE 452 Council of

68 <http://www.goarch.org/ourfaith/ourfaith7118>

69 http://orthodoxwiki.org/Lord's_Day

70 https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Eastern_Orthodox_Church

71 https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Oriental_Orthodoxy

Chalcedon. The mere existence of the defiant Oriental Orthodox church refutes White's argument that papal superiority was established in 538 CE! To follow, Canright included the following letter received in response to his inquiry from one of the top Orthodox leaders in America:

RAPHAEL HAWAWEENY,

Bishop of Brooklyn, and Head of the Syrian Holy Orthodox-Catholic Apostolic Mission in America March 30, 1914.

Their catechism is very plain on this point. The Longer Catechism of the Greek Church says:

"Is the Sabbath kept in the Eastern Church?

"It is not kept strictly speaking.

"How does the Christian Church obey the fourth commandment?

"She still every six days keeps the seventh, only not the last day of the seven days, which is the Sabbath, but the first day in every week, which is the day of the Resurrection, or Lord's Day.

"Since when do we keep the day of the Resurrection?

"From the very time of Christ's Resurrection."

The catechisms of a Church are the very best authority as to what that Church believes. Here are the Churches raised up by the apostles themselves and have continued this ever since. They have always kept Sunday. Here is a clear and emphatic testimony from the highest authority in that great Eastern Church. All her historians, bishops, councils, catechisms, and traditions agree in witnessing to the observance of the Lord's Day from the very beginning of the Church. This is not a mere theory, but an actual historical fact witnessed to today by one hundred and fifty million members. And all outside history confirms this.

Ellen White and J.N. Andrews never mentioned the "Great Schism" of 1054,⁷² where the Roman Church permanently split from the recalcitrant Eastern Church some 500 years before the Protestant Reformation; nor did either of them seem to know that the soldiers of the Roman Crusades sacked and looted the headquarters of the Eastern Church in Constantinople in 1204.⁷³ White and Andrews believed in an embarrassingly-naive fairy tale about a monolithic papacy that supposedly dictated to all of Christianity its doctrines

"All the first writers to defend the faith against both pagans and heretics were members of this early Eastern Church. None were Romans. The fundamental doctrines of Christianity now held in common by the Greek, the Roman, and Protestant Churches were first formulated and settled by the Eastern Church, not by the Roman Church. Her great scholars and teachers, her Christian literature, her preachers, and world-wide influence, far exceeded that of Rome and the West for over six hundred years. Rev. A. H. Lewis, Seventh-Day Baptist, admits that the Greek Church was the Mother Church.

He says: " In the changes of the first four centuries after Christ, the Eastern Church, which was really the Mother Church, and the home of primitive Christianity, was kept unaffected by way of influence which started the strong current of empire westward by way of Rome. But the truth is that a very large factor of church history is the Eastern current, and especially so in regard to the earliest ideas and practices, that of the Apostolic Period." (Sabbath and Sunday, pp. 220, 221)

This is true, and is an important concession from a Sabbatarian confirming the above from Bishop Raphael. Justin Martyr states in explicit language that as early at least as CE. 140 that Mother Church was keeping Sunday. (See previous chapter.) How then could Rome, two hundred years later, introduce Sunday to this old Church? How could Sunday originate with the pagan Romans in the time of Constantine, CE. 321?"

Canright largely seemed to be unaware of the massive effect of St. Ignatius, who was a direct disciple of John and who succeeded Peter as the Bishop of Antioch. Ignatius harshly denounced Sabbath-keeping as the Judaizing heresy in his Letter to the Magnesians at around 107 CE.⁷⁴

⁷² <http://www.britannica.com/event/Schism-of-1054>

⁷³ <http://www.roman-empire.net/constant/1203-1204.html>

⁷⁴ <http://www.newadvent.org/fathers/0105.htm>

It was her apostles and consecrated missionaries who carried the Gospel to Rome and the West and Christianized them. It was not Rome and the West that taught the East. It was exactly the other way. Especially was this true of the observance of the Lord's Day. It was carried from the East to the West, from the Greeks to the Romans. It was not pagan Romans, as Adventists say, who introduced the keeping of the Lord's Day to the great Eastern Church, but it was the Eastern Church that carried that day West and taught the converted pagans to observe it.

The following is from *The Historians of the History of the World*, Article "Papacy," Vol. VIII, p. 520: "But the history of Latin Christianity was not begun for some considerable (it cannot but be indefinable) part of the first three centuries. The Church of Rome, and most, if not all, the Churches of the West, were, if we may so speak, Greek religious colonies. Their language was Greek, their organization Greek, their Scriptures Greek, and many vestiges and traditions show that their rituals and their liturgies, were in Greek. Through Greek the connection of the Churches of Rome and the West was constantly kept up with the East."

The *Britannica*, Article "Papacy," says that the Church at Rome was not founded till CE. 41-54. Then it says of the fourth century: "The Roman Church, having ceased to know the Greek language, found itself practically excluded from the world of Greek Christianity." "During the fourth century it is to be noticed that, generally speaking, the Roman Church played a comparatively insignificant part in the West."

These linguistic differences between Eastern and Western churches were profound, and quite likely led to the Christian Churches' first major schism, following the Council of Chalcedon of 452 CE. At that Council, what we now know as the "Oriental Orthodox" Churches split away over the issue of whether Christ has two natures (as the majority of Christians thought); or whether he was strictly one nature, as the "Oriental Orthodox" insisted. The Oriental Orthodox Churches included Egypt's Copts, the Indian Syrian-Malankara Church, the Armenian Apostolic Church, and the Ethiopian Orthodox, among others.⁷⁵ Needless to say, Ellen White seemed to be blissfully unaware of the Schism of 452 CE, and the obvious refutation of her dates when "Papal Supremacy" or "Papal Primacy" supposedly-occurred. Her imaginary date was fatally-compromised when 25 percent of all Christians broke communion with the other 75 percent of Christendom, in expressed and explicit defiance of the Roman Pope's wishes.

"These historical facts show that Rome for centuries was taught and ruled by the Eastern Greek Church, not the East by Rome. The following is from the noted scholar, the late Dean Stanley, Professor of Ecclesiastical History, Oxford, in his "History of the Eastern Church." It is of the highest authority. He says: "By whatever name we call it 'Eastern,' 'Greek,' or 'Orthodox' - it carries us back, more than any other existing institution, to the earliest scenes and times of the Christian religion." (Lecture 7. p. 56)

"Jerusalem, Antioch, Alexandria, are centers of local interest which none can see or study without emotion, and the Churches which have sprung up in those regions retain the ancient customs of the East, and of the primitive age of Christianity, long after they have died out everywhere else" (page 57). Again Stanley says: "We know, and it is enough to know, that the Gospel, the original Gospel, which came from the East, now rules in the West" (page 95).

The Church in far-off Eastern Asia, Chaldea, the home of Abraham," was the earliest of all Christian missions-the mission of Thaddeus to Agbarus" (page 58). A delegate from that Church came to the Council of Nice, CE. 325.

"The early Roman Church was but a colony of Greek Christians or Grecized Jews. The earliest Fathers in the Western Church, Clement, Irenaeus, Hermas, Hippolytus, wrote in Greek. The early Popes were not Italians, but Greeks" (page 65)."

This view of the dominance of Eastern Christianity (which after all was headquartered in Constantinople, the capital of the Roman Empire from 330 CE until 1204) over Rome was strongly endorsed by preeminent Protestant historian, Philip Schaff. Unfortunately, Schaff gave his first historical lectures in 1844 in the German Language at an American Seminary, and his historical masterpieces were also written in German originally.^{76 77}

75 <https://www.svots.edu/content/beyond-dialogue-quest-eastern-and-oriental-orthodox-unity-today>

76 <http://www.ccel.org/s/schaff/history/About.htm>

77 <http://www.ccel.org/ccel/schaff>

“Consider carefully these facts. It was the Eastern Greek Church which sent missionaries to Rome, founded that Church, furnished it her teachers and supported it as a mission for centuries. For over two hundred years the observance of the Lord's Day was fully and universally established among all the thousands of the old Eastern Churches before the Church at Rome in the West ceased to be taught and supported as a Greek mission. Read the previous chapter. This shows that Sunday-keeping went from the East to the West, not from Rome to the East. Barnabas, Justin Martyr, and others show that the Greek Churches were all observing the resurrection day in the first part of the second century when they were yet sending teachers and pastors to Rome. Would not these carry their home custom there and teach it to the Roman Church? Certainly, and that is the reason why the West and the East were always agreed about keeping the same day, the Lord's Day. Did that "mission" force on all the old, long established, powerful Eastern Churches a Western Roman pagan day of worship, and that without a word of protest from these Apostolic Churches? Candid men will not accept such an unreasonable assertion.”

The Romans never had a weekly day of worship, for ANY of their deities. The closest resemblance between worship of the Roman Sun God and Christianity was Christmas. Even then, Christianity worshiped Christ as the Creator of the Sun and set the day of Christmas celebration exactly 9 months from the date that Christian tradition holds was the day of Christ's "conception," March 25.⁷⁹ We know of no theory of our Solar System that argues that the Sun had a nine-month gestation period.

“Again I quote from Dean Stanley. "She [the Eastern Church] is the mother, and Rome the daughter" (page 66)." All the first founders of theology were Easterners. Till the time of Augustine (355-430) no divine had arisen in the West; till the time of Gregory the Great (596-604) none had filled the papal chair. The doctrine of Athanasius [the Trinity] was received, not originated, by Rome" (pages 71, 72). This indicates how dependent Rome was for centuries on the East and how far behind the East Rome was in learning and influence.

Again: "There can be no doubt that the civilization of the Eastern Church was far higher than that of the Western" (page 76). "The whole force and learning of early Christianity was in the East. A general council in the West would have been an absurdity. With the exception of the few writers of North Africa, there were no Latin defenders of the faith" (page 100). For over four hundred years the East was the mother, the missionary, the teacher, the leader, the ruler, while the West was the child, the mission, the taught, the led, the one to receive, not give. With the rest of the Gospel the East brought the Lord's Day to Rome and taught it to the less educated Roman.

Here is a notable fact: While the Jewish Christians, and perhaps a few Gentiles living among them, continued for a while to keep the Jewish Sabbath, all Christians, Jews or Gentiles, without a single exception, kept the Lord's Day. Not one single Church in all the early history of the Church has ever been found which did not hold their assemblies on Sunday. Let Adventists name one if they can. They never have, and never can. Another notable fact is: While there was some dispute with a few about the Sabbath, there is not the slightest hint of any dispute among the widely scattered and differing sects of Christians about the Lord's Day. Only one reason can be given for this; namely, the custom of keeping the resurrection day must have begun at the very first with the apostles and was universally accepted by all from the beginning.

It is highly-doubtful that any Gentiles ever kept the Sabbath, since circumcision and full conversion to Judaism was required before the Sabbath could be kept. That is the whole bone of contention in Acts 15. Most of the Gentiles that converted to Christianity in the First Century were Greek, and undisguised Greek hatred of both circumcision and the Sabbath is a matter of historical record in the Book of Maccabees. The initiation rite of Christianity was baptism, not circumcision. Jesus was both baptized and circumcised, and yet The Great Commission only mentions baptism.⁸⁰ The Great Commission ALONE refutes Sabbatarianism.

⁷⁸ http://www.friendsofsabbath.org/Further_Research/SDAs/sab2sun.pdf (See especially pages 184-188 in Dr. Samuele Bacchiocchi's "The Primacy of the Church at Rome." The movement of the Capital of the Roman Empire from Rome to Constantinople, where it remained for 800 years is a fact of critical and unparalleled magnitude in the analysis of Western versus Eastern primacy of the Church. That Bacchiocchi never mentions this is both baffling and unforgivable.

⁷⁹ http://penelope.uchicago.edu/~grout/encyclopaedia_romana/calendar/invictus.html

⁸⁰ <https://www.biblegateway.com/passage/?search=Matthew%2028:16-20&version=NIV>

Starting out from Jerusalem after Pentecost, the apostles and teachers went everywhere carrying the practice of the Mother Church to all nations.

"The Lord's Day," Rev. 1:10, was thus accepted by all, Rome with the rest. Here is another great fact. Ignatius, Justin Martyr, Tertullian, and others wrote extensively against all heresies, but not one ever mentioned Sunday observance as a heresy, though it was often mentioned incidentally as a well-known existing Christian practice.

The "Advent History of the Sabbath," edition of 1912, makes this confession: "Although Irenaeus writes five books against the heresies, it is rather strange that he himself nowhere alludes to Sunday" (page 334). If the Lord's Day had been a heresy lately introduced from the pagan Romans, he certainly would have named it. His silence is proof that Sunday was not a heretical, pagan institution, for he wrote against all that. Weigh this fact well.

THE EASTER CONTROVERSY

This question furnishes strong proof that the Lord's Day originated with the beginning of the Church itself, and was universally observed by all Christians from the very first. Of this controversy Dean Stanley says: "It was the most ancient controversy in the Church." (History of the Eastern Church, p. 173) It began immediately after the death of the apostles. The *Schaff-Herzog Encyclopedia*, Article "Easter," says: "In the early Church there was no uniformity in the day observed." Some Churches celebrated it on the fourteenth day of the Jewish month Nisan, the day of the Passover, no matter what day of the week it came on. The Churches of Syria, Mesopotamia, Cilicia, and Asia Minor followed this date. Others celebrated it on the day of the Resurrection, no matter what day of the month it came on. The Eastern Churches of Egypt, Greece, Palestine, Pontus, and the Church of Rome followed this custom. This shows that the apostles felt that it was a matter of indifference and had left no definite instruction about it.

The above named Encyclopedia says: "In the second century this difference was the occasion of a protracted controversy which agitated all Christendom." In CE 154 Polycarp visited Rome and tried to reach an agreement but failed. In 197, Victor, Bishop of Rome, threatened to excommunicate those who held to Nisan 15th, but no one obeyed him. Even the Churches in the West paid no regard to his order, while the Eastern Churches condemned and defied him. This shows how little influence the Bishop of Rome had at that date. This controversy continued to divide and agitate the Church till it was settled by the Council of Nice CE. 325. The council says: "It has been determined by common consent," indicating that it was not a matter of vital importance either way.

Remember that this question was settled by the Eastern Church, not by Rome, for this council was entirely dominated by the East."

To this day, the Western Church's "Easter Celebration" rarely falls on the same day as the Eastern Churches' "Pascha Celebration." Not only do the churches not give Resurrection Day the same title, but cannot even agree to hold it on the same day.⁸¹ So much for Papal Supremacy. Notably, neither White nor Canright ever mentioned the fact that "Easter" is mentioned in Acts 12:4,⁸² which is more accurately translated as "commemoration of the Passion and Resurrection of Christ" in the Orthodox Study Bible. Adventists tie themselves into knots, scouring history for support for a "Pagan Origins" of "Easter, which was based all along on a ridiculous and discredited theory advanced by the Venerable Bede.⁸³

Now notice: This simple question as to whether Easter was to be celebrated on a certain day of the month, or on a certain day of the week, divided all Christendom in a hot debate for nearly three hundred years, yet it pertained to only one day in the whole year! Nor did it pertain to more than a few hours' service even in that one day. Now compare this with the question of the Lord's Day. This came every week during the entire year, fifty-two days, and it embraced the whole day, twenty-four hours every week, yet during all these three hundred years of the early Church there was not one word of division over the observance of the Lord's Day. The question never came up for discussion as to any difference between any parts of the Church, East or West, North or South, Greece or Rome. During the entire Easter controversy the Lord's Day was often mentioned, but only incidentally as an institution well known to all and equally regarded by all, East or West. This uniformity could not have been obtained unless all the apostles had agreed in it and had established it at the very beginning of the Church so that there was no question about it later. Opponents of the Lord's Day have never been able to satisfactorily answer this.

⁸¹ <http://www.johnsanidopoulos.com/2012/04/pascha-or-easter-or-both.html>

⁸² <https://www.biblegateway.com/passage/?search=Acts+12%3A4&version=KJV>

⁸³ <http://taylormarshall.com/2013/04/was-easter-pagan-holiday-venerable-bede.html>

The Eastern Church's "Pascha" celebration involves much more than a "few hours' service," as Canright stated. First and foremost, Holy Week features services once or twice every day, leading up to Pascha. And then there is the celebration of the two once-a-year Christian Sabbath Festivals on either end of Holy Week. It commences with a lengthy liturgy early in the morning, then another on the afternoon of the Great Sabbath, with yet a third liturgy held beginning at 11 pm on Saturday night. The liturgy celebrated at that time is the much longer liturgy of St. Basil, which takes a solid three hours all by itself. The liturgy of St. Basil is only trotted out during Holy Week. The Pascha liturgy does not end until around 2 am Sunday morning, whereupon the Great "Pascha" Feast commences, which lasts until 5 am or so. The Eastern Churches do not even hold anything resembling a normal Church service at the usual time on Resurrection Sunday morning, with only a desultory "Agape Vespers" celebrated at 1 pm. Thus, the Eastern Churches' Resurrection Day celebration bears little, if any resemblance to the Western Church's "Easter" celebration.

Further, while there were some still who kept the Jewish Sabbath for a while, all these invariably kept the Lord's Day. No exception to this can be found whether orthodox or heretic. All observe the Lord's Day. Even Sabbatarians are compelled to admit this.

Elder Andrews says: "Those Fathers who hallow the Sabbath do generally associate with it the festival called by them the Lord's Day." (Testimony of the Fathers, p. 11)

Yes, while some did, for a while, keep the Sabbath, yet even they, in every instance, also kept the Lord's Day.

"I have read this chapter and find it correct. - BISHOP RAPHAEL."

Bishop Raphael was educated in three seminaries: Damascus, Constantinople, and Kiev, Russia. He has twice received the degree of "Doctor of Divinity." He is the head of the Greek Orthodox Church in America. Hence, he is well qualified to state correctly the position of the Eastern Church on this question.

CANRIGHT: NO WEEKLY HEATHEN WORSHIP OR REST DAYS

Chapter Five From: The Lord's Day From Neither Catholics nor Pagans

"One of the chief arguments which Seventh-Day Adventists make against Sunday observance is this: They say that the pagan nations, especially the Romans, regarded Sunday as a holiday, or festival day: a day of worship of their heathen gods, particularly the sun, on every Sunday, hence Sun-day. When these pagans professed Christianity they gradually brought into the Church this pagan custom of a Sunday festival day. Then the apostate Roman Church adopted it from these heathens. So now we are keeping a pagan, papal day, hateful to God. Their literature against Sunday-keeping is largely based on this theory as fundamental. Their "History of the Sabbath" is saturated with this argument. It bristles in their tracts, pamphlets, books, and sermons everywhere and all the time. Their children and members believe it as firmly as they believe the Bible. Hence, they abominate Sunday observance and delight in showing contempt for it in every possible way. If they are wrong here the very bottom drops out of their anti-Sunday arguments."

That Paganism was instantly obsoleted and became diseased and gangrenous after the introduction of vibrant Christianity is demonstrated by the laughably-failed attempt by Julian the Apostate to reintroduce Paganism during his tenure as Roman Emperor. Noted Protestant Philip Schaff has documented and analyzed Julian's complete lack of success in his all-out effort to "modernize" Paganism with Christian practices. Never was Christianity modified with Pagan practices, according to Schaff.⁸⁴

"Read a few of their assertions. Elder J. H. Waggoner says: "I only take it upon me to fully and clearly show that the Sunday has its origin as a day of regard and observance in paganism and the Papacy."

"I shall show that the authority, the name and the sacredness of Sunday are entirely of pagan origin." "Sunday is in every feature a heathen institution." (Replies to Canright, pp. 125, 126,133) Also "History of the Sabbath," 1912, page 315: "Sunday was indeed the wild solar holiday of all pagan times."

84 http://www.ccel.org/s/schaff/history/3_ch01.htm

Scores of such statements are found in their works. By these assertions they frighten the common people into giving up Sunday, because they are not able to answer them. All such statements are absolutely untrue as the following evidence will abundantly prove.

I do not accuse the brethren of any intent to deceive in this matter. Till nearly the last years I was with them, I myself taught the same thing. This they now quote against me. I did not mean to be untruthful, but, without personal investigation for myself, simply followed our older authors. I know that the other ministers did the same, and their ministers and writers do the same now. Their quotations on this subject in their recent publications easily prove that. It is not intentional dishonesty, but a lack of a candid investigation of historical facts as they really are.

In my city there is a great Public Library, of 146,000 volumes, containing all up-to-date publications available. Each department has a clerk who will quickly bring any book or article on any subject wanted. Here I have found much contained in these pages. An editorial in a leading daily says:

"One of the outstanding features of modern life is the fact that specialized knowledge is always on tap for inquiring minds. The first fruits of research may be procured at any up-to-date and extensive library, such as the one which Grand Rapids is fortunate enough to possess."

Imagine what Canright would have been able to do with the Internet at his fingertips! And yet his research and analysis remains amazingly fresh and accurate. All of the following opinions of historical experts were easily-confirmed with quick Google searches. We challenge Adventists to make even the slightest dent in the following historical assertions.

Knowing that our great state and national institutions of learning maintain specialists in every line of knowledge, I decided to apply to them for information on this subject. These learned scholars would have no inducement to be one-sided or unfair. These specialists have every possible means of information at hand and devote a lifetime of study to their particular branch of knowledge. It is their business to furnish to inquirers the results of their research. Hence I drew up a list of questions fully covering every possible phase of this subject, as will be seen. I carefully avoided giving any intimation of my views, or of the use I wished to make of their replies, so as not in any way to influence their answers.

The world-renowned British Museum is the highest authority to which I could refer, so I will give this first. I quote my letter to them with their answer to each question one after the other:

Grand Rapids, Mich., Dec. 8, 1911

British Museum, Department of History

London, England.

Dear Sir:

For the information of many who are deeply interested in this subject, would you kindly answer briefly the enclosed questions? D. M. CANRIGHT.

Here is the answer:

Department of Greek and Roman Antiquities,

British Museum

London, England Dec. 21, 1911

Sir:

I am commanded by the Assistant Keeper of Greek and Roman Antiquities to reply as follows to your questions on the ancient week: Q. 1. Did the pagan Romans and Greeks ever have any regular weekly day of rest from secular work? Ans. No. Q. 2. Did they have any regular weekly festival day? Ans. No. Q. 3. Did they have any regular weekly day when they assembled for pagan worship? Ans. No. Q. 4. Did they have any special day of the week when individuals went to the temples to pray or make offerings? Ans. No; both for Greeks and Romans the month was the unit and not the week. The Greek calendar varied in different states but the month was generally divided into three periods of ten

days. The Romans reckoned from three fixed points in the month, the Kalend or first, the Nones fifth or seventh, the Ides thirteenth or fifteenth. These subdivisions in themselves had no religious significance. Also in the Roman calendars were nundinal, or market days, at periods of eight days, or, as the Romans reckoned time. On these days farm work, etc., stopped and citizens flocked into the town markets. To some extent this may be a regular stoppage of secular work; but it had no religious significance, except that it was considered an evil omen when the nundinal coincided with other festival days, e. g., the Nones. The nundinal period seems derived from a blundering reminiscence of a quarter of a lunar period, and there seems no connection with the later seven days' week (see below). Q. 5. As Sunday was sacred to the Sun, Monday to the Moon, Saturday to Saturn, etc., were those supposed deities worshipped on their own particular days more than on any other days? Ans. No; the old worship of the gods was disappearing when the seven-day week came about. The significance of the deities' names was astrological, not religious, e.g., if a person were born on Monday, the moon would influence his horoscope, but the moon was never an object of common worship. Q. 6. When was our week of seven days first introduced into the Roman calendar? Ans. There are traces in the literature of the late republic (first cent. B.C.) that the Romans used the week of seven days for astrological purposes, in connection with the many Eastern superstitions of the period. It was probably the third century, A.D. before the seven day week came into common use. Q.7. From whom did the Romans learn the week of seven days? Ans. From the Jews, alternately the Assyrians and Babylonians; the names were probably fixed by the Hellenistic Greeks. Q. 8. Did the pagan Greeks ever adopt in common life, or in their calendar, the week of seven days? Ans. No. Q. 9. Did Apollo, the Sun god, either among the Romans or Greeks, have any special day on which he was worshipped with prayers or offerings more than on any other day? Ans. There were certain set festivals at various temples; these were annual, not weekly. Q. 10. Did the pagan reverence for Sunday have anything to do in influencing Christians to select that day as their rest day? Ans. No; it can hardly be said that there was any special reverence for Sunday in pagan times (see answer to No. 5).

I am, sir, Your obedient servant,

F. N. PRYCE.

“You see this historian gives an unqualified NO to all the questions. Notice particularly that the names of the days of the week were all only astrological, not religious. There was no religious sacredness attached to a day because it was named after some planet as Sun-day - Sun's day - or Mon-day, Moon's day, etc. The sun was not worshiped on Sunday, nor the moon on Monday, nor Saturn on Saturday, etc. Also notice carefully that Apollo was not worshiped on Sunday or on any weekday. His festival days were annual, not weekly, as Adventists have taught. Then note that there was no special reverence for Sunday in pagan times. Here again Adventists are proved to be entirely wrong. This again destroys all their contention that Sunday sacredness originated with pagans. The proof is abundant that no such thing was ever known among the pagan Romans or Greeks. Hence, Sunday-keeping, or Sunday sacredness, could not have originated with them.

Our next witness is from the Smithsonian Institute, Washington, D.C. This great institution of learning is supported by the United States Government. Here the highest qualified specialists in every line of knowledge are employed. Here they have access to every possible means of up-to-date information in the Library of Congress, etc. It will be seen that I addressed nearly the same questions to this learned body and that the answers are the same as from the British Museum: Smithsonian Institute, Washington, D.C. September 23, 1914:

REV. D. M. CANRIGHT Grand
Rapids, Mich.

Dear Sir:

I have referred your letter of September 14th to Dr. I. M. Casonawicz, Assistant Curator of Old World Archeology, who furnishes the following replies to your several inquiries: 1. Did the pagan Romans and Greeks ever have any regular weekly day of rest from secular work? Ans. No. 2. Did they ever have any weekly festival day? Ans. No. 3. Did they have any regular weekly day when they assembled for pagan worship? Ans. No. 4. When was our calendar of the week first introduced among the Romans and Greeks? Ans. The division of the month into weeks was introduced into Rome from Egypt. The date is uncertain, but it was not earlier than the second century, A.D. 5. When was our calendar of the week first recognized in Roman law? Ans. The earliest Sunday legislation was enacted under Constantine I, 321 A.D. No legislation of earlier date on the division of the month is known. 6. As each day of the week was dedicated to some god, as Sunday to the Sun, Monday to the Moon, Saturday to Saturn, etc., was each of these supposed deities worshiped on one particular day more than any other day? Ans. No. 7. Did the pagan Romans have any one special day in the week when individuals, if they chose, went to make prayers or offerings to

their gods? Ans. No. 8. Did Apollo have any special day in the week or month more than any other day when he was worshiped with prayers or offerings? Ans. No.

Very truly yours,

R. RATHBORN

Assistant Sec. in charge of National Museum.

“Here we have two of the most reliable witnesses in the world perfectly agreeing. If their testimony is worth anything, then Adventists must revise their theory that Sunday sacredness, or Sunday festivals, or Sunday rest days originated with pagans.

But here is another witness confirming the other two but giving the answer more in detail. Harvard University, Cambridge, Mass., is the oldest and best known university in America. I addressed the same questions there. George F. Moore, professor of Ancient Roman and Greek History, furnished me the following complete account of all the Roman and Greek festivals. It completely destroys all claim for any pagan sacredness of Sunday.

Professor Moore wrote me as follows:

Divinity Ave.

Cambridge, Mass.

May 24, 1913

Dear Sir:

There are two seven-day weeks: the Jewish week, with a Sabbath on the seventh day; and the Astrological week, with days named after the sun, moon, and five planets, in our order determined by the theories of astrology, but without any day of rest. The combination of the two is Christian.

The Astrological week first appears in Greek and Latin writings about the beginning of the Christian era. Its antecedents are unknown. It had no use in ordinary life. Abstinence from labor on the seventh day, or on one day in seven, is a distinctively Jewish institution. The edict of Constantine (321 A.D.) closing the courts on Sunday and prohibiting some kinds of labor on that day, is the first recognition of a seven-day week in Roman law. The ancient Romans had a market day every eight days, when the peasants came to town to market, but it was in no sense a day of rest. In the old Roman calendar there were many days when the courts were closed and other public and private business was not done. They had also many festivals on which the people left their ordinary occupation to take part in the celebrations, but these have no periodicity like that of the week.

Very truly yours,

GEORGE F. MOORE

In a second letter he says:

REV. D. M. CANRIGHT

Dear Sir:

In reply to your inquiries in your letter of November 23rd, I would say: 1. The planetary week in which the days were named from their regents, Saturday, Sunday, etc., was an invention of the astrologers, probably in the second century, B.C., and has no relation to religion or influence upon it. Saturn, for example, was not worshiped on Saturday, nor Jupiter on Thursday. The festivals of the several gods were never weekly festivals, nor did they occur on days fixed by other divisions of the month, say the tenth day. 2. The religious calendars of the Greek cities were independent of one another and underwent many changes in the course of time. Our knowledge of these calendars is incomplete; only that of Athens is pretty fully known. The festivals fell in certain months, and on certain days of the month. Thus, at Athens, where the first month of the year, Hekabombaion, began at the new moon following the summer solstice (roughly corresponding, therefore, to our July), there was a festival of Apollo on the first (or on the seventh of the month). The great festival of Athena Polias, the prophetess of the city, was on the 28th. There were often festivals on the 12th (Kronia) and on the 16th (Synorkia). The second month had only one, rather insignificant,

festival. In the third month, the 5th day was an All Souls' Day, a feast of the dead; a thanksgiving was observed on the 12th-15th; from the 16th to the 25th were the great Athena Elensinia, and so on. No particular days of the month were to be especially favored, either in general or for any individual god. 3. The Roman calendar is preserved only from a comparatively late time, when the worship of Greek and foreign deities was fully established. So far as the old Roman calendar can be reconstructed it appears that the Ides of every month were dedicated to Jupiter, who had, besides, festivals on the 23rd of April, 5th of July, 19th of August, 11th of October, 25th of December. The festivals of Mars occur chiefly in the month named after him, 1st, 14th, 17th, 19th, 23rd, also February 27th, October 15th and 19th. These examples may suffice to show that no principle determines the fixing of these days. It may be observed, however, that, as among many people, the solstices and equinoxes, which mark the seasons of the year, are recognized in the calendar. Also that all who have a calendar based on lunar months give some importance to the first appearance of the new moon, and often to the full moon also. The festivals were public holidays, each with its own rites, and customs, sacrifices, processions, etc. The priests in Greece and Rome, speaking generally, officiated on these occasions only. The priest was a citizen, elected or chosen by lot, for a longer or shorter time (sometimes for life): in most cases he was not expected to demit his ordinary occupation. A priesthood who were priests and nothing else, who spent their lives in the service of the temples, with daily offerings and liturgies came in only with foreign, chiefly Oriental, gods, like the Magna Mater. Private persons went to the temples when they had occasion to offer prayers or sacrifices or to make vows, etc. There were no stated days for such visits-though some days were in some temples luckier than others, and there was nothing like a stated day for the assembling of a worshipping congregation except the festivals of the local calendar.

Yours very truly,

GEORGE F. MOORE

It will readily be seen that this is a valuable historical document covering in detail every phase of Roman and Greek festivals. A weekly Sunday festival was utterly unknown to either pagan nation.

Underlying Adventist perfidy, bigotry and dishonesty in this whole discussion is largely unmentioned and uncontextualized by Canright. Vicious anti-Catholic conspiracy theories and anti-immigrant feelings ran high during the mid-1850's, enough so that a major anti-Catholic political party was formed.⁸⁵ The Great Controversy repeated lurid accusations of the papacy's alleged "pagan" corruption of Christianity. It was just one of many facets of a hysterical literary genre that whipped Americans into an anti-Catholic frenzy, before and after the Civil War, and led eventually to the formation of the Ku Klux Klan.^{86 87 88 89 90 91 92}

No weekly worship or sacredness whatever attached to Sunday. Our Advent brethren, if candid, must abandon that theory. To make surety doubly sure, I will introduce one more witness. It will be seen that all four fully agree in every item. This one is from Prof. W. H. Westerman, of the University of Wisconsin, Madison, Wis.:

University of Wisconsin Nov. 13,
1913

D.M.CANRIGHT

Grand Rapids, Mich.

Dear Sir:

I shall answer your questions briefly, and in the order in which you sent them. 1. The pagan Greeks and Romans never had a weekly day of rest. 2. They never had a weekly holiday or festival day. 3. They never had a special day in the week on which they made offerings or prayers to heathen gods. (Neither the pagan Greeks nor the Romans

85 https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Know_Nothing

86 <https://www.english.upenn.edu/~traister/hughes.html>

87 <https://www.gutenberg.org/files/86/86-h/86-h.htm>

88 <https://archive.org/details/pleaforwest00beec>

89 http://www.jstor.org/stable/4247849?seq=1#page_scan_tab_contents

90 <https://archive.org/details/femaleconventsse00ricc>

91 <http://documents.routledge-interactive.s3.amazonaws.com/9780415807487/document25.pdf>

92 <http://articles.latimes.com/2010/oct/10/opinion/la-oe-davies-catholics-20101010>

recognized a seven-day division or week division in the month.) 4. They made no offerings or prayers on Sunday to their gods any more than on other days. 5. The seven-day period of dividing the month or the week was never adopted into the calendar of the pagan Greeks. It appears in the Roman calendar after the time of Theodosius, or after 391 A.D., but the week, or seven-day period, first appears in Roman law in a constitution of Constantine, promulgated in 321 A.D. This appears in the Code of Justinian. The seven-day division of the month, which is, of course from the standpoint of the calendar, a pretty cumbersome method of division, comes from the ancient Hebrews, whose Sabbath, falling on every Saturday, early became a period of rest. The word, Sabbath, means, probably, the "divider."

The early Christians, for example, Paul, did not think it necessary for the Christian communities to observe the Jewish Sabbath. Usually, however, they did observe it. In the first two centuries of our era they developed the custom of observing the Lord's Day with prayer and common meals, and out of this, and the Jewish day of rest, arose our practice of observing Sunday. I have been very glad to be of service to you.

Sincerely yours,

W. H. WESTERMAN

December 18, 1914 REV. D. M. CANRIGHT Grand Rapids, Mich.

Dear Sir: I will again answer your questions in the order in which you asked them of me. 1. In the constitution of Constantine of A.D. 321, which spoke of the "venerable day of the sun," Constantine regards Sunday as venerable undoubtedly from the Christian standpoint. It had been so regarded by the Christians since the second century, as the day of the Resurrection. It would, therefore, be venerable to Constantine, who had already legalized the Christian religion. If it was in any way venerable or a holiday to the pagans, so far as my information goes, the pagans must have adopted the practice from the Christians. 2. Apollo was not worshiped on any stated day of the week or month more than any other. 3. I do not believe that there is any proof that the early Christians were led to observe Sunday by the example of any pagan worship upon that day.

Indeed, I think Tertullian's statements, quoted by you, from Chapter XVI of his "Apology," goes to show that the pagans did not worship the sun upon that day, rather than the opposite.

Very sincerely yours,

W. H. WESTERMAN

"The united testimony of these high authorities is decisive. Neither the pagan Romans nor the Greeks had any weekly day of rest from work, or any weekly festival, or any weekly day for worship. They made no use of a week of seven days for anything. Professor Moore says it had no use in common life. Notice further: The old astrological week of seven days had no rest day. The idea of a rest day once a week was unknown to the pagan Romans and Greeks till they learned it of the Jews and Christians centuries after Christ. The edict of Constantine, A.D. 321, was the very first time the week of seven days was recognized in Roman law. All history agrees in this and it is a decisive fact showing that, up to that date, the Romans had made no use of our week of seven days, hence, did not, and could not, have observed Sunday as a day of rest. There was no religious idea connected with the naming of the days from the planets, as Sunday from the sun, Monday from the moon, etc.

Once again, the Syrian-Malankara Church started by St. Thomas in India in CE 52; and the Armenian and Assyrian Churches of Persia; are the absolute and irrefutable proof that the Constantinian Edict of 321 CE did NOT "initiate" Sunday worship among Christians. The Indian and Persian Churches insist that they worshiped on Sunday from their respective and independent Apostolic foundations.⁹³ They grew up in almost complete isolation from the Christian population centers of Jerusalem, Constantinople, Alexandria and Rome, due to the primitive travel and communication methods extent at the time.⁹⁴ After 452 CE, they joined with the other Oriental Orthodox churches, and severed themselves even further from the main body

⁹³ http://malankaraorthodoxchurch.in/index.php?option=com_content&task=view&id=16&Itemid=242

⁹⁴ <http://mtcsv.org/home/history-of-marthoma-church/>

of Christianity. In CE 321, India and Persia were not part of the Roman Empire, nor did Roman Law apply in India and Persia.^{95 96 97}

*Like ancient Judaism, Ancient India had a Lunar Calendar, and rejected the Roman Calendar.*⁹⁸ *Parts of the Indian church did eventually join in communion with Roman Catholicism, but not until 1930, and that was after 2,000 years of Sunday worship.*⁹⁹ *It should be clear that neither the pagans of the Roman Empire, the Roman Emperor, or the Roman Pope had the slightest effect on the Indian and Persian Church's' Sunday worship traditions. There is only one logical explanation: the Indian and Persian Churches were taught Sunday Worship by their respective founding Apostles. They did so no later than two years after the Council of Jerusalem, which had ruled that Gentile Christian Converts were not subject to the Mosaic Law. The Indian and Persian Christian converts of these Apostolic Christian communities - established far away from the boundaries of the Roman Empire and the large Christian communities of Rome, Constantinople and Alexandria - long predated the "Gentile Christian Converts" of Antioch that were benefited by the Council of Jerusalem's staunch obedience to the Great Commission.*

All four of these specialists in ancient history agree in answering these questions though neither one knew that they had been submitted to the others; yet all four exactly agree in every particular, though widely scattered, London, Washington, Massachusetts, and Wisconsin. Such a unanimous agreement would settle any question in a court of law.

I accidentally learned that J. W. Moncrieff, A.Y., D.D., Associate Professor of Church History, University of Chicago, had carefully studied Seventh-Day Adventism, especially on this subject. So I sent him this chapter for examination. He wrote me as follows:

University of Chicago May 13, 1915

Rev. D. M. Canright:

I appreciate very much the privilege of reading the two chapters of your forthcoming book, and shall certainly want a copy of it when it is out. Seventy years ago, when Seventh-Day Adventism was born, when people possessed a very meager amount of information concerning the ancients, and when even the great Samuel Johnson's Dictionary contained the statement that "The division of time by weeks hath been universally observed in the world, not only amongst the civilized, but likewise among the most barbarous nations" (I quote from the edition of 1819), it was excusable in Seventh-Day Adventists to relate Sunday observance to pagan Roman Sunday observance. But in the last fifty years an enormous amount of research into antiquarian life has been accomplished by reliable, competent historians, and when, with one accord, they proclaim the previously held notion to be a myth, pure and simple, with no support in well-ascertained facts, it is high time someone is bringing these facts which are to be found in every recent standard encyclopedia in the articles on "Calendar" and "Week" to the minds of the uninformed who are confused by a doctrine wholly at variance with now ascertained historical fact. I have consulted sixteen encyclopedias and dictionaries, and they differ in no essential detail in their treatment of the subject.

Sincerely yours,

J. W. MONCRIEFF

It will be seen this historian fully agrees with the four preceding ones. Having given special attention to this particular subject, his testimony is of great value in confirming the other.

*Modern historians emphatically agree with Canright that there is no basis for Adventism's contention that Christian Sunday worship has or had any connection to Pagan Sun Worship.*¹⁰⁰

⁹⁵ http://cristoraul.com/ENGLISH/readinghall/UniversalHistory/INDIA/Early-6th_BC/HISTORY-20.html

⁹⁶ <http://www.indianscriptures.com/vedic-lifestyle/beginners-guide/ancient-indian-laws-and-practices>

⁹⁷ <https://archive.org/details/ancientromanempi00brycrich>

⁹⁸ <http://www.ancientindia.co.uk/staff/resources/background/bg13/home.html>

⁹⁹ https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Syro-Malankara_Catholic_Church

¹⁰⁰ <http://home.earthlink.net/~mysticalrose/pagan7.html>

"I consulted a graduate of Michigan State University who has for four years made a specialty of teaching Roman history in the high school. I asked her if the Romans had any weekly rest day, or day of worship. She said, "No," and gave me *Roman Festivals*, by Fowler, as her textbook. Two university professors referred me to this same book, so it is good authority. The Preface, page 7, says: "A week of eight days was introduced at an early period." Notice, it was eight days, not seven; and the eighth day was simply a market day, not a day of worship. A large number of festivals are fully described but there is in all the book no reference to any rest day, or day of worship, on Sunday. If there had been such a rest day, the author would certainly have named it.

The Romans, centuries after Christ, learned the week of seven days, partly from Egyptian astrology and partly from Christians and Jews. The "Standard Dictionary," Article "Week," says: "It was not introduced into the Roman calendar till after the reign of Theodosius in the fourth century."

The "Universal Dictionary of the English Language," Article "Week," says: "During the early centuries of their history the Greeks and Romans had not the institution of the week."

Webster's Dictionary, Article "Week," says: "The week did not enter into the calendar of the Greeks, and was not introduced at Rome till after the reign of Theodosius."

*This obvious and undisputed history supports our conclusion in other chapters that the Jewish Sabbath as practiced by Jesus was based on the Lunar Month, and bears no resemblance to the weekly day of "Saturday."*¹⁰¹

Constantine had been dead over forty years before Theodosius began to reign. So at the time when Constantine issued his Sunday law, A.D. 321, his pagan subjects did not use the week of seven days, hence, could not have kept the first day of our week until taught to them by Christians and required by Constantine's law.

Prof. A. Rauschenbusch, of Rochester Theological Seminary, quotes Lotz thus: "It is a vain thing to attempt to prove that the Greeks and Romans had anything resembling the Sabbath. Such opinion is refuted even by this, that the Roman writers ridicule the Sabbath as something peculiar to the Jews. In proof he cites many passages from the Roman poets, and one from Tacitus. Seneca also condemned the Sabbath observance of the Jews as a waste of time by which a seventh part of life was lost." ("Saturday or Sunday," p. 83)

Herzog says: "No special religious celebration of any one day of the week can be pointed out in anyone of the pagan religions" (Article "Sabbath").

The renowned Max Muller in "Chips from a German Work Shop," Vol. V, page 116, says: "It is well known that the names of the seven days of the week are derived from the names of the planets, and it is equally well known that in Europe the system of weeks and week days is comparatively of very modern origin. It was not a Greek, nor a Roman, nor a Hindu, but a Jewish or Babylonian invention."

The early Christian Father, Tertullian, A.D. 200, bears a decisive testimony that the pagans had no weekly festival and did not keep the Lord's Day with Christians. Reproving Christians for attending heathen feasts, he says: "Oh, truer fealty of the heathen to their own religion which taketh to itself no rite of the Christians. We are not afraid lest we be openly declared to be heathen! If thou must needs have some indulgence for the flesh too, thou hast it and thou hast not only as many days as they, but even more. For the heathen festival is on but one day in every year, thine upon every eighth day. Gather out the several solemn feasts of the heathen and set them out in order; they will not be able to make up a Pentecost." (*Ante-Nicene Lib.*," Vol. XI, pp. 162-163)

I notice that he says the heathen did not have a festival on the Lord's Day, nor on Pentecost, and that the heathen festivals came only "once a year" not every week, like the Christian Day. He says that all their feast days, if gathered together, would not be as much as Pentecost. This is decisive, that the heathen did not have a weekly festival day, nor did they have a festival on the same day the Christians did; viz., on the Lord's Day.

Johnson's "New Universal Encyclopedia," Article "Week," says: "The Greeks divided the month into periods of ten days, and

¹⁰¹ https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Hebrew_calendar#Modern_calendar

the Romans gathered the days into periods of eight days; with both, the first day of a period was market day, on which country people came to town and stirred up both business and public life. The period of seven days, the week proper, was introduced to the Romans and Greeks, partly by Christianity, partly by Egyptian astronomy."

This demolishes the theory that keeping the first day of our Christian week came to Christians from the pagan Romans. Exactly the opposite is true. The Jew and Christians taught it to the pagan Romans.

Schaff, in his "Church History," says: "The pagan Romans paid no more regard to the Christian Sunday than to the Jewish Sabbath."

The "Encyclopedia Americana," Article "Week," says: "The Romans and Greeks each divided the months into periods, and were not acquainted with the week till a late period. The Romans had, however, for civil uses, as the arrangement of market days, a cycle of eight days, the ninth being the recurring one, instead of the eighth as with us."

I have before me a book of 160 pages, entitled, "Sunday is the Christian Sabbath, or Lord's Day," by M. H. MacLead, Pueblo, Colo. It is the most exhaustive and scholarly work I have yet found on the history of the Sunday question in the first four centuries. He carefully quotes a large number of high authorities showing that the pagan Romans and Greeks had no weekly day of rest or worship on any day of the week. On the subject of heathen rest days he says:

"I have given it an uncompromising consideration. It was not without a study of the matter that I ventured even to myself a final and unchangeable denial of any truth in the claim." What the ancient Egyptians, Babylonians, or other ancient nations believed or did has nothing to do with our question. It is claimed by Adventists that Sunday, as a day of rest and worship, came into the Church from pagan Rome. Hence, that is the only question to settle. The simple fact that Sunday was named from the sun, dedicated to the sun, or was sacred to the sun, does not furnish the slightest evidence that people ceased work on that day.

Every day in the week was named from some supposed deity and was sacred to that god. "The World's Standard Dictionary" says: "Monday, the day sacred to the moon." Did pagans worship the moon that day? Did they cease work that day? Saturday was Saturn's day, sacred to Saturn. Did they rest that day? So of all the days of the week. If they rested every day named after some god, when would they work? Sunday was no more sacred than any other day and pagans revered none.

Canright brings up one of Adventism's crazy ironies: the common accusation they level at Christians of being "Sun Worshipers" by worshiping on "Sunday." Most Adventist debaters will conveniently "forget" that "Saturday" was named in honor of the Roman god Saturn. However, the pagan connection between the "Sabbath" and "Saturn" arguably runs MUCH deeper than the connection between "Sunday" and "Sun Worship." This anomaly was first expressed by Roman historian Tacitus.^{102 103} As we have demonstrated previously, Greek Sun worship had died out centuries before Christ. Modern-day Wiccan witches apparently accept Tacitus's argument, and celebrate various "Sabbaths."¹⁰⁴ Some of the hostility that Adventists imagine Catholics have toward the Sabbath may be simply explained by the close connection between witchcraft and Sabbath-keeping that was observed in the Middle Ages:

"Although allusions to Sabbats were made by the Catholic Canon law since about 905, the first book that mentions the Sabbat is, theoretically, Canon Episcopi, included in Burchard of Worms's collection in the 11th century. The Canon Episcopi alleged that "Diana's rides," (by the name of the Roman goddess of the hunt) were false, and that these spirit travels did not occur in reality. Errores Gazariorum later evoked the Sabbat, in 1452.

In the 13th century the accusation of participation in a Sabbat was considered very serious. Helping to publicize belief in and the threat of the Witches' Sabbath was the extensive preaching of the popular Franciscan reformer, Saint Bernardino of Siena (1380–1444), whose widely circulating sermons contain various references to the sabbath as it was then conceived and hence represent valuable early sources

102 <http://forward.com/articles/9794/the-sabbath-planet/>

103 <http://www.livius.org/sources/content/tacitus-on-the-jews/>

104 <http://www.trueghosttales.com/wicca-wheel-of-the-year.php>

The irony here is total: an outbreak of Middle Ages Paganism and witchcraft featured a reversion to Sabbath-keeping, and a rejection of the Christian Day of Worship!

So plain is the evidence on this subject that some of the best read Adventists have admitted that pagans did not rest from work on Sunday. Thus Elder J. H. Waggoner says of Constantine's Sunday law, A.D. 321: "Though the venerable day of the sun had long— very long— been venerated by them and their heathen ancestors, the idea of rest from worldly labor in his worship was entirely new." (*Replies to Elder Canright*, p. 130) Mark this confession, for it gives up the main pillar of their argument in their effort to prove that Sunday-keeping was taken from the pagans. The pagans never kept Sunday. It was a new idea to them when they were required to cease work that day! Where did they get that new idea? From the emperor who had just recently professed Christianity. He got it from his Christian brethren who had always kept it! See the folly of arguing that the pagans taught Christians to keep Sunday, when the pagans themselves had never kept it.

Here is another confession:

Elder L. R. Conradi, Seventh-Day Adventist, author of "History of the Sabbath," edition of 1912, in a letter to me dated Hamburg, February 9, 1914, says: "A weekly rest day from work and solely dedicated to divine worship was unknown in heathenism and only known among the people of Israel."

In answer to my question, "Did the pagan Romans keep Sunday as a religious day?" he says: "We never claimed that. The idea of keeping a day means, in the present age, resting from work and giving the time solely to worship. But this the pagans never did. They only made prayers to the sun-god and then followed their regular work."

Here we have two witnesses from Seventh-Day Adventists themselves, confessing that the pagans had no weekly day of rest from common work. Of course, they could say nothing else, for all history says the same. So then this point is settled beyond denial.

"Admissions in favor of truth from the ranks of its enemies constitute the highest kind of evidence."

These confessions from the two Adventist elders give up the question, as any candid person must see.

Elder Conradi, above quoted, says of the pagans: "They only made prayers to the sun-god and then followed their regular work." Here he assumes that the pagans made Sunday a special day of worship when they made prayers to the sun-god. He asserts that for which there is not a particle of proof. No prayers were made to the heathen gods on Sunday more than on Saturday or any other day. He cannot produce a scrap of proof for his assertion. The quotations given above from the historians of the several universities squarely deny what he asserts without any proof. Did all these pagans leave their homes every Sunday and go to their temples and offer prayers? No. They had no meetings whatever that day, nor on any other day of the week. On some special occasion, as a birthday, or recovery from sickness, or to avert some feared evil, or on some yearly festival, persons would go and offer incense or gifts to the gods. That was all. There was no regular day in the week for any offerings of gifts or prayers. The Adventists have invented a pagan Sunday of rest and worship which never existed.

No pagan nation today keeps Sunday. The great Chinese nation, numbering four hundred millions, keeps no day. Elder W. A. Westworth, Seventh-Day Adventist, in the Battle Creek, Mich., Daily Journal, May 18, 1914, says: "I have put in 15,000 miles in inland China visiting our stations. The Chinese have no week, nor any day of the week, kept as a weekly rest." The same is true of the Japanese, 67,000,000, the Koreans, the millions of pagans in Africa, etc. Then the Mohammedans, numbering 200,000,000, rest on Friday, and all work on Saturday and Sunday. They copied the idea of a weekly rest day from the Jews and Christians in the seventh century after Christ. India has a population of 315,000,000. They have no weekly rest day. The entire population of the earth is sixteen hundred millions. Of these only six hundred millions believe in the Bible and Christianity, and hence nominally respect Sunday. So ten hundred millions, nearly two-thirds of the people on the globe, have no regard for Sunday or Saturday and never had. All on this globe who now, or at any other time, have ever rested on Sunday have learned it from Christians. So Christians could never have learned it from pagans, for none of them ever kept Sunday.

*Canright was not correct about the origin and nature of Islam's Friday observance. The actual origin of Islam's Friday religious observance is based on the fact that Arab traders were gathered together in Mecca on Fridays in order to cater to their Jewish customers. Friday was the Jewish "shopping day," who got their shopping out of the way in anticipation of the Jewish Sabbath the following day, long after the Jews abandoned their original Lunar-based weekly calendar. It became an Islamic custom to gather together for Friday prayers, because the merchants were already gathered on that day for trade with the Jews. Islam has never regarded Friday as "a day of rest." ¹⁰⁶ Ironically, Islam claims Abraham as "The Father of Islam;" but endorses the Jewish contention that the Sabbath is a "special sign" between the Children of Israel and God;" and continues to circumcise on the 8th Day as commanded to Abraham; yet Muslims have curiously never demanded a "share" in the Jewish Sabbath. Islam has never hesitated to "appropriate" to itself practices from other religious traditions: Islamic traditions of prostration and female head covering were stolen from Eastern Christianity. Many thousands of Christian Churches, Jewish Synagogues and Hindu and Buddhist Temples have been converted into Mosques. **Thus, one billion Muslims constitute continuing proof that Abraham never kept the Sabbath.***

The observers of the seventh day continually assert that Sunday with pagans was always a popular festival day, a day for religious assemblies and pagan worship, then of festivity or, perhaps, work, by some. The above testimony from numerous reliable authors squarely contradicts these assertions.

Listen now to the Adventists. Of Sunday they say: "They are assembly days at early morn, then given up to busy pleasure and to labor." "Many of his [Constantine's] pagan subjects revered the same day as a day of prayer in honor of the sun." Again: "The very effect of joining the pagans in their devotions on Sunday was to let down the bars which God had put up." (History of the Sabbath," edition 1912, pp. 373, 384,385, 363)

Here is another: "The bishops would very readily adopt the most popular heathen festival day [Sunday] in order to gain the favor of the pagans." "The observance of Sunday was itself the custom which was brought into the Church by converts from heathenism." "Sunday, the wild solar holiday of all pagan times." (Fathers of the Catholic Church, by E. J. Waggoner, pp. 324, 326, 328).

Here is one from a Seventh-Day Baptist, Rev. A. H. Lewis, in "History of the Sabbath and Sunday," page 70: "Sunday, already a festival among the heathen." "The sun's day had been a leading weekly pagan festival for many centuries" (page 521).

Elder Andrews in "Testimony of the Fathers," pages 26, 34, 43, says: "The Roman people observed a festival on the first day of the week." "The day commonly honored as a festival by the Romans."

These are only samples of what is repeated over and over by opposers of the Lord's Day. These assertions are made, not only without proof, but directly contrary to all reliable testimony, as we have quoted above. There was absolutely nothing of the kind with Romans or Greeks.

Elder Waggoner says: "Sunday is in every feature a heathen institution." (*Replies to Canright*, p.133) Let us see.

What are the features of Sunday as kept by Christians?

- All secular work ceases.
- People dress up and go to church.
- A hymn is sung.
- Prayer is offered.
- Scriptures are read.
- A sermon is preached.

- A collection is taken.
- The Lord's Supper is celebrated.
- Benediction is pronounced.

These are the features of the Christian observance of Sunday. Waggoner says that in every feature it is pagan! How many of these features can be found in the pagan day? Absolutely not one.

Moreover, as we have pointed out in a previous chapter, both Roman Catholic and Eastern Orthodox Canon Law establishes that the Eucharist is the centerpiece of Sunday "Worship." "No Eucharist" means no "Sunday Worship." The Eucharist unequivocally defines "worship" under both sets of canon law. Carnight here uses the Protestant form of the "Lord's Supper" in his analysis of Sunday worship. No Pagan custom remotely resembles the Eucharist in either theory or actual practice. Both the Eastern Orthodox and the Roman Catholics insist the basis of the Eucharist is found in John 6.¹⁰⁷ That is simply a contention that has never been rebutted by Adventism. Adventist ignorance on this one issue - and the clear evidence that the Eucharist historically gave Sunday its validity as a day of worship - is simply jaw-dropping and the basis for the foolish National Sunday Law conspiracy theory.

They did not even cease work that day as he himself says above. Is not his assertion recklessly untrue? Could the pagan Romans give to the Christians these features of Sunday observance when they themselves never had one of them? It is absurd. But Adventists believe and teach it as a fact while all reliable evidence shows that it is all absolutely untrue.

The strong, clear, united historical quotations given in this chapter prove, beyond denial, that the pagan Romans never had any religious regard for Sunday, never had the week of seven days in common life, or in their calendar, or in their civil or religious laws. The very first deference they ever paid to Sunday was in obedience to the law of Constantine the first Christian emperor.

Because one day was named Sunday, Sun's day, and because the ancient Babylonians and others worshiped the sun, therefore Adventists always assume and assert that Sunday was specially devoted to the worship of the sun.

Thus one writer says: "The worship of the sun is one of the oldest and most universal forms of idolatry, and Sunday was the special day honored by the sun worshiper." Another writer says: "The very name Sun-day is a standing witness that it was the day of sun worship." This is simply in the sound of names, nothing more, without any foundation, in fact.

This ready assumption is entirely groundless. Each day of the week was named from some planet: as Sunday from the sun, Monday from the moon, Saturday from Saturn, etc. The first hour of each day was supposed to be ruled over by the planet of that day. This was purely an astrological invention for civil purposes and had no religious significance whatever; no idea of worship was connected with the name of anyone of these days. Religious worship had nothing to do in naming the days. The idea was purely and only astrological. Thus Johnson's "New Universal Encyclopedia," Article "Week," says: "It was found as a civil institution in the very earliest times among the Hindus, Persians, Assyrians, and Egyptians. But the Jews were the only nation with which the week had a religious significance." So also the answers from the above quoted historians all agree that names of the days are purely astrological, not religious. Sun worship had no connection with Sunday whatever, no more than any other day.

SUMMARY

The studied ignorance and complete-lack of scholarship on the Eastern Church by Adventists is apparently founded on deliberate dishonesty, and astounding in its depth and reach. Similarly, Adventism's obvious ignorance of the Eucharist and its central role in Sunday "worship" is profoundly disturbing. Nowhere in **The Great Controversy**, or anywhere else in Ellen White's writings is the Eastern Church mentioned. She seemed to think that Sunday was the equivalent of the Jewish sacramental Sabbath, when the Christian sacrament was the Eucharist. Historically, the Eucharist gave Sunday worship any "legs" it may have had. Bacchiocchi's Sabbath books feature a similar absence of mention of the role and dominance of the Eastern Church, or understanding of the Eucharist. This is simply scholarship at its worst and most dishonest. Neither

Bacchiocchi or White ever mention the Apostolic Coptic, the Armenian Apostolic Church, the Assyrian Church of the East, or the Syrian-Malankara Churches, which were founded directly by four or more Apostles in areas far away from the large Christian populations of the First Century. Neither mention the profound schisms of 452 and 1054 that split Christianity long before the Protestant Reformation, and the effect these schisms had on White's theories on papal supremacy, and the dates this supposedly occurred. As we have discussed in another chapter, the Eastern Church dominated the first seven Ecumenical Councils, resolving theological disputes that arose only in the Eastern Churches. The pope did not attend a single one of the seven Ecumenical Councils. Nor was the Sabbath ever discussed at any of them. Christianity was headquartered in Constantinople, the capital of the Roman Empire, not the city of Rome.

What is remarkable and refreshing about this study of DM Canright's views on Eastern Christianity is how modern historical sources adamantly support nearly all of his assertions. His analysis and writing remain as fresh and vivid as it was the day it was written. No wonder Adventists simply attacked his person, rather than his historical evidence.^{108 109 110} One thing is indisputable: Canright took into account the actual history of the Eastern Church, both its good and its bad. By contrast, Adventism has featured a deafening silence on one half of historic Christianity. Adventism is founded upon and posits an a-historical, virulently-bigoted and hysterical "Papal-Centric" historical/doctrinal fad that was all the rage in the 1850's. Adventism has had almost 150 years to refute Canright's brutal shredding of the Church's hysterical historiography. That Adventism has not made a dent in Canright's research and writing speaks volumes about this remarkable man, his integrity and his legacy.

The Miracle at the Areopagus: *Viva la revolución!!*

Fittingly, Paul's most revolutionary speech was delivered on a rocky hill in Athens— not on one of the Seven Hills of Rome. If you want to outrage a Greek, slur it with its Roman name: "Mars Hill." Since the Greeks are madly in love with their rhetoric, it took a fire-eating stem-winder of a speech to light the fuse that blew the ancient world to smithereens. Paul did exactly that on a smooth round rock mound in the center of Athens. Greece was the original target of Christianity, not Rome. You can stand right there in one spot at "Ground Zero" where the hydrogen bomb of Christianity was detonated, and see the catastrophic result of the shock waves uphill (the ruins of the Parthenon) and downhill (the ruins of Temple of Apollo).

...

Hot Aegean sea winds whistled through the Parthenon on the Acropolis, and blew over the scoured-smooth rounded Areopagus and the assembled stunned and awestruck crowds, and terminated at the Temple of Apollo in the valley below. It ended at the Old Heart of "Greekness." The Saint's soaring rhetoric electrified the milling and restless crowds that swelled to 70,000 and more at times. This spectacle was the equivalent of a Super Bowl combined with a resurrected JFK repeating his inaugural speech, combined with a Rolling Stones concert.

And yet there was More! More strangeness! The dumbstruck Greeks rubbed their eyes with disbelief. This was no Hebrew lawyer. Hebrew Lawyers do not mesmerize a skeptical crowd for hours ***without speaking a single word of the Hebrew Law. The Hebrew Law does not create Sainthood. Hebrew lawyers can not speak in the flawless, clipped idiom of urban Athens. Jewish Lawyers cannot learn classical Greek rhetoric, according to Apollonius Molon of Rhodes.***

The Sabbath and circumcision had never severed the evil chains of misery of one single Temple Prostitute.

This newly-minted Greek Saint stood there, hoarse and the hot winds mussing up his hair, wet with sweat from the supreme exertion. All of his prior trappings of Jewishness had been abandoned. His pride in his distinguished career as an expert on the *Mishnah* and the *Talmud* had been punctured on the Road to Damascus.

He was blinded by the Son.

He described a heroic half man/half god creature that killed itself, went into the bowels of hell to destroy death, and then resurrected itself in front of 500 people. Many of the jaded Athenian Greeks sunk to their knees involuntarily upon hearing this. The Greeks knew real heroes when they saw them. They had them in abundance at Thermopylae and Marathon. This strange Jewish deity was the Real Deal.

108 <http://www.andrews.edu/library/car/cardigital/digitized/documents/b18300078.pdf>

109 <http://www.andrews.edu/library/car/cardigital/digitized/documents/b16017237.pdf>

110 <http://www.andrews.edu/library/car/cardigital/digitized/documents/b18365553.pdf>

There was the anticipated usual glow of *charisma* (literally "touched by the gods") that always emanated from an emotion-choked, head-held-back, standout rhetorical performance. The Greeks were used to that.

There was more.

There was no ending with the usual tidy flourish and elaborate self-congratulatory courtesies. They looked again in shock, stunned into silence. There were no rounds of standing and escalating applause and calls for an encore performance. This was the ending of all endings.

Thousands of desperate Temple prostitutes were soon liberated from their brutal captivity, no longer pleading with the deaf and incompetent gods of diseased paganism for mercy. They were given hope, and then freedom. The Greek Saint's revolutionary sermon fulfilled Isaiah's Divine command to ***rise up and free the oppressed***:

"Shout it aloud, do not hold back.

Raise your voice like a trumpet."

to loose the chains of injustice

and untie the cords of the yoke,

to set the oppressed free

and break every yoke...

If you do away with the yoke of oppression,

with the pointing finger and malicious talk,

and if you spend yourselves in behalf of the hungry

and satisfy the needs of the oppressed,

then your light will rise in the darkness,

and your night will become like the noonday.

It was the death knell of decrepit paganism: the greatest continuous assault against the human spirit the world had ever seen. The metastasized and unholy union of empty philosophy and pagan fairy tales had a life expectancy of days, maybe weeks. The morning light of the Son illumined, and the proud Greeks were embarrassed and appalled by the foul, dank corner of their rotten world.

Homoousian was the noon battle cry of the Greek rebellion. It was the sudden END of the Ancient World.

It was the end of human history. It was noon. It was the First Day of the brand-new Greece.

The Greek Saint had transcended the earthly bonds of law and rhetoric.

He had achieved the pinnacle, the wedding of the Divine with sublime Attic Oratory. He called down the thunder of revolution, and the eternal liberation of the soul.

He has defined "Greekness" for 2,000 years.

He is one of the Immortal Ones.

CHAPTER EIGHT
THE BOOK OF JUBILEES ANNIHILATES
SOME PET ADVENTIST “SABBATH” MYTHS

by Larry Dean, J. D.

THE BOOK OF JUBILEES ANNIHILATES SOME PET ADVENTIST “SABBATH” MYTHS

by Larry Dean, J. D.

In this chapter, doing “control-click” on the super-scripted footnotes will take you directly to the website of the reference. If the link has grown cold, do a Google search for it.

The *Book of Jubilees* is a remarkable source of authentication for five concepts that are key to understanding the Sabbath-Sunday Question.¹ Among other remarkable things, the *Book of Jubilees* is part of both the Jewish and Christian canons in Ethiopia. The Christians of Ethiopia have complicated views on the veneration of their holy days. This is further complicated by the fact that these unique Christians were, historically, Solomonic Jews. Their Jewish heritage, as well as the Jewish heritage of the Jews of Ethiopia, have claims that go back to the son born to King Solomon and the Queen of Sheba, Menelik I:

Menelik I (called Bāynā Ləhkəm in the *Kebra Nagast*; also named **Ebna Ia-Hakim**, Arabic: Ibn Al-Hakim, "Son of the Wise"^[1]), first [Solomonic Emperor of Ethiopia](#), is traditionally believed to be the son of [King Solomon](#) of ancient [Israel](#) and Makeda, ancient [Queen of Sheba](#) (in modern [Ethiopia](#)). He is alleged to have ruled around 950 BC, according to traditional sources.^{[2][3]} Tradition credits him with bringing the [Ark of the Covenant](#) to Ethiopia, following a visit to [Jerusalem](#) to meet his father upon reaching adulthood. (*Wikipedia* article, “Menelik I”)

The Ethiopian Christians are composed of both “orthodox” Christians who were converted from Judaism shortly after the Resurrection² and Roman Catholic Christians who were converted much later by Jesuit missionaries. The Ethiopian Orthodox Christians worship on both Saturday and Sunday by dispensing the Eucharist, but do not treat Saturday like the Jewish Sabbath. The Roman Catholics of Ethiopia treat Saturday as the Sabbath with all of its Jewish attributes. The Roman Catholic Church has gone on record stating that if the Ethiopian Catholics were to abandon their distinctive Saturday worship, it would be a tragedy. If all of this sounds confusing, that is because it is. Therefore, we will focus on what all of these concepts of “day” veneration have to do with the question of whether or not Christians are required to keep the Jewish Sabbath.

For the rest of this chapter we want you to think of the Sabbath-keeping Roman Catholics of Ethiopia as “Seventh-day Roman Catholics.”

We will also explain how the facts surrounding the legendary origins of the Ethiopian Judeo-Christian faiths prove that the angel who was guiding Ellen White in selecting her material for her book, *The Great Controversy*, fell asleep at the wheel while he was helping Ellen White pick and choose her material for her section on Ethiopian Christianity. (We refer to the “angel” who appeared to her almost daily in the form of a young man for the first 26 years of her career as the Seventh-day Adventist prophetess.)

First, the *Book of Jubilees* provides proof that the Jews were utilizing the lunar Sabbath system because the author is advocating a change from a lunar-based calendar to a solar-based calendar for scheduling their Sabbath festival days. Once again, from an unexpected source, we have proof that the Jewish Sabbath was originally inseparably and intimately intertwined with the lunar calendar. Second, it establishes that the weekly Sabbath was not a required or recognizable holy day until the time of the Exodus. Third, it proves that God not only made the weekly Sabbath a required festival at the time of the Exodus, but that it was required of Israel and Israel alone, intended as a national law to separate the Hebrews from every other society on the face of the Earth. Fourth, it sets forth in detail the animal and other sacrifices that were necessary to “keep” the day “holy,” suggesting that without these sacrifices the Sabbath is invalid. Fifth and finally, it makes it clear that the Sabbath is inseparable from all of the other festivals and holy days of Judaism and that its separation from those other days at the Cross is biblically impossible. Either all of the Sabbath festivals and observances (annual, monthly, and weekly) survived the Cross, or none of them did. They were a unitary system, woven together in tight knots of logic and theology.

SOURCES OF AUTHORITY OF THE BOOK OF JUBILEES

We will now present the case that the authority and “quasi-scriptural” nature of the *Book of Jubilees*’ status is based on four (4) independent and extremely-credible sources. Even if one does not believe that the book is canonical, it certainly

¹ <http://www.pseudepigrapha.com/jubilees/index.htm>

² See *Acts*, 8:26-27

provides an authoritative and divinely-inspired commentary on the Books of *Genesis*, *Exodus*, *Leviticus* and *Numbers* as they relate to the establishment of Sabbath observance:

a). *Jubilees* has overwhelming archaeological support as the result of the discovery and subsequent analysis of the Dead Sea Scrolls after World War II in newly-independent Israel. Numerous intact complete copies of *Jubilees* were discovered.

b). It has been treated as *scriptural* and *canonical* by the Ethiopian Tewahedo Orthodox Church since its founding, 2,000 years ago by Philip The Evangelist. This factor alone should make *Jubilees* canonical for Seventh Day Adventists, given prophetess Ellen White's uninhibitedly gushing and glowing depiction of Ethiopian Christianity. cf, *The Great Controversy*, Pp, 577-578.

c). It is treated as *scriptural* and *canonical* by the *Beta Israel* Ethiopian Jews, which we have discussed more at length in another chapter. This unique tribe of Jews claims its origin is historically tied to a son born to the Queen of Sheba and King Solomon long before the birth of Christ.

d). It was widely cited by leaders in the Early Christian Church, including Epiphanius, Justin Martyr, [Diodorus of Tarsus](#), [Isidore of Alexandria](#), [Isidore of Seville](#), [Eutychius of Alexandria](#), [John Malalas](#), [George Syncellus](#), and [George Kedrenos](#).³

As with some of our other non-canonical sources, we are primarily interested in learning how to *think* like a Hebrew about the Sabbath. Whether *Jubilees* teaches theological truth or not is not particularly important in this context. Only its historical veracity and accuracy is. The real question is, does it accurately portray the rites, context and ceremonies connected with Sabbath-keeping among ancient Jews?

The **history** of the mechanics of Sabbath-keeping in this apocryphal book, especially given its four credible endorsements of its veracity, is both persuasive and fascinating. Archaeologists were surprised to find many well-preserved copies of it among the *Dead Sea Scrolls* (excavated between 1946 and 1956), and even more surprised to find that these manuscripts demonstrated an extremely high translation accuracy when compared to the manuscripts possessed by both the *Beta Jews* of Ethiopia and the Ethiopian Orthodox Church. We will begin our analysis by discussing the impact of the modern rediscovery of the Dead Sea Scrolls on the credibility of the *Book of Jubilees* with a lengthy quote from ***Rewriting Scripture in Second Temple Times***, By Sidnie White Crawford (2008). Pp. 60-62:

“The *Book of Jubilees* is the only document discussed in this volume that was known prior to the discoveries at Qumran. It was preserved especially in the Ethiopian Orthodox Church, in which it is part of their canon. *Jubilees* survived in its entirety only in Ethiopic translation, although fragments survived in Greek, Syriac, and Latin. It was long suspected, however, that *Jubilees* was originally written in Hebrew or Aramaic, a suspicion confirmed by the discovery of at least 14 and possibly 15 Hebrew manuscripts of *Jubilees* at Qumran. These manuscripts were distributed among several caves; this and the number of manuscripts preserved attest to the popularity of *Jubilees* at Qumran. In addition, three manuscripts from Cave 4 have been labeled “*pseudo-Jubilees*” because of their similarity to the Ethiopic *Book of Jubilees*. *Jubilees* was translated from Hebrew into Greek; the Greek title was the “Little Genesis.” It was translated from Greek into Latin and Ethiopic and into Syriac, either directly from Hebrew or from Greek.

EVIDENCE FOR SCRIPTURAL STATUS

Within the Qumran community *Jubilees* appears to have had the authority of scriptural status. As we shall see, the book certainly presents itself as given by God and thus authoritative: it claims to have been dictated to Moses by an “angel of the presence” on Mt. Sinai (*Jub.* 1:4-6, 27). Therefore, it meets one of the criteria for scriptural status set out in the Introduction above. Further, at least two other documents found at Qumran, the Damascus Document (CD) and 4QText with a Citation of Jubilees (4Q228), cite *Jubilees* as an authoritative book. The Damascus Document reveals the title of the book in antiquity: “The Book of the Divisions of the Times according to their Jubilees and their Weeks” (CD 16:3-4). This Title also appears in a broken context in 4Q Apocryphon of Jeremiah (4Q384, fig. 9, line 2). Thus *Jubilees* fulfills another criterion for scriptural status, citation in another text as an authority. Since *Jubilees* was composed before the foundation of the Qumran community (see below), it is not a Qumran composition

³ https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Book_of_Jubilees

but is part of a constellation of texts found at Qumran that share certain priestly-levitical concerns and traits, including, as we have said before, concern for the temple and its rituals, strict purity regulations, and an embrace of a particular chronology and calendar system. These texts were congenial to the Essene Movement in the late Second Temple period, of which the Qumran community was a part. Of these texts, which included the books of Enoch, Aramaic Levi (see below), and probably the Temple Scroll (see Chapter 5), we have the most solid evidence for the scriptural status of *Jubilees*. This status may have continued in the early Christian Church, since *Jubilees* is cited many times by the church fathers, e.g., Epiphanius, Justin Martyr, Origen, etc. However, *Jubilees* was not canonized by either Judaism or Christianity, except in the Abyssinian (Ethiopian) Orthodox Church.

....

Now, however, with our vastly expanded knowledge of the variety of Jewish literature in the late Second Temple period, *Jubilees* can be contextualized and classified with more exactitude. *Jubilees* belongs to the category of Rewritten Scripture, located at the point on our spectrum where the act of scribal intervention into a base text becomes so extensive that a new, distinctive composition is created....The resulting new composition is still closely tied to Genesis and Exodus, in narrative sequence, characters, and content, but *Jubilees* is a separate book, meant as a companion to the Pentateuch, given to Moses on Sinai at the same time and bearing the same weight of authority. That it was not meant to replace the Torah as the authoritative Jewish law book is clear from its frequent mention of the “First Law” [citations omitted], which refers to the Torah. ***But Jubilees was meant to stand beside that First Law, and it too claims divine authority.*** Why the composer and his audience thought this second book was necessary will become clear later on....” (Emphasis added).

Arguably, the discovery of so many intact copies of *The Book of Jubilees* in the Dead Sea caves at Qumran gives the book immense credibility, and testifies to its supreme importance to the Jews of that community. A comparison of the Qumran texts with the Ethiopic version, performed by James VanderKam, found that the Ethiopic version was an accurate and literalistic translation.⁴ The date of the writing of the texts found at Qumran has been established as between 150 and 170 BCE.⁵ There can be no question that the Essenes of the Qumran community treated *Jubilees* as sacred and inspired canonical scripture. It was indispensable as a guide to appropriate Sabbath-keeping behavior, since it places it within its cultural and historical context. And finally, the Christians that were compiling the Biblical canon did not have access to these scrolls to determine their canonicity. The fact that it was never included in the Christian Bible just might be an accident of history.

The Ethiopian Tewahedo Orthodox Church has for 2,000 years characterized *Jubilees* as one of the “historical” books of its Old Testament canon, along with such indisputably-canonical books as First and Second *Samuel*; First and Second *Kings*; and First and Second *Chronicles*.⁶ While all other Christian denominations including Roman Catholicism, Eastern Orthodoxy, Protestantism and most other Oriental Orthodox Churches have rejected the notion that *Jubilees* belongs in the Biblical Canon, it is unclear from history whether the compilers of the Christian Bible had access to any reliable copies of the *Jubilees* when final decisions were being made to close the Canon in the 4th and 5th centuries. Additionally, the Ethiopian Christians are the only major branch of historic Christianity that modified the Jewish tradition of Sabbath-keeping after the Resurrection, and adopted BOTH Sunday and Saturday as significant days of the week (with Sunday having clear preeminence). *Jubilees* was not necessary to the rest of Christendom, since the rest of Christianity did not follow the Ethiopian Church in this practice. Its absence from the Christian Bible strongly suggests that Christianity jettisoned Sabbath-keeping no later than the CE 52 Council of Jerusalem, and almost certainly on Resurrection Morning. The Ethiopian Tewahedo Orthodox Church *did* have the only known full copies, which have been compared to the Qumran scrolls, with very little error or variances found. Amusingly, Ellen White’s attending “angel,” guided her in choosing a glowing account of the Ethiopian Christian Church that contained an error that was so grievous that, had she been led to choose an accurate account of it, would have disproved the key point she was trying to make — the claim that it kept Saturday as the Jews would keep the Sabbath and that this incited the anger of the papacy. We can’t even figure out where her “angel” found this information. There does not seem to be a historian of Ethiopian ecclesiastical history who did not know that the Ethiopian Christian Church— the particular one that traced its origin to First Century Apostles — never venerated Saturday as the equivalent of the Jewish Sabbath. Look at her flawed account:

4 VanderKam, "Jubilees, Book of" in L. H. Schiffman and J. C. VanderKam (eds.), *Encyclopedia of the Dead Sea Scrolls*, Oxford University Press (2000), Vol. I, p. 435

5 *Ibid.* pp. 17–21

6 <http://www.euclid.int/papers/Anke%20Wanger%20-%20Canon%20in%20the%20EOTC.pdf>

.... Others suffered in a similar manner for their fidelity to the fourth commandment. The history of the churches of Ethiopia and Abyssinia is especially significant. Amid the gloom of the Dark Ages, the Christians of Central Africa were lost sight of and forgotten by the world, and for many centuries they enjoyed freedom in the exercise of their faith. But at last Rome learned of their existence, and the emperor of Abyssinia was soon beguiled into an acknowledgment of the pope as the vicar of Christ. Other concessions followed.

An edict was issued forbidding the observance of the Sabbath under the severest penalties. But papal tyranny soon became a yoke so galling that the Abyssinians determined to break it from their necks. After a terrible struggle the Romanists were banished from their dominions, and the ancient faith was restored. The churches rejoiced in their freedom, and they never forgot the lesson they had learned concerning the deception, the fanaticism, and the despotic power of Rome. Within their solitary realm they were content to remain, unknown to the rest of Christendom.

The churches of Africa held the Sabbath as it was held by the papal church before her complete apostasy. While they kept the seventh day in obedience to the commandment of God, they abstained from labor on the Sunday in conformity to the custom of the church. Upon obtaining supreme power, Rome had trampled upon the Sabbath of God to exalt her own; but the churches of Africa, hidden for nearly a thousand years, did not share in this apostasy. When brought under the sway of Rome, they were forced to set aside the true and exalt the false sabbath; but no sooner had they regained their independence than they returned to obedience to the fourth commandment (*The Great Controversy*, 577-578).⁷

For the Ethiopian Church, "obedience to the Fourth Commandment" means strict fidelity to the *Book of Jubilees'* teaching that the Sabbath is a mark of distinction, that distinguishes the Jews from all other Nations. Ethiopian Christians recognize that they are NOT Jews even though *Jubilees* is part of their Bible. This interpretation should mean the same thing to Adventists, given White's status as "the Lord's messenger, [whose] writings are a continuing and authoritative source of truth which provide for the church comfort, guidance, instruction, and correction."⁸ And given that *Jubilees* spells out in no uncertain terms that the ***Sabbath is only for the Jews***; it explains the Ethiopian Church's Canon Law requirement that all of its adherents must do ordinary work on Saturday (the Adventist "Sabbath)." ***Its canon laws require working on Saturday in order to demonstrate that their very limited and theologically unique veneration of Saturday is Christian-based and is not in ANY way associated with Jewish Sabbath-keeping!***

The *Beta Israel* tribe of Ethiopian Jews treats the *Book of Jubilees* as canonical and scriptural.⁹ We have discussed and analyzed the Beta Israel's Jewish roots elsewhere. In fact, the *Beta Israel* Jew's entire conception of the Sabbath is based completely on the rites and procedures set forth in *Jubilees*, more so than the usual canonical books of *Leviticus*, *Numbers* and *Exodus*. Additionally, more than any other branch of Judaism, the *Beta Israel* tribe places the Sabbath at an undisputed place of prominence. For Sabbatarians who wish to ignore *Jubilee's* detailed Sabbath procedures, the verdict of the *Beta Israel* tribe could not be starker: No *Jubilees* = No Sabbath:

*The Book of Jubilees....had a substantial influence over the Beta Israel community.. Jubilees enjoyed canonical status in their tradition, and the communities fundamental laws, such as attentkugn laws and Sabbath laws, are based upon it.....The theological theme that characterizes Beta Israel tradition is the centrality of the Sabbath. The Sabbath is pictured as a divine princess, radiant and full of joy and, through the cycle of weeks, it is the focus of communal religious life. This centrality of the Sabbath in Beta Israel tradition is based on Jubilees.*¹⁰

Finally, many of the leading lights and scholars of the Early Christian Church quoted from *Jubilees* extensively:

The Book of Jubilees, or the Little Genesis, is mentioned by name continually in the writings of the early Fathers.....Some difficulty had occurred in earlier investigations in fixing the identity of the book from which the citations were made, owing to the different appellations under which it was known, or by which reference was made to it. The oldest reference, that in Epiphanius, calls it "*Jubilees*," or the "*Book of Jubilees*," a very fitting designation of a treatise which divided the history of which it treated into periods of

⁷ <http://www.whiteestate.org/books/gc/gc35.html>

⁸ <http://www.adventist.org/fileadmin/adventist.org/files/articles/official-statements/28Beliefs-Web.pdf>

⁹ <http://judaism.stackexchange.com/questions/29826/how-do-ethiopian-jews-see-the-book-of-jubilees>

¹⁰ *The Jews of Ethiopia: The Birth of an Elite*, edited by Tudor Parfitt and Emanuela Trevisan Sem, Pp. 182-183

Jubilees, i.e. of forty-nine years, the author, in his strong partiality for the number seven, departing from the Mosaic principle which counted the fiftieth as the year of release (Lev. xxv.10). Epiphanius and many others also name it the "Little Genesis," Microgenesis, Leptogenesis, or ta lepta Geneseos — the minutiae of Genesis — appellations appropriate to it, not as being less in bulk than the scriptural record, but as giving particulars of name, date, and other "small matters" not found in the canonical book, or because it divides the history into small periods. Other references are current which probably, though not with certainty, appertain to this book. Thus Syncellus more than once alludes to "what is called the Life of Adam," quoting from it passages which occur in the "Jubilees," so that it seems likely that the work which he names is merely a portion of the latter. The same is also true of the "Book of Adam's Daughters," mentioned in a decree of Pope Gelasius. The title "Apocalypse of Moses," Syncellus himself applies to "Little Genesis." In the Ambrosian MS. our book is followed immediately by the "Assumption of Moses," as though this formed an appendix to the former; and in the catalogues of Pseudo-Athanasius and Nicephorus, the "Testament (Diatheke) of Moses" directly precedes the "Assumption;" so that it is not unlikely that the "Testament of Moses" is merely another name for the "Book of Jubilees." The Abyssinian Church names it the "Book of the Division of Days," from the first words of the inscription at the beginning.¹¹

Jubilees is arguably canonical in a limited sense based on four major, diverse and historically potent endorsements. No credible argument can be made that the book belongs in the Christian Bible at this late date, since plainly Christians are freed from any obligation of the Mosaic Law, most especially the part of the Law that is the Book's focus: the Sabbath. This fact presents an irresolvable dilemma for Sabbatarian Christians, since it has never been disputed that the formalities regarding Sabbath observance in *Jubilees* are an accurate and complete statement of the legal duties involved. Both the Ethiopian Tewahedo Orthodox Church and the Beta Israel Jews rely on it to determine how they will recognize the specialness of the day, Saturday. The Christian churches of Ethiopia emphasize its teaching that the Sabbath is for Jews only, so they require their Christian believers to work on Saturdays to set them apart from the Jews and the Jewish way of looking at the 7th day. By contrast, the Beta Israel Jews use the same text to determine how their Sabbaths will be kept and how they will be scheduled.

Jubilees independently establishes many detailed rules and regulations regarding Sabbath practice, and strongly supports many of the anti-Sabbatarian arguments presented elsewhere in this book. That it is regarded as canonical by both a major strain of apostolic Christianity and an ancient and unique sect of Judaism gives it tremendous credibility, even if its inclusion in the Christian Bible would be unnecessary and superfluous. Seventh-day Adventists are obligated to treat it as canonical, given their prophet's uninhibited endorsement of the Ethiopian Christian Church and its staunch custom of venerating Saturday. (She was, as we pointed out, oblivious of the fact that this veneration of Saturday was anti-Sabbatarian in its application.)

The *Book of Jubilees* has overwhelming modern archaeological support of its validity that far exceeds most other books of the Old Testament. And finally, it was widely viewed as scriptural and divinely-inspired by many different early church fathers. It is rare for any canonical books of the Bible to have such widespread and deep support among such a diverse variety of extrinsic *indicia* of veracity and reliability. Its pronouncements on the Sabbath are simply as authoritative as any other book of the Old or New Testament. For Sabbatarians, it is an indispensable book.

WHAT THE BOOK SAYS ABOUT THE SABBATH

Please study the following texts from this book:

Book of Jubilees 2:9 - And God appointed the sun to be a great sign on the earth for days and for Sabbaths and for months and for feasts and for years and for Sabbaths of years and for jubilees and for all seasons of the years.

Book of Jubilees 2:20,21,24,31 - And God appointed the sun to be a great sign on the earth for days and for Sabbaths and for months and for feasts and for years and for Sabbaths of years and for jubilees and for all seasons of the years. And thus He created therein a sign in accordance with which they should keep Sabbath with us on the seventh day, to eat and to drink, and to bless Him who has created all things as He has blessed and sanctified unto Himself a peculiar people above all peoples, and that they should keep Sabbath together with us. And to this [Jacob and his seed] it was granted that they should always be the blessed and holy ones of the first testimony and law, even as He had sanctified and blessed the Sabbath day on the seventh day. And to this [Jacob and his seed] it was granted that they should always be the blessed and

¹¹ http://biblehub.com/library/deane/pseudepigrapha/the_book_of_jubilees.htm

holy ones of the first testimony and law, even as He had sanctified and blessed the Sabbath day on the seventh day.

Book of Jubilees 3:30,31 - And they shall not bring in nor take out from house to house on that day; for that day is more holy and blessed than any jubilee day of the jubilees; on this we kept Sabbath in the heavens before it was made known to any flesh to keep Sabbath thereon on the earth. And the Creator of all things blessed it, but he did not sanctify all peoples and nations to keep Sabbath thereon, but Israel alone: them alone he permitted to eat and drink and to keep Sabbath thereon on the earth.

Book of Jubilees 50:1,2 - And after this law I made known to thee the days of the Sabbaths in the desert of Sin[ai], which is between Elim and Sinai. And I told thee of the Sabbaths of the land on Mount Sinai, and I told thee of the jubilee years in the sabbaths of years: but the year thereof have I not told thee till ye enter the land which ye are to possess.

Book of Jubilees 50:10,11 - For great is the honour which the Lord has given to Israel that they should eat and drink and be satisfied on this festival day, and rest thereon from all labour which belongs to the labour of the children of men save burning frankincense and bringing oblations and sacrifices before the Lord for days and for Sabbaths. This work alone shall be done on the Sabbath-days in the sanctuary of the Lord your God; that they may atone for Israel with sacrifice continually from day to day for a memorial well-pleasing before the Lord, and that He may receive them always from day to day according as thou hast been commanded.

These passages, plus an entire reading of the book, suggest that the *Book of Jubilees* teaches these things:

- The Sabbath was kept in Heaven long before Planet Earth was created.
- The Sabbath festival system was established at Creation, and holy days and weeks were to be celebrated by the People of God according to a lunar-solar calendar that provided for annual, monthly, and possibly weekly, events.
- There might have been some kind of a weekly festival-like celebration that might have been part of an annual, monthly, and weekly world clock-related set of sacred days, but the weekly festival, if there was one, did not get turned into a required cultic ordinance for the Nation of Israel until the time of the Exodus. Nor are there any texts in *Jubilees* that support any inference that Adam, Noah, Abraham, Isaac or Jacob ever kept the Sabbath.
- The weekly Sabbath was required for Israel and Israel ALONE as a mark that would sharply-distinguish them from all other societies on Earth.
- Possibly implied: Additional animal sacrifices were offered on the Sabbath Day, in addition to the daily sacrifices required on the other days of the week.
- The weekly Sabbath is considered a “festival,” which agrees with its classification as a festival in *Leviticus* 23. The Sabbath was part of a unitary system of festival and holy days and feasts. It was never designed to be kept in isolation from all of the other festivals and feasts and holy days.
- *Jubilees* 22 and 30 present an almost impossible-to-fathom strict prohibition of Jews marrying Gentiles, and strongly equates this prohibition with the Temple rites of sacrifice and the genetic purity of the Levitical priesthood. ***This blanket prohibition against intermarriage was logically-facilitated by circumcision.*** Thus, the Sabbath is contextualized as just one more method by which the Jews were to be kept absolutely separate and distinct from the Gentiles. The fact that the Sabbath observance of the Jews functioned so well to maintain this separation is one of the reasons why the Seleucid Greeks were so hostile toward the Jewish practices of the Sabbath, circumcision and the Jewish food laws as discussed in *The Books of Maccabees*. They correctly perceived this refusal to mix as a rude national insult as well as a roadblock to their immensely successful march to Hellenize the world based on what is known as “the Greek philosophical project.”¹² This explains how St. Paul’s deliberate choice to present only the universally applicable truths of Christianity created an explosion of the Faith almost instantly in the Greek speaking parts of the Roman Empire after his discourse on Mar’s Hill.

The idea that the Sabbath was celebrated in Heaven prior to the Creation of Planet Earth is not a biblical concept. The 7th day of Creation is stated to have been set aside as a memorial of the Creation of Planet Earth — something that had not

12 <http://faculty.washington.edu/zerbe/docs/progress/>

happened prior to the moment. The point, of course, is not necessarily whether the book is theologically correct in all points, but what it says about how the Hebrews viewed the Sabbath. However, all the other tenets of the book seem to square with what we know about Hebrew linguistics and what the Jews believed about the origin of the Sabbath and its exclusiveness to Israel.

Since *Lying for God* is a book about what Adventists knew and when they knew about serious problems with its major doctrines, it is significant to note that SDA Sabbath scholars are familiar with the *Book of Jubilees*. In the following quote from Dr. Samuele Bacchiocchi's 1977 book, *From Sabbath to Sunday*, page 67, he not only quotes the *Book of Jubilees*, but also the *Mishnah*, betraying his awareness of the Jewish opposition to the idea that the Sabbath was for all nations. Recall that in a different chapter we explain how the *Mishnah* explains the Jewish view that the Gentiles within Israel's borders were held accountable by the Jewish dual court system for keeping the Noahide laws which did not include the Sabbath:

104. *Jubilees* 2:31, “He allowed no people or peoples to keep the Sabbath on this day, except Israel only; to it alone he granted to eat and drink and keep the Sabbath on it,” cf. *Mechilta* 109b; *Mishnah*, Yoma 8, 6.

Remarkably, the teachings of the *Book of Jubilees* are congruent with what Moses wrote in Genesis Chapter 1 about how God gave Planet Earth world clocks in the form of the movements of the major heavenly bodies. These predictable movements were to be used to schedule the sacred days and festivals. Although the text of the *Book of Jubilees* clips the reference to the world clocks mentioned in the *Book of Genesis*, it clearly references *Genesis* 1:14, which is the basis for the nearly universal concept of both pagan and Hebrew lunar sabbath systems:

¹⁴ And God said, “Let there be lights in the vault of the sky to separate the day from the night, and let them serve as signs to mark sacred times, and days and years, ¹⁵ and let them be lights in the vault of the sky to give light on the earth.”

We should also point out that it would be unreasonable to expect that the Ethiopian churches, all of which give special recognition in either a Jewish or a Christian way to Saturdays, would be scheduling their Saturdays or Sabbaths by the lunar Sabbath beyond ancient times. We would expect that like virtually all other ancient societies, at some point after the building of the Second Temple the catastrophic changes in the world clocks by one or more biblical miracles brought about the adoption of a calendar with a fixed week. The general world abandonment of the lunar calendar happened so long ago that even in civilizations that kept relatively good historical records, it is difficult to pinpoint exactly when this happened.

It would seem, according to the *Book of Jubilees*, that the seventh day of Creation — this one, particular day in the history of Planet Earth — was made holy at that time of Creation, but that the weekly Sabbath festival, based on the “natural” four phases of the lunar month, was not turned into a required cultic ordinance for Israel until the time of the Exodus. This principle agrees with other things we have discovered in our research from various other sources. The *Book of Jubilees* provides solid, “back-handed” support for the fact that the Jews of that age were using the lunar calendar to schedule their Sabbath days. This is true, you may recall, because the *Book of Jubilees* argues for a change from the highly variable lunar calendar to a 364 day solar year. This fact appears to correlate with other research we have presented elsewhere that convulsive changes in our solar system, as noted, pushed the solar year from about 360 days to about 364 to 365 days, making a lunar calendar more and more difficult for societies to utilize. This book was a challenge to abandon the Jewish lunar calendar in favor of a more stable, solar calendar in opposition to the prevalent Rabbinical reliance on a lunar monthly calendar:

In contrast to the lunar-solar calendar found in Rabbinic sources, Jubilees follows a solar calendar of 364 days per year, to which it refers as a “complete year” (שנה תמימה):

Now you command the Israelites to keep the years in this number—364 days. Then the year will be complete and it will not disturb its time from its days or from its festivals because everything will happen in harmony with their testimony. They will neither omit a day nor disturb a festival. (6:32)¹³

Jubilees appears to be a call for Judaism to accept nothing less than complete calendar reform — a total abandonment of the lunar calendar in favor of the kind of solar calendar we use today:

This leads up to a final section in which the law respecting jubilees and sabbatical years is solemnly enjoined. The writer's aim seems to have been nothing less than a reformation of the Jewish Calendar. The

13 <http://thetorah.com/jewish-calendar-in-jubilees-a-solar-year/>

prevailing system has led to the nation "forgetting" new moons, festivals, and sabbaths (and (?) jubilees); 1 in other words, it has produced grave irregularities in the observance of matters which were of divine obligation.

....

But more revolutionary is the writer's advocacy of a solar calendar. In ii. 9 he says, "God appointed the sun to be a great sign upon the earth for days and for sabbaths, and for feasts and for years and for jubilees and for all seasons of the years." In Gen. i. 14 this function is assigned to the sun *and the moon*; but in our Book [*Book of Jubilees*] the moon is deliberately excluded. The writer objected fiercely to the traditional calendar which was based upon the changes of the moon, and was adjusted to the solar year by means of intercalation. How can his apparent violation of the express wording of Scripture be explained? His answer would probably have been that the solar year of 364 days (cf. vi. 32) was actually the system implied in the Pentateuch.¹⁴

The Sabbath was analogous to and served the same function as the airtight prohibition against intermarriage articulated in *Jubilees*. Israel's identity was to be made clear and unambiguous:

Jubilees 30 discusses Genesis 34 in detail, using it as a "proof text" to forbid intermarriage...While Genesis 34 probably was not written for this purpose, the way *Jubilees* retells it and omits elements of the story about Jacob and Dinah makes it clear that, for its authors, intermarriage was strictly to be forbidden. However, before looking into this issue, it is important to note that *Jubilees*' main focus is on Israel itself, and especially the question of its identity.....This may explain the attention given to the founding families of Israel as cornerstones of Jewish identity.....The structure of *Jubilees* thus reveals its interpretation of Jewish identity as basically understood within the framework of and defined by the Mosaic Law.....The nations are portrayed in a much more negative way than Israel.Being God's people, then, means being separated from the nations. More than that, it means being a "light to the nations." ¹⁵

Jubilees' strict prohibition against intermarriage with Gentiles may have been the cause of the violent oppression of the Sabbath, circumcision and Jewish food laws during the Greek occupation of Judea under the reign of Antiochus Epiphanes around 160 BCE. That the Sabbath, Circumcision, Food Laws and the prohibition against intermarriage were all **specifically** designed to separate the Jews from the Gentiles cannot be denied, especially when it is placed in the historical context under which *Jubilees* was written down :

In early Hellenistic Judaism the refusal of mixed marriages was widespread. Its impact has an anti-Hellenistic direction and aims at the development of a distinct Jewish religious identity. Therefore, it is referred to as authoritative literature in this context, as Armin Lange has pointed out correctly. The same holds true for the *Book of Jubilees*, especially for ch. 30. *Jubilees* reveals an anti-Hellenistic attitude, be it extro- or introverted, which is quite prominent because of its radicalism and the recourse to the biblical texts. Within the Hellenistic discourse on Jewish identity, the *Book of Jubilees* advocates a clear-cut demarcation between Jews and the Gentiles. There is hardly any Jewish writing from the second century B.C.E. that is as radical and plain in the call for separation from the nations as the *Book of Jubilees*....¹⁶

Can there be any starker distinction between the Sabbath and the Great Commission? The Sabbath **was** relentlessly divisive, keeping the Jews and Gentiles in strict separation. It specifically-excluded Gentiles. By contrast, **the Great Commission embraces Gentiles**. Christianity was universal in its truth claims, which is closely-related to the Hellenizing impulse of Greek philosophy which also emphasized the importance of identifying and following universally applicable truths.

No wonder the Greeks fell madly in love with Paul's theology. They hated the exclusiveness of Judaism but recognized, at the same time, that their polytheistic religious practices were monstrously incompatible with the universal morality espoused by its own philosophers. Paul's version of Christianity was stripped of Judaism's exclusiveness and focused on universal principles of self-evident moral principles that everyone in the world could understand and graft into their daily lives. The result was the swift destruction of the entire pagan worship system of the Greek-speaking parts of the Roman Empire within less than 100 years.

¹⁴ <http://www.sacred-texts.com/bib/jub/jub06.htm>

¹⁵ *Early Judaism and Modern Culture: Literature and Theology*, Gerbem S. Oegema, Pp 45-46

¹⁶ *MIXED MARRIAGES Intermarriage and Group Identity in the Second Temple Period*, Edited by Christian Frevel. Pp. 220-221.

http://www.ruhr-uni-bochum.de/at/mam/download/frevel_intermarriage_jubilees_2011_.pdf

That the Sabbath was intended to be a national law enforced by a court system to maintain the wall of separation between the Children of Israel and the Gentile world surrounding it is well-understood in modern Israel today. Modern Israel has Sabbath observance laws, complete with “Sabbath police,” to enforce those laws. The Israel of today has a court system that stays busy considering cases of Sabbath-breaking and appropriate penalties for those infractions. As we have pointed out elsewhere, there is no danger of a National **Sunday** Law being passed in Christian countries that would force Adventists to worship on the “wrong” day. But a National **Saturday** Law is already alive and well in today’s Israel, and it is a major source of inconvenience¹⁷ for those who do not familiarize themselves with Jewish customs and Israeli Sabbath laws before visiting Israel :

Underlying Gavison's dream are the revived ideas of Ahad Ha'am, the late 19th-century Zionist who argued for a cultural, rather than political, Zionism—an Israel based on a positive Jewishness rather than on ethnic nationalism and anti-anti-Semitism. What he was calling for isn't clear either, though anyone who has ever found himself on a synagogue mailing list will be familiar with his sociological *aperçu* on the Sabbath: "More than Israel has kept the Sabbath, the Sabbath has kept Israel.”

....

A national day of rest in the global era—even for Israelis—is probably a fantasy. But it's a strangely inspiring one. Who talks of "public culture" anymore?¹⁸

The Sabbath, Circumcision and prohibition against various kinds of food continue to work superbly well at their intended work of separation and distinction in Israel today, where observant Jews and secular Zionists coexist in what can only be described as an ongoing “Cold War,” which threatens to constantly erupt into a “hot” brush-fire conflict:

To Zionists, Haredi Jews were either "primitives" or "parasites"; to Haredi Jews, Zionists were tyrannizing heretics. This *kulturkampf* still plagues Israeli society today, where animosity between the two groups has even pervaded both their educational systems.¹⁹

We point out the significance in the fact that animal sacrifices were specifically mentioned as being the only “work” that was permitted on the weekly Sabbath. As noted elsewhere, the canonical Scriptures clarify that double the number of animal sacrifices were to be offered on the weekly Sabbaths. This passage from the *Book of Jubilees*, however, supplements our observation that animal sacrifices were a necessary part of the Hebrew weekly Sabbath. Since Jesus’ Sabbath-keeping/Sabbath-breaking occurred while the Second Temple was still functioning, these sacrifices were a vital part of what the Sabbath meant to Jesus. **Nowhere does either Jesus or Paul call into question the necessity of the specific additional Sabbath sacrifices that were being performed in the Temple. They knew these sacrifices were necessary to validate the holiness of each Sabbath day.** (Elsewhere we explain our biblically-based theory of what these Sabbath sacrifices were designed to accomplish.) The fact that Sabbath sacrifices are no longer required for observant Jews is purely a function of Rabbinical rulings in the aftermath of the destruction of the Second Temple by the Romans in CE 70.²⁰ For Christians, Colossians 2:16 plainly establishes that **Sabbaths** are unnecessary for Christians. Thus, Adventism’s ill-advised revival of the Judaizing heresy of Sabbath-keeping some 1800 years after the Resurrection presents surreal issues. Do Adventists reject Sabbath sacrifices because Jesus was the ultimate Sacrifice, or because of the Rabbinical rulings after the Destruction of the Second Temple? As a practical, historical matter, wasn’t it really the latter? Historically, the destruction of the Temple and the Rabbinical rulings regarding Sabbath sacrifices had no effect on First Century Christians. They had already abandoned the Sabbath and cultural Judaism with all of its techniques of separation. The Great Commission demanded it.

Adventists are brutally-skewered on the horns of another nasty dilemma. It is impossible to ignore Ellen White’s uninhibited and gushing endorsement of the Ethiopian Christian Church. That alone presents two absolutely fatal obstacles to the anodyne and unscriptural veneration of Saturday that Adventists pretend they are accomplishing by treating it like Jews treat the Jewish Sabbath. Ethiopian Christian Canon Law **requires** that its members work on Saturday or face excommunication. They make no pretense about the fact that they do not “keep” the Sabbath like the Jews do. Its canon law recognizes that the Sabbath was a sign of separation from the Jews and the rest of the world.²¹ Ethiopian Orthodox

17 <http://www.israelinsideout.com/Touring/a-tourists-guide-to-shabbat-the-sabbath.html>

18 http://www.slate.com/articles/life/faithbased/2005/07/the_view_from_saturday.html

19 https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Religious_relations_in_Israel#Tensions_between_Haredim_and_secular_Jews

20 <http://www.jewfaq.org/qorbanot.htm>

21 <http://www.ethiopianorthodox.org/biography/01thelawofkings.pdf>

Canon Law specifically states it is designed to distinguish its Christianized version of **Saturday** observance from the **Sabbath** observance of the Jews.

Secondly, the Ethiopians' canonical treatment of *Jubilees* proves that if one does wish to "keep the Sabbath holy," then one is probably required to observe it according to the lunar calendar, given that calendar's total integration into the economy and thought of ancient Judaism; offer the mandated Sabbath sacrifices; and undergo full-scale conversion to Judaism. *Jubilees* clearly establishes that the Sabbath was the means by which the Children of Israel would be unequivocally distinguished and separated from all of the nations of the world.

Adventists seem to think that the New Covenant altered the rules for Sabbath-keeping. There are huge disagreements among Adventists about how the Sabbath should be kept. Some SDA's think it is alright to eat out on the Sabbath if they are away from home, but not if they are at home. Other SDA's would starve to death rather than eat at a restaurant on the Sabbath whether at home or away from home. There is a reason for this confusion.

Adventists demonstrate a nearly comical cognitive dissonance in their Sabbath logic. They think the laws of Moses that governed Sabbath-keeping are "ceremonial," and therefore they could be nailed to the Cross. However, they think the Sabbath law itself is a "moral" law. What confusion! The Hebrews had both the Mosaic Law and the guidance from the *Mishnah* to govern their Sabbath-keeping. If the Sabbath law had been a moralistic law, then all the rules and regulations God gave for its keeping were moralistic laws. But if the Sabbath law was a ceremonial law— which it clearly is— then all the laws that supported it were ceremonial. You cannot have your cake and eat it too. The Sabbath system stands or falls together, and it "fell."

Adventists attempt to rip the Sabbath out of its entire Jewish context with disastrous results. They insist that this ceremonial festival of Jewish distinctiveness must be grafted onto Christianity without any of the other Jewish festivals— without observing it pursuant to the mandatory lunar calendar, and without the mandatory animal sacrifices. Sabbath-keeping is NOT an individual matter of conscience. Either it is right to eat out on Sabbath or it is not. The Hebrews had well over 1,000 years to interpret and implement Sabbath-keeping in Israel. If one is going to keep the Sabbath, it must be kept in its Jewish context. No fires started on Sabbath in your Arctic Circle igloo! No lighting thousands of fires per minute by driving your Jeep Cherokee to church! And keep one more thing in mind. These Sabbath-keeping laws did not come from the Judaizers. They came from the Law of Moses and the *Mishnah*. (We must never forget that the *Mishnah* was only accepted by the Pharisee sect of Judaism, and Jesus told His followers to obey the teachings of the Pharisees.)

The Book of *Jubilees* delivers a stern rebuke to these Adventist fantasies.

CHAPTER NINE

THE REALITIES OF CHURCH HISTORY

THE SABBATH DURING THE BEGINNING OF THE FAITH

By Kerry Wynne, William Hohmann,
Robert K. Sanders, and Larry Dean

THE REALITIES OF CHURCH HISTORY

THE SABBATH DURING THE BEGINNING OF THE FAITH

By Kerry Wynne, William Hohmann,
Robert K. Sanders, and Larry Dean

Coordinating the fact that Christian doctrine and practice emanated from the Eastern Orthodox Church to the Western Church (Church of Rome) is a wealth of information long known to Roman Catholic, Orthodox, and Protestant scholars. It would appear, unfortunately, that once the pioneer SDA church "historian," J. N. Andrews, accepted his belief in the Sabbath from a purported prophet of God, everything he studied about early church history thereafter had to be interpreted along the line that Sabbath abandonment represented apostasy. Thus Andrews and White abetted each other in creating an interpretation of history that disagreed with well-established facts. Their naïve view of things implied that the early Christians who abandoned the Jewish Sabbath kept Sundays as one would observe the Sabbath. Thus, White and Andrews failed to notice that while some of the Jewish Christians did continue to keep the Sabbath by resting from labor on that day, they would have been free to meet in fellowship with their Gentile counterparts for table fellowship along with corporate worship and prayers on the next day, which example we see in Acts 20:7. As Jews they would have tended to remain in their homes on the Sabbath according to the requirements of the Law.

What, then, if the Gentile Christians were observing Sundays along the lines of the Sabbath? The Jewish Christians would not have been able to have any concourse with the Gentile Christians for the same reasons! What Jesus' death had accomplished in order to bring the two disparate groups together would have been undone and reversed by the early church had they observed Sundays along the pattern of the Sabbath!

Wherefore remember, that ye being in time past Gentiles in the flesh, who are called Uncircumcision by that which is called the Circumcision in the flesh made by hands; ¹²That at that time ye were without Christ, being aliens from the commonwealth of Israel, and strangers from the covenants of promise, having no hope, and without God in the world: ¹³But now in Christ Jesus ye who sometimes were far off are made nigh by the blood of Christ. ¹⁴For he is our peace, who hath made both one, and hath broken down the middle wall of partition between us; ¹⁵Having abolished in his flesh the enmity, even the law of commandments contained in ordinances; for to make in himself of twain one new man, so making peace; ¹⁶And that he might reconcile both unto God in one body by the cross, having slain the enmity thereby: ¹⁷And came and preached peace to you which were afar off, and to them that were nigh. ¹⁸For through him we both have access by one Spirit unto the Father. ¹⁹Now therefore ye are no more strangers and foreigners, but fellow citizens with the saints, and of the household of God; ²⁰And are built upon the foundation of the apostles and prophets, Jesus Christ himself being the chief corner stone; ²¹In whom all the building fitly framed together groweth unto an holy temple in the Lord: ²²In whom ye also are builded together for an habitation of God through the Spirit. — Ephesians 2:11-22 (KJV)

Sundays had no sacredness associated with it in the early Church. Early writings show that Christians either gathered early on Sunday mornings for communal worship and prayers before going off to work on that day, or meeting together after work on that day for the same purpose as well as to share a communal meal.

But Sunday is the day on which we all hold our common assembly, because it is the first day on which God, having wrought a change in the darkness and matter, made the world; and Jesus Christ our Saviour on the same day rose from the dead. (Justin Martyr (65-155 AD.) From: **The First Apology of Justin, Chapter LXVII.-Weekly Worship of the Christians.)**

The early church associated Sundays with the resurrection of Christ. His resurrection ushered in a new beginning that was not to be trivialized.

The first Christians were Jews and they understood, as Hebrews, reading the books of Moses in Aramaic, that the Sabbath ordinance was not given at Creation. They understood the subordinate relationship of the Sabbath to the ordinance of circumcision. It was Jewish Christians who, at the Council of Jerusalem, vetoed the move by the Pharisaical members to require the new Gentile believers coming into the Church be circumcised and keep the law.

There is no hope of salvaging Ellen White's concept that Sunday observance began in the Western Church (Rome). Sunday observance came from the East to the Western churches by its missionaries and that the Eastern Orthodox Church exerted powerful control over the church at Rome that these missionaries established.

As we mentioned earlier, the Eastern Church was the center of Christianity for the first few hundred years of the Christian Faith. This is where Christian doctrine and practice were established. The Western Church did not develop into any prominence within Christianity until after 500-600 AD. The center of political power shifted to the East (think Asia versus Europe) when Constantine moved the seat of the Empire from Rome to Constantinople in 324 AD. The fact that the Roman Empire survived in the East for around 1,000 years longer than it did in the West suggests that the Eastern Orthodox Church would likely retain preeminence in matters of the Christian Faith for hundreds of additional years. The emperor didn't move the bishop of Rome to Constantinople with him.

Therefore, speculative claims about how Sunday observance might have developed in the West (Rome) is an exercise in futility and deception. All the theories developed by SDA scholars to place the development of Sunday observance in the West have been successfully refuted, and these theories include **(1)** Dr. Samuele Bacchiocchi's Jewish Persecution Theory, **(2)** Dr. Samuele Bacchiocchi's "Influence of Sun Worship Theory," **(3)** the Dual Day Theory as developed by the General Conference of Seventh-day Adventists, and **(4)** Kenneth W. Strand's Out of Easter Theory.

During the time that Adventists claim all these various influences were coming together to bring about Sunday observance in the West (Rome), Christian doctrine and practice was flowing from the East to the West. As the significant councils of the Christian Faith began to be held, they were conducted in the East, and the bishop of Rome traveled to Asia to participate as one of a number of others from the Christian world of their day. These bishops returned at the conclusion of these councils to implement the decisions of these councils in their bishoprics. In a manner of speaking, the bishop of Rome received his "marching orders" from the East as did all the other bishops from around the Christian world.

If we did not already know that Sunday observance and Sabbath breaking were universal by 140 AD— and if we did not already know that the Eastern Church never kept the Sabbath— and if we did not already know that Christian doctrine and practice originated in the East and flowed to the West during this time of ecclesiastical history— we would still conclude that the Western Church (Rome) did not develop the practice of Sunday observance and Sabbath-breaking on its own, but that it was imposed on it around 363-365 AD by the Council of Laodicea!

While not classified as one of the "Great Councils," the Council of Laodicea, circa 363-365 AD, was also held in the East. Laodicea is located in what is modern-day Turkey, and is not to be confused with the Laodicea in Syria. (See *Wikipedia* article, "Council of Laodicea.") This council was convened to address many questions, including which books should be in the Bible and the Sabbath-Sunday question. Please read Canon #29 carefully:

Canon 29: Christians must not Judaize by resting on the Sabbath, but must work on that day, rather honouring the Lord's Day; and, **if they can**, resting then as Christians. But if any shall be found to be Judaizers, let them be anathema from Christ.

(See <http://www.newadvent.org/fathers/3806.htm>, New Advent is a Roman Catholic website.)

Notice that the Council, by its directive to have Christians rest on Sunday IF THEY CAN, purposed to establish Christian practice (think tradition) rather than Christian doctrine in regard to resting on Sunday. If the Council had intended to transfer the sacredness of the Jewish Sabbath to Sunday, resting would not have been treated as an option. The Council wished to provide a day where Christians could worship God and spend time with their families, and working would interfere with these things. There was no element of sacredness of time involved.

This provision of Canon #29 casts even more doubt on **Bob Pickle's** SDA theory that we could still say that the pope changed the Sabbath because this "change" was not complete until rest required by the Jewish Sabbath was transferred to Sunday.

Like all the other bishops in the Christian world, the bishop of Rome continued to receive— not impart— Christian doctrine and practice throughout all the centuries through which Sunday observance and Sabbath rejection ensued. Note that as discussed in the comments of R.J. Baukham in the next section, the bishop of Rome utterly failed to influence the other bishops of his day to adopt his preferred date for Easter and to enforce the Sabbath fast. It is not very realistic to think that he would have had a chance to "impose" Sunday observance on the entire Christian church, even if he had tried to do so. A

review of the Great Councils of the East clearly demonstrates that the center of Christian thought and influence was in the Eastern Orthodox Church during the entire period of time that Adventists like to talk about the role of Rome in establishing Sunday observance, and even to centuries beyond that point: (See *Wikipedia* article, “First Seven Ecumenical Councils”):

The First Seven Ecumenical Councils, as commonly understood, are:

1. First Council of Nicaea (325)
2. First Council of Constantinople (381)
3. Council of Ephesus (431)
4. Council of Chalcedon (451)
5. Second Council of Constantinople (553)
6. Third Council of Constantinople (680)
7. Second Council of Nicaea (787)

The first council held in the West, Lateran, was held in the year 1123 in the Basilica in Rome after the Great Schism between the Eastern and Western churches had existed for some time.

Nicaea, the home of the First Great Council, took place about 40 years before the Council of Laodicea in what is now present day Turkey in 321 AD. While Roman Catholics like to claim that it was the Bishop of Rome who was responsible for establishing the doctrine of the full divinity of Christ at this Council, Protestants quote the following Council’s statement that shows that the Bishop of Rome was mentioned only as a peer with the bishops of other major jurisdictions:

“Let the ancient customs in Egypt, Libya, Pentapolis, prevail. Let the Bishop of Alexandria have jurisdiction over all of these, since the like is customary for the Bishop of Rome also. Likewise in Antioch and the other provinces, let the churches retain their privileges (*Canon 6*).”

The *Wikipedia* article, “First Council of Nicaea,” makes this interesting observation:

“According to Protestant theologian Philip Schaff, ‘The Nicene fathers passed this canon not as introducing anything new, but merely as confirming an existing relation on the basis of church tradition; and that, with special reference to Alexandria, on account of the troubles existing there. Rome was named only for illustration; and Antioch and all the other eparchies or provinces were secured their admitted rights. The bishoprics of Alexandria, Rome, and Antioch were placed substantially on equal footing’. (Schaff, Philip. *History of the Christian Church*, vol. 3, pp. 275-276.)

THE “CHURCH AT ROME” THEORY

Dr. Bacchiocchi theorized that the Church at Rome, which developed into the Roman Catholic Church hundreds of years later, might have had a significant role pushing Christians away from the Jewish Sabbath in order to adopt Sunday observance. Dr. Bacchiocchi further theorized that it was the supposedly preeminent authority of the bishop of the Church at Rome (the predecessor of the pope of the Roman Catholic Church) who influenced the entire church to adopt the “new” practice of Sunday observance (*From Sabbath to Sunday*, pp. 207-212). R.J. Baukham, who lectured in the Department of Theology at the University of Manchester, said this about Dr. Bacchiocchi’s theory in his essay, “Sabbath and Sunday in the Post-Apostolic Church:”

This is probably the weakest of Bacchiocchi’s arguments, but it is essential to his thesis. Only this assertion of the primacy of Rome can begin to explain how a custom originating in the early second century could have become as universal in the Christian church as Sunday worship did.

Against Bacchiocchi’s argument, it must be said that the evidence he presents for the authority of the Church of Rome in the second century is not convincing. The Church of Rome had great prestige, but the kind of jurisdictional authority his thesis presupposes is anachronistic in the second century. No church of that period had sufficient authority to change the weekly day of worship throughout Christendom.

Furthermore, Bacchiocchi's other two examples of liturgical change in the second century, the Sunday Easter and fasting on the Sabbath, do not, as he thinks, support his case, but rather highlight its weakness. Whether or not Bacchiocchi is correct in locating the origin of the Sunday Easter in early second-century Rome, it is quite clear that the see of Rome did not have the authority to impose it on the rest of the church. It was not until the *end* of the second century that bishop Victor of Rome attempted to convert the Quartodeciman churches to the observance of the Sunday Easter, and his attempt encountered stubborn resistance in Asia. Similarly, the Church of Rome was singularly unsuccessful in promoting the practice of fasting on the Sabbath. As Bacchiocchi himself admits, as late as the fifth century it was still confined to the Church of Rome, itself and a few other western churches. Both in the case of the Sunday Easter and in the case of the Sabbath fast, the surviving historical records indicate considerable debate and controversy in the churches.

It therefore seems extremely unlikely that already in the *early* second century the authority of the Roman see was such that it could impose Sunday worship throughout the church, superseding a universal practice of Sabbath observance handed down from the apostles, without leaving any trace of controversy or resistance in the historical records. Bacchiocchi's own comparison with Sunday Easter and the Sabbath fast shows up the difficulty of his explanations of the origins of Sunday worship. Like all attempts to date the origins of Sunday worship in the second century, it fails to account for the universality of the custom. Unlike the Sunday Easter and the Sabbath fast, Sunday worship was never, so far as the evidence goes, disputed. **There is no record of any Christian group (except the extreme part of the Ebonites) that did not observe Sunday, either in the second century or in later centuries of the patristic era.** (*From Sabbath to Lord's Day*, Carson, p.271, 272)

Michael Morrison, in his article, "*Sabbath and Sunday: Adventist Theories*," posted at the Grace Community International website, provides a list of additional reasons that provide evidence that the Roman Church did not have the power to legislate any particular practice to the other churches in the Roman Empire:

As evidence that Rome did not have such power, we can note:

Ignatius does not greet a bishop of Rome.

Irenaeus disagreed with the bishop of Rome regarding policy toward Quartodecimans.

Polycarp and Polycrates acted as equals with the bishop of Rome.

It was only with difficulty and recorded controversy that Rome pressured a change in the date of Easter for one area in Asia Minor.

Even in later centuries, Rome was unable to force other cities to observe the seventh day as a fast day.

In the fourth century, when many Eastern Christians began to observe the Sabbath as well as Sunday, Rome was unable or unwilling to stop the practice.

(Kenneth A. Strand, *From Sabbath to Sunday in the Early Christian Church: A Review of Some Recent Literature. Part II*: "Samuele Bacchiocchi's Reconstruction," Andrews University Seminary Studies (AUSS) 17 (1979), pp. 96-99. Strand also notes that "Christian influences were still moving largely from East to West rather than vice versa" (*Sabbath*, p. 332, n. 22)

Now we know where Sunday observance came from. The first Christians met on Sundays because the Jews were meeting on Saturdays. The Jews threw the Christians out of the synagogues. The Council of Jerusalem voted not to impose the ordinance of circumcision on the Gentile converts, thereby bringing them under the law with its Sabbath. It is doubtful that many of the Jewish Christians kept the Sabbath, but if they did, they abandoned it within several decades. It is unlikely that the Gentile Christians ever kept it. Sunday observance quickly became the tradition of the Eastern Church, which from the beginning was the center of Christian belief, practice, and influence. Sunday observance was never a church doctrine. The early Christians had no illusions about it having any intrinsic sacredness that had been transferred to it from the Jewish Sabbath. As we have seen, the practice of Sunday observance spread from the East to the West— not from the West to the East. The doctrines of Rome were imposed on it by the important church councils, all of which were held in the East. There is no evidence that Rome originated and imposed one single doctrine or practice on the Christian world until many centuries after the practice of Sunday observance and Sabbath "abandonment" had become the unquestioned, universal practice of the Christian Faith for hundreds of years.

Bacchiocchi's "From Pagan Sun Worship" Theory

Dr. Bacchiocchi tried to salvage some components of Ellen White's conspiracy/apostasy theory— that pagan sun worship influenced Christians to adopt Sunday observance. The sun has always had its worshipers throughout the world, especially in ancient times. For Dr. Bacchiocchi's theory to have credibility, he must prove two things beyond reasonable doubt.

1. **First**, he must demonstrate that sun worship was popular enough in the Roman Empire between 100 and 140 AD. to potentially have influenced Christianity in the choice of a day of worship on the basis of a perceived need for commonality.
2. **Second**, he must provide adequate evidence to show a high degree of probability that it actually DID influence Christianity in this manner. The more incredible any theory appears to be, the greater demand there is that the supportive evidence and arguments be strong.

In Dr. Bacchiocchi's book, *Sabbath under Crossfire* (1998), Dr. Bacchiocchi spends nearly an entire chapter discussing the *possibility* that this sun cult or that sun cult was popular between 70 and 140 AD., but there is no consensus among his sources. During the period of time in question, sun worship was not predominant in general and Mithraism was not widely practiced in specific. Bacchiocchi, in an apparent contradiction of himself, concedes:

The Christian Sunday and the pagan veneration of the day of the Sun is not explicit before the time of Eusebius (ca. AD. 260-340)... *From Sabbath to Sunday*, p. 264.

Therefore, **requirement #1 is not met.**

In the remainder of this same chapter, Dr. Bacchiocchi attempts to make a case for the probability that the Romans were using a 7-day calendar that corresponded with the 7-day Jewish calendar. It is painfully evident that he is grasping at straws to show that a 7-day calendar had even limited use anywhere in the Roman Empire during this period of time. Most of the historical sources we could locate indicate that the Romans used an 8-day calendar during New Testament times and that the day named in honor of the sun was the second day of that 8-day week. These sources are fairly consistent in stating that, so far as can be reconstructed, the Romans did not *completely* adopt a 7-day calendar until around 300 AD. On the other hand there are a few sources we found which see evidence that the Roman Empire might possibly have partially adopted a 7-day week 100 years or more before the birth of Christ, but that the vast majority of Romans continued using the customary 8 day week. **Robert Cox**, a contemporary of Andrews and White who is quoted in other areas by Andrews, examined this historical question. This book would have been available to J. N. Andrews and Ellen White in that era. Here is what Cox says in his chapter entitled "Origin and Prevalence of the Week:"

The opinion, still frequently expressed, that the week is and ever has been a universal institution, appears to be now untenable. Although anciently employed by the Hindoos, Assyrians, and Egyptians, the week was unknown to the Greeks and Etrurians, and was adopted by the Romans only in the second century, when they borrowed it from Egypt.

In his book *From Sabbath to Sunday*, Dr. Bacchiocchi states that some historians believe that a 7-day calendar was in widespread use in the Roman Empire by the latter part of the Second Century (150-199 AD). The trouble is that the transition from "Sabbath keeping" to Sunday observance was universal by 140 AD as conceded by Dr. Bacchiocchi himself. As we will explain subsequently, none of the Roman gods were worshiped on a weekly basis. But let us, for the sake of argument, pretend for a moment that the Roman sun worshipers did get together on the day of their "week" that was named in honor of the Sun. The Romans are using an eight-day week. It is the SECOND day of the eight-day Roman week that is named in honor of the Sun. The Jews are using a seven-day week, and it is the 7th day of their week that has been set aside as their sacred day of worship. In this hypothetical case, the day of worship for the Sun worshipers would only fall on the same day as the Jewish Sabbath occasionally. Compound this with the likelihood that the Jews were still using a lunar calendar to calculate the Sabbath, resetting their weeks according to the new moon, and the disparity widens even further.

Since the Romans did not worship their gods on a weekly basis, there was no such thing a day of sun worship during any kind of a week that the Jewish Sabbath could be changed to, even if both weekly systems were the same! The followers of any particular god visited that god's temple whenever they felt the need, and there were special days of a calendar year set aside to honor specific deities. Again, and for a somewhat different reason, we are faced with the impossibility that any

worship day was “changed.” There was no weekly day of sun worship that the papacy could have moved the Jewish Sabbath to.

In 1997 Evangelical biblical scholar, Ralph Woodrow, startled the Christian world by publishing a book, *The Two Babylons?* which refuted virtually everything he had taught in his best-selling 1966 book, *The Two Babylons*. In the 1966 book he taught that a lot of Christian customs, including its day of worship, had been borrowed from the Pagans. Years later Woodrow was informed by another scholar that his teachings were in error, and he determined to set out to find out the truth for himself. He had based *The Two Babylons* largely on the work of a much earlier religious writer, Alexander Hislop (1807-1862). Woodrow began to examine Hislop’s sources. Soon he discovered that those sources did not validate his claims! Pursuing additional historical records, he managed to stumble across the historical research of D. M. Canright. In his 1997 book, he drew extensively from Canright’s findings to show that his initial premise— that Christians had borrowed a lot of pagan customs— was not true. The Christian world was impressed that he had the humility to admit that he was wrong and to try to correct his error. Sunday observance could not have come from Pagans because they had no such custom to borrow from.

No later than 1915, D.M. Canright had confronted the leadership of the Seventh-day Adventist Church with overwhelming historical evidence their claim that pagan sun worship influenced Christians to abandon the keeping of the Jewish Sabbath was dead wrong. In Canright's book, *The Lord's Day From Neither Catholics Nor Pagans: An Answer to Seventh-day Adventism on this Subject* (1915), he had presented the scholarly opinion of a number of noted American historians that the pagans had never had a weekly day set aside to worship any of their gods. You can read this story at:

<http://hwarmstrong.com/sunday-worship.htm> <http://hwarmstrong.com/sunday-worship.htm>

Finally, if Dr. Bacchiocchi's apostasy theory were true, we would be forced to believe that the early Christians were willing to break the Sabbath, which they supposedly believed was based on an eternal, moral principle, while at the same time they were willing to give up their lives rather than to bow the knee to an idol or publicly renounce Christ.

R.J. Baukham, in his essay, “*Sabbath and Sunday in the Post-Apostolic Church*,” answers Dr. Bacchiocchi as follows:

Bacchiocchi argues that the reason why the church of Rome adopted *Sunday* as the Christian day of worship, instead of the Sabbath, was that the pagan day of the sun, in the planetary week, had already gained special significance in pagan sun cults, and by adopting this day Christians were able to exploit the symbolism of God or Christ as sun or light, which was already present in their own religious tradition.

Bacchiocchi here underestimates the resistance to pagan customs in second century Christianity. The desire for differentiation from paganism had deeper Christian roots than the second-century desire for differentiation from Judaism. It is true that, from Justin onwards, the Fathers exploited the symbolism of the pagan title “Sunday,” but to have actually adopted the pagan day as the Christian day of worship *because* it was prominent in the pagan sun cults would have been a very bold step indeed. Even if the Church of Rome had taken this step, it becomes even more inexplicable that the rest of the church followed suit without argument. (D.A. Carson, ed., *From Sabbath to Lord's Day*, p. 272)

Mithraism is the sun cult that Sabbatarians most suspect was influential in causing the abandonment of Sabbath-keeping for the adoption of the so-called “pagan” Sunday as the day of worship for Christians. Bacchiocchi knew of this possible link, but declined to say that he had proof that such was the case. Since Mithraism had only been present in the Roman Empire for a few centuries before Christ, it did not reach its peak of popularity until a couple of hundred years after Sunday observance had become universal. Here is what The *Encyclopedia Wikipedia* has to say about the relationship of Mithraism with Christianity. You can read it in its full context at this link:

http://www.faculty.umb.edu/gary_zabel/Courses/Phil%20281b/Philosophy%20of%20Magic/Pythagoras.%20Empedocles.%20Plato/Mithraism.htm

Mithraism arrived fully mature at Rome with the return of the legions from the east in the first century BC. As an action god of armies and the champion of heroes, he appealed to the professional Roman soldiers, who carried his cult to Iberia, Britain, the German frontiers and Dacia.

The cult of Mithras began to attract attention at Rome about the end of the first century AD, perhaps in connection with the conquest of then-Zoroastrian Armenia. The earliest material evidence for the Roman worship of Mithras dates from that period, in a record of Roman soldiers who came from the military garrison at Carnuntum in the Roman province of Upper Pannonia (near the Danube River in modern Austria,

near the Hungarian border). These soldiers fought against the Parthians and were involved in the suppression of the revolts in Jerusalem from 60 A.D. to about 70 A.D. When they returned home, they made Mithraic dedications, probably in the year 71 or 72.

Stattius mentions the typical Mithraic relief in his *Thebaid* (Book i. 719,720), around A. D. 80; Plutarch's *Life of Pompey* also makes it clear that the worship of Mithras was well known at that time.

By A. D. 200, Mithraism had spread widely through the army, and also among traders and slaves. The German frontiers have yielded most of the archaeological evidence of its prosperity: small cult objects connected with Mithra turn up in archaeological digs from Romania to Hadrian's Wall.

At Rome, the third century emperors encouraged Mithraism, because of the support which it afforded to the divine nature of monarchs. Mithras thus became the giver of authority and victory to the Imperial House. From the time of Commodus, who participated in its mysteries, its supporters were to be found in all classes.

Concentrations of Mithraic temples are found on the outskirts of the Roman Empire: along Hadrian's Wall in northern England three mithraea have been identified, at Housesteads, Carrawburgh and Rudchester. The discoveries are in the University of Newcastle's Museum of Antiquities, where a mithraeum has been recreated. Recent excavations in London have uncovered the remains of a Mithraic temple near to the center of the once walled Roman settlement, on the bank of the Walbrook stream. Mithraea have also been found along the Danube and Rhine river frontier, in the province of Dacia (where in 2003 a temple was found in Alba-Iulia) and as far afield as Numidia in North Africa.

As would be expected, Mithraic ruins are also found in the port city of Ostia, and in Rome the capital, where as many as seven hundred mithraea may have existed (a dozen have been identified). Its importance at Rome may be judged from the abundance of monumental remains: more than 75 pieces of sculpture, 100 Mithraic inscriptions, and ruins of temples and shrines in all parts of the city and its suburbs. A well-preserved late 2nd century mithraeum, with its altar and built-in stone benches, originally built beneath a Roman house (as was a common practice), survives in the crypt over which has been built the Basilica of San Clemente, Rome.

Worship of the sun (Sol) did exist within the indigenous Roman pantheon, as a minor part, and always as a pairing with the moon. However, in the East, there were many solar deities, including the Greek Helios, who was largely displaced by Apollo. **By the 3rd century, the popular cults of Apollo and Mithras had started to merge into the syncretic cult known as Sol Invictus, and in 274 CE the emperor Aurelian (whose mother had been a priestess of the sun) made worship of Sol Invictus official.** Subsequently Aurelian built a splendid new temple in Rome, and created a new body of priests to support it (pontifex solis invicti), attributing his victories in the East to Sol Invictus. But none of this affected the existing cult of Mithras, which remained a non-official cult. Some senators held positions in both cults.

However, this period was also the beginning of the decline of Mithraism, as Dacia was lost to the empire, and invasions of the northern peoples resulted in the destruction of temples along a great stretch of frontier, the main stronghold of the cult. The spread of Christianity through the Empire, boosted by Constantine's tolerance of it from around 310 CE, also took its toll - particularly as Christianity admitted women while Mithraism did not, which obviously limited its potential for rapid growth.

The reign of Julian, who attempted to restore the faith, and suppress Christianity, and the usurpation of Eugenius renewed the hopes of its devotees, but the decree secured by Theodosius in 394, totally forbidding non-Christian worship, may be considered the end of Mithraism's formal public existence. Mithraism arrived fully mature at Rome with the return of the legions from the east in the first century BC.

The idea that the Sabbath was changed to Sunday faces seemingly impossible barriers at every turn. The writings of the first Christians indicate that the Jewish Sabbath was "abandoned" on biblical grounds. The leaders of the Reformation cited biblical concepts for abandoning the Jewish Sabbath. The truth of the matter, when the rhetoric is set aside, is that the early gentile Christian churches never embraced the Sabbath to begin with. The early Christians do not deserve the derogation that Sabbatarians have subjected them to over the years with the false claim that they went along with a conspiracy-apostasy to circumvent the Law of God.

NOT ACCORDING TO BACCHIOCCHI'S "JEWISH PERSECUTION THEORY"

As we have seen, Dr. Bacchiocchi has conceded himself into a historical box canyon. He admits the early date of 140 CE for universal adoption of Sunday observance and wisely refuses to suggest that the Roman Catholic Church changed the day. He concedes that he cannot prove a link between sun worship and Sabbath abandonment before 140 CE. His last hope is to prove that the Roman Empire's persecution of the rebellious Jews between 100 CE–140 CE caused the Christians at Rome to distance themselves from Sabbath-keeping in order to escape the possible threat of associated persecution. Dr. Bacchiocchi presupposes that Christians believed they were still required to keep the Sabbath at that time—something difficult to prove since Sunday observance was already widespread by 100 CE. He further theorizes that the Church at Rome used its influence over the Christians throughout the vast Roman Empire to distance itself from Sabbath-keeping to escape the possibility of such a persecution on the basis of this key religious practice supposedly being common to both Jews and Christians.

The Fiscus Judaicus and the Parting of the Ways

It turns out Christianity's reason for "distancing itself" from Sabbath keeping Jews was more banal and less heroic than avoiding persecution. The *fiscus Judaicus* was a tax imposed on the Jews of the Roman Empire by Emperor Vespasian in the early 70s C.E. Whereas formerly the Jews had sent a half shekel (two drachmas) annually to the Temple of Jerusalem, now, after the Roman destruction, they would be required to send that same amount to the temple of Jupiter Capitolinus in Rome, which had been badly damaged by fire and was in need of repair and restoration. The Roman victory over Judea in 70 C.E. was celebrated widely in Rome in the 70s and 80s C.E. because it was so important to the new ruling dynasty. It turns out that Christians did not want to appear to be "Jewish" simply to avoid additional taxation. This theory has been explored at length here:

The Fiscus Judaicus and the Parting of the Ways, By Marius Heemstra (Tübingen: Mohr Siebeck, 2010)

Although no Christian text mentions the *fiscus Judaicus*, Marius Heemstra argues that this tax had a crucial role in the development of "Christianity" as a social and cultural system separate from "Judaism," a process commonly called "the parting of the ways." Christianity was now seen by the Romans as not-Judaism; the *fiscus Judaicus* was applied to neither gentile Christians nor Jewish Christians. Bacchiocchi never mentions the fact that the *fiscus Judaicus* had completely severed Christianity from Judaism by CE 80. These Christians did not pay the *fiscus Judaicus* because they did not see themselves as obligated to do so, because they did not see themselves as Jews. In other words, this was merely a confirmation of what Christians, both Jewish Christians and gentile Christians, already believed, namely, that Christianity was not Judaism. Thus, Christians avoided being seen keeping the Sabbath out of a desire to avoid the tax on Judaism.

Neither the Jews of Rome, nor the Christians **anywhere** joined in with the Jewish revolts. Christians didn't join with the 135 CE revolt because Simon bar Kokhba, the commander, was regarded by many Jews as the prophesied Messiah, a heroic figure who would restore political independence. **Christians already had their Messiah.** The end result of the 135 CE revolt was 580,000 Jews were massacred and Judaea was depopulated. Not one Christian was killed during the revolt that led to the destruction of the Temple, nor were any killed in the 135 CE revolt. The Bible, and second century Christian writers, say NOTHING about these major catastrophes of Judaism, because neither of those major wars **had the slightest effect on Christianity.** The centers of Christianity were no longer anywhere near to Jerusalem by CE 70: they were in Antioch, Corinth, Rome, and Athens. Just 20 years after the Council of Jerusalem, which had ruled that Gentile Christian converts need not circumcise or observe the Mosaic Law, Christianity had spread far beyond Jerusalem and the Temple. Since the vast majority of Christian converts were Gentiles long before 70 CE, the destruction of the Second Jewish Temple had no effect on them. The Destruction of the Temple was trivial, not even important enough for a sentence in the New Testament. Since the Sabbath required a number of sacrifices that are set forth in the Old Testament, the Temple was necessary to keep the Sabbath "holy." Adventists seize on various verses in the *Book of Acts* that demonstrate the Apostles preached to the Gentiles on the Sabbath, at the Temple. If this proves the continuing obligation to keep the Sabbath, what happened to this supposed obligation after the Temple was destroyed? Similarly, in the aftermath of the 135 CE Bar Kokhba revolts, Judea was depopulated and the Jews dispersed throughout the Roman Empire. Sabbath-keeping, circumcision and the food laws were criminalized. Yet no mention of either of these events is made in any of the first and second century Christian literature, because none of this had any bearing or effect on Christianity. Those laws had no effect on Apostolic Christianity. Obviously, that was a direct result of the AD 52 Council of Jerusalem's verdict.

By around 100 CE there were large numbers of Jewish Christians in Rome. The Jewish population of the Church at Rome might have been keeping the Sabbath as part of their Jewish culture, rather than as a requirement for salvation. More likely, Jews who lived in Rome were like the Hellenized Jews that lived in Greek cities and had abandoned the Mosaic Law long before the time of Christ, during the Greek occupation of Judea. If they were keeping the Sabbath merely as a part of their Jewish culture, it is reasonable to assume they would be willing to abandon their Sabbath-keeping to avoid the threat of Roman persecution, Roman taxes on Judaism, or under peer pressure from other Hellenized Jews. On the other hand, if they were keeping the Sabbath from the perspective of a salvation requirement, as Dr. Bacchiocchi supposes, it is very difficult to imagine that they would be willing to risk their eternal salvation to avoid persecution.

The Christians of this era were eager to give up their lives for the Gospel. Since the Jewish Christians in Rome understood that circumcision and Sabbath-keeping cannot be separated, they would understand that Sabbath-keeping was not required of them or their Gentile brethren, but parental and cultural pressure could have kept them grudgingly compliant. Paul did not condemn the Christians at Rome for keeping the Sabbath, but urged that the Jews and the Gentiles of the Church be tolerant of one another in matters that were not essential to salvation. There was no threat of Jewish persecution that could have been a powerful enough factor to induce Christians to stop an alleged Sabbath-keeping.

While these facts certainly do not absolutely preclude the possibility that Dr. Bacchiocchi's theory is correct, it would collapse if a better explanation could be offered.

There is no evidence that the Christians in the Early Church were persecuted for an unwillingness to work on the Sabbath. If the Early Church had maintained a Sabbath stance, the Romans would have made record of it. Supporting this idea is the fact that the Jews had such a bad reputation with the Romans for their Sabbath keeping that they were generally exempt from military service and were not valued for slaves, but this was not true for Christians. See Henry Chadwick, *The Early Church* (Baltimore: Penguin Books, 1967), pp. 9-13. See also William Barclay, *The Ten Commandments for Today* (New York: Harper & Row, Publishers, 1973), pp. 31-2; Werner Forster, *Palestinian Judaism in New Testament Times* (Edinburgh: Oliver & Boyd, 1964), p. 72; Eduard Lohse, art. "Sabbath," *Theological Dictionary of the New Testament*, 7:9. [Credit for this concept goes to Robert Brinsmead, and it is his references we have cited.]

Brinsmead, in his "A Digest of the Sabbath Question," provides this observation from a well-respected New Testament scholar:

"Whereas circumcision would have been practicable for Gentile converts, Sabbath observance simply was not. Unless they came inside the Jewish ghetto, where there was an ordered life adjusted to the cessation of work on the Sabbath, they could not earn their living or subsist while observing the Sabbath. If they were slaves, Gentile masters would not release them from work; and if they were independent and earning their own living, they would still have had to pursue their trade on a Sabbath. It was no doubt because circumcision was a practical possibility for Gentile Christians, as the Sabbath was not, that it was the centre of controversy" (Moule, *Birth of the New Testament*, 1961, p. 49).

NOT ACCORDING TO KENNETH A. STRAND'S "OUT OF EASTER THEORY"

SDA Bible scholar, **Kenneth A. Strand**, theorizes that Sunday observance grew out of the Quartodeciman Controversy, which was regarding which week Easter should be celebrated, and then over which Sunday Easter should be celebrated, and how the days-dates being considered were related to the Jewish calendar. Michael Morrison explains in his article, "Sabbath and Sunday— Adventist Theories," at the Grace Communion International website:

Strand suggests that weekly Sunday observance grew out of an annual Easter observance. He gives a possible reconstruction for the origin of the Quartodeciman controversy, with some Christians observing Sunday and others a day of the month, both with roots in the Jewish calendar(s). He then notes that some early Christians "not only observed both Easter and Pentecost on Sundays but also considered the whole seven-week season between the two holidays to have special significance. He suggests that Christians began meeting on every Sunday in that season, and then eventually to every Sunday every week: "Throughout the Christian world Sunday observance simply arose alongside observance of Saturday."

The Sabbath in Scripture and History. Edited by Kenneth A. Strand. Washington, DC: Review and Herald Publishing Association, 1982, p. 327, p. 327, and p. 323, respectively.

Morrison summarizes the weaknesses of Strand's theory, which are many:

This theory, however, in addition to being entirely speculative, does not explain the universality of Sunday observance. Either we must suppose that this custom began before the Gentile mission did, or that it was so obvious that Gentiles everywhere came to the same conclusion (and if it was that obvious, then it would have begun before the Gentile mission!). Also, this theory does not work for the Quartodeciman Christians, and all evidence is that even the Quartodecimans observed Sunday. [16] Strand feels that his theory explains why Sunday is a "resurrection festival," but no explanation for that is really needed; it would genuinely be an obvious connection for anyone meeting on a Sunday.

[16] "The Quartodeciman controversy had nothing to do with Sabbath observance; the Quartodecimans appear to have observed the weekly Sunday like most other Christians did at the time." C. Mervyn Maxwell and P. Gerard Damsteegt, eds., *Source Book for the History of Sabbath and Sunday* [Berrien Springs, Mich.: Seventh-day Adventist Theological Seminary, 1992], p. 96.

Additionally, Strand, like most Adventist authors is unaware of the "Christian Sabbath Festivals" that bookend either end of Holy Week. The Quartodeciman controversy codified both the date and manner of the yearly-Resurrection festival, including the "Christian Sabbath Festivals." And as we mentioned earlier, the Easter Controversy was settled by the Eastern Church—not by the Western Church.

NOT ACCORDING TO THE "DUAL DAY" THEORY PROPOSED BY THE GENERAL CONFERENCE OF SEVENTH-DAY ADVENTISTS IN 1988

Again, Michael Morrison outlines the "**Dual Day**" Theory as developed by SDA theologians for the official release of a new book designed to provide so-called biblical support for the Church's 27 key beliefs (***Seventh-day Adventists Believe...: A Biblical Exposition of 27 Fundamental Doctrines*** (Washington, DC.: Review and Herald, 1988), p. 259, footnoting as source Justin, Bacchiocchi, and Socrates 5.22. Please keep in mind that there is no evidence that Christians in any of the very early centuries observed Sunday like the Jews kept the Sabbath. There is no evidence, for example, that they ceased from labor or thought of it as a sacred period of time, much less than observed it for a 24-hour period of time such as from sunset on Saturday night to sunset on Sunday night. It was thought of as a celebration of Christ's resurrection. Here is the mythical theory proposed by the SDA Church in 1988:

By the middle of the [second] century some Christians were voluntarily observing Sunday as a day of worship, not a day of rest.

The Church of Rome, largely made up of Gentile believers (Rom. 11:13), led in the trend toward Sunday worship. In Rome, the capital of the empire, strong anti-Jewish sentiments arose.... Reacting to these sentiments, the Christians in that city attempted to distinguish themselves from the Jews. They dropped some practices held in common with the Jews and initiated a trend away from the veneration of the Sabbath, moving toward the exclusive observance of the Sunday.

From the second to the fifth centuries, while Sunday was rising in influence, Christians continued to observe the seventh-day Sabbath nearly everywhere throughout the Roman Empire. The fifth-century historian Socrates wrote: "Almost all the churches throughout the world celebrate the sacred mysteries on the Sabbath of every week, yet the Christians of Alexandria and at Rome, on account of some ancient tradition, have ceased to do this."

If you have been following our discussion of Early Church History, you already see some very serious problems with this alternate theory, including the fact that Christians observed the Christian Sabbath Festivals as part of their liturgical year. Morrison outlines the theory's problems for us as follows:

This theory has numerous deficiencies and inaccuracies, some of which we have already covered. First, it was in the early second century that some Christians were observing Sunday, and this was in Antioch and Asia Minor as well as at Rome and Alexandria. Rome did not initiate this trend, nor is there evidence that anti-Jewish sentiments motivated them to abandon customs they held in common with the Jews.

Moreover, second-century Christians were not observing two days, but only one. Second-century writers are uniformly negative toward literal Sabbath-keeping. There is no evidence that anyone (other than Ebionites) kept the Sabbath in the second century.

The yearly “Christian Sabbath Festivals” of Holy Week distanced the nature of them from any Jewish-related requirements. How the Christian Sabbath festivals were observed varied from church to church and from area to area, and some of the components included public worship, observance of the communion ordinance, and sometimes even fasting, along with wholesome festivities. Holy Week was a Christ-centered celebration that further distinguished Christianity from its Jewish roots.

Thomas M. Preble, joined the Seventh-day Adventist Church when it was founded in 1863. After four years he apostatized and published a book, *The First Day Sabbath Proved*, which refuted the biblical and historical claims of the first Seventh-day Adventist Sabbath scholar and church “historian,” J. N. Andrews. He drew from historical fact to demonstrate that Adventists were misunderstanding and misrepresenting the intent of some of the early Christian writers who, according to the terminology of the day, meant Sunday, the “Christian” Sabbath, when they referred to their day of worship. Preble explained to Andrews that once the terminology of the age is understood, references to the “Christian” Sabbath and the Sabbath festival cannot be used as evidence that the early Christians kept the Jewish Sabbath. Andrews’ future work never provided any evidence that he acknowledged his errors, and he continued to teach his false understanding of the history of the early church throughout the remainder of his life.

THE HISTORY OF THE SABBATH BETWEEN 200 AND 500 CE

There are numerous references to the Sabbath by early Christian historians between 200 and 500 CE in addition to those of Tertullian. Except for the writings of the heretical sects, including those who rejected the apostleship of St. Paul, none of the early fathers of the Church write in support of the concept that Christians must keep the Jewish Sabbath so far as we can tell.

The Eastern Orthodox churches never kept the Sabbath. For the first 3 – 5 centuries after the death of St. Paul the Eastern Church greatly eclipsed the Western Church. **D. M. Canright** in his extensively documented book, *The Lord's Day Neither From Catholics Nor Pagans*, gives this appropriate reference provided to him by Raphael Hawaweeny, Bishop of Brooklyn, The Syrian Orthodox Catholic Church, around 1914:

The Longer Catechism of the Syrian Orthodox Catholic Church says:

“Is the Sabbath kept in the Eastern Church?”

“It is not kept strictly speaking.”

“How does the Christian Church obey the fourth commandment?”

“She still every six days keeps the seventh, only not the last day of the seven days, which is the Sabbath, but the first day in every week, which is the day of the Resurrection, or Lord's Day.”

“Since when do we keep the day of the Resurrection?”

“From the very time of Christ's Resurrection.”

An understanding of the overshadowing supremacy of the Eastern Orthodox Churches during the first few centuries after the death of St. Paul is essential to grasping the immensity of the problem these facts pose to Sabbatarians. It is no wonder that Sabbatarian literature never mentions this subject. A study of Canright's extensive scholarly research on this subject is well worth the effort for anyone who truly wishes to understand the Sabbath-Sunday question. We cover Canright's research in another chapter.

Early historians from the East and the West also wrote about the Christian practice of celebrating the Sabbath *festival*. In these two passages the historians commented on which groups of Christians celebrated it with fasting or by eating the Lord's Supper. **Socrates Scholasticus** lived approximately between 379 and 450 AD, and **Sozomen** between 363 and 420 AD:

Since however no one can produce a written command as an authority, it is evident that the apostles left each one to his own free will in the matter, to the end that each might perform what is good not by constraint or necessity. Such is the difference in the churches on the subject of fasts. Nor is there less

variation in regard to religious assemblies. For although almost all churches throughout the world celebrate the sacred mysteries on the Sabbath of every week, yet the Christians of Alexandria and at Rome, on account of some ancient tradition, have ceased to do this. The Egyptians in the neighborhood of Alexandria, and the inhabitants of Thebaïs, hold their religious assemblies on the Sabbath, but do not participate of the mysteries in the manner usual among Christians in general: for after having eaten and satisfied themselves with food of all kinds, in the evening making their offerings they partake of the mysteries. At Alexandria again, on the Wednesday in Passion Week and on Good Friday, the scriptures are read, and the doctors expound them; and all the usual services are performed in their assemblies, except the celebration of the mysteries. This practice in Alexandria is of great antiquity, for it appears that Origen most commonly taught in the church on those days. He being a very learned teacher in the Sacred Books, and perceiving that the importance of the Law of Moses (Romans 8:3) was weakened by literal explanation, gave it a spiritual interpretation; declaring that there has never been but one true Passover, which the Saviour celebrated when he hung upon the cross: for that he then vanquished the adverse powers, and erected this as a trophy against the devil.— **Socrates Scholasticus**, circa 379-450 A.D., *Ecclesiastical History*, Book 5, quoted from www.newadvent.org

That **Socrates Scholasticus** is not discussing Sabbath-keeping in this passage is clearly proved by his introductory words to Book 5, Chapter 22. He sounds very much like an anti-Sabbatarian writing after the Bacchiocchi Sabbath fiasco, quoting principles from St. Paul and linking Sabbath-keeping to the ordinance of circumcision:

As we have touched the subject I deem it not unreasonable to say a few words concerning Easter. It appears to me that neither the ancients nor moderns who have affected to follow the Jews, have had any rational foundation for contending so obstinately about it. For they have not taken into consideration the fact that when Judaism was changed into Christianity, the obligation to observe the Mosaic Law and the ceremonial types ceased. And the proof of the matter is plain; for no law of Christ permits Christians to imitate the Jews. On the contrary the apostle expressly forbids it; not only rejecting circumcision, but also deprecating contention about festival days. In his epistle to the Galatians, verse, 4:21 he writes, 'Tell me ye that desire to be under the law, do ye not hear the law.' And continuing his train of argument, he demonstrates that the Jews were in bondage as servants, but that those who have come to Christ are 'called into the liberty of sons.' (Galatians 5:13) Moreover he exhorts them in no way to regard 'days, and months, and years.' (Galatians 4:10) Again in his epistle to the Colossians (2:16-17) he distinctly declares, that such observances are merely shadows: wherefore he says, 'Let no man judge you in meat, or in drink, or in respect of any holy-day, or of the new moon, or of the Sabbath-days; which are a shadow of things to come.' The same truths are also confirmed by him in the epistle to the Hebrews (7:12) in these words: 'For the priesthood being changed, there is made of necessity a change also of the law.' Neither the apostles, therefore, nor the Gospels, have anywhere imposed the 'yoke of servitude' (Galatians 5:1) on those who have embraced the truth; but have left Easter and every other feast to be honored by the gratitude of the recipients of grace. Wherefore, inasmuch as men love festivals, because they afford them cessation from labor: each individual in every place, according to his own pleasure, has by a prevalent custom celebrated the memory of the saving passion. The Saviour and his apostles have enjoined us by no law to keep this feast: nor do the Gospels and apostles threaten us with any penalty, punishment, or curse for the neglect of it, as the Mosaic Law does the Jews. (Book 5, Chapter 22, within the first couple of paragraphs) Quoted from: www.newadvent.org

Seventh-day Adventist theologians and church leaders, since no later than 1992, have known that this particular passage from Socrates cannot be used to support the idea that Christians were keeping the Sabbath into the 300's and 400's, as evidenced by this assessment by SDA theologians Mervyn Maxwell and P. Gerard Damsteegt:

In actual fact, Socrates did not say that the churches of Rome and Alexandria had ceased to observe the Lord's Supper (the "sacred mysteries") on the Sabbath, implying that once upon a time they had so observed it. Instead, he said that the churches do not observe the Supper on the Sabbath, leaving the reader to conclude, if he wishes, that the church in these places never did so observe it. (Part 3, Note 27, (C. Mervyn Maxwell and P. Gerard Damsteegt, eds., *Source Book for the History of Sabbath and Sunday*; Berrien Springs, Mich.: Seventh-day Adventist Theological Seminary, 1992, as cited in the Internet article, "Sabbath and Sunday: Adventist Theories," by Michael Morrison, posted on the Grace Community International website.)

Morrison, himself says, "Socrates actually said, "Almost all the churches throughout the world celebrate the sacred mysteries on the Sabbath of every week, yet the Christians of Alexandria and at Rome, on account of some ancient tradition, do not do this." He was commenting on fourth-century practices, with no implications about what had been done in earlier centuries. His comment cannot be used as evidence about the second century, especially if it contradicts all the other evidence we have from second-century documents.

Another early historian, **Sozomen**, mentions the term *Sabbath* in only one passage in his entire history of the church. He lived between circa 375 and 447 A. D. It is mentioned only in the concept, once more, of which groups fasted on the Sabbath "festival" or celebrated the Lord's Supper on it. He states, as you will notice, that he has digressed from his main topic to address the concept of fasting:

In some churches the people fast three alternate weeks, during the space of six or seven weeks, whereas in others they fast continuously during the three weeks immediately preceding the festival. Some people, as the Montanists, only fast two weeks. Assemblies are not held in all churches on the same time or manner. The people of Constantinople, and almost everywhere, assemble together on the Sabbath, as well as on the first day of the week, which custom is never observed at Rome or at Alexandria. There are several cities and villages in Egypt where, contrary to the usage established elsewhere, the people meet together on Sabbath evenings, and, although they have dined previously, partake of the mysteries. The same prayers and psalms are not recited nor the same selections read on the same occasions in all churches. Thus the book entitled *The Apocalypse of Peter*, which was considered altogether spurious by the ancients, is still read in some of the churches of Palestine, on the day of preparation, when the people observe a fast in memory of the passion of the Saviour. So the work entitled *The Apocalypse of the Apostle Paul*, though unrecognized by the ancients, is still esteemed by most of the monks. Some persons affirm that the book was found during this reign, by Divine revelation, in a marble box, buried beneath the soil in the house of Paul at Tarsus in Cilicia. I have been informed that this report is false by Cilix, a presbyter of the church in Tarsus, a man of very advanced age, as is indicated by his gray hairs, who says that no such occurrence is known among them, and wonders if the heretics did not invent the story. What I have said upon this subject must now suffice. Many other customs are still to be observed in cities and villages; and those who have been brought up in their observance would, from respect to the great men who instituted and perpetuated these customs, consider it wrong to abolish them. Similar motives must be attributed to those who observe different practices in the celebration of the feast which has led us into this long digression.—*The Ecclesiastical History of Sozomen*, bk. 7, ch. 19. (Quoted from: www.newadvent.org)

Additionally, the *Apostolic Constitutions*, which can be dated from 375 to 380 AD. (*Wikipedia* article, "Apostolic Constitutions"), mentions the Sabbath. Leading to much confusion is the fact that Chapter 7 is a "remake" of the still more ancient document, the *Didache*. One section of the *Didache* talks about the first Christians meeting together on the Lord's Day (Sunday) for worship, and early church historians have dated this section of the *Didache* to between 50 AD and 125 AD. Since the Christian church observed the Sabbath as a festival, rather than keeping the Sabbath and often debated about whether or not one should fast on the Sabbath festival, it is easy to assume, incorrectly, that these references provide support for Sabbatarianism. A passage like this one, taken out of context, does not do justice to the problem because it ignores its relevance to fasting and that fasting in regard to the Sabbath "festival".

Our investigation into what Adventists knew and when they knew it led to our discovery that in his 1912 book, ***Advent History of the Sabbath***, pioneer SDA expert in the history of the Christian church, J. N. Andrews, provides a very complete study of the section of Chapter 14 which has been translated in such a way that it demonstrates that Christians were meeting on the first day of the week as early as 50 AD. It is understandable that, failing to understand the real problems with Sabbatarianism, he would find it necessary to somehow demonstrate that the translation of this passage is wrong. The more evidence there is that Christians were keeping Sunday during the life-time of the apostles, the more difficult it is to make Ellen White's apostasy theory of the adoption of Sunday observance by Christians seem plausible— that is, unless you consider Peter to be the first pope.

The Greek wording of this passage is incomplete, making it impossible to be 100% certain how to translate it correctly into English. However, when all the facts presented by Andrews are taken together, it is easy to understand why scholars, for the most part, stand by the anti-Sabbatarian wording of the translation in English.

The following is a Greek/English Interlinear translation of the *Didache* Section 14 dealing with Sabbath observance. The

majority of translators translate it as THE LORD'S DAY, although several meanings are possible. Please note that in my text, the Greek words are not represented in Greek characters:

1 According to 'the Lord's things' - of [the] Lord: gather break bread and give thanks, confessing out

1 kata kuriakhn de kuriou sunacqentev klasate arton kai eucaristhsate, proexomologhsamenoι

the failings of you, so that pure the sacrifice of you be.

ta paraptwmata umwn, opwv kaqara h qusia umwn h.

(The above quotation is from a Greek/Interlinear translation by Wieland Willker from the critical edition of Funk/ Bihlmeyer (1924) at this address:

<http://home.earthlink.net/~dybel/Documents/DidacheInr.htm>

Here are the key points Andrews makes about the translation problem:

1. Other writers, contemporary to him, used the Greek word in question to mean, the Lord's Supper, the Lord's Day, or the Lord's Life.
2. Over the next 100 years, writers came to use this Greek word almost exclusively to mean the Lord's Day.
3. John used the adjective form of this Greek word in Revelation 1:10— "on the Lord's Day." Andrews seems to suggest the passage should be translated something like, "When you come together at the Lord's Supper, break bread and give thanks." The majority of scholars believe the passage should be translated something like, "When you come together on the Lord's Day, break bread and give thanks."

In the mind of Andrews, the issue is the supposed un-scriptural transfer of the sacredness of the Jewish Sabbath to Sunday, making Sunday a man-made, rather than a God-given, ordinance. He is right about Sunday being a man-made ordinance in a sense of the word, but this fact is not relevant to the Sabbath-Sunday question at all. He knows nothing of the deliberate anti-Sabbatarian wording of Moses' account of the Creation events of the 7th day, the weekly Sabbath being a part of TORAH law only, and the absolute requirement that a Jew or Gentile must be circumcised before keeping the Sabbath. This knowledge deficit allows him to draw the illogical conclusion that since gospel writers and Justin Martyr— contemporary writers to the author(s) of the *Didache*— did not use the *Didache's* Greek word when designating the first day of the week, the writer/writers of the *Didache* were not likely to have used it to mean The Lord's Day. Andrews articulates his point-of-view as follows:

*But we have another chain of proof. All the Gospels give to Sunday its regular Bible name— first day of the week. If the *Didache* is said to be the first evidence that henceforth this Bible term was changed into *Κυριαυα*, then Justin Martyr, writing soon afterward, ought to have used it. But lo and behold he uses interchangeably the Bible term, "first day of the week," and the heathen designation, "day of the sun (p. 276)."*

Justin Martyr was writing to a Jewish critic of Christians, Trypho, and would probably not risk offending his Jewish sensibilities by designating the first day of the week with this decidedly Christian term. The Gospel writers were telling the story of Jesus as it took place in His contemporary setting— before Sunday became known as the "Lord's Day." Note that John the Revelator, writing late in the First Century, used the adjective form of the Greek word. Furthermore, it would seem to be uncharacteristic of Greek literary usage to construct a sentence that would read something like, "At the Lord's Supper, break bread and give thanks." Andrews sums up his arguments as follows:

*We are now brought down to the close of the second century, and what is the result?—According to its first use, the term applied to the Lord's Supper. John uses the same adjective in speaking of the Lord's Day. The conclusion from its use in the New Testament is, the word means the Lord's or belonging to the Lord, whatever may be referred to. Ignatius uses the very *same* preposition, the *same* case, the *same* gender, as is found in the *Didache*, to be rendered, "according to the Lord's life." This fully sustains the first conclusion reached from the New Testament—it may be the *Lord's Supper*, the *Lord's Day*, or the *Lord's life*.*

It would not make any sense to translate the passage something like, "According to the Lord's life, break bread and give thanks."

When all the facts are considered and the Sabbatarian bias is removed from one's thinking, it is clear why scholars had little choice but to choose to translate this passage in the best possible way, and that best possible way does not support Ellen White's apostasy/conspiracy theory of why Christians "ceased" to keep the Sabbath and adopted Sunday observance during the first years of the development of the Christian Faith.

An early Christian work, *The Apostolic Constitutions* (or *Constitutions of the Holy Apostles*), possibly written between 375 to 380 CE, has the following to say about the Sabbath:

WHICH DAYS OF THE WEEK WE ARE TO FAST, AND WHICH NOT, AND FOR WHAT REASONS.

But let not your fasts be with the hypocrites; (15) for they fast on the second and fifth days of the week. But do you either fast the entire five days, or on the fourth day of the week, and on the day of the Preparation, because on the fourth day the condemnation went out against the Lord, Judas then promising to betray Him for money; and you must fast on the day of the Preparation, because on that day the Lord suffered the death of the cross under Pontius Pilate. **But keep the Sabbath, and the Lord's Day festival; because the former is the memorial of the creation, and the latter of the resurrection. But there is one only Sabbath to be observed by you in the whole year, which is that of our Lord's burial, on which men ought to keep a fast, but not a festival.** For inasmuch as the Creator was then under the earth, the sorrow for Him is more forcible than the joy for the creation; for the Creator is more honourable by nature and dignity than His own creatures.

The author of the above statement specifically states that there is only one Sabbath of the year that is to be observed with fasting. Additional study of the *Constitutions* reveals that the early Christians honored the Passover Week with fasting on set days of that week and no fasting on the other days of that one particular week of the year.

We recommend that our readers do a search for the *Apostolic Constitutions* and search the entire document for all references to the word "Sabbath." Here is what you will find:

These references to the Sabbath refer to the Sabbath festival.

Virtually all references to the Sabbath are in regard to whether or not fasting should be done on the day of the Sabbath festival.

The case for using the *Apostolic Constitutions* to teach that Christians were keeping the Sabbath in the Jewish sense of the word through the 300's into the 400's represents highly creative reasoning, or a lack of it.

THE HISTORY OF THE SABBATH DURING THE REFORMATION

Ellen White's classic book, *The Great Controversy* gives her readers a patently dishonest view of how the reformers treated the Sabbath question. Four major reformers studied the Sabbath-Sunday Question and rejected it on biblical grounds, but she glossed over this fact without a comment. A study of what Advent Movement Sabbath historian, J. N. Andrews, knew and wrote about regarding the history of the early church proves that he would have to have known that what Ellen White claimed God showed her about the Roman Catholic Church "changing the day" was historically impossible— regardless of whether Sabbatarianism was true or not. An examination of several major research studies published between the King James Era and the contemporary times of Andrews and White provides further evidence that both of them had to know that her account of the status of the Sabbath during the Reformation in *The Great Controversy* was patently dishonest. For example, her book devotes several chapters to Martin Luther, but she does not disclose the fact that an important Sabbath-Sunday debate arose at the beginning of the Reformation and that Luther was staunchly against Sabbatarianism on the basis of well-reasoned biblical principles. If White had given a fair treatment of her subject, she would have told her readers that he was anti-Sabbatarian and why he had made that choice.

Sanders observes, "Luther heard Carlstadt's teachings on Sabbath observance and he rejected them. Mrs. White states that "angels of light from God's throne" revealed treasures of truth to Luther. If indeed God had shown Luther "treasures of truth" as stated by EGW, then Luther would have accepted the Sabbath. EGW just could not get it right." Sanders furnishes these two EGW quotes from the Great Controversy:

Ellen White says of him [Luther]: “Zealous, ardent, and devoted, knowing no fear but the fear of God, and acknowledging no foundation for religious faith but the Holy Scriptures. (p. 120)

Angels of heaven were by his side, and rays of light from the throne of God revealed the treasures of truth to his understanding. (p. 122)

Sanders then contrasts what Luther himself said to what Ellen White claimed God had shown her about him:

Now hear Luther. Carlstadt, a zealous and learned Sabbatarian, laid his arguments for the seventh day before Luther, who examined them. Here is Luther's decision in his own words: 'Indeed, if Carlstadt were to write further about the Sabbath, Sunday would have to give way, and the Sabbath— that is to say, Saturday— must be kept holy; he would truly make us Jews in all things, and we should come to be circumcised; for that is true and cannot be denied, that he who deems it necessary to keep one law of Moses, and keeps it as the law of Moses, must deem all necessary, and keep them all.' — Heylyn, *History of the Sabbath* . 457.

Because the Reformation did not result in a so-called “return” to Sabbath-keeping, Sabbatharians have gone to the trouble to write books with titles like, “**Why the Reformation Failed**,” based on the idea that Luther rejected the Sabbath light when it was presented to him, so God could not fully bless the Reformation. This kind of reasoning only makes sense if you ignore the problem that such thinking is circular reasoning and the assumption that Sabbatarianism is true. These writers also point to the fact that the **Council of Trent** (1545-1563), which was convened to deal with the Lutheran “heresy,” decided to go with the authority of both the Scriptures and church tradition in the formation of its (The Catholic Church’s) doctrine and practice on the basis that the Protestants had capitulated to the Mother Church in regard to the change of the Sabbath from Saturday to Sunday.

This claim was a Catholic lie, because in the **Augsburg Confession** (first presented at the Diet of Augsburg in 1530), the Protestants rebuked the Mother Church for its blasphemous claim that it had the authority to change the Sabbath. Then this Lutheran document spelled out the scriptural basis for Sabbath abandonment with many of the same arguments used by anti-Sabbatarians today, demonstrating that it was biblical authority, not church authority that caused the abandonment of Sabbath-keeping by Christians. Pro-Sabbatarian writers quote the following passage from the *Confession* to “prove” that the Roman Catholic Church claimed to have changed the Sabbath, while they ignore the significance of the fact that Lutherans understood and cited biblical reasons for their rejection of Sabbatarianism and called “bluff” on the Catholic Church's claim that it had “changed the day”— something Ellen White either never knew about or chose not to disclose in *The Great Controversy*. The first two quotes from *The Augsburg Confession* are taken from the translation posted at the web-site www.reformed.org and posted by the Center for Reformed Theology and Apologetics. The third quote comes from a different translation as separately credited:

Moreover, it is disputed whether bishops or pastors have the right to introduce ceremonies in the Church, and to make laws concerning meats, holy-days and grades, that is, orders of ministers, etc. They that give this right to the bishops refer to this testimony John 16, 12, 13: I have yet many things to say unto you, but ye cannot bear them now. Howbeit when He, the Spirit of Truth, is come, He will guide you into all truth. They also refer to the example of the Apostles, who commanded to abstain from blood and from things strangled, Acts 15, 29. They refer to the Sabbath-day as having been changed into the Lord's Day, contrary to the Decalogue, as it seems. Neither is there any example whereof they [the Mother Church] make more than concerning the changing of the Sabbath-day. Great, say they, is the power of the Church, since it has dispensed with one of the Ten Commandments!

But concerning this question it is taught on our part (as has been shown above) that bishops have no power to decree anything against the Gospel.

Then, after castigating the Mother Church for its presumptions, the Confession outlines the biblical reasons the Jewish Sabbath was abrogated in apostolic times:

But there are clear testimonies which prohibit the making of such traditions, as though they merited grace or were necessary to salvation. Paul says, Col. 2, 16-23: “Let no man judge you in meat, or in drink, or in respect of an holy-day, or of the new moon, or of the Sabbath-days. If ye be dead with Christ from the rudiments of the world, why, as though living in the world, are ye subject to ordinances (touch not; taste not; handle not, which all are to perish with the using) after the commandments and doctrines of men!

which things have indeed a show of wisdom.” Also in Titus 1, 14 he openly forbids traditions: “Not giving heed to Jewish fables and commandments of men that turn from the truth.”

The Lutherans exhibit an excellent understanding that no day possesses intrinsic holiness and that the Church’s decision to designate Sunday as the day of worship and Christian fellowship was utilitarian. A modern anti-Sabbatarian could not have said it better. Please read this passage carefully, as it is packed with significance for the Sabbath-Sunday Question:

[57] Observing the Lord's Day, Easter, Pentecost, and other holy days and rituals are customs of this kind. [58] For those people make a big mistake by claiming that the church by its authority has decreed that Christians must worship on Sunday rather than the Sabbath Day. [59] For it was Scripture that did away with the observance of the Sabbath Day. The Bible teaches that since the gospel has now been revealed, none of the ceremonies of the Law of Moses need be followed. [60] Yet, since a day did have to be chosen so that Christians would know when they should gather for worship, it seems that the Christians chose Sunday for this purpose. It seems that this day was chosen for another reason as well. It gives people an example of how to use their Christian freedom, and shows them that it is not necessary to observe the Sabbath nor any other day in particular. (*The Unaltered Augsburg Confession A.D. 1530*, Translated by Glen L. Thompson, Northwestern Publishing House, Milwaukee, Wisconsin; posted at Wordpress.Com.)

Therefore, Ellen White's book, ***The Great Controversy***, is not history. It is pure propaganda. Her claim that her information came from God is disturbing.

The Sabbath heresy has surfaced periodically throughout history, and it re-surfaces from time to time as the result of ignorance and poor Bible study methods (hermeneutics), including repeated attempts to apply the Mosaic Law to a dispensation for which it was never intended. Andrews, White, and the Adventist Sabbatarian apologists who have followed them failed to tell their unsuspecting readers that Sabbath-keeping was opposed on biblical grounds by the Christian Church at virtually all times, including the Early Fathers, the great Reformers, and subsequent Catholic and Protestant scholars.

The more you look into what Andrews and White knew, what they probably knew, and what they should have known, the more reason one has to question their motives and their integrity. Our research suggests that Andrews and White had access to the two most exhaustive histories of the controversy over the Sabbath ever written— Peter Heylyn's 1636 book, ***History of the Sabbath***, published during the reign of King Charles I of England (the successor to King James), and the massive two-volume study on the subject by Ellen White's contemporary, Robert Cox, published in 1865. Andrews quotes both Heylyn and Cox. Since Thomas Preble published *The First Day Sabbath Proved* in 1867, which was a direct rebuke of J.N. Andrews' apparent deliberate twisting of historical facts to fit the Sabbatarian agenda, it seems reasonable to assume that Andrews had access to it.

Heylyn compiled an exhaustive biblical and historical study of evidence up through the King James Era that demonstrated to the point of over-kill that Sabbatarianism was impossible. Robert Cox, after discovering Heylyn's work centuries later, compiled an exhaustive list of all the arguments for and against Sabbatarianism from apostolic times through 1865. We quote from Luther's ***Larger Catechism*** as quoted in Robert Cox's 1865 book, ***The Literature of the Sabbath Question, Volume One***, p. 127:

God set apart the seventh day, and appointed it to be observed, and commanded that it should be considered holy above all others; and this command, as far as the outward observance is concerned, was given to the Jews alone, that they should abstain from hard labour, and rest, in order that both man and beast might be refreshed, and not be worn out by constant work. Therefore, this commandment, literally understood, does not apply to us Christians; for it is entirely outward, like other ordinances of the Old Testament, bound to modes, and persons, and times and customs, all of which are not left free by Christ. But in order that the simple may obtain a Christian view of that which God requires of us in this commandment, observe **that we keep a festival**, not for the sake of intelligent and advanced Christians, for these have no need of it...But that it is not bound to any particular time, as with the Jews, so that it must be this day or that; for no day is in itself better than any other... And because Sunday has been appointed from the earliest times, we ought to keep to this arrangement, that all things may be done in harmony and order, and no confusion be caused by unnecessary novelties.

Please note that Luther discussed the church's view of the Sabbath as a festival. Later in our study the understanding that the concept that the Christian church observed Saturday as a FESTIVAL while observing Sunday as the day of WORSHIP

is key to correctly interpreting many of the passages that mention the Sabbath in the writings of the church fathers during the first 500-600 years of the Faith. In many cases the writings of the early fathers cannot be properly interpreted without a study of the entire context of their statements— a fact which requires, in some cases, the reading of the nearly entire work from which the excerpt is taken as well as its context within the author's entire set of writings. An analysis of the early, middle, and later work of SDA Sabbath historian, J.N. Andrews, proves that he was aware that the early church abandoned the Jewish concept of the Sabbath and created its own, non-sacred way of commemorating the Creation of the World by instituting the Sabbath Festival, which was observed on select seventh days during the liturgical year. Andrews says: "Those Fathers who hallow the Sabbath do generally associate with it the festival called by them the Lord's Day." (*Testimony of the Fathers*, p. 11, quoted in D. M. Canright, *The Lord's Day From Neither Catholics Nor Pagans*.)

According to Cox, the other reformers were of the same opinion as Luther and Melancthon. Cox says in regard to this fact:

The Reformers found more meaning than the Puritans and their followers have done, in Rom. xiv. 5, 6, Gal. IV. 10,11 and Col. ii.16,17; while they failed to see in the New Testament any of those indications which the Puritans were the first to discover, of a transference of the Sabbath to the first day of the week by Jesus or His apostles. (*The Literature Of the Sabbath Question*, Vol. 1, pp. 127,128.)

Melancthon, a close associate of Luther, and who, according to Cox (p. 131), was one of the most learned of the Great Reformers, said this about Sabbath-keeping for Christians:

Of this nature is the observation of the Lord's Day, of Easter, Whitsuntide, and the like holidays and ceremonies. For those who think that the observance of the Lord's Day has been appointed by the authority of the church instead of the Sabbath, as a thing necessary, greatly err. The Scripture allows that we are not bound to keep the Sabbath; for it teaches, that the ceremonies of the Law of Moses are not necessary after the revelation of the Gospel. And yet, because it was requisite to appoint a certain day, that the people might know when to assemble together, it appears that the church appointed for this purpose the Lord's Day, which for this reason also seemed to have pleased the more, that men might have an example of Christian liberty, and might know that observance, neither of the Sabbath, nor of any other day, is necessary.

Cox's research on **John Calvin**, who died in 1564, established him as firmly anti-Sabbatarian, even though his comments on Genesis 2 and Exodus 20 suggest that it is possible he might have still believed that the Sabbath was instituted at Creation. Cox quotes from Calvin's *Institutes of the Christian Religion* as translated by Henry Beveridge and printed in 1845:

As the truth was delivered typically to the Jews, so it is imparted to us without figure; first, that during our whole lives we may aim at a constant rest from our own works, in order that the Lord may work in us by his Spirit; secondly, that every individual, as he has opportunity, may diligently exercise himself in private, in pious meditation on the works of God, and, at the same time, that all may observe the legitimate order appointed by the Church, for the hearing of the word, the administration of the sacraments, and public prayer; and, thirdly, that we may avoid oppressing those who are subject to us. In this way, we get quit of the trifling of the false prophets, who in later times instilled Jewish ideas into the people, alleging that nothing was abrogated but what was ceremonial in the commandment (this they term, in their language, the taxation of the seventh day), while the moral part remains, viz., the observance of one day in seven. But this is nothing else than to insult the Jews, by changing the day, and yet mentally attributing to it the same sanctity; thus retaining the same typical distinction of days as had place among the Jews. And of a truth, we see what profit they have made by such a doctrine.

Those who cling to their constitutions go thrice as far as the Jews in the gross and carnal superstition of sabbatism; so that the rebukes which we read in Isaiah (Isa. I.13; viii.13) apply as much to those of the present day, as to those to whom the prophet addressed them. We must be careful, however, to observe the general doctrine, viz., in order that religion may neither be lost nor languish among us, we must diligently attend on our religious assemblies, and duly avail ourselves of those external aids which tend to promote the worship of God. — (Beverly's translation, volume I, p. 466.)

According to the *Wikipedia* article, "Puritans," the movement got its beginning among the Marian exiles (See *Wikipedia* article, "Marian Exiles") who earlier had fled England for the Continent to escape persecution, and then returned to England during the reign of Elizabeth I, who came to the English throne in 1559. This article explains that the Puritans adopted Sabbatarian views during this time. It was the combined forces of the Puritan "Sunday" Sabbatarians and traditional

“Saturday” Sabbatarians that created the second major Sabbath crisis of the Christian World. In essence, then, the King James Era Sabbath Crisis in England was really a transplanted controversy that had been brewing in Holland for a long time prior to its eruption on English soil.

HISTORICAL BARRIER:

THE HISTORY OF THE SABBATH IN ENGLAND

Ellen White, in her book, **Great Controversy**, inexcusably failed to discuss the greatest Sabbath-Sunday battle in the history of the Faith— an event which took place during the post King James Era under the reign of Charles I. With the kind of historical writing and interpretation she undertook to write the book, it unavoidably appears that she deliberately chose to leave the information out. Therefore, few Adventists know that the Church of England came precariously close to establishing the Sabbath as official church doctrine within a few decades of the publication of the **King James Bible**, which was published in 1611. Therefore, her readers remain unaware of the largest body of biblical and historical evidence ever assembled against the idea that Christians must keep the Jewish Sabbath assembled up until that time. Here is what happened.

During the reign of King James (1603-1625), two tremendously powerful Sabbatarian movements had developed and were putting pressure on the Church of England to require Sabbath-keeping. One faction was pushing for the adoption of the Jewish Sabbath, or Saturday, and the other was pushing for the adoption of Sunday observance with Jewish-type Sabbath restrictions.

King Charles I, who succeeded King James, inherited the controversy. When things heated to the boiling point, he turned to his court chaplain, **Peter Heylyn**, for help. He ordered him to begin a “Manhattan Project”- like research marathon to provide him an account of all the arguments for and against the idea that Christians must keep the Sabbath. Thanks to the definitive research that resulted, the Church of England rejected both kinds of Sabbath-keeping.

Heylyn's monumental work, **The History of the Sabbath**, was first published in **1636**, and it appears to encompass almost all the arguments used by modern anti-Sabbatarians, with the exception of some of the advanced Hebrew linguistics studies of Genesis and Exodus. His major points were these: **(1)** The Sabbath commandment was not instituted until the manna was given in Exodus 16, **(2)** that the Sabbath was given to Israel and to Israel alone, **(3)** that the Sabbath commandment is predicated by the requirement of circumcision, was ceremonial in nature, and was abrogated at the Cross — officially and publicly— being officially “retired” at the Council of Jerusalem, **(4)** that Colossians 2:14-17 clearly abrogates the Sabbath, and **(5)** that the “abandonment” of Sabbath-keeping by the Gentiles was virtually immediate; the adoption of Sunday observance by them being virtually immediate, and that the Early Church observed the seventh day of the week only as a festival.

Seventh-day Adventists may be especially interested to know that the biblical and historical evidence Heylyn discovered demonstrated that Ellen White's concept that the Roman Catholic Church “changed” the Sabbath from Saturday to Sunday was impossible.

As we noted earlier, Heylyn's work was familiar to pioneer Sabbath scholar of the Advent Movement, **J.N. Andrews**, and he had his own personal antagonist, Thomas Preble, who published a major volume which refuted his positions and exposed his blundering historical errors in the form of a book, **The First Day Sabbath proved**. Andrews cited Heylyn in his own work, proving that he had no excuse for not understanding his many errors. Furthermore, he dialogued in published writings with Preble, proving that he could not possibly fail to understand that his historical claims were absurd. These books have been available to Seventh-day Adventist scholars and historians throughout the history of Adventism. It is difficult to imagine how Ellen White could have written about the history of the Sabbath without mentioning the Sabbath crisis in England at all. Similarly, it is difficult to imagine that one of the most prominent Sabbath scholars of recent times, the late Seventh-day Adventist theologian, **Dr. Samuele Bacchiocchi**, would write as if he were unfamiliar with the evidence Heylyn uncovered against the credibility of Sabbatarianism. If any assumptions can be made about this failure, one would have to think it received no mention because the Sabbath was summarily defeated by Heylyn's clearly defined biblical and historical arguments.

Heylyn also demonstrated an understanding of why Sabbatarianism destroys the Gospel principle that salvation comes by faith alone. In fact Heylyn labeled Sabbatarianism a heresy because it teaches that Sabbath-keeping is ultimately a requirement *for* salvation.

BOB PICKLE'S REST THEORY

Bob Pickle is an articulate apologist for Adventism, its Sabbath doctrine, and its Church prophetess, Ellen G. White. He contends that she was not in error when she accused the Roman Catholic Church and the papacy for the “changing the day.” He contends that Ellen White was right despite the very early universal adoption of Sunday worship, because Christians did not actually rest on Sundays until after Constantine ordered cessation from labor on that day in the early 300's. He reasons that the sanctity of the Sabbath was not actually transferred to Sunday until the Sabbath rest was changed from the Jewish Sabbath to the “pagan” Sunday. This is an interesting approach to solving the Ellen White problem because the idea of resting from labor on Sunday came about primarily as a result of Constantine's new Sunday law. We thank Bob Pickle for acknowledging that Christians did not rest on Sundays prior to that event, but there is much more to the story. It is most interesting to observe that Dr. Samuele Bacchiocchi has no such illusions about whether or not Ellen White's theory of how Sabbath-keeping began could be reconciled in this way. He publicly stated that he disagreed with Ellen's position on the matter:

In an E-mail message to the "Free Catholic Mailing List" catholic@american.edu on 8 Feb 1997 [Bacchiocchi] said:

I differ from Ellen White, for example, on the origin of Sunday. She teaches that in the first centuries all Christians observed the Sabbath and it was largely through the efforts of Constantine that Sunday-keeping was adopted by many Christians in the fourth century. My research shows otherwise. If you read my essay HOW DID SUNDAY KEEPING BEGIN? which summarizes my dissertation, you will notice that I place the origin of Sunday-keeping by the time of the Emperor Hadrian, in A. D. 135." (Posted at Bible.ca and available via search on Dr. Bacchiocchi's website, Biblical Perspectives.)

Here is an analysis of this interesting attempt to salvage Ellen White's historical blunders:

First, there is no sanctity to transfer. The Sabbath literally expired at the death of Christ. St. Paul clarified that under the New Covenant, that no day has any sacred importance in itself. The early Christians did not rest on Sunday because they thought of it as a celebration of the resurrection.

Second, since the Gentile churches probably never kept the Sabbath and certainly did not after the Council of Jerusalem, and since all Christians, including the Jewish Christians, did not keep the Sabbath on a universal basis after 140 AD, they were **working** on Saturdays or having a festival on some of those Saturdays. There was no “resting” left for Constantine to transfer from Saturday to Sunday by the 300's. Christians, and especially the Gentile Christians, began "desecrating" the Sabbath immediately by doing anything on that day that they wished to do, forsaking all Jewish associations with that day from almost the beginning of the Faith.

Third, this prophecy is that the little horn (of Daniel 7) that was to change “times and laws.” This prophecy clearly foretells the exact number of days that the Roman emperor, Nero, was to persecute Christians. Nero did change times and applicable laws, and managed to turn the mainstream Christianity of the day into a form hardly recognizable in comparison with its original form. Even if this little horn somehow symbolized the papacy, **the little horn did not come into existence until after 500 AD, and Sunday observance was universal by no later than 140 AD. There is no way to rationalize that the little horn existed before 500 AD according to the wheel-within-a-wheel “prolepsis” concept Adventists use to force Antiochus Epiphanes to symbolize something that would come at some time in the future [the papacy], because the prolepsis concept, by its very definition, does not work backward. Even the delegates to the 1919 Bible Conference acknowledged this barrier to Adventist prophecy.** An example of a prolepsis is, “He was a dead man the moment he entered the room where the killer was lying in wait.” A prolepsis is a one way street. To prove this to yourself, try to think of a way this last statement could be reversed, and you probably can't. Adventists cannot have their cake and eat it too. As you will see in a revealing transcript of the **1919 Bible Conference Minutes**, the Adventist leaders of 1919 understood this problem and struggled with the seeming impossibility of propping up their prophetess' claim that the papacy (the little horns of Daniel 7,8,11) changed the Sabbath.

Fourth, Pickle ignores the problem that Rome had no more influence than any other bishopric in the Christian world of that era of early church history, and the Greek Orthodox Church was the center of the Christian world at this time.

How, then, can anyone say that the Sabbath was not “changed” until the time of Constantine when from almost the very

beginning of the Christian Faith, the Gentile Christians constantly violated the Jewish Sabbath by not ceasing from labor and by celebrating it as a festival? By the Old Covenant Sabbath laws, Christians observing the Sabbath after their own ideas, would create activity which would demand they be stoned. These Christians were likely picking up firewood for their celebrations and preparing meals. One early Christian writer instructed his readers not to eat food that was prepared the day before, which would be Friday! (This quotation will be included in a later discussion.) The “sanctity” of the Sabbath was trampled on from the very beginning, at least by the Gentile Christians, and, according to Dr. Bacchiocchi, Sunday observance was “universal” by 140 AD, which means that even Christians of Jewish descent who chose to remain in the Gospel— rather than to become a part of the Sabbath-keeping, Paul-hating Ebionite heresy— never again kept the Sabbath in the Jewish sense of the word.

CHAPTER TEN
MORE ABOUT SOME OF THE KEY
BARRIERS TO SABBATARIAN THEOLGY

MORE ON OBJECTIONS TO THE CIRCUMCISION PROBLEM

We covered the biblical barrier of circumcision earlier in our point-by-point rebuttal of Cotto and Knudson. We are going to give additional coverage to this subject in the context of what and when Seventh-day Adventists knew about this barrier to its doctrine of Sabbath-keeping.

As we have mentioned before, a review of the Sabbath histories authored by J.N. Andrews proves that he understood a broad spectrum of facts about early church history that posed insurmountable obstacles to the Sabbath abandonment theory that he and Ellen White had developed. Let us review some of the things he wrote about. Andrews mentioned the issue of circumcision and was familiar with virtually all of the anti-Sabbatarian comments to be found in the writings of the early church fathers. In fact in some of Andrews' books he attempted to refute and minimize the significance of specific passages. Apostate SDA leader, D.M. Canright, helps us to know what Andrews knew by examining and refuting his claims.

In Justin Martyr's essay, "Dialogue with Trypho," he discusses circumcision and the Sabbath with his Jewish friend, approaching him in a way that respected his friend's Jewish heritage. Notice that Justin Martyr did not cite St. Paul as an authority that the Sabbath is not required of Christians. Trypho, being a Jew, would not have recognized Paul's authority. It is significant that Justin is able to prove that the Sabbath was for the Jews and the Jews only from Old Testament logic alone. Justin Martyr was born in 100 AD. and died in 165 AD. Here is what Justin Martyr wrote in Chapter Nineteen:

CHAPTER XIX

CIRCUMCISION UNKNOWN BEFORE ABRAHAM. THE LAW WAS GIVEN BY MOSES ON ACCOUNT OF THE HARDNESS OF THEIR HEARTS.

"It is this about which we are at a loss, and with reason, because, while you endure such things, you do not observe all the other customs which we are now discussing. This circumcision is not, however, necessary for all men, but for you alone, in order that, as I have already said, you may suffer these things which you now justly suffer.

Nor do we receive that useless baptism of cisterns, for it has nothing to do with this baptism of life. Wherefore also God has announced that you have forsaken Him, the living fountain, and digged for your selves broken cisterns which can hold no water.

Even you, who are the circumcised according to the flesh, have need of our circumcision; but we, having the latter, do not require the former.

For if it were necessary, as you suppose, God would not have made Adam uncircumcised; would not have had respect to the gifts of Abel when, being uncircumcised, he offered sacrifice and would not have been pleased with the uncircumcision of Enoch, who was not found, because God had translated him. Lot, being uncircumcised, was saved from Sodom, the angels themselves and the Lord sending him out. Noah was the beginning of our race; yet, uncircumcised, along with his children he went into the ark. Melchizedek, the priest of the Most High, was uncircumcised; to whom also Abraham the first who received circumcision after the flesh, gave tithes, and he blessed him: after whose order God declared, by the mouth of David, that He would establish the everlasting priest. Therefore to you alone this circumcision was necessary, in order that the people may be no people and the nation no nation; as also Hosea, one of the twelve prophets, declares.

Moreover, all those righteous men already mentioned, though they kept no Sabbaths, were pleasing to God; and after them Abraham with all his descendants until Moses, under whom your nation appeared unrighteous and ungrateful to God, making a calf in the wilderness: wherefore God, accommodating Himself to that nation, enjoined them also to offer sacrifices, as if to His name, in order that you might not serve idols. Which precept, however, you have not observed; nay, you sacrificed your children to demons."

See how God will destroy the nations to the beat of instruments of music as they also are BURNED.

And you were commanded to keep Sabbaths, that you might retain the memorial of God. For His word makes this announcement, saying, 'That ye may know that I am God who redeemed you.'(Ezek. xx. 12.)

D.M. Canright, who was actively critical of Ellen White and Adventism between 1887 and his death in 1919, used Justin Martyr's writings to confront Adventist leaders with the real reasons why Christians did not keep the Sabbath. Thomas Preble used similar arguments two decades earlier in his 1867 book. In fact, Preble dedicated a large section of it to prove to Andrews and his Adventist associates that the young church did not keep the Sabbath and that their claim that a significant number of the Waldenses clung to Sabbath-keeping was wrong, the claim being the result of their failure to understand the terminology the Christians of that era used when talking about the Sabbath festival on Saturday and the "Christian Sabbath," or the Lord's Day, which was on Sunday. It is fascinating to see the way these early SDA leaders dealt with this problem. Although a bit long, it is well worth your study. Here is an extended quote from the 1895 edition of ***Replies to Elder Canright's Attacks on Seventh-day Adventists***, edited by Uriah Smith. As you study this passage, keep in mind that the entire passage is taken from ***Replies to Elder Canright's Attacks on Seventh-day Adventists***, 1895 edition— a SDA book in which Uriah Smith is trying to show that Canright has taken parts of J.N. Andrews's books, ***The Complete Testimony of the Fathers***, and later, Andrews' earlier book, ***History of the Sabbath***, out of context:

[Smith]: Eld. C. quotes from "*The Complete Testimony of the Fathers*" very unfairly, as a few extracts will show. In putting forth a historical argument to show that Sunday was called the Lord's day and was observed as a sacred day by the Christian church immediately after the days of the apostles, he says:

[Canright]: "The Lord's Day, then, is the day belonging to the Lord Jesus, as 'he is Lord {of all}' (Acts 10:36), and 'Head over all things' (Eph. 1:22) in the gospel. We shall find this fact abundantly confirmed in the Fathers. I now quote from '*The Complete Testimony of the Fathers*,' by Eld. Andrews:

[Andrews]: "Justin's 'Apology' was written at Rome about the year 140. 'He is the first person after the sacred writers that mention the first day, and this at a distance of only forty-four years from the date of John's vision upon Patmos.'" It does not appear that Justin, and those at Rome who held with him in the doctrine, paid the slightest regard to the ancient Sabbath. He speaks of it as abolished, and treats it with contempt. (pp. 33, 36)

[Canright]: "This is the confession which even the historian of the Seventh-day Adventists is compelled to make. The Jewish Sabbath was wholly disregarded by Christians within forty-four years of the death of the last apostle. And this is proved by the testimony of the very first Christian writer who mentions the first day after the apostles. Does Eld. Andrews question the genuineness or truthfulness of this statement? - Not at all."

[Smith]: We have given these three paragraphs in full, that the reader may be able to see fully how Eld. C. can treat the writings of others to suit his purpose. We have expressed surprise at his efforts to pervert and garble testimony. "Garble" is defined to mean, "to pick out or select such parts as may serve a purpose." - Webster. This quotation from "*The Testimony of the Fathers*" is made, remember, to prove that the Sabbath was discarded, and that Sunday was recognized as the Lord's Day by the Christians of that early time; and now let us see what Eld. Andrews does really say:

[Andrews]: "Justin's Apology" was written at Rome about the year 140 AD. His 'Dialogue with Trypho the Jew' was written some years later. In searching his works we shall see how much greater progress apostasy had made at Rome than in the countries where those lived whose writings we have been examining."

[Smith]: Thus Eld. Andrews' first reference to Justin is to show that Rome was far in advance of other bodies on the course of apostasy and that Justin was himself a leader in that work. In proof of this he introduces testimony that he treated God's Sabbath with contempt, denied its origin at creation, taunted the Jews that it was given to them because of their wickedness, and denied the perpetuity of the Ten Commandments. Pages 33, 34. As to the next sentence in Eld. C.'s quotation let us give it entire from Eld. Andrews:

[Andrews]: "And it is worthy of notice that though first-day writers assert that 'Lord's Day' was the familiar title of the first day of the week in the time of the Apocalypse, yet Justin, who is the first person after the sacred writers that mentions the first day, and this at a distance of only 44 years from the date of John's vision upon Patmos, does not call it by that title, but by the name it bore as a heathen festival. If it be said that the term was omitted because he was addressing a heathen emperor [just what Canright does now say], there still remains the fact that he mentions the day quite a number of times in his 'Dialogue with Trypho,' and yet never calls it 'Lord's Day,' nor indeed does he call it by any name implying sacredness."

[Smith]: The quotation given from Justin on pp. 34, 35 (“*Testimony of the Fathers*”), about meeting together on “the day called Sunday,” etc., Eld. C. gives in full to show that Justin did regard Sunday as the Lord’s Day, though he gives it no such name, nor any title of sacredness. But on p. 37 Eld. A. gives a quotation from Justin’s “Dialogue with Trypho,” which shows that he regarded all days alike. He calls the gospel “the new law,” and says: “The new law requires you to keep the perpetual Sabbath, and you, because you are idle for one day, suppose you are pious, not discerning why this has been commanded you; and if you eat unleavened bread you say the will of God has been fulfilled. The Lord our God does not take pleasure in such observances: if there is any perjured person or a thief among you, let him cease to be so; if any adulterer, let him repent; then he has kept the sweet and true Sabbaths of God.” Upon which Eld. Andrews remarks: “This language plainly implies that Justin held all days alike, and did not observe any one day as a day of abstinence from labor.” Yet the attempt is made by these misrepresentations to wheel Justin in as a witness for Sunday-keeping. Most astonishing to relate, Eld. C. quotes the epistle of Barnabas in favor of his position. Now he well knows that every critic pronounces that so-called epistle the work of a Jew of mean abilities and an absolute forgery. Yet, when reviewing Eld. Andrews in his notice of this work, he says:

[Canright]: “They [the early Fathers] lived early enough to have converse with the apostles themselves, while he [Eld. Andrews] lived eighteen hundred years later! Which would be apt to know best?”

[Smith]: Yes; but here is a man who claims to be a Father who was not; a man who was a fraud, an impostor, a forger. The question is, What do the Scriptures teach? And we have the Scriptures as fully as he. Now we ask, Who would be apt to give us the best exposition of Scripture? An old forger of the second century who wrote things too silly to be repeated, and too shameful to quote? Or a Christian scholar of the nineteenth? It will take no reader a great while to answer. Eld. Canright can take the forger if he prefers. In his fourth article in the Advocate, he says: “Let us see what Seventh-day Adventists say upon the sin of Sunday-keeping: ‘All who keep the first day for the Sabbath are pope’s Sunday-keepers, and God’s Sabbath-breakers.’- *History of the Sabbath*, p. 502.”

After studying the above extended quotation from the 1895 revision of the SDA book, ***Replies to Canright***, it is difficult to see the relevance of this quotation and its discussion. It appears that the SDA leaders were trying to show that Canright failed to prove his point because Justin Martyr did not attach any sacredness in itself to Sunday and thus supposedly did not equate Sunday with the Lord’s Day. The authors of ***Replies to Canright*** seem to feel that obfuscation will confuse the readers of their book enough to cause their readers to miss a variety of observations that beg to be made. They use circular reasoning at every turn. Whether the ***Epistle of Barnabas*** was a forgery or not had nothing to do with the validity of Canright’s point, which was that the writers of the Early Church documented the FACT that the first Christians abandoned the Sabbath astonishingly early, well before the existence of the Roman Catholic Church. Andrews could not seem to grasp the concept that the early Christians chose Sunday as a day of worship without attaching any “day sacredness” to it. We see the following things of significance from this quotation from ***Replies to Canright*** and the other things we have learned so far:

- The SDA leaders of Canright’s Era knew that Sabbath abandonment was common by 100 AD and universal by around 140 AD., hundreds of years before a pope or a Roman Catholic Church.
- They knew Ellen White said it was the pope and the Roman Catholic Church that “changed the day.”
- They knew Ellen White was not correct when she said that the Roman Catholic Church changed the day because this change happened far too early for her claim to be true.
- We see that the SDA leaders of Canright’s Era were introduced to the concepts that at least some of the first Christians knew that the Sabbath did not begin at Creation and that there can be no Sabbath-keeping without circumcision.
- We now know that SDA leaders knew almost everything Canright confronted them with as early as the late 1850’s.
- We observe that these early SDA leaders could not answer Canright’s arguments and that any reasonable person should have been able to see that there was no satisfactory rebuttal to his point that Sabbath abandonment took place far too early for Ellen White’s Roman Catholic sun worship explanation to be true.

Almost 100 years later, Dr. Bacchiocchi found himself still faced with the problem that Sabbath “abandonment” by Christians was almost immediate. He theorizes that Justin Martyr is rationalizing the Sabbath requirement away, looking for an excuse to justify the fact that Justin Martyr and other Christians were not keeping the Sabbath like they were supposed to. Again, this is an example of circular reasoning at its worst, presupposing that Christians were required to keep the Sabbath. Dr. Bacchiocchi, as well as the contributors to the 1895 edition version of *Replies to Carrington*, missed the point completely. Whether Justin Martyr was rationalizing or not, he documented the fact that Christians were not keeping the Sabbath at this time. Whoever may have authored the *Epistle of Barnabas*, it was written very early, hundreds of years before the Roman Catholic Church came into existence, and it documented the fact that Christians were worshiping on Sunday at the time the document was written.

THE IMMEDIACY OF SABBATH "ABANDONMENT"

A variety of Early Christian writers documented that Christians chose to worship on Sunday, beginning in 70 AD and continuing until the Roman Catholic Church came into existence hundreds of years after “Sabbath abandonment” was universal (140 AD). Using their excerpts to support either point of view is filled with risks and challenges. Great caution must be observed. Cox (*The Literature of the Sabbath Question*, 1865) provides evidence that the writings of the early fathers have been heavily edited and even “tampered with.” There are translation problems with documents believed to be legitimate, and some of the documents are believed to be fraudulent. Our research suggests that the biggest mistake Sabbatarians make in using these excerpts is their failure to understand that many of these writers discuss the term “Sabbath” in the context of the Sabbath festival (such as whether or not to fast) and not in the Jewish sense of a day that is intrinsically holy and requires resting upon it by Divine law. At the same time, anti-Sabbatarians must be careful not to make too much of the anti-Sabbatarian comments of the early fathers because of the possibility that their writings have been tampered with. Kerry Wynne, observes, however, that it seems that the topic of Sabbath-keeping would be of any special interest to someone who would have thought about tampering with the writings of the early fathers. Whether or not Christians should keep the Jewish Sabbath was never an issue of interest to the apostles or the early church.

At the same time, taken as a whole, these excerpts demonstrate that the Christian Church during its first 500 years or more worshiped on Sundays and celebrated the Sabbath festival at selected times of the liturgical year. If they rested on these Sabbath festivals, it was because of the festive nature of the tradition, and if they worshiped on them it was because it was a festival established as a tradition to keep alive the memory of the Creation Week. The Lord's Supper was often celebrated on this festival. From the Jewish perspective, the early Christians, then, “broke” the Sabbath on all the Saturdays of the year that were not set aside as a Sabbath festival, and they “broke” it on the Sabbath festival days because the festive activities were not what the Law of Moses would have allowed on the weekly Sabbath of the Decalogue.

While these writers had the advantage of perspective that living very close in time to the days of the apostles, they did not have access to the large body of the research that has been done on this subject over the last nearly 2,000 years. While a study of the opinions of the early fathers is useful, it is important to keep in mind that a number of biblical concepts and themes are opposed to Sabbatarian thinking. Just one example is the principle that observing the ordinance of circumcision was a prerequisite to keeping the Sabbath.

Do not suppose for a moment that SDA leaders, historians, and theologians are not keenly aware that the Christian writers of the second and third centuries were not virtually unanimous in their disdain for the Jewish concept of Sabbath-keeping. Michael Morrison of Grace Community International comments that SDA Theologian Mervyn Maxwell, in his book, *Early Sabbath-Sunday History*, concedes that second and early third-century writers had basically the same negative attitudes toward the Sabbath (see part 3, note 27) and summarizes this concept as follows:

These writers taught that the new covenant had put an end to the old law — and that now the new spiritual Israel, with its new covenant and its new spiritual law, no longer needed the literal circumcision, literal sacrifices, and literal Sabbath. Barnabas observed that God "has circumcised our hearts." Justin referred triumphantly to the new spiritual circumcision in Christ. Irenaeus taught that circumcision, sacrifices, and Sabbaths were given of old as signs of better things to come; the new sacrifice, for example, is now a contrite heart. Tertullian, too, had a new spiritual sacrifice and a new spiritual circumcision. Each of these writers also taught that a new spiritual concept of the Sabbath had replaced the old literal one...

This supplanting of the old law by the new; of the literal Sabbath by the spiritual, was a very Christ-

centered concept for these four writers. God's people have inherited the covenant only because Christ through His sufferings inherited it first for us, Barnabas said. For Justin the new, final, and eternal law that has been given to us was "namely Christ" Himself. It was only because Christ gave the law that He could now also be "the end of it," said Irenaeus. And it is Christ who invalidated "the old" and confirmed "the new," according to Tertullian. Indeed Christ did this, both Irenaeus and Tertullian said, not so much by annulling the law as by so wonderfully fulfilling it that He extended it far beyond the mere letter. To sum up: The early rejection of the literal Sabbath appears to be traceable to a common hermeneutic of Old and New Testament scriptures. - C. Mervyn Maxwell in Maxwell and Damsteegt, *Early Sabbath-Sunday History*," (pp. 154-156)

Please balance these things in your assessment as you study these excerpts:

1. The Didache [AD. 70]

But every Lord's day . . . gather yourselves together and break bread, and give thanksgiving after having confessed your transgressions, that your sacrifice may be pure. But let no one that is at variance with his fellow come together with you, until they be reconciled, that your sacrifice may not be profaned" (Didache 14 [AD. 70]).

2. The Letter of Barnabas [AD. 74]

"We keep the eighth day [Sunday] with joyfulness, the day also on which Jesus rose again from the dead" (Letter of Barnabas 15:6-8 [AD. 74]). This document is almost certainly fraudulent in regard to its claims of authorship, but it still documents the practice of the first Christians, and that practice was to meet for worship on Sunday.

3. Ignatius of Antioch [AD. 110]

Those who were brought up in the ancient order of things [i.e. Jews] have come to the possession of a new hope, no longer observing the Sabbath, but living in the observance of the Lord's day, on which also our life has sprung up again by him and by his death" (*Letter to the Magnesians* 8 [AD. 110]). This document may have been tampered with, and its authenticity is questionable. If it was tampered with, it may reflect the opinion of very early Christian "editors." We use it for the support of our point-of-view with these reservations. Dr. Bacchiocchi acknowledges that the Early Church was seeking to differentiate itself from Judaism as early as this time in his book, *From Sabbath to Sunday*, but seeks to show that Ignatius meant that the OT Jewish prophets did not go around "Sabbatizing," and that because of this fact, Christians should not do so either.

4. Justin Martyr [AD. 155]

"We too would observe the fleshly circumcision, and the Sabbaths, and in short all the feasts, if we did not know for what reason they were enjoined [on] you—namely, on account of your transgressions and the hardness of your heart. . . . How is it, Trypho, that we would not observe those rites which do not harm us— I speak of fleshly circumcision and Sabbaths and feasts? . . . God enjoined you to keep the Sabbath, and impose on you other precepts for a sign, as I have already said, on account of your unrighteousness and that of your fathers" (*Dialogue with Trypho*, 18, 21 [AD. 155]).

5. Tertullian [AD. 203]

"Let him who contends that the Sabbath is still to be observed as a balm of salvation, and circumcision on the eighth day . . . teach us that, for the time past, righteous men kept the Sabbath or practiced circumcision, and were thus rendered 'friends of God.' For if circumcision purges a man, since God made Adam uncircumcised, why did he not circumcise him, even after his sinning, if circumcision purges? . . . Therefore, since God originated Adam uncircumcised and unobservant of the Sabbath, consequently his offspring also, Abel, offering him sacrifices, uncircumcised and unobservant of the Sabbath, was by him [God] commended [Gen. 4:1-7, Heb. 9:4]. . . . Noah also, uncircumcised— yes, and unobservant of the Sabbath— God freed from the deluge. For Enoch too, most righteous man, uncircumcised and unobservant of the Sabbath, he translated from this world, who did not first taste death in order that, being a candidate for eternal life, he might show us that we also may, without the burden of the law of Moses, please God" (*An Answer to the Jews* 2 [AD. 203]) Sabbatarian apologists quote another passage from Tertullian which appears to be pro-Sabbatarian, but that quote is in reference to the keeping of the Sabbath by the Early Church as a festival. Sabbatarian apologists seek to show that this writer changed his mind about the Sabbath one or more times, but the confusion they experience is the result of their failure to understand that the Early Church observed the 7th day of the week as a FESTIVAL that was deliberately made to be different in its make-up than the Jewish Sabbath but still had religious significance.

6. The Didascalía [AD. 225]

“The apostles further appointed: On the first day of the week let there be service, and the reading of the Holy Scriptures, and the oblation, because on the first day of the week our Lord rose from the place of the dead, and on the first day of the week he arose upon the world, and on the first day of the week he ascended up to heaven, and on the first day of the week he will appear at last with the angels of heaven” (*Didascalía 2* [AD. 225]).

7. Victorinus [AD. 300]

“The sixth day [Friday] is called parasceve, that is to say, the preparation of the kingdom. . . . On this day also, on account of the passion of the Lord Jesus Christ, we make either a station to God or a fast. On the seventh day he rested from all his works, and blessed it, and sanctified it. On the former day we are accustomed to fast rigorously, that on the Lord’s Day we may go forth to our bread with giving of thanks. And let the parasceve become a rigorous fast, lest we should appear to observe any Sabbath with the Jews . . . which Sabbath he [Christ] in his body abolished” (*The Creation of the World* [AD. 300]).

8. Eusebius of Caesarea [AD. 312]

“They [the early saints of the Old Testament] did not care about circumcision of the body, neither do we [Christians]. They did not care about observing Sabbaths, nor do we. They did not avoid certain kinds of food, neither did they regard the other distinctions which Moses first delivered to their posterity to be observed as symbols; nor do Christians of the present day do such things” (*Church History* 1:4:8 [AD. 312]).

9. Eusebius of Caesarea [AD. 319]

“The day of his [Christ’s] light . . . was the day of his resurrection from the dead, which they say, as being the one and only truly holy day and the Lord’s day, is better than any number of days as we ordinarily understand them, and better than the days set apart by the Mosaic Law for feasts, new moons, and Sabbaths, which the Apostle [Paul] teaches are the shadow of days and not days in reality” (*Proof of the Gospel* 4:16:186 [AD. 319]).

10. Athanasius [AD. 345]

“The Sabbath was the end of the first creation, the Lord’s day was the beginning of the second, in which he renewed and restored the old in the same way as he prescribed that they should formerly observe the Sabbath as a memorial of the end of the first things, so we honor the Lord’s day as being the memorial of the new creation” (*On Sabbath and Circumcision* 3 [AD. 345]).

11. Cyril of Jerusalem [AD. 350]

“Fall not away either into the sect of the Samaritans or into Judaism, for Jesus Christ has henceforth ransomed you. Stand aloof from all observance of Sabbaths and from calling any indifferent meats common or unclean” (*Catechetical Lectures* 4:37 [AD. 350]).

12. Council of Laodicea [AD. 360]

“Christians should not Judaize and should not be idle on the Sabbath, but should work on that day; they should, however, particularly reverence the Lord’s Day and, if possible, not work on it, because they were Christians” (canon 29 [AD. 360]).

13. John Chrysostom [AD. 387]

“When he said, ‘You shall not kill’ . . . he did not add, ‘because murder is a wicked thing.’ The reason was that conscience had taught this beforehand, and he speaks thus, as to those who know and understand the point. Wherefore when he speaks to us of another commandment, not known to us by the dictate of conscience, he not only prohibits, but adds the reason. When, for instance, he gave commandment concerning the Sabbath—‘On the seventh day you shall do no work’— he subjoined also the reason for this cessation. What was this? ‘Because on the seventh day God rested from all his works which he had begun to make’ [Ex. 20:10]. And again: ‘Because you were a servant in the land of Egypt’ [Deut. 21:18]. For what purpose then, I ask, did he add a reason respecting the Sabbath, but did no such thing in regard to murder? Because this commandment was not one of the leading ones. It was not one of those which were accurately defined of our conscience, but a kind of partial and temporary one, and for this reason it was abolished afterward. But

those which are necessary and uphold our life are the following: 'You shall not kill . . . You shall not commit adultery . . . You shall not steal.' On this account he adds no reason in this case, nor enters into any instruction on the matter, but is content with the bare prohibition" (*Homilies on the Statues* 12:9 [AD. 387]).

14. John Chrysostom [AD. 395]

"You have put on Christ, you have become a member of the Lord and been enrolled in the heavenly city, and you still grovel in the Law [of Moses]? How is it possible for you to obtain the kingdom? Listen to Paul's words, that the observance of the Law overthrows the gospel, and learn, if you will, how this comes to pass, and tremble, and shun this pitfall. Why do you keep the Sabbath and fast with the Jews?" (*Homilies on Galatians* 2:17 [AD. 395]).

15. The Apostolic Constitutions [AD. 400]

"And on the day of our Lord's resurrection, which is the Lord's day, meet more diligently, sending praise to God that made the universe by Jesus, and sent him to us, and condescended to let him suffer, and raised him from the dead. Otherwise what apology will he make to God who does not assemble on that day . . . in which is performed the reading of the prophets, the preaching of the gospel, the oblation of the sacrifice, the gift of the holy food" (*Apostolic Constitutions* 2:7:60 [AD. 400]).

The challenge of interpreting the Sabbath point-of-view of this critically important document is discussed elsewhere in this book. Another passage from the work appears to support Sabbatarianism, but its mention of the Sabbath is almost certainly in the context of the Sabbath as a festival.

16. John Chrysostom [AD. 402]

"The rite of circumcision was venerable in the Jews' account, for as much as the Law itself gave way thereto, and the Sabbath was less esteemed than circumcision. For that circumcision might be performed, the Sabbath was broken; but that the Sabbath might be kept, circumcision was never broken; and mark, I pray, the dispensation of God. This is found to be even more solemn than the Sabbath, as not being omitted at certain times. When then it is done away, much more is the Sabbath" (*Homilies on Philippians* 10 [AD. 402]).

17. Augustine [AD. 412]

"Well, now, I should like to be told what there is in these Ten Commandments, except the observance of the Sabbath, which ought not to be kept by a Christian . . . Which of these commandments would anyone say that the Christian ought not to keep? It is possible to contend that it is not the Law which was written on those two tables that the Apostle Paul describes as 'the letter that kills' [2 Cor. 3:6], but the law of circumcision and the other sacred rites which are now abolished" (*The Spirit and the Letter* 24 [AD. 412]).

Origen [AD. 185-254]

"But what is the feast of the Sabbath except that of which the apostle speaks, 'There remaineth therefore a Sabbatism,' that is, the observance of the Sabbath, by the people of God? **Leaving the Jewish observances of the Sabbath**, let us see how the Sabbath ought to be observed by a Christian. On the Sabbath-day all worldly labors ought to be abstained from. If, therefore, you cease from all secular works, and execute nothing to church, attending to sacred reading and instruction, thinking of celestial things, solicitous for the future, placing the Judgment to come before your eyes, not looking to things present and visible, but to those which are future and invisible, this is the observance of the Christian Sabbath."

Origen in *Numeras Homilia* 23, cited by J.N. Andrews, *History of the Sabbath*, Chapter 18, from the translation of *Origen's Opera*, Tome, p. 358, Paris, 1733:

"Let us therefore no longer keep the Sabbath **after the Jewish manner**, and rejoice in days of idleness; for 'he that does not work, let him not eat.' For say the [holy] oracles, 'in the sweat of thy face shalt thou eat thy bread.' But let every one of you keep the Sabbath after a spiritual manner, rejoicing in meditation on the law, not in relaxation of the body, admiring the workmanship of God, and not eating things prepared the day before, nor using lukewarm drinks, and walking within a prescribed space, not finding delight in dancing and plaudits which have no sense in them. And after the observance of the Sabbath, let every friend of Christ keep the Lord's day as a festival, the resurrection day, the queen and chief of all the days [of the week]. Looking forward to this, the prophet declared, 'To the end, for the eighth day,' on which our life both sprang up again, and the victory over death was obtained in Christ." *Epistle to the Magnesians* (longer form), chap. 9, quoted by J. N. Andrews, *History of the Sabbath*, Chapter 18.

Note: J.N. Andrews seemed to think that these excerpts from Origen support the idea that the early Christians were still keeping the Sabbath. He apparently ignored the scholarly rebuke he received from Thomas Preble, who addressed his errors in 1867. Upon careful analysis, the comments of Origen demonstrate that Christians were observing FESTIVALS on both Saturday and Sunday. Origen does not appeal to any biblical source, and especially not to the 10 Commandments, to support his views. In fact Origen is careful in both statements to distance his Sabbath remarks from anything related to Judaism. He was a strong supporter of Sunday as the day of worship. Observe that he is instructing Christians not to eat food prepared the day before the Sabbath festival. The Jews were forbidden to prepare food on the Sabbath day, and Friday was considered the “day of preparation” for preparing the meals that would be eaten on the Sabbath. He appears to view the Sabbath festival merely as a Christian tradition designed by the Church to keep the memory of Creation Week before the minds of the believers.

Notice the theology in these statements. Some writers gave better reasons for the abandonment of the Sabbath by Christians than others, but the point is that Christians documented the fact that the Sabbath was not being kept in the Jewish sense of the word from virtually the beginning of the Christian Faith.

THE EARLY CHURCH'S NEGATIVITY TOWARD THE SABBATH

During the 30 years that transpired between the release of Dr. Bacchiocchi's first book in 1977, *From Sabbath to Sunday*, and the publication of Dr. Skip MacCarty's “commemorative” book in 2007, *In Granite or Ingrained?*, Seventh-day Adventists did a lot of research on the problem that early church history poses for Sabbatarianism. Collectively, the research and writings of a handful of these pro-Sabbatarian writers proves that Seventh-day Adventists are more painfully aware than ever that Ellen White's account of how Christians came to observe Sunday is nothing more than a fairy tale. Michael Morrison of the Grace Communion International (formerly the Sabbatarian *Worldwide Church of God*), discusses what SDA scholar, Mervyn C. Maxwell, concedes about what the Christian writers of the second and early third centuries had to say about the Sabbath. Morrison paraphrases Maxwell's summary of the first basic areas of agreement among the early church fathers in regard to the Sabbath as follows. The words of Morrison are indented and in black and the words of Maxwell are in blue:

Sabbath eschatology – The Sabbath foreshadows an age of sinlessness and peace beyond this present age. (2) Moral typology – Living a godly life every day fulfills the purpose of the Sabbath commandment. (3) The Sabbath is one of the Ten Commandments not binding on Christians. (4) The Sabbath is not part of the natural law. (5) The patriarchs before Moses did not observe the Sabbath.

Maxwell concludes that second and early third-century writers had basically the same negative attitudes toward the Sabbath. He then writes:

These writers taught that the new covenant had put an end to the old law – and that now the new spiritual Israel, with its new covenant and its new spiritual law, no longer needed the literal circumcision, literal sacrifices, and literal Sabbath. Barnabas observed that God “has circumcised our hearts.” Justin referred triumphantly to the new spiritual circumcision in Christ. Irenaeus taught that circumcision, sacrifices, and Sabbaths were given of old as signs of better things to come; the new sacrifice, for example, is now a contrite heart. Tertullian, too, had a new spiritual sacrifice and a new spiritual circumcision. Each of these writers also taught that a new spiritual concept of the Sabbath had replaced the old literal one. .

The supplanting of the old law with the new, of the literal Sabbath with the spiritual, was a very Christ-centered concept for these four writers. God's people have inherited the covenant only because Christ through His sufferings inherited it first for us, Barnabas said. For Justin the new, final, and eternal law that has been given to us was “namely Christ” Himself. It was only because Christ gave the law that He could now also be “the end of it,” said Irenaeus. And it is Christ who invalidated “the old” and confirmed “the new,” according to Tertullian. Indeed Christ did this, both Irenaeus and Tertullian said, not so much by annulling the law as by so wonderfully fulfilling it that He extended it far beyond the mere letter. To sum up: The early rejection of the literal Sabbath appears to be traceable to a common hermeneutic of Old and New Testament scriptures.

Morrison observes that these various early church writers came from various parts of the empire and shared a common “hermeneutic” that would only be possible if the practice of Sunday observance had been present from the beginning. He says,

“That same hermeneutic was used in the Gentile mission ever since Acts 15: a mission that did not require Gentiles to keep the laws of Moses, including the Sabbath. It is unlikely that *churches* throughout the

empire would, without controversy, develop the same practice unless that practice had been present from the beginning. It is also unlikely that *people* throughout the empire would, without controversy, develop the same practice unless that practice had been present from the beginning. It is also unlikely that people throughout the empire would give the same reasons for their practice unless those reasons had also been present from the beginning.”

Michael Morrison's series on the history of the Sabbath in the early church can be accessed at the Grace Communion International website, gci.org. Morrison cites Maxwell as follows:

Maxwell, C. Mervyn, and P. Gerard Damsteegt, eds., *Source Book for the History of Sabbath and Sunday*. Berrien Springs, Mich.: Seventh-day Adventist Theological Seminary, 1992.

Dr. Skip MacCarty refused to discuss the historical aspects of the Sabbath-Sunday question in his 2007 book, stating that the subject was beyond its scope. The real history of how Christians came to observe Sunday is totally different than what he would want his readers to believe. If the first Christians hadn't figured it out before, they knew the Sabbath was not part of Christianity when the Council of Jerusalem clarified that the Gentile Christians were not to be bound by the ordinance of circumcision and a very brief list of their requirements was outlined. The list of requirements for the new Gentile converts was very brief, and it did not include the keeping of the Jewish Sabbath – a no brainer since they were not to be bound by the ordinance of circumcision.

It didn't take long for the Jews to kick the Christians out of the synagogues. Christians were going there to convince the Jews that Jesus was the Messiah. The Christians, out of convenience and expediency, began to meet on the first day of the week. Figuring that it was a good a day to meet as any, they made it a tradition to meet on that day for Christian fellowship and worship.

The Sunday observers, then, were on the right side of the fence. The Jewish Christians – at least the ones who chose to cling to Sabbath-keeping – were not the heroes of the Early Church. Instead they were the ones who were seduced into following “another gospel. Somewhat later they became the enemies of Christianity, having evolved into the Gnostics and Ebionites. The Ebionites, who kept the Sabbath, vilified the Apostle Paul and claimed James as their spiritual leader. In his anti-Sabbatarian essay, “**Sabbatarianism Re-examined**,” (former) SDA theologian **Robert D. Brinsmead** explains what happened to the Sabbath-keeping Jewish Christians:

The picture emerges of Jewish Christianity which, having lost its influence on the predominately Gentile Church became increasingly isolated. It lost vital contact with Gentile Christianity, so that Gentile Christianity was largely cut off from its Jerusalem roots. This has been a tragedy for both branches of the church.

By the time of Irenaeus (in the late second century) Jewish Christianity was regarded as real heresy. Some Jewish Christians were called Ebionites (“the poor ones”), while others were called Nazarenes. They kept the Sabbath and persevered in a Jewish way of life. They were generally vegetarian. Some even refused to eat e...[text unclear] Their hero was James; their archenemy was Paul.

The most serious heresy of the Ebionites was failure to confess Christ's full divinity. Furthermore, although they believed Jesus was sinless, they taught that he possessed sinful human nature like the rest of Mankind. Yet it is a remarkable fact that the heretical Ebionites traced their lineage back to the original Jewish Christians and claim to be their true successors.

We have reviewed where Sunday observance came from and where it did not come from. In the light of these facts it is difficult to comprehend why the leadership of the Seventh-day Adventist Church would choose to stick with the Sabbatarian belief model other than the fear of the financial disaster that would take place if fundamental doctrinal changes were made. Perhaps these leaders took notice of the financial hardship which struck The Worldwide Church of God when it renounced Sabbatarianism in 1995.

While a study of the facts of Early Church history is interesting, and while it proves to the point of over-kill that Ellen White lied about the source of her information about how Sunday observance replaced Sabbath-keeping, these facts alone do not prove that Sabbatarianism is not correct. Let us look at additional barriers in greater depth.

THE LACK OF SUPPORT FOR SABBATH-KEEPING IN THE EARLY CHURCH

Various aspects of this subject will be or have been touched on in other parts of this book. Note that in discussions of right and wrong for Christians, the New Testament writers comment about sins that are related to all of the Ten Commandments of the Decalogue with the exception of the 4th Commandment– the Sabbath. While arguments from silence are among the weakest form of evidence and fail to qualify as “proof” taken alone, this is still a most interesting observation. Combine this fact with everything else we now know about the Sabbath from biblical concepts, and its significance is very great for the Jews. In fact, Israelites who deliberately broke the Sabbath were to be stoned.

It is entirely reasonable to suppose that if Sabbatarianism were to be true, the new Gentile converts coming into the Church would have needed some kind of official guidance in regard to the Sabbath. Many Gentile converts had attended the Jewish synagogues where Paul had preached and would have had a degree of familiarity with the Sabbath concept already. However, many other Gentile converts came directly out of heathenism. The apostles, and especially Paul, gave them instructions in almost everything else, including whether or not they could eat meat sacrificed to idols. Paul instructed Christians not to use their freedom from the LAW to fall into licentiousness, and in one passage he gives a list of 23 examples of the kind of sins that a person who lives by the Spirit should not commit. As in every New Testament case where a mention of the sin of Sabbath-breaking would be anticipated by Sabbatarians, Paul does not include it. Neither do any other New Testament writers. The emphasis of the true Gospel of Jesus, as articulated by the Apostle Paul, is that Christians are not guided by the works or deeds of any set of laws, but rather by the Holy Spirit in the heart.

Without exception, every time the New Testament mentions Christians getting together, they met on the first day of the week— never on the Jewish Sabbath.

Christians went to the Jewish synagogues to witness to their Jewish brethren that Jesus was the Messiah. There is no indication they went there for any other purpose.

Sabbatarians teach that the reference to “The Lord's Day” in the Book of Revelation is a reference to the Sabbath (See Rev. 1:9). However, this concept is not in keeping with linguistics and word usage studies. There is abundant evidence that the term, “The Lord's Day,” was consistently a reference to Sunday, the first day of the week. In regard to the Sabbatarian idea that it was a reference to the Jewish Sabbath, *Wikipedia* has this to say in the article, “The Lord's Day:”

Some seventh-day Sabbatarian writers have argued that because Jesus identified himself as “Lord even of the Sabbath day” (cf. Matt. 12:8), *kyriake hemera* in Rev. 1:10 should be interpreted as a reference to seventh-day Sabbath. However, in almost every other instance where *kyriake hemera* or *kyriake* is used, the unambiguous meaning is Sunday, but there are no early witnesses to the use of *kyriake hemera* as a name for Saturday.

The *Wikipedia* article does not provide an authoritative citation for this fact. Notice, however, that the researchers at the *Encyclopedia Britannica* have concluded that the reference to the Lord's Day in Revelation is to Sunday and that the Lord's Day is to be equated with Sunday (See the *Encyclopedia Britannica*'s Web entry for “Lord's Day.”):

First day of the week; in Christianity, the Lord's Day, the weekly memorial of Jesus Christ's Resurrection from the dead. The practice of Christians gathering together for worship on Sunday dates back to apostolic times, but details of the actual development of the custom are not clear. Before the end of the 1st century ad, the author of Revelation gave the first day its name of the “Lord's Day” (Rev. 1:10). Saint Justin Martyr (c. 100–c. 165), philosopher and defender of the Christian faith, in his writings described the Christians gathered together for worship on the Lord's Day: the gospels or the Old Testament was read, the presiding minister preached a sermon, and the group prayed together and celebrated the Lord's Supper.

A “Sabbath” (Gr. *sabbatismos*; “God's rest”) is mentioned in Hebrews 4 to explain the rest that Christians find in the freedom of the Gospel. The apostles went to the synagogues to witness to the Jews on Sabbaths. However, when there is a reference to Christians meeting with other Christians, their meetings always occur on Sunday.

Sabbatarians point to the fact that Jesus kept the Sabbath, and He is our Example. Jesus had chosen to live under the

terms of the Mosaic Covenant at that time. The TORAH had not yet been nailed to the Cross. Jesus didn't marry and he raised the dead. Are we to follow Jesus' example in these things also? If He had wanted Christians to keep the Sabbath, He would not have instructed Paul, through the Holy Spirit, to write Colossians 2:14-17, which forbids the enforcement of Sabbath-keeping on the Gentile converts. Greg Taylor in his book, ***Discovering the New Covenant: Why I Am No Longer a Seventh-day Adventist***, makes an excellent case that Jesus was preparing His followers for Colossians 2:14-17 by breaking the Sabbath Himself and citing examples of others who had broken the Sabbath and other points of law and were also guiltless. In this context of Jesus being our Example, Jesus commanded the people to no longer judge according appearance, but to judge righteous judgment, looking to the heart and intent or motivation of heart, even in regards to work performed on a Sabbath. He further taught that it was lawful to do good on the Sabbath, as contrasted to doing evil. Sabbatarians reject the teachings of Jesus in this regard, opting for a mixture of the instructions through Moses and their own contrived Pharisaical list of what is acceptable work, and what is not, the result being unrighteous judgment.

D.M. Canright had confronted Adventist leadership with exhaustive research in two books he published between 1900 and his death in 1919 (See our historical time line.) that destroyed any hope for the pagan sun worship theory. In the decades that followed the deaths of Ellen White and D.M. Canright, additional discoveries were made, and none of them favorable to Ellen White's apostasy theory. By the 1960's it had become very clear that the Heathen did not rest from work on Sunday. One historian put it this way:

“In the early centuries of the Church's history down to the time of the Emperor Constantine it would, in any case, not have been practical for Christians to observe Sunday as a day of rest, on which they were obliged, for the sake of principle, to abstain from work. The reason for this was simply that no one in the entire Roman Empire, neither Jews, nor Greeks, nor Romans, stopped work on Sunday” (Willy Rordorf, *Sunday: The History of the Day of Rest and Worship in the Earliest Centuries of the Christian Church*, Philadelphia: Westminster Press, 1968, pp. 154-155).

Pliny's famous “Letter to Trajan” (c. A. D. 111-112) is also clear evidence that early Christians had no free day of rest. They met for worship early in the morning (probably on the first day of the week), and then they went to work. (See Bruce, *New Testament History*, pp. 423-24.)

A CONTINUOUS HISTORY OF SABBATH-KEEPERS THROUGHOUT THE DARK AGES?

As the chief architect of modern Sabbatarianism, Ellen White sought to demonstrate an unbroken line of Sabbath-keeping Christians until this day. At a minimum she claimed that God directly led her to pick out the historical material she utilized in her most significant book, *The Great Controversy*. If God had guided her during her selection process, we would not expect to find major errors. God would, after all, be steering her away from flatly wrong sources. Unfortunately, we find numerous cases where Ellen was unsuspectedly (?) taken in by serious errors. One case in point is her claim that the Waldenses were persecuted by the papacy for holding onto Sabbath observance.

A review of a wide variety of historical sources suggests that it is possible that there were always small enclaves of Christians who clung to the Sabbath heresy, but after a review of the “facts” presented in the *Great Controversy*, we found that there was no significant Sabbath-keeping by the Waldenses. The idea that the Waldenses kept the Jewish Sabbath came from a name that developed over time to refer to them — the *insabatti*. Although this term sounds like they got the name from keeping the Sabbath, this term actually means “Sandals.” The Waldenses wore sandals that were unmistakably very humble to illustrate the humility that was in their hearts. Larry Dean was able to verify this fact by contacting a European linguist, who additionally explained that Christians from this era observed the Sabbath *festival*, and that some errors of understanding the intent of the writer occur for this reason. Dean says she also pointed out that, at the same time, the Waldenses seemed to carry the belief that Sunday was the Christian “Sabbath.” For a noble but errant defense of the truthfulness of Ellen's claim that the Waldenses were truly keepers of the Jewish Sabbath, no one has done a better job than SDA apologist, Vance Ferrell. You can find his defense at this Internet address. If you do not find it there, use a search engine:

<http://omega77.tripod.com/bacc3vf.htm>

The facts suggest that although it was possible that a tiny minority of Waldenses might possibly have kept the Jewish Sabbath, the vast majority of them did not, and that the papacy persecuted them for their Reformation-like stand on a number of theological issues, other than the Sabbath, as well their refusal to bow to the authority of the pope.

As we look at this question in light of today's expanded knowledge of the Waldenses — a group of Christians who still exist— we find that the main source of the idea that they were Sabbath-keepers seems to have come from a Reformed Church scholar by the name of Robinson. The Reformed Church, which grew out of the Waldensian Movement, historically has viewed Sunday as the “new” Sabbath, believing that the sanctity of the Sabbath was transferred from Saturday to Sunday. You can see what confusion might result. We also noted that ecclesiastical scholars contemporary to Ellen White spotted this glaring mistake and refuted it. One of those scholars was Thomas Preble, who had become a member of the Advent movement a few years before the Seventh-day Adventist Church officially organized in 1863 and left it a few years later. During his brief journey in Adventism he wrote a pro-Sabbatarian book that Adventists like to reference. However, in **1867** he wrote a book which refuted J.N. Andrews' first edition of *History of the Sabbath* point by point. In this book he devoted over 100 pages to Ellen White's claim that the papacy persecuted the Waldenses for Sabbath-keeping. Larry Dean found that much of the information she presented in regard to the Waldenses was gleaned from James Aitken Wylie's (1808-1890) book, *The History of the Waldenses*. What Dean found was that in selecting from his work, she ignored passages found amongst her chosen quotes that specifically illustrated the fact that the Waldenses could NOT be characterized as keepers of the Jewish Sabbath. He observes that her habit of deception is more typical of a Spiritualist medium than a prophet of God:

Page 98: It was **Sunday**, the 17th of March 1561. The whole of the Vaudois assembled Pra del Tor had met on the morning of that day, soon after dawn, as was their wont, to unite in public devotion.

Page 172: On the 17th of April, being Good Friday, they renewed their covenant, and on **Easter Sunday**, their pastors dispensed to them the Communion. This was the last time the sons of the Valley partook of the Lord's Supper before their great dispersion.

Paged 187-88: Their fatigue was great, but they feared to halt on the battle-field, and so, rousing those who had already sunk into sleep, they commenced climbing the lofty Mont Sci. The day was breaking as they gained the summit. It was **Sunday**, and Henri Arnaud, halting till all should assemble, pointed out to them, just as they were becoming visible in the morning light, the mountain-tops of their own land. Welcome sight to their longing eyes! Bathed in the radiance of the rising sun, it seemed to them, as one snowy peak began to burn after another, that the mountains were kindling into joy at the return of their long-absent sons. This army of soldiers resolved itself into a congregation of worshipers, and the summit of Mont Sci became their church. Kneeling on the mountain-top, the battle-field below them, and the solemn and sacred peaks of the Col du Pis, the Col la Vechera, and the glorious pyramid of Monte Viso looking down upon them in reverent silence, they humbled themselves before the Eternal, confessing their sins, and giving thanks for their many deliverances. Seldom has worship more sincere or more rapt been offered than that which this day ascended from this congregation of warrior-worshipers gathered under the dome-like vault that rose over them.

Refreshed by the **devotions of the Sunday**, and exhilarated by the victory of the day before, the heroic band now rushed down to take possession of their inheritance, from which the single Valley of Clusone only parted them. It was three years and a half since they had crossed the Alps, a crowd of exiles, worn to skeletons by sickness and confinement, and now they were returning, a marshalled host, victorious over the army of France, and ready to encounter that of Piedmont. They traversed the Clusone, a plain of about two miles in width, watered by the broad, clear, blue-tinted Garmagnasca, and bounded by hills, which offer to the eye a succession of terraces, clothed with the richest vines, mingled with the chestnut and the apple-tree. They entered the narrow defile of Pis, where a detachment of Piedmontese soldiers had been posted to guard the pass, but who took flight at the approach of the Vaudois, thus opening to them the gate of one of the grandest of their Valleys, San Martino. On the twelfth day after setting out from the shores of Lake Lemman they crossed the frontier, and stood once more within the limits of their inheritance. When they mustered at Balsiglia, the first Vaudois village which they entered, in the western extremity of San Martino, they found that fatigue, desertion, and battle had reduced their numbers from 800 to 700.

The first **Sunday** after their return was passed at the village of Prali. Of all their sanctuaries, the church of Prali alone remained standing; of the others only the ruins were to be seen. They resolved to commence this day their ancient and scriptural worship. Purging the church of its Popish ornaments, one half of the little army, laying down their arms at the door, entered the edifice, while the other half stood without, the church being too small to contain them all. Henri Arnaud, the soldier-pastor, mounting a table which was placed in the porch, preached to them. They began their worship by chanting the 74th Psalm—"O God,

why hast thou cast us off for ever? Why doth thine anger smoke against the sheep of thy pasture?" &c. The preacher then took as his text the 129th Psalm—"Many a time have they afflicted me from my youth, may Israel now say." The wonderful history of his people behind him, so to speak, and the reconquest of their land before him, must have called up the glorious achievements of their fathers, provoking the generous emulation of their sons. The worship was closed by those 700 warriors chanting in magnificent chorus the psalm from which their leader had preached.

To many it seemed significant that here the returned exiles should spend **their first Sunday, and resume their sanctuary services**. They remembered how this same village of Prali had been the scene of a horrible outrage at the time of their exodus. The Pastor of Prali, M. Leidet, a singularly pious man, had been discovered by the soldiers as he was praying under a rock, and being dragged forth, he was first tortured and mutilated, [text missing from source]. . . receive my spirit." It was surely appropriate, after the silence of three years and a half, during which the rage of the persecutor had forbidden the preaching of the glorious Gospel, that its re-opening should take place in the pulpit of the martyr Leidet.

Page 190: Here **their second Sunday was passed, and public worship was again celebrated**, the congregation chanting their psalm to the clash of arms.

Page 190: All through the winter of 1689-90, the Vaudois remained in their mountain fortress, resting after the marches, battles, and sieges of the previous months, and preparing for the promised return of the French. Where Henri Arnaud had pitched his camp, there had he also raised his altar, and if from that mountain-top was pealed forth the shout of battle, from it ascended also, morning and night, the prayer and the psalm. Besides daily devotions, Henri Arnaud preached **two sermons weekly, one on Sunday and another on Thursday**. At stated times he administered the Lord's Supper.

Page 219: It was the morning of Whit-Sunday, and the Waldenses were preparing to celebrate the Lord's Supper, when the first boom from the enemy's battery broke upon their ear.

Error on Ellen White's part would not be a particular issue if she had not claimed that God directly led her to choose the right sources when she was utilizing the material of other writers. Intentional deception on the part of a prophet is incompatible with the biblical standard for a true prophet of God.

ABOUT COLOSSIANS 2:14-17

The blame for the existence of the highly articulate anti-Sabbatarian, anti-Ellen White movement of today lands squarely on the shoulders of one Seventh-day Adventist Sabbath scholar, the late Dr. Samuele Bacchiocchi. In his 1977 book, *From Sabbath to Sunday*, Bacchiocchi tried to explain away the most threatening anti-Sabbatarian passages in the entire Bible — Colossians 2:14-17. This passage labels the Jewish Sabbath system as an obsolete "shadow" and indicates that it received this status when Christ died on the Cross. Bacchiocchi astonished both Seventh-day Adventists and Evangelicals by claiming that these "shadows" merely represented the extra man-made rules and regulations the Judaizers had added to the requirements for observing these ordinances. By doing so, he turned this dangerous anti-Sabbatarian "gun" around and pointed it back into the face of the opponents of the Sabbath. In an attempted feat of theological gymnastics he proposed that by condemning the ABUSE of these ordinances, Paul actually validated the continuance of these Jewish institutions into the Christian disposition. This ploy back-fired on him because this concept flatly contradicted at least two of Ellen White's "inspired" statements. First, he conceded that the Sabbath in the third position was, indeed, a reference to the weekly Sabbath of the Decalogue and that it could not possibly refer to anything else (*From Sabbath to Sunday*, page 360). Ellen White cited direct, divine inspiration for claiming that it represented only one of the "ceremonial" Sabbaths. Second, he conceded that the Sabbath could not possibly have been changed by the Roman Catholic Church because it happened too early. Ellen White, again citing inspiration, had taught that the papacy had "changed" it.

The up-shot of all this was a focus on the Sabbath-Sunday Question the likes of which had not been seen since England during the reign of Charles I.

Although Dr. Bacchiocchi lived long enough to have to fight the "fire" that he himself inadvertently started, he never abandoned these views, although he refined them a time or two. In the later years of his distinguished career as a Seventh-day Adventist theologian, he published a series of books that offered instruction to Christians on which of the Jewish festivals should be kept and how to keep them. Here is a representative statement from one of them:

“A fourth surprise was to discover that I was wrong in assuming that the annual Feasts came to an end with the sacrifice of Christ, simply because they were connected with the sacrificial system of the Temple. I came to realize that the continuity or discontinuity of the Feasts is determined not by their connection with the sacrificial system, but by the scope of their typology. If the Feasts had typified only the redemptive accomplishments of Christ’s first Advent, then obviously their function would have terminated at the Cross. But, if the Feasts foreshadow also the consummation of redemption to be accomplished by Christ at His Second Advent, then their function continues in the Christian church, though with a new meaning and manner of observance.” (From the book, *God’s Festivals in Scripture and History, Volume I: The Spring Festivals*, from the chapter, “Preview of the Book,” by Dr. Samuele Bacchiocchi)

http://www.biblicalperspectives.com/books/festivals_1/

By 1995, with the publication of *The Sabbath in the New Testament*, he seemed to have opened to the possibility that the Sabbath in the third position might be a reference to a ceremonial Sabbath feast day, perhaps an annual one, thus returning more closely to the traditional SDA interpretation. Several years later He added the possibility that it might represent a reference to ceremonial events that lasted an entire week (*Sabbath Under Crossfire*, 1998).

Fatefully, Bacchiocchi decided to aggressively market his 1977 book, *From Sabbath to Sunday*, to the clergy and religious leaders of the Christian world. Bacchiocchi's outstanding credentials gained him an audience for this old controversy. (He was the first Protestant scholar to graduate from the Gregorian Pontifical University at the Vatican in a thousand years, and his doctorate was in church history.) Eventually his book landed in the hands of Evangelical scholar, D.A. Carson.

It so came to pass that some years prior to 1977, Carson and some of his colleagues had been working on a research project to get to the bottom of the Sabbath-Sunday Question. Their interest in this subject must have resulted from general theological curiosity because there was little interest in this subject in the early 1970's. The attack of Dr. Bacchiocchi's book release kicked Carson into action. He and his associates quickly turned their efforts into a “Manhattan Project” like operation, and their research efforts were kicked into high gear. By 1982, their work was ready for publication, and it was released in a book with a title that was named to indicate that it was a rebuttal to Dr. Bacchiocchi's 1977 book — *From Sabbath to Lord's Day*. Each chapter was written by an Evangelical scholar who had specialized knowledge in each respective area of Dr. Bacchiocchi's work. The advanced Hebrew linguistics work was definitive, and his various Sabbath abandonment conspiracy theories were refuted with elements from the better understanding of the history of the early church that had come to light by the late 1960's.

The ramifications of Bacchiocchi's work on Colossians 2:14-17 seemed to never end. One of the Seventh-day Adventist theologians to consider the implications of Bacchiocchi's teaching for Adventism was the independent and controversial Australian Adventist theologian, Robert D. Brinsmead. A man of means, Brinsmead was afforded the leisure time to pursue his own research projects. Four years later he published his landmark 1981 essay, “**Sabbatarianism Re-examined**,” and in his 1982 sequel, “**A Digest of the Sabbath Question**.” Both papers were extensively researched and well-documented anti-Sabbatarian documents, and they were widely circulated among Adventist leadership. Despite the fact that Brinsmead drew from relatively recent developments in the historical understanding of the Early Church Era and Hebrew linguistics, Adventist leaders ignored his work, continuing on with their business-as-usual determination.

In a very big way, then, the Seventh-day Adventist Church had a strong moral obligation to implement fundamental doctrinal reform by no later than 1983. Not only was the Sabbath-Sunday Question settled by Carson, but also in 1982 an SDA researcher, **Dr. Walter Rea**, proved that Ellen White had copied large volumes of information from other writers while claiming that she got that information from God. He stumbled across this sensitive information while doing research in her personal library, which had been preserved after her death by the Church. Rea published findings in his New York Times best-seller, ***The White Lie***. The church fired Dr. Rea, who was on the verge of retirement age, and took away his retirement benefits. He took the Church to court and got his pension back by threatening to publish his next book, *Pirates of Privilege*, which exposed Adventist financial corruption in conjunction with the **Davenport Scandal**— a Ponzi scheme which had bilked mega millions of dollars from various SDA organizations and the leaders who made privileged private investments in Dr. Davenport's program. That book was not published until the statutes of limits expired, but it is now available to read on the Internet.

The evidence is powerful that Bacchiocchi's enigmatic treatment of Colossians 2:14-17 may have had a profound influence on the White Estate, and in particular on Ron Graybill, who was the associate secretary. Bacchiocchi had proved beyond any reasonable doubt that Ellen White could not possibly be right about Colossians 2:14-17.

Bacchiocchi's work had inadvertently proved that Ellen White's interpretation of it was wrong, but that no pro-Sabbatarian interpretation of it was possible. This self-evident revelation may have contributed in some way to the bringing about of one of the most significant events in Seventh-day Adventist history. In **1983**, a crazy set of circumstances came together which placed, into the hands of key Adventist leaders all over the world, an astonishing document that provided incredibly powerful evidence that Ellen White was a fraud. Here is how it happened. Graybill had spent nearly a dozen years at the White Estate with unbridled access to every word—including many of the amazingly stupid words—that Ellen White had written. Perhaps no one else alive at the time knew more about the fraudulent prophetic claims of Ellen White than he did. He had been working on a doctoral dissertation at a non-Seventh-day Adventist University, the subject of which was the major cults that developed in the mid-1800's which were started by unstable women. He secured an agreement with that university to seal that document up and make it inaccessible to anyone for a period of five years after his graduation. Unfortunately, someone favorable to the preservation of the institution of Adventism acquired a copy of it, duplicated it, and sent it to key SDA leaders all over the world without Graybill's knowledge or consent. After being presented with proof that Ellen White was a deceiver from a top official at the White Estate, one would expect a subsequent repudiation of her by the Church. No such thing happened. Graybill had documented the evidence for these problems:

1. She made fraudulent claims.
2. Her personal character was seriously flawed.
3. She appeared to have produced her so-called “visions” when necessary to defeat her opposition.

Nearly a decade earlier, the 1974 theft and later unauthorized publication of the secret transcript of the minutes of the **1919 Bible Conference** proved that the delegates clearly understood that Ellen White was a fraud. For example, the transcript exposes them discussing how to keep the truth about her from the seminary students. Equally interesting is their tacit admission that her claim that God showed her that the Roman Catholic Church changed the Sabbath did not square with the facts of history or the specifications of the prophecies of Daniel. In fact these delegates conceded that the specifications of the prophecies made it impossible for the Catholic Church to be the culprit. Later we will take you right into the midst of this top-secret meeting via the stenographer's transcript and you will learn for yourself what the delegates to the conference knew about these problems no later than 1919. It is easy to reason from probable cause to likely effect that this sordid revelation may have influenced Graybill to take advantage of his access to the writings of Ellen White, unreleased to the public, which betrayed the fact that she lied to cover-up earlier blunders.

It is not surprising, then, knowing the determination of Adventists to protect the institution of Adventism at all costs, that no Seventh-day Adventist Sabbath apologist has ever, to our knowledge, even acknowledge the existence of Carson's Hebrew linguistics arguments, much less attempted to refute them. Some decades ago a well-respected Seventh-day Adventist Hebrew professor, **Dr. Jerry Gladson**, left the Church and began to teach against Sabbatarianism. Two Sabbatarian apologists have challenged our presentation of the Hebrew linguistics problem. We have asked them to bring forth a Hebrew language expert to refute our findings, but years have passed by and no one has come forth.

For an exhaustive treatment of this subject, we refer our readers to our book, *Doctors Bacchiocchi, MacCarty, and du Prees Wreak Havoc With The Sabbath And Ellen White*. Nearly every significant pro-Sabbatarian theory to explain away Colossians 2:14-17 is examined. It also explains how Bacchiocchi's 1977 book, *From Sabbath to Sunday*, almost single-handedly launched the new anti-Sabbatarian movement by proposing a work-around of this text that was so self-contradictory that it upset both thinking Seventh-day Adventists as well as Catholic, Protestant, and Orthodox scholars.

In the 1895 version of ***Replies to Canright***, we have proof that Adventist leaders were having a struggle with Colossians 2:14-17. *Replies to Canright* quotes the following passage from Canright's book. Instead of addressing his key argument at his foundational point, they show that just a year or two earlier, he argued in favor of a Sabbatarian interpretation of this key passage. They list his own arguments for a Sabbatarian-friendly reading of the passage and attempt to make him appear to flip-flop back and forth to prove that his thinking is inconsistent, but they provide no evidence to validate their stance that he is incorrect. Here is a portion of what Canright said about Colossians 2:14-17. His basic premise is not addressed by his critics:

“But it is argued that as 'the Sabbath days' of Col.2:16 'are a shadow of things to come' (verse 17), and the weekly Sabbath is a memorial of creation, pointing back to the beginning, therefore they cannot be the same; for the Sabbath could not point both ways. But isnot this a mere assertion without any proof? How

do we know that it cannot point both ways? The Passover was a memorial of their deliverance from Egypt, and always pointed back to that event. Ex.12:11-17. Yet it was also a shadow of Christ. Col.2:16,17. 'Even Christ our Passover is sacrificed for us.' 1Cor.5:7. So all those annual feasts were types of Christ in some way, and yet all were memorials also of past events, as all know.... Paul says plainly that Sabbath days are a shadow of things to come; and one plain statement of Inspiration is worth a thousand of our vain reasonings. This is in harmony with Paul's argument [Editor's note: Although it was Canright's personal belief that St. Paul was the author of Hebrews, there are reasons for questioning the Pauline authorship of Hebrews. Our position is that the authorship of Hebrews is unknown, but that the content strongly suggests that it was written by a true Christian who was influenced by God's Spirit.] in Heb.4:1-11, that the seventh day is a type. **For forty years we have tried to explain away this text, and to show that it really cannot mean what it says; but there it stands, and mocks all our theories.** The Sabbath is a type, for Inspiration says so." Canright in *Advocate* of Oct. 1, 1887.

Looking back at the Canright Sabbath Crisis of 1888-1889, it is compelling to note that Canright knew all the cheap arguments that he had used himself in arguing for the Sabbath, saw later on that they were cheap, and faced the fact that he had been wrong. Since Canright had been a top leader of the Advent Movement, he was in a better position to know the struggles the Church had experienced in trying to explain away this devastating anti-Sabbatarian passage than most other Adventists leaders of the time.

By leaving the employment of the Church, Canright was able to practice Gospel Christianity without any further fear of additional consequences. The unwillingness of other, less noble, Adventist leaders has plagued Adventism from its very beginning. Here is what we now know about the impossibilities of the traditional Adventist defense of Colossians 2:14-17. We are not suggesting that Canright knew all of these arguments. He knew most of them. These are the facts as we know them today, which have been researched from the time of Canright down to our own time:

1. Sabbatarians attempt to discredit the fact that the third reference to ordinances in the passage is a reference to the weekly Sabbath of the Decalogue by saying that Paul used the plural form of the word, which would signify it was one of the other kind of ceremonial Sabbaths. This attempt to evade the plain meaning of the passage doesn't work because there are about 20 other places in Scripture where the plural form of the word Sabbath, *Sabbaton*, is used where context demands the meaning be the weekly Sabbath. Sabbath and *sabbaton* work both in the singular and plural, even as the word "fruit". It is just as valid to refer to fruit or fruits in many contexts.

2. The sentence structure FESTIVAL, NEW MOON, Sabbath is a phrase used in the Hebrew to imply the three aspects of Jewish observances and designates the order of ANNUAL, MONTHLY, WEEKLY. This same annual, monthly and weekly sequence appears five times in the Septuagint— i.e., 2 Chron. 2:4; 31:3; Neh. 10:33; Ezek. 45:17; Hosea 2:11.

All through the history of the Israelites we have annual Sabbaths, monthly New Moons, and weekly Sabbaths. If the word Sabbath as translated here means monthly Sabbaths, the sentence would read, "Annual Sabbaths, monthly New Moons, and monthly Sabbaths." If it were an annual Sabbath Paul meant here, the sentence would read, "Annual Sabbaths, monthly New Moons, and annual Sabbaths."

3. Whenever the Old Testament links the New Moon celebration with the Sabbath, as in Colossians 2:16, it is referring to the weekly Sabbath (2 Kings 4:23, 1 Chron. 23:31, 2 Chron. 2:4; Neh. 10:33; Isa. 1:13; 66:23; Ezek. 45:17; 46:1; Hosea 2:11; Amos 8:5).

In the Old Testament, annual Sabbaths are always called "a Sabbath of rest" in the Septuagint. This Greek version of the Old Testament always, or nearly always, translates this as *Sabbata Sabbaton*— not simply *Sabbaton*— as here in Colossians 2:14-17.

1. Paul clearly states that these four things— diet, annual feasts, monthly feasts, and the weekly Sabbath— are not to be a part of Christian belief and practice because they are merely shadows of things that were to come, whereas Christ is the Reality that did come. To try and salvage Sabbatarianism, the Adventists say that Paul could not possibly have meant a weekly Sabbath here because the Sabbath was a memorial pointing backwards to Creation. This SDA approach fails because the most significant Jewish memorials pointed both

backward and forward at the same time. In Colossians, prior to this passage, Paul refers to Adam as a symbol of Christ. In fact it is possible that all the major Jewish ordinances point both backward and forward at the same time.

2. Paul was a Jew, and the Jews, for thousands of years, have used the Sabbath as a symbol of the rest that will come in the after-life. This fact is well-documented in Jewish literature, both ancient and modern.
3. Since the Jews viewed the TORAH as 613 equally important, inseparable laws, it is impossible that St. Paul meant that only the “ceremonial” laws were nailed to the cross. Adventists use circular reasoning when they assert that the Sabbath reference in this passage could not possibly refer to the weekly Sabbath because the Sabbath is an eternal, moral principle. It would be unlike a Jewish writer to list a set of items that were not related to each other. Each item– the Jewish dietary laws, the annual Sabbaths, the monthly New Moons, and the weekly Sabbath– were all ceremonial ordinances within the TORAH and thought of as equal in importance in Jewish law.

As Jennifer Rector points out in her personal essay on the Sabbath:

Charles C. Ryrie, formerly Dean of the Graduate School and Professor of Systematic Theology at Dallas Theological Seminary, explains that “unless the New Testament expressly says so, part of the law cannot be ended without doing away with all of it” (242). The Jerusalem council’s decision to declare circumcision obsolete did away with the entire old covenant law- the seventh-day Sabbath included.”

<http://www.sabbatismos.com/the-Sabbath/new-covenant-Sabbath-rest/>

(Rector is quoting from Ryrie; Charles C. “The End of the Law.” *Bibliotheca Sacra* 124:495 (1967), pages 240-247.) After the Council of Jerusalem the issue of Sabbath-keeping could never arise again. It would have been settled forever, and this is exactly what we observe about the New Testament record. There is not a single comment about a Sabbath-keeping requirement for Christians from Matthew to Revelation, and there is a command that Sabbath-keeping is not to be required found in Colossians 2:14-17.

Now read this passage again with the understanding that the Sabbath referenced in this text cannot be anything else but the weekly Sabbath. The text is from the NIV:

Therefore do not let anyone judge you by what you eat or drink, or with regard to a religious festival, a New Moon celebration or a Sabbath day. These are a shadow of the things that were to come; the reality, however, is found in Christ. —Colossians 2:16-17

Thanks to the recent revelations about Ancient Israel's observance of the lunar Sabbath, we have still more evidence that Bible writers viewed the Sabbath system as an inseparable set. The complete set must have a minimum of three components— the annual Sabbaths, the monthly New Moons, and weekly Sabbaths. This set would not be complete in this passage if Paul was listing them as annual, monthly, and annual.

At present Adventism is under intense pressure to develop a credible work-around of Colossians 2:14-17. We need to look no further than the recent work of SDA theologian, Dr. Ronald du Preez, who came up with the **Animal Sacrifices Theory**. You can study a full analysis of his work in our book, **Doctors Bacchiocchi, MacCarty, and du Preez Wreak Havoc With The Sabbath and Ellen White**, which you will find for down-loading at TruthOrFables.Com. In a nutshell, du Preez theorizes that on all the different kinds of Sabbaths, Israel offered animal sacrifices. He further theorizes that the first Christians were still sacrificing animals on these Sabbaths and that St. Paul was merely labeling this practice as obsolete “shadows.” There are several serious problems with his theory. For one thing the only place animal sacrifices could be made was at the Jewish temple in Israel. Paul was writing to a predominantly Gentile audience, and these Gentiles lived in Heathen cities that were generally a long ways from Jerusalem. It seems unlikely that Christians were continuing to sacrifice animals after Christ died on the Cross as the Ultimate Sacrifice.

HEBREWS 4 IS NOT ABOUT SABBATH-KEEPING FOR CHRISTIANS

If you use circular reasoning to assume Sabbatarianism to be true, which seems to require reading the Sabbath back into Genesis, Hebrews Chapter 4 looks like a good proof-text at first glance. However, a careful analysis of Hebrews 1-11, using

basic principles of literary interpretation, reveals that the author is using the Sabbath's cessation of labor as a symbol of the rest that the Christian finds in the Gospel. Also the writer's commentary on the events of the 7th day of Creation focuses on what God did— and not what man was supposed to do. A thoughtful analysis of this passage clearly demonstrates that the Sabbath is used here as a symbol of the rest the Gospel brings to the Christian through the Gospel's assurance of salvation as taught by the author of Hebrews.

Until some break-through research by Larry Dean, the evidence seemed formidable against the thought that St. Paul was a likely candidate for being the author of *The Book of Hebrews*. This book is written in a very high Greek style and has the qualities of Greek rhetoric at its pinnacle of excellence, according to the critics. By contrast, Paul's epistles suggest that his command of these things is only moderate. Larry Dean, together with a variety of experts in Greek culture from different disciplines evaluated St. Paul's Mars Hill discourse. Paul exhibits the highest level of these skills, as well as a masterful command of Greek mythology and history. It seems clear to these researchers that something miraculous happened, not only to Paul, but in the crowd that heard him. Experts in Greek culture and history believe that over 70,000 people had gathered to hear him. To have the astonishing, long-lasting and quick-acting effect that his speech had on the people, some analysts believe that each person heard Paul speaking in his own language. Is it possible that the Holy Spirit gave Paul his communication skills for that occasion and then allowed him to keep those skills. If so, the case for Paul being an excellent candidate for authoring the *Book of Hebrews* is strong. The concept of the Sabbath rest being found in Christ is consistent with his view of the Sabbath as an obsolete shadow that found its reality in Him.

Read this passage carefully, paying special attention to the symbolism utilized by the writer. This text has nothing to do with proof that Christians are still required to keep the Sabbath:

¹ Therefore, since the promise of entering his rest still stands, let us be careful that none of you be found to have fallen short of it. ² For we also have had the gospel preached to us, just as they did; but the message they heard was of no value to them, because those who heard did not combine it with faith. ³ Now we who have believed enter that rest, just as God has said, "So I declared on oath in my anger, 'They shall never enter my rest.'" And yet his work has been finished since the creation of the world. ⁴For somewhere he has spoken about the seventh day in these words: "And on the seventh day God rested from all his work."

⁵ And again in the passage above he says, "They shall never enter my rest." ⁶ It still remains that some will enter that rest, and those who formerly had the gospel preached to them did not go in, because of their disobedience. ⁷ Therefore God again set a certain day, calling it Today, when a long time later he spoke through David, as was said before: "Today, if you hear his voice, do not harden your hearts." ⁸ For if Joshua had given them rest, God would not have spoken later about another day. ⁹ There remains, then, a Sabbath-rest for the people of God; ¹⁰ for anyone who enters God's rest also rests from his own work, just as God did from his. ¹¹ Let us, therefore, make every effort to enter that rest, so that no one will fall by following their example of disobedience. (NIV-Bible, www.Gateway.com)

Israel never enjoyed the rest that God had intended for them because of their unbelief. By contrast, the Christian's belief in the assurance of salvation that they find in Jesus provides the rest that God intended Israel to have. This text says nothing that can be construed to support the requirement that Christians observe the ceremony of the weekly Sabbath. God's rest here is not the weekly Sabbath, which Jesus states is a day that God works on, and does not rest in (John. 5:17). These Israelites had, and entered into the weekly "shadow" Sabbath, but were unable to enter into this "sabbatismos", being God's rest.

CHAPTER ELEVEN
BARRIERS TO THE SABBATARIAN-FRIENDLY
INTERPRETATION OF THE PROPHECIES OF DANIEL

BARRIERS TO THE SABBATARIAN-FRIENDLY INTERPRETATION OF THE PROPHECIES OF DANIEL

BIBLICAL BARRIER:

THE PROPHECIES OF DANIEL 7 AND 8 DO NOT PROVE A SABBATH-CHANGING "CONSPIRACY"

As we have noted before, it has become impossible to separate Sabbatarianism from Seventh-day Adventism. Ellen White taught that Daniel 8 contains a prophecy that predicts that the Roman Catholic Church would persecute Sabbath-keepers and a whole bunch of other related conspiracy components. However, Since 1914 Adventism had been reeling from the publication of former Swedish SDA leader **Aaron Nyman** entitled ***Astounding Errors***. This 419 page book demonstrated to the point of over-kill the comical, self-contradictory impossibilities of the SDA interpretations of the major prophecies of Daniel. Aaron was not only a former Adventist, but he was a brilliantly successful businessman who had amassed a small fortune. His book shows a solid command of the facts of ancient history. After he studied his way out of Adventism he challenged Chicago Area SDA leaders to public debates about these prophecies. This tactic garnered a lot of publicity, but the debates never took place. The Conference leaders backed down in the face of his evident command of biblical and historical knowledge, and they made a wise decision not to allow him to make fools of themselves. In a stunning move he offered his personal home, valued at over \$5,000, to any Adventist who could prove that the 2,300 days began in 497 BC and that the 2,300 days began at the same time as the 70 weeks. He also challenged them to prove that the 2,300 day prophecy can be successfully utilized to make a day stand for a year to get it to 1844, which would mean they would have to disprove his interpretation that the prophetic period was 2,300 literal evening and morning sacrifices and that this period of literal days represented the number of days that Antiochus Epiphanes desecrated the temple in Jerusalem. By 1919 the delegates to the Bible conference at the General Conference headquarters in Washington DC had every possible reason to understand that their prophetess suffered from extreme historical ignorance.

Since early Christian times many biblical scholars have understood that the little horn of Daniel 7 referred to the Roman Emperor, Nero. Nero persecuted Christians for exactly 1,260 days. Down through time, biblical scholars have sometimes applied this prophecy to the persecuting activities of the papacy but without any need to link its persecuting behavior to the so-called "change" of the Sabbath as Adventists have done. Similarly, for a very long time scholars have known that the 2,300 evenings and mornings of the little horn of Daniel 8 work out to the exact number of days that Antiochus Epiphanes polluted the Jewish Temple before 161 BC. These prophecies have been so remarkable in their actual "a-day-stands-for-a-day" historical fulfillment, that higher critics of the Bible claimed they had to have been written after these events took place. Within a few years of the discovery of the Dead Sea Scrolls in 1947, the early authorship of Daniel was firmly established, refuting the skeptics by proving that the author of Daniel wrote significantly earlier than the events he foretold. It is likely that at least a number of honest-at-heart unbelievers had their faith in the Bible established by the spectacular fulfillment of these prophecies regarding Antiochus Epiphanes and Nero. Ellen White's interpretation of the 2,300 "year" and 1,260 "year" prophecies, therefore, destroys two remarkably accurate Bible prophecies and twists them into ones that are highly imaginative. If the thought has not already occurred to you, Ellen White's false use of these prophecies gives skeptics two more reasons to excuse themselves from believing in the Bible.

The entire concept of Adventism rests on the "foundation" of the 2,300 day prophecy of Daniel 8:14. If this "foundation" can be shown to be non-existent, then there is no *Investigative Judgment* that began in Heaven in 1844 and the Sabbath is not a "seal." These two key points of SDA doctrine would be false even if Sabbatarianism were to be generally true. Nor would God have called Adventists after 1844 to take the Sabbath and *Investigative Judgment* doctrines to the world to rescue them from receiving the Mark of the Beast! Without the validity of the 1844 SDA prophetic time period, the SDA concept of 1844 would be nothing more than a huge theological joke played on the Christian world by none other than Ellen G. White herself, whose theological trickery shamelessly rescued the Millerite debacle of 1844 from the jaws of defeat.

The Investigative Judgment doctrine affects, to one degree or another, almost every aspect of the Church's teachings. Robert K. Sanders points out that God does not need to have some kind of formal judgment to know who will be saved and who will not. The doctrine of soul sleep is necessitated by the Doctrine of the Investigative Judgment.

We talked about these heresies earlier. It would seem that if God threatens to destroy the very existence of anyone who might dare to challenge His authority, there is no real freedom of choice in the Universe. In the Story of the Rich Man And Lazarus, Jesus taught that after death the wicked find themselves in a less-than-ideal existence of their own creation where they enjoy the results of their own choices. If the wicked are annihilated, they have essentially been told by God, "Do things My way, or I will blast you out of existence." Orthodox Christianity has widely taught a picture of life after death that exonerates God's commitment to genuine freedom of choice. Adventists, therefore, place themselves at odds with most Protestant, Catholic, and Orthodox communities when it comes to these doctrines, and they seriously err when they try to excuse Jesus' Story of the Rich Man And Lazarus by claiming that it was merely a parable. It seems unreasonable to think that Jesus would use a "parable" that taught a serious theological error as a cheap shot to make a point that He felt He needed to make at that particular moment.

The Adventists of 1919 seemed greatly confused about these prophecies. The transcript of the *1919 Bible Conference Minutes* suggests that Wilcox and the other delegates had mistakenly applied the 1,260 days of the little horn of Daniel 7 to Antiochus and were struggling to find solid ground upon which to base the 1844 date on the 2,300 evening and morning sacrifices of the little horn of Daniel 8 and 11. It is not surprising there was considerable confusion among SDA scholars regarding the 2,300 days of the little horn of Daniel 8, since they were trying incorrectly to apply the year-for-a-day concept where there was no scriptural warrant to do so in order to arrive at the desperately needed date of 1844. We will discuss this prophecy in detail later.

DANIEL 7 EVALUATED BY THE DELEGATES TO THE 1919 BIBLE CONFERENCE

The key point for now is that the delegates to the 1919 Bible Conference believed that the little horn of Daniel 7 related to a much earlier historical event that happened over 2,000 years before 1844; that they knew that this knowledge was dangerous to the foundation of Adventism, and that they wanted to withhold this damaging information from the Church. "Watch" the delegates in this revealing passage from the *Minutes* in regard to Daniel 7:

PROF. LACEY: In the career of Antiochus Epiphanes there is a kind of a little wheel within a wheel. There are events in his life which are very like what is predicted of the little horn— extremely alike, and I do not know why we could not consider this in the same way that Ezekiel expresses it— a wheel within a wheel. Just to illustrate: The things said about the little horn of **Daniel 7** can apply to Antiochus Epiphanes in a small way. He is the 11th down the line, three were plucked up in his place [names were mentioned], he did speak great words against the Most High, he did wear out the saints of the Most High in a small way, he did change the law of the Most High; things were given into his hand for just a time, times, and a half in a literal sense, which was three and one-half years. And in a very small way Antiochus Epiphanes might have been the little horn. So, supposed you and I had been living in that day we would have thought that the prophecy met its fulfillment to us, and we should have been sustained through that hour of persecution. In a small way I think this can apply to Antiochus Epiphanes. But in verse 30 we pass on to Rome, the great anti-Christ, of which Antiochus was here the personal representative.

(Mention was made of Josephus Book 12, Chapter 5, paragraph 3, but a question interrupted.)

ELDER DANIELLS: You would not want to say that that you have just said now to a class of students, would you?

The above section is taken from the July 8, 1919 transcript as posted at the General Conference of Seventh-day Adventist archives.

The portion of the transcript from the July 3, 1919 *Bible Conference Minutes* you are about to review is one of the most important keys to understanding what and when Adventists knew about this thorny problem. Older Seventh-day Adventist readers will immediately recognize that the Church made no attempt to correct these errant teachings in the Bible text books at any educational level. It is also important to understanding the problems with the "Resting Theory" of SDA Sabbath apologist, **Bob Pickle**, who seeks to rescue Ellen White's blunder with a highly creative theory. He rationalizes that the Sabbath was not actually "changed" until resting became associated with Sunday observance, even though it took several additional centuries of Sunday observance and Sabbath-breaking to arrive at that point. According to Pickle, it matters not

that Christians “kept” Sunday and broke the Sabbath from the first century onward. Instead, the Sabbath was not really “changed” until a series of edicts were successful in requiring a civil cessation of labor on Sundays. Nor does it seem to matter that this legislated “resting” was optional under many circumstances and was purely civil in its concept– not linked to the concept of day sacredness, as in the case of the Jewish Sabbath. You will see that the delegates to the 1919 Bible Conference did not attempt to excuse Ellen White's misstatement on this basis. We have evaluated Bob Pickle's “Resting Theory” elsewhere.

Notice how the participants finally conclude that the only way Ellen White's claim can be reconciled with the facts of history is to consider her statement to be a vaguely like a type of symbolism called a **prolepsis** (the representation or assumption of a future act or development as if presently existing or accomplished– *Merriam-Webster's On-Line Dictionary*)– but only in reverse. The use of “reverse prolepsis,” which would be the presentation of a past act or development as if it existed in the past, is not a known or accepted literary device.

FROM THE 1919 BIBLE CONFERENCE MINUTES – JULY 3, 1919

Begins on manuscript page 48 and ends on page 57.

Archives stamped page 149 for beginning page. [Note that the Archives page numbering system is different from the manuscript page numbering system.]

C.P. BOLLMAN: I was asked about these things we attribute to the papacy before that date [533 AD as discussed in the previous paragraph]. I would answer that in this way. I have used the expression in the paper that the papacy at this time, emerging from its nonage or minority, proceeded to do certain things. Before that date the papacy was a boy, and at that time it became a man. And it is true that many things a boy does follow him all through his life, but he does a number of things afterward, and there comes a time when he really enters upon life. The graduating exercises are called commencement exercises, too, because that is the time when the student goes forth to engage in the activities of life.

W.W. PRESCOTT: *I think this does not meet the point because the prophecy says it is the horn that changes the law. Now if you do not get the horn up in 533 you can't say the horn changed the Sabbath before that date. It was another kingdom.*

H.A. WASHBURN: Was there a monarchical power in the church until Justinian declared the pope to be head? This eleventh horn is a kingdom just as truly as the tenth. It is a kingdom a monarchical power, and it began in 533.

W.W. PRESCOTT: *If that is the power that changed the law, we can't say the law was changed in the middle of the fourth century.*

H.A. WASHBURN: Brother Lacey told us of a woman who said she had spanked Emperor William. It was the same person, but he did not have a title. The apostasy changed God's law, and it was responsible for all the acts against the Sabbath. There came a time when it was organized under one man.

W.W. PRESCOTT: Here is what I would like to say. Hold to the text. The horn power was a kingdom. That kingdom did not rise till 533. *The prophecy says it is the horn that changes the Sabbath, the law, and I did not think we can put that back before the horn appears and say the horn did it, because the horn was not there. I would like to have that specifically met. What shall we do with that proposition that the horn power rose in 533 and changed the law? How can we say that the horn power did it in the middle of the fourth century?*

L.L. CAVINESS: We meet that same dilemma in the Spirit of Prophecy when it says the pope changed the Sabbath. Please tell me the name of the pope that made the change.

A.G. DANIELS: That use of the word pope was intended for the papacy. It was not a specific term. It was the power that did it, but before it came to that special stage marked by Justinian.

E.R. PALMER: It appears to me that if we were to tie down all of the fulfillments of the prophecies to the span of the 1260 days of continuance spoken of in the prophecy, we are involved in serious difficulty at both ends, at the beginning, before 533, and since 1793 and 1798. It seems to me that in view of the

fact that this evil principle began back in Paul's day, that it embodied all these things that were powers that were exercised later as a horn, but that they all began back there. I think we have gone astray many times in our explanation by trying to put the change arbitrarily at a date in connection with the papacy at a certain time, but really that time began its work of changing the Sabbath way back in the first century. I think this is true. I think there came a time also when that period closes, and yet much of the most mighty work of that power has been exercised and is being exercised, after the termination of the period. It seems to me that to bring that too definitely within the 1260 year period, it involves us in serious difficulty at both ends, and I think we have a good deal of phrase adjusting and work adjusting in our literature relative to the Sabbath and the papacy to make the thing consistent with what actually took place before the 1260 years and afterwards.

A.G. DANIELS: Now then the horn power represents the papacy from its earlier embryonic condition to its destruction, does it not? Now then, it is necessary to place the rise of the establishment of that horn in 533 at the time we say it became a monarchical power? That is the question to me. Is that our position? Is that a right position? Is it a necessary position? Wasn't it a horn power long before then?

E.R. PALMER: That is a serious question. If the thing was not developing, if it was not growing for much more than 1260 years, then there were certain developments that marked off the 1260 years in a definite way.

A.G. DANIELS: As a living, acting power, the beast, through various steps and at various times did various things. Now one of the things that the little horn did was to attack Jesus through His law and His Sabbath. It certainly did it before ever that decree of Justinian came. It is safe to not recognize it as a horn power before that decree was made? If that is not necessary, then where is the wrong in recognizing that fulfillment of the prophecy when it was broken up into the ten parts?

W.W. PRESCOTT: Here is another difficulty, and that is, we set the Council of Laodicea at the latest date, earlier than we set the breaking up of the empire, so that you have got that action. If we make much of the Council of Laodicea, it was before the breaking up of the empire began.

M.C. WILCOX: Shall we take up the beginning of that horn power, the assumption of the power itself, or the recognition of that assumption by the state?

W.W. PRESCOTT: You take it clear back when Constantine reached Rome, when Attila appeared against Rome. Was the pope the leading power then? Didn't he turn back Attila? Yes! Then can't we go back even to that time? What was a great step in the assumption of that power? When Constantine reached Rome and the pope appeared? That was in the early part of the fourth century. Now as Brother Palmer suggested, the 1260 years mark a special phase of that Rome power, and there it sort of comes into that prophecy under that theme but I don't see how we can shut him off back of that, because there are things that appear back there that are very vital.

H.C. LACEY: I have been face to face with this for some little time, too, and I try to adhere to our traditional view. Our book says 538. We have changed that to 533, and it continues 126 years. I believe there is a great measure of truth in that. It appears that the Sabbath was changed before that. The church turned to the observance of Sunday before 533 or 538.

A.G. DANIELLS: You said our traditional view that the papacy arose in 538. You mean that that is when it received supreme power?

H.C. LACEY: Could we say that the papacy did something in days anterior to that special time when perhaps the papacy arose in that way to which we generally refer? I have used this little incident that was referred to, about the woman spanking the emperor. An old woman went around boasting that she had spanked the emperor, because she took him upon her knee and walloped him. (C.P. BOLLMAN: She ought to have kept it up [Laughter]) It was not the emperor she spanked. It was the same person who by and by became the emperor. I find the Bible treats in this way the birth of Jesus Christ. He did not become the Christ until A. D. 27, but it speaks of Him as being born in A. D. 5. That is an exactly analogous figure. The papacy can come up in 538, and yet the apostate church was developed before, and by and by it changed the Sabbath.

Can we not have a figure of prolepsis? Some take the sign for the thing signified, as when Sister White

says the pope changed the Sabbath. She took the pope to represent that system. She didn't mean to identify a particular pope, but just as a general term. We say this is the home of the King, of the council. "The king" simply stands for the government, and the pope stands for the papacy. The apostate church changed the Sabbath. Step by step the change developed, and then the pope laid hands upon the Sunday institute and boosted it.

And so, as it stands today, the great sponsor of Sunday observance is the papacy.

W.W. PRESCOTT: Is it not true, as a fact of history, that the papacy exercised greater political power in the fourth and fifth centuries than it did under Justinian?

LACEY: Certainly.

C. M. SORENSON: We all recognize that a correct explanation includes all the facts in the case. Of course that is the only explanation that takes recognition of all the facts in the case, and that is the idea[] explanation toward which we strive.

We have been speaking about reading things into the Bible, and of course that is wrong. But there is another practice that is bad, and that is reading things into history. That is one of the evil legacies left us by A. T. Jones' leadership. His books are full of that practice, and we have consigned them to the scrap heap. They contain some facts, but the facts are biased by a preconceived notion.

Now here is another point: There is no connection between the plucking up of the three horns and the giving of the saints into his hands for a time, times, and the dividing of time. If we will keep those two lines absolutely separate, it will be better.

There was no tremendous change that took place in 533, so far as the status of the papacy is concerned. There is that question of supremacy. Do we use that understandingly? There was a time when the papacy was the supreme power in Europe— from 1100 to 1300. The papacy was not supreme in any ordinary sense of the term during the 1260 years, but he did exercise domination over God's people.

M.C. WILCOX: I have been trying to get a term that is suitable. What do you suggest?

C.M. SORENSON: The word "domination."

M.C. WILCOX: That is the word I have been using— papal domination.

C.M. SORENSON: During those two hundred years the papacy did exercise actual political supremacy over all the rest of Europe and civilization. King John, right in the climax of that period, signed over his kingdom to the pope.

W. W. PRESCOTT: Can you say, Brother Sorenson, that the papal domination began in 533?

C.M. SORENSON: There was a legal enactment by Justinian at that time. But the actual domination over God's people was tapered off at the beginning and at the end for the elect's sake. It seems to have been lessened somewhat at the beginning, but more especially at the close of that period.

W.W. PRESCOTT: I know, Brother Chairman, it was a great surprise to me after I had read our books when I actually read history and found that the papal supremacy was only from 1100 to 1300, and gradually rose to that climax, and then gradually faded out. I think we have used that term "supremacy" very carelessly. *We have heard and we have read how that in 538 the pope became supreme, but it was in that very year that he was absolutely humbled.*

C.M. SORENSON: That was one of the worst years he ever had.

W.W. PRESCOTT: And yet you read in our books and hear in our sermons that in 538 the pope became supreme. If there is any way of correcting these statements, I wish it might be done.

W.L. BIRD: The Dark Ages should be considered in the same way.

C.P. BOLLMAN: I would just like to ready the prophecy. "After this I saw in the night visions, and behold a fourth beast, dreadful and terrible, and strong exceedingly; and it had great iron teeth: it

devoured and brake in pieces, and stamped the residue with the feet of it: and it was diverse from all the beasts that were before it; and it had ten horns.”

That is a picture of 478.

“I considered the horns, and behold, there came up among them another little horn, before whom there were three of the first horns plucked up by the roots; and, behold, in this horn were eyes like the eyes of [a] man, and a mouth speaking great things.”

When did this little horn come up?—then, or two or three hundred years before? It says, “I considered the horns, and behold, there came up among them.” And the term “another” conveys to my mind that the ten horns were there when it came up. It came up “among

them.” They must have been there or it could not have come up among them, and they must have been there or it could not have been “another” one. It seems to me that we shall have to solve it along the lines suggested by Professor Lacey. I think we attribute to this power some things that were actually done before.

A.G. DANIELLS: This is very interesting and very profitable, and what has been said here shows a need of careful study, and comparison of views and teaching.

DANIEL 8 AS EVALUATED BY THE 1919 BIBLE CONFERENCE

It is impossible to find a reasonably correct start date for Ellen White's interpretation of the 2,300 evening and morning sacrifices prophecy of Daniel 8. Without a start date, how could you know what the finish date might be? The standard Christian interpretation, on the other hand, lends itself to an exact fulfillment with a known start date and a known finish date. It is pure assumption on the part of Adventist adherents to the 2,300 “day,” 1844 prophecy that these 2,300 “days” began at the same time another prophetic period began— the 70 weeks, or 490 years— which supposedly began around 457 BCE and was to reach to the appearance of Christ.

Historically, nothing important happened in 457 BCE, although something that might meet the specifications (for the command to re-build the temple at Jerusalem took place about 30 years earlier). Unfortunately, 457 BCE is critical to causing the 2,300 years to end in 1844. **Dirk Anderson** gives us the specifications of the correct interpretation of this prophecy. There are fatal problems to the entire Adventist concept of a prophecy that lasts 2,300 years rather than 2,300 days:

The 2300-day prophecy witnessed an amazing fulfillment during the terrifying reign of Antiochus. Could it be that God foresaw this terrible threat coming 400 years before it happened, and sent a message to Daniel to comfort and assure His people that He would ultimately give them the victory? Amazingly, God told the Jews precisely how long His sanctuary would be profaned: 2300 *evening* and *morning* sacrifices would be suspended while the sanctuary was profaned.

How does the Jewish Calendar Work?

The Jewish lunar year contains 354 days, or 12 lunations of the moon. In a cycle of 19 years, an intercalary month (Veadar) is introduced seven times in order to render the average year nearly correct. Leap years occur in the 3rd, 6th, 8th, 11th, 14th, 17th, and 19th years of the cycle. One day is added to the month of Adar, and a 13th month (Veadar), containing 29 days is inserted before Nisan. This adds 30 days to the year. Depending upon whether the latter year is regular, perfect, or defective, a leap year may consist of 383, 384, or 385 days. Thus, six years would be 6 multiplied by 354 days (an ordinary common year), plus four alternating months of 29 and 30 days each, plus two intercalary months of 29.

According to the Jewish calendar (see box on right), the 2300 days works out to be **six years, three months, and 18 days**. This time period began on the fifteenth day of the month Cisleu, in the year 145 of the Selucidae, in which Antiochus set up the Abomination of Desolation upon the altar of God:

"Now the five and twentieth day of the month they did sacrifice upon the idol altar, which was upon the altar of God." (1 Maccabees 1:59)

This was the beginning of a period of intense suffering for those in Israel who chose to remain faithful to God. Judas Maccabeus was outraged over the injustice done to God's sanctuary:

"Alas! Why was I born to witness the ruin of my people and the ruin of the holy city, and to sit by while it is being given up to its enemies, and the sanctuary to aliens? Her temple has come to be like a man disgraced... Behold, our sanctuary and our beauty and our glory have been laid waste, and the heathen have profaned them." (1 Maccabees 2:7, 8,12)

Maccabeus rose up and started a revolt against Antiochus. For over three years he struggled and fought against the armies of Antiochus. Finally, he was victorious over Nicanor, on the thirteenth day of the month Adar, Anno 151, and the power of Antiochus over Judea was broken.

After his victory, when Judas entered Jerusalem, he found "the sanctuary desolate." (1 Mac. 4:38) Judas immediately directed the sanctuary be rebuilt and cleansed so that it could be used again for sacred services (1 Mac. 4:41-51). The Jews commemorate the triumph of Judas with an annual feast called the Feast of Dedication (or Hanukkah). The Savior honored this feast by His presence (John 10:22).

Reckoning the 2300 Days

There are two principle methods of reckoning the 2300-day period: 1.Reckoning from the fifteenth day of the month Cisleu, in the year 145 of the Selucidae, in which Antiochus set up the abomination of desolation upon the altar (1 Maccabees 1:59), to the victory obtained over Nicanor by Judas, on the 13th day of the month Adar, Anno 151, are 2300 days. The Jews kept an annual feast on the 13th of Adar, in commemoration of the victory.

2. The period began with the defection of the people from the pure religion by the Jewish high priest Menelaus, on the 6th day of the 6th month of Anno 141. According to Josephus, Menelaus went "to Antiochus, and informed him, that they were desirous to leave the laws of their country, and the Jewish way of living according to them, and to follow the king's laws, and the Grecian way of living." (Antiquities, bk. 7, Ch. 5.1) The period ended on the twenty-fifth day of Cisleu in the year 148, when the Jews offered the daily sacrifice on the new altar of burnt offerings (1 Maccabees 4:52). This is a total of 2300 days.

Using either method results in a 2300-day period. There is also a method, not presented here, which calculate an 1150-day period.

[Editor's note. The next section will present the 1150-day period and contrast it with the 2,300 day period.]

The Sanctuary was "cleansed" by Judas Maccabeus when he purified the holy places, sanctified the courts, rebuilt the altar, renewed the vessels of the sanctuary, and put all in their proper places:

"Then Judas appointed certain men to fight against those that were in the fortress, until he had cleansed the sanctuary. So he chose priests of blameless conversation, such as had pleasure in the law: Who cleansed the sanctuary, and bare out the defiled stones into an unclean place. And when as they consulted what to do with the altar of burnt offerings, which was profaned; They thought it best to pull it down, lest it should be a reproach to them, because the heathen had defiled it: wherefore they pulled it down, And laid up the stones in the mountain of the temple in a convenient place, until there should come a prophet to shew what should be done with them. Then they took whole stones according to the law, and built a new altar according to the former; And made up the sanctuary, and the things that were within the temple, and hallowed the courts. They made also new holy vessels, and into the temple they brought the candlestick, and the altar of burnt offerings, and of incense, and the table. And upon the altar they burned incense, and the lamps that were upon the candlestick they lighted, that they might give light in the temple. Furthermore they set the loaves upon the table, and spread out the veils, and finished all the works which they had begun to make." (1 Maccabees 4:41-51)

Thus we can see a stunning fulfillment of prophecy as Judas Maccabeus cleansed and vindicated the sanctuary of God at the end of a 2300-day period of desolation.

See <http://www.amazingfiction.org/2300.shtml>

The 2,300 day And 1,150 day Calculations Clarified

David Guzik's *Commentaries on the Bible* clarifies both methods of applying this prophecy to Antiochus' persecution of the Jews and the defilement of the temple:

b. How long will the vision be? Daniel didn't ask this question; he heard the holy ones speaking together and one asked the question. They wanted to know how long the sacrifices would be suspended and how long the sanctuary would be desecrated.

c. For two thousand three hundred days: Literally, Daniel heard a holy one say "two thousand three hundred mornings and evenings." Bible students debate if this means 2,300 days or 1,150 days. 2,300 days is almost seven years.

i. Either understanding is possible, but it is more likely that this means 2,300 days. The date when the temple was cleansed is well established as December 25, 165 BC. If we count back 2,300 days from then, we come to the year when Antiochus Epiphanes began his persecution in earnest (171 BC).

ii. However, if we take it to mean 1,150 days it can refer to the time the temple was actually desecrated. Philip Newell makes this case: "For a duration of time during which 2300 daily sacrifices would ordinarily have been offered, one at evening and one in the morning, as specified in Exodus 29:38-43. Since there are two of these daily, the actual time period involved is 1150 days, or slightly over three years. This, in fact, was the time of the Maccabean tribulation, 168-165 BC, at the end of which the sanctuary was 'cleansed' by Judas Maccabeus in his restoration of the evening and morning sacrifices (2 Maccabees 10:1-5)."

iii. This passage has been a favorite springboard for elaborate and fanciful prophetic interpretations. A popular and tragic interpretation of this passage took one year for every day, and William Miller used 2,300 "year-days" to calculate that Jesus would return in 1844 (2,300 years after Cyrus issued the decree to rebuild the temple). His movement ended up giving birth to the Seventh-Day Adventists, Jehovah's Witnesses, and several other movements.

iv. We can know that Miller and other "year-day" theories are wrong because this passage was fulfilled before the time of Jesus. Jesus recognized that the temple was properly cleansed and rededicated when He attended the Feast of Lights, commemorating the cleansing and re-dedication of the temple after the desecration brought by Antiochus Epiphanes (John 10:22).

See David Guzik's Commentary at:

<http://www.studylight.org/com/guz/view.cgi?book=da&chapter=008>

Because Seventh-day Adventists have a do-or-die need to stretch this literal prophecy to 2,300 literal years so it will reach to 1844, they have a particular love for the King James Version of the Bible, which mistranslates several words in Daniel 8:14 "in their favor." "Days" here is translated from two words— H6153, *ereb*, meaning dusk/evening, and H1242, *boqer*, meaning morning. "Days" is *always* translated from the Hebrew, H3117 "yom"— and never "*ereb-boqer*". The KJV is in error, and the SDA embraces this error in order to proffer their "truth."

Dirk Anderson further explains, citing Dr. Russell Earl Kelly, on his website: <http://www.nonsda.org/study6.shtml>

Are the 2300 days *really* 2300 years?

Dr. Russell Earl Kelly explains:

"The odd Hebrew word for days in Daniel 8:14 is not the usual Hebrew word, *yom*, for day. Instead, it is the Hebrew words, '*ereb-boqer*, meaning "evenings-mornings" which are correctly translated in Daniel 8:26 (even in the KJV). When comparing the KJV, NASU, NIV, and RSV, only the King James Version incorrectly reads "days." It is important to know that '*ereb* (evening) and *boqer* (morning) occur 48 times in the KJV as "evening and morning" and **only once** as "days" — in Daniel 8:14!"

"Since the common Hebrew word for "day," *yom*, does not appear in 8:14, this is probably a fundamental flaw in SDA calculations. Why? Because when the sanctuary is being discussed, the couplet, '*ereb-boqer* refers to the two daily sacrifices of the evening and the morning and the total count of days could very easily be calculated as half of 2300, or 1150 actual days." (Footnote #11.)

Anderson cited Kelly's work as follows:

<http://www.tithing-russkelly.com/sda/id18.html>

The context of this prophecy is Daniel's vision of the Prince and his army taking away the daily sacrifice and defiling the sanctuary. The question is then asked, "How long will it take for the vision to be fulfilled—the vision concerning the daily sacrifice, the rebellion that causes desolation, and the surrender of the sanctuary and of the host that will be trampled underfoot?"

Dan 8:14 (KJV) - And he said unto me, Unto two thousand and three hundred days: then shall the sanctuary be cleansed.

Seeing this is about the daily evening and morning sacrifices the text should read; 2300 morning and evening sacrifices. There was one sacrifice in the evening and one in the morning, thus two sacrifices a day. Therefore we have 1,150 days of sacrifices or a little under 3 ½ years.

Modern translations have corrected the KJV mistranslation such as the NIV, NASV, and NRSV.

Dan 8:14 (NRSV) And he answered him, "For two thousand three hundred evenings and mornings; then the sanctuary shall be restored to its rightful state."

The third KJV word correction; Cleansed H6663, *tsâdaq*. - The late **Dr. Raymond Cottrell**, who is considered to be the greatest of all Seventh-day Adventist theologians, observes in his essay, "*The Sanctuary Doctrine Asset or Liability?*" that the Hebrew word, *nitsdaq*, never means "cleansed" as the KJV translates it. *Nitsdaq* is the passive form of the verb, *tsadaql*, "to be right," and means "to set right," or as the NRSV renders it, "to be restored to its rightful state." "Had Daniel meant "cleansed" he would have used the word *taher*, which does mean "cleansed" and always refers to ritual cleansing in contrast to *tsadaq*, which always connotes moral rightness."

The sanctuary was made right or justified not by the Day of Atonement animal sacrifices for the sins of Israel, but by Antiochus' departure from the temple in Jerusalem and the subsequent cleansing ceremonies conducted by the Jews after he left which restored the temple to its right and holy uses.

The pioneers of Adventism as well as the modern Adventists' interpretation of Daniel 8:14 is exegetically incorrect. The Sanctuary to be "justified" (cleansed in the KJV) is contextually located in the earthly Jerusalem, not in Heaven. There is nothing in the text to suggest a cleansing of the heavenly sanctuary in 1844 taught by Ellen G. White.

As we pointed out elsewhere, there are two places in the Old Testament, Numbers 14:33-35 and Ezekiel 4:5-6, where God used the day-for-a-year in a prophecy and it was God who made it clear when it was to be used. Adventists should have taken note of this principle.

A very complete discussion of the problems of the Adventist interpretation of the little horn of Daniel 8 and 11 can be found at Dirk Anderson's website, **AmazingFiction.Org**. There is no better way to show our readers just how much SDA leaders had learned about the problems with their prophetic interpretations by 1919 than to provide you with an extensive portion of the **1919 Bible Conference Minutes** from July 8, 1919. Keep in mind that **you will see the participants acknowledge the serious problems of the single-most important prophecy to Adventism, observe them discuss how to hide the facts from SDA students, and watch them desperately try to justify a "wheel within a wheel" strategy of biblical symbolism to establish the legitimacy of the 1844 cleansing of the sanctuary in Heaven, and therefore prop-up their prophetess, Ellen G. White.**

We want you to see for yourselves the great difficulties these top SDA leaders were having with the leap from the literal to the symbolic in Chapter 11, which is widely accepted to be a continuation of the explanation of the little horn of Daniel 8. To do this, we are providing an extensive portion of the **1919 Bible Conference Minutes** for you to study. We have taken the liberty to make obvious corrections to the stenographer's type-written manuscript, which is rendered at the General Conference Archives as scans of the original pages as they came out of the stenographer's typewriter almost 100 years ago. Note especially the portions of text we have highlighted in red. Additionally please observe that there are editorial comments inserted within the transcript to show scholarly opinion that tends to support or contradict the various interpretations of these prophecies as proposed by the participants. These commentaries are in green so they can easily be distinguished from the transcript's text.

Again, keep in mind that Seventh-day Adventists traditionally have viewed the little horns of Daniel 7 and Daniel 8 and 11 as the same power. As we pointed out earlier, these delegates seem unaware that the 1,260 days of the little horn of Daniel 7 fit the exact number of days that Nero persecuted the Christians in the Roman Empire, and they mistakenly acknowledged the probability that the prophecy applied, initially, to Antiochus Epiphanes rather than to Nero. This misunderstanding, however, provides strong evidence that these delegates knew that one way of calculating the time that Antiochus desecrated the temple came to 3.5 years. In this passage they are discussing the little horn of Daniel 8 by discussing the prophecies of Daniel 11, which are widely viewed as relating to the little horn of Daniel 8, and widely acknowledged to apply in a spectacular way to Antiochus Epiphanes:

From the July 8, 1919 Transcript:

http://www.adventistarchives.org/doc_info.asp?DocID=119300

W. E. HOWELL: Not only has God showed the great mountain peaks of prophecy, but In Daniel 11, especially the first part, he has descended to-the minutest detail of the privacies of personal life, and these are thus shown to be under his supervision just as truly as the rise and fall of Empires. The modern critics are saying that the book must have been written after the days of Antiochus Epiphanes, because the statements are as accurate as a history written in his time. But we believe it was written 200 years before the days of Antiochus Epiphanes and that God could look down and see that man's whole career. Let me read the 25th Verse:

He shall stir up his power and his courage against the king of the south with a great army, and the king of the south shall be stirred up to battle with a very great and mighty army; but he shall not stand: for they shall forecast devices against him.

Is this Antiochus Epiphanes, and the two armies are the armies of these two men.

H. C. LACEY: (reading his paraphrase): Daniel 11:25: "And he (Antiochus Epiphanes) shall stir up (BC 171) his power and his courage against the king of the south (Ptolemy Philopater) with a great army ("a great multitude"); and the king of the south (Ptolemy) stirred up with a very great and mighty army ("very many and exceedingly strong horses") and the king of the south ("Ptolemy Philopater) shall not stand ("was afraid and fled"): for they shall forecast devices him (Eula, his minister, Maroon, a premier, the Alexandria ins). 36: Yea, they that feed of the portion of his (Ptolemy's) Meat (his ministers, Eula, Maroon, etc.) shall destroy (by corrupting and betraying) him (Ptolemy Philopater), and his (Ptolemy's) army shall overflow and many shall fall down slain."

A.G. DANIELLS: What does it mean by overflowing?

H.C. LACEY: They dispersed and were defeated. In the old view Rome shall overflow, and many shall fall down slain.

A.G. DANIELLS: Does overflow mean to disperse and to run out?

H. C. LACEY: Exactly the same criticism may be applied to both views. I suppose we could turn this thing around and make it apply to Rome. . . . is the language in I Maccabees 1:16, 16, 18, 19. (Reads)

You see that the language both in the bible and the apocryphal book is practically identical.

²⁷ "And both these kings' hearts shall be do mischief, and they shall speak lies at one table; but it shall not prosper; for yet the end shall be at the time appointed."

Upon his arrival at Memphis, Antiochus Epiphanes and Ptolemy Philopater frequently ate and conversed together "at one table, Antiochus pretending he would favor the cause of Ptolemy as against the usurpation of his brother, Physon. This Antiochus pretends to espouse the cause of this older nephew against his brother, Ptolemy, laying the blame of the whole campaign upon Eulasus, his majesty who betrayed him, and professing great obligations to his uncle Antiochus. But these protestations of friendship were "lies" on his part. As soon as Antiochus had withdrawn, the two brothers, Ptolemy and Physon, made peace through the mediation of their sister, Cleopatra, and agreed to reign conjointly in Egypt. But even this did not prosper. The two monarchs came to blows at the time appointed.

Let us read into the Scripture the names of these kings: “And both these kings” hearts (Antiochus Epiphanes and Ptolemy Philopater) shall be to do mischief (each hoping to circumvent the other), and they shall speak lies at one table (in apparent friendliness), but it (this patched up peace between them) shall not prosper: for yet the end shall be at the time appointed.”

³⁸: Then shall he return into his own land with great riches; and his heart shall be against the holy covenant; and he shall do exploits, and return to his own land.” That is the prophecy.

Antiochus, hoping that the two Egyptian brothers would ruin each other in civil war, returned to Syria. He took with him immense treasures from the captured towns of Egypt. The verse says, “He shall return . . . with great riches.” History says he took immense spoils from the captured towns of Egypt. In 1 Maccabees 1:19-20 it is stated, “Thus they got the strong cities in the land of Egypt, and he took the spoils thereof.” That is the history.

Notice it says “his heart shall be against the holy covenant.” The next verse—(1 Maccabees 1:20) “And after that Antiochus had smitten Egypt, he return again in the hundred forty and third year (312 of the --- era, which is BC 169), and went up against Israel and Jerusalem with a great multitude, and took away the golden altar, and the candlestick of light, and all the vessels thereof, and the table of the showbread, and the pouring vessels, and the vials, and the censers of gold, and the veil, and the crowns, and the golden ornaments that were before the temple, all which he pulled off. He took also the silver and the gold, and the previous vessels; also he took the hidden treasures which he found. And when he had taken all away, he went into his own land, having made a great massacre, and spoken very proudly.

That is the history. The prophecy reads thus: ‘and his heart shall be against the holy covenant.’ There is more to that than this, too,—“his heart shall be against it.” When he was in Egypt a false report had been circulated of his death. Thereupon Jason, the ex-high priest—(Antiochus Epiphanes had done this) Thereupon Jason, the ex-high priest, returned to Jerusalem, drove his brother, Wenelaus, out of office, and cruelly ill-treated the citizens. Antiochus, thinking the whole nation had revolted, and hearing that they had made great rejoicing at the report of his death, besieged Jerusalem with a great army, took the city by storm, and vented his anger upon the helpless Jews. He slew 40,000 of them, and sold 40,000 more, polluted the temple, offered swine’s flesh on the altar of God, restored Wenelaus to the priesthood, and made Philip, a barbarian, governor of Judea. “He shall do exploits,” and then “return to his own land,” just as these events here are brought forth.

PROF. ANDERSON: What verse in the chapter do you allude to when you speak of the pollution of the temple, as you read in the history?

PROF. LACEY: In the 11th chapter, when we get down to verse 30, there is the point. All these modern scholars, I believe—I don’t like to say “all,” but the majority of scholars, you will find, as I have stated, claim indisputably the events occur under Antiochus Epiphanes to Verse 30; but after Verse 30 it is a little hazy, and you cannot group them all around Antiochus Epiphanes. Modern scholars have attempted to do it. Verse 30 speaks of the defiling of the temple. But we will come to that a little later on. In the career of Antiochus Epiphanes there is a kind of a little wheel within a wheel. There are events in his life which are very like what is predicted of the little horn—extremely alike, and I did not know why we could not consider this in the same way that Ezekiel expresses it—a wheel within a wheel. Just to illustrate: The things said about the little horn of **Daniel 7** can apply to Antiochus Epiphanes in a small way. He is the eleventh down the line, three were plucked up in his place (names were mentioned), he did speak great words against the Most High, he did wear out the saints of the Most High in a small way, he did change the Law of the Most High; **things were given into his hand for just a time, times, and a half in a literal sense, which was three and one-half years.** And in a very small way Antiochus Epiphanes might have been the little horn. So, suppose you and I had been living in that day we would have thought that that prophecy met its fulfillment to us, and we should have been sustained through that hour of persecution. In a small way I think this can apply to Antiochus Epiphanes. But in verse 30 we pass on to Rome, the great anti-Christ, of which Antiochus was here the personal representative.

(Mention was made of Josephus Book 12, Chapter 5, paragraph 3, but a question interrupted.)

ELDER DANIELLS: You would not want to say that that you have just said now to a class of students, would you?

PROF. LACEY: I do not think that I would ever say it.

ELDER DANIELLS: I hope you won't, because the next thing you know some of our boys will be out over the country saying that that is the little horn.

VOICE: They have said it already.

PROF. LACEY: I have never said it. But I do not see why you object if we take this prophecy as a wheel within a wheel.

ELDER DANIELLS – When we come to the discussion, that will come in.

PROF. LACEY: Pass on to verse 29: “At the time appointed he shall return and come toward the south; but it shall not be as the former, or as the latter.”

At the time appointed Antiochus, perceiving that his cunningly planned scheme failed—that is, to get these two loggerheads fighting against each other—and seeing that Ptolemy and his brother, Eusalus, had made up and were prepared to resent [resist] his aggressions, he was so offended that he immediately made war and laid siege first to the two brothers of Alexandria. But this expedition was not as his former one, for the reasons given in the next verse.

Let us re-read this verse with the names opposite: “At the time appointed.” Two years later, this is where he comes to his end,—both of the kings come to an end, and Rome arises. “At the time appointed (BC 168) he (Antiochus Epiphanes) shall return and come toward the South (Egypt), and it (the Egyptian campaign) shall not be as the former (campaign—the Egyptian campaign of verse 25), or as the latter (the Jewish campaign of verse 28). Notice why—

Verse 30: For the ships of Chittim shall come against him”—the ships of Chittim apply to the Romans, in Italy, the term being applicable to that whole coastal region—they “shall come against him; therefore he shall be grieved, and return, and have indignation against the holy covenant; so shall he do:”—and the verse proceeds.

Now we would like to know just what did occur just at that junction. “The ships of Chittim shall come against him (Antiochus Epiphanes).” While pressing the siege of Alexandria a Roman embassy reached him and demanded that he desist instantly from his war with Ptolemy and Eulasus. Marcus Popillius Lenas, the head of the embassy, was the old friend of Antiochus, but he drew a circle in the sand around the king, and peremptorily demanded in the name of the Senate and Roman people that he give an immediate answer to the stipulations. As the report of the Battle of Pydna, 168 BC, had just been carried to Antiochus, he assented at once to the request of Popillius, and returned from Alexandria. So we see this campaign was not like the other two. He was pressing the siege, but he was demanded to withdraw, and he obeyed.

This is where Rome comes in contact with Antiochus in the same way that Greece and Persia came together. In that verse Rome and Greece come together. Just a moment longer we follow Antiochus, for it says, “he shall be grieved and return.” Does that say to his own land? No. Just “he shall be grieved and return. Now Polybius uses almost the exact language; “He led back his forces into Syria, grieved and groaning, but thinking it expedient to yield to demands for the present.” --- That is the history, it is not the prophecy – “grieved and groaning, but thinking it expedient to yield to demands for the present.”

ELDER DANIELS: Where historians use practically the same thing that the prophet used, you consider that some weight of evidence, do you, that the history meets the prophecy?

PROF. LACEY: O yes, in a case like this. Not just an isolated reference.

The next expression: “and have indignation against the holy covenant: so shall he do.” On his way back this Antiochus further vented his spite and his ill temper upon the unfortunate Jews, dispatching Apolloneus with 30,000 men to Jerusalem, who slew great multitudes, plundered the city, set fire to it in various places, pulled down houses and walls, slew those who attended the temple, defiled again the Holy Place so that the whole service was discontinued. The city was forsaken of the Jews and strangers only remained in it. On his arrival at Antioch he published a decree obliging all upon pain of death to conform to the religion of the Greeks. So the Jewish laws were abrogated, and heathen worship was set up in its stead, and the Temple

itself was consecrated to Jupiter Olympius.

QUESTION: What was the date of that?

ANSWER: BC 158

PROF. LACEY: “They set up the abomination of desolation upon the altar. They did sacrifice upon the idol altar, which was upon the altar of God.” 1 Mac. 1:54, 59

You see that they placed the abomination of desolation in the Holy Place. **The very language of the Bible, “the abomination of desolation,” is placed in the temple; and this is history. I do not see why you object to taking this in a small way as referring to Antiochus Epiphanes,—as a wheel within a wheel view of this prophecy. Living in those times we would have thought that the prophecy met its fulfillment, we get a present message from it;** as we read any chapter and make other slight allusion to those days and how it applies today. Sister White herself recognized the double application method.

“And he (Antiochus) had intelligence with them that forsook the holy covenant.” That is, Antiochus had intelligence with those who forsook the holy covenant, for there were many Jews who complied with his request and became converts to heathenism.

W. C. WILCOX: The Revised Version says “Regard.”

Verse 31: “And arms shall stand on his part, and they shall pollute the sanctuary of strength, and shall take away the daily sacrifice, and they shall place the abomination that maketh desolate.”

Here I do not see why we cannot take the word which some of you prefer – “Out of him yet shall stand.” Exactly the same word is used as in Daniel 8:9, when you come down to the Greek power, and out of the four horns, out of one of them a little horn waxed exceeding great. That “out of one of them” is the same word, and when we explain that we say that that little horn is Rome, and it came out of Greece—

Not racially and ethically, but it was incorporated and rose a universal power. So here we have the same point – Out of him, or out of this power, shall come arms; another view of Rome. There is clearly strength and consistency in this view. We have not once doubled back on our track. We have made a steady march down. It is uninteresting history, but the Lord has given us these details, and they carry us right on down, so that the people in those days living as they were in that terrible time of persecution might have help, and now we come down to the latter part, which applies more essentially to us. Rome arises.

QUESTION: Did the people back there know anything at all about the book of Daniel—wasn't it a sealed book?

PROF. LACEY: I do not know that it is just right to think that the sealing meant that they were to know nothing about the book of Daniel. They must have understood something about it. When it said that the goat was Greece, they must have understood that. When Alexander came to Jerusalem the high priest went out and pointed out the prophecy of Daniel to Alexander, and said, You are the horn of the goat.

PROF. SORENSON: Mentioned the text, “Whoso readeth let him understand.”

PROF. LACEY (CONTINUING STUDY) - Out of them arms shall stand up.” Arms for this power which followed Rome shall stand up or shall arise.

W. C. WILCOX: Refers to a translation which says, “After him shall arms stand up.”

PROF. LACEY: Many have repudiated the translation, but good scholars have accepted it.

NOTE: *(Elder Daniells requests that there be an uninterrupted continuation or presentation of the study.)*

PROF. LACEY: Out of him—meaning emerging from that power, arising out of Greece, represented first by Antiochus, from him “arms” – a wonderful symbol of the Roman Empire. He included both the king of the north and the king of the south, and so he is not called the king of the north—it is “arms.” The north and the south were in arms. It is Rome Pagan and Papal in this chapter, and the duality is suggested by that term “arms.” On the Roman standard, as I pointed out, two arms or extended hands were printed—a striking symbol of Rome. By a natural transition the thought of the prophet passes from this Seleucidaen

king to that of the Romans, who came into prominence in the very year brought to view in the previous verse—BC 168.

Now these arms, this power, shall pollute the sanctuary of strength, and this has a double aspect. Pagan Rome, Imperial Rome, polluted the earthy sanctuary of strength, and that section of this power represented by “arms,” or Papal or ecclesiastical Rome, polluted the heavenly sanctuary of strength; the former in the year A. D. 70, and the latter, if we want to fix a day, in the year 503. That is the date accepted as we understand for the taking away of the daily mediation the sanctuary. Anticipate that just as soon as Rome is struck in the line of prophecy, then the commentaries which are presented by the same authorities on Daniel 8 and 9, emphasis should be laid on the warfare raised by this power on the sanctuary of God in its double aspect.

“And they shall place the abomination of desolation.”

There the Pagan element gradually disappears, and they place the abomination that maketh desolate – when Rome, or the Papacy, rather, was established in the year 533 to 538, by the decree of Justinian.

May I state at this juncture that the matter---- is perfectly authentic. The matter was raised the first day as a question, and I did not like to say anything because I wanted to look it up. I had a copy of it, but you have to read 35 or 36 pages more beyond the place where the letter of Justinian to the Pope is mentioned; letter to---- Bishop of Constantinople.

And so the year 533, this is an established date. We are brought down to that. Let us pass rapidly down over the following verses:

Verse 32: “And such as do wickedly against the covenant shall be corrupted by flatteries. (The Papacy would win over those apostate Christians who proved disloyal to the covenant. We have shown that this is correctly Papal Rome.) But the people that do know their God shall be strong, and do exploits.” Here the saints of God are brought to view; the faithful saints of God living during the Dark Ages, who maintained the faith of Christ,—the Waldenses, Albigennes, Huguenots, etc. And so this prophecy is fulfilled.

Editor's note: This text does not appear to have anything in it that suggests that its meaning should be applied to the power of Rome hundreds of years later. The vast majority of biblical scholars apply it to Antiochus. *Gill's Commentary*, for example, says this about verse 32:

And such as do wickedly against the covenant shall be corrupted by flatteries,.... That forsook the law of God, the book of the covenant, and did things contrary to it; and particularly violated the covenant of circumcision, drawing on the foreskin, and becoming uncircumcised; as well as rejected other ordinances of religious worship the Jews by covenant were obliged to observe: these apostates Antiochus corrupted by good words and fair speeches, by gifts and presents; and they became his tools, to do his pleasure, and were his instruments to seduce the Jews to renounce their religion, and give in to his idolatry; such as Jason, Menelaus, and others; in the Apocrypha:

"Now when the kingdom was established before Antiochus, he thought to reign over Egypt that he might have the dominion of two realms." (1 Maccabees 1:16)

"Now such was the height of Greek fashions, and increase of heathenish manners, through the exceeding profaneness of Jason, that ungodly wretch, and no high priest;" (2 Maccabees 4:13)

"Yet was he not content with this, but presumed to go into the most holy temple of all the world; Menelaus, that traitor to the laws, and to his own country, being his guide:" (2 Maccabees 5:15)

"But they that had the charge of that wicked feast, for the old acquaintance they had with the man, taking him aside, besought him to bring flesh of his own provision, such as was lawful for him to use, and make as if he did eat of the flesh taken from the sacrifice commanded by the king;" (2 Maccabees 6:21) but the people that do know their God shall be strong and do exploits; such who knew the Lord God of Israel to be the true God, and owned and acknowledged him as such; and not only professed him, but served and worshiped him, having a spiritual knowledge of him, and communion with him; and therefore could not be drawn off from him and his worship by flatteries or frowns, by promises or menaces: these were strong in the Lord, and in the power of his might; they held fast their religion,

and the profession of it, and were proof against all allurements or threatenings, and endured racks and tortures, all sorts of punishment, and death in every shape, with the greatest constancy and courage; such as Eleazar, the mother and her seven sons, and others; as well as others did many valiant actions in the defense of themselves and country, as Matthias, Judas Maccabeus, and his brethren; to which heroic actions the apostle refers in Hebrews 11:34, so Josephus (i) says, "that many of the Jews indeed, some willingly, and others through fear of punishment, obeyed the king's commands; but the more approved, and those of generous minds, had a greater regard to the customs of their country than to the punishment threatened to the disobedient; and for this being continually harassed, and enduring grievous punishments, died; some were scourged, and their bodies mutilated, and being yet alive and breathing, were crucified; women and their children, whom they crucified, were by the king's orders strangled, and hanged about the necks of their parents that were crucified;"

PROF. LACEY: Verse 33: Those "which understand among the people shall instruct many." This refers to the teaching of the various reformers—Wycliffe, Huss, Jerome, Luther, etc. And those "that understand among the people shall instruct many (as against the Papacy), and yet they (the saints of God) shall fall by the sword, and by flame, by captivity, and by spoil, days. It does not say "time, times, and the dividing of time," but "days," which includes that. It may refer to that entire period of persecution suffered by the people of God, the 1,260 years, when millions were martyred, but it is also a general statement, referring to the people of God, the saints of God.

Editor's Note: These prophecies still appear to apply to the events surrounding the Jewish persecution by Antiochus. *Gill's Commentary* for Daniel 11:33 says this:

And they that understand among the people shall instruct many,... Such as had a better understanding of divine things than others, had more light and knowledge in the sacred Scriptures, in the law of God, and in his mind and will, and were capable of teaching others; and such as these the Lord raises up among his people in the worst of times, in the times of the greatest apostasy and declension; and these are enabled to perform their duty, to instruct the people in theirs, teach them what they should do, and how they should behave; exhort them to retain the doctrines and ordinances of their holy religion, and not embrace the doctrines and inventions of men, will worship, superstition, and idolatry; and so they instructed the ignorant, strengthened the weak, and established the wavering; such were Mattathias the priest of Modin, and Eleazar, one of the chief scribes, in the Apocrypha: "In those days arose Mattathias the son of John, the son of Simeon, a priest of the sons of Joarib, from Jerusalem, and dwelt in Modin." (1 Maccabees 2:1) "Eleazar, one of the principal scribes, an aged man, and of a well favoured countenance, was constrained to open his mouth, and to eat swine's flesh." (2 Maccabees 6:18)

Auk applies this to the times of the apostles, who he thinks are here meant; so Sir Isaac Newton:

yet they shall fall by the sword; by the sword of Antiochus and his soldiers; as multitudes of the Jews did, even both the instructors and the instructed, who would not comply with his orders: and by flame; some were burnt alive in caves, where they fled for shelter; and others as the mother and her seven sons, were cast into heated cauldrons of brass; in the Apocrypha:

"And others, that had run together into caves nearby, to keep the Sabbath day secretly, being discovered by Philip, were all burnt together, because they made a conscience to help themselves for the honour of the most sacred day." (2 Maccabees 6:11)

"3 Then the king, being in a rage, commanded pans and cauldrons to be made hot: 4 Which forthwith being heated, he commanded to cut out the tongue of him that spake first, and to cut off the utmost parts of his body, the rest of his brethren and his mother looking on. 5 Now when he was thus maimed in all his members, he commanded him being yet alive to be brought to the fire, and to be fried in the pan: and as the vapour of the pan was for a good space dispersed, they exhorted one another with the mother to die manfully, saying thus," (2 Maccabees 7) by captivity; so it is expressly said of Antiochus, that he carried captive women and children and at another time ordered the women and children to be sold for slaves, in the Apocrypha:

"Insomuch that the inhabitants of Jerusalem fled because of them: whereupon the city was made an habitation of strangers, and became strange to those that were born in her; and her own children left her." (1 Maccabees 1:38)

"He sent also that detestable ringleader Apollonius with an army of two and twenty thousand, commanding him to slay all those that were in their best age, and to sell the women and the younger sort:" (2 Maccabees 5:24)

and by spoil many days; being plundered of their substance, their houses rifled, and their goods carried away; and this distress lasted "days", a short time only; Josephus (k) reckons it at three years and a half. All this Cocceius interprets of the persecutions of the Christians by the Romans; and likewise Sir Isaac Newton.

(k) De Bello Jud. l. 1. c. 1. sect. 7.

PROF. LACEY – CONTINUED:

"The time of the end." The time of the end, according to the book of Daniel is 1844. Let us read Daniel 8:13, 14, 17-19. I do not say it could not be 1798 just as well.

"Then I heard one saint speaking, and another saint said under the certain saint which spake, 'How long shall the vision concerning the daily sacrifice, and the transgression of desolation, to give both the sanctuary and the host to be trodden under foot? And he said unto me, Unto two thousand and three hundred days; then shall the sanctuary be cleaned.'"

Now the time brought to view here is 1844.

Vs: 17: "So he came near where I stood: and when he came, I was afraid, and fell upon my face: but he said unto me, "understand, O son of man: for at the time of the end shall be the vision."

The Revised Version says: "The vision belongeth to the time of the end."

What is the great objective of the vision of Daniel 8 and 9? 1844. It belongs to the time of the end. Then the time of the end (according to this new application) is 1844.

Vs. 19: "And he said, Behold, I will make thee know what shall be in the last end of the indignation: for at the time appointed the end shall be." Revised Version reads: "It belongeth to the appointed time of the end." By this then before we come to the 11th chapter the time of the end is referred to as 1844.

Vs. 35: (R.V.) "Because it was yet for the time appointed."

The true indication here is that on this side of 1798 there may be a revival of persecution—to that time, and into it.

Editor's Note: Although it is difficult to categorically say that there can be no possible symbolic prolepsis into the far-off future implied in this prophecy, it applies extremely well, again, to the fate of Antiochus. *Gill's Exposition* comments on Verse 17 as follows:

Even to the time of the end; because it is yet for a time appointed; these distresses, calamities, and persecutions, would have an end, and the time for it was appointed of God; as yet it was not come, but quickly would, and then an end would be put to the third or Grecian monarchy; a hint of the Roman power over that being given, Daniel 11:30, hence we have no further account of Antiochus or his sons. Very remarkable are the words of Aemilius Sara (m), "the Assyrians first were possessors of monarchy; then the Medes; afterwards the Persians; then the Macedonians; from that time the kings, Philip and Antiochus, who sprung from the Macedonians, being conquered, not long after Carthage was subdued, the supreme power of empire came to the Roman people;" of whom, under one character or another, the following part of the prophecy is chiefly to be understood. So another historian says (n), Antiochus being drove out of Asia, the Romans first set footing there; and another (o) observes, that Antiochus being defeated by L. Cornelius Scipio, he took the name of Asiaticus, because he had conquered Asia; as his brother was called Africanus, from his subduing Africa: wherefore Asia and Africa being now in the hands of the Romans, the supreme power might well be said to be with them; and therefore, henceforward, are only spoken of, and particularly the Roman Antichrist.

(m) De annis populi Romani apud Velleii Paterculi Hist. Roman. l. 1. c. 6. (n) "Festi Breviarium, prope initium". (o) Eutropii Hist. Rom. l. 4. So Plutarch. in Vita Scipionis Africani. (mi).

36: (eleventh chap.) “And the king shall do according to his will.” We must insist that the Hebrew rendering the word “king” is “the king.” Any other rendering of it is a twisting of the word.—“The King” was the king represented by the arms of Rome, as it was just assuming its papal form. Pagan Rome is passing away.—“and the king shall do according to his will.” And in the verses which follow we have an exposition of the character of the papal system.—“shall do according to his will; and he shall exalt himself, and magnify himself above every god. How has he done this? In Rome the Pope sits with his foot upon the altar in St. Peter’s, upon which the Host is elevated. The Host they conceive to be Christ recreated. He is placed upon the altar and the Pope sits with his feet upon that altar.

“And shall magnify himself above every God.” There has been no heathen god honored as the Pope of Rome has been honored. And it could include the very God of heaven, too. He has magnified himself against God the Father, God the Son, and God the Holy Ghost, by taking away the continual mediation and calling attention to himself instead of to Christ, claiming he (the pope) was the vice-regent of God. The prophecy would far more fittingly apply to him than to the French nation.

Editor's note: These words may apply to the coming anti-Christ, and even the papacy. Keil and Delitzsch' *Biblical Commentary on the Old Testament* comments on Daniel 11:36 says:

This exaltation of the king is here introduced by the formula **רצנו ועשה**, which expresses the self-will and the irresistible might of his proceeding; cf. Daniel 3:16 and Daniel 8:4 - "a feature common to Antiochus and Antichrist" (Klief.). He shall raise himself above every god, not merely "subjectively in his lofty imagination" (Hitzig), but also by his actions. **כלל**, every god, not merely the God of Israel, but also the gods of the heathen. This does not agree with Antiochus. The **σθεα φρονει ν υ περιφανω ζ** which is said of him, 2 Macc. 9:12, is not an exalting of himself above every god. "Antiochus was not an α θεος; he even wished to render the worship of Zeus universal; and that he once spoiled the temple does not imply his raising himself above every god" (Klief). Of Antiochus much rather, as is said by Livy (41:20), in duabus tamen magnis honestisque rebus fere regius erat animus, in urbium donis et deorum cultu. On the contrary, these words before us are expressly referred to Antichrist, 2 Thessalonians 2:4.

Yet further, in his arrogance he shall speak **נפלות**, wonderful, i.e., impious and astonishing things, against the God of gods, i.e., the true God. This clause expounds and strengthens the **מלרברבן** (speaking great things), which is said of the enemy at the time of the end, Daniel 7:8, Daniel 7:11, Daniel 7:20. In this he will prosper, but only till the anger of God against His people

(**עם** as Daniel 8:19) shall be accomplished. Regarding **כלה** see at Daniel 9:27. This anger of God is irrevocably determined (**נרצה**), that His people may be wholly purified for the consummation of His kingdom in glory. The perf. **נעשה** does not stand for the imperf. Because it is decreed, but in its proper meaning, according to which it represents the matter as finished, settled. Here it accordingly means: "for that which is irrevocably decreed is accomplished, is not to be recalled, but must be done."

He was to speak marvelous things against the God of gods. This is a parallel expression to that found in Daniel 7:8,12,27. There it says the little horn would speak great things, and then very great things. Revelation 13:6 says, “And he opened his mouth in blasphemy against God, to blaspheme his name, and his tabernacle, and them that dwell in heaven.” Take the claims of infallibility of the Bishop of Rome for instance, and the doctrine that the priests have power to create their Creator. They point to that as the wonderful power that is vested in the Roman priesthood.

“And shall prosper till the indignation be accomplished.” He shall prosper till the indignation is accomplished, that is, down to the falling of the plagues,

“For that is determined shall be done.”

Vs 37: “Neither shall he regard the God of his fathers.” The Hebrew word reads (for ‘regard’) “to understand” “to attend.”

“Neither shall he regard the God of his fathers, nor the desire of women.” That does not mean that he denies the desire of women nor denies there is any god. It means he shall not “attend” to them; he will not heed them. How has the Papacy done that? To regard God is to worship him, to obey Him, to worship

Him. How does He speak to me? In His word. The Word of God is the Bible; and we disregard God when we disregard the Bible. Now it is a significant fact that the Bible has been eliminated in the Papal system. It always tries to keep the Bible away from the people. It does not “attend” to God or “regard” God. Now no matter what the history has been, –the papacy claims it has “disregarded” the laws of God—disregarded God Who made that law, the Creator of Heaven and earth, and whose law is a sign of His authority.

It does not mean that he denies the being of God, but disregards God.

We would never have thought the old view of applying this prophecy to the French nation if it has not been suggested in “*Thoughts on Daniel.*”

“Nor the desire of women.” What is one of the cardinal teachings of the Papal system? The celibacy of the priesthood and the virginity of the nuns.

Editor's Note: It is possible, but not necessary, to apply this prophecy to the Catholic Church's celibacy teachings. *Jamieson-Fausset-Brown Bible Commentary*, has this to say:

37. Neither regard the desire of women-(Compare Eze. 24:16, 18). The wife, as the desire of man's eyes, is the symbol of the tenderest relations (2Sa 1:26). Antiochus would set at naught even their entreaties that he should cease from his attack on Jehovah's worship [Polanus]. Maurer refers it to Antiochus' attack on the temple of the Syrian Venus, worshiped by women (1 Maccabees 6:1, &c.; 2 Maccabees 1:13). Newton refers it to Rome's "forbidding to marry." Elliott rightly makes the anti-typical reference be to Messiah. Jewish women desired to be mothers with a view to Him, the promised seed of the woman (Gen. 30:23; Luke 1:25, 28).

“Nor regard any god.” The papacy does not regard any god. It is entirely irreligious in spirit.

H.C. LACEY: This celibacy of the priests, involving the virginity of the nuns, which follows as a natural consequence, is one of the great items in the papal doctrine. He does not regard any god, that is, he is entirely irreligious in spirit. Now it is this to which Paul alludes in 2 Tess. 2:4: “Who opposeth and exalteth himself above all that is called God, or that is worshiped; so that he as God sitteth in the temple of God, showing himself that he is God.”

Notice how it says here [in Daniel] “neither shall he regard any god, for he shall magnify himself above all.” This is the thought quoted in 2 Thess. We never deviate from applying that to the papacy, and this in Daniel which is the basis of the verse in Thessalonians, should also be applied to the papacy.

“But in his estate.” Instead of calling his attention to the God of the bible, he shall honor the God of forces. It is a very peculiar word translated forces. The Hebrew is *Mahossen*, meaning “god protect us.” He shall honor the god of forces. What are the facts of the case? The Catholics have thought to turn to the saints. Every Catholic has some saint to whom he or she looks. The saints come instead of Christ and God. And they are known as the tutelary saints. Perhaps I would better read something from some of these authorities on this point. In the ages past, repeatedly cities have been placed under the protection of certain guardian saints, tutelary deities, of those cities. They have trusted in the relics of the saints they have with them for protection. It will be impossible to find a word more descriptive of that than the word *Mahossen*.

It is not surprising that so many high profile Seventh-day Adventist leaders have left Adventism, willingly or unwillingly, because they could not find biblical support for the *Investigative Judgment* interpretation of the 2,300 day prophecy. The SDA interpretation of Daniel 8:14 got off on the wrong foot by making too much out of the word, “cleansed” in the King James Version:

And he said unto me, Unto two thousand and three hundred days; then shall the sanctuary be cleansed.

The Young's Literal Translation is more in keeping with the intent of the original language, as is less susceptible to a fanciful interpretation:

He saith unto me, Till evening — morning two thousand and three hundred, then is the holy place declared right.

The delegates to the 1919 Bible Conference may have worked out to exactly the number of literal days that Antiochus Epiphanes polluted and profaned the temple at Jerusalem. Instead they appear to have mistakenly believed that the 1,260 day prophecy of Daniel 7's little horn applied to the persecuting activities of Antiochus as well as to a symbolically arrived at 1,260 years of papal persecution and supremacy. It appears that without any definite start date specified for the beginning of the 2,300 evening and morning sacrifices, they made another assumption, and that was that the start date for this prophetic period was the same one as the 70 week prophecy (490 years from the command to restore and rebuild Jerusalem until the Messiah), or 457 BC. Recall that there are serious problems with the 490 year prophecy as well.

Whatever the varied views of the SDA leaders of Adventism in 1919 may have been, they recognized that the fact that at least one of the little horns represented the persecuting activities of Antiochus Epiphanes was so dangerous that this fact should be withheld from SDA students.

The truth is that the facts of the little horn prophecies of Daniel 7, 8 and 11 have nothing to do with the Sabbath-Sunday Question or 1844. Nothing fits perfectly, as Bible prophecy would require, if these prophecies of Nero (Daniel 7) and Antiochus (Daniel 8, 11) are symbolically stretched to 1798 and 1844. Although this quote from the *Keil and Delitzsch Biblical Commentary on the Old Testament* for Daniel 7:25 is long, it provides, in one place, an excellent summary of the problems involved with these speculative, symbolic interpretations, and it gives an excellent summary of why the 1,260 day prophecy might be a valid concept if we seek to understand it on the basis of the linguistics of the passage:

This tyranny God's people will suffer "till, i.e., during, a time, (two) times, and half a time." By these specifications of time the duration of the last phase of the world-power is more definitely declared, as a period in its whole course measured by God; Daniel 7:12 and Daniel 7:22. The plural word עֲדָנִין (times) standing between time and half a time can only designate the simple plural, i.e., two times used in the dual sense, since in the Chaldee the plural is often used to denote a pair where the dual is used in Hebrew; cf. Winer, *Chald. Gr.* 55, 3. Three and a half times are the half of seven times (Daniel 4:13). The greater number of the older as well as of the more recent interpreters take *imte* (יַמְתֵּי) as representing the space of a year, thus three and a half times as three and a half years; and they base this view partly on Daniel 4:13, where seven times must mean seven years, partly on Daniel 12:7, where the corresponding expression is found in Hebrew, partly on Revelation 13:5 and Revelation 11:2-3, where forty-two months and 1260 days are used interchangeably. But none of these passages supplies a proof that will stand the test. The supposition that in Daniel 4:13 the seven times represent seven years, neither is nor can be proved. As regards the time and times in Daniel 12:7, and the periods named in the passages of the Rev. referred to, it is very questionable whether the weeks and the days represent the ordinary weeks of the year and days of the week, and whether these periods of time are to be taken chronologically. Still less can any explanation as to this designation of time be derived from the 2300 days (evening-mornings) in Daniel 8:14, since the periods do not agree, nor do both passages treat of the same event. The choice of the chronologically indefinite expression עֲדָן, time, shows that a chronological determination of the period is not in view, but that the designation of time is to be understood symbolically. We have thus to inquire after the symbolical meaning of the statement. This is not to be sought, with Hofmann (*Weiss. i.* 289), in the supposition that as three and a half years are the half of a Sabbath-period, it is thus announced that Israel would be oppressed during half a Sabbath-period by Antichrist. For, apart from the unwarrantable identification of time with year, one does not perceive what Sabbath-periods and the oppression of the people of God have in common. This much is beyond doubt, that three and a half times are the half of seven times. The meaning of this half, however, is not to be derived, with Kranichfeld, from Daniel 4:13, where "seven times" is an expression used for a long continuance of divinely-ordained suffering. It is not hence to be supposed that the dividing of this period into two designates only a proportionally short time of severest oppression endured by the people of God at the hands of the heathen. For the humbling of the haughty ruler Nebuchadnezzar (Daniel 4:13) does not stand in any inner connection with the elevation of the world-power over the people of God, in such a way that we could explain the three and a half times of this passage after the seven times of Daniel 4:13. In general, the question may be asked, Whether the meaning of the three and a half times is to be derived merely from the symbolical signification of the number seven, or whether, with Lemmert, we must not much rather go back, in order to ascertain the import of this measure of time, to the divine judgments under Elias, when the heavens were shut for three years and six months; Luke 4:25 and James 5:17. "As Ahab did more to provoke God to anger than all the kings who were before him, so this king, Daniel 7:24, in a way altogether different from those who went before him, spake words against the Most High and persecuted His saints, etc." But should this reference also not be

established, and the three and a half times be regarded as only the half of seven times, yet the seven does not here come into view as the time of God's works, so that it could be said the oppression of the people of God by the little horn will last (Kliefoth) only half as long as a work of God; but according to the symbolical interpretation of the seven times, the three and a half, as the period of the duration of the circumstances into which the people of God are brought by the world-power through the divine permission, indicate "a testing period, a period of judgment which will (Matthew 24:22; Proverbs 10:27), for the elect's sake, be interrupted and shortened (septenarius truncus)." Leyrer in Herz.'s Real. Enc. xviii. 369. Besides, it is to be considered how this space of time is described, not as three and a half, but a time, two times, and half a time. Ebrard (Offenb. p. 49) well remarks regarding this, that "it appears as if his tyranny would extend itself always the longer and longer: first a time, then the doubled time, then the fourfold - this would be a seven times; but it does not go that length; suddenly it comes to an end in the midst of the seven times, so that instead of the fourfold time there is only half a time." "The proper analysis of the three and a half times," Kliefoth further remarks, "in that the periods first mount up by doubling them, and then suddenly decline, shows that the power of the horn and its oppression of the people of God would first quickly manifest itself, in order then to come to a sudden end by the interposition of the divine judgment (Daniel 7:26)." For, a thing which is not here to be overlooked, the three and a half times present not the whole duration of the existence of the little horn, but, as the half of a week, only the latter half of its time, in which dominion over the saints of God is given to it (Daniel 7:21), and at the expiry of which it falls before the judgment. See under Daniel 12:7.

In conclusion, the *1919 Bible Conference Minutes* show that the participants suffered from confusion about the meaning of these prophecies in their attempt to reconcile the historical facts, and in some cases, the well-accepted interpretations of these prophecies, with Ellen White's teachings. They understood that the fact that at least one of the little horn prophecies had its literal fulfillment almost 2,000 years before 1844 and believed that this information should be hidden from the Church because it was dangerous to Adventism.

CHAPTER TWELVE
BIBLICAL BARRIER:
THE LORD'S DAY IN REVELATION

BIBLICAL BARRIER:

THE LORD'S DAY IN REVELATION

Revelation 14:12 -Here is the patience of the saints: here are they that keep the commandments of God, and the faith of Jesus.

Revelation 12:17 - And the dragon was wroth with the woman, and went to make war with the remnant of her seed, which keep the commandments of God, and have the testimony of Jesus Christ.

Throughout history God has commanded His people to do many things, but common sense should tell us that in each case we have to look to whom God was speaking and under what circumstances. For example, one of His Old Testament commandments was that Sabbath-breakers be stoned to death. Adventists assume that the word "commandments" in these passages refers to the Decalogue, but there is no justification in these texts to make such assumptions. If the Sabbath is to be kept by Christians now, they fail to keep it correctly when they do not stone Sabbath-breakers to death.

The problem here, never addressed by Sabbatarians, is that many of the things God commanded of Israel under the Old Covenant are in conflict with Jesus Christ and the Gospel (salvation through faith only in Christ). It was the apostle Paul who wrote that the Law was not of faith. The New Covenant is not like the Old Covenant in many respects.

As we mentioned elsewhere, when Paul talked about Christian behavior, he did not mention the 10 Commandments, and although he listed numerous sins in his writings that would keep a believer from going to Heaven, Sabbath-breaking was never included. Paul's various lists included sins of the heart and sins of omission, whereas the focus of the Decalogue was on sins of commission. The real problem with human beings lies in their motives. This is why the focus of the New Covenant and the new "Law of Faith" is the replacement of a person's "heart of stone" with a new heart through the renewing power of the Holy Spirit.

When the author of Revelation thought about the commandments of God, he was likely thinking about the things in Paul's list, the Noachian laws, and/or Jesus' commandments that we should love God supremely and other people as we love ourselves. A little logic may help right here. The Decalogue does not proscribe the sins of homosexuality or fornication, but Paul's list did. The author of the Book of Revelation, therefore, could not have limited the scope of the Law to the Decalogue because St. Paul said that fornicators and homosexuals would not be granted entrance to Heaven.

If the Sabbatarian adds a limiter to the Revelator's scope of what he meant by the Law, it is the same thing as ADDING or TAKING AWAY from the words to the Bible, and this is what Adventists do when they abuse these passages. Adding words to Scripture is a good way to arrive at false doctrines, and, as William Hohmann points out, Christians are forbidden to add or remove any words from Scripture. Hohmann cites Revelation 22:18-19 and points out that no one has the right to alter Scripture, and that when they do, this results in the twisting of Scripture that leads to deceptions and lies. Making the Sabbath a salvation issue attempts to impose upon Christians the conditions of a covenant they were never a party to, and a covenant that ended. That obsolete covenant had 613 points of law, and keeping each and every one of them was necessary to comply with its requirements. It cannot be a salvation issue, since St. John flatly states that Jesus broke the Sabbath and that his disciples broke the Sabbath by picking and eating grain on it. Hohmann adds that Christ never commanded even one Christian to keep the 10 Commandments or to keep any of the Old Covenant laws. Here is what Revelation 22:18-19 says:

¹⁸ For I testify unto every man that heareth the words of the prophecy of this book, If any man shall add unto these things, God shall add unto him the plagues that are written in this book:

¹⁹ And if any man shall take away from the words of the book of this prophecy, God shall take away his part out of the book of life, and out of the holy city, and from the things which are written in this book.

CHAPTER THIRTEEN
TERTULLIAN: WAS HE SABBATARIAN OR ANTI-
SABBATARIAN?

BY KERRY WYNNE AND LARRY DEAN, J.D.

TERTULLIAN: WAS HE SABBATARIAN OR ANTI-SABBATARIAN?

By Kerry Wynne and Larry Dean, J.D.

Since Tertullian lived and wrote shortly after Sunday observance had become universal, 160-225 AD, what he has to say about the Sabbath-Sunday question is extremely important to understanding the way the early church viewed the matter. Tertullian in his work, *Against the Jews*, clearly teaches that the Sabbath of the Decalogue did not exist at Creation and that circumcision is required as a prerequisite to Sabbath-keeping. He explains that there was natural law before the Mosaic Law; that the Mosaic Law became obsolete at the cross; and that the Christian dispensation is based on the principle that we must love God supremely and others as ourselves as taught by Jesus. In another work, *Against Marconium*, he mentions the word "Sabbath" in the context of the Sabbath Festival, which Christians observed as a celebration, and discusses whether Christians should fast on that day or should not fast on that day. There is a certain passage from *Against Marconium* that some Sabbatarians quote out of context to make him look like he later adopted Sabbatarian views.

Before we get to Tertullian's views on the Seventh-day Sabbath, though, we need to unpack his cryptic "Sabbath Festival" terminology. Sabbatarians **always** conflate and confuse Tertullian's loose use of the undefined words "Sabbath Festival" with the 7th-day Sabbath. Sabbatarians are eager to find support for their view that the 7th Day Sabbath is the continuation of the imaginary Creation Sabbath ordinance; which they contend continued to be celebrated by the Early Christian Church and continues to be universally-binding. This is NOT what Tertullian meant by a "Sabbath Festival." One must look at the context of Tertullian's description to understand fully what he is getting at. The key is that Tertullian discusses at length whether or not kneeling for prayer is appropriate on this "Sabbath:"

"In the matter of kneeling also prayer is subject to diversity of observance, through the act of some few who abstain from kneeling on the Sabbath; and since this dissension is particularly on its trial before the churches, the Lord will give His grace that the dissenters may either yield, or else indulge their opinion without offense to others. We, however (just as we have received), only on the day of the Lord's Resurrection ought to guard not only against kneeling, but every posture and office of solicitude; deferring even our businesses lest we give any place to the devil. Similarly, too, in the period of Pentecost; which period we distinguish by the same solemnity of exultation. But who would hesitate every day to prostrate himself before God, at least in the first prayer with which we enter on the daylight? At fasts, moreover, and Stations, no prayer should be made without kneeling, and the remaining customary marks of humility; for (then) we are not only praying, but deprecating, and making satisfaction to God our Lord."

That Tertullian discusses kneeling for prayer and mentions "the day of the Lord's Resurrection," "Pentecost," "fasts," "stations," and "prostrate" in the same breath is a dead giveaway that he is discussing something other than the 7th-day Sabbath. Instead he is talking about the "Sabbath Festivals." For Orthodox Christianity and Roman Catholicism, the "Sabbath Festivals" that Tertullian describes are one of two exclusively "Christian Sabbaths" that are celebrated during Holy Week. These "Christian Sabbaths" bookend Easter Holy Week (in the western tradition) and Pascha Holy Week (in the Eastern tradition). "Lazarus Sabbath" is the day before Palm Sunday, which is the first day of "Holy week." "The Great Sabbath" or "Black Sabbath" is the day that Christ spent in the tomb, which is the day before Easter (or "Pascha" in the East). Those are the only Christian "Sabbath Festivals." "Kneeling, fasting, and prostrations" were eventually prohibited via Canon Law during Holy Week, which follows the 40 days of Lent. The only exception to this rule is on the two "Christian Sabbaths" of Holy Week. Lent features almost continuous prostrations, fasting and kneeling, particularly in the first two weeks of Lent. After the first two weeks, those things take on a reduced schedule. Note: These two "Christian Sabbaths" have nothing whatsoever to do with the 7th Day Sabbath of the Decalogue; or the 7th Day of Creation. They are very pointedly festivals that celebrate significant events of Christ's last week. "Lazarakia" bread is baked and eaten on the Lazarus Sabbath. The "Great Sabbath" is commemorated as a Funeral Service for Christ. Later on in the day, a vespereal Divine Liturgy is celebrated (the Divine Liturgy is never celebrated on any other Saturday of the year).

Now we turn to Tertullian in Chapter Two of his *Against the Jews*. He is explaining that none of the patriarchs kept the Sabbath found in the Decalogue because the natural laws established at Creation did not provide for it:

"In short, before the Law of Moses, written in stone-tables, I contend that there was a law unwritten, which was habitually understood naturally, and by the fathers was habitually kept. For whence was Noah found righteous, if in his case the righteousness of a natural law had not preceded? Whence was Abraham accounted a friend of God, if not on the ground of equity and righteousness, (in the observance) of a natural law? Whence was Melchizedek named priest of the most high God, if, before the priesthood of the Levitical

law, there were not Levites who were wont to offer sacrifices to God? For thus, after the above-mentioned patriarchs, was the Law given to Moses, at that (well-known) time after their exodus from Egypt, after the interval and spaces of four hundred years. In fact, it was after Abraham's four hundred and thirty years that the Law was given. Whence we understand that God's law was anterior even to Moses, and was not first (given) in Horeb, nor in Sinai and in the desert, but was more ancient; (existing) first in paradise, subsequently reformed for the patriarchs, and so again for the Jews, at definite periods: so that we are not to give heed to Moses' Law as to the primitive law, but as to a subsequent, which at a definite period God has set forth to the Gentiles too and, after repeatedly promising so to do through the prophets, has reformed for the better; and has premonished that it should come to pass that, just as the law was given through Moses John 1:17 at a definite time, so it should be believed to have been temporarily observed and kept."

"And let us not annul this power which God has, which reforms the law's precepts answerably to the circumstances of the times, with a view to man's salvation. In time, let him who contends that the Sabbath is still to be observed as a balm of salvation, and circumcision on the eighth day because of the threat of death, teach [apparently, "prove"] us that, for the time past, righteous men kept the Sabbath, or practiced circumcision, and were thus rendered friends of God. For if circumcision purges a man since God made Adam uncircumcised, why did He not circumcise him, even after his sinning, if circumcision purges? At all events, in settling him in paradise, He appointed one uncircumcised as colonist of paradise. Therefore, since God originated Adam uncircumcised, and inobservant of the Sabbath, consequently his offspring also, Abel, offering Him sacrifices, uncircumcised and inobservant of the Sabbath, was by Him commended; while He accepted what he was offering in simplicity of heart, and reprobated the sacrifice of his brother Cain, who was not rightly dividing what he was offering. Noah also, uncircumcised— yes, and inobservant of the Sabbath— God freed from the deluge. For Enoch, too, most righteous man, uncircumcised and inobservant of the Sabbath, He translated from this world; who did not first taste death, in order that, being a candidate for eternal life, he might by this time show us that we also may, without the burden of the law of Moses, please God. Melchizedek also, the priest of the most high God, uncircumcised and inobservant of the Sabbath, was chosen to the priesthood of God. Lot, withal, the brother of Abraham, proves that it was for the merits of righteousness, without observance of the law, that he was freed from the conflagration of the Sodomites."

The following quote is from Chapter III, entitled "Of Circumcision and the Supercession of the Old Law", also seems to connect Sabbath-keeping with the ordinance of circumcision."

But Abraham, (you say,) was circumcised. Yes, but he pleased God before his circumcision; **nor yet did he observe the Sabbath. For he had accepted circumcision; but such as was to be for a sign of that time, not for a prerogative title to salvation.** In fact, subsequent patriarchs were uncircumcised, like Melchizedek, who, uncircumcised, offered to Abraham himself, already circumcised, on his return from battle, bread and wine.

And from **Chapter IV**, "Of the Observance of the Sabbath," Tertullian makes the connection between circumcision and Sabbath-keeping direct:

It follows, accordingly, that, in so far as the abolition of carnal circumcision and of the old law is demonstrated as having been consummated at its specific times, so also the observance of the Sabbath is demonstrated to have been temporary.

Thus, it is initially astonishing when his later work (believed to be later work), *Against Marconium*, argues with this heretic that Jesus did not rescind the Sabbath when He apparently broke it.

Marconium questioned Christ's claim to divinity because, as he claimed, God would not break one of His own rules. In the following passage from *Against Marconium*, Tertullian demonstrated that while Jesus lived under the Old Covenant which He Himself has established, He was consistent in keeping His own Sabbath, even though He had every right to abolish one of His own rules if He so chose to do so. The passage is lengthily, but a study of it demonstrates the context of what he said and pulls it into harmony with everything else we know that Tertullian said about Sabbath-keeping:

Now, that we may decide these several points first, lest we should be renewing them at every turn to meet each argument of our adversary which rests on some novel institution of Christ, let this stand as a settled point, that discussion concerning the novel character of each institution ensued on this account, because as nothing was as yet advanced by Christ touching any new deity, so discussion thereon was inadmissible; nor could it be retorted, that from the very novelty of each several institution another deity was clearly enough demonstrated by Christ, inasmuch as it was plain that novelty was not in itself a characteristic to be

wondered at in Christ, because it had been foretold by the Creator. And it would have been, of course, but right that a new god should first be expounded, and his discipline be introduced afterwards; because it would be the god that would impart authority to the discipline, and not the discipline to the god; except that (to be sure) it has happened that Marcion acquired his very perverse opinions not from a master, but his master from his opinion! All other points respecting the Sabbath I thus rule. If Christ interfered with the Sabbath, He simply acted after the Creator's example; inasmuch as in the siege of the city of Jericho the carrying around the walls of the ark of the covenant for eight days running, and therefore on a Sabbath day, actually annulled the Sabbath, by the Creator's command— according to the opinion of those who think this of Christ in this passage of St. Luke, in their ignorance that neither Christ nor the Creator violated the Sabbath, as we shall by and by show. And yet the Sabbath was actually then broken by Joshua, so that the present charge might be alleged also against Christ. But even if, as being not the Christ of the Jews, He displayed a hatred against the Jews' most solemn day, He was only professedly following the Creator, as being His Christ, in this very hatred of the Sabbath; for He exclaims by the mouth of Isaiah: Your new moons and your Sabbaths my soul hates. Isaiah 1:14. Now, in whatever sense these words were spoken, we know that an abrupt defense must, in a subject of this sort, be used in answer to an abrupt challenge. I shall now transfer the discussion to the very matter in which the teaching of Christ seemed to annul the Sabbath. The disciples had been hungry; on that the Sabbath day they had plucked some ears and rubbed them in their hands; by thus preparing their food, they had violated the holy day. Christ excuses them, and became their accomplice in breaking the Sabbath. The Pharisees bring the charge against Him.

Marcion sophistically interprets the stages of the controversy (if I may call in the aid of the truth of my Lord to ridicule his arts), both in the scriptural record and in Christ's purpose. For from the Creator's Scripture, and from the purpose of Christ, there is derived a colourable precedent — as from the example of David, when he went into the temple on the Sabbath, and provided food by boldly breaking up the show-bread. **Even he remembered that this privilege (I mean the dispensation from fasting) was allowed to the Sabbath from the very beginning, when the Sabbath day itself was instituted. For although the Creator had forbidden that the manna should be gathered for two days, He yet permitted it on the one occasion only of the day before the Sabbath, in order that the yesterday's provision of food might free from fasting the feast of the following Sabbath day.** Good reason, therefore, had the Lord for pursuing the same principle in the annulling of the Sabbath (since that is the word which men will use); good reason, too, for expressing the Creator's will, when He bestowed the privilege of not fasting on the Sabbath day. In short, He would have then and there put an end to the Sabbath, nay, to the Creator Himself, if He had commanded His disciples to fast on the Sabbath day, contrary to the intention of the Scripture and of the Creator's will. But because He did not directly defend His disciples, but excuses them; because He interposes human want, as if deprecating censure; because He maintains the honour of the Sabbath as a day which is to be free from gloom rather than from work; because he puts David and his companions on a level with His own disciples in their fault and their extenuation; because He is pleased to endorse the Creator's indulgence: because He is Himself good according to His example— is He therefore alien from the Creator? Then the Pharisees watch whether He would heal on the Sabbath day, Luke 6:7 that they might accuse Him— surely as a violator of the Sabbath, not as the propounder of a new god; for perhaps I might be content with insisting on all occasions on this one point, that another Christ is nowhere proclaimed. The Pharisees, however, were in utter error concerning the law of the Sabbath, not observing that its terms were conditional, when it enjoined rest from labour, making certain distinctions of labour. For when it says of the Sabbath day, In it you shall not do any work of yours, Exodus 20:16 by the word yours it restricts the prohibition to human work— which every one performs in his own employment or business— and not to divine work. Now the work of healing or preserving is not proper to man, but to God. So again, in the law it says, You shall not do any manner of work in it, Exodus 12:16 except what is to be done for any soul, that is to say, in the matter of delivering the soul; because what is God's work may be done by human agency for the salvation of the soul. By God, however, would that be done which the man Christ was to do, for He was likewise God. Wishing, therefore, to initiate them into this meaning of the law by the restoration of the withered hand, He requires, Is it lawful on the Sabbath-days to do good, or not? To save life, or to destroy it? Luke 6:9. In order that He might, while allowing that amount of work which He was about to perform for a soul, remind them what works the law of the Sabbath forbade— even human works; and what it enjoined— even divine works, which might be done for the benefit of any soul, He was called Lord of the Sabbath, Luke 6:5, because He maintained the Sabbath as His own institution. Now, even if He had annulled the Sabbath, He would have had the right to do so, as being its Lord, (and) still more as He who instituted it. But He did not utterly destroy it, although its Lord, in order that it might henceforth be plain that the Sabbath was not broken by the Creator, even at the time when the ark was carried around Jericho. For that was really God's work, which He commanded Himself, and which He had ordered for the sake of the lives of His servants when exposed to the perils of war. Now, although He has in a certain place expressed an aversion of Sabbaths, by calling them your

Sabbaths, Isaiah 1:13-14, reckoning them as men's Sabbaths, not His own, because they were celebrated without the fear of God by a people full of iniquities, and loving God with the lip, not the heart, Isaiah 29:13, He has yet put His own Sabbaths (those, that is, which were kept according to His prescription) in a different position; for by the same prophet, in a later passage, He declared them to be true, and delightful, and inviolable. Thus Christ did not at all rescind the Sabbath: He kept the law thereof, and both in the former case did a work which was beneficial to the life of His disciples, for He indulged them with the relief of food when they were hungry, and in the present instance cured the withered hand; in each case intimating by facts, I came not to destroy, the law, but to fulfill it, Matthew 5:17, although Marcion has gagged His mouth by this word. For even in the case before us He fulfilled the law, while interpreting its condition; moreover, He exhibits in a clear light the different kinds of work, while doing what the law excepts from the sacredness of the Sabbath and while imparting to the Sabbath day itself, which from the beginning had been consecrated by the benediction of the Father, an additional sanctity by His own beneficent action. For He furnished to this day divine safeguards, — a course which His adversary would have pursued for some other days, to avoid honouring the Creator's Sabbath, and restoring to the Sabbath the works which were proper for it. Since, in like manner, the prophet Elisha on this day restored to life the dead son of the Shunammite woman, you see, O Pharisee, and you too, O Marcion, how that it was proper employment for the Creator's Sabbaths of old to do good, to save life, not to destroy it; how that Christ introduced nothing new, which was not after the example, the gentleness, the mercy, and the prediction also of the Creator. For in this very example He fulfills the prophetic announcement of a specific healing: The weak hands are strengthened, as were also the feeble knees, Isaiah 35:3, in the sick of the palsy.

In Book V, Chapter One of *Against Marconium* we find Tertullian directly discussing the abolishment of the Sabbath, quoting an Old Testament passage— perhaps paraphrasing it— in which God prophesied that He would destroy the sabbaths and the Sabbath at some time in the future. In his discussion of the abolishment of the law, Tertullian sounds very much like modern day anti-Sabbatarians. Here is just one passage:

Now, from whom comes this grace, but from Him who proclaimed the promise thereof? Who is (our) Father, but He who is also our Maker? Therefore, after such affluence (of grace), they should not have returned to weak and beggarly elements. Galatians 4:9 **By the Romans, however, the rudiments of learning are wont to be called elements.** He did not therefore seek, by any depreciation of the mundane elements, to turn them away from their god, although, when he said just before, Howbeit, then, you serve them which by nature are no gods, Galatians 4:8 he censured the error of that physical or natural superstition which holds the elements to be god; but at the God of those elements he aimed not in this censure. **He tells us himself clearly enough what he means by elements, even the rudiments of the law: You observe days, and months, and times, and years Galatians 4:10 — the sabbaths, I suppose, and the preparations, and the fasts, and the high days. For the cessation of even these, no less than of circumcision, was appointed by the Creator's decrees, who had said by Isaiah, Your new moons, and your sabbaths, and your high days I cannot bear; your fasting, and feasts, and ceremonies my soul hates; Isaiah 1:13-14 also by Amos, I hate, I despise your feast-days, and I will not smell in your solemn assemblies; Amos 5:21 and again by Hosea, I will cause to cease all her mirth, and her feast-days, and her sabbaths, and her new moons, and all her solemn assemblies. Hosea 2:11 The institutions which He set up Himself, you ask, did He then destroy? Yes, rather than any other. Or if another destroyed them, he only helped on the purpose of the Creator, by removing what even He had condemned. But this is not the place to discuss the question why the Creator abolished His own laws. It is enough for us to have proved that He intended such an abolition, that so it may be affirmed that the apostle determined nothing to the prejudice of the Creator, since the abolition itself proceeds from the Creator.**

In summary, Tertullian is completely consistent in his view of the Sabbath between both his works, *Against the Jews* and *Against Marconium*. And his views on the “Sabbath Festivals” can only be understood in light of the two “Christian Sabbaths” that bookend Holy Week. In the quote used by Sabbatarian apologists to suggest that he was inconsistent or had possibly changed his mind about the Sabbath over time, he merely demonstrated that while living under the jurisdiction of his own Mosaic Covenant, Jesus kept the spirit of His very own Sabbath law. In the chapters following this statement in question from *Against Marconium*, he reiterates his position that the Sabbath has been abolished and quotes an Old Testament passage in which God says that He will put an end to the Sabbath at some time in the future.

CHAPTER FOURTEEN
THE LUNAR SABBATH WREAKS HAVOC
WITH ADVENTISM

THE LUNAR SABBATH WREAKS HAVOC WITH ADVENTISM

HOW THE FIRST ADVENTISTS FOUND OUT THAT THE SABBATH IS NOT SATURDAY

We did not pull this stuff out of a hat. Just like the advent of the Internet has made it impossible for Adventist leaders to hide the sordid truth about its past, so we would have an impossible time making up crazy stories about Adventism and passing them off to our readers as truth. As is often the case with Adventism, the truth is stranger than fiction.

Top Adventist leaders and scholars have known since the days of William Miller that Saturday was not the Sabbath during the time of Christ. They knew, rather, the Jewish Sabbath was the 7th day of each lunar calendar's week. In other words, at least some of these pioneer Advent Movement leaders had to be teaching others to believe what they knew themselves was not true. An entire religious organization was launched on an idea that was known, at least by some, to be fundamentally wrong before the horse was even out of the gate. The same can be said of a number of subsequent Adventist leaders as well. Teaching the truth about Sabbath-keeping would have been much too unpopular.

The ghost of this problem came back to haunt the General Conference of Seventh-day Adventists during the 1930's, but successful ghost-busting techniques got rid of the specter. About 60 years later, this unwanted apparition from the past returned, and the General Conference president at the time, Robert S. Folkenberg, was forced to meet the specter face-to-face in 1995. This time, the apparition showed itself long enough for people to get a good glimpse of it, and Adventism has not been the same since. The unconscionable squelching of any discussion of it by Folkenberg created a backlash that is currently threatening the stability of main-stream Adventism, and Adventists are losing members and tithe revenue to a number of lunar Sabbath organizations. This time the uninvited ghost from the past doesn't need to return ever again. It is already HERE. In fact, these multiplying lunar Sabbath groups may be as great a threat to the INSTITUTION of Adventism as the anti-Sabbatarian movement itself.

In an irony that challenges the bitterness of any other, it was none other than William Miller himself who is behind all this trouble. Without him there wouldn't be an 1844—the date upon which the entire structure of Adventism rests. But the 1844 date settled on by Miller was calculated using the Jewish lunar calendar, and he knew that this calendar made the Jewish Sabbath wander through the days of the week of the Julian/Gregorian “fixed” calendar. Ellen White said that William Miller would not accept the truth of the Sabbath doctrine because he had a mental block of some kind against it. We have a different theory.

As you will soon learn, the entire world ran on the lunar calendar until around the time of the building of the Second Temple. It was such an integral, natural part of every-day life that, until then, the mind of man had never even thought of the idea of “fixing” the calendar by disassociating its weeks from the phases of the Moon. No wonder the Adventist leaders of both yesterday and today don't want anyone to know about this! Wandering Sabbath days pull the rug right out from under the Adventist teaching that the pope changed the Sabbath from Saturday to Sunday— an impossibility, since the Sabbath “changes” itself every month.

If the lunar Sabbath concept is correct—and it is, as you will soon see— Ellen White was a false prophet. Apparently her angel guide— the angel who appeared to her as a young man for over 26 years, and upon whom she depended to help her discern truth from error— did not know enough about the history of the Sabbath on Planet Earth to show her how God wanted Israel to keep it holy. This angel told her to keep the Sabbath the wrong way, and then she turned around and taught others to do the same thing.

William Miller, thanks to his two Hebrew teachers who happened to be Karaite Jews, learned that only the Hebrew lunar calendar could help determine the time for the Passover Week, and that the Sabbath of Passover could fall on any of the days of a fixed Julian/Gregorian calendar. The Passion Week took place at the same time as the Jewish Passover, and the timing of the Passover was determined by certain astronomical readings, and in particular, the new moon.

The majority of scholars strongly favor 33 AD as the year of the Crucifixion, and there are a number of important reasons for this. Seventh-day Adventists defy the scholarly world and claim that the Crucifixion happened in 31 CE. Why?

Their pet date of 31 CE [Christian Era] for the Crucifixion is absolutely necessary to make the single-most important Bible prophecy of Adventism “work” for them— the prophecy which is the pillar of Adventism, and which, if it is not true for ANY reason, destroys Adventism's very reason to exist— the 2,300 “Day” Prophecy of Daniel 8:14. In fact, if this date is not REAL, Adventism is nothing more than one of the biggest theological hoaxes in history.

In order to get this prophecy to work, the start date for it must be exactly the same date for the beginning of the 70 Week Prophecy, or 457 BCE, which through the unbiblical principle that a year stands for a day in Bible prophecy takes us 2,300 years to 1844. We discuss the unfortunate problems with the 2,300 Year-1844 prophecy elsewhere. The key point AT THIS MOMENT is that when the Adventists use 31 CE as the year of the Crucifixion, the Sabbath of that year's Passover Week DOES NOT FALL ON A SATURDAY AND THAT THE PIONEERS OF ADVENTISM, THE LUNAR Sabbath COMMITTEE OF THE 1930'S, AND THE LUNAR Sabbath COMMITTEE OF THE 1990'S KNEW THIS.

How worse could it get? The very "thing" that makes it possible to have a Bible prophecy that "proves" that Adventism has been the only true church since 1844 IS THE VERY THING THAT PROVED TO THEM THAT THE Sabbath IS NOT SATURDAY! The whole thing dogged Adventism for years before the Church formally organized in 1863. This all sounds like a good plot for a Hollywood horror movie.

Even without the conflict caused by the lunar Sabbath, the Sabbath would only have fallen on a "Saturday" but "once in a blue moon" in the Israel in which Christ lived. This is almost literally the case since the Roman Julian Calendar had eight days, one of which was named in honor of Saturn. Try to envision a gear system in an automobile transmission. Roll an eight-notch gear against a seven-notch gear, and you can calculate how often the 7th notch on the eight-notch gear would mesh with the 7th notch of the seven-notch gear! It seems that the names for the days of the week were irrelevant to the Jews at the time of Christ. It is almost certain, then, that their Sabbath days fell on the 7th day of each lunar week. The first lunar week and the first day of that first lunar week always began on the new moon. You might say that there were many "firsts" in the history and development of the Jewish lunar Sabbath.

There is another reason why the Adventist pioneers at the time were willing to ignore the truth implied by these facts. They witnessed Ellen White in vision. They saw the supernatural manifestations that accompanied those visions, and they figured that they could trust that every word that came out of her mouth was true. Her angel companion—the one who appeared to her almost daily for over 26 years in the form a young man—apparently put his blessing on the fixed Sabbath concept, and the rest is Adventist history.

Now what? This "genie" is out of the Adventist bottle. It is just a matter of time until a whole lot of Adventists are going to hear about the lunar Sabbath. Historically Adventists have fallen for off-shoot movements in significant numbers. But this is considerably different. What is Adventism going to do when something that it actually TRUE (in regard to Sabbath-keeping) confronts Adventist believers who sincerely want to keep the Sabbath the right way regardless of the personal cost of doing so? Just like the Adventist anti-Sabbatarian movement itself, nothing this massive and true has ever confronted the Seventh-day Adventist Church as clearly and as well-articulated as the lunar Sabbath. Will denial, cover-up, and obfuscation work as well as it always has in the past?

The facts we report about the lunar Sabbath concept came from a wide variety of sources. However, our account of the 130+ year SDA scandal came from an article posted at both 4AngelsPublications.Org and BibleTruthers.Org, "The Lunar Sabbath and the Seventh-day Adventist Church."

In August of 2007, SDA Professor of Hebrew and Old Testament Exegesis at Andrews University, Dr. Jaques Doukhan, spoke on the topic of the annual feasts at a worker's meeting at the Upper Columbia Conference of Seventh-day Adventists. The Upper Columbia Conference was thinking about planting a church in Spokane, Washington to minister to Messianic Jews. It would be important for the Adventists involved in this outreach to understand Jewish culture and history. In that meeting Doukhan acknowledged that when the Sabbath is calculated by the Biblical calendar, it will fall "differently."

In 1995, then General Conference president, Robert Folkenberg Sr., commissioned a study group to look into the question of whether or not the Sabbath should be kept according to the lunar calendar. He did so as result of the many inquiries the General Conference was receiving from Adventist pastors and laymen, predominantly from the Upper Columbia Conference area. The committee consisted of five scholars, hand-picked by Robert Folkenberg Sr., from the seminary at Andrews University. In addition to these five, there was a representative from the Ministerial Department of the North American Division (NAD) of Seventh-day Adventists and a representative from the Ministerial Department of the General Conference. Robert M. Johnston, professor of New Testament and Christian Origins at the seminary, chaired the committee.

Without understanding that he was opening up a Pandora's Box, Folkenberg graciously opened the General Conference vault to the study group. The committee researched the Grace Amadon Collection. Grace Amadon was the SDA astronomer

who worked with the 1930's lunar Sabbath committee. They also studied the four volume series, *The Prophetic Faith of Our Fathers*, by Leroy Edwin Froom, who had served as the chairman of that committee. Additional material supplied to them included a series of highly classified letters, written by well-respected SDA scholar, M.L. Andreasen, who had served on the earlier committee with Froom. The General Conference promised the committee access to a copy of the lunar Sabbath paper, researched by Elder J.H. Wierts— the one that had formed the basis for the 1930's committee's study. However, before this paper could be found, if it was even available to be found, three members of the 1995 committee — reportedly three of the five participants from Andrews University— announced that they had already determined that the biblical and historical support for the lunar calendar concept was “overwhelming.” Unfortunately, the General Conference, fearful of the uproar that the implementation of the lunar Sabbath would cause, gagged down the committee and reportedly destroyed all related documents. Wierts' paper never surfaced, and no one knows where it is now.

A number of "smoking gun" revelations came out of the 1995 committee's work. They discovered that as early as 1850, 13 years before the Seventh-day Adventist Church was formally established, Sylvester Bliss, an Adventist pioneer, had published a book entitled *Analysis of Sacred Chronology*. In the Bible Truthers.Org article, “The Lunar Sabbath and the Seventh-day Adventist Church,” the authors cite the following statement by him. At the time, Bliss was the Millerite editor of *The Signs of the Times*, and later he became the editor of the *Advent Herald*:

Time is measured by motion. The swing of a clock pendulum marks seconds. The revolutions of the earth mark days and years. The earliest measure of time is the day. Its duration is strikingly indicated by the marked contrast and succession of light and darkness. Being a natural division of time, it is very simple, and is convenient for the chronology of events within a limited period.

The week, another primeval measure, is not a natural measure of time, as some astronomers and chronologers have supposed indicated by the phases or quarters of the moon. It was originated by divine appointment at the creation, six days of labor and one of rest being wisely appointed for man's physical and spiritual well-being.

Then the authors from Bible Truthers.Org make this observation:

This assumption that the week is the sole unit of time-measurement that is not tied to anything in nature was repeated by J.N. Andrews in his weighty tome, *History of the Sabbath and First Day of the Week*, published by Review & Herald Publishing Association in 1887, where he quoted Bliss' above statement. For these statements to make it into publication would seem to indicate that there was wide enough agitation on the subject that the authors felt the need to address the matter, however briefly.

The story of J.H. Wierts and his lost lunar Sabbath paper represents a scandal within a scandal. Around the turn of the century and while a young SDA pastor, he stumbled across the fact, along with its ramifications for Adventist doctrine, that William Miller had to use the Hebrew lunar calendar to solve the problem of the exact date that Christ was to have returned in 1844. He saw that the Church had not been honest in dealing with these problems, and he began to agitate to get the problem solved. He noted that these discrepancies opened up Seventh-day Adventists to attacks from their detractors. At that time— that is, around the turn of the century— he had approached the SDA leaders in Washington about it, but they were not interested. Never-the-less he continued his lunar Sabbath research, and at some time prior to 1930 he had produced a manuscript of 283 pages that was reported to be “definitive.” The authors of “The Lunar Sabbath and the Seventh-day Adventist Church” provide us with these details:

“Knowing also that sooner or later our adversaries would challenge us on all that important data, Wierts began in 1932 to appeal to various General Conference officials for the church to conduct an official investigation into the subject. His efforts appear to have met with little success for most of six years.

Finally, on November 1, 1938, the GC officials voted:

To authorize E.D. Dick to confer with M. E. Kern and bring to the officers the suggestion of a committee for a conference with J.H. Wierts regarding the position of the denomination in respect to the date October 22, 1844 and the day of the crucifixion. (Council of GC Officers with J.H. Wierts, OM, Nov. 1, 1938, emphasis supplied.)

It is important to note that, from the first, the focus covered, not only the true date for Day of Atonement in 1844, but also the correct day for the crucifixion. The two are inseparably entwined because when the principles of luni-solar calendation (used to determine Day of Atonement for 1844) are applied to the year of the crucifixion, it is undeniable that there is a problem. Specifically, the crucifixion, which occurred on the sixth day of the Biblical week, did not fall on Friday of the Julian week. **This was the dilemma for which, in the end, they could not find a resolution without admitting that Saturday is not the Biblical seventh-day Sabbath.**

On November 7, 1938, a committee was formed to study the subject. Initially called the Advent Research Committee, it consisted of Adventist luminaries, well-respected for their theological knowledge. Dr. Leroy Froom was elected to chair the committee. Dr. Lynn Harper Wood served as secretary. The other members were Dr. M.L. Andreasen, Professor M.E. Kern, Professor W. Homer Teesdale, Professor Albert W. Werline and Elder F.C. Gilbert.

In reporting on their initial research to the GC officers, Dr. Froom stated that as chairman of the committee he wanted to present certain problems they had met on which they desired counsel. The contention has been raised by some of our detractors that the Jews celebrated the Passover on September 23, of the year 1844, and that the denomination therefore had the date wrong. It has been proven, however, that September 23 was celebrated only by the Rabbinical Jews, but that the Orthodox Karaite Jews held to the correct date and had to this day. We must ascertain the reasons back of the choosing of October 22, 1844, which we have followed all these years. Some of our men also seem not to be sure of the date on which the crucifixion occurred (Minutes, Officers Meeting, December 18, 1939, emphasis supplied.)

The result of this initial report had far reaching consequences – a new member was added to the committee [Miss Grace Amadon].

Amadon's astronomical data in reality verified that the Sabbath did not fall on a Saturday during the Passover of 31 CE — the widely accepted date for the Crucifixion. However, everything worked out "OK" for the Adventists anyway. They didn't like 31 CE in the first place because, according to the article's authors, Grace Amadon was a respected Seventh-day Adventist astronomer. As she began to analyze the astronomical data relevant to the Passover for 31 CE, she discovered that the Sabbath did not fall on a Saturday. Reportedly she tried to manipulate the astronomical data to the point where many committee members were suspicious. Committee members let her know that they were suspicious. For example, she is said to have proposed the idea that there could have been an extended delay in the moon's revolution around the Earth that month which could accommodate this large discrepancy. Although this theory could have explained a smaller discrepancy, a later analysis of her work by competent astronomers proved that she had manipulated the data so it would look like the Sabbath of Passion Week and the Passover of 31 CE could have accommodated a Saturday Sabbath interpretation of the 2,300 day prophecy of Daniel 8 which required a 33 CE date for the Crucifixion, so that all of this aided in the bogus but all-important start date of 457 BCE could be maintained. Without the 457 BCE start day, Adventists could not stretch their phony 2300 day "prophecy" to 1844—the date when Christ supposedly entered the Most Holy Place in the Heavenly Sanctuary, which, in turn, made it possible for the Seventh-day Adventist Church to come into existence and be the "only true church" in the world.

Flashing back now to the original GC committee that was scrapped in the late 1930's, note that M.L. Andreasen conceded that the lunar Sabbath concept appeared to be biblical, but he advised against its adoption because it would create utter confusion in the Church. He recommended that the committee present the General Conference leaders with a report that was fundamentally dishonest. Here is what Andreasen said about these things, attributed to him by another member of that committee, according to the authors of *"The Lunar Sabbath and the Seventh-day Adventist Church:"*

A possible solution: I suggest that we make a report to [GC President] Brother McElhaney of what the Millerites believed and how they arrived at their conclusions, without, at this time, committing ourselves upon the correctness of their method. Let Brother McElhaney publish this report in any way it may be thought best, and let us await the reaction. This, of course, would be only a preliminary report, and would be so designated. We will soon [see] what fire it will draw. In the meantime let us study further on the final report. The reaction to the preliminary report may determine the form of the final report.

Fast-forward to 1995. The 1995 committee was disbanded, just like the 1930's committee, and any meaningful records of its proceedings were destroyed. The Wierts paper never surfaced. No one knows what happened to the Andreasen letters either.

The Lunar Sabbath controversy continued to test the patience of General Conference leadership. In October of 2007, the Vornholts, an Adventist lunar Sabbatarian couple from Canada, published a landmark book entitled *The Great Calendar Controversy*. They saturated Adventist leadership with it and followed up with letters. The Vornholts met with General Conference leadership and then with the son of the former General Conference president, Robert Folkenburg Jr., who was serving in the capacity of the president of the Upper Columbia Conference of Seventh-day Adventists at the time. After the Vornholts refused to recant, Folkenburg Jr. disfellowshipped them. Not a single Adventist leader, pastor, or educator responded to the information that the Vornholts sent out.

A Sabbath-keeping church that refuses to keep its own Sabbath correctly when shown the light cannot be trusted to tell the truth regarding a much more important question, and that is whether Christians have any business keeping the Jewish Sabbath in the first place.

For the complete story, go to the following link, or use a search engine to find the website for 4 Angels Publications. We found it by doing a Google Search for "lunar Sabbath SDA." It happened to be the very top link.

http://www.4angelspublications.com/articles/Lunar_Sabbath_SDA_Church.php

THE FLAT EARTH MOVEMENT AND ADVENTISM

Adventism was one of the driving forces of the turn-of-the-century Flat Earth Movement.

It is no wonder that the General Conference of Seventh-day Adventists has squelched any discussion of the lunar Sabbath since the very beginning. If the lunar Sabbath is REAL—and it is—it wreaks havoc with the fundamental doctrines and prophecies of Adventism that work together to "prove" that the Seventh-day Adventist Church is the only true church in the world. Among other things, it's havoc-wreaking contributes to several factors that prove that the all-important Adventist date of 1844 is nothing more than a huge theological hoax, which also means that its Doctrine of the Investigative Judgment is a total farce.

Some early Adventists around the turn of the century beseeched Ellen White to render a statement from God's throne that the Earth was flat. She declined. Smart woman! But these Flat Earthers were even smarter. They could see that that God's fairness would not permit Him to require His people to keep the Sabbath if it were not possible to do so everywhere. In short, unless the Earth were flat, the Sabbath might have been made only for the Jews living in the mild climate of the Middle East. The Adventists who got involved with the Flat Earth Movement began to do research to prove that the Earth was flat! One such project involved surveying Lake Erie for any indication that it curved even just a little bit.

It is amazing but true. Adventism was a major force behind the Flat Earth Movement, and the reason it was should embarrass the socks right off its leaders.

If the Sabbath is a truly a moral commandment which applies to everyone, it must be "observable" everywhere. It is **not** observable everywhere! Imagine you are trying to keep the Jewish Sabbath above the Arctic Circle! The Arctic night "Sabbath" eventually arrives in the fall. Suddenly you are not allowed to light a fire in your dwelling place because the sun went down but didn't come back up. Your heater goes out. You honor God's "law" by not re-lighting it. The next morning you are found frozen to death, and you go down in history as a noble Christian Jewish Sabbath-keeper who would rather die than break the Jewish Sabbath. Perhaps you miraculously survive the Polar Winter "Sabbath" without a fire. You can't work for the oil company that hired you until the sun comes up and goes back down again, creating a Saturday and a Saturday night. Eventually, however, the sun does come back up, stays up for a day, and goes back down. The Arctic extended "Sabbath" is finally over. You can go to work now. Sabbath-keeping and working is near-normal, but eventually the Arctic summer arrives and the sun comes up and won't go down! Now you have to contend with a seemingly endless stretch of non-Sabbath time. Because the sun won't go down, Sabbath won't "start" on Friday night, and you can go to work continuously for weeks if you want to without breaking the Sabbath.

Things get even more complicated. When the first specification-meeting Sabbath arrives in the summer, the Arctic Sabbath-keeper might not be able to keep that first Saturday unless he had worked for six days prior to it. That might or might not happen. One to five working days prior to the first real Friday night would not meet the requirements of the Sabbath commandment.

Please review the dual requirements of the Sabbath commandment. Both requirements apply to Jews. Christians who keep the Jewish Sabbath seem to forget the six-day requirement for working since it works against the ill-contrived, non-biblical idea that Adam and Eve would have qualified to rest on the 7th day of Creation along with God, if there had been a Sabbath in Eden. God had worked for six days prior, but Adam and Eve had only existed for a day:

Exodus 20:8-11 (NIV): “Remember the Sabbath day by keeping it holy. ⁹Six days you shall labor and do all your work, ¹⁰but the seventh day is a Sabbath to the Lord your God. On it you shall not do any work, neither you, nor your son or daughter, nor your male or female servant, nor your animals, nor any foreigner residing in your towns. ¹¹For in six days the Lord made the heavens and the earth, the sea, and all that is in them, but he rested on the seventh day. Therefore the Lord blessed the Sabbath day and made it holy.

If you manage to die of over-work during this stretch of non-Sabbath time, you go down in history as the Sabbath-keeping Christian who would rather work yourself to death than break the Jewish Sabbath. Is it illogical to think that God would impose a moralistic law on His earthlings that could not be kept anywhere in the solar system. The sins of fornication and adultery can be committed on Planet Earth or in a space ship on its way to Mars, but the Sabbath can't be kept anywhere but in a climate like Palestine. The Adventist prophetess, Ellen G. White, “solves” this problem by mandating that people should not live in parts of the Earth where the Sabbath cannot be kept. Try presenting the Gospel to a Polar-living Eskimo while at the same time telling him that he has to move to a different part of the world in order to keep “God’s Law.”

"In the countries where there is no sunset for months and again no sunrise for months the period of time will be calculated by the records kept. But God has a world large enough and proper and right for the human beings He has created to inhabit it without finding homes in those lands so objectionable in very many, many ways" (Ellen G. White, Letter #167, 23 March, 1900).

For the above reference, follow this link: www.gospeloutreach.net/chap09.html

God gave the Sabbath to Israel only. The Nation of Israel is located in a mild climate where the sun does rise and set every 24 hours for the entire year and where the temperatures are usually moderate enough to get through a cold winter night simply by piling on the blankets.

If you lived in the Arctic Circle as so many people do now, would you be condemned to Hell and receive the Mark of the Beast because you COULD NOT keep the Sabbath right no matter how hard you tried? Would God have to give you a special dispensation to break His law so you wouldn't end up with the Mark of the Beast on your forehead?

The lunar Sabbath may solve many Sabbath-keeping problems for many people in various locations, but it fails to solve all of them. Sabbath-keepers at the North Pole cannot keep the Sabbath according to a fixed calendar or the lunar calendar. During the Arctic winter, the moon's position remains very close to the sun after it goes down. Here is what happens according to astronomer, Laura Spittler:

While the Moon does rise during the summer at the North Pole, since the Sun is always up, you generally can't see it, so I'll focus on the movement of the Moon during the winter.

The daily movement from Earth's rotation causes the Moon to circle once around the sky. If you spent the entire day staring at it, you'd have to turn around exactly once. This movement is also the same that the Sun makes during the summer . . .

The second movement caused by the Moon's orbit around the Earth is analogous to the movement of the Sun over the course of a year only it repeats over the course of a lunar month. Near the new Moon phase, the Moon is near the Sun and therefore never rises during the winter. As the Moon approaches full, it will start to pop up above the horizon. Eventually near the full Moon phase it will be high enough in the sky to stay up all day and circle like the Sun. . . The elevation of the circle will rise as the Moon becomes completely full and then start to decrease until it begins to dip below the horizon. Eventually the Moon will stop rising at all as it gets close enough to the new phase. The cycle then repeats.

Follow this link to the above reference: <http://curious.astro.cornell.edu/question.php?number=777>

On a round Earth, people live in places where the Sabbath cannot be kept. D.M. Canright reports in his book, *Seventh-day Ad-*

ventism Renounced, that a group of Adventist ministers in the State of New York had united in an effort to prove that the Earth was flat. What Canright said seems to be verified by records of the Flat Earth Society and the manuscripts of Ellen White. One Adventist Flat Earther, Alexander Gleason, wrote a book, *Is the Bible From Heaven? Is the Earth a Globe?*, published in 1898. It is believed that he is the person who demanded an answer from Ellen White. If so, he got this answer from her:

I have a message to this people in regard to the life they must live in this world to prepare them for future life which measures with the life of God. We have nought to do with the question whether this world is round or flat.—Manuscript 145, 1904."

Supporters of Ellen White would say that God had not yet seen fit to reveal to her whether the Earth was flat or round. We observe that she was shrewd in her reply since a stand for either position had the potential to destroy her credibility. If she said, "The Earth is round," she would instantly destroy a key pillar of support for the Sabbatarian belief system. If she said, "The Earth is flat," she maintains support for Sabbatarian thinking, but she opens herself up to losing all credibility as God's mouthpiece if Planet Earth were ever proven to be round. In retrospect, it seems unfortunate that Adventists did not continue to evaluate their own belief system with this kind of critical thinking. Following a visit to Norway, the Christian Forums veteran contributor, LarryP2, comments on the problem for Sabbath-keeping in that country:

When I was in Norway recently, the Adventist Sabbath began in the Arctic Circle at 11:30 Friday morning. Sabbatarians were required to lose Friday as either a working day or a school day. Some were agitating a return to a six p.m. Sabbath commencement as a solution to this difficult problem. One of those pressing for a more liberal interpretation of the law was a high-school teacher. He said, 'We have to recognize that the law was drafted to suit the needs of an agrarian people living in Palestine, not a highly industrialized society living within the Arctic Circle.' A measure of sanity indeed!"

<http://www.christianforums.com/t7820200/>

It is difficult to comprehend how a law could be considered "moral" if it can only be applied in certain places and at certain times. That would be like God teaching situational ethics! It is difficult to imagine how an idea that depends on the world being flat survived once it was determined that the Earth was round. But then, unfortunately, to many people religion does not have to make sense. That is like if you find a good belief and stick to it, He rewards you with a guarantee of salvation just for sticking to what you believe. And it helps to have supernaturally empowered public visions and the blessings of an "angel" companion to overcome any obstacles of reason or fact.

Consider a group of men and women on a spaceship headed to Mars. Sabbath-keeping is impossible in this situation because time takes on a different meaning away from Planet Earth. However, all of the other Ten Commandments, plus the additional moralistic laws included in the Law of Moses and the spiritual laws from the Sermon on the Mount, still apply to these space travelers. They can steal from each other. They can commit adultery and fornication. They can get involved in homosexual relationships. While reading their Bible's, believing space travelers could even be thinking to themselves something like, "I'm glad I'm not a sinner like that other person." Let's take it just one step further. Two Adventists are on the space ship. Both believe that Ellen White is God's prophet, and both of them misunderstand her prohibition against consuming vinegar. One Adventist consumes a vegetarian space burger that has vinegar-containing ketchup on it. The other Adventist consumes a vegetarian space burger that has no vinegar-containing ketchup on it. The Adventist who consumed the burger without the ketchup on it sins by thinking the self-righteous thought, "I am better than that other Adventist because he is violating Ellen White's prohibition against consuming vinegar, but I have held to the high standard and have not compromised with vinegar."

WHERE WOULD YOU DRAW THE SABBATH-KEEPING LINE?

There is no greater lunacy about the Sabbath than what happened to the Seventh-day Adventists of the South Pacific Islands of Western Samoa and Tokelau in 2011. On midnight of December 29, 2011, a world agreement moved the International Dateline from the American side to the Australian side for the purpose of benefiting tourism. These islands never experienced December 30th because an instant jump was made from December 29th to December 31st at 10:00 GMT. The seventh day of the week got turned into the day that was formerly Sunday on the Islands. The General Conference of Seventh-day Adventists considered the matter and decided that the Adventist churches on Samoa and Tokelau were to keep the same day they had always kept, ignoring the change of the International Dateline. As a result, Adventist Sabbath-keepers

on these islands began keeping Sunday with the other Christians, who just simply switched church days according to the official change. It seems that by special dispensation of the General Conference, the Adventists, who now are keeping the official Sunday will be protected against receiving the dreaded Mark of the Beast by a special dispensation of the General Conference president.

The ability of the General Conference to change Sunday into Saturday by dispensation appears to give it powers that rival the ecclesiastical authority falsely claimed at times by the pope. For the whole story, see the article in *Adventist Today*, "Samoa, the International Dateline Shift, and the Seventh-day Sabbath," which appeared in the publication in 2013 at the following link. **Note that the author of the *Adventist Today* article does not discuss the Mark of the Beast problem. The authors of *VERDICT* are solely responsible for taking the Mark of the Beast logic of Adventism to its furthest logical extent.** See the following link for more information:

<http://www.atoday.org/article/1937/opinion/hanson-andy/2013/samoa-the-international-dateline-shift-and-theseventh-day-Sabbath>

Hanson summarizes a variety of solutions submitted by various Sabbath-keeping theologians. He thought the problem was solved best by the lunar Sabbath approach.

The lunar calendar was used exclusively by ancient Israel until around the time of the building of the second temple. After that they seemed to have adopted the fixed calendars of their captors— a novel concept at the time. Things are less clear after that. Between the building of the second temple and the time of Christ there is some evidence that the Jews kept fixed Sabbaths and some evidence that they were still keeping lunar Sabbaths. The evidence that the Jews kept lunar Sabbaths continues for a few hundred years after Christ. This apparent discrepancy is solved once it is understood that most likely, both ways of keeping the Sabbath were utilized by different factions and populations of Jews up through about 300 CE. (Elsewhere, we will tell you about the circumstances that led to the total capitulation of the Jews to fixed Sabbath-keeping after around 300 CE.)

The available literature indicates that the fixed Sabbath week that Israel seems to have adopted by Israel during or after the Babylonian Captivity may have been altered once more by the Roman emperor, Constantine. Note in the following citation that we object to our source's view that there was a Hebrew Sabbath institution prior to the Exodus. We quote him according to his written statement:

The Samoa Dateline Dilemma shows that one cannot use the International Dateline in determining the Sabbath. In fact, the Old Testament Sabbath does not use the modern Gregorian Calendar: The calendar used by Moses was based upon the phases of the Moon, not a continuous weekly cycle.

The Old Testament calendar starts every month on New Moon Day, and the Sabbaths are always in the same place: The 8th, 15th, 22nd, and 29th of the month. This is why the feast days in Leviticus 23 have a Sabbath on the 15th of the month, and why the words "New Moon" and "Sabbath" often occur together in Scripture.

The Moon is the clock which orbits the round Earth and provides the reference for Biblical time. If this reference is ignored, then an arbitrary man-made marker (such as the International Date Line) has to be substituted.

The Sabbath is introduced in the Biblical book of Genesis. Note that does not say "count every seven days", but rather Genesis 1.14: And God said, Let there be lights in the firmament of the heaven to divide the day from the night; and let them be for signs, and for SEASONS, and for days, and years.

“The word for SEASONS is Strong’s #4150, ‘religious festivals’. Notice that Genesis 1:14 says that the "religious festivals" are designated by the "lights in...heaven". Psalms 104:19 identifies the light as the Moon.

The Sabbaths and Feast Days are linked by the Fourth Commandment as recorded in two different Bible books: The Fourth Commandment in Exodus 20 clearly references the seventh day Sabbath based on Creation; The Fourth Commandment in Deuteronomy 5 clearly references the seventh day Sabbath based on the deliverance from Egypt, which occurred on the evening of the Sabbath of Unleavened Bread.

Note that the Sabbath commandment in Deuteronomy 5:12-15 does not mention Creation, but rather the Exodus from Egypt, which happened on the 15th, at night. To repeat, the seventh-day Sabbaths are always

in the same place: The 8th, 15th, 22nd, and 29th of the month, and they use the same calendar as the Feast Days—the Lunar Calendar. The format of the Biblical Month:

The reason most Jews today keep Saturday is the same exact reason that most Christians keep Sunday—because of Constantine's calendar change, and the persecutions by which he enforced these changes. Prior to this, in 46-45 BC, Julius Caesar (the Julian Calendar) had separated the months and weeks from the Moon and made a continuous eight day cycle, but he did not enforce it on other nations living within the Empire.

In AD 321, Constantine created a compromise calendar. He blended the Hebrew idea of a seven day week with the Julian concept of a continuous weekly cycle, and added the veneration of the "sun god" from Mithraism to create the Roman calendar used today. He enforced his calendar upon the entire Roman Empire with military power.

Because of these changes which were being enforced by persecutions across the Roman Empire, the Jewish Sanhedrin met for the last time around AD 350, and modified their calendar to the form used by most Jews today, in which the Sabbath is on Saturday. Other Feast Days are determined using a form of the Lunar calendar.

Constantine's calendar was modified slightly by Pope Gregory into the calendar used today. However, the true Calendar ordained at Creation, according to Genesis 1:14 and Psalms 81:3, is based on the phases of the Moon. Therefore, neither Saturday nor Sunday is the Old Testament Sabbath, and the International Date Line is not involved at all.

This situation in Samoa is a tiny foreshadowing of what is coming. If the proposed New World Calendar is adopted, and the 364-day perpetual year is implemented, then the extra "blank" day (called "World Day Holiday") will disrupt any continuous seven-day cycle. At that point, the whole world will face a situation where the day that "should have been" Saturday or Sunday will fall on a different day.

<http://sda-samoa-dateline-Sabbath.info/>

NOTE: According to Hanson, this on-line source for this information no longer exists

LUNAR SABBATH RESEARCH

We consulted a variety of sources, including various Jewish encyclopedias. Our progress was slow until we encountered a definitive paper by lunar Sabbatarian author, John D. Keyser, entitled "From Sabbath to Saturday." The title says it all. The availability of his catalog of source material may have cut our work short by more than a thousand hours. You can study his entire paper at this Internet address:

<http://www.hope-of-israel.org/sabtosat.htm>

In the 8th Edition we were a little more tentative about the validity of the lunar Sabbath concept. We presented both the evidence for it and against it. While we have retained a review of the arguments used against the existence of the lunar Sabbath in Israel, additional study and thinking about the subject has convinced us that the evidence for it demonstrates that it is true beyond any reasonable doubt. We were impressed by the fact that researchers from a wide variety of backgrounds have also commented on this subject. The Christian Apologetics and Research Ministry has determined that Adventism is a cult. CARM anonymous contributor, "Troubleshooter," explains the lunar calendar trouble for Adventism posed by William Miller's calculations in his entry entitled, "The Adventist Sabbath Paradox: William Miller/Samuel Snow Calendar Calculations." Recall that the scholarly world greatly prefers the date of CE 33 for the date of Christ's crucifixion, based on a variety of considerations, including astronomy.

You may reference Troubleshooter's entry at the following Internet address:

http://adamoh.org/TreeOfLife.lan.io/Comms/CARM-cashed/Troubleshooters_CARM-Blog/William_Miller_Samuel_Snow_calendar_calculations.htm

William Miller (1782 – 1849) was an American Baptist preacher whose followers were called Millerites....

...he is credited with the beginning of the Advent movement of the 1830s and 1840s in North America...

...among his direct spiritual heirs are Seventh-day Adventists...

...who formed following 'the great disappointment' when Jesus did not return.

Prior to 1843/1844 William Miller held to a 33 AD date for the crucifixion of Christ in accord with most of Christendom...

...but changed his position to the 31 AD date to fit his 2300 day/year prophetic schema...

...which he saw as having the same start date in 457 BC as the 'seventy-sevens' (Dan 9:24)...

...then by converting the days to years in Daniel 8:14 using the extra-biblical year for a day principle...

...found the 2300 days/years terminus in 1844 on 22 October, the Karaite date of the Day of Atonement that year.

Question: How did changing to a Karaite luni-solar calendar make 31 AD a viable date?

Answer: On a luni-solar calendar every Passover falls on a weekly Sabbath day.

This is how it works...

...on a lunar calendar, weekly Sabbaths were calculated from the first appearance of the New Moon each month...

”In the first day ye shall have an holy convocation: ye shall do no servile work therein.” Lev 23:7...

The first day of the month was New Moon day, the day following the sighting of the New Moon, it was a rest day...

...then six work days were counted until the first Sabbath of the month that was always on the eighth day of the lunar cycle...

...so the 15th, the 22nd and the 29th were also weekly Sabbath's...

...then the New Moon was again sighted and the weekly cycle repeated.

So weekly Sabbaths in the Karaite luni-solar calendar were determined by the sighting of the New Moon each month...

...and not by the perpetual weekly cycle we use now.

For the Hebrews the lunar year began with the month Nisan...

...the 1st day of Nisan was calculated from the first sighting of the New Moon following the Barley Harvest...

...Barley naturally ripens according to the solar cycle, so this device kept the lunar year in sync with the solar year...

...with the occasional extra intercalated or leap month added to the end of the year.

The Passover lamb was killed on the 14th Nisan...

...and eaten that night, the night of the full moon (Passover Moon)...

...this was the beginning of the 15th Nisan which was a lunar weekly Sabbath every year.

So on the Karaite luni-solar calendar every Passover fell on a lunar weekly Sabbath...

...and William Miller/Samuel Snow relied on this Lunar calculation to place the crucifixion in 31 AD...

...to calculate 2300 days/years from 457 BC via 31 AD through to 1844...

...establishing 22 October 1844 as the Day of Atonement on which Miller believed Jesus would return.

...this is also the date that Seventh-day Adventists claim as their origin.

However, this created for Seventh-day Adventism a Sabbath paradox...

...when they later adopted a Saturday/Sabbath based on the Julian/Gregorian calendar...

...so their prophetic origin was determined by a lunar calendar that calculated weekly Sabbath from the New Moon each lunar cycle....

...but they observed a successive Saturday/Sabbath determined by the Roman Julian/Gregorian calendar...

...which cannot be reconciled with the conditions for a 31 AD crucifixion.

EVIDENCE FOR THE LUNAR SABBATH IN SCRIPTURE

The Jericho Campaign

Christian Apologetics and Research Ministry (CARM) contributor, "Troubleshooter," also explains how the lunar Sabbath concept is the only viable explanation for the 7-day march around the City of Jericho, and in doing so provides a variety of evidence that the Hebrews kept the Sabbath according to the phases of the moon. His article is entitled, "**The Adventist Sabbath Paradox - Jericho Campaign - 7 days without a Sabbath.**" It can be accessed at the following Internet address:

<http://forums.carm.org/vbb/entry.php?114-The-Adventist-Sabbath-Paradox-Jericho-Campaign-7-days-without-a-Sabbath>

The Manna ceased just before the Jericho campaign.

Now we know that the Manna first arrived on the sixteenth of Lyar...

...on the day following a Sabbath that fell on the 15th of the month.

Exodus 16:1-5 "And they took their journey from Elim, and all the congregation of the children of Israel came unto the wilderness of Sin, which is between Elim and Sinai, **on the fifteenth day of the second month after their departing out of the land of Egypt.** 2 And the whole congregation of the children of Israel murmured against Moses and Aaron in the wilderness: 3 And the children of Israel said unto them, Would to God we had died by the hand of the LORD in the land of Egypt, when we sat by the flesh pots, and when we did eat bread to the full; for ye have brought us forth into this wilderness, to kill this whole assembly with hunger. 4 Then said the LORD unto Moses, Behold, **I will rain bread from heaven for you;** and the people shall go out and gather a certain rate every day, that I may prove them, whether they will walk in my law, or no. 5 And it shall come to pass, that **on the sixth day they shall prepare that which they bring in; and it shall be twice as much as they gather daily.**"

Exodus 16:13-15 "And it came to pass, that at even the quails came up, and covered the camp: **and in the morning** the dew lay round about the host. 14 And when the dew that lay was gone up, behold, upon the face of the wilderness *there lay* a small round thing, as small as the hoar frost on the ground. 15 And when the children of Israel saw *it*, they said one to another, **It is manna:** for they wist not what it was. And Moses said unto them, **This is the bread which the LORD hath given you to eat.**"

Here is the spring calendar so you can follow the dates...

So the next Sabbath fell on the 22nd Lyar and then the 29th Lyar.

This pattern of weekly Sabbaths is also seen in the first month Nisan...

...and the third month Sivan (and possibly demonstrated in the fourth month)...

...three months in a row Sabbaths fell on the same days of the month...

...which can only happen using a luni/solar calendar but not in a Julian/Gregorian calendar.

The Manna then ceased just prior to the Jericho campaign...again notice the dates.

Joshua 5:10-13 "And the children of Israel encamped in Gilgal, and **kept the Passover on the fourteenth day of the month** at even in the plains of Jericho. 11 And they did eat of the old corn of the land on **the morrow after the Passover, unleavened cakes, and parched corn in the selfsame day.** 12 And **the manna ceased on the morrow after they had eaten of the old corn of the land**; neither had the children of Israel manna anymore; but they did eat of the fruit of the land of Canaan that year. 13 And it came to pass, when Joshua was by Jericho, that he lifted up his eyes and looked, and, behold, there stood a man over against him with his sword drawn in his hand: and Joshua went unto him, and said unto him, Art thou for us, or for our adversaries?"

The 14th Nisan was Passover (eaten in the evening beginning/evening of the 15th)...

...on a lunar calendar the 15th was always a weekly Sabbath...

...'the morrow' then that the Manna ceased was the 16th day Nisan...

...which was one month short of 40 years since the Manna was first given.

Then the campaign is described in Joshua 6:3-4...

"And ye shall compass the city, all ye men of war, *and* go round about the city once. Thus shalt thou do six days. 4 And seven priests shall bear before the ark seven trumpets of rams' horns: **and the seventh day ye shall compass the city seven times**, and the priests shall blow with the trumpets."

The seven day period is confirmed in the New Testament...

Hebrews 11:30 "By faith the walls of Jericho fell down, after they were **compassed about seven days.**"

The Book of Jasher also recounts the history of Israel and Jericho.

"And it was in **the second month, on the first day of the month**, that the Lord said to Joshua, Rise up, I have given **Jericho** into your hand with all of its people; and all your fighting men shall go round the city, once each day, in this manner shall you do **for six days.** 15 And the priests shall blow upon trumpets, and when you shall hear the sound of the trumpet, all the people shall give a great shouting, that the walls of the city shall fall down; all the people shall go up every man against his opponent. 16 And Joshua did so according to all that the Lord had commanded him. 17 **And on the seventh day they went round the city seven times**, and the priests blew upon trumpets. 18 And at the seventh round, Joshua said to the people, Shout, for the Lord has delivered the whole city into our hands." Jasher 88:14-18

According to the Book of Jasher...

...the Jericho campaign began on the first day of the second month Lyar...

...this was a New Moon day...

...so the Jericho victory was complete on the seventh day of the month...

...the day before the first lunar Sabbath of the month on day eight.

So with reference to a luni/solar calendar...

...the Jericho campaign continued for seven days without violating the Sabbath command.

With a perpetual seven day cycle, one day of the seven would have to be a Sabbath.

It would seem strange if the Lord would have Israel keep Sabbath for forty years...

...and then have them break it as soon as they entered Canaan to defeat Jericho...

...but the anomaly is solved by reference to the succession of Lunar weekly Sabbaths.

By using the luni/solar calendar evident in the biblical text and historical documents...

...there is no conflict between the conditions of the Sabbath command to Israel and the defeat of Jericho.

Here is the month of Lyar highlighting the seven Jericho campaign days.

The Book of Jasher specifies "...the second month, on the first day of the month..."...

...so day 1 is New Moon day...

...then an additional 6 days till day 7 which is the day before the Sabbath on day 8.

Footnote:

The Book of Jasher is mentioned twice in Holy Writ...

Joshua 10:13 "And the sun stood still, and the moon stayed, until the people had avenged themselves upon their enemies. Is not this **written in the book of Jasher**? So the sun stood still in the midst of heaven, and hasted not to go down about a whole day."

2 Samuel 1:17-19 "And David lamented with this lamentation over Saul and Jonathan his son, 18 and he said it should be taught to the people of Judah; behold, it is **written in the Book of Jasher**. He said: 19 "Thy glory, O Israel, is slain upon thy high places! How are the mighty fallen!"

The Book of Jasher was first translated into English in 1840...

...Ellen White regarded it as reliable history and quoted/paraphrased/plagiarized from it about sixteen times.

The Book of Ezekiel

Keyser, in *From Sabbath to Saturday*, tells of a situation in the *Book of Ezekiel* that he says can only be satisfactorily explained with the lunar Sabbath principle. Quoting *Scribner's Dictionary of the Bible* (1898), page 521:

According to *Scribner's Dictionary of the Bible* (1898), in the time of the earliest prophets, the New Moon stood in the same line with ANOTHER LUNAR OBSERVANCE, THE Sabbath. Ezekiel, who curiously enough frequently dates his prophecies on the New Moon (See Eze. 26:1; 29:17, 31:1, and 32:1) describes the gate of the inner court of the (new) temple looking eastward as kept shut for the six working days, but *opened on the Sabbath and the New Moon*.

He explains the situation as follows:

We find that in the book of Ezekiel the prophet begins his book by dating it while he was by the river Chebar in the 5th year of King Jehoiachin's captivity on the 5th day of the 4th month (Ezekiel 1:1-2). He was commanded by YEHOVAH God to go to the House of Israel and speak to them (Ezekiel 3:4-5). Then, he sat before them seven days (verses 15-16) and, in chapter 4, YEHOVAH commanded Ezekiel to act out a prophecy concerning both Israel and Judah. Acting out this prophecy required Ezekiel to lay on his left side for 390 days, then turn to his right side and lay on it for 40 days (Ezekiel 4:1-6). Upon completion of YEHOVAH's instructions, Ezekiel again dated his prophecy in the 6th year, 6th month, and fifth day (Ezekiel 8:1) — exactly one year and two months later.

Now if Ezekiel was using a purely solar calendar (such as we use today), this period of time should have been 425 days or possibly 432 days if it was the 28th year when an extra week was added. Adding up the days that Ezekiel counted (this does not include any travel time), we get $7 + 390 + 40 = 437$ days.

With this number of days in this period of time, *it is not possible* for the calendar to be a solar type — as some people have proposed. Nor could it be a regular lunar/solar calendar year of 12 months. The only possibility is *a lunar/solar calendar year that has the extra month added*. Adding up the time allowed in a 13-month year plus two months, gives us a period of time that lasts 443 days plus or minus one or two

days to correct for the variable number of 29 or 30-day months. This agrees with Ezekiel's account of 437 days plus a few days of traveling time.

It is obvious from scripture, then, that the calendar of Israel during the time of the prophets was a lunar/solar calendar of the type that incorporated weeks that were *determined by the phases of the moon*. It is also beyond doubt that the lunar weekly cycle was not lost from the time of the prophets to the time of the Messiah.

EVIDENCE FROM THE DEAD SEA SCROLLS

Again, Keyser's research uncovered evidence for the use of the lunar calendar to schedule Sabbath days in the *Dead Sea Scrolls*. He observes that what has been discovered helps document the case for the likely assumption that there were still Jews in Israel observing the Lunar Sabbath in the first century BCE. He cites ***The Dead Sea Scrolls: A New Translation*** (Wise, Abegg, and Cook. San Francisco: Harper Collins, 1996. P. 298).

When the Dead Sea Scrolls were uncovered, the archaeologists found three manuscripts dating to around the first century B.C. that had one purpose in common: to synchronize the 354-day lunar calendar with the 364-day solar calendar. In addition, the archaeologists found that two of these manuscripts — 4Q320 and 4Q321 — record the beginnings of the solar months and the festivals. The third, 4Q321A, may have done so as well, but, unfortunately, the relevant portion of the text has perished. All of these texts designate the name of the *priestly rotation* in service at the temple in Jerusalem at the time in question. Twenty-four courses of priests served altogether — rotating into service for a week at a time. The names of these courses follow the Biblical list found in I Chronicles 24:7-18.

Now in manuscript 4Q320 Mishmerot A (fragment 1, column 1) we find —

Line 7: On the Sabbath of the course of Hakkoz is THE THIRTIETH DAY OF THE LUNAR MONTH, on the thirtieth day of the second solar month.

Line 12: On the Sabbath of the course of Seorim IS THE TWENTY-NINTH DAY OF THE LUNAR MONTH, on the twenty-fifth day of the seventh solar month.

Going now to manuscript 4Q321 Mishmerot Ba (fragment 1, column 1) we read —

Lines 4 & 5:...and the FIRST CRESCENT [of the moon] is on the Sabbath of the course of Pethahiah, ON THE NINTH OF THE MONTH.

Finally, in manuscript 4Q321A Mishmerot Bb we discover —

Line 5: The FULL MOON IS ON THE Sabbath of the course of Koz, on the thirtieth day of the second month...

Right here is plain evidence that the priests in Jerusalem were keeping the lunar-based calendar that included *weeks pegged to the phases of the moon!* This was in the first few centuries before the Messiah. In a note found in ***The Dead Sea Scrolls: A New Translation*** we find mentioned that without correction "the LUNAR CALENDAR of the scroll writers lost nearly half an hour a month. These differences might be relatively insignificant for a few years, but eventually the seasons would begin to wander through the year, and THE PHASES OF THE MOON would not correspond to what was expected.

WORTHY OBJECTIONS TO THE LUNAR SABBATH THEORY

Nehemia Gordon, a prominent advocate for Karaite Judaism and the web master for the Karaite Corner, listed the following objections to the lunar Sabbath theory in a recent pod cast. His position is that the Jews never observed the lunar Sabbath. (Later we quote from an entry on the Karaite Corner's website the current position of Karaite Judaism that Jews have known for a very long time that the day they accept as their 7th day was arbitrarily chosen and may or may not be an exact seven-day multiple of the 7th day of Creation.) Gordon is a former president of a Jewish university, and his opinion is worthy of respect because of his presumed knowledge of the Hebrew language and the history of Judaism:

People who espouse this concept tend to have gotten their idea from skeptical scholars from the past who believe that the Hebrews borrowed the Sabbath idea from the pagan nations around them. The pagan “Sabbath” was lunar-based. Currently (2014), even most skeptical scholars have abandoned this theory of the origin of the Sabbath concept.

You can go anywhere in the world and find that the Jews in every country where they are found worship on the same seventh day. Furthermore, this has been true for over 2,000 years. None of these Jews seem to know anything about a wandering Sabbath that was based on the lunar month.

The only scriptural evidence of something Sabbath-related that “moved” was the Sabbatical Year, which had to be adjusted frequently to get their years to correlate properly with the seasons.

Although the Jews eventually adopted pagan names for the days of the seven-day week, this fact would not necessarily mean that the Jews abandoned a supposed lunar week with Hebrew names for a fixed week with those pagan names. Furthermore, the theory that the wandering Sabbath had to be moved to “fixed” Saturday because the pagan name for the fixed 7th day, Saturday, was related to the word from any language for “Sabbath.” Rather, Saturday was named in honor of the pagan god, Saturn.

In addition to these objections of Nehemia Gordon, other biblical scholars report that they have studied the Scriptures from end to end and have not found any evidence that God instructed Israel to observe the Sabbath according to the lunar calendar. Some researchers report that they find exceptions to the rules of the so-called lunar Sabbath principles that disprove the entire theory. The work of scholars who oppose the lunar Sabbath are widely available on the Internet and appear to be worthy of further study.

MORE SUPPORT FOR THE LUNAR SABBATH THEORY

Let us evaluate the objections of Nehemia Gordon. **First**, the issue of whether the Hebrews borrowed the Sabbath concept from the pagans or it came from direct, divine revelation would tell us nothing about how the Jews practiced that belief, wherever that belief might have come from.

We— that is the four of us authors— are very much opposed to the now discredited, skeptical, naturalistic view that the Hebrews produced their own Sabbath without direct, divine intervention. Our view is that the Sabbath came straight from God's hand at the time of the Exodus, but we believe that it is entirely possible that God might possibly have adapted the basic concept from the natural principles in regard to keeping time that He set forth in Genesis 1 and which seemed to have been practiced in various ways by virtually all societies, whether the people were pagan or not. Remember that by the time God found Abraham, the entire world had become essentially pagan.

Second, the fact that Jews everywhere have kept the same fixed 7th day for a very long time—perhaps for a couple thousand years—tells us nothing about whether the ancient Hebrews observed the lunar Sabbath prior to the building of the second temple hundreds of years before the birth of Christ. The primary claim of lunar Sabbatharians is that the Jews kept the Sabbath according to the lunar calendar prior to the building of the Second Temple, although they cite evidence that some of the Jewish sects were observing the lunar Sabbath at the time of Christ and that some Christians and some Jews kept the lunar Sabbath for a few hundred years after the death of Christ. (We will look at the evidence for these additional claims later.)

Third, there is actually biblical evidence, as we have already pointed out, that Israel kept the Sabbath according to the lunar calendar. In fact some very tenacious lunar Sabbath researchers have uncovered much more than we present in this book, and their work is available with an Internet search.

As you will learn later, world civilizations did not have any notion of a fixed calendar until around the time of the building of the Second Temple. Just as the idea of a lunar calendar with extra days at the end of the month is incomprehensible to us today, so the idea of a fixed calendar would have been unfathomable to Ancient civilizations. **It appears that in these ancient times the concept of a week existed, but not that of a fixed week.** The week was based on the four phases of the moon, which were approximately seven days in length. It would be unreasonable to expect God or Moses to spell-out that the Sabbath had to be kept according to a lunar calendar because there was no other way known at the time to keep it.

The ancient civilizations contemporary to the Exodus Era marked time by lunar months. We also know that their smallest “absolute” unit of time less than a solar year was the lunar month. There was a similar universal lack of concern for the “extra” days that were left over between the fourth phase of the Moon and the new Moon. These civilizations were focused on the absolute reference point represented by the appearance of each new moon, despite the fact that this absolute reference points were not equally distant from each other in time.

The lunar Sabbath concept is a good example of the danger of studying the Bible without an understanding of the culture and the language which produced it. The modern reader “cannot see the forest for the trees.” Biblical writers seemed not to be aware of any other way to keep track of units to time that were less than one month.

Note that much of the time that Israel spent trying to adjust its calendars after Hezekiah’s sundial miracle occurred between the Testaments, which might possibly explain why the change from a lunar to a fixed calendar is not mentioned in Scripture. At the same time, as you recall, there is evidence that Israel was still keeping the Sabbath according to the lunar calendar, since the Sabbath appears not to have occurred on Saturday during the Passover Week in 31 CE—the Passover year which Adventists have studied intensely because they do not like the preferred date of 33 CE.

It is surprising, then, that Sabbatarians have generally claimed that this Heathen familiarity with the Sabbath concept came from a dim memory of a Sabbath ordinance that was established at the very beginning of human existence on Planet Earth. Now that it has become much better known that the Hebrew linguistics of Genesis 2, Exodus 16, and Exodus 20 forbid a Sabbath before the time of the Exodus, this claim has become untenable. Instead, the early awareness of a Sabbath system that is characteristic of these ancient cultures is more easily explained by “natural” causes, if “natural” is defined as a natural principle established by God Himself by Creating the Sun and the Moon and commanding human beings to use their movements to determine their sacred days. Here is what Moses said God said:

Genesis 1:14 (NIV) - And God said, “Let there be lights in the vault of the sky to separate the day from the night, and let them serve as signs to mark sacred times, and days and years, ¹⁵ and let them be lights in the vault of the sky to give light on the earth.” And it was so. ¹⁶ God made two great lights—the greater light to govern the day and the lesser light to govern the night. He also made the stars. ¹⁷ God set them in the vault of the sky to give light on the earth, ¹⁸ to govern the day and the night, and to separate light from darkness. And God saw that it was good. ¹⁹ And there was evening, and there was morning—the fourth day.

We have suggested that God “borrowed” the Sabbath system from the cultures that surrounded Egypt and Israel, but we utilized that expression just to make a quick point. Since God established the lunar system of determining sacred days and ordained that human beings would use the movements of the Moon to schedule their holy days, God could not really borrow it since He established its principles in the beginning.

Lunar Sabbath Researcher, John D. Keyser, has studied the Heathen Sabbath system in depth, and he presents numerous examples of it in his remarkable book, *From Sabbath to Saturday*. These are some examples he discovered:

Assyria

Discovered by Assyriologist, George Smith in 1869 among the cuneiform tablets in the British Museum and summarized here by Hutton Webster:

. . . a curious religious calendar of the Assyrians, in which every month is divided into four weeks, and the seventh days or “Sabbaths,” are marked out as days on which no work should be undertaken.”

It appears to be a transcript of a much more ancient Babylonia original, possibly belonging to the age of Hammurabi, which has been made by order of Ashurbanipal and placed in his royal library at Nineveh. The calendar, which is complete for the thirteenth or intercalary month, called Elul II, and for Markheshwan, the eighth month of the Babylonia year, takes up thirty days in succession and indicates the deity to which each day is sacred and what sacrifices or precautionary measures are necessary for each day.

All the days are styled “favourable,” an expression which must indicate a pious hope not a fact, since the words *ud-khul-gal* or *umu limnu* (“the devil day”) are particularly applied to the seventh, fourteenth, nineteenth, twenty-first, and twenty-eight days . . . With regard to the reasons which dictate the choice of the

seventh, fourteenth, twenty-first, and twenty-eighth days, two views have been entertained. It has been held, in the first place, that the “evil days” were selected as CORRESPONDING TO THE MOON’S SUCCESSIVE CHANGES; hence the seventh day marks the close of the earliest form of the seven-day week, A WEEK BOUND UP WITH THE LUNAR PHASES.

(Hutton Webster, *Rest Days: a Study in Early Law and Morality*, New York: The MacMillan Company, 1916, p. 223-224.)

It seems like the utilization of the lunar calendar appears to have produced some extra rest days between the months:

Assurbanipal in the seventh century promulgated a calendar with a definite scheme of a seven-day week, a regulation of the month by which all men were to rest on days 7, 14, 19, 21, 28. The old menology of Nisan made the TWO DAYS OF THE DARK OF THE MOON, 29, 30, rest days, so that each lunar month had 9 rest days, on which neither the sick could be cured nor a man in difficulty consult a prophet, none might travel, and fasting was enforced.

Babylon

Keyser cites Hutton Webster, a contributor to *Rest Days: A Study in Early Law and Morality*, pp. 228-229, regarding the fact that the Babylonian “Epic of Creation,” includes a discussion of lunar weeks that end in a Sabbath rest day. Keyser says:

“Finally,” writes Webster, “in the fifth tablet of the Babylonian ‘Epic of Creation,’ a work which in its original form is traced to the close of the third millennium B.C., it is told how the god Marduk, having created and set in order the heavenly bodies, then placed the moon in the sky to make known the days and DIVIDE THE MONTH WITH HER PHASES.” “Although this interesting production, in its present mutilated state,” elicits Webster, “mentions only the seventh and fourteenth days, we are entitled to believe that the original text also referred to the twenty-first and twenty-eighth days of the month.”

Keyser’s research suggests that the seven-day week synchronized to the four phases of the moon was virtually universal in the ancient world that surrounded Israel. He cites the work of *Hastings’ Dictionary of the Bible* (Charles Scribner & Sons, New York, 1892-1902), the article, “On Sabbath: Babylonian,” it appears that the document referenced by Hastings is the same one referenced by Webster above:

Almost all scholars today agree that the primal seven-day calendar, as used among the very ancient Semites (including the Babylonians and Hebrews), was based upon the moon. Furthermore, this unique weekly cycle was observed in tandem with the lunar phases. An example of the early week, based upon the phases of the moon, is described in the *Fifth Tablet of the Semitic Story of Creation*. Note that the moon is said to “make known the days” and its horns “the seasons,” creating the Sabbath on the 7th and 14th days of the month. Quoting the tablet’s translation, he finds:

[The moon] He caused to shine, ruling the night: He set him then as a creature of the Night, **to make known the days.**

Monthly unfailing, He provided him with a tiara.

At the beginning of the month then,

Appearing in the land,

The horns shine forth to make known the seasons.

MORE ABOUT THOSE EXTRA DAYS!

The orbit of the moon around the Earth varies as the Earth rotates around the Sun. Therefore, the lunar months are not necessarily equal in length. And because this is true, the number of extra days at the end of each lunar month vary also.

Elsewhere, we cite the work of Benner, a noted Hebrew language scholar. Benner says that the Hebrew language is often impossible to translate accurately without an advanced understanding of the culture that produced it. The culture in which the early Israelites and their ancestors found themselves was overwhelmingly enmeshed in the concept of the lunar calen-

dar and the lunar week. The fact is that only since around the time of the Babylonian and Assyrian empires did civilizations have weeks that “butted up” against each other.

However, by either method of reckoning time, a week is always seven days. The extra days that resulted from the use of the lunar calendar were not thought of as belonging to the lunar weeks.

The ancients likely rested on these extra days for reasons related to both fertility and superstitious considerations. They did not fail to notice that the number of days it takes the Moon to go around the Earth is roughly equal to the number of days in a woman’s reproductive cycle. Notice the research of Janet and Stewart Farrar in their book, *The Witches’ Goddess* (Phoenix Publishing, pp. 24-25, & p. 106):

The modern use of seven day weeks also stems from the ancient lunar calendar. The first of every lunar month was marked as the first day of a new week and a Sabbath was celebrated every seventh day to mark the 4 quarters of the moon. The last week was followed by the days of the dark moon when the goddess was held to be menstruating and so an extended Sabbath was observed until the waxing crescent moon reappeared and the new month began.

The Jewish Encyclopedia addresses the problem of the extra days between the lunar months with this explanation in Volume 10, p. 482, the article, “Week”

The idea of the week, as a subdivision of the month [was found] . . . in Babylonia, where each lunar month was divided into four parts, CORRESPONDING TO THE FOUR PHASES OF THE MOON. The first week of each month began with the new moon, so that, as the lunar month was one or two days more than four periods of seven days, these additional days were not reckoned at all. Every seventh day (*sabbatum*) was regarded as an unlucky day. This method of reckoning time spread westward through Syria and Palestine, and WAS ADOPTED BY THE ISRAELITES, probably after they settled in Palestine.

Another well-respected encyclopedia supports this view. *The New Schaff-Herzog Religious Encyclopedia* was an English translation of a German encyclopedia that had been published first in 1805, and the American version was released between 1908 and 1914, according to its *Wikipedia* entry:

“The Israelites . . . made the Sabbath the feasts of a living and holy God. The work of man became symbolic of the work of God, and human rest of divine rest, so that the Sabbaths became preeminently days of rest. Since, moreover, the LUNAR MONTH had 29 or 30 days, the normal lapse of time between Sabbaths was six days, although sometimes seven or eight; and six working days were accordingly assigned to the creation, which was to furnish a prototype for human life. The connection of the Sabbath with lunar phases, however, was [later] discarded by the Israelites . . .” (*The New Schaff-Herzog Religious Encyclopedia*, pages 135-136.)

THE CONCEPT OF PROPITIATION VERSUS A SABBATH PRESENCE IN GENESIS

A Creation Sabbath ordinance seems to create an unacceptable theological corollary. The Greek word (*sabbaton*) is translated from the Hebrew word for “Sabbath.” The root meaning of the word, *sabbaton*, has a distinct connotation of propitiation. Propitiation is a concept foreign to the Garden of Eden prior to the Fall, and there is no mention of anything that could even be construed as a reference to the Sabbath between the account of the Fall and the Exodus. Therefore, the idea that there was a propitiating Sabbath ordinance prior to the Fall is theologically inappropriate.

Notice, however, that Keyser adds his own Sabbatarian bias by trying to associate the concept of *sabbaton* with a Creation-established Sabbath ordinance. Keyser seems to fail to grasp the full significance the passage he quotes from Jastrow. It would be very difficult for a Hebrew scholar who possessed a mastery of the Ancient Hebrew language to conclude that there was a Sabbath at Creation in view of the absoluteness of the Hebrew linguistics of Genesis 2, Exodus 16, and Exodus 20 together, plus the problem that the Sabbath concept is associated with propitiation:

It is also mentioned, in the *Encyclopedia Biblica*, that “the Hebrew *Sabbathon* conveys the idea of propitiation or appeasement of divine anger and [it] is...the opinion [of Professor Jastrow] that the Hebrew Sabbath (i.e.

CREATION Sabbath) was originally a *Sabbathon*— i.e. a day of propitiation and appeasement; marked by atoning rites...it was celebrated at intervals of seven days, CORRESPONDING WITH CHANGES IN THE MOON'S PHASES, and was identical in character with the four days in each month, i.e. 7th, 14th, 21st, and 28th! (The MacMillan Company, 1899. P. 4180).

The same encyclopedia adds (p. 4173) that:

The word "Sabbath" is a feminine form/word. The ROOT (of Sabbath) has NOTHING to do with resting in the sense of enjoying repose; in transitive forms and applications, it means: "*to sever*"; "*to put an end to*"; intransitively, it means "*to desist*" — "*to come to an end.*" In a transitive sense — "*the divider*" — indicates the Sabbath as dividing the month. It certainly cannot be translated 'The Day of Rest.'"

The concept of propitiation is not compatible with a Creation setting for the Sabbath ordinance. Sin had not yet entered the world, and there was nothing God had to do in the way of propitiation for mankind at that time. Since the days of the Jewish Sabbath system obtain their sacredness from the animal sacrifices that are offered upon it—sacrifices which pointed forward to the death of the coming Messiah on the Cross, we have good reason not only to view the choice of *sabbaton* to represent it's Hebrew equivalent as accurate and to tend to disqualify the Sabbath as a Creation ordinance on the basis of its propitiation connotations alone. Additionally, we have another reason to accept the Hebrew linguistics that indicate that the 7th day of Creation is best characterized as merely a separator placed between the days of God's creative activity and His days of non-creative activity.

Keyser's research led him to discover that there seems to be a correlation between the Assyrian Code of Hammurabi and the pagan lunar Sabbath system of the Assyrians. He notes that the well-known pioneer Assyriologist, George Smith, discovered cuneiform tablets that included "a curious religious calendar of the Assyrians, in which every month is divided into four weeks, and the seventh days or 'Sabbaths,' are marked out as days on which *no work* should be undertaken."

Note that a functional analysis of the pagan Sabbaths suggests that these Sabbaths served as separators between the four phases of the Moon.

Keyser adds that about six years after Smith's discovery, a researcher by the name of Sir Henry Rawlinson published this calendar in the fourth volume of his standard collection of cuneiform inscriptions. Keyser quotes Hutton Webster's 1916 book, *Rest Days: A Study in Early Law and Morality*, (New York: The MacMillan Company, p. 223,224) as follows:

It appears to be a transcript of a much more ancient Babylonian original, possibly belonging to the age of Hammurabi, which had been made by order of Assurbanipal and placed in his royal library at Nineveh. The calendar, which is complete for the thirteenth or intercalary month, called Elul II, and for Markheshwan, the eighth month of the Babylonian year, takes up the thirty days in succession and indicates the deity to which each day is sacred and what sacrifices or precautionary measures are necessary for each day.

All the days are styled "favourable," an expression which must indicate a pious hope, not a fact, since the words *ud-khul-gal* or *umu limnu* ("the evil day") are particularly applied to the SEVENTH, FOURTEENTH, nineteenth, TWENTY-FIRST, and TWENTY-EIGHTH days...With regard to the reasons which dictate the choice of the seventh, fourteenth, twenty-first, and twenty-eighth days, two views have been entertained. It has been held, in the first place, that the "evil days" were selected as CORRESPONDING TO THE MOON'S SUCCESSIVE CHANGES; hence that the seventh day marks the close of the earliest form of the seven-day week, A WEEK BOUND UP WITH THE LUNAR PHASES.

From Sabbath to Saturday also reports that the Babylonians had a calendar in the 7th Century BCE that combined the lunar method of time-keeping with resting according to the phases of the moon. Keyser quotes S. Langdon, in his book ***Babylonian Menologies and the Semitic Calendar*** (London: Oxford University Press, 1935, pp. 86-87) as follows:

Asurbanipal in the seventh century promulgated a calendar with a definite scheme of a seven-day week, a regulation of the month by which all men were to rest on days 7, 14, 19, 21, 28. The old menology of Nisan made the TWO DAYS OF THE DARK OF THE MOON, 29, 30, rest-days, so that each lunar month had 9 rest-days, on which neither the sick could be cured nor a man in difficulty consult a prophet; none might travel and fasting was enforced (London: Oxford University Press, 1935. Pp. 86-87).

The calendar of Asurbanipal helps us grasp the concept of how the ancients handled the problem of the extra days at the

end of the month. They simply made them into rest days. Elsewhere we mention how this concept of the extra days in the lunar month provides the only satisfactory explanation for the *appearance* of Sabbath-breaking at God's command during the Battle Of Jericho.

THE EVIDENCE:

OUR THEORY OF THE ORIGIN OF THE HEBREW SABBATH

As mentioned elsewhere, the Children of Israel kept their first Sabbath in the Wilderness of the Moon—recalling that the Semitic word for MOON is SIN. God gave the Ten Commandments to Israel from the Mountain of the Moon, or Mt. *Sinai*. Also, God gave the Ten Commandments, with its Sabbath commandment, from Mt. Sinai on the 15th of the month, which was the pagan High Sabbath of the lunar month. Keyser cites Hutton Webster, once again, for his discovery of the lunar Sabbath concept with the worship of Sin, the Semitic god of the Moon, as well as with the Babylonian Creation story. He quotes Webster's book, *Rest Days: A Study in Early Law and Morality*, pp. 228-229:

"A similar association with the moon's course," is set forth in the case of a seven-day period in a text which specifically indicates the seventh, fourteenth, twenty-first, and twenty-eighth days as those of Sin, the moon god. . . . Another text, connects several days of the month with the moon's course in the following order: first day, new moon; seventh day, moon as 'kidney' (half moon); fifteenth day, full moon. . . In the fifth tablet of the Babylonian 'Epic of Creation,' a work which in its original form is traced to the close of the third millennium B.C., it is told how the god Marduk, having created and set in order the heavenly bodies, then placed the moon in the sky to make known the days and DIVIDE THE MONTH WITH HER PHASES." "Although this interesting production, in its present mutilated state, mentions only the seventh and fourteenth days, we are entitled to believe that the original text also referred to the twenty-first and twenty-eighth days of the month."

God never commanded the Hebrews to keep His holy Sabbath day according to intervals of seven that represented exact seven-day multiples of the exact, one and only, seventh day of Creation. Such a thing is not present or even implied in Genesis 2 when God told us what HE DID on the 7th day of Creation.

If, indeed, God did “borrow” from the pagan Sabbath idea to create Israel's holy Sabbath system, it would not be the only example of its kind. The Jews borrowed the heathen practice of baptism from the pagans, and Christianity borrowed it from the Jews. When a Gentile became a Jewish proselyte, he was baptized. John the Baptist baptized the Jews as a symbol of their desire to live a more righteous life. Therefore, when Jesus instructed his disciples to go throughout the world preaching and baptizing in His name, He was commanding them to use a tradition that originated in paganism.

If God did arrive at His concept for a Sabbath ordinance in this way, He gave Israel a worship system that would work for them “right out the door.” Why complicate things? They already knew how to use the Sabbath system. It would simply have acquired a new meaning to them. And how much simpler could it be to implement? Calendars, with all their many problems and discrepancies, were not even needed. Just watch for the first sight of the new moon, and the month, first week, and first day of the week start all over again. If there are any days left over after the last week, no worries! Be happy, and use them as an excuse to relax a while longer. Watch for the first appearance of the new moon. Adjust your solar year according to the barley harvest to keep everything in sync with the sun, and you have about as good a time-keeping system as you could hope for on an imperfect planet that rebelled against God and is growing old like a garment. These principles were so easy to follow whether the Jews were in their homeland or in the lands of their captivities. The Sabbath principle itself was morally neutral. It took on meaning only as things that have moral implications became associated with it.

The evidence that God borrowed the Sabbath concept from Israel's existing cultural experience is remarkable when you stop to think about it. God gave the Sabbath commandment to Israel on the pagan High Sabbath of the lunar month. Fresh out of Egypt, the Hebrews were familiar with the concept of the High Sabbath, which always occurred on the 15th of each lunar month. Add this together with the fact that God gave the Sabbath commandment from high atop the Mountain of the Moon (Mt. Sinai), which was situated high above the Wilderness of the Moon (The Wilderness of Sin), and you have a parallel between the pagan Sabbath system and the Jewish Sabbath system that screams to be acknowledged.

For one thing, if God had not borrowed the Hebrew Sabbath system from the lunar concept that was in wide-spread use by Israel's neighbors, it seems that He would have done everything possible to avoid doing anything that would connect the two ideas in the minds of His people. Instead, He gave His Sabbath commandment to them on the pagan high Sabbath day of the lunar month. The Semitic word for "moon" is "sin." He probably would have chosen a better place and time to give it to Israel – one that had no pagan connotations – if He had not adapted the pagan lunar Sabbath system for Israel.

Here is another thing God seems to have borrowed from Israel's neighbors to give them a Sabbath concept that they could understand. He modeled His covenant with Israel, the Ten Commandments, after the formula for the treaties that Israel's neighbors made with one another. It was the custom of the nations that surrounded Israel to draft their treaties in the form of the requirements imposed on them spelled out with a ceremonial requirement of rehearsal placed right in the middle. The Sabbath commandment is right in the very middle of the Ten Commandments when calculated by a word count, exactly like the treaties of their neighbors which were drafted! The required in-the-middle ceremony was designed to help the conquered people remember the one who had the power to subjugate them, as well as to remember his actual requirements of them. (See *Law and Covenant in Israel and the Ancient Near East*, George E. Mendenhall, 1954; and "The Two Tables of the Covenant," Meridith Kline, *Westminster Theological Journal* 22 (1960) pp. 133-146).

This fact blows away the notion that all ten of the commandments were moralistic in nature. Look at the models for the Ten Commandments. Every one of these models which scholars have studied from the countries that surrounded Egypt and Israel had a ceremonial requirement right in the very middle of the list of requirements, right down to the word count on both sides, counting from the middle to the respective beginning of the list and the end of the list.

We see God's preference for working within a familiar culture in other aspects of the Law of Moses. Look at His decision to control the practice of slavery rather than to outlaw it completely. The practice of slavery was universal at the time. The way the Heathen practiced it created extreme human suffering. God's regulations for slavery were just, humane, and designed to give the worker-slave his or her freedom within seven years (in some cases).

Similarly, He chose to control – not to erase – certain inequalities between men and women. The Law of Moses provided, for example, that women could own property, and they enjoyed many protections and privileges in Israel while women in surrounding countries were frequently treated as having less value than livestock. Jehovah seems to have chosen to work within the culture of the day whether in regard to the Sabbath, slavery, or women's rights. In Israel female slaves had a status of honor and protection unheard of in the Heathen world.

The lunar month and the lunar-based seven-day week system were simply the way things worked in both pagan societies, among the children of Abraham prior to the Egyptian Captivity, and at least universal among the Hebrews through the time of the building of the Second Temple. **The concept of a fixed calendar would have been as incomprehensible to them as their constantly changing lunar calendar is to us today.** To reject the lunar Sabbath concept on the basis that the Bible does not specifically spell the fact out is unreasonable in view of the fact that until around the time of the Babylonian Captivity, it had never entered the mind of man to disassociate the months from the phases of the moon. The concept was what you would call "ubiquitous."

WHAT REALLY MADE THE SABBATH SACRED?

The lunar Sabbath and animal sacrifice systems are inseparably tied together through the Law of Moses. The Law of Moses has 613 requirements, and one of those requirements was that animal sacrifices were to be offered on the Sabbaths, and especially on the weekly Sabbath. The Jews considered all 613 of them to be of equal importance.

If you break one of them, you have broken them all. Therefore, there is no theologically honest way of trying to say that you can have a sacred Sabbath without an animal sacrifice on it. The Ten Commandments were only a part of the "covenant" Law of Moses. In Leviticus 23, Moses clearly identified the weekly Sabbath as one of the sacred feast days, and all the feast days required animal sacrifices.

All the sacred feast days were scheduled according to the new moons and their four phases. As if for emphasis on the ultimate specialness and sacredness of the covenant Sabbath, the Law of Moses specified two different types of animal sacrifices on it. John Keyser, in "From Sabbath to Saturday," draws our attention to the use of the word for "Sabbath" in Leviticus 23 and to an observation about it by the noted Polish Jewish scholar, Marcus Jastrow (1829-1903):

According to M. Jastrow, there is a passage in the Pentateuch (the first five books of the Old Testament) which was in dispute several centuries before the Messiah concerning its meaning. In the 23rd chapter of Leviticus the word "Sabbath" appears to be used in a sense precisely THE SAME as that of the Babylonian SHABBATTUM, referring to the FIFTEENTH DAY OF THE MONTH. In this passage it is directed that on "the morrow after the Sabbath" the sheaf of the first-fruits of the harvest is to be brought to the priest, who shall wave it before YEHOVAH God and then count fifty days from "the morrow after the Sabbath" to the commencement of the Feast of Weeks or Pentecost.

Professor Jastrow clearly shows that the word "Sabbath" is used in Leviticus 23, not in its later sense of a seventh day of rest, but as a *survival of the old designation of the Sabbath as the FULL-MOON DAY!* Jastrow concludes by saying, "The two references in Leviticus stand out as solitary signposts of an abandoned road" ("The Day After the Sabbath," *American Journal of Semitic Languages*, (pp. 135-136).

And from a somewhat different perspective, Keyser sees a connection between the Jewish feast days – possibly thinking of the feast days listed in Leviticus 23 – of which the Sabbath is just one, and a connection with a statement made by the prophet, Hosea, which may provide evidence that Israel was keeping the lunar Sabbath in his day. Once again, beware of Keyser's Sabbatarian bias when reading his annotations:

In a statement that may have a bearing on the Egyptian captivity, the *Encyclopedia Biblica* makes this comment:

Hosea takes it for granted that in/during captivity, the CREATION LUNAR WEEKLY Sabbath will be suspended, like all the other feasts, because in his day, a feast implied A SANCTUARY (= 6944 = qodesh = a sacred, consecrated, dedicated Most Holy Place)! The Sabbath marks Israel's separation from the heathen/pagans/Gentiles (1899, p. 4177).

In Numbers 28 we find God's instructions on the animal sacrifices that were required of the Hebrews, including the weekly Sabbath:

⁹ "On the Sabbath day, make an offering of two lambs a year old without defect, together with its drink offering and a grain offering of two-tenths of an ephah of the finest flour mixed with olive oil.

¹⁰ This is the burnt offering for every Sabbath, in addition to the regular burnt offering and its drink offering.

Note, again, that twice as many animal sacrifices were offered on the weekly Sabbath, as two lambs were offered in addition to the regular offerings.

Apparently, it was animal sacrifices that validated the holy convocations of all of the Jewish feast days. It appears that without the shedding of blood, the attribute of a holy convocation could not be imparted to ANY day at any time. St. Paul said that the Sabbath was a symbol (shadow) that represented Christ, and that was why the annual Sabbath feast days, the monthly New Moons, and the weekly Sabbath days were obsolete after the Cross. Animal sacrifices ceased at the Crucifixion because the True Sacrifice had already been killed. Without animal sacrifices, sacred holy convocations on the Sabbath days were no longer possible or necessary, and an animal sacrifice offered after Christ died, even on a Sabbath, would represent a denial of the efficacy of Christ's sacrifice for us on the Cross. Essentially it is possible that taking the life of an animal in the name of Christianity might represent the commission of an unintentional blasphemy. No day, therefore, can ever qualify as a holy convocation again. Not Saturday. Not Sunday. Not even a lunar Sabbath! Perhaps this is why St. Paul also said, in the glorious context of the New Covenant, that no day has any sacredness in and of itself. **If God's presence is no longer in the day, there is no holy day.** No animal sacrifices! No holiness! No Sabbaths!

Further explanation may be in order. A holy day was holy because of God's presence in that day, not unlike the ground was when Moses came before God and had to remove his footwear due to the presence of God at that time and place. Likewise, it was impressed upon the people that on those holy days which were holy convocations, where they were seen as being in the presence of God, hence the necessity of those sacrifices to cover their sins, or perhaps more specifically, them, seeing as they were, in the sight of God, sinful beings. This also helps explain why they were not to be working on these Sabbaths, for God declared regarding their works: "For the children of Israel and the children of Judah have only done evil before me from their youth: for the children of Israel have only provoked me to anger with the work of their hands, saith the LORD." (Jeremiah 32:30) And no one may be in the presence of God committing evil. Sin and evil cannot abide in the

presence of God. Consider Christ on the cross and His declaration regarding the Father's abandonment when the sins of the world were placed upon Him. It should be of interest in this context Jesus' declaration that it is lawful to do good on the Sabbath, as contrasted to doing evil. A Christian, being in possession of the Holy Spirit, is in God's presence always, and a Christian's works are wrought in (through) God. The sacrifice that takes care of our sins and sinful nature has already been administered. Sacrifices and holy days have been rendered moot issues. To continue to advocate the observance of the Sabbath by refraining from work on that day is paramount to advocating sacrifices. God has withdrawn from the Sabbath, and has entered into the believer, who now becomes the Temple of God. This Temple does not require a weekly cleansing or purging of sin.

When Christ died on the Cross, the four Jewish ordinances that Paul called obsolete in Colossians 2:14-17 met the Reality that they had foreshadowed. Again, those ordinances were the Jewish dietary laws, the annual Sabbath feast days, the monthly New Moons, and the weekly Sabbath of the Decalogue.

Seventh-day Adventist theologian, Dr. Ronald du Preez, made an interesting attempt to explain away the anti-Sabbatarian implications of Colossians 2:14-17 with his Animal Sacrifices Theory, which he outlined in his book, *Judging the Sabbath: Discovering What Can't Be Found In Colossians 2:16*. His theory acknowledged the inseparable connection between the sacred feast days, including the weekly Sabbath of the Decalogue, and the Hebrew system of animal sacrifices. du Preez attempted to use this connection to suggest that Paul was not condemning these ordinances themselves, but rather the continued use of offering animal sacrifices on various Sabbaths. He did not acknowledge the lunar connection between all of the Sabbaths.

There are numerous problems with du Preez' theory. These sacrifices were to be offered at the temple in Jerusalem, and Christians were living in various parts of the Roman Empire. Christians outside of Jerusalem could not, by law, perform those sacrifices anyway. There would be no need for Paul to chastise Christians for performing sacrifices they would not have been performing in the first place. St. Paul, being a "doctor of the law" knew the Sabbath sacrifices could only be offered at the temple by the Levitical priests.

Paul could not merely condemn the animal sacrifices associated with these four Jewish ordinances. He would have, as a necessary corollary, invalidated the continuance of these ordinances. What du Preez seeks to accomplish is impossible, separating what he sees as the "added ceremonial aspects" of the weekly and annual Sabbaths from the days themselves, all the while claiming that the annual Sabbaths were in and of themselves "ceremonial" and the weekly Sabbath still "moral" law due to its association within the confines of the Ten Commandments. The weekly Sabbath, stripped of everything associated with it, does not equal the Sabbath as a result. What you do end up with is an observance kept in accordance with the commandments of men, and not God.

In Colossians 2:14-17 Paul labeled the Jewish dietary laws, the annual Sabbaths, the monthly New Moons, and the weekly Sabbaths as shadows (symbols) of Christ and said that they became obsolete when Christ died on the Cross. What would make these things obsolete as a result of Christ's death? The fact is, these symbols represented the sacrifice that Christ was to make for them in the future, paving the way for a spiritual "rest" found in Him. The shadows with no substance were now replaced by the reality that cast those shadows; Christ Himself.

For a detailed study of the merits of du Preez work, we recommend our book, *Doctors Bacchiocchi, MacCarty, and du Preez Wreak Havoc with the Sabbath and Ellen White*.

In summary, the Jewish Sabbath days seem to have acquired their holiness from the animal sacrifices that were required by the Law of Moses. The weekly Sabbath, along with the annual festivals and monthly New Moons, represented Christ. Once Christ sacrificed Himself for us, animal sacrifices ceased. **For Christians to continue observing any of these Jewish ordinances that pointed forward to Christ and His sacrifice would, in a very real way, represent a statement that His death on the Cross was not sufficient to atone for the sins of His people. This, in turn, may also represent an unintentional act of blasphemy.**

How else could the Sabbath have been so sacred that a known Sabbath-breaker had to die as punishment for that sin? There is no chance that its sacredness resulted from the day being an exact seven-day multiple of the seventh day of Creation. The sacredness of the day was in regards to the day being a holy convocation where the people were seen as being in the presence of God on that day, and no one can be before God and be sinning, doing evil works. God is now present

within the believer, with Christ's righteousness imputed to the believer, so that the works of the believer are now wrought now in God. Refraining from work in order to maintain the holy status of the day is no longer relevant. Jesus, the "Lord of the Sabbath" declared that it is lawful to do good on the Sabbath, as contrasted to doing evil. Christian's are in the presence of God always. The day, and everything attendant with it, have been rendered obsolete.

In Genesis 1, God established the movements of the Sun and Moon to determine sacred times. The lunar Sabbath concept is in keeping with this principle, but it is also unreasonable to think that the Moon had the power to make Sabbaths sacred. The Moon is simply God's timepiece.

There has not been a holy day since Jesus rested in the tomb on the last real Sabbath that the world ever experienced. The Eastern Orthodox church refer to the last REAL Sabbath ever kept in the world as "The Great Sabbath," and they celebrate a festival each year in honor of that special day.

The whole Sabbath-Sunday Question, therefore, seems to have nothing to do with whether or not the pope "changed" the Sabbath from Saturday to Sunday – a meaningless allegation once one understands the lunar Sabbath concept. Perhaps, then, a large portion of the debate between Sabbatarians and non-Sabbatarians is really over the what animal sacrifices could do before the Cross and after it.

DID JESUS KEEP THE "RIGHT" DAY?

The official position of the Karaite Jews in the U.S. who have their headquarters in Los Angeles is a belief that the Jews at the time of Christ kept a fixed Sabbath. Recall that there is no record that Jesus ever attempted to reform which day Israel was keeping at that time.

At the same time recall that the reconciliation between the astronomical reckonings of the Jewish Passover Week and its Christian counterpart, the Passion Week, suggests that the Nation of Israel might still have been determining its Sabbath days according to the four phases of the moon during Jesus' lifetime. It would seem that if the Jews were not keeping the Sabbath according to the lunar calendar, Jesus would have pointed out their error. Until His death on the Cross, the Old Covenant was in effect, and the honor of His covenant law with Israel would have been compromised if the Jews were keeping fixed Sabbaths.

Most civilizations were forced to adopt some kind of a fixed calendar scheme around the time the Jews were in Assyrian or Babylonian captivity. It is difficult to imagine that there would not have been calendar trouble in Israel from that point on. The Karaite Jews to this very day oppose Rabbinical (Mainstream) Judaism both over calendar issues and its teachings that the *Talmud* and *Mishnah* are inspired and equal to the *Torah* in authority.

Historians debate whether the predecessors of the Karaites go back to the end of the Second Temple period (70 CE), or whether Karaism represents a novel emergence of similar views. Karaites have always maintained that, while there are some similarities to the Sadducees, there are also differences, and that the ancestors of the Karaites were another group called Benei Şedeq which arose, or seems to have arisen, during the Second Temple period. (*Wikipedia* article, "Karaite Judaism.")

THEORY: WHY ANCIENT CIVILIZATIONS ABANDONED THE LUNAR CALENDAR

There is mathematical evidence from the Bible that between the time of Creation and the Great Flood, a solar year was equal to about 365 days. There is similar mathematical evidence that the events surrounding Noah's Flood altered that solar year to about 360 days. The 360 day year is important because it works well, although not perfectly, with twelve lunar months. In these cases, the evidence comes from specific references to time. Then, there is remarkable evidence that the sun dial miracle of King Hezekiah created convulsive events that returned the Earth's solar year to approximately 365 days. This analysis comes from two different scientists, Velikovsky– who wrote in the early 1950's– and Guy Cramer, a scientist who currently (as of 2015) researches the mathematical content of the Bible. The work of these two researchers is significantly complementary.

Sundial and a Stand-Still Sun

It was a disruption of world lunar calendars by a series of catastrophic events that took place somewhat before the building of the second temple in 586 BC (http://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Second_Temple) that made the use of the lunar calendar impractical for world civilizations, including Israel. The disruption of these world lunar calendars, as mentioned elsewhere, strongly correlates with the facts that are gleaned through the study of the calendars, historical annals, and astronomical records of the major world civilizations of that age. Furthermore, there is a remarkable correlation between the records of these disruptive world events with the biblical record of the turning back of the sundial by 10 degrees (steps) as a sign requested by King Hezekiah. This event is recorded in both Isaiah 38:8 and II Kings 20. Historian Edwin Thiele places the reign of King Hezekiah between 715 and 786 BCE.

See: <http://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Hezekiah>

Also, in Joshua 10 we have the story of how God prevented the sun from going down until a battle was won. Both events took place after the lunar-based Sabbath was given to Israel from high atop the Mountain of the Moon – Mt. Sinai. Ancient civilizations used the lunar calendar until the disruptive events that are documented to have taken place between about 800 and 600 BCE.

Prior to these strange events, the lunar calendars of world civilizations had 12 months of 30 days each which added up to a solar year that was about 360 days. After the miracle of the sun dial retreating 10 degrees, the solar year mysteriously grew from about 360 days to about 365.25 days, and these same civilizations were forced to add more and more extra days to their lunar calendars to get them to sync with the expanded length of the solar year as determined by things like the barley harvests. These disruptive events recorded in the histories of ancient civilizations included crazy weather patterns, earth-quakes, and other catastrophes. This is true of the calendars and histories of the Mayans in South America, the Chinese, and the civilizations of the Middle East.

It is no stretch of the imagination to see the reality of the biblical teaching that the Earth is “growing old like a garment.” Today, scientists believe they have proof that the magnetic field of the Earth has reversed polarity several times in the past, and some scientists, including Albert Einstein, have believed that a major disruptive event caused the continents of the world to drift many thousands of miles within the space of less than one or two days. To dismiss Velikovsky’s astronomical explanation as the reason for the world abandonment of the lunar calendar tends to diminish the reality of two biblical miracles. The miracles of a lengthened day and the sun dial going backwards ten degrees would have to have natural consequences, since God is the Creator rather than a magician. For more information on Einstein and the Polar Shift Hypothesis, follow this link:

See: http://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Pole_shift_hypothesis

It is critically important to understand the reality of this part of ancient calendar and astronomical history. Therefore, we quote at length from a position paper posted by the Sabbath-keeping Bethel Church of God of Eugene, Oregon:

<http://www.bethelcog.org/church/church-of-god-articles/can-we-rely-on-the-hebrew-calender> (sic)

With respect to the calendar, the book of Genesis implies a 360-day year at the time of the Flood (*Dictionary of the Bible*, by James Hastings, s.v. “Time”). Comparing Genesis 7:11,24 with Genesis 8:4 we see months of thirty days—a five-month period with 150 days. Checking Deuteronomy 34:8 with Numbers 20:29 we see a thirty-day month during the time of Moses—at about 1500 BC. According to Immanuel Velikovsky in his work, *Worlds in Collision*, we find the following information: The old Babylonian year consisted of 360 days—twelve months of thirty days each. Scholars knew this even before the cuneiform script was understood. The Assyrian year contained 360 days; a decade was made up of 3,600 days. Assyrian documents reveal a thirty-day month from new moon to new moon. Anciently, the Persian year also had 360 days of twelve months containing thirty days each. The Egyptian year was 360 days in length. Later, it was changed to 365 days. The *Book of Sothis* states the added five days were introduced at a later time. The Eber Papyrus lists a year of twelve months with thirty days each. During the Eighteenth Dynasty the new moon festival was observed at periods of thirty days. After the fall of the Middle Kingdom, the Hyksos introduced a solar year of 360 days according to a gloss on a manuscript of Timaeus. The Mayan year originally consisted of 360 days, but five days were later added, as well as another day every fourth year. In

South America, in ancient times, the year consisted of 360 days with twelve months. The same was true in China – 360 days with twelve months. When five days were added to the Chinese year they included another one-quarter day. Plutarch wrote that when Rome was first founded during the time of Romulus, the Roman year was 360 days. Various Latin authors record the month as being thirty days in length. What this means is that there is ample historical evidence to demonstrate that before the introduction of a 365¼ day year the length of the year was 360 days. The ancient texts of India during the Veda period state the year was 360 days in comments found throughout the Brahmanas. Nowhere is intercalation mentioned. Nor is an extra five or six days associated with a solar year. The Hindu year was made up of twelve months of thirty days each. With their astronomical skills it is astonishing why the Brahmins failed to realize that 360 days was 5¼ days short. All the historical computations found in Hindu history used a 360-day year with months of thirty days each. What is quite apparent is that throughout the world we find a calendar of 360 days that was later changed at about the seventh century BC when five days were added to the year (Velikovsky, 124, 331-341). Did God change the seasons as Daniel stated? (Dan. 2:21).

About the seventh or eighth centuries BC five additional days were added to the length of the year. From about this time the Hindu year, for example, was lengthened to 365¼ days even though the original length of the year was still used. From the fifteenth century down to the eighth century BC, the length of the year was consistently the same due to the orbit of the Earth and revolutions of the moon. It was the same thirty-day month, and the length of the year itself did not vary more than a few hours. What happened to change this? Some sort of catastrophe occurred that altered both the orbit and axis of the Earth and moon as well as the length of the year. Repeated disturbances changed the orbit of the Earth from 360 days to 365 and ¼ days in length and the length of the month from thirty days to 29½ days (Velikovsky, 338, 332, 342).

What is required to bring about the kind of changes that took place in the eighth century BC? For one thing the axis of the Earth must be altered from the perpendicular into a tilt. This would affect the seasons. The 23½ degree tilt of the axis is now responsible for the seasons-spring following winter and fall following summer because the axis is tilted either toward or away from the sun. A perpendicular axis prevents seasonal changes, which appears to be the case from the opening chapters of Genesis. Fossil remains prove that at one time the climate was the same worldwide. Should there be another change in the axis the seasons would be more intense and their order would be altered. The orbits of both the Earth and moon must be modified in order to change the times. According to Velikovsky, there is a vast amount of information available from peoples all over the globe to demonstrate what took place in the eighth century BC. During a century of disturbances, which involved two catastrophes, the moon receded into an orbit of 29¼ days as an average and has remained so ever since. Also, the Earth orbit was changed so that 5¼ days were added. Written traditions by many of the ancient peoples recount the disorder of the seasons and connect it directly with the motion of the planets (Velikovsky, 345, 120-121).

What took place in the middle of the eighth century BC, is that the calendar [that was] previously accurate became unusable. Lunar and solar movements changed repeatedly from 747 to 687 BC, and calendar adjustments had to be made, Velikovsky tells us. Adjustments were soon outdated and had to be readjusted. Clay tablets found at the royal library in Nineveh record astronomical observations made prior to the time our present system was established. One tablet places the vernal equinox as the sixth of Nisan, and another places it at the fifteenth. This difference cannot be explained by modern scholars. These Assyrian astronomers were very accurate and precise in their work and would not have erred by a period of nine days. The astronomical tablets at Nineveh reveal three systems of planets. Single planets were closely observed and tracked in three dissimilar schedules. The movements of the moon itself were found to have two different systems. The last one to be observed corresponds to our present solar order. In one of the systems observed, the solstitial and equinoctial locations on the ecliptic are found six degrees too far to the east. Tablet 272 records that the distances from one new moon to another on the Chaldean ecliptic average three degrees, fourteen minutes too great. Thus, during a lunar month the moon traveled farther in relationship to the fixed stars than the present order shows. The astronomical tables at Nineveh reveal that the world order repeatedly changed during a single century. Included in these tables is the fact that the apparent path of the sun, as it traversed the heavens, led Babylonian astronomers to differentiate three orbits for the sun (Velikovsky, 349-350).

The Sabbatarian writers from the Bethel Church of God also conclude from their research that there may have been some convulsive global activities during the Great Flood and/or the Exodus that may have contributed to solar system events that created minor disparities between the lunar and solar calendars even before the major disruptive events that occurred later. Here is another interesting observation the authors credit to Velikovsky:

Velikovsky is not the only one who contends that the original new year in the Bible fell on the tenth day of the seventh month, the same day as the Day of Atonement. See Leviticus 25:9. It was later transferred to the first of Tishri – the first day of the seventh month. If this is true, on the Jewish calendar as well as the Babylonian calendar, there is an equinoctial displacement of nine days. When scholars examine the Assyrian astronomical records, they regard them as enigmatic mistakes. Yet, what needs to be asked is how could these astronomers who were responsible for the earlier records be so careless as to uphold a 360-day year, an error that in only six years would lead to a whole month's divergence? Certainly these astronomers of the royal observatories would not have announced to the king wrong dates when anyone can observe when the moon is new. Furthermore, their records on the clay tablets required mathematical calculation. What should be obvious is that during the reign of Assurbanipal, the movements of the planets, the procession of the equinoxes, and recurring return of the eclipses had been recorded and recalculated. As changes in the heavens took place, new tablets were placed in the royal archives along with the older records (Velikovsky, 350).

The Greek philosopher Thales is credited with discovering how many days were in a year. From his time (640-546 BC) the Greeks knew the year consisted of 365 days. Since he was born in the seventh century BC, is it possible he learned the new length of the year? It was about this time that the year was firmly fixed at its present length. A contemporary of Thales was Solon. He is credited with discovering that the length of the lunar month was less than thirty days. Yet, for the purpose of computation, as well as respect for the earlier length, the 360-day year was maintained for some period of time (Velikovsky, 338). If the year was 365 days then as it is now, it is odd that the discovery of the 365-day year should have occurred as late as the seventh century BC. There were many more much older kingdoms which certainly would have discovered this earlier. Why would the calculation of the length of a year, which is a reasonably simple matter to understand, be discovered by Thales, while the calculation of the eclipses, which is quite difficult to forecast, had been discovered centuries before? The same conclusion can be reached regarding Solon's discovery of the length of the lunar month because we can see that an adjustment of a new calendar system was taking place! (Velikovsky, 356-357). In Peru, the king issued orders that astronomical observations be made. The result was a calendar change in the length of the year from 360 days to 365¼. The same was true with the Toltecs. Their history records how the sages and astrologers were gathered together in order to recalculate the length of the year which had been recognized as inaccurate. The Talmud relates how King Hezekiah made a calendar change. He is said to have intercalated the calendar in order to delay the Passover. While this conclusion may be erroneous, it is recognized that the Passover was held the second month for ritual reasons. See 2 Chronicles 30. Whatever changes became fixed at that time is not known, but it is apparent calendar computation had become difficult (Velikovsky, 352). Even the Romans made corrections in their calendar near the end of the eighth or beginning of the seventh century BC. Numa, the second king of Rome and a contemporary of King Hezekiah, made corrections in the inequality of the calendar which required further corrections later (ibid, 356).

The same writers cite the following additional support for the observation that calendar adjustments were taking place on a global basis after these disruptive global events:

What can be seen in all this is that in the years following 687 BC there were calendar reforms taking place all over the Earth. The calendar was in a state of chaos between 747 – 687 BC, the length of both the month and the year constantly changing. We have our present calendar today because the new order has not been altered (Velikovsky, 358-359).

Note that Velikovsky's research does not appear to mention that the week may have had its position altered again much later by Constantine as suggested by Hanson.

ADDITIONAL RESEARCH ON 360 VS. 365 DAY YEARS

(Researched by William Hohmann & Kerry Wynne. Written by Kerry Wynne)

Guy Cramer, a research scientist and major contributor to a science-focused Christian website, XWALK.CA, finds evidence that the solar year was about 365 days before the Flood and about 360 days after the Flood. Like Velikovsky, he noted the apparent return to a 365 day solar year after Hezekiah's sundial miracle. His research validated Velikovsky. However, he took things a step further by calculating that the sundial's retreat of ten degrees would be roughly equivalent to about 20 minutes out each subsequent day. Remarkably, he points out that 20 minutes a day makes an approximate difference between a 360 day year and a 365 day year!

Cramer takes things still further, noting that in the *Book of Enoch*, a work cited by Jude the apostle who was the half-brother of Jesus. Cramer found some very precise astronomical data that spelled out the exact length of a solar year. He says that, assuming that the part of *The Book of Enoch* in which this information is found was actually written by Enoch or recorded by reasonably accurate oral tradition memorization before the Great Flood, it validates the fact that a solar year prior to the Flood was very close to 365 days. Then, he uses the following record of time in the *Book of Genesis* that permits a calculation of the length of a solar year at the time of the Flood itself:

During the time of the flood Noah tells us that a 150 days started on the seventeenth day of the second month, and ended on the seventeenth day of the seventh month (Genesis 7:11,24 and 8:3-4).

150 days divided by 30 days a month = 5 months

30 days x 12 months = 360 days

Cited from Guy Cramer's article, "360 Versus 365," at XWALK.CA

Furthermore, Cramer raises the possibility that Enoch foretold that the solar year was going to be shortened in the future. According to scholars, *The Book of Enoch* has clearly been supplemented by scribes who worked on the manuscript, and it is only accepted as a part of the Holy Canon by the Coptic Church of Egypt— a church associated with the orthodox churches of the East. However, because it was found largely intact in the *Dead Sea Scrolls*, some of which date to a few hundred years before Christ, we know that it has a degree of antiquity. We also have a good idea which sections were added later because those portions of the book do not appear in the manuscripts found in the *Dead Sea Scrolls*. Note what Enoch is credited with prophesying:

Chapter 80:2-4

² And in the days of the sinners **the years shall be shortened,**

And their seed shall be tardy on their lands and fields,

And all things on the earth shall alter,

And shall not appear in their time:

And the rain shall be kept back

And the heaven shall withhold (it).

³ And in those times the fruits of the earth shall be backward,

And shall not grow in their time,

And the fruits of the trees shall be withheld in their time.

⁴ **And the moon shall alter her order,**

And not appear at her time.

(Citation is same as above from Cramer.)

ANCIENT GREEK CALENDARS

(Researched by Larry Dean – Written by Kerry Wynne)

Recall that Greek culture was extremely hostile to Jewish culture. Greeks abhorred the Jewish dietary laws. Circumcision was mutilation of the male physique, which they revered so highly, and the Sabbath was perceived as the epitome of laziness.

With no circumcision, there is no access to Sabbath-keeping, as specified by the Law of Moses. Now, also recall that the Christian story resonated so well with Greek culture that Paul's Mars Hill oration resulted in an instant "shotgun wedding" between Greek culture and Christianity that leveled Heathenism in Greece to the ground within the short space of less than 100 years.

There is another interesting reason why Sabbath-keeping would have met with tremendous resistance from the Greeks, should Paul have been foolish enough to push it on them. Greece was a "nation" of city-states more than a unified nation. These city-states were affiliated mostly by having a common language. Each city-state had its own calendar. These calendars started the year on vastly different dates, had "weeks" of varying numbers of days, and were corrected periodically to correlate with the seasons in different ways. There were Jews living in Greece, but a very large portion of them were Hellenized and had ceased to practice the Jewish religion. A traveling Sabbath-keeping Jew or Christian would have found it nearly impossible to keep a fixed Sabbath day. For example, he or she might keep Sabbath one day, travel two days to another Greek city only to find the people were keeping the Sabbath on the day of their arrival. Four different calendars were used simultaneously just within the city-state of Athens!

Note that our argument from the perspective of Greek calendar confusion is not definitive. If the orthodox Jews in Greece were using the lunar calendar, the strength of our argument would be significantly diminished. We do know, however, that the Roman Empire was using an eight-day fixed calendar at the time, and we could speculate that the Greeks would have balked at the idea of returning to the old, outdated lunar calendar that had been discarded centuries ago. And still we would have to face the fact that Greek civilization viewed the Jewish Sabbath as a symbol of great laziness.

Larry Dean, our "in-house" expert on Greek culture, history, and rhetoric, explains that there is evidence that large numbers of Greek Jews, whether Hellenized or practicing, converted to Christianity. The Jewish synagogues were destroyed right along with the pagan temples. There are very few synagogues remaining in Greece, and between apostolic times until 1492 there were virtually no Jews living in Greece. In 1492 political and religious turmoil in the Middle East resulted in the dispersion of the vast majority of Palestinian Jews across the Mediterranean world. A significant number of these displaced Jews were settled in Greece. Even so, to this very day, the Jewish population is tiny and disproportionately under-represented compared to that of other Mediterranean countries.

Essentially, then, the Mars Hill discourse destroyed Paganism, orthodox Judaism, and the Hellenized ethnic Jews of Greece, leaving almost no trace of anyone who would be a likely candidate to accept the idea of Sabbath-keeping in connection with either Christianity or Judaism. It is easy to see why Adventism has gotten virtually nowhere in Greece over the last 130 years.

For information about these Greek calendars, see the *Wikipedia*, article, "Attic Calendar." [Think geographical location of Attica, rather than the storage area above a home.]

Should Paul have been foolish enough to introduce Jewish Sabbath-keeping to the Greeks, he might have been run out of town, or even stoned to death.

THE LUNAR SABBATH BETWEEN 70 CE AND 800 CE

To add more confusion to the question of when the Jews finally abandoned the lunar calendar for calculating the weekly Sabbath is the fact that there are two major populations of Jews – the Palestinian Jews, who descended from the Jews who returned to Israel after the Babylonian Captivity, and the descendants of those who chose to remain in the land of their captivity. The latter are known as the Babylonian Jews. (We are already confronted with the likelihood that different factions within the Palestinian Jewish population may have held views as to how to keep the Sabbath differently up until the time of Christ, during the time of Christ, and for some centuries beyond the time of Christ.) This likelihood seems to explain why there is evidence that the Jews kept a fixed Sabbath and evidence that the Jews kept the lunar Sabbath between the building of the Second Temple through a number of centuries into the Current Era. However, the situation is considerably clearer among the Babylonian Jews after the time of Christ.

Between the time of the Babylonian Captivity and the time of Jesus the information about how the Jews kept the Sabbath is sketchy. It is reasonable to assume that since the Babylonians and the Assyrians had adopted fixed calendars by that time,

the Jews living captive within those countries would have been forced to adopt a fixed calendar also. But did their captors permit them to observe their sacred days according to a calendar of their own choosing? If so, that provision might have had an adverse impact on the economy. It is only speculation, based on the sketchy information that is available, that the predecessors of the Karaites may have opposed the acceptance of the fixed calendar and opposed the probable majority of Jews who adopted it as far back as the time of Israel's return to Jerusalem.

John Keyser reports that The *Encyclopedia Britannica*, Volume 4, article, "Calendar," the article gives the history of the Jewish calendar among the Babylonian Jews following the destruction of their temple in 70 CE as follows:

The calendar was originally fixed by observation, and ultimately by calculation. Up to the fall of the Temple (A.D. 70), witnesses who saw the new moon came forward and were strictly examined and if their evidence was accepted the month *was fixed by the priests*. Eventually the authority passed to the SANHEDRIN and ultimately to the PATRIARCH. When necessary, a second "Adar" was inserted in order that the reaping of the corn should come at Passover. Gradually observation gave place to *calculation*. The right to determine the calendar was reserved to the PATRIARCHATE; the JEWS OF MESOPOTAMIA tried in vain to *establish their own calendar* but the prerogative of Palestine was zealously defended.

So long as Palestine remained a religious centre, it was naturally to the homeland that the Diaspora looked for its calendar. Uniformity was essential, for if different parts had celebrated feasts on different days confusion would have ensued. IT WAS NOT UNTIL THE 4TH CENTURY A.D. THAT BABYLON FIXED THE CALENDAR... The Talmud speaks of *various* New Year's Days. It may be regarded as certain that in Palestine the New Year [Rosh Hoshana] began in NISSAN (cf. Exod. xii. 2) and IN BABYLON in TISHRI.

Keyser further explains that in 226 CE, the Zoroastrian religion became entrenched in the area inhabited by the Babylonian Jews when the first Sassanian King, Ardeshir, came to the Persian throne. He made reforms to the old lunar-based calendar that had a far-reaching effect on his people (especially the Jews), who initially rejected his new calendar since it affected their religious observances. This resulted, for a while, in TWO CALENDARS, one decreed by the king and the other, older one, followed by the majority of the people in the kingdom. Eventually, over a period of many years, the new calendar won out and the Persians, as well as the Jews of Babylonia, began to organize their Sabbaths according to the new calendar.

Keep in mind that Ardeshir's calendar reforms seem to have involved changes within the concept of the lunar calendation and that this fact is being submitted as evidence that the lunar calendar continued to be used significantly in civilizations at least through this time.

Keyser, in his book, *From Sabbath to Saturday*, refers to research by Hutton Webster that indicates that the lunar calendar was observed by the Persian Zoroastrians who ruled the area inhabited by the Babylonian Jews during this period in history, or from approximately 226 CE to approximately 651 CE:

There is extant a Pehlevi tract, said to have been composed in Persia during the FOURTH CENTURY A.D., which mentions among other matters FIVE DAYS IN EVERY MONTH, namely, THE 1ST, 7TH, 14TH, 22ND, AND 30TH, as times to be observed by *abstinence from all worldly business*...These precepts are no longer observed; in fact, their very existence is unknown to most Parsis at the present day. See D.F. Karaka, *History of the Parsis*, London, 1884, i, 132 sqq. (*Rest Days: A Study in Early Law and Morality*. New York: The MacMillan Company, 1916. Footnote p. 166).

Similarly, Keyser cites evidence from early Christian writings that the Jews were observing the Sabbath according to the lunar calendar during the first few centuries after the Resurrection. He quotes Clement of Alexandria (c. 150-215 CE) as follows, and then explains the significance of what he said:

L"[Peter] inferred thus: 'Neither worship as the Jews...[for] IF THE MOON IS NOT VISIBLE, they do not hold the Sabbath, which is called *the first*; nor do they hold the NEW MOON, nor the FEAST OF UNLEAVENED BREAD, nor the FEAST, nor the GREAT DAY'" (*The Stromata*, or *Miscellanies*, chapter 5).

This clearly indicates that at this time the weekly Sabbath was still dictated by the moon's course. Further, in chapter 16 of *The Stromata*, Clement plainly writes that "in periods of SEVEN DAYS the MOON undergoes its changes. In the FIRST WEEK she becomes HALF MOON; in the SECOND [WEEK], FULL

MOON; and in the THIRD [WEEK], in her wane, AGAIN HALF MOON; and in the FOURTH [WEEK] she DISAPPEARS."

This is about as plain as it can get. Obviously, in Clement's day, the week (as kept by the Jews) was still tied to the moon's phases and, by extension, the weekly Sabbath was also still tied to the moon! It appears, however, that by this time (150-215 A.D.) some of the Christians had gotten away from a week and Sabbath that was dependent upon the lunar reckoning.

Once again, keep in mind that Keyser is a Sabbatarian in view of his expressed opinion that some Christians had forsaken keeping the lunar Sabbath and were observing fixed Sabbaths. There is no evidence that there was ever a significant population of Christians anywhere that kept the 7th day of either a fixed week or a lunar week in the Jewish sense of the word. Ellen White's claim that significant numbers of Waldensians kept the Jewish Sabbath during the Dark Ages had historians calling her out on this fanciful claim almost as fast as the ink dried on the paper upon which she wrote. (At the same time, we add that we are not saying that there were not always *small* enclaves of Christians at nearly all times in the world who may have kept the 7th day in the manner of the Jews.) The Sabbath is mentioned in early Christian writings, but careful research indicates that these references are to Sabbath festivals. Also, some writers confused the issue by referring to Sunday as the Sabbath. It takes careful study to determine the context of these passages to see what the reference really means.

It is likely, then, that some populations of Jews must have calculated their Sabbath days by the lunar calendar until the advent of the events that created the Karaite Movement within Judaism.

KARAITE JUDAISM AND THE LUNAR CALENDAR

While Karaite Judaism claims that its roots go back as far as the Babylonian Captivity which began around 600 BCE, the sect did not officially enter its present, clearly identifiable form until after 700 CE. The evidence suggests that Judaism did not completely abandon the lunar Sabbath until the events that took place within the population of the Babylonian Jews around 700 CE. Karaite Judaism galvanized to oppose some of the major tenets of Rabbinical Judaism, which represented the majority of the Jews living in the Babylonian center of the Diaspora. The Karaite opposition to the use of the fixed calendar was not its greatest concern, for reasons we will explain later. Instead, the primary focus of the Karaites was the belief that the *Torah*, which came directly from God, should be the Jew's only guide to Faith. By contrast, Rabbinical Judaism taught that the *Talmud* and *Mishnah*, or books of Jewish tradition, were also inspired. Anan Ben David (CE 715-795 or 811?) arose to spearhead the Karaite Movement. The *Wikipedia* article on Karaite Judaism explains what happened:

Isma'il al-'Ukbari believed he was the prophet Elijah, and hated 'Anan; and Mishawayh al-'Ukbari, who was a disciple of Isma'il al-'Ukbari and the founder of the Mishawites, taught his followers to use a purely solar calendar of 364 days and 30 day months, insisted that all the Holy Days and fast days should always occur on fixed days in the week, rather than on fixed days of the months, and said that Shabbat should be kept from sunrise on Saturday to sunrise on Sunday. Such beliefs were anathema to Ananites and Karaites.

Karaite Judaism is threatening to the Seventh-day Adventist concept of the Sabbath, not only because of its knowledge of the lunar calendar and the lunar Sabbath, but because of its resultant lack of interest in determining which FIXED day should be kept, now that the lunar calendar has been abandoned by all cultures, including their own. If you can't, or are unwilling to keep the Sabbath according to the lunar calendar, why concern yourself about which day of the week is the "right" Sabbath? There is no motivation to do so, since they understand, perhaps better than any other ethnic group, that calendar issues and other factors make it **impossible** to know which day of our current week is the "real" seventh day. (Adventists teach that the current fixed 7th day of the week is an exact seven-day multiple of the 7th day of Creation.) At the same time, it appears that the Karaites have not demonstrated a perfect willingness to follow God's requirements because they could keep the lunar Sabbath if they really wanted to.

The history of the Hebrew calendars is complicated indeed. For example, Steve Rudd, an apologetics researcher with Bible.CA and the author of the article, "Solved: Divided Kingdom Chronology," explains that the Kingdom of Judah began its new year with the month of September-October, whereas Israel's new year began with the month of April. Also adding to the chaos, during much of its history, it used a lunar calendar for feast days and a "business" calendar for the solar year of approximately 365 days in length.

The Karaites have outlined their own history. The predecessors of the Karaites were called by various names:

Karaism has been around since God gave his laws to the Jewish people. At first those who followed YHWH's laws were merely called "Righteous" and it was only in the 9th century CE that they came to be called Karaites. The question of why God's followers are today called Karaites is really a question of the origin of the other sects. At first there was no reason to label the righteous as a separate sect because there was only the one sect which consisted of the whole Jewish people. Throughout history a variety of sects appeared and it was only to distinguish the righteous from these other groups which caused them in different periods to take on such names as Sadducees, Boethusians, Ananites, and Karaites.

The first reference in the history of Israel to more than one sect takes place some 200 years after the close of the Biblical period, in the first century BCE. Various sources tell us of two opposing sects, the Sadducees (Zadokites) and the Pharisees. The Sadducees followed the Torah as it was written while the Pharisees believed in a second "Oral" Torah which they added to the real one. The Second Temple period saw the rise of several more sects. Among them was another group which only followed the written Torah. This group was the Boethusians. Then there was still another sect which added several books to the Bible. They were called the Essenes (a.k.a. the "Dead Sea Sect"). [Edited for sense by the authors of this book.]

<http://www.karaite-korner.org/history.shtml>

The Karaites are first mentioned in written sources in the late eighth century. They themselves claim to be descendants of dissident sects of the First Temple period, and the rabbinical tradition traces them back to opposition trends of the Second Temple period.

http://www.myjewishlearning.com/history/Ancient_and_Medieval_History/632-1650/Islamic_World/Karaites.shtml?p=1

Here is the current position statement of the Karaite Corner, a website that articulates the beliefs of Karaite Jews in the U.S., and whose webmaster is Nehemia Gordon, on the calendar problem as it relates to keeping the weekly Sabbath. This subject should be of special interest to Seventh-day Adventists because of William Miller's connection with Karaite Judaism through his Hebrew teachers. As we outlined earlier, Adventism evolved out of the Millerite Movement. William Miller and Ellen White corresponded with each other. She said that God showed her that William Miller rejected the Sabbath because he had a "mental block" to it and that "angels were guarding his tomb," implying that it was an honest but mistaken rejection of the truth on his part. What we know about William Miller's understanding of Karaite Judaism, the lunar calendar, and the arbitrary assignment of the fixed calendar's 7th day suggests that he rejected Adventism because he knew that even the Jews did not know which day was really the 7th day. Here is the official position of the Karaite Jews on these issues:

[Does Shabbath Have to Be on a Saturday?](#)

One of the questions which I am constantly asked by former gentiles making their way into Karaism is whether Shabbath must be on a Saturday. The idea that it must be on Saturday comes from two questionable assumptions: (1) That Saturday is the actual "anniversary" of the day within the seven day week on which Yehowah rested from creating the universe, and (2) That the Shabbath has to be the same day as this anniversary. If either one of these assumptions is incorrect, then Shabbath does not have to be on a Saturday. While there is no outright proof that the first assumption is not correct, there is also no outright proof that it is. Through all the trials and tribulations that humanity has experienced over the past 5,000 years, we have no proof whatsoever that our current Saturday is the actual seven-day "anniversary" of the original Shabbath of Creation. Likewise, the Rabbinical year (5768 as of this writing) is only a guesstimate rather than a cold, hard fact. (More likely than not, the current year is not what the Rabbinical calendar says it is.) To illustrate this point, I borrow a quote from the character Morpheus in the movie The Matrix, who, explaining his post-apocalyptic world, says, "You believe it's the year 1999 when in fact it's closer to 2199. I can't tell you exactly what year it is, because we honestly don't know." As for the second assumption, this too comes from the flawed Rabbinical concept that the essence of the Shabbath is the celebration of the seventh-day "anniversary" of Yehowah's rest-after-creation. In fact, the essence of the Shabbath is not the seventh day, but the rest. As usual, the Rabbis have switched the focus of this crucial holiday away from its humanistic and social justice aspects, and placed it on the symbolic and ritualistic aspects. From a Karaite point of view, we do not celebrate the Shabbath because it is some esoteric and mystical anniversary of an original Shabbath, we celebrate it so that we can rest, so that our dependents can rest, and so that our animals can rest. This is the essence of the Shabbath.

Shabbath, and indeed the entire Torah, is about serving Elohim through serving our fellow man. Thus, theoretically speaking, it does not matter what day the Shabbath falls on; it only matters that on every seventh day, the entire society is allowed a day of rest, physical and spiritual rejuvenation, and holiness. Do I therefore recommend that you start celebrating Shabbath on Tuesday, or Wednesday, or Sunday? No, I do not. I personally celebrate the Shabbath on Saturday, and will continue to do so. This is the day that the people of Israel have currently chosen for the Shabbath, and the Shabbath must be a national rather than an individual effort. But let us not harbor the illusion that the day the nation has chosen is the exact same day on which Elohim rested, or that it even needs to be. What is important and central to the idea of the Shabbath is that on every seventh day, all people and animals get a chance to rest.

See more at: <http://karaiteinsights.com/article/shabbat.html#sthash.Su6lnlLC.dpuf>

General Internet reference: <http://karaiteinsights.com/article/shabbat.html>

LUNAR SABBATH IMPLICATIONS FOR COLOSSIANS 2:14-17

Even Seventh-day Adventist Sabbath scholar, the late Dr. Samuele Bacchiocchi, conceded that Colossians 2:14-17 targets the weekly Sabbath, and it was his absurdly Judaizing work-around of Colossians 2:14-17 that finally opened the eyes of the rest of the Christian world to the impossibilities of Sabbatarianism. In fact, it was his inability to produce a credible defense of Sabbatarian doctrine that launched the very anti-Sabbatarian movement that has been threatening Adventism since the late 1980's.

A few thinking Seventh-day Adventist theologians also took note of the implications of Bacchiocchi's theory's and left Adventism, including the (then) controversial independent SDA theologian, Dr. Robert Brinsmead. Our research on the lunar Sabbath theory might possibly provide still another leg of support that Dr. Bacchiocchi's assessment that the Sabbath in the third position represents the weekly Sabbath of the Decalogue. If the lunar Sabbath theory is correct, we would have another reason to see that the Jews viewed the Sabbath system as an integrated whole, all synchronized to the new moons. However, there are other reasons for determining that the Sabbath in the third position represents the weekly Sabbath. If the third Sabbath is not a reference to the weekly Sabbath, his sentence structure would make no sense, as you would have "annual, monthly, annual," or "annual, monthly, monthly."

Note that the Greek word in the third position in Colossians 2:14-17 is "sabbaton." Here is the Strong's definition of the word:

Title: Strong's Hebrew and Greek Dictionaries

Edition: Third

Copyright: Electronic Edition STEP Files Copyright © 2003, QuickVerse, a division of Findex.com, Inc.

G4521

σάββατον *sabbaton sab'-bat-on*

Of Hebrew origin [H7676]; the *Sabbath* (that is, *Shabbath*), or day of weekly *repose* from secular avocations (also the observance or institution itself); by extension a *se'nnight*, that is, the interval between two Sabbaths; likewise the plural in all the above applications:— Sabbath (day), week.

St. Paul and The Sabbath

The writings of St. Paul are an anathema to Sabbatarians, and especially to Seventh-day Adventists. In muted whispers down the halls of the Seventh-day Adventist seminary at Andrews University, there are hushed conversations regarding whether or not his writings should be excluded from the Canon of Scripture. When viewed as a whole, St. Paul's writings clearly teach against the idea that Christians must keep the Jewish Sabbath. This is why there are off-shoot factions of Adventism which reject both St. Paul and Ellen White as false prophets. The Gospel of Jesus as articulated by St. Paul is totally incompatible with Adventism.

Recall that we explained earlier that until recently there were no well-accepted links between the powerful anti-Sabbatarian implications of Hebrews 4 and Paul's several anti-Sabbatarian statements. Things are changing, however, thanks to a team of both secular and believing European scholars who have come to the conclusion that Paul's use of a highest level of Greek rhetoric and language skills in his Mars Hill oration matches the elevated high Greek language and rhetoric found in the *Book of Hebrews*. In the past, scholars have essentially ruled St. Paul out as the author of *Hebrews* because he wrote his epistles in the common Greek and did not present his arguments in a way that demonstrated a masterful command of rhetorical skills as demonstrated by whoever its author was.

Also, In the past, secular scholars in particular had not paid adequate attention to the greatness of the Mars Hill address. As of late, Paul's Mars Hill oration is now considered to be one of the greatest speeches in Greek history. At a minimum, a number of secular scholars believe that by some means Paul had acquired the Greek language and logic skills he needed to attain the very highest possible level by the time he gave his Mars Hill address. *The Book of Hebrews*, then, could have been written by Paul after Mars Hill. The believing scholars who have studied the Mars Hill address in the light of its language and rhetoric have concluded that God miraculously bestowed upon Paul the language and rhetorical skills he needed to create the "shotgun wedding" between Christianity and Greek culture that completely destroyed the pagan religions of the Greek-speaking part of the Roman Empire and established Christianity as the religion of the people within less than 100 years.

Let us look at the "companion" anti-Sabbatarian passages to Colossians 2:14-17, two of which were written by St. Paul and one of which is now considered to likely have been written by St. Paul (*The Book of Hebrews*). Consider also the fact that the theme from the beginning to the end of the *Epistle to the Galatians*, the focus is on the problem with the Judaizers:

GALATIANS 4:8-11

GALATIANS 4:8-11 (NIV) - Formerly, when you did not know God, you were slaves to those who by nature are not gods. But now that you know God-or rather are known by God-how is it that you are turning back to those weak and miserable principles? Do you wish to be enslaved by them all over again? ¹⁰ You are observing special days and months and seasons and years! I fear for you, that somehow I have wasted my efforts on you.

Sabbatarian apologists claim that the special days Paul was referring to here were the sacred days of the pagan calendar. It seems that if anything, Paul might be saying something like, "The pagans have a bunch of holy days based on superstition. The idea that Christians can earn merit by keeping the Jewish sacred days is equally foolish."

Several verses later, Paul even names the Judaizers as the culprits he is referring to. Review the following principles and you will see that Paul's three anti-Sabbatarian passages are consistent: (1) The Sabbath was not referenced to the 7th day of Creation, but rather to the principle of work six days and rest the 7th. (2) **All three Sabbath types were an integrated and inseparable set of days linked by the phases of the Moon and the animal sacrifices.** (3) Even Seventh-day Adventist Sabbatarian concede that the annual and monthly New Moons were done away with by Christ's death on the Cross. (4) One type of Sabbath cannot exist without the others, so St. Paul said in Colossians 2:14-17 that all three types of Sabbaths became obsolete shadows when the Reality that those shadows stood for died on the Cross.

Larry Dean points out that there is another powerful reason why St. Paul could not have been rebuking the Galatians for wanting to return to the observance of pagan sacred days. There were almost no pagans in Galatia. There were no Heathen temples there. Archaeologists find synagogue ruins, but not ruins of Heathen temples in this area. It was a geographical area that was settled almost exclusively by Jews. Notice that even the *Jewish Encyclopedia* concedes that the Galatian Jews converted to Christianity in large numbers:

An inland district of Asia Minor, and, after 25 B.C., a province of the Roman empire. There was a Jewish settlement there, which may have been founded by Antiochus the Great, who sent many Jewish families to Asia Minor as colonists. A proof of the existence of Jews in Galatia, according to many, is given by an edict of Augustus, which, according to Josephus ("Ant." xvi. 6, § 2), was published in Ancyra, the metropolis of Galatia. But the reading of the word "Ancyra" is doubtful. A better proof may be had from some inscriptions found in Galatia relating to Jews ("C. I. G." No. 4129; "Bulletin de Correspondance Hellénique," vii. 1883; comp. "R. E. J." x. 77). R. Akiba, who is said to have been a great traveler, speaks of "Galia" (), which is generally identified with "Galatia" (R. H. 26a). A teacher named Menahem is said to have come from

"Galatia" (Tosef., 'Er. viii.; Tosef., Ber. iv. 4; Ket. 60a). The chief proof, however, of the existence of Jews in Galatia is the fact that St. Paul sent thither a general epistle known as the "Epistle to the Galatians." There is a strong disagreement among scholars as regards the parts of Galatia where these correspondents of St. Paul lived. The older opinion was that they were to be found in the northern cities of Galatia, but recent scholars, especially Professor Ramsay, hold that they lived in cities of South or New Galatia, which are actually mentioned in the Acts of the Apostles. The progress of Christianity in Galatia, however, may explain the fact that the Jews of this province are never heard of in later history. It remains to be stated that the "Galatians" of I Macc. viii. 2 and II Macc. viii. 20 were Gauls.

Dean also points out that people from Greek speaking territories would not likely have any interest in returning to Paganism. Keep in mind that many of the Jews had become Hellenized. Greek philosophy was in direct conflict with Greek religion. Their philosophers talked about the order in the universe pointing to a single Creator. Greek religion was polytheistic with gods who had morals as bad as the worst humans. Recall that Christianity exploded in Greece because Paul demonstrated that Christianity was both rational, historical, and not simply myths invented by the national governments to get the citizens to rally behind war efforts and other national interests. When Christians abandon Christianity, which is a rational belief system, they normally become backsliders who still believe there is a God, but do not practice Christianity. Or they turn to atheism, which is, in a very real way, more rational than the crazy gods of Greek polytheism.

We have provided an extensive analysis of the major anti-Sabbatarian passages of St. Paul's epistles and the *Book of Hebrews* in our book, *Doctors Bacchiocchi, MacCarty, and du Preez Wreak Havoc With The Sabbath And Ellen White*.

ROMANS 14:5-6

Romans 14:5-6 (NIV) - One person considers one day more sacred than another; another considers every day alike. Each of them should be fully convinced in their own mind. ⁶Whoever regards one day as special does so to the Lord. Whoever eats meat does so to the Lord, for they give thanks to God; and whoever abstains does so to the Lord and gives thanks to God.

Sabbatarian apologists claim that the days referred to in this passage are merely references to the ceremonial Jewish feast days. They use circular reasoning, assuming that since the Sabbath is an unquestionable truth, Paul could not possibly be referring to the weekly Sabbath days in this passage. Unfortunately, this statement is about as clear as it can be said. Only an extreme Sabbatarian bias forces someone to try to explain it away in such a manner.

Once the set of Jewish Sabbaths became obsolete shadows at the Cross, there was no principle or absolute reference point that could be used to make any day of the year intrinsically sacred. As you will discover as you look deeper into the Sabbath-Sunday Question, you will see that Christians came to observe Sunday out of arbitrary convenience – not because Sunday was sacred. As we have said before, the ancient Jews never based their weekly Sabbaths on an absolute reference point, not only because God ordained the motions of the Sun and Moon to determine sacred days, but because they could not possibly reference them to an exact seven-day interval of the 7th day of Creation.

Paul is correct. With no absolute reference point to use to calculate a sacred day, no day could be declared sacred on the basis of being an exact numerical multiple of the actual seventh-day of the history of Planet Earth. To the Christian, all days are equal. Any day is a good day to worship God. Observe Sunday if you wish as an arbitrary day that Christians have chosen, or worship on Saturday, but understand that if you chose to worship on Saturday, you are not doing so because it is an exact seven-day interval of the 7th day of Creation Week. And, without the shedding of blood, there is no such thing as a sacred holy convocation on the Sabbath day since Jesus died on the Cross, so you are unintentionally denying the efficacy of Christ's death on the Cross. God's presence is no longer in a day; God's presence is in the believer.

Christians, therefore, are obligated to respect Paul's admonition not to impose their own ideas about sacred days on other believers because there are no longer ANY sacred days. We cannot imagine St. Paul telling the new Gentile converts that they would receive the Mark of the Beast and go to Hell if they did not join the Jewish Christians in keeping the Jewish Sabbath. The Jews ultimately departed from the intent of the Law of Moses by capitulating to worship on fixed seventh days.

Seventh-day Adventist Sabbatarians and any other group of Sabbath-keeping Christians who join the Jews in keeping a fixed Sabbath have joined the Jews in a Sabbath apostasy of their own. This is our own apostasy-conspiracy theory, and we are sticking to it. Instead of asking who changed the Sabbath from Saturday to Sunday, the real question for Sabbath-keep-

ing Christians is who changed the Sabbath from the Sabbath to Saturday?

The real problem is that Sabbatarian Christians violate the express command of God through His mouthpiece, St. Paul not to impose Sabbath-keeping on the new Gentile believers. We are Gentiles. Most likely you are a Gentile. And none of us have ever been rescued from Egyptian captivity by God's mighty arm.

HEBREWS 4:1-6

Therefore, since the promise of entering his rest still stands, let us be careful that none of you be found to have fallen short of it. ² For we also have had the good news proclaimed to us, just as they did; but the message they heard was of no value to them, because they did not share the faith of those who obeyed.[a] ³ Now we who have believed enter that rest, just as God has said,

“So I declared on oath in my anger,

‘They shall never enter my rest.’”

And yet his works have been finished since the creation of the world. ⁴ For somewhere he has spoken about the seventh day in these words: “On the seventh day God rested from all his works.” ⁵ And again in the passage above he says, “They shall never enter my rest.”

⁶ Therefore since it still remains for some to enter that rest, and since those who formerly had the good news proclaimed to them did not go in because of their disobedience, ⁷ God again set a certain day, calling it “Today.” This he did when a long time later he spoke through David, as in the passage already quoted:

“Today, if you hear his voice,

do not harden your hearts.”

⁸ For if Joshua had given them rest, God would not have spoken later about another day. ⁹ There remains, then, a Sabbath-rest for the people of God; ¹⁰ for anyone who enters God's rest also rests from their works,[e] just as God did from his. ¹¹ Let us, therefore, make every effort to enter that rest, so that no one will perish by following their example of disobedience. (NIV)

It is a cheap trick that Sabbatarian apologists attempt to use Hebrews 4 as proof that God intended the Jewish Sabbath to be an enduring part of the New Covenant. In this passage the concept of Old Testament rest is used to symbolize the rest that the Gospel provides that only the assurance of salvation can bring. In the Eastern Orthodox churches, the Sabbath rest of Hebrews 4 is connected with the Festival of the Great Sabbath – the last Sabbath ever kept in the world, kept by Jesus as He slept in the tomb on the Sabbath day awaiting His resurrection the next morning.

The Festival of the Great Sabbath has no connection with anything in the Old Testament. That this holy day has existed in the Eastern churches since the beginning of its history is compelling evidence that this huge body of Christian believers never “kept” the Sabbath in the Jewish sense of the word.

IMPLICATIONS FOR ADVENTISM

The lunar Sabbath concept wreaks havoc with Seventh-day Adventist Bible prophecy and its Sabbath doctrine in general. The scandal of the Church's attempt to cover up the FACT of the lunar Sabbath underscores an under-lying theme of Adventism, and that is that its leaders seem willing to sell their own souls to protect the INSTITUTION of Adventism at all costs.

As pointed out earlier, a Church that cannot be trusted to keep its own sacred cow Sabbath the biblical way cannot be trusted to tell either its sheep or its shepherds whether or not they should be required to keep the Jewish Sabbath in the first place!

Since the REAL Sabbath has always wandered through the days of any fixed-week calendar schema, the pope could not have “changed” the day of worship for Christians from Saturday to Sunday.

If the pope didn't "change the day," the apostles and the fathers of the early church had biblical reasons for abandoning Sabbath-keeping. Furthermore, if Christians were keeping track of time the way the Jews did, their "first day of each week would have wandered through the days of a fixed calendar's week just like the Jewish Sabbath.

Note that the Adventist belief model implodes on itself if no one changed the Sabbath.

Perhaps the truth about the lunar Sabbath helps to explain why the early Christians always wrote about meeting on the first day of the week, rather than labeling their day of worship as "Sunday." The first day of the first week of the first month was the day that the new moon was first sighted, and they could not say that they worshiped on Sunday because the day of the week named in honor of the Sun was not the same thing as the first day of the week. Although not definitive in itself, the fact that any New Testament references to the day that the first Christians gathered together was said to be "the first day of the week" is evidence of sorts that their weeks and months may have been lunar-based. Later, early church writers began to refer to it as the "8th day" of the week because doing so symbolized the eternal "Sabbath rest" that believers were experiencing as a result of the Gospel truth and which was celebrated by The Great Sabbath festival. The rest of the Sabbath becomes eternal, because the 8th day symbolizes how the Resurrection of Christ takes our lives out of time and places is squarely in the realm of the eternal.

Note how very well the Eastern orthodox churches understood the total obsolescence of the Jewish Sabbath. Again, it is no wonder the Adventist prophetess, Ellen White, said not one significant word about Eastern orthodox Christianity in her landmark book, *The Great Controversy*.

And now a final word on William Miller. Do you really suppose, now, that William Miller declined to become a follower of Ellen White because he had some kind of a mental block? We do not think so. First, like most Christians, he knew many of the biblical reasons why the early Christians abandoned the Jewish Sabbath. Secondly, he knew that even if he was supposed to keep the Sabbath, it could not properly be kept by trying to peg it to an exact seven-day multiple of the exact 7th day of Creation. And do you suppose he would really want to join a church that was teaching its potential converts and its flocks something its top leaders knew was wrong in the first place?

CHAPTER FIFTEEN

AN IN DEPTH EXAMINATION OF COLOSSIANS 2:14-17

Kerry Wynne

AN IN DEPTH EXAMINATION OF COLOSSIANS 2:14-17

A Denial Of the Efficacy of Christ's Sacrifice

Adventism's very reason to exist depends on its "gamble" that Colossians 2:14-17 does not mean what it says. Billions of dollars of tithe and offering money have flowed into the coffers of the Adventist Church on the basis that St. Paul wrote something but meant something else. If it means what it says — and a wealth of evidence proves that it does — Paul taught that the Sabbath was a Jewish ordinance which represented Christ and became obsolete when the Reality came to Earth and died on the Cross. Therefore, Adventism stands in utter defiance of the Word of God. The billions of dollars that have been collected on the gamble that Paul did not mean what he said represent "blood money," and it is ill-gotten gain.

Never in the history of Christian theology has it been more clear that Colossians 2:14-17 means exactly what it says. At least three Seventh-day Adventist theologians have made fools of themselves by proposing the most absurd work-arounds imaginable, all of them leading to the Judaization of Christianity to the point of absurdity. Their desperate attempts to explain away Colossians 2:14-17 defy the teachings of the Church's own prophetess, Ellen White, on at least two major points. Their ideas are nearly as unacceptable to conservative Seventh-day Adventists as they are to Evangelical, Catholic, and Orthodox Christians. In fact it was the blatant desperateness of the late Dr. Samuele Bacchiocchi's Colossians 2:14 work-around, published in his 1977 book, *From Sabbath to Sunday*, that jerked the Christian world to attention and finally unmasked Sabbatarianism as a dangerous, destructive heresy. In fact, his book launched the anti-Sabbatarian movement that is now challenging the very right of the Seventh-day Adventist Church to exist.

While Sabbatarian apologists have been embarrassing Christianity with their self-contradictory work-arounds, anti-Sabbatarians have been discovering new and powerful arguments that support the straight-forward reading of Colossians 2:14-17.

St. Paul said that four Jewish ordinances — the dietary laws, the annual Sabbaths, the monthly New Moons, and the weekly Sabbaths— represented Christ. The Sabbath stood for and represented the rest that Christ would some day provide to His followers through the Gospel. This rest would come to the followers of Jesus through the assurance of salvation that only the Gospel can provide. In view of the fact that twice as many animal sacrifices were required on the weekly Sabbath, it is highly probable that the Sabbath represented Christ as a Sacrifice also.

While the Mosaic Sabbath was designed to give the children of Israel the rest that they did not experience as slaves, the author of the Book of Hebrews says that the Hebrews never experienced any real rest as a result of their Sabbath-keeping.

If Sabbath-keeping never provided real rest to the ones who kept it, and if Christ is our actual Sabbath "rest," it seems that keeping the Jewish Sabbath instead of resting in Christ's assurance of salvation is a denial of the sufficiency of Christ's sacrifice on the Cross to provide His followers with the assurance of salvation. It is the completion of His sacrifice on the Cross that gives the believer that assurance.

Sabbath-keepers never have any real rest, if for no other reason than they can never figure out exactly what is right to do on the Sabbath. Adventists, in particular, throw out the requirements for Sabbath-keeping that they don't like and keep the ones that they do like. What happened to the law against lighting fires on the Sabbath? The Law of Moses specified that the Israelites were to remain in their dwellings during the hours of the Sabbath, but Seventh-day Adventists think they are doing God's will when they drive their cars to church on Sabbath morning. Some Adventists will eat out on Sabbath, and others won't. What confusion!

A denial of the efficacy of Jesus' sacrifice on the Cross is akin to blasphemy, yet Ellen White felt no shame when she taught that our salvation was not complete when Jesus died on the Cross — that His sacrifice for us was not actually complete until 1844 when Jesus supposedly entered the Most Holy Place in the heavenly sanctuary.

A Strange Connection: The Sacraments And Sunday Laws

Larry Dean, who joined us as co-author of the 9th Edition, proposes that without knowing it, the real reason why Adventists hate the Catholic belief system is not directly about the Sabbath. Rather, it is about which sacrament is acceptable to God, and which one is not. Dean adds that once this principle is understood, one quickly realizes that a Sunday law that forces Sabbath-

keepers to **worship** on Sunday is impossible. Most churches who focus their worship around the Lord's Supper practice closed communion. Catholics and Eastern Orthodox Christians practice closed communion. Open communion is forbidden by Canon law in the Roman Catholic Church. Therefore, it is impossible that it would ever require Seventh-day Adventists, who are not baptized Catholics, to **WORSHIP** on Sundays. Ellen White specified exactly what these Sunday laws would be like. Any Sunday laws we have seen have not met these specifications, and there is one aspect of her description of them that can never be met. She said that these Sunday laws were coming very quickly— within a few years— and they did not.

The Lord's Supper and the Sunday Connection

How did Sunday keeping get started in the first place? The one and only sacrament of the New Covenant is the Lord's Supper. Christians could not worship in the synagogues with the Jews because they had been thrown out of the synagogues. They began to meet secretly on Sundays because Christianity became an outlawed and persecuted religion. Rather, it was a day chosen inadvertently and out of necessity. It acquired its special significance to Christians not because the day itself was holy, but because the Lord's Supper was generally only celebrated on Sundays. It also drew much significance from being the day upon which the Resurrection took place.

From the very beginning, the Eastern Orthodox churches observed two Sabbath festivals per year, one of which was the Great Sabbath, which was celebrated on the 7th day of the Passover/Passion Week. The festival specifically commemorates the fact that Jesus kept the very last Sabbath that Saturday night after He died as a result of His crucifixion. Then, before the resurrection morning, He went down into Hades and preached the Gospel to the sinners who perished at the time of the Great Flood (See First Peter, Chapter Three.)

The focus of the early church was the one and only sacrament of the New Covenant— the Lord's Supper. This is true of both Catholic and Orthodox Christians. But during the first few hundred years after the Cross, the Roman Empire persecuted Christians. One of the ways Christians died was by being turned in to the Roman government by a non-believer who witnessed them partaking of the Lord's Supper. Therefore, when Christians got together on Sundays to observe the Lord's Supper, they required all non-baptized persons to leave. To this very day the Greek Orthodox Church's liturgy retains this language of expulsion, which is read just prior to partaking of the Lord's Supper. Some Greek Orthodox congregations still require all non-baptized individuals to depart just prior to celebrating the Lord's Supper.

What Made the Jewish Sabbath Holy?

What made the Jewish Sabbath holy? Was it because it was an exact seven-day multiple of the 7th day of Creation? No, because today's Jews understand that the day civilization has chosen to designate as the 7th day of the week has been arbitrarily chosen. Our lunar Sabbath research has demonstrated conclusively that the Bible Sabbath was determined by seven-day intervals of the new moon. Could the position of the Moon make a day holy? We don't think the Moon can do that. Was it the animal sacrifices offered on the Sabbath?

Your co-authors work as a team. No idea gets to our readers without extensive "peer review." If we can't agree on something, either the idea is tossed out or we include the respective views as opposing theories.

Kerry Wynne and Larry Dean noticed that the weekly Sabbath is listed in Leviticus 23 as one of the Jewish sacred feast days, and Dean discovered that the Law of Moses, as specified in Numbers 28, requires twice as many animal sacrifices on the weekly Sabbath than as on other sacred days. At first Wynne and Dean theorized that it was the animal sacrifices that made the Sabbath day holy. They took this idea to our "resident theologian," William Hohmann. He researched this theory, but concluded that the evidence seems to favor the concept that it was not the animal sacrifices which imparted holiness to the Jewish Sabbath, but that it was the presence of God that came closer to the people on the Sabbath Day that made it holy.

Continuing his logic, Hohmann concludes that since the presence of God destroys sin, and all of His people are sinners, the sacrifices were needed on the Sabbath so that, in effect, the presence of God would "see" Jesus standing in the place of the sinners.

We are not trying to establish Bible doctrine with this explanation. Rather, we are functioning as theoretical theologians who are simply trying to fit everything together that we have encountered in Scripture and propose a principle that can reasonably be put together in a way that does not conflict with anything else we know about what the Bible teaches.

If our theory is correct, Adventism must be viewed as a destructive cult for this reason alone. It is not, and never was, just a simple misunderstanding about which day Christians should go to church. Combine this heresy with its Arianism, Mormon theology, and its embrace of almost every other aberrant heresy that has ever plagued orthodox Christianity, and the body of Christ has no choice but to strip the Seventh-day Adventist Church of its present classification as a non-cult.

Another concept strikes us here. The Sabbath is inseparably linked with the idea of sacrifices. The form of the word translated "Sabbath" from the Hebrew is derived from a word meaning "propitiation," as we document elsewhere. Sabbaths have always required animal sacrifices. Therefore, you can't have a Sabbath prior to the Fall of Man. Together with the facts of the Hebrew linguistics of Genesis 2, Exodus 16, and Exodus 20, it should be clear that a Sabbath institution prior to the Fall is theologically an oxymoron. The two ideas are not compatible.

Adventists And The Sacraments

Adventists came along after the Great Disappointment of 1844, and Ellen White perceived that the Jewish Sabbath had all the qualities of a sacrament. She noticed that the day, Sunday, had no such qualities. She saw that Sunday was never a holy day and never could be one. It looked like a great selling tool for persuading Christians from other churches to join her church. In order to succeed with a con, you must offer up an attractive bait. Her comparison between the day, Saturday, and the day, Sunday, was not honest in regard to the concept of sacraments. It was like comparing apples with oranges. The real "comparison" was between sacraments. Sacraments do not have to be limited only to sacred days.

She seemed oblivious of the fact that the Sabbath was like a sacrament under the Law of Moses but that the Lord's Supper was the one and only sacrament of the New Covenant. The comparison was really between the Jewish Sabbath and the Lord's Supper. In much of the Christian world, the lives and the worship of the believers revolve around the Lord's Supper. In the Adventist world, virtually everything revolves around the Jewish Sabbath.

Adventists offer a false sacrament to believers— one that is obsolete. In fact, there is no way anyone can keep a Sabbath now because the Sabbath does not even exist! Jesus, the Reality and the Sacrifice, is here. Keeping the Jewish Sabbath is effectively a denial of the power of the ordinance of the Lord's Supper to transform lives. Jesus told His disciples to partake of the Lord's Supper as often as they might want to. Neither Jesus, His disciples, the apostles ever said a word about keeping the Jewish Sabbath. The focus of the disciples and the apostles was always on the Lord's Supper. Now we know why this was the case.

The Supernatural Power of the Lord's Supper

There is a good reason why an enemy of God would want to direct the attention of the believer away from the Lord's Supper. It is a sacrament packed with the power of the Holy Spirit. Perhaps this characteristic has led Catholics to believe that the bread and the wine actually become the blood and body of Christ. Whether this is true or not, something happens to those who partake of it. Astonishingly, modern science acknowledges the supernatural nature of the Eucharist. Larry Dean researched this topic and provided the following commentary, adapted by Kerry Wynne for this book:

The famous psychologist, Carl Jung, had a father who was a Christian clergyman. A number of times in his life, his father confided in him that he felt like a total hypocrite much of the time because often he didn't believe a single word of what he preached every Sunday morning. As a result, Jung became fascinated with the psychology of religion and began to do extensive research in the field. His findings were astonishing. He noted that the church his father was associated with did not do very much with the Lord's Supper. He presented data that successfully demonstrated that churches which make the Lord's Supper the central focus of everything were far happier than Christians who belonged to churches that did not. He found that Catholics, who celebrate the Lord's Supper every Sunday, and sometimes every day, were far happier and psychologically more stable than Protestants. Jung has said some of the most amazing things about the Christian Faith ever written by a non-believer. Jung concluded that if his father had been a Catholic, he would have been far less likely to suffer from a continual crisis of faith. Larry Dean cites this source: http://gnosis.org/gnosis_eucharist1.html

That great modern representative of the Gnosis, C.G. Jung, had a great interest in the Christian sacraments, particularly in the Mass. He repeatedly stated that he considered Catholicism a far more complete religion than its Protestant counterparts. The mystery of the sacraments, said Jung, had great value, and produced a degree of psychological health among Catholics that was not found among

Protestants and atheists. (One wonders whether he would have made the same statement about the post-Vatican II church, with its folk Masses and burlap vestments.)

Jung contended that the Eucharistic sacrifice contained a vital mystery that was not entirely negated by the dogmatic structure in which it was veiled:

The ritual act [of the Mass] consecrates both the gift and the givers. It commemorates and represents the Last Supper which our Lord took with His disciples, the whole Incarnation, Passion, Death and Resurrection of Christ. But from the point of view of the divine, this anthropomorphic action is only the outer shell of husk in which what is really happening is not a human action at all but a divine event.

Jung emphasizes that those involved in the celebration of the Mass are ministering causes of the divine event. The priest does not cause the mystery; he is merely a minister of grace and power. The same is true of the congregation and of the seemingly inert substances of bread and wine. The Mass is not an action executed by humans, but by divinity.

To revert to magical terminology once again, there are two main categories of magic. Low magic is personalistic and egotistical: It envisions its operators as the causes of magical acts. But when humans become the ministering agents of divinity, having mystically sensed that divinity wants to manifest itself through humanity, then we are dealing with high magic.

According to Jung, the Mass, when properly understood, is best treated as an act of high magic. In this regard he wrote:

Wherever the [low] magical aspect of a rite tends to prevail, it brings the rite nearer to satisfying the individual ego's blind greed for power, and thus breaks up the mystical body of the Church into separate units. Where on the other hand, the rite is conceived as the action of God himself, the human participants have only an incidental or "ministering" significance.

Jung does go on to state that the lesser, human consciousness, symbolized by the priest and the congregation, is confronted with a situation that is independent of human action. Divinity and its sacrificial mystery exist on a plane that is timeless and transcends consciousness as humans know it. It impels the human being to act as a minister of grace by making him an exponent, in time and among humanity, of an event that is timeless and divine.

Jung's attitude differs, commendably, I believe, from the prosaic, humdrum interpretation offered by rationalizing theologians, who reduce this sublime mystery to the trivial proportions of their own thinking. It also differs from the arrogance of some New Age teachers, who insist upon humans "creating their own reality."

Humility in the face of transcendence; this is Jung's great characteristic as a man, and it is also his advice to us. "The hammer cannot discover within itself the power which makes it strike," as he remarked in the essay quoted above. What seizes the human being in the mystery of the Mass or in any other mystery is something outside humanity: a sovereign power, as free from limitation as light is from darkness. Ordinary human consciousness cannot find anything within itself that would cause humans to perform a mystery. It can only do so when it is seized by the mystery.

The human soul is at once near and far from the divine. On the one hand we are all suffering from the great alienation, the great estrangement; yet there also dwells within is a portion of the free and eternal one who is forever united with all that is holy, great, and good throughout the aeons of aeons. The dazzling spark of the divine lives in the outermost darkness. When viewed from without, it appears clothed in darkness, having assumed some of the likeness of this darkness. The Gnostic myth declares that the sparks of our indwelling divinity have come forth from a central flame, and that they partake of two aspects: They have the quality of "sparks" (separateness) and of "flames" (union) at the same time. (This recognition is in fact the central idea behind the much-discussed Gnostic "dualism.")

In addition to the views of the mass discussed above, there is also the notion that this mystery is of the nature of a sacrifice. The sacrifice, in its Gnostic sense, involves the return of the alienated spark to its

original flame. Neither philosophy, metaphysics, nor dogma can accomplish this longed-for union, for it is not a matter of concept but of experience. If we wish to join our shining twin in heaven by removing the dichotomy, we must do a work, an opus, as the alchemists of old would have called it. We must offer the bread and wine of our lesser nature to a power from above, so that this human self may be transformed into the likeness and indeed the substance of the wholly other, the alien God, the One beyond and above all the aeons, who in some utterly mysterious way is still our own, true, inmost Self. God in man returns to himself in the sacrificial mystery. As Jung expressed it:

The dichotomy of God into divinity and humanity and his return to himself in the sacrificial act hold out the comforting doctrine that in man's own darkness there is hidden a light that shall once again return to its source, and that this light actually wanted to descend into the darkness in order to deliver the Enchained One who languishes there, and lead him to light everlasting.

This return is not an act that can ever be performed by the lesser human consciousness. This lesser self can only offer itself as an instrument, an offering on the eucharistic altar of Gnosis. Words cannot describe, thoughts cannot penetrate, senses cannot perceive the true character of the *mysterium tremendum et fascinans* (awesome and bewitching mystery) enacted on the altar. Only the still mind, the reverent emotion, and the pure will directed toward the goal of divine union can bring us closer to the secret that blazes forth at the center of the mystery. Myths may bring us nearer, magic may illuminate, philosophy may elucidate, but the mystery remains, as it must, for it is in us and we are in it.

(End of citation.)

Kerry Wynne notes that Seventh-day Adventists celebrate the Lord's Supper four times a year while their lives revolve around an obsolete, even non-existent sacrament. By contrast, the lives of the members of many other churches revolve around the powerful, Spirit-filled Eucharist. We cannot help but contrast this fact, in our own minds, with research that suggests that a disproportionate number of Seventh-day Adventists end up in prison and/or Alcoholics Anonymous, yet these Adventist populations have abysmal rehabilitation rates even compared to the atheist populations in these institutions. (Recall the research conducted by retired defense attorney, Larry Dean, over a span of twenty years.)

CHAPTER SIXTEEN

ARE THERE TWO CLASSIFICATIONS OF ANNUAL SABBATHS IN COLOSSIANS 2:14-17?

(new)

By Kerry B. Wynne, Martin H. Klayman and Larry Dean

ARE THERE TWO CLASSIFICATIONS OF ANNUAL SABBATHS IN COLOSSIANS 2:14-17?

(new)

By Kerry B. Wynne, Martin H. Klayman and Larry Dean

Marcos Thaler and Jason Smith have devised a new approach to working around the anti-Sabbatarian implications of Colossians 2:14-17. Their new theory attempts to provide a credible explanation of why the Sabbath in the third position does not necessarily have to be a reference to the weekly Sabbath. Their approach is born out of necessity. If this text means what “for all the world” it appears to say, Sabbatarian theology stands in defiance of the revealed will of God as expressed through the Apostle Paul.

Our analysis of this theory follows. First, we provide our readers with a short abstract of their position and our position. Then a detailed study follows.

THE SABBATARIAN CLAIMS OF THALER AND SMITH

The sequence of the three classifications of obsolete appointed days in this passage is that of ANNUAL-MONTHLY-ANNUAL. The reason Paul needed two annual categories is that there are two kinds of annual appointed “festival sabbaths” – ones that require annual pilgrimages and ones that do not. This fact explains why Paul would need to assign two of the three positions in Colossians 2:14-17 to the annual type. In fact, if he failed to do so, Christians would figure that they are required to observe two specific “annual sabbaths” – The Feast of Trumpets and the Feast of the Day of Atonement. This “fact” trumps an assortment of arguments that indicate that the Sabbath in the third category could not be anything but a reference to the weekly Sabbath of the Decalogue.

In the first place, it is impossible that the Sabbath in the third position could be a reference to the weekly Sabbath. The weekly Sabbath is an eternal, moral principle that could never be obsoleted by any event.

Even if there are not two significant categories of annual sabbaths, the Hebrew literary device of **chiasm** would give Paul the literary license to say the same thing in two places, and these places are represented in the first and third positions in the passage.

THE ANTI-SABBATARIAN REBUTTAL OF WYNNE AND KLAYMAN

The credibility of Thaler and Smith’s work-around hinges on their claim that the Hebrew word, “hag,” always refers to the annual appointed festivals that required annual pilgrimages. Although Colossians 2:14-17 was written in Greek, the Greek word, “heorte,” points back to a variation of the Hebrew word, “hag,” as in Hosea 2:11. They claim that the word “hag” is only used to refer to annual sabbaths which required pilgrimages to the temple in Jerusalem.

The reality is that the Hebrew words “hag” and “sukkot” would have to appear together to indicate an annual sabbath that requires a pilgrimage. Judaism recognizes only two basic classification of sabbaths – annual and weekly.

An annual sabbath is an annual sabbath, pilgrimage or no pilgrimage. It is the lack of servile work in association with an annual appointed festival that makes it an annual sabbath.

There are several compelling reasons why the third classification of sabbath must be weekly. The Jewish ordinances Paul lists are said to have become obsolete as a result of Christ’s death on the Cross. Many Sabbatarians, including Seventh-day Adventists, believe that the so-called “ceremonial” laws were nailed to the Cross. Seventh-day Adventists do believe the annual sabbaths and monthly New Moon observations perished at the Cross. Since the Law of Moses specifies that two spotless lambs must be offered on the weekly Sabbath (Numbers 28) and since Christ, the Spotless Lamb of God, sacrificed Himself on the Cross, it is only logical that the weekly Sabbath could not continue as a required ordinance. It is not only fitting, but virtually REQUIRED, that the weekly Sabbath cease to be mandatory for Christians.

“Hag” or “Hag sukot,” pilgrimage or no pilgrimage, Leviticus 23 lists a set of annual appointed festivals. Additionally, each annual sabbath has a two-part name given to it in Leviticus 23. The weekly Sabbath of the Decalogue is classified as one of the appointed festivals, suggesting that it is a ceremonial event. Other places in Scripture indicate that its ceremonial properties have multiple significance which none of the other appointed feasts have. It is part of Israel’s Covenant with God, and it is symbolic of the death of Christ on the Cross as indicated by Israel’s requirement to offer two spotless lambs upon it.

Thaler and Smith may have gotten the idea for two separate categories of annual sabbaths from an extended passage in Ezekiel which lists various types of appointed feast days in a scattered fashion throughout its eleven verses. Among these scattered references to various appointed festivals, there might possibly appear to be two categories representing annual sabbaths. One such listing contains no reference to associated pilgrimages. The other one might possibly do so, but only **IF** the writer's intended meaning is the third meaning of the Hebrew word as listed in the *Strong's Hebrew Dictionary* and one which entered the Hebrew language late in the development of the Hebrew language. Also these listings are scattered throughout the eleven verses and are not listed in the context of belonging to a set, and there are multiple mentions of the weekly Sabbath and monthly New Moon observances as well.

Thaler and Smith appear to take a general characteristic of the annual sabbaths (that some involve pilgrimages and others do not) and claim that this general characteristic supersedes the specific concept of the SET that has been a cornerstone of Jewish theology for as long as Israel has existed.

The Sabbaths / New Moon set is a key element of theological understanding in Judaism, and it is instantly recognized by Jewish readers.

THE STUDY BEGINS

Here is a definition of the word "chiasm" as it especially relates to biblical passages. It comes from the following source:

<https://gotquestions.org/chiasm-chiastic.html>

Question: "What is a chiasm / chiastic structure in the Bible?"

Answer: A chiasm (also called a chiasmus) is a literary device in which a sequence of ideas is presented and then repeated *in reverse order*. The result is a "mirror" effect as the ideas are "reflected" back in a passage. Each idea is connected to its "reflection" by a repeated word, often in a related form. The term *chiasm* comes from the Greek letter *chi*, which looks like our letter *X*. Chiastic patterns are also called "ring structures."

The structure of a chiasm is usually expressed through a series of letters, each letter representing a new idea. For example, the structure ABBA refers to two ideas (A and B) repeated in reverse order (B and A). Often, a chiasm includes another idea in the middle of the repetition: ABXBA. In this structure, the two ideas (A and B) are repeated in reverse order, but a third idea is inserted before the repetition (X). By virtue of its position, the insertion is emphasized.

Some chiasms are quite simple. The common saying "When the going gets tough, the tough get going" is chiastic. The words *going* and *tough* are repeated, in reverse order, in the second half of the sentence. The structure is ABBA. Another example of a chiasm, also with the ABBA structure, is Benjamin Franklin's axiom "By failing to prepare, you are preparing to fail." Other chiasms are more complex, even spanning entire poems.

There are weekly Sabbaths and then there are "special" days / sabbaths in which no servile work is to be done. A special annual appointed festival becomes an annual sabbath only if no servile work is to be done upon it – not whether a pilgrimage is associated with it. Leviticus 23 specifies on which days, other than the weekly Sabbath, that no servile work is to be done.

The Passover (Pesach), Feast of Weeks (Shavuot) and Feast of Tabernacles (Sukkot) are the pilgrimage feasts. Each of these events involve one or two days of cessation from servile work. However, Yom Teruah (now referred to as the New Year), and Yom Kippur (Day of Atonement), though not pilgrimage feasts, may be characterized as special Sabbaths since they also require a cessation from servile work.

Thaler and Smith link Colossians 2:14-17 with Hosea 2:11, so a good place to start is to examine this text from Hosea first with an emphasis on the listing of appointed feast references:

Hosea 2:11 From the NIV

I will stop all her celebrations: her yearly festivals, her New Moons, her Sabbath days—all her appointed festivals. [Note that the translators reversed the order compared to the original Hebrew.]

Hosea 2:11 From the Hebrew Interlinear

solemn feasts (mowadah #4150): And All her and her **Sabbaths** (we-sab-bat-tah #7676) **new moons** (hadesah #2320) **feast days** (haggah #2282) mirth her all her and to cease.

HOSEA 2:11 REMARKS BY KERRY WYNNE

Note that the order in this Hebrew text is ordered WEEKLY-MONTHLY-ANNUAL. The Hebrew word, “mowadah,” notifies the reader that three appointed times are about to follow; so it is not a member of the sabbath set itself. Hebrew writers would occasionally reverse the order in which the three were listed. The appointed feast in the first position, “we-sab-bat-tah,” is a clear reference to weekly Sabbaths. The middle is clearly a reference to the monthly New Moon. The appointed feast classification in the third position is a variation of the word “hag.” It might designate appointed annual feasts that require a pilgrimage, although it does not have to. Please study the Brown-Driver-Briggs definition below:

Brown-Driver-Briggs (Strong's #2282 - “chag”) - [haggah]

חג **noun masculine** ^{Isaiah 29:1} **festival-gathering, feast, pilgrim-feast** (Late Hebrew *id.*; Aramaic , אַחַג; Arabic  *pilgrimage*; Sabean חג DHM^{Epiqr. Denkm. 31.}; NöZMG 1887. 719.; RS^{Proph. Lect. ii. n. 6.}; > We^{Skizzen iii. 106, 165} *sacred dance*) — חג absolute and construct [Exodus 10:9](#) 36t.; חג [Numbers 28:17](#) 13t.; suffix חגי [Exodus 23:18](#); חגה [Deuteronomy 16:14](#); חגה [Hosea 2:13](#); חגו [Psalm 81:4](#); plural חגים [Isaiah 29:1](#) 2t.; suffix חגיח [Nahum 2:1](#); חגגים [Amos 5:21](#) 2t.; —

1 *feast*, especially one observed by a *pilgrimage* (Exodus 23:14,17):

a. *special feast* to the golden calf [Exodus 32:5](#) (J; where there was a sacred dance [Exodus 32:19](#)); a feast in the 8th month observed by Jeroboam in place of the feast of the 7th month in Judah [1 Kings 12:32,33](#); pilgrim feast proposed by Moses [Exodus 10:9](#) (JE); feast at Shiloh [Judges 21:19](#). Elsewhere

b. **apparently always of the three great pilgrim feasts, celebrated by processions and dancing:** (1) *in General* [Isaiah 30:29](#); [Amos 8:10](#); [Nahum 2:1](#); חגים יקפו *let feasts come round* [Isaiah 29:1](#); "" ערות [Amos 5:21](#); חגלי [Leviticus 23:41](#) (H); distinguished from the more General מועדים (sacred seasons) [Ezekiel 45:17](#); [Ezekiel 46:11](#); [Hosea 9:5](#) (יום חג), and from specific שבתות, חגים, as well, [Hosea 2:13](#); (2) *in particular*: unleavened cakes and Passover חג (ה)מצות [Exodus 23:15](#) = [Exodus 34:18](#) (JE); [Leviticus 23:6](#) (P), [Deuteronomy 16:16](#); 2Chronicles 8:13; 30:13,21; 35:17; [Ezra 6:22](#); חג [Exodus 12:14](#) (P); first day of the seven [Numbers 28:17](#) (P); the last day [Exodus 13:6](#) (J); the seven [Ezekiel 45:21,23](#); חג [Exodus 34:25](#); חגי [Exodus 23:18](#) (both J E); חג [Psalm 81:4](#) (probably the full moon of Passover); חג [Exodus 23:16](#) = חג שמות [Exodus 34:22](#) (JE), compare [Deuteronomy 16:10,16](#); 2Chronicles 8:13; חג ראשית [Exodus 23:16](#) = [Exodus 34:22](#) (JE) = חג תבואה [Leviticus 23:34](#) (P), [Deuteronomy 16:13,16](#); [Deuteronomy 31:10](#); 2Chronicles 8:13; [Ezra 3:4](#); [Zechariah 14:16,18,19](#); also חגי [Leviticus 23:39](#) (H), חגה [Kings 8:2,65](#) 2Chronicles 5:3; 7:8,9; [Ezra 4:5](#); [Nehemiah 8:14](#); חגה (i.e. of people) [Deuteronomy 16:14](#); 7days [Numbers 29:12](#) (P), [Nehemiah 8:18](#). — Verbs with חג are: חג [Leviticus 23:39,41](#) (H), [Exodus 12:14](#); [Numbers 29:12](#) (P), [Nahum 2:1](#); [Zechariah 14:16,18,19](#); חג [Exodus 23:15](#) = [Exodus 34:18](#) (JE); חג [Isaiah 30:29](#); but usually עשה [Exodus 34:22](#) (JE), [Deuteronomy 16:10,13](#); [1 Kings 8:65](#); [1 Kings 12:32,33](#); 2Chronicles 7:8,9; 30:13,21; 35:17; [Ezra 3:4](#); [Ezra 6:22](#); [Nehemiah 8:18](#).

Because the first word, “mowadah,” is a term for appointed feasts which introduces the specific types of appointed feasts to follow, there are only three actual positions available for categorizing the three kinds of events and no room for two classifications of annual sabbaths. Perhaps it is the existence of the introductory word for a type of appointed feasts that has caused Thaler and Smith to believe that there might be two annual sabbath types, based on whether or not there is a pilgrimage associated with it. They knew that some of the annual appointed festivals were associated with pilgrimages and others were not. As you will see later, in no place where the three types are mentioned together is there “room” for a fourth category. We still have only ONE category of annual appointed feast/sabbaths in this passage.

Colossians 2:14-17

Our focus in Colossians 2:14-17 is on the Greek words for the three kinds of events Paul references in this passage.

This text is written in Greek. There is no dispute over the first two categories of the sabbaths. “Heorte” is used for the

sabbath classification in the first position, and it clearly indicates the annual category. There is no dispute over the word used for the second classification for monthly New Moon. The Sabbath in the third position is the plural form of “Sabbaton.” While we will have more to say about it later, “Sabbaton” is used in the Greek only to mean the weekly Sabbath or a seven-day week. In regard to the Sabbath in the third position, Paul wrote something like, “and of the Sabbath days.” Note that Paul referred to all three classifications as plural as in “annual sabbaths, monthly New Moons, and weekly sabbaths.” He would do this, of course, because these observances repeated themselves every year, every month, and every week. Keep this thought in mind as you review the definition of *Sabbaton* to follow:

Thayer's Greek Lexicon

STRONGS NT 4521: σάββατον

σάββατον, σαββάτου, τό (Hebrew שַׁבָּת), found in the N. T. only in the historical books except twice in Paul's Epistles; sabbath; i. E.:

1. the seventh day of each week, which was a sacred festival on which the Israelites were required to abstain from all work ([Exodus 20:10](#); [Exodus 31:13](#); [Deuteronomy 5:14](#));

a. singular σάββατον and τό σάββατον: [Mark 6:2](#); (L Tr); [Mark 16:1](#); [John 5:9f](#), etc.; equivalent to the institution of the sabbath, the law for keeping holy every seventh day of the week: [Matthew 12:8](#); [Mark 2:27](#); [Luke 6:5](#); λύειν, [John 5:18](#); τηρεῖν, [John 9:16](#); ἡ ἡμέρα τοῦ σαββάτου (שַׁבָּתוֹת, [Exodus 20:8](#) and often), the day of the sabbath, sabbath-day, [Luke 13:16](#); [Luke 14:5](#); ὁδός σαββάτου, a sabbath-day's journey, the distance it is lawful to travel on the sabbath-day, i. e. according to the Talmud two thousand cubits or paces, according to Epiphanius (haer. 66, 82) six stadia: [Acts 1:12](#), cf. [Matthew 24:20](#) (the regulation was derived from [Exodus 16:29](#)); cf. Winers RWB, under the word Sabbathsweg; Oehler in Herzog xiii., 203f (cf. Leyrer in Herzog edition 2 vol. 9:379); Mangold in Sehenkel v., 127f; (Ginsburg in Alexander's Kitto under the word Sabbath Day's Journey; Lumby on [Acts 1:12](#) (in Cambr. Bible for Schools)). as dative of time (Winers Grammar, § 31, 9 b.; Buttman, § 133, 26): σαββάτω, [Matthew 24:20](#) (G L T Tr WH); [Luke 14:1](#); τῷ σαββάτῳ, [Luke 6:9](#) L text T Tr WH; [Luke 13:14](#); [Luke 14:3](#); [Acts 13:44](#); ἐν σαββάτῳ, [Matthew 12:2](#); [John 5:16](#); [John 7:22](#) (here L WH brackets ἐν), 23; ἐν τῷ σαββάτῳ, [Luke 6:7](#); [John 19:31](#), accusative τό σάββατον during (on) the sabbath (cf. Buttman, § 131, 11; Winer's Grammar, § 32,6): [Luke 23:56](#); κατὰ πᾶν σάββατον every sabbath, [Acts 13:27](#); [Acts 15:21](#); [Acts 18:4](#). plural τὰ σάββατα, of several sabbaths, [Acts 17:2](#) (some refer this to 2).

b. plural, τὰ σαββάτων (for the singular) of a single sabbath, sabbath-day (the use of the plural being occasioned either by the plural names of festivals, as τὰ ἐγκαίνια, ἄζυμα, γενέσια, or by the Chaldaic form שַׁבָּתוֹת (Winers Grammar, 177 (167); Buttman, 23 (21))): [Matthew 28:1](#); [Colossians 2:16](#) ([Exodus 20:10](#); [Leviticus 23:32](#) etc.; τὴν ἐβδόμην σάββατα καλούμεν, Josephus, Antiquities 3, 6, 6; add, 1, 1, 1; (14, 10, 25; Philo de Abrah. § 5; de cherub. § 26; Plutarch, de superstitione 8); τὴν τῶν σαββάτων ἑορτήν, Plutarch, symp. 4, 6, 2; hodie tricesima sabbata, Horace sat. 1, 9, 69; nowhere so used by John except in the phrase μία τῶν σαββάτων, on which see 2 below); ἡ ἡμέρα τῶν σαββάτων, [Luke 4:16](#); [Acts 13:14](#); [Acts 16:13](#) ([Exodus 20:8](#); [Exodus 35:3](#); [Deuteronomy 5:12](#); [Jeremiah 17:21f](#)); τοῖς σάββασιν and ἐν τοῖς σάββασιν (so constantly (except Lachmann in [Matthew 12:1, 12](#)) by metaplasm for σαββάτοις, cf. Winers Grammar, 63 (62); (Buttman, 23 (21))) on the sabbath-day: [Matthew 12:1](#) (see above), 5, 10-12 (see above); [Mark 1:21](#); [Mark 2:23](#); [Mark 3:2, 4](#); [Luke 4:31](#); [Luke 6:9](#) (R G L marginal reading) (1 Macc. 2:38; the Sept. uses the form σαββάτοις, and Josephus both forms). On the precepts of the Jews with regard to the observance of the sabbath, which were for the most part extremely punctilious and minute, cf. Winers RWB, under the word Sabbath; Oehler in Herzog xiii. 192ff (revised by Orelli in edition 2 vol. xiii. 156ff); Schürer, Zeitgesch. 2te Aufl. § 28 II.; Mangold in Schenkel see, p. 123f; (BB. DD., under the word; Geikie, Life and Words of Christ, chapter xxxviii. vol. ii. p. 95ff; Farrar, Life of Christ, chapter xxxi. vol. i., p. 432f; Edersheim, Jesus the Messiah, vol. ii., p. 56ff and Appendix, xvii.).

2. seven days, a week: πρώτη σαββάτου, [Mark 16:9](#); δὶς τοῦ σαββάτου, twice in the week, [Luke 18:12](#). The plural is used in the same sense in the phrase ἡ μία τῶν σαββάτων, the first day of the week (see εἶς, 5) (Prof. Sophocles regards the genitive (dependent on ἡμέρα) in such examples as those that follow (cf. [Mark 16:9](#) above) as equivalent to μετά with an accusative, the first day after the sabbath; see his Lex., p. 43 par. 6): [Matthew 28:1](#); [Mark 16:2](#); [Luke 24:1](#); [John 20:1, 19](#); [Acts 20:7](#); κατὰ μίαν σαββάτων (L T Tr WH σαββάτου), on the first day of every week, [1 Corinthians 16:2](#).

Note that in other places where this exact plural form of “Sabbaton” is used to designate the weekly Sabbath of the Decalogue, such as in [Matthew 28:1](#) (NIV):

Matthew 28:1 - After the Sabbath, at dawn on the first day of the week, Mary Magdalene and the other Mary went to look at the tomb.

Elsewhere in this chapter we will provide a more exhaustive list.

Also recall that the weekly Sabbath is listed in Leviticus 23 as one of the appointed festivals. But the plural form of "Sabbaton" indicates ONLY the weekly appointed festival, which is the Sabbath of the Decalogue.

How To Follow This Study

The text of Thaler and Smith's paper is rendered in blue type. A double line across the page represents a set that includes their assertion with our rebuttal, and a single line separates their assertion from its rebuttal. We have edited their text occasionally in ways that have not affected its meaning and intent in any way.

=====

THALER - THE "ANNUAL, MONTHLY, WEEKLY" PATTERN IS SIMPLY A FABRICATION AND INDUCEMENT INTO PAUL'S LANGUAGE. BUT IT REALLY DOES NOT HAVE ANY TEXTUAL OR CONTEXTUAL SUPPORT.

WYNNE - Thaler's claim might be true if neither Judaism and its Hebrew language existed. It is a set that is referenced often enough in both the Old and New Testaments to demonstrate that the Sabbaths and New Moons (annual-weekly-monthly) is a well-understood and familiar component of Hebrew thinking.

Additionally, Colossians 2:14-17 is consistent with Paul's general attitude toward Sabbath-keeping expressed throughout his writings. In Paul's epistles, no day has any holiness of itself. The keeping of sacred days is condemned in general. The law that contained the Sabbath commandment, the Law of Moses, with its subset, the Ten Commandments, has been nailed to the Cross, making Sabbath laws obsolete. The sabbaths, and particularly the weekly Sabbath, pointed forward to the death of Christ on the Cross. Recall that God singled out the weekly Sabbath to especially represent the death of Christ as the Propitiator of Israel's sins by requiring that two spotless lambs be offered upon it as outlined in Numbers 28:9-10 (NIV):

⁹“On the Sabbath day, make an offering of two lambs a year old without defect, together with its drink offering and a grain offering of two-tenths of an ephah of the finest flour mixed with olive oil. ¹⁰This is the burnt offering for every Sabbath, in addition to the regular burnt offering and its drink offering.

As clear as Paul was about the nailing of the obsolete Sabbaths to the cross, he taught freedom to keep or not to keep the Sabbath. It is going to be a very difficult task for Thaler and Smith to turn him into someone who taught that Christians MUST keep the Jewish Sabbath.

WYNNE – The annual-monthly-weekly pattern is a key theme running through the Hebrew Scriptures. Two key SDA Sabbath scholars, the late Dr. Samuele Bacchiocchi and Dr. Ronald du Preez, have acknowledged that the last Sabbath classification is, indeed, WEEKLY, but have devised two different but equally creative work-arounds. The third SDA Sabbath scholar, Dr. Skip MacCarty, has sought to minimize the threat of Colossians 2:14-17 by quoting Protestant scholars who have various but weak arguments that support his preference to view the Sabbath in the third position as a nebulous reference to a ceremonial sabbath of some kind. If you are interested in knowing more about their theories, please access our book, *Doctors Bacchiocchi, MacCarty, and du Preez Wreak Havoc with the Sabbath and Ellen G. White*, which is available at TRUTHORFABLES.COM.

THE POSSIBLE SOURCE FOR THALER AND SMITH'S IDEA OF TWO SEPARATE CATEGORIES?

Ezekiel 46:1-11 (New International Version)

In this passage from Ezekiel, references to various kinds of appointed feasts and new moons are scattered throughout the text. It is possible that there are references to two kinds of annual sabbaths. Furthermore, it is possible that these two references are differentiated by whether or not they are associated with a pilgrimage. It is a fact that some of the annual sabbaths were associated with pilgrimages and some were not. The key to understanding how Ezekiel 46:1-11 would not

provide a foundation for Thaler and Smith's approach is that the different sabbath types are scattered rather than grouped in the annual/monthly/weekly set format. The writer's purpose did not require a reference to this set.

The question is not whether or not some annual sabbaths were associated with a pilgrimage and some were not. It is a fact that some were and some were not. The question is whether such a distinction is ever made when the writer is referencing the widely recognized and "official" observable SET. In this passage, there is no such reference.

The text:

This is what the Sovereign LORD says: The gate of the inner court facing east is to be shut on the six working days, but on the **Sabbath day** and on the day of the **New Moon** it is to be opened. ²The prince is to enter from the outside through the portico of the gateway and stand by the gatepost. The priests are to sacrifice his burnt offering and his fellowship offerings. He is to worship at the threshold of the gateway and then go out, but the gate will not be shut until evening. ³On the **Sabbaths** and **New Moons** the people of the land are to worship in the presence of the LORD at the entrance to that gateway. ⁴The burnt offering the prince brings to the LORD on the **Sabbath day** is to be six male lambs and a ram, all without defect. ⁵The grain offering given with the ram is to be an ephah, and the grain offering with the lambs is to be as much as he pleases, along with a hin of oil for each ephah. ⁶On the day of the **New Moon** he is to offer a young bull, six lambs and a ram, all without defect. ⁷He is to provide as a grain offering one ephah with the bull, one ephah with the ram, and with the lambs as much as he wants to give, along with a hin of oil with each ephah. ⁸When the prince enters, he is to go in through the portico of the gateway, and he is to come out the same way. ⁹When the people of the land come before the LORD at the **appointed feasts**, whoever enters by the north gate to worship is to go out the south gate; and whoever enters by the south gate is to go out the north gate. No one is to return through the gate by which he entered, but each is to go out the opposite gate. ¹⁰The prince is to be among them, going in when they go in and going out when they go out. ¹¹'At the **festivals [moed: appointed time, place, or meeting]** and the **appointed feasts [festival gathering, feast, pilgrim feast]**, the grain offering is to be an ephah with a bull, an ephah with a ram, and with the lambs as much as one pleases, along with a hin of oil for each ephah.

A COMPREHENSIVE LISTING OF BIBLE PASSAGES WHICH REFERENCE THE SABBATH SET

1 Chronicles 23:31 (New International Version)

And whenever burnt offerings were presented to the LORD on Sabbaths and at New Moon festivals and at appointed feasts. They were to serve before the LORD regularly in the proper number and in the way prescribed for them.

2 Chronicles 2:4 (New International Version)

Now I am about to build a temple for the Name of the LORD my God and to dedicate it to him for burning fragrant incense before him, for setting out the consecrated bread regularly, and for making burnt offerings every morning and evening and on Sabbaths and New Moons and at the appointed feasts of the LORD our God. This is a lasting ordinance for Israel.

II Chronicles 8:12,13 (New International Version)

¹²On the altar of the Lord that he had built in front of the portico, Solomon sacrificed burnt offerings to the Lord, ¹³according to the daily requirement for offerings commanded by Moses for the Sabbaths, the New Moons and the three annual festivals—the Festival of Unleavened Bread, the Festival of Weeks and the Festival of Tabernacles.

II Chronicles 31:3 (New International Version)

The king contributed from his own possessions for the morning and evening burnt offerings and for the burnt offerings on the Sabbaths, at the New Moons and at the appointed festivals as written in the Law of the Lord.

Nehemiah 10:33 (New International Version)

³³for the bread set out on the table; for the regular grain offerings and burnt offerings; for the offerings on the Sabbaths, New Moon festivals and appointed feasts; for the holy offerings; for sin offerings to make atonement for Israel; and for all the duties of the house of our God.

Isaiah 1:13-14 (New International Version)

Stop bringing meaningless offerings!

Your incense is detestable to me.

New Moons, Sabbaths and convocations—

I cannot bear your evil assemblies.

Your New Moon festivals and your appointed feasts my soul hates.

They have become a burden to me;

I am weary of bearing them.

Ezekiel 45:17 (New International Version)

It will be the duty of the prince to provide the burnt offerings, grain offerings and drink offerings at the festivals, the New Moons and the Sabbaths—at all the appointed feasts of the house of Israel. He will provide the sin offerings, grain offerings, burnt offerings and fellowship offerings to make atonement for the house of Israel.

Hosea 2:11 (New International Version)

I will stop all her celebrations:

her yearly festivals, her New Moons,

her Sabbath days—all her appointed feasts.

Galatians 4:10 (New International Version)

You are observing special days and months and seasons and years.

Colossians 2:16 (New International Version)

Therefore do not let anyone judge you by what you eat or drink, or with regard to a religious festival, a New Moon celebration or a Sabbath day.

Thaler and Smith are asking us to believe that this pattern does not exist in Scripture, and therefore there is no such thing to apply to Colossians 2:14-17. Additionally, they are saying that the general use of the Hebrew literary device of chiasm would explain why Paul would repeat the first category (annual) a second time, and why that repeated category would occur at the end of the set. In fact, they explain that the chiasm Paul used here is not even an ordinary one. It is an “inverted” chiasm. **If the categories are materially different, they cannot be used in a way to represent a chiasm. From this perspective, it appears against the interests of Thaler and Smith to emphasize the difference between the annual sabbath types.**

WYNNE - Some Adventist apologists attempt to read this passage to say that what was nailed to the Cross is a list of our sins. This is a possible reading, and non-Adventist, respectable theologians sometimes prefer this interpretation. Other noted scholars disagree. We are not claiming to be noted scholars, but we join the noted ones in disagreeing. We provide an extensive analysis of this question in our book, *Doctor's Bacchiocchi, MacCarty, and du Preez Wreak Havoc with the Sabbath and Ellen G. White*.

If this passage means only that a list of our sins were nailed to the Cross, we have a problem with logic. Paul says that the event delineated in the first part of this passage is the cause of the Jewish dietary laws and sabbaths becoming obsolete. The nailing of a list of our sins to the Cross would not represent an event that would have the authority to obsolete any Jewish ordinance.

It is interesting to watch how God progressively presented the full meaning of the weekly Sabbath ordinance to the Hebrews. At first, it was presented as a fairly simple obedience test in Exodus 16. It was not a formal ordinance, and there were no sacrifices specified. Three weeks later the Sabbath commandment is given from Mt. Sinai as an official ordinance. There were still no sacrifices specified for the Sabbath. While Moses was in the Cloud with God, Moses was given an extensive set of verbal instructions, which Moses wrote down shortly thereafter. It is in these instructions, which we call the Law of Moses, that added additional symbolic significance to the Sabbath.

In Leviticus 23 we find that in addition to the usual offerings on the other appointed festivals, two spotless lambs must be sacrificed on every weekly Sabbath. The weekly Sabbath already has a number of symbolic associations. It is to remind Israel that God created the world. It is an ordinance designed to help them remember that it was God who rescued them from Egyptian slavery. Christians understand that the physical rest Israel derived from the Sabbath ordinance is symbolic of the rest that God's children can only experience once the price of their sins has actually been achieved, not by the death of animals, but by the death of the Spotless Lamb of God.

The ultimate symbolic weekly Sabbath pathway through the Law of Moses is from the sacrificing of the two spotless lambs to the death of the Spotless Lamb of God on the Cross. There must be some profound implications from this symbolism. It is just possible that Israel's Sabbath days derived their holiness from the animal sacrifices that were offered upon it. Our knowledge of the lunar Sabbath principle makes it clear that the weekly Sabbaths did not get their sacredness from the position of the day on the calendar. If the Sabbaths got their sacredness from the shedding of blood, we have still another understanding of why Paul could say that the weekly Sabbath ordinance was a shadowy symbol that became obsolete when the Reality of Christ appeared.

It was impossible for the Israelites to keep the Law of Moses without access to the temple. Animal sacrifices could only be offered at the temple in Jerusalem. Two spotless lambs had to be offered on the weekly Sabbaths. Apparently, just like there is no forgiveness of sins without the shedding of blood, there is no sacredness to the weekly Sabbath day without the sacrificing of two spotless lambs at the temple in Jerusalem. The temple was destroyed in 70 AD.

WYNNE - Additionally, Thaler and Smith appear to challenge the realities of Greek word definitions and usage characteristics. One of the biggest crises in Adventism right now is that its best scholars cannot find a way around the fact that this third position is filled with a word that cannot possibly mean anything else but the weekly Sabbath. The late Dr. Samuele Bacchiocchi, the most prominent of all Seventh-day Adventist Sabbath scholars, started the whole fiasco when he declared that the sabbath in the third position could not possibly be a reference to anything else (*From Sabbath to Sunday*, page 360). In a book that is co-authored with several other writers, *Doctors Bacchiocchi, MacCarty, and du Preez Wreak Havoc With the Sabbath And Ellen G. White*, we quote an astute but anonymous theologian:

<http://www.theologyweb.com/campus/showthread.php?t=130606>

In this frank assessment of the situation:

Colossians 2:16 mentions the Greek word Sabbaton (Strong's # G4521) which by definition only means 7th day Sabbath and the common word "week?" (You can look this up to verify.) To support this fact, I have listed all the scriptures in the New Testament where this word is used. (Every place speaking of the 7th day Sabbath in the New Testament uses this word.) And note that it only means either the 7th day Sabbath or the common word "week"; thus confirming the definition of this word when you look up its meaning. Here are all the Scriptures that use this word:

Matthew 12:1, Matthew 12:2, used twice as 7th day Sabbath in Matthew 12:5, Matthew 12:8, Matthew 12:10, Matthew 12:11, Matthew 12:12, Matthew 24:20, used twice (first as 7th day sabbath and second as the common word "week") in Matthew 28:1...

Mark 1:21, Mark 2:23, Mark 2:24, used twice for the 7th day sabbath in Mark 2:27, Mark 2:28, Mark 3:2, Mark 3:4, Mark 6:2, Mark 16:1, Used as the common word "week" in Mark 16:2, Also appears as the common word "week" in Mark 16:9...

Luke 4:16, Luke 4:31, Luke 6:1, Luke 6:2, Luke 6:5, Luke 6:6, Luke 6:7, Luke 6:9, Luke 13:10, Luke 13:14, Luke 13:15, Luke 13:16, Luke 14:1, Luke 14:3, Luke 14:5, Used as the common word "week" in Luke 18:12, Luke 23:54, Luke 23:56, Used as the common word "week" in Luke 24:1...

John 5:9, John 5:10, John 5:16, John 5:18, John 7:22, John 9:14, John 9:16, Used twice as 7th day sabbath in John 19:31, Used as the common word "week" in John 20:1, Used as the common word "week" in John 20:19...

Acts 1:12, Acts 13:14, Acts 13:27, Acts 13:42, Acts 13:44, Acts 15:21, Acts 16:13, Acts 17:2, Acts 18:4, Used as the common word "week" in Acts 20:7, Also used as the common word "week" in 1 Corinthians 16:2, and lastly it is used in Colossians 2:16 as the 7th day sabbath.

How ironic that the very last scripture that uses this word tells us that it was a shadow of things to come! After this, it is mentioned no more! Also all Sabbatarian New Testament proof-texts that mention the Sabbath are in this above list. How ironic!

I would like to use simple logic here. We know that fish does not come from serpents; neither do they gather grapes from bramble bushes. Even so, God would never misuse a word, as even the use of words has rules. Now it is a fact that the word *Sabbaton* used in all these Scriptures that I've just listed above only means 7th day Sabbath and the common word, "week." Just like "yes" means "yes" and "no" means no. God would never put the word "no" where He means "yes"; and if the 7th day Sabbath did not belong in Colossians 2:16, He would have never used the Greek word *Sabbaton* (which is translated in the KJV as "Sabbath days," just as it is translated in all those other verses of scripture meaning the same thing consistently all the way to Col 2:16 where it is last used).

If anyone seems to be contentious over this, consider the consistency of how this word is used all over the New Testament until Col 2:16 where it is last used. There can be no exceptions to the rule; if the word *sabbaton* can mean anything other than what it means, then I can use the word "yes" to mean "no." If this does not agree with your doctrine, it's not what I said that's the problem. You need to count your doctrine to be at a loss and come to terms with the truth. Remember, we can do nothing against the truth. We can only do for it.

In the study to follow, Thaler and Smith's points are presented in blue type and Wynne and Klayman's rebuttals are rendered in black type.

=====

THALER - LINGUISTIC ANALYSIS REVEALS THAT THE TERM "FEAST" OR "FESTIVAL" IN HOSEA 2:11 IS ACTUALLY THE RATHER VERY RESTRICTED TERM "HAG." WHENEVER THIS WORD IS USED IN CONNECTION WITH ISRAEL'S CEREMONIAL LAW IT ALWAYS REFERS TO ONE OR MORE OF THE PILGRIM FESTIVALS--- PASSOVER (INCLUDES UNLEAVENED BREAD), PENTECOST, AND/OR TABERNACLES.

WYNNE - Thaler is half right, and it is evident that he did a considerable amount of research in preparing this Sabbatarian defense of Colossians 2:14-17. Here is the source I believe formulated this claim. It is from Bible Research Dot Org. at this Internet address: <http://www.bibleresearch.org/observancebook5/b5w66.html>

THE FESTIVAL OF SUKKOT

The English phrase 'Feast of Tabernacles' occurs nine times in the Old Testament, and it is translated from the Hebrew phrase 'hag sukkot'. See Lev.23:34; Deut.16:13 & 16; 31:10; 2.Chron.8:13; Ezra 3:4; Zech.14:16,18-19.

The Word 'Hag'

The basic meaning of the root word 'hag' is 'to keep a feast' or 'to celebrate a holiday', and it usually refers to the three main pilgrimage-festival seasons that were to be kept in the place chosen by God.

In the nine usages of the phrase 'hag sukkot', the word 'hag' defines the Feast of Sukkot as one of the three pilgrimage-festivals of God on which there is to be a celebration. However, the word 'hag' does not define what is to be celebrated, whereas the word 'sukkot' does define the exact thing that must be celebrated.

What Thaler might not have noticed, or might have simply failed to tell us, is that the principle he claims would only be valid if "hag" were to be used in combination with the word "sukkot" as in "hag sukkot."

The purpose of this analysis is to determine which sabbaths qualified as annual Sabbaths. We know what the seven annual sabbaths are because Leviticus 23 tells us which ones they were. Whether or not a pilgrimage was required has nothing to do with anything of importance to this analysis.

WYNNE - See Leviticus 23. These seven annual appointed festivals were all classified as annual sabbaths in this chapter. Importantly, they were classified as Sabbaths and kept as sabbaths in that no routine work was done on them. Here is an explanation from the *Wikipedia* article, "High Sabbaths:"

The seven festivals do not necessarily occur on weekly Shabbat (seventh-day Sabbath) and are called by the name *miqra* ("called assembly") in Hebrew (Lev. 23). They are observed by Jews and a minority of Christians. Three of them occur in spring: the first and seventh days of Pesach (Passover), and Shavuot (Pentecost) which occurs in summer. Three occur in fall, in the seventh month, and are also called *shabbaton*: Rosh Hashanah (Trumpets); Yom Kippur, the "Sabbath of Sabbaths" (Atonement); and the first and eighth days of Sukkoth (Tabernacles).[4] Sometimes the word *shabbaton* is extended to mean all seven festivals.[5]

The Gospel of John says of the night immediately following Christ's burial that "that sabbath day was a high day" (19:31-42). That night was Nisan 15, just after the first day of Passover week (Unleavened Bread) and an annual *miqra* and rest day, in most chronologies. (In other systems, it was Nisan 14, i.e., weekly but not annual Sabbath.) The King James Version may thus be the origin of naming the annual rest days "High Sabbaths" in English.

=====

THALER - THEN [IN HOSEA 2] COMES THE NEW MOON (HODES), WHICH PLAYED SUCH A ROLE IN DETERMINING DATES FOR THE OTHER SET TIMES.

WYNNE – That the New Moons helped to determine dates for other “set times,” like all of the weekly Sabbaths in any given lunar month, is an argument that is actually against Thaler’s analysis. The first sighting of the New Moon set the day of the month for the four weekly Sabbaths that would occur in the lunar month. One key argument for the phrase, annual-monthly-weekly clause being a theme in Judaism is the fact that until around the time of the building of the second temple, the Hebrews used the phases of the moon to determine their sacred times, and especially their Sabbaths.

The fact that the monthly New Moon is always part of this phrase, annual-monthly-weekly, is a significant argument against Thaler’s position. The lunar New Moon principle links all the sabbaths together. This was an integral part of Judaism and Hebrew culture.

=====

THALER - THEN FINALLY WE HAVE THE PHRASE "HER SABBATH" (SABBATAH), WHICH IS IDENTIFIED AS ISRAEL'S CEREMONIAL SABBATHS. THE WEEKLY SABBATH IS NEVER SPOKEN OF IN THIS MANNER.

WYNNE - Apparently it is by Thaler’s self-proclaimed authority that this word is “identified” as Israel’s ceremonial Sabbaths. We could find no authority for this claim. Old Testament writers wrote in Hebrew over a very long period of time, and it is unreasonable to expect that all the writers would use exactly the same form of the Hebrew words in every case.

Thaler is likely correct in that this term does not refer specifically to the weekly Sabbath. However, it refers to sabbaths, and the weekly Sabbath is a member of the sabbath set. Surely he does not think that the use of the feminine form of the word is some kind of an indicator that rips the weekly Sabbath out of the sabbath set! A nation is often symbolized by a woman. The Sabbaths are Israel’s Sabbaths, given to them by God Himself.

In another comparable passage from **Lamentations 2:6 (NIV)**, we find a feminine reference to Sabbaths:

He has laid waste his dwelling like a garden; he has destroyed his place of meeting. The Lord has made Zion forget **her** appointed festivals and **her Sabbaths**; in his fierce anger he has spurned both king and priest.

It is not reasonable to think that in this passage from Lamentations to “Sabbaths” excludes the weekly Sabbath. The weekly Sabbath is a Sabbath!

=====

THALER - LIKewise, LINGUISTIC INVESTIGATION OF THE SIMILAR THREE TERMS OF COL. 2:16 UNCOVERS THE FACT THAT THE GREEK TERM "HOERTE" IS LIMITED TO THE IDENTICAL THREE ANNUAL PILGRIM FESTIVALS (I.E, PASSOVER/UNLEAVENED BREAD, PENTECOST, AND TABERNACLES), WHEN ALL MALES WERE EXPECTED TO GO TO JERUSALEM FOR THE CELEBRATION.

WYNNE - "Heorte" is a generic term for "feast days." A secondary definition of this word could suggest the meaning of annual sabbaths associated with pilgrimages. Let's apply a little logic to this situation. Even if "heorte" were to have the limited meaning of annual sabbaths that are associated with pilgrimages, we would need a Greek word in the third position, according to Thaler's scheme of things, to indicate the other kind of annual sabbaths – the ones that were NOT associated with pilgrimages. Unfortunately for him, the word in the third position is "sabbaton" – a word that never indicates an annual sabbath of either kind. "Sabbaton" is associated with the number seven. Furthermore, this general theory of chiasm is trumped by the barrier posed by the very definitions of the word that is taking up the spot he desperately needs to fill with something that implies "annual." Here is an extensive list of the places where the Greek word "heorte" is used in the New Testament:

◀ ἐορτῆς ▶

Englishman's Concordance (Strong's #G1859)

"heorte"

ἐορτῆς (heortēs) — 5 Occurrences

[Luke 2:42 N-GFS](#)

GRK: ἔθος τῆς ἐορτῆς
NAS: to the custom of the Feast;
KJV: after the custom of the feast.
INT: custom of the Feast

[John 7:14 N-GFS](#)

GRK: δὲ τῆς ἐορτῆς μεσοῦσης ἀνέβη
NAS: the midst of the feast Jesus
KJV: the midst of the feast Jesus
INT: moreover of the feast [it] being in middle

[John 7:37 N-GFS](#)

GRK: μεγάλη τῆς ἐορτῆς εἰστήκει ὁ
NAS: the great [day] of the feast, Jesus
KJV: that great [day] of the feast, Jesus
INT: great of the feast stood

[John 13:1 N-GFS](#)

GRK: ΔΕ ΤΗΣ ΕΟΡΤΗΣ τοῦ πάσχα
NAS: before the Feast of the Passover,
KJV: before the feast of the passover,
INT: moreover the feast of the passover

[Colossians 2:16 N-GFS](#)

GRK: ἐν μέρει ἐορτῆς ἢ νεομηνίας
NAS: in respect to a festival or
KJV: respect of an holyday, or
INT: in respect of feast or new moon

=====

WHILE "NEOMENIA" IS THE TERM FOR NEW MOON OBSERVANCES, SABBATA INCLUDES THE NON-PILGRIMAGE RITUAL "REST TIMES" OF TRUMPETS, ATONEMENT, AND BY EXTENSION SABBATICAL YEARS. IN

SHORT, THE LEXICOGRAPHICAL DATA, AND THE LINGUISTIC LINKS, AND THE CONTEXT TOGETHER PERSUASIVELY INDICATE THE SIMILARITY OF THE PILGRIM FESTIVAL, NEW MOON, SABBATH SEQUENCE IN HOSEA AND COLOSSIANS.

HERE IS THE CHIASM:

A. 1) FEASTS (3 ANNUAL PILGRIMAGE -- PASSOVER, PENTECOST, TABERNACLES)

B. 2) NEW MOONS (12 OR 13 PER MONTH) [YEAR]

A. 3) SABBATHS (2 ANNUAL NON-PILGRIMAGE -- TRUMPETS, DAY OF ATONEMENT--WHICH MAY INCLUDE THE SEPTENNIAL [EVERY 7 YEAR] SABBATH OF THE LAND REST)

WYNNE - The "Sabatta" Thaler is referring to is the plural form of the Greek word "Sabbaton." "Sabbaton" implies "seven," or relating to a week of seven days. There is no justification for extending anything present to Sabbatical Years, as "Sabbaton" is only used in reference to the weekly Sabbath or a week of seven days. The annual sabbath of the Feast of the Trumpets and the annual sabbath of the Feast of the Day of Atonement are scheduled annually, so the word "Sabbaton" is as far removed from indicating a sabbath that occurs on an annual basis as it could possibly be. And all the annual sabbaths occur, of course, only once a year.

Paul was writing in the Greek language when he wrote Colossians 2:14-17, but he is referencing Hebrew thought in explaining his point to his readers. There is an overwhelmingly strong pattern in Hebrew thinking, and that is the observational SYSTEM. In Leviticus 23 the sabbaths, including the weekly Sabbaths, are classified as appointed festivals and holy convocations. The observational SYSTEM was made up of the annual sabbaths, New Moons, and the weekly sabbaths – a system delineated by frequency rather than pilgrimages.

The sabbath set is a major theme in Hebrew thinking. The observational set is referenced in a number of places in the Old Testament, it is a set that is linked in several ways:

ONE - All of them required animal sacrifices.

TWO - All of them were scheduled by the four phases of the moon, and this was the practice of Israel up until around the time of the building of the second temple.

THREE - They all required the cessation of servile labor.

What Thaler wants us to do is to read the traditional Jewish tri-part observational-set as a two-part set because of a Hebrew poetic convention called "**chiasm**." However, it appears that Paul was conducting a "legal" discussion in which poetic technique would be about the last thing on his mind. His legal discussion is to explain how the Propitiation of Christ ended a legal contract between Israel and God, terminated when one of the two key signers of the contact died. The Sabbath was a sign that Israel and God belonged to each other in a special way much like a wedding band is the symbol of the marriage contract that binds a man and a woman to each other and to God in a special way.

A chiasm means saying the same thing in two different ways. Thaler proposes that there are two DIFFERENT types of annual Sabbaths. Therefore, a chiasm does not exist in Colossians 2:14-17. And, for the record, a chiasm does not mean saying two different things in two ways.

=====

IN ADDITION, PAUL QUALIFIES WHICH SABBATHS HE IS REFERRING TO. HE'S REFERRING TO THE SHADOWY SABBATHS THAT POINTED TO CHRIST. NOT THE CREATION WEEKLY SABBATH THAT IS A MEMORIAL OF CREATION. THESE WERE ANNUAL SABBATHS.

PAUL IS NOT REFERRING TO THE WEEKLY SABBATH THAT CONTAINS DISTINCT LINGUISTIC MARKERS WHICH ARE COMPLETELY DIFFERENT IN THE GREEK CONCERNING THE WEEKLY SABBATH AS OPPOSED TO THE ANNUAL SABBATHS OF THE JEWS. IN FACT, THE VERY REASON PAUL HAD TO SAY "SABBATON" IN COLOSSIANS 2:16, WAS BECAUSE THE TRUMPETS AND DAY OF ATONEMENT WERE NOT CALLED "FEASTS" OR "FESTIVALS" AS OFFICIAL NAMES.

WYNNE - You cannot use circular reasoning in scholarly research. Thaler incorrectly assumes that the sabbath type in the third position cannot possibly be the weekly Sabbath because it couldn't be the weekly Sabbath. Thaler assumes that the weekly Sabbath began at Creation and has permanent jurisdiction over every human being. The claim that the Sabbath ordinance started at Creation mocks the very essence of Judaism's separateness from the world of the Gentiles with a barrier separating it from the Heathen by Israel's special dietary laws and the protection of its worship of the True God enforced by the barrier of circumcision to Sabbath-keeping provided by the Law of Moses and Israel's oral law as recorded in the *Mishnah* part of the *Talmud*.

These barriers, erected by God Himself to put a hedge around Israel, were torn down by the death of Christ, which brought Jew and Gentile together as equals and as one church before God.

In his other portfolio of teachings, Thaler theorizes that the Christian church is now Israel. In his thinking, it does not matter whether the Sabbath started in the Garden of Eden or not. God gave the Sabbath to Israel on Mt. Sinai, and Christians are now Israelites. If you start with the assumption that a certain thing is true, there is no limit to the creative bridge-making that will transcend every impossible barrier to that cherished belief system.

=====

THALER - "HAG" (HEBREW) OR "HOERTE" (GREEK) WERE NOT USED FOR THE ANNUAL SABBATHS. TRUMPETS AND DAY OF ATONEMENT WERE NON-PILGRIMAGE HOLY DAYS.

WYNNE - Recall that earlier we provided documentation that the Greek word, "Hoerte," is a general term and that it can be used in regard to any kind of feast.

We seem to have a double contradiction here. "Heorte" is the word in the first of the three positions. Thaler has stated that the pattern in Colossians 2:14-17 is ANNUAL-MONTHLY-ANNUAL. **If chiasm explains both the first and last sabbath "slots," the exact same sabbath type in the first position would have to be used in the third position.** Therefore, if you examine Thaler's problem with logic here, he has just knocked one of the two types of annual sabbaths out of its position. Recall that in a chiasm, the SAME thing is said in two ways. **If the annual sabbaths in the first position are the kind that do not involve pilgrimages, the annual sabbaths in the third position have to be annual sabbaths that do not involve pilgrimages. The monthly sabbath slot survives untouched, but we now have a slot in the third position which, by the process of elimination, must be WEEKLY.**

=====

THALER - SOME ARGUE THAT PAUL WOULD HAVE USED THE FOLLOWING ORDER:

1) ANNUALLY, 2) MONTHLY, 3) WEEKLY.

IF THIS IS THE CASE, THEN HOSEA 2:11 VIOLATED THE RULE BY REVERTING BACK TO "ANNUALLY" BY ENDING WITH "SOLEMN FEASTS" AFTER "SABBATA" AFTER MENTIONING "FEAST DAYS" AT THE BEGINNING.

WYNNE - Bible writers show occasional variation in the order in which the three classifications are listed. The fact that they are all classifications of observational events suggests that any order of listing them is OK. The preferred order, however, is ANNUAL-MONTHLY-WEEKLY. In the first sabbath slot in Colossians 2:14-17, Paul clearly designated an annual sabbath. In the second slot, Paul clearly designates the monthly New Moon. There is one slot left, and it would make no sense to double back with a second "annual" entry. The last sabbath "slot" screams to be filled with a weekly Sabbath.

There is no rule that the three kinds of events have to be listed in a certain order. It is only a general characteristic of Bible writers to conclude the sabbath set with the weekly classification.

=====

THALER - PAUL IS NOT WORRIED ABOUT THE TIMES THE [SABBATHS CLASSIFICATIONS] ARE KEPT HERE. BUT THE KINDS OF FEASTS. HAD PAUL LEFT OUT "SABBATON" FROM COLOSSIANS 2:16 TO TRY AND BE SURE THAT NOBODY WAS LEFT WITH THE IDEA THAT HE WAS NOT IMPLICATING THE SEVENTH-DAY SABBATH,

THEN PEOPLE WOULD HAVE THOUGHT HE WAS ONLY REFERRING TO THE 3 PILGRIMAGE FEASTS AND NEW MOONS, AND THEN WOULD HAVE THOUGHT IT NECESSARY TO CONTINUE KEEPING TRUMPETS AND DAY OF ATONEMENT WHICH WERE NOT LABELED "HAG" OR "HOERTE."

WYNNE – So far Thaler has not presented convincing evidence to lead us to believe that there could possibly be two classifications of annual sabbaths out of the three categories available. Since the new moon celebrations are not sabbaths and not appointed festivals (as listed in Leviticus 23), there are only two possible categories of basic sabbath types—annual and weekly. By the process of elimination, three categories minus the new moons category equals one remaining category to be filled with a basic classification of sabbath types. The nature of the first category is not in question. It is clearly a reference to the annual classification. Therefore, the third classification must be the weekly category. There are not, as Adventists might suppose, three categories of sabbaths (annual-monthly-weekly) to shuffle around to create the kind of uncertainty that would allow for any speculation about the nature of the third position.

Here is how Thaler’s argument falls apart:

(ONE) - The first of the three “entries” has been maintained as a classification of annual Sabbaths, proved by reading Leviticus 23 and by general knowledge of Judaism as outlined by the *Wikipedia* reference cited earlier in this paper.

(TWO) - The new moon classification is not easy to challenge. I am not even sure Thaler has challenged it. So there is no question but that the second item of the three in the set is the classification of monthly New Moons.

(THREE) - We have shown from Leviticus 23 and expert opinion that the two appointed feasts that Thaler is worried about—The Feast of the Trumpets and the Feast of the Day of Atonement— are already included in the first classification (annual).

(FOUR) - Thaler’s claim that the word “hag” is only used by Old Testament writers to refer to annual sabbaths that required a pilgrimage is not valid. To achieve what he claims in this regard, two Hebrew words must occur together (hag sukkot).

THALER - THUS, BECAUSE PAUL WAS COVERING THE FULL GAMUT OF ALL THE ANNUAL SEASONS AS BEING ABOLISHED AT THE CROSS (AND NOT THE TEN COMMANDMENTS OR THE 4TH COMMANDMENT), HE HAD TO INCLUDE "SABBATON" IN COLOSSIANS 2:16--AND THESE WERE A SHADOW OF THINGS TO COME. NOT THE WEEKLY SABBATH OF CREATION INSTITUTED IN GENESIS 2:2,3 AND EXPRESSED AS BEING MADE FOR MANKIND AT THAT TIME IN MARK 2:27---WHICH PREDATES SIN OR SHADOWS.

WYNNE - Thaler is using circular reasoning here to maintain his position that the weekly Sabbath is not included in Paul’s list of things that got obsolete at the Cross. The science of logic does not provide for using the position you are trying to defend as evidence for that position.

Adventists, in seeking to separate the Ten Commandments from the Law of Moses, virtually deny the existence of Judaism and its Hebrew language. Paul was a Jewish attorney. By Jewish law, as set forth in the *Mishnah*— there is no Creation origin for the Sabbath ordinance; the Sabbath is for Israel alone, and gentiles who presumed to keep the Sabbath without becoming circumcised proselytes commit the sin of blasphemy. How is this true? The Law of Moses is clear that the Sabbath is a sign between Him and Israel that sets Israel apart from every other nation, kindred, tongue, and people. For a gentile to flaunt the revealed will of God and hijack the Sabbath for themselves is rebellion against God. Therefore, the *Mishnah* provides that Sabbath-keeping gentiles can be stoned to death.

The Ten Commandments were merely a SUBSET of the Law of Moses. Paul would never have separated them in his mind. It was either the 613 rules and regulations of the TORAH, or it was none of them. This is not to say that the Jews did not acknowledge that the Ten Commandments were a SUBSET of the Law of Moses. They regarded the Ten Commandments as the COVENANT part of the Law of Moses.

Paul, the Jewish lawyer, stated that the Law of Moses had been nailed to the Cross—all 613 rules and regulations of it—including the weekly Sabbath. In the Christian dispensation in particular, but almost certainly true from the beginning of time, laws are only needed for the wrong-doer (I Timothy 1:9). It is in this manner that we can truly say that the Christian believer is

not under the law. If you need a law to keep you from doing something bad, there is something wrong. It goes something like this. Are you not robbing banks and having an affair with your neighbor's spouse simply because there is a law against such? This view of things absolutely means that while the Christian is not under the law, he or she is not even thinking about using this freedom to go out and sin. The reason why Adventists and other Sabbatharians can't seem to grasp this fact is that if this is true—and it is true—there is no way to justify the law-keeping mind-set that salvages the bondage of Sabbath observance.

Mark 2:27 is a spectacular, definitive text for anti-Sabbatarians. The Jews believed that any gentile who kept the Sabbath should be stoned. Since the Jews thought of gentiles as less-than-human dogs, Jesus dramatically restricted the jurisdiction of the Sabbath to Israel when He said that the Sabbath was made for "Man." In fact, if Jesus had said anything— anything at all— to suggest that the Sabbath was for both "dogs" and humans, the Jews would have attempted to charge Him for blasphemy and treason against the nation. This is a well-understood FACT of Judaism, and it is so clearly spelled out in the *Mishnah* that there is no possibility for any misunderstanding the official teachings of Judaism as they relate to this question.

HOHMANN – What Thaler is asking us to do here is to conclude that Paul's use of a chiasmic phrase regarding annual Sabbaths would not be misinterpreted by both Jew and gentile as being the weekly Sabbath in the third position of observed days / events. It is a reasonable expectation that, were the weekly Sabbath required of all mankind, Paul would have avoided any statement in his writings that could even remotely be "mis"-interpreted in that light. From the perspective of Thaler then, Paul was being extremely careless.

=====

THALER - AS WE CAN SEE, [PAUL'S] TRIPARTITE PHRASE SEEMS TO SHOW EVIDENCE OF A CHARACTERISTIC OF SEMITIC COMMUNICATION -- A [SEMITIC] INVERTED PARALLELISM, IN WHICH THE WRITER MOVES FROM ANNUAL TO MONTHLY, AND THEN ON TO AUGMENTED ANNUAL SEASONS. IGNORING THE RESTRICTED MEANING OF THE TERMS, AS NOTED ABOVE, AND APPARENTLY IGNORANT OF THE TYPICAL MANNER IN WHICH BOTH OLD AND NEW TESTAMENT WRITERS COMMUNICATED IN PARALLEL THOUGHT FORMS OR CHIASMS (AS SHOWN ABOVE), A GROWING NUMBER OF WRITERS HAVE BEEN RELENTLESSLY REPEATING THE FOLLOWING SEEMINGLY "LOGICAL ARGUMENT;" THE WORD "FESTIVALS" INCLUDES ALL THE ANNUAL FESTIVALS; THEN COMES THE MONTHLY CELEBRATIONS, AND FINALLY, IT HAS TO BE THE WEEKLY SABBATHS, FOR PAUL WOULD "NOT" BE NEEDLESSLY REDUNDANT TO REFER TO THE CEREMONIAL SABBATHS, SINCE THESE ALREADY ALLEGEDLY INCLUDED THE TERM "FESTIVALS."

WYNNE - Thaler argues against an important theological concept of Judaism— with concepts from Jewish poetry. This approach seems inappropriate, since Paul is discussing a legal concept. He is a Jewish lawyer talking about how the death of one of the parties to a legal contract— the Old Covenant— terminated that contract, along with its many provisions. I don't think Paul had poetry on his mind while he was writing Colossians 2:14-17.

It would be redundant for Paul to use the ANNUAL-MONTHLY-ANNUAL configuration, but not for the reason Thaler gives. Twice now we have demonstrated that the two annual appointed festivals that have him worried— The Festival of Trumpets and the Festival of the Day of Atonement— are, indeed, annual sabbaths, and they are included in the first of the three classifications of observable events.

=====

THALER - BUT THIS TYPE OF "LOGICAL ARGUMENT" [IF THERE IS A THREE-PART REFERENCE TO APPOINTED FESTIVALS, IT MUST BE ANNUAL-MONTHLY-WEEKLY] COMPLETELY IGNORES THE COMPELLING WEIGHT OF TEXTUAL EVIDENCE.

WYNNE - Thaler's so-called "textual evidence,"— his chiasm theory and his "heorte" theory— pales when placed against a key element of the theology of Judaism. It is Thaler who is ignoring the real textual evidence.

=====

THALER - AS ALREADY NOTED, THE [GREEK] WORD "HOERTE" IS LIMITED TO THE IDENTICAL THREE ANNUAL

PILGRIM FESTIVALS AS SEEN IN THE OT AND IS NEVER USED IN THE NT TO REFER TO [THE FEAST OF] TRUMPETS,THE FEAST OF THE DAY OF ATONEMENT, OR [TO] SABBATICAL YEARS (ALL THREE OF WHICH ARE LINGUISTICALLY SOME FORM OF "SABBATH" IN BOTH HEBREW AND GREEK). THIS LINGUISTIC FACTOR ALONE PROVES THE FALSE ALLEGATION THAT PAUL WOULD BE REDUNDANT TO USE BOTH ["PILGRIM FESTIVALS" AND "CEREMONIAL SABBATHS" IN SEPARATE ANNUAL CATEGORIES.]

WYNNE- In an earlier section of this study, we demonstrated that the Hebrew word, “hag” is a generic term for “feast” or “festival.” Each of the annual appointed festivals has a second and very specific name that follows the word “hag.” Recall that the Hebrew word “sukkot” is a general term used to indicate a pilgrimage. A generic formula to indicate an annual appointed festival would be “hag sukkot.”

We have also provided a study that shows that the Greek word, “hoerte,” is also a generic term for “feast” or “festival.”

How, then, could we possibly conclude that the wording of Colossians 2:14-17 in Greek is limited to the three annual appointed festivals (sabbaths) which are associated with a pilgrimage? The answer is that it is not possible to do so. Thaler admits that the Feast of the Trumpets and the Feast of the Day of Atonement are annual sabbaths, and he is seeking to exclude them from the general list of appointed annual festivals on a principle that does not exist in Judaism.

THALER - PAUL'S AUDIENCE WOULD OBVIOUSLY UNDERSTAND WHAT HE MEANT, AS THE EXPRESSION "FEASTS, NEW MOONS, AND SABBATHS" WAS A TERM THAT COVERED THE GAMUT OF THE JEWISH MONTHLY AND ANNUAL GATHERINGS.

WYNNE - Not so. All the evidence suggests that informed Jews would instantly recognize the annual-monthly-weekly pattern in regard to the three different categories of observed times: annual-monthly-weekly.

HE COULD NOT "LEAVE OUT" THE "SABBATON", FOR HE WOULD BE EXCLUDING THE DAY OF ATONEMENT AND TRUMPETS.

WYNNE - Not so. Throughout this study we have demonstrated that Sabbaton has nothing to do with annual appointment festivals and that *Sabbaton* can only mean the 7th Day Sabbaths or refer to a seven-day week that is marked off by the weekly Sabbaths.

THALER - FURTHERMORE, IN ADDITION TO THE ABOVE, JUST FIVE VERSES LATER WE CAN OBSERVE A BRIEF BUT SIMPLE INVERTED PARALLELISM, IN THE "DO NOT TOUCH, DO NOT TASTE, DO NOT HANDLE" OF COL. 2:21:

A. "DO NOT TOUCH" (GRK: ME HAPSE)

B. "DO NOT TASTE" (GRK: MEDE GEUSE)

A. "DO NOT HANDLE" (GRK: MEDE THIGES)

AS SEEN ABOVE, "MEDE GUESE" IS GENERALLY RENDERED AS "DO NOT TASTE." THE FIRST PHRASE, "ME HAPSE, IS BEST RENDERED "DO NOT TOUCH." THE CORRESPONDING PHRASE IN THIS INVERTED PARALLELISM, MEDE THIGES ("DO NOT HANDLE") IS OFTEN DESCRIBED WITH STRONGER, INTENSIFIED TERMS SUCH AS "TO HARM," OR "TO DO VIOLENCE TO." BOTH LEXICAL TERMS "HAPTO" AND "THINGANO," DEAL WITH HANDLING THINGS, THOUGH THE FIRST TERM IS A MORE GENTLE TERM.

THUS, JUST A FEW VERSES AFTER COL. 2:16, PAUL INCLUDES A BRIEF INVERTED PARALLELISM, IN WHICH HE MOVES FROM A [GENTLE] "TOUCH," TO "TASTE," AND THEN BACK TO A [VIOLENT] "TOUCH." RATHER THAN INAPPROPRIATELY ACCUSING PAUL OF BEING "REDUNDANT," WE NEED TO RECOGNIZE AND ACKNOWLEDGE THAT THIS TYPE OF CHIASTIC STRUCTURE IS COMMON IN SCRIPTURE AS A WHOLE.

WYNNE - Touching is significantly different than handling. Thaler's example may not qualify for being labeled an "inverted" parallelism.

WYNNE - Thaler is not comparing apples to apples. This is comparing apples to oranges. Chiasm and parallelism is about poetry. The observational SET is about a theological concept.

WYNNE - Yes, there is such a thing as the use of chiasm by Hebrew writers, and even by Hebrews who are writing in the Greek language. But Thaler's attempted application of it to Colossians 2:14-17 defies his own logic. Recall that chiasm is the literary device of saying the SAME thing in two different ways. **If there is a significant difference between two things, there is no chiasm, and saying two things in two different ways certainly is as far removed from being a chiasm as the chasm that exists between the North Rim of the Grand Canyon and the South Rim of the Grand Canyon.**

THALER - IN ADDITION, NUMEROUS BIBLE TRANSLATORS AND BIBLE COMMENTATORS WHO ARE NOT SABBATH KEEPERS HAVE ADMITTED THAT THE SABBATHS OF COL. 2:16 ARE REFERRING NOT TO THE WEEKLY, BUT TO THE ANNUAL.

WYNNE - When scholarly research is being done, one must consider any possible biases his or her sources might have. What our research team has discovered is that the writers of popular Bible commentaries often do not pay much attention to the issues of the Sabbath Question because, to the vast majority of Christians, it is not an issue. Thaler needs to provide the names of some of the biblical scholars who think that all the Sabbaths of Colossians 2:14-17 are ceremonial in nature. Our research team has produced an in-depth analysis of these theories. Our study is available in the form of our book, *Doctor's Bacchiocchi, MacCarty, and du Preez Wreak Havoc with the Sabbath and Ellen G. White*. It is available at:

TRUTHORFABLES.COM.

The facts of the Greek language and Judaism appear to forbid the claim that what got nailed to the Cross was merely a list of the believer's sins, and no knowledgeable Greek scholar who is operating without a Sabbatarian bias is likely to make such a claim. The definition and usage of the Greek word, *Sabbaton*, whether singular or plural, NEVER refers to an annual or monthly Sabbath, and Judaism views the sabbath-designated appointed festivals as part of an indivisible SET, ANNUAL-MONTHLY-WEEKLY. If the Law of Moses did not get nailed to the Cross, there is no way for these Jewish ordinances to be called obsolete shadows that disappeared in the presence of the Reality of Christ.

THALER - NOW LET'S MOVE ON TO THE THEOLOGICAL RAMIFICATIONS OF COL. 2:14-17, IN PART 3, AND THIS TIME IT WILL BE PRESENTED BY MY FRIEND JASON SMITH:

MARCOS C. THALER'S COLOSSIANS 2:16-17 IN TYPE AND ANTITYPE

By Jason Smith

SMITH - LET US NOW TURN OUR ATTENTION TO COLOSSIANS 2:16, 17. WE ARE HIGHLY EMPATHETIC TO THOSE WHO THINK THAT THIS VERSE MEANS THE 4TH COMMANDMENT HAS BEEN MADE VOID. IF YOU STUDY THE WORD OF GOD SUPERFICIALLY (AS MANY DO) THAT SEEMS TO BE CORRECT. HOWEVER, A

DEEPER STUDY ON THE MATTER REVEALS THAT THERE IS NO ANTITYPICAL FULFILLMENT FOR THE WEEKLY 7TH DAY SABBATH BUT IT IS A CONTINUING MEMORIAL OF CREATION.

WYNNE - Recall that the Law of Moses includes the Ten Commandments as a sub-set and makes up what Judaism teaches is the Law of God. Judaism sometimes refers to the Law and the Prophets as the Law of God. The Law of God (The Law of Moses) required that two spotless lambs be sacrificed on the weekly Sabbath in ADDITION to the normal animal and grain offerings which were required on all the Jewish sabbath types. You will find this law of God in Numbers 28. It is just as much a law of God as the Sabbath law itself, as are all the laws that govern how the Sabbath is to be kept. That Judaism teaches that the full Law of Moses is the Law of God is a fact beyond any rational dispute.

Jesus is called the Spotless Lamb of God. The weekly Sabbath, properly understood by Israel, pointed forward to the coming Messiah Who would take the place of those spotless sacrificial lambs and provide the real propitiation for their sins. The death of the sacrificial lambs offered on the weekly Sabbath were like a promissory note that assured the sinner that their Messiah would eventually come and pay the debt of each one of them off by offering Himself as the Spotless Lamb of God.

Now that all the promissory notes that were ever written have been paid in full, the Sabbath does not even exist. It is an obsolete shadowy symbol that not relevant in any way to the Christian believer. One can cease to do any work on the 7th day of the week for cultural or personal reasons, but that cessation from labor does not represent Sabbath keeping.

Paul does not condemn those who wish to observe it. No moralistic based laws are broken by attempting to keep a day that does not exist. His command that Christians not judge each other by the observance of the Jewish dietary laws, the annual sabbaths, the monthly New Moons, or the weekly Sabbaths is reasonable and balanced. At the same time, believers act outside of the revealed will of God when they require other believers to keep it and imply that Sabbath-keeping is necessary to secure salvation.

HOHMANN – Smith veils his reasoning with an accusation regarding superficial study of Scripture. There is also the matter of the careless study and interpretation of Scripture. Is the weekly Sabbath a “continuing memorial of Creation” as he claims? Or is he being careless or even superficial? The day God rested on, claimed by Sabbatarians in general as being the Sabbath and institution of the Sabbath, has God declaring that day to be holy and sanctified. That day wherein God rested was in turn sanctified by God. It was “set apart” for all time as a memorial of Creation – that one day, unique, for all time. It is therefore careless and superficial to conclude this sanctified day in turn becomes a never ending recurrence of days. The “deeper study” here reveals this is the day designated elsewhere as “God's rest” that the Hebrews, who had the weekly Sabbath, could not enter into because of their unbelief / faithlessness as mentioned in Hebrews chapter 4 and Psalms chapter 95. Only a strong Sabbatarian bias results in a conclusion that God's rest in Genesis is the weekly Sabbath, ignoring the wording there regarding the sanctification of that day wherein God rested / ceased from that work of Creation.

SMITH - THE OTHER SABBATHS (ISRAEL'S ANNUAL SABBATHS), THE ONES THAT ARE "BESIDE THE SABBATHS OF THE LORD" (LEV 23:28) HOWEVER, DO FIND AN ANTITYPICAL FULFILLMENT AS A LOOK AT THE NEW TESTAMENT REVEALS.

"LET NO MAN THEREFORE JUDGE YOU IN MEAT, OR IN DRINK, OR IN RESPECT OF AN HOLYDAY [GR: HEORTE-LIT. FEAST], OR OF THE NEW MOON, OR OF THE SABBATH DAYS: WHICH ARE A SHADOW OF THINGS TO COME; BUT THE BODY IS OF CHRIST." (COL 2:16, 17)

HERE THE AUTHOR IS DEALING WITH THE 3 PILGRIMAGE FEASTS (UNLEAVENED BREAD, PENTECOST, AND TABERNACLES), THE NEW MOONS (12 OR 13 PER YEAR), AND THE ANNUAL SABBATHS (TRUMPETS AND DAY OF ATONEMENT - SOME PEOPLE ALSO INCLUDE THE "NO SERVILE WORK" DAYS HERE AND WHILE THIS IS POSSIBLE [MAYBE EVEN PROBABLE- SEE LEV. 23:24-25 FOR THE CONNECTION] I WOULD NOTE THAT THEY ARE NEVER EXPLICITLY CALLED SABBATHS.)

WYNNE - The Greek word, “Sabbaton,” is based on the concept of the number, seven. All seven of the annual sabbaths occurred either on a 7th day of the lunar month or lasted seven days. They were scheduled only once a year, which, by definition, is “annual.” Earlier we provided evidence that Thaler’s theory that there are two categories of annual appointed feasts, based on whether or not a pilgrimage was involved, is not valid. There is no precedent in Jewish thought for making a difference between annual sabbaths that have a pilgrimage and those who do not. ALL of the sabbaths, including the weekly Sabbath of the Decalogue, are classified by Leviticus 23 as “appointed festivals /holy convocations,” and there are seven of them.

When Bible writers reference the three-part set of Jewish holy day categories, there are only two categories of sabbaths—annual and weekly—and a third category of new moon festivals. This text does not contain four categories. In the Hebrew Interlinear Bible, the first mention of an appointed festival is simply part of an introduction that the three types of sacred day categories is about to be listed. In English it would look something like this:

Here is a list of Jewish sacred festival days: the annual feasts, the monthly new moons, and the weekly Sabbaths.

Among the listing of the appointed feasts being also holy convocations we find the WEEKLY Sabbath among them, the balance being annual in nature.

The major classifications are sorted out by only ONE factor, and that factor is how often each sabbath type repeats.

The **annual appointed festivals/sabbaths**, which are labeled “sabbaths” right in Leviticus 23, happen at different times of the year, but they only come around once a year.

The monthly observation of the New Moon only occurs once a month.

The weekly appointed festival/Sabbaths occur once a week. The original biblical sabbaths were scheduled according to the lunar calendar with the first sighting of the New Moon starting a sequence of four Sabbaths in that month. This practice was universal until about the time of the building of the second temple. For documentation of the lunar Sabbath principle, please see our chapter on the lunar Sabbath. There are four weekly Sabbaths in each lunar month according to the four phases of the moon.

Jason Smith has no biblical authority to make a difference between the annual sabbaths that required a pilgrimage to the temple in Jerusalem and those which did not. This whole concept must, therefore, be thrown out, which leaves the sabbath classification in the third position screaming out to be classified a WEEKLY one in order to complete the set.

=====

JASON SMITH - NOW HOW ARE THESE THINGS SHADOWS? THIS IS FAIRLY EASY TO SHOW IF YOU ARE ACQUAINTED WITH YOUR NEW TESTAMENT.

The 3 pilgrimage feasts actually represents entry (justification), continuation (sanctification) and conclusion (glorification) in the Christian era. All of the males of Israel were required to go to Jerusalem for these 3 (See Exodus 23:14, 17; Deut 16:16). This suggests to us that all of spiritual Israel must make a choice to participate in the antitypical fulfillment connected with Christ and the New Jerusalem.

The first pilgrimage feast of Unleavened Bread starts with Passover, followed by the 1st day of Unleavened Bread, then comes the day of Firstfruits. **This represents Christ's death, burial, and resurrection in that sequence.** This is the start of the Christian experience. If you do not come up to this feast, spiritually speaking, you are lost. It is very interesting to note that if you ate leaven during this feast you were cut off from the people. Thus participation in this feast was a type of judgment.

Verses that reveal the antitypical fulfillment: 1 Cor 5:7, 8; 1 Cor 15:20, 23

WYNNE - When Smith seeks to explain how any member of the annual sabbaths has enduring symbolism that is relevant to the Christian dispensation, he shoots himself in the foot. **If these ordinances were destined to continue into the Christian dispensation, Paul would be defending them-- not labeling them obsolete shadowy symbols that perished when the Reality of Christ appeared.**

=====

SMITH - The second pilgrimage feast is Pentecost. It represents the reception of the Holy Spirit. The outpouring of the Spirit and the 1st harvest of Christian souls happened on this day. Again, if you do not come up to this feast, spiritually speaking, you will be lost. For if any man has not the Spirit of Christ he is none of His.

Verses that reveal the antitypical fulfillment: Acts 2:1-4, 33

The third and final pilgrimage feast is Tabernacles. It represents the dwelling of God with His people and will be literally fulfilled at the 2nd coming. You can read in Revelation 7 where the great multitude tabernacles with God holding palm branches in their hand. Again, if you are absent at this feast then you are lost.

Verses that reveal the antitypical fulfillment: Revelation 7:9, 15.

WYNNE - Our argument above addresses this example as well.

=====

SMITH - THE NEW MOONS REPRESENT THE RESTORATION OF HUMANITY BACK TO THE TREE OF LIFE WHICH BEARS ITS FRUIT ON THE MONTHLY CYCLE. WE DO NOT HAVE THIS NOW BUT WE WILL HAVE IT AGAIN AS THE BIBLE PREDICTS. VERSES THAT REVEAL THE ANTITYPICAL FULFILLMENT: EZEK 47:12; REV 22:2; REV 2:7; 22:14.

WYNNE - Here we have the same problem with logic that Smith had in regard to the annual sabbaths. Paul's lists four kinds of Jewish ordinances that were obsoleted by the death of Christ. He explains that these four ordinances are obsolete, shadowy symbols of the Reality of Christ. The new moons are part of this list. Therefore, the new moon classification does not possess any significance beyond the Cross. **Paul targeted the new moons. He was not defending them.**

=====

AND FINALLY, THE ANNUAL SABBATHS, OF TRUMPETS AND THE DAY OF ATONEMENT [WHEN THE HIGH PRIEST WENT INTO THE MOST HOLY PLACE TO CLEANSE THE SANCTUARY] REPRESENT THE FINAL WARNING MESSAGE GIVEN TO THE WORLD IN CONNECTION WITH UPCOMING JUDGMENT HOUR AND THE FACT IS THAT WE ARE NOW IN THE HOUR OF GOD'S JUDGMENT (1844 ONWARD). NOW, AGAIN, IN CONNECTION WITH THE DAY OF ATONEMENT, IF ANYONE DID NOT AFFLICT (HUMBLE) HIMSELF THEN HE WAS CUT OFF FROM THE PEOPLE. SO AGAIN WE HAVE A TYPE OF JUDGMENT HERE.

VERSES THAT REVEAL THE ANTITYPICAL FULFILLMENT: REV 11:15-19; HEB 9:23.

WYNNE - We have demonstrated that all the annual appointed festivals (sabbaths) are included in the first category. We have reviewed this fact from several angles, including evidence from logic, Greek linguistics, and Hebrew linguistics. Among other things, Paul declared that all the annual sabbaths were obsoleted by the death of Christ.

Smith's appeal to the proprietary Seventh-day Adventist Doctrine of the Investigative Judgment (1844) is not a wise strategy. The SDA Church prophetess, Ellen White, is the only "authority" for this heretical doctrine, and the idea has been a thorn in the side of Adventism for a very long time. (This story is told elsewhere in *Lying for God*.)

=====

SMITH - WITHOUT VERY MUCH EFFORT WE CAN SEE THE TYPE AND ANTITYPE CONNECTED WITH THE FEASTS, NEW MOONS, AND SABBATHS. AND EACH ONE OF THESE FULFILLMENTS WAS, IS, OR WILL BE TRIGGERED BY CHRIST (THE ONLY REMAINING ONES TO BE MET ARE THE NEW MOON AND FEAST OF TABERNACLES).

WYNNE AND KLAYMAN - Meeting Smith on his own ground, Thaler and Smith both appear to acknowledge that all the annual sabbaths are targets of Paul's teaching, although they imagine that it takes two categories to "cover" them all. They seem not to dispute that the monthly sabbaths fall into this list of targeted Jewish ordinances. It should be clear to Smith, then, that all of the annual and monthly sabbaths are obsolete shadows that became obsolete when the Reality of Jesus appeared to replace them.

Let's look at this from the perspective of logic. By either his standard or ours, the new moon festivals and the Feast of the Tabernacles are already obsolete for Christians. You can't divide the annual festivals into two separate categories, one of which that includes pilgrimages and one that does not, and place them in a list of things that are obsolete, and then try to claim that some of them are left over as unfulfilled in the Age of the Church.

Beyond this, we have demonstrated that the third category in this passage cannot refer to anything else but the weekly category. The Greek word, *Sabbaton*, whether singular or plural (plural in this case) signifies the number seven– the weekly Sabbath of a seven day week. Therefore, all of these observed times– annual, monthly, and weekly– are declared by Paul to be obsolete. None of them continue their relevance any further than the Cross.

=====

ON THE OTHER HAND, WHEN WE LOOK AT THE WEEKLY 7TH DAY SABBATH THERE IS NO CHANGE BROUGHT ABOUT BY CHRIST. FROM THE VERY START IT WAS THE SIGN OF GOD AS SANCTIFIER.

MARTIN KLAYMAN - When God asked the Israelites to remember the Sabbath, he was asking them to recall an obedience test that had been given to them only a few weeks earlier. It is unreasonable to think that God would have asked them to remember something that supposedly took place at Creation, which would have been more than a thousand years before their 400-year Egyptian captivity. Saying that God was the sanctifier of one single day in the history of Planet Earth does not make God the sanctifier of a Sabbath ordinance that began in the Garden of Eden. The Sabbath ordinance did not make its first appearance until the time of the Exodus. A careful study of the Exodus journey proves beyond any reasonable doubt that the Hebrews did not keep the Sabbath until after they had marched across the wilderness for several weeks. It is unthinkable to think that God was not powerful enough to work things out so that the Hebrews could keep the Sabbath along the way– if there had been such a thing as a Sabbath to keep.

When you have had a doctor's appointment scheduled for months in advance, the doctor's office calls or sends a reminder card only a few days prior. It is the same principle here. God would not remind them about something that took place such a long time ago.

WYNNE - Since the Law of Moses required the sacrificing of two spotless lambs in addition to the regular sacrifices that were to be offered on the other sabbaths, and since Christ was the Spotless Lamb of God, it is not possible that the Sabbath would continue as a REQUIRED ordinance for Christians. Jesus, the Spotless Lamb of God, has already sacrificed Himself. One can cease to work on what used to be the Sabbath, but it cannot actually represent "keeping" the Sabbath because there is no Sabbath left to keep.

HOHMANN – Smith pulls the same theological sleight-of-hand Worldwide did, which organization attempted to keep the annual Sabbaths. He ties events to those annual Sabbaths, which events either occurred or are destined to occur. The common denominator of the annual Sabbaths however is not the events, per se, but about who it is that brings about the events; Christ. These annual holy days / Sabbaths point to Christ and what He does; what He alone accomplishes. They point to Him. The focus is Christ, and not the events themselves to the exclusion of Christ, or where Christ is ancillary to the events. By taking the focus off of Christ regarding what the annual Sabbaths portend, what then happens to the weekly Sabbath? The case is made, covertly, that Christ points us to the Sabbath instead of the Sabbath pointing us to Christ.

=====

SMITH - THE REST OF FAITH WHICH THE 7TH DAY SABBATH SYMBOLIZES WAS AVAILABLE FROM THE FOUNDATION OF THE WORLD, IT WAS AGAIN OFFERED IN DAVID'S TIME, AND IT IS STILL WITH US TODAY.

THERE WAS NO REPLACEMENT OF THE SABBATH WHEN THE "TODAY" OFFER CAME THROUGH DAVID. THERE

IS NO REPLACEMENT OF IT TODAY. IT IS STILL THE SYMBOL OF ENTERING INTO GOD'S REST. THIS IS WHAT HEBREWS 4 SHOWS (A PASSAGE THAT IS GROSSLY ABUSED BY MANY WHO TRY TO NEGATE THE 7TH DAY SABBATH).

WYNNE - Unfortunately there is no evidence in Hebrews 4 that this passage of Scripture validates the observance of the Sabbath ordinance by Christians. In fact the *Seventh-day Adventist Bible Commentary* on Colossians 2:14-17 is balanced enough to explain why Hebrew 4 cannot be used to prove its Sabbath-keeping doctrine. Beyond this, the *Commentary* cites a statement from Ellen G. White that this passage compares the physical Sabbath rest to the spiritual rest afforded the Christian by the Gospel.

Any writers who are sophisticated enough to attempt to use a Hebrew literary device as an argument should be able to grasp the concept of COMPARISON. There is growing evidence that the Apostle Paul wrote the *Book of Hebrews*. This subject is covered in our book, *Lying for God*, from the 10th Edition and up. The author of this chapter merely compares the rest that the saved Christian experiences to Israel's Sabbath rest. The author points out that it is the death of Christ for the sinner that makes this rest possible. The only way to get Hebrews 4 to teach Sabbath-keeping for Christians is to add assumptions and words to it that aren't there.

=====

SMITH - THOSE WHO PURPOSEFULLY TRAMPLE THIS DAY ARE THOSE WHO PRACTICE LAWLESSNESS AND APART FROM REPENTANCE THEY WILL NOT ENTER THE CITY OF GOD.

KLAYMAN, WYNNE, AND DEAN - Smith takes this stand in utter defiance of the clearly revealed will of God in regard to Sabbath-keeping. In passage after passage of Scripture God makes it clear that the Sabbath commandment was for Israel and Israel alone. It is nearly comical that someone could pretend to be so zealous for the Law of God while ignoring what God's law says about the purpose and use of the Sabbath. The Sabbath was designed to be a sign between God and Israel to differentiate Israel from every other nation, kindred, tongue, and people. Only gentiles who chose to become circumcised proselytes were permitted join Israel in keeping the Sabbath. This principle is so clearly defined in Scripture that God Himself had to explain a common sense exception. In Isaiah 56 He tells Israel that Heathen eunuchs who wish to become proselytes and keep the Sabbath could do so by what we might think of today as "by profession of faith." The reason is clear, of course. Eunuchs have already been circumcised to the point of over-kill.

Most of the texts that teach that the Sabbath is a distinguishing sign for Israel are found within the Law of Moses itself. However, one of the most remarkable statements of this principle is found in Psalm 147. The Psalmist says that Israel has special laws that God has no intention of sharing with any other nation. No one but Israel has these laws. Applying some logic to this fact, we can reason that all the nations of the world are held to the principles of natural moralistic law as delineated in the Seven Laws of Noah. What is left then? The Sabbath and sacrificial laws that were proprietary to the Jewish worship system!

Smith, unfortunately, simply tightens the Veil of Moses over his eyes when he runs across teachings of Scripture that appear to extend the definition of the Law of God further than the Ten Commandments. The Church has the moralistic principles found in the Law of Moses, the Prophets, the sayings and teachings of Jesus, and about 1,050 guidelines for Christian behavior that are found in the New Testament. Out of all these 1,050 guidelines, there is not one single mention of Sabbath-keeping.

In the Christian dispensation, no day is sacred in and of itself. The Sabbath no longer exists to "keep" in the Jewish sense of the word. But believers who insist on forcing other Christians to keep the Sabbath as a requirement for salvation are trampling on the plainly expressed will of God. The Sabbath is for Israel only. The Church is not Israel. CF. Romans 11. Paul warned in Colossians 2:14-17 not to judge other Christians by whether they keep the Sabbath, or not. It was at best a mere "shadow" of the real thing. God is pleased to be worshipped on any day of the week. For Sabbatarians, the problem is not the act of ceasing labor and worshipping God on the 7th day of the week. It is the elevating and idolizing of a DAY that symbolized the death of Christ rather than focusing the believer's attention on the Reality of the REAL Spotless Lamb of God.

The theological error of Sabbatarianism is simple. The Law of Moses set the weekly Sabbath aside to represent the coming propitiation of the REAL Spotless Lamb of God by requiring that two spotless lambs be offered upon it. Since Christ - the REAL Spotless Lamb of God - has already been sacrificed, analytically this situation would suggest blasphemous implications for Sabbath-keeping after the death of Christ. Ideally, then, it seems that it would be best for believers to avoid this theological conflict.

On the other hand, Paul refrained from condemning believers who retained Sabbath-keeping. He left this choice up to each believer and congregation. Therefore, we do not have any authority to condemn those who might, for various reasons, feel it a need to do so. For example, there are various congregations of Messianic Jews who retain Sabbath observance for cultural and missionary considerations. In order to reach other Jews for Christ, who keep the Sabbath, the Messianic Jews need to be able to meet these prospective believers in Christ in their own cultural setting. When Paul was in Jerusalem He seems to have kept the Sabbath and the Law of Moses. He wanted to be all things to all men so that he might save some of them. In the same manner, we note that Sabbath-keeping Messianic congregations generally do not keep the Sabbath as a matter of salvation. Rather, it is part of their Jewish culture, and Sabbath observance maintains an important bridge for them to reach non-believing Jews for Christ.

HOHMANN – Fear mongering aside, what we witness here is a construct of two types of annual feasts and/or the use of a chiasmic literary device so as to proffer the “annual sabbaths – “New Moon” – “other annual sabbaths” idea. Do we have any evidence from history where the Jews made a distinction between annual sabbaths that required attendance by the males and those annual sabbaths that did not? Do we see any evidence of Paul being aware of, and thus reflecting this concept in his writings?

Thayler and Smith may well claim that the rendering of Colossians 2:16-17 if taken at face value is to take a “simplistic and superficial” view of the passage. If however a passage of Scripture conflicts with your belief that is the core basis of your belief system, naturally you are going to look “more deeply” into it in an attempt to get it to say what you already believe to be true. God, it would seem, is hiding things from us, disguising them in obscure language and concepts within the Scriptures, so that only through a convoluted process of study can we discover what it really says, seeing as eternity hangs in the balance. No, the simple and plain renderings of some passages of Scripture simply will not do. And yet, where there truly is a problem with a particular translation that can easily be demonstrated from the Greek and the overall context of Scripture, these same scholars will dig in their heels and cry foul.

CHAPTER SEVENTEEN
LOGIC, COMMON SENSE, THE LAW, AND THE
COVENANTS

By William H. Hohmann

LOGIC, COMMON SENSE, THE LAW, AND THE COVENANTS

By William H. Hohmann

Sanctify them through thy truth: thy word is truth. —John 17:17

DISCERNING TRUTHS AND DECEPTIONS

When I was being recruited into a Sabbatarian “church” (I use the word loosely) I had no real understanding of how to discern between truth and deceptions. I concluded that if something was to be found in Scripture, and it was a command from God, then that was that. It was a simplistic view of Scripture, shared by many. I also was under the impression that I was way too smart to be suckered into a false belief system, having scored 174 on a standard I.Q. Test administered in High School, on a day I had a fever. Only much later did I come to see that this mindset would trip me up. If you believe you are too smart to be fooled, you set yourself up to be fooled. This is pride, and pride comes before a fall. It is foolish to think you are above being deceived. Satan deceived a third of the angels who knew God. Satan has been around long enough to know how to deceive anyone.

This group I was recruited into went the extra step to insure the chances of me ever abandoning them and the “truths” they revealed to me would be slim. All sorts of dire warnings were attached to these beliefs. The devil would do everything he could to deter me from the “truth”. It was God who really revealed these truths to me, and I must guard them with my life, seeing as it was my life that was indeed at stake.

I was warned that even some members from within the group may well succumb to the wiles of the devil, and that they in turn would try to sway me from “God’s truths.” Those who would leave “the Church” were deceived and disgruntled ex-members with an axe to grind, and hatred now in their hearts for God and His ways. That anyone might have left due to legitimate doctrinal issues and study was viewed as an impossibility. My position now, however, is that if the “truth” is really a false belief, a person has a moral obligation to abandon that belief and the organization that promotes it. People, such as myself, who are indoctrinated in the belief that they will be eternally lost if they leave a religious system or group have little chance of ever learning the truths of Scripture from any person or any outside source of influence. It was by using the proper tools for Bible study that made it possible for me, along with the acquisition of how deceptive reasoning works.

I ask my readers to consider this important question and answer it in their own minds. If the devil, that deceiver, was behind your beliefs, would he not do everything possible to prevent you from examining any and all other sources of information? I know... you “proved” everything a long time ago, and you see no need to go over it all again. Scripture calls that behavior having ears dull of hearing, and eyes dull of seeing. You are merely complying with the conditioning you underwent to prevent you from ever truly examining your beliefs in the light of Scripture as Scripture was intended to be used.

You may well be saying to yourself how you have been studying Scripture for years, even decades, yet if you are not working from the proper perspective, your beliefs may end up being nothing more than a house of cards.

Ever learning, and never able to come to the knowledge of the truth. —2 Timothy 3:7

It is so much easier to remain smug in one's beliefs and to dismiss others and their witness that things are not as they seem to be. It is easier to dismiss the witness of those who left your fellowship with epithets of their character. It is easier to claim loyalty to the organization you believe provided you with truth than to admit you might be in error and disloyal to the Word of God.

There are rules that a person must use in order to discern truth from error. The first and greatest rule is so simple that it is easily overlooked, and so easily dismissed. Scripture is the “God-breathed and Inspired” Word of God. As such, no person or church has the right to alter Scripture or its application through addition or deletion. God Inspired that statement on more than one occasion regarding adding to or taking away from the words of Scripture.

Sounds simple. Sounds easy. But once you truly begin to evaluate your beliefs in this light, you just might be surprised, and dismayed. How important then is it to never alter Scripture? There are Scriptural examples regarding how seriously God takes what He says. Saul, the king of Israel, was rejected by God for interpreting for himself how to comply with what God had commanded him. Saul's rationalization for his disobedience was unacceptable. Why then would we believe God to be any less resolute regarding the rest of His Inspired Word?

“And Samuel said, When thou wast little in thine own sight, wast thou not made the head of the tribes of Israel, and the LORD anointed thee king over Israel? And the LORD sent thee on a journey, and said, Go and utterly destroy the sinners the Amalekites, and fight against them until they be consumed. Wherefore then didst thou not obey the voice of the LORD, but didst fly upon the spoil, and didst evil in the sight of the LORD? And Saul said unto Samuel, Yea, I have obeyed the voice of the LORD, and have gone the way which the LORD sent me, and have brought Agag the king of Amalek, and have utterly destroyed the Amalekites. But the people took of the spoil, sheep and oxen, the chief of the things which should have been utterly destroyed, to sacrifice unto the LORD thy God in Gilgal. And Samuel said, Hath the LORD as great delight in burnt offerings and sacrifices, as in obeying the voice of the LORD? Behold, to obey is better than sacrifice, and to hearken than the fat of rams. For rebellion is as the sin of witchcraft, and stubbornness is as iniquity and idolatry. Because thou hast rejected the word of the LORD, he hath also rejected thee from being king. And Saul said unto Samuel, I have sinned: for I have transgressed the commandment of the LORD, and thy words: because I feared the people, and obeyed their voice. Now therefore, I pray thee, pardon my sin, and turn again with me, that I may worship the LORD. And Samuel said unto Saul, I will not return with thee: for thou hast rejected the word of the LORD, and the LORD hath rejected thee from being king over Israel.” – 1 Samuel 15:17-26 KJV

If we do not abide by the written Word of God, are we not rejecting the Word of God? Are we not being stubborn by not believing what God has inspired to be written? Are we not being rebellious?

Jesus berated the religious leaders of His time who altered Scripture and its application, by showing they had no right to keep the commandments of God according to their traditions. Yes, God is serious about His Word. We have no right to edit it.

“Why do thy disciples transgress the tradition of the elders? for they wash not their hands when they eat bread. But he answered and said unto them, Why do ye also transgress the commandment of God by your tradition? For God commanded, saying, Honour thy father and mother: and, He that curseth father or mother, let him die the death. But ye say, Whosoever shall say to his father or his mother, It is a gift, by whatsoever thou mightest be profited by me; And honour not his father or his mother, he shall be free. Thus have ye made the commandment of God of none effect by your tradition. Ye hypocrites, well did Esaias prophesy of you, saying, This people draweth nigh unto me with their mouth, and honoureth me with their lips; but their heart is far from me. But in vain they do worship me, teaching for doctrines the commandments of men.” – Matthew 15:2-9 KJV

Sabbatarians are taught (indoctrinated) that they are keeping the commandments of God in accordance with Scripture, as contrasted to mainstream Christianity who they believe do not keep God's commandments at all. The fact of the matter is that Sabbatarians attempt to keep commandments of God that God did not command or require of them, and that these commandments they do attempt to keep, they keep in accordance with the dictates of men, and not God.

At the very end of the book of Revelation, God gives a warning to those who would think to add to the words of that book or take away from those words. Yes, God is very serious about His written Word.

“For I testify unto every man that heareth the words of the prophecy of this book, If any man shall add unto these things, God shall add unto him the plagues that are written in this book: And if any man shall take away from the words of the book of this prophecy, God shall take away his part out of the book of life, and out of the holy city, and from the things which are written in this book.” – Revelation 22:18-19

Some Sabbatarians claim the mark of the beast, discussed in the book of Revelation, is related to worship on Sundays; that those who worship on Sundays receive the mark of the beast. Is this an example of adding to the book of Revelation? Does the reader find anything in Revelation equating the mark of the beast with Sunday worship? It isn't there, yet a number of Sabbatarian churches teach this. They claim it is inferred. Yet inference is a method commonly employed in deceptions.

We are without excuse should we find ourselves altering Scripture. Why then do people resort to altering Scripture? There are a number of reasons.

1. People don't believe what God says. It becomes an example of faithlessness.
2. The person who is altering Scripture and its application is a wolf who seeks power and control over others in order to "feed his own belly" at the expense of others.
3. People buy into the alterations of Scripture as taught to them by others who in turn are deceived also.

The process often works this way:

A person is confronted by a passage of Scripture that conflicts with what they believe as stated. They conclude that the error lies with Scripture; that the passage is perhaps a bad translation. This could be true, and through the proper rules of translation and hermeneutics a proper determination can be determined. Often though, the proper methods of evaluating Scripture are ignored in favor of methods that tend to result in errors and falsehoods.

Other conclusions regarding a questionable passage is to conclude it is somehow obscured in semantics, or the passage does not impart all the information relevant to the issue, and they see the need to "fill in the blanks" by comparing it with other Scriptures so as to make it appear to comply with what a person does believe.

At this juncture, a person, in order to reconcile the conflict, resorts to the methods of "interpretation" that lead to deceptions and falsehoods. I call these the methods of deception, and they are many.

These include, but are not limited to the following:

Rationalizations, repetition (of a false claim), inferences, assumptions, faulty drawn conclusions, eisegesis (proof texting; taking Scripture out of context), redefining words and terms, and the use of logical fallacies.

The tools or methods of proper understanding and scholarship include the following:

Proper use of logic, proper use of one's critical thinking skills, proper hermeneutics, including proper exegesis (understanding a passage of Scripture in context), the proper definition of words and terms, and reconciliation of all Scripture related to a particular topic. In other words, one does not use two Scriptures to over-rule one Scripture. What is the purpose or function of a Scriptural topic?

When it comes to the Sabbath, as an example, what is/was the purpose and function of the Sabbath? What evidence exists to support what one believes regarding its function and purpose? Sabbatarians claim the Sabbath serves the purpose of being the sign of a Christian. What evidence is there that supports this claim? Does the claim meet the qualifications stated next?

There are a number of useful rules one uses when it comes to critical thinking.

Beliefs can be stated as claims, to which we examine the Scriptural evidence that supports or refutes the claim.

Is the claim of such a nature that it defies the ability to refute the claim?

Is there comprehensive evidence in Scripture to support the claim?

Is there any evidence that is contrary to the claim?

Is the evidence contrary to the claim addressed by the claimant so as to demonstrate how the apparent evidence to the contrary does not actually contradict the claim?

Does the claim make sense? Is it logical?

Is the claim of such a nature that it defies the ability to refute the claim?

This is a variation on what is commonly known as the falsifiability test. The claim cannot be worded in such a way that we cannot verify the claim, and where there is no way to disprove the claim. A common example is a person who claims to have personal revelations from God. A deceiver would be unable to produce evidence to truly support his claim of divine inspiration, and we would be unable to provide evidence to disprove his claim. Such a claim is useless when it comes to determining truths from lies, and as such, is better left rejected. We must ask ourselves if God would endorse this sort of

thing, where we have no way to verify one's claim to divine guidance. God's Written Word admonishes us to prove all things. We cannot prove whether a person has direct revelations from God or not. We can be reasonably certain that a false prophet would make such a claim, and that a false prophet would eventually make false predictions or claims that could be proven false.

Another example is the common claim that if one tithes, they will be blessed. The opposite gets cited often also; if you do not tithe, you will be cursed. Can the minister or church prove their claim? Try asking them to guarantee the claim! You will see soon enough that they personally have no such faith that you will actually be so blessed.

Sometimes the claims can be innocently stated so that we unconsciously accept them without evidence. Some of the more common claims made by Sabbatarians is that the Ten Commandments are "eternal", and "engraven in stone to signify their permanence." No evidence is forthcoming. They are given the status of being "self-evident" and as such above reproach or question. If you wanted people to believe a lie, this would be the ideal way to proffer the belief, making it immune to evidence.

Is there comprehensive evidence in Scripture to support the claim?

Of times, those who are trying to support an erroneous belief will resort to flooding the issue with proof texts, assumptions and rationalizations, as well as other claims in an attempt to shore up a belief that otherwise would succumb to the proper methods of examination and evidence. In other words, they attempt to make a flood of assumptions look like comprehensive Scriptural support. Regarding one of the above claims about the Ten Commandments being eternal, their "evidence" is often the claim that God is eternal, and so is His Law. It is a rationalization, devoid of real evidence. What we should demand of the claimant is a Scriptural reference that states the "Law" is eternal; and that identifies this "Law" also as the Ten Commandments. Every claim needs to require evidence, and if the claim is in relation to a major doctrine, there should be ample evidence in support of it.

Does the claim hold true for all circumstances affected by it?

An example would be the claim that being under the Law (redefined to mean just the Ten Commandments) does not mean one is free to break the Law, rather it means not being under the penalty of the Law; that penalty being a death sentence. This belief attempts to claim people are still obligated to keep the Law though no longer under the condemnation of the Law. The Law becomes toothless as a result. What is interesting about this claim is that it also conflicts with other beliefs held by those who make this claim. Simply ask them what happens to their salvation should they quit keeping the Sabbath, for example. Is their salvation put at risk? If yes (and sometimes it can be difficult to get them to admit it, although their own teachings support this conclusion) then the Law is not so toothless after all.

Also, the claim does not hold true for all circumstances affected by it. If being "under" the law means one is under the *condemnation* of the law (an example of redefinition), then what of Jesus who was born under the Law? Was He therefore under the condemnation of the Law? Some have actually argued He was! Yet such was not the case.

But when the fullness of the time was come, God sent forth his Son, made of a woman, made under the law, To redeem them that were under the law, that we might receive the adoption of sons. — Galatians 4:4-5

Christ came to "redeem those that "were" (past tense) under the Law. How do we define "redeem"? Given the context, one is removed from the law in order to be restored to a former condition, and now perceived as a son. Can we safely conclude that those under the law are not sons? There is Scriptural support for this view, but I don't want to digress at this time.

What was the former condition? Is the situation one of being in a condition no longer condemned by God, reconciled to God and in a sinless state in His eyes?

What then do people resort to when confronted with a Scripture that contradicts their core beliefs? Often, they resort to proof texts so as to justify the rejection of a text that appears to be contrary to those core beliefs:

“We establish the law” – Rom 3:31

“The law is holy, just, and good” – Rom 7:12

“Sin is the transgression of the law” – 1 John 3:4

“Think not that I am come to destroy the law or the prophets...” Mt 5:17

All this and more in order to overcome the most basic rule of understanding Scripture: that we have no right to alter Scripture and its application through addition or deletion, seeing as it IS the Word of God.

If Christ came, not to destroy the Law, but rather to establish it; (which it already was) and not alter it even down to jots and tittles, then logically, how can you remove the penalty or condemnation the Law prescribes for breaking it? What happened to those jots and tittles? Proof texting becomes an exercise in self-deception, without subjecting the texts to any critical examination.

What could help in this regard is to use an example from another group's beliefs where you with your own belief system is not associated except in the methodology.

Some groups hold to the belief that blood transfusions are a sin and violate Scripture. As evidence to support this belief, the following Scriptures are cited:

It shall be a perpetual statute for your generations throughout all your dwellings, that ye eat neither fat nor blood. —Leviticus 3:17

Moreover ye shall eat no manner of blood, whether it be of fowl or of beast, in any of your dwellings. Whatsoever soul it be that eateth any manner of blood, even that soul shall be cut off from his people. —Leviticus 7:26-27

And whatsoever man there be of the house of Israel, or of the strangers that sojourn among you, that eateth any manner of blood; I will even set my face against that soul that eateth blood, and will cut him off from among his people. —Leviticus 17:10

A blood transfusion is seen as "consuming" blood (redefinition). They see no difference between taking blood in through the mouth or through an I.V. They argue you wouldn't take milk or water in through an I.V., a facetious argument. Yet even though it is a facetious argument, easily seen as such by those who do not buy into that particular belief, just try to convince someone who holds to this belief they are wrong, and that their argument "doesn't hold water."

What are the consequences of this belief that goes beyond the scope of Scripture? People who otherwise may well have had life-saving medical treatment end up dead instead. God, it would seem, prefers human sacrifices.

God and the Israelites were the parties to the old covenant Law. Regardless of how you "chop up" the old covenant Law (redefining words and concepts), even claiming the Ten Commandments to be a separate covenant Law, it can still be demonstrated the parties to that covenant Law were God and the Israelites and no others. There was a provision in the old covenant for those *not* born of Israel to enter into that covenant relationship with God through circumcision. Were Gentile Christians required to undergo circumcision? No. Were they required to keep the Law? Not according to Acts 15, but this again is circumvented through the claim, without evidence, that the Ten Commandments are binding on all mankind. The very Law people claim Christians should keep excludes Christians if they refuse circumcision.

I could easily go through all the proof texts employed by Sabbatarians, and show the flaws, but it isn't necessary. This has been done in other articles available at www.truthorfables.com. Regardless, it becomes an exercise in futility, for no matter how well you expose the proof texts for what they are, and that they do not actually support the erroneous belief, they will produce yet another and another proof text or rationale to support their flawed beliefs. They seek only to validate their beliefs, even at the expense of Scripture; God's Word. If you hop on that merry-go-round with them, you will eventually find yourself back where you started with the same proof texts being cited again, like some religious mantra.

Either you believe what God has inspired to be written as written, or you do not. If you do not, then you demonstrate your faithlessness. You demonstrate your rebellion. All the proof texts in the world cannot save you.

Did God command non-Israelites to keep the Ten Commandments? No.

“Yea, but...”

Did God command non-Israelites to keep the Sabbath? No.

“Yea, but...”

When it came to the Sabbath and the Israelites, God was specific and detailed in His instructions regarding the Israelites keeping the Sabbath.

When the New Covenant was being instituted, not a peep came from Christ regarding Gentile (non-Israelite) Christians keeping the Sabbath. What do Sabbatarians think then? Was it just an oversight on His part? The rationalizations fly in flocks.

God is not going to violate His covenants, and we need to understand the nature of His covenants.

What was the nature of the old covenant? How do we define it and what purpose or function did it serve?

It was a legal contract between God and the Israelites.

It was also seen as a marriage contract between God and the Israelites.

Surely as a wife treacherously departeth from her husband, so have ye dealt treacherously with me, O house of Israel, saith the LORD. A voice was heard upon the high places, weeping and supplications of the children of Israel: for they have perverted their way, and they have forgotten the LORD their God. —Jeremiah 3:20-21

It was also treated as a testament, put in force through the shed blood of substitute animals.

For when Moses had spoken every precept to all the people according to the law, he took the blood of calves and of goats, with water, and scarlet wool, and hyssop, and sprinkled both the book, and all the people, Saying, This is the blood of the testament which God hath enjoined unto you. —Hebrews 9:19-20

Can someone, not a party to a covenant, be held to the conditions of said covenant? No. Yet Sabbatarians insist on enjoining some of the conditions of the old covenant Law on Christians.

Would God deal with us illegally, holding us to the conditions of a covenant we are not a party to? No. Yet this is exactly what Sabbatarians attempt to do with the Ten Commandments.

If God wanted Christians to keep the Sabbath, He would have made such a command in the New Covenant. God would not have left this matter up to us to discern through assumptions and rationalizations.

What function(s) did the Old Covenant Law serve?

Wherefore then serveth the law? It was added because of transgressions, till the seed should come to whom the promise was made; and it was ordained by angels in the hand of a mediator. —Galatians 3:19

But before faith came, we were kept under the law, shut up unto the faith which should afterwards be revealed. —Galatians 3:23

The law was extant because faith was not. Now this faith has been revealed. The Law has been replaced by this faith. The faithless cannot accept this, so to them, the Law remains, defined sometimes as toothless, and sometimes as having teeth, depending on the need at the moment, all the while the adherent to the "Law" remains blind to the cognitive dissonance associated with this belief.

But if ye be led of the Spirit, ye are not under the law. —Galatians 5:18

Who is led by the Spirit? Those of faith; the just / righteous walk in faith down a path of faith. (Romans 1:17; Galatians 3:11; Hebrews 10:38)

The Sabbatarian, undeterred, merely redefines faith and the Law so that keeping the Law is to walk in faith, ignoring all the evidence to the contrary. Is there evidence in Scripture that declares that to walk in faith is to keep the Law? No.

What is the nature of the New Covenant?

It is a covenant between God and Christ, and those God has given His Spirit to, as foretold in Scripture. Like the old covenant, it was to be a covenant between God and Israel also, but as the old covenant had a provision that allowed those not of Israel to enter into that covenant through circumcision, Gentiles were “granted repentance unto life” by being given God's Holy Spirit also, as a result of their belief in the gospel. Their “circumcision” was performed by God, and it was a spiritual circumcision of the heart.

For he is not a Jew, which is one outwardly; neither is that circumcision, which is outward in the flesh: But he is a Jew, which is one inwardly; and circumcision is that of the heart, in the spirit, and not in the letter; whose praise is not of men, but of God. —Romans 2:28-29

The law of the New Covenant; the conditions, revolve around faith and love. It is about being led by the Holy Spirit, and not a written code of law. (Rom 3:27; II Cor. 3; Rom 7:6)

The New Covenant was prophesied to **not** be like the old covenant.

Behold, the days come, saith the LORD, that I will make a new covenant with the house of Israel, and with the house of Judah: **Not according to the covenant that I made with their fathers in the day that I took them by the hand to bring them out of the land of Egypt;** which my covenant they brake, although I was an husband unto them, saith the LORD: —Jeremiah 31:31-32

Whereas the Old Covenant was essentially a contractual agreement, where God made promises physical in nature that would be fulfilled based on the performance/compliance of the Israelites, and punishments should they fail to fulfill the conditions of that covenant, the New Covenant is treated more in keeping with a marriage covenant, and has superior promises that are spiritual in nature. This, by the way, is the theme of the book of Hebrews; the superiority of the New Covenant over the old.

God (Christ) trusts and loves this wife. The wife trusts and loves the husband. Christ did not need to put “pre-nups” (Law) in this marriage agreement for the purpose of exposing the evil deeds of the treacherous, cheating, wife that was represented by the woman who symbolized the Old Covenant in this passage.

The church is the bride of Christ. Those under the Old Covenant were faithless and seen by God as being a treacherous wife, whom God divorced.

And I saw, when for all the causes whereby backsliding Israel committed adultery I had put her away, and given her a bill of divorce; yet her treacherous sister Judah feared not, but went and played the harlot also. —Jeremiah 3:8

Those were the people of the old covenant, letter of the Law. Jesus' death on the cross finalized the break with Israel and the old covenant. Paul explains this in Romans 7. Christ was now freed from the old covenant with the old treacherous wife and free to marry the new bride; the church; a faithful wife.

The Gospel Relationship

The gospel is a message of salvation through faith in Christ.

Those who do not believe the Gospel as stated, resort to the aforementioned processes of deceptions in order to make the Gospel acceptable to them. They apply the same methodology to the gospel as they do anything else in Scripture they do not believe as stated. Sabbatarian legalists add the Law and Sabbath keeping to the gospel.

They deny this, of course, because they do not believe they are really altering the gospel. They claim they believe in salvation through faith in Christ. One need only ask them what happens to their salvation should they quit keeping the Sabbath. Rather than outright admit this, they again resort to the methods of deception in order to obfuscate the obvious. Rationalizations regarding sin are cited, using proof texts such as I John 3:4 to claims (accusations) of being hateful towards God and “His Law.”

They “tweak” the gospel in order to make it acceptable to themselves. Again, the gospel as stated, to them, is seen as having left out some details that are found elsewhere in Scripture. If “sin is the transgression of the law,” and no sinner will

attain to salvation, then it is a simple matter to conclude one cannot be sinning by breaking the old covenant law in order to be saved.

This conclusion, innocent as it may appear, falsifies the gospel, and succeeds in bringing Christians back under the Old Covenant Law, and everything that goes with it, including being once again under sin and condemnation. Paul warns Christians against this in places like Galatians 5:1.

Plain and simple declarations made under the inspiration of the Holy Spirit are cast aside:

“For sin shall not have dominion over you: for ye are not under the law, but under grace.” – Romans 6:14

But if you *are* under the Law, sin has dominion. Ever listen carefully to the argument that you are not *under* the Law, yet still obligated to keep it, and that, should you transgress it, you come back under the Law, and you sin and could lose your salvation? Talk about redefining words and terms! Talk about cognitive dissonance!

“But if ye be led of the Spirit, ye are not under the law.” – Galatians 5:18

“But before faith came, we were kept under the law, shut up unto the faith which should afterwards be revealed. Wherefore the law was our schoolmaster to bring us unto Christ, that we might be justified by faith. But after that faith is come, we are no longer under a schoolmaster.” – Galatians 3:23-25

The Faith has been revealed. The Law is history. The Christian in possession of the Holy Spirit is complete in Christ, and there is no need to be under the Law or keep that Law that was designed for the faithless and spiritually immature; for it is the immature, the children, who need a schoolmaster. God's Holy Spirit is sufficient.

What then of all the proof texts and rationalizations that have been used to try and prove Christians must keep the Law and Sabbath?

They can all be explained. They have all been explained. But, explaining them to someone who believes they must keep the Law and Sabbath is a waste of one's time, for they are, as stated before, the anchor Scriptures the unwary and deceived rely on so heavily who reject the proper methods and rules of evidence, having never been taught them or exposed to them.

It is those who are beginning to see the truth of the gospel, and the lies of legalism and Sabbatarianism that benefit from the explanations that show the fallacies of the proof texts used to support legalism and Sabbatarianism.

To those of the legalistic and Sabbatarian persuasion who may have read this far, who rely so heavily on their “proofs” of Scripture that you believe back your beliefs, I once again point out that there is no Scripture where God/Christ commands Christians to keep the Law and the Sabbath. No one has the right to alter Scripture or its application through addition or deletion, or outright substitution. But that's what you must do in order to believe as you do.

Salvation is for the faithful; those who believe the gospel as stated in God's Word. Salvation is for those who believe God for what God has said, and not what people think God meant. Salvation is for the humble who would not dare alter Scripture.

Salvation is not for those who feel free to rationalize around Scripture, making Scripture over to their preconceived beliefs, making God over into their own image; an act of rebellion and faithlessness.

To those who believe they must keep the Law, how is that working out for you? Do you keep the Law perfectly, as required? Those who are proponents of the Law commonly make another claim; that the Holy Spirit enables a person to keep the Law. So again, how's that working out for you? Now that you have the Holy Spirit, you keep the law perfectly, as required, right? You are now without sin, right? If it were the function of the Holy Spirit to enable you to keep the Law, you would be keeping the Law, and as a result, not sinning. But again, there's that cognitive dissonance thing. You don't keep the Law, and when you fail, you make excuses for yourself.

Has it never occurred to you that your focus in relation to others who do not believe as you do is one of trying to convince them to keep the Sabbath and Law, instead of a focus on preaching the gospel? Sabbatarians are constantly trying to preaching the “truth” about the *Sabbath*, and rarely, if ever, any *truth* of the gospel.

Have you not noticed that when confronted by people who do not believe as you do, your response is to attack those who oppose your view, accusing them of hating God and "His Law" all the while perceiving their opposition to your beliefs as being a case of them persecuting you, you who do not keep that Law either? Oh, you say you are trying to keep that Law, whereas those "false" Christians are not even trying. But you just redefined the issue once again. It is not those who "try" who are justified, but those who "do", and even the apostle Paul states this, which again you ignore because it does not fit into your theology, even though you cite what he wrote as one of your proof texts from your arsenal of proof texts. The context however has Paul showing that no one is in fact a "doer" of the Law. Therefore, no one will be so justified. NO ONE.

The apostle Paul declares in II Corinthians chapter 3 that those who remain in the teachings and writings of Moses have a veil before their eyes. What did Moses teach and write? The Law! Who then has a veil before their eyes? Those who hold to the Law! Through the use of the methods of deception, a whole new "reality" is created by the Sabbatarian legalist. It is a fantasy world, built upon rationalizations, proof texts, and denial regarding the facts of Scripture where the deceptive tactics are given greater weight than the plain and simple declarations found in the Word of God. God's Word is spun away, circumvented through alterations of Scripture and its application.

Covenants have been covered. Christians are not a party to the old covenant Law that ended.

The gospel has been covered; salvation through faith only, without the "benefit" of the Law.

CHAPTER EIGHTEEN
SABBATH NOT A LAW FOR CHRISTIANS

Robert K. Sanders

SABBATH NOT A LAW FOR CHRISTIANS

Researched And Written By Robert K. Sanders

THE COVENANTS

Seventh-day Adventists arbitrarily divide the old covenant into two divisions, moral and ceremonial. They claim that the Ten Commandments are moral and the rest of the law/covenant is ceremonial. They have offered no biblical evidence to support a two-part division of the old covenant. There are moralistic and ceremonial commands in the whole law as well as a ceremonial command in the Ten Commandments.

1. The Bible writers never declared the old covenant was a two-part covenant. The Jews understand that there is but one law/covenant and it is all equally holy and binding. When Israel vowed to keep the covenant, it was one covenant not a two-division covenant.

Ex. 24:3 (NIV) - When Moses went and told the people all the LORD'S words and laws, they responded with one voice, "Everything the LORD has said we will do."

A. There are 613 commands in the old covenant that Israelites were required to keep perfectly.

B. The Ten has one ceremonial command, the Sabbath, which is not a moralistic command.

Sabbath keeping was given to Israel as a weekly ritual "to rest" from labor. It was never commanded as a communal day of worship. Israel was commanded to remember their deliverance from Egypt and that God created the world. The Sabbath is not a moralistic command as no person has ever been charged with sin for breaking the Sabbath except Israel of the Old Covenant.

2. The Old Covenant is a binding agreement God made with Israel at Sinai.

(NIV) Moses then took the blood, sprinkled it on the people and said, "This is the blood of the covenant that the LORD has made with you in accordance with all these words."

SDA's teach that the Sabbath is binding on all nations and all people for all time when in fact it was given only to one nation Israel. Circumcision was the entry sign into the covenant. Gentiles could only legally keep the Sabbath and be accepted by God, if they joined the Israelite community through circumcision and kept all the requirements of the Covenant.

3. The sign of the Old Covenant between God and Israel was the Sabbath. God never made the Sabbath a sign for Christians in the New Testament. Do you find Christians mentioned in the text? Can you legally enjoin on Christians that which God has not enjoined on them?

Ex. 31:16 - 17 (NRSV) - Therefore the Israelites shall keep the Sabbath, observing the Sabbath throughout their generations, as a perpetual covenant. ¹⁷ It is a sign forever between me and the people of Israel that in six days the LORD made heaven and earth, and on the seventh day he rested, and was refreshed."

4. Circumcision is just as much a perpetual covenant for Israel as the Sabbath. Circumcision was first made with Abraham as an "everlasting covenant."

Gen. 17:9-10, 13-14 (NIV) - Then God said to Abraham, "As for you, you must keep my covenant, you and your descendants after you for the generations to come. ¹⁰This is my covenant with you and your descendants after you, the covenant you are to keep: Every male among you shall be circumcised.

¹³Whether born in your household or bought with your money, they must be circumcised. My covenant in your flesh is to be an everlasting covenant. ¹⁴Any uncircumcised male, who has not been circumcised in the flesh, will be cut off from his people; he has broken my covenant."

5. God then gave circumcision to Israel along with the Sabbath in the Law of Moses.

John 7:21 - 24 (NIV) - Jesus said to them, "I did one miracle, and you are all astonished.²² Yet, because Moses gave you circumcision (though actually it did not come from Moses, but from the patriarchs), you circumcise a child on the Sabbath.²³ Now if a child can be circumcised on the Sabbath so that the Law of Moses may not be broken, why are you angry with me for healing the whole man on the Sabbath?²⁴ Stop judging by mere appearances, and make a right judgment."

6. The Old Covenant ended at Calvary with the death of Jesus.

When a party to a covenant dies, said covenant ends. In this case it was Jesus who died, and He made that covenant with Israel, seeing as He was God incarnate. Thus the old covenant ended, even as a marriage covenant ends upon the death of either party. The surviving person is free to marry again, even as Jesus now takes the church as His new bride. If a mate dies, the surviving person is no longer married to a corpse. Rom. 7 shows this comparison of marriage and dying to the law through Christ. SDA's are married to the old covenant corpse. They read Sabbath-keeping in the Old Covenant (contract) God made with Israel and apply it to themselves. They do not accept the fact that they were never a party to that covenant. The only way for them to legally keep the Sabbath is through circumcision and they are then obligated to keep ALL the requirements of Old Covenant with its 613 commands, which they do not do. They refuse to kill Sabbath breakers and stay at home on Sabbaths as the law requires. Thus they are lawbreakers, and subject to the condemnation of that law.

WHAT ENDED AT THE CROSS?

Jesus Abolished Israel's law with Ten Commandments and regulations.

Eph. 2:15 (NIV) - by abolishing in his flesh the **law** with its **commandments** and regulations.

Notice, "the law" is singular that was abolished, not laws. There was just "one law" the Mosaic Law with many commands and regulations, and it was abolished by Jesus.

God canceled the written code and regulations nailing it to the cross. SDA's claim that the "written code" was not the Ten, but the law that Moses wrote.

Both God and Moses wrote the Ten Commandments. The Ten Commandments written on stone tablets by the finger of God were placed inside the Ark of the Covenant, and they were also written by Moses on parchment and placed outside the Ark in the Book of the Covenant. Otherwise you would not be reading it in your Bible. Col. 2 and Ex. 24 explain this.

Col. 2:13-14 (NIV) When you were dead in your sins and in the uncircumcision of your sinful nature, God made you alive with Christ. He forgave us all our sins, ¹⁴ having canceled the written code, with its regulations, that was against us and that stood opposed to us; he took it away, nailing it to the cross.

Ex. 24:3-4 (NIV) When Moses went and told the people all the LORD'S words and laws, they responded with one voice, "Everything the LORD has said we will do." ⁴ Moses then wrote down everything the LORD had said. He got up early the next morning and built an altar at the foot of the mountain and set up twelve stone pillars representing the twelve tribes of Israel.

vs. 7-then he took the Book of the Covenant and read it to the people. They responded, "We will do everything the LORD has said; we will obey."

Jesus was taken down from the cross, but the law with the Sabbath remains nailed to the cross for eternity. SDA's try their best to pry the nails from the cross to make the Sabbath binding on Christians.

"The first Covenant" had "stone tablets of the covenant."

There is no way to avoid the fact the Old Covenant included the Ten Commandments.

Heb. 9:1 – Heb. 9:4 (NIV) - Now the first covenant had regulations for worship and also an earthly sanctuary. ²A tabernacle was set up. In its first room were the lampstand, the table and the consecrated bread; this was called the Holy Place. ³Behind the second curtain was a room called the Most Holy Place, ⁴which had the golden altar of incense and the gold-covered Ark of the Covenant. This ark contained the gold jar of manna, Aaron's staff that had budded, and the stone tablets of the covenant.

The Old Covenant with the Ten Commandments is obsolete.

Heb. 8:7 – Heb. 8:13 (NIV) - For if there had been nothing wrong with that first covenant, no place would have been sought for another. ⁸But God found fault with the people and said, “The time is coming, declares the Lord, when I will make a new covenant with the house of Israel and with the house of Judah. ⁹It will not be like the covenant I made with their forefathers when I took them by the hand to lead them out of Egypt, because they did not remain faithful to my covenant, and I turned away from them, declares the Lord. ¹⁰This is the covenant I will make with the house of Israel after that time, declares the Lord. I will put my laws in their minds and write them on their hearts. I will be their God and they will be my people. ¹¹No longer will a man teach his neighbor, or a man his brother, saying, ‘Know the Lord,’ because they will all know me, from the least of them to the greatest. ¹²For I will forgive their wickedness and will remember their sins no more.” ¹³By calling this covenant “new,” he has made the first one obsolete; and what is obsolete and aging will soon disappear.

The Ten Commandments were a ministration of death and condemnation.

2 Cor. 3:6 - 9 (NIV) - He has made us competent as ministers of a new covenant—not of the letter but of the Spirit; for the letter kills, but the Spirit gives life. ⁷Now if the ministry that brought death, which was engraved in letters on stone, came with glory, so that the Israelites could not look steadily at the face of Moses because of its glory, fading though it was, ⁸will not the ministry of the Spirit be even more glorious? ⁹If the ministry that condemns men is glorious, how much more glorious is the ministry that brings righteousness!

Only one who was a party to that law/Sabbath could die to that law/Sabbath. No one alive today was a party to the old covenant. For someone to insist on keeping the Sabbath and other old covenant points of law is to insist on being bound to a dead mate.

Christian Jews are “released from the Law” and now serve the Spirit and not in the way of “the written code”.

If you have not died to the law/Sabbath you are holding onto a corpse.

Rom. 7:4-6 (NIV) - So, my brothers, you also died to the law through the body of Christ, that you might belong to another, to him who was raised from the dead, in order that we might bear fruit to God. ⁵For when we were controlled by the sinful nature, the sinful passions aroused by the law were at work in our bodies, so that we bore fruit for death. ⁶But now, by dying to what once bound us; we have been released from the law so that we serve in the new way of the Spirit, and not in the old way of the written code.

The law was a witness against Israel not Christians.

God gave the law to Israel to show them their sins and the law was a witness to it. They were a stiff-necked, rebellious, idolatrous, faithless nation.

Deut. 31:26 - 27 (NIV) - “Take this Book of the Law and place it beside the ark of the covenant of the LORD your God. There it will remain as a witness against you. For I know how rebellious and stiff-necked you are. If you have been rebellious against the LORD while I am still alive and with you, how much more will you rebel after I die!

The law was a school master (*paidagogos*) to bring Israel to Christ, not Christians who were never under that law. How can SDA's who claim to be justified by faith, want to be under Israel's schoolmaster (law)?

Gal. 3:23 - 25 (KJV) - But before faith came; we were kept under the law, shut up unto the faith which should afterwards be revealed. ²⁴Wherefore the law was our schoolmaster [*paidagogos*] to bring us unto Christ, that we might be justified by faith. ²⁵But after that faith is come, we are no longer under a schoolmaster.

A *paidagogos* was one who accompanied a child, who was usually a slave of the parents of the child, and even administered punishment as required. Once the child came of age and was mature, the *paidagogos* was dismissed from

this oversight of the child. Those who insist on living by that law demonstrate their immaturity; still needing a law to tell them everything they are to do or not do.

Christ is the end of the Law for Israel.

The law made no one righteous and no one could keep it perfectly.

Rom. 10:4 (NIV) - Christ is the end of the law so that there may be righteousness for everyone who believes.

Rom. 3:20 (NIV) - Therefore no one will be declared righteous in his sight by observing the law; rather, through the law we become conscious of sin.

The Law of Sin and Death is the Ten Commandments.

2 Cor. 3:6 - 7 (NIV) - He has made us competent as ministers of a new covenant—not of the letter but of the Spirit; for the letter kills, but the Spirit gives life. ⁷Now if the ministry that brought death, which was engraved in letters on stone, came with glory, so that the Israelites could not look steadily at the face of Moses because of its glory, fading though it was.

The law was made for rebellious Israel, and not Christians with the spirit of God.

Do Christians need a law to tell them not to worship idols, not to murder and steal?

1 Tim. 1:9 - (NIV) We also know that law is made not for the righteous but for lawbreakers and rebels, the ungodly and sinful, the unholy and irreligious; for those who kill their fathers or mothers, for murderers, ¹⁰for adulterers and perverts, for slave traders and liars and perjurers—and for whatever else is contrary to the sound doctrine ¹¹ that conforms to the glorious gospel of the blessed God, which he entrusted to me.

How can Christians be righteous before God without the law?

Christians will receive their righteousness from the gospel and will live by faith.

Rom. 1:17 (NIV) - For in the gospel a righteousness from God is revealed, a righteousness that is by faith from first to last, just as it is written: “The righteous will live by faith.”

Rom. 3:21-23 (KJV) - But now the righteousness of God without the law is manifested, being witnessed by the law and the prophets; ²²Even the righteousness of God which is by faith of Jesus Christ unto all and upon all them that believe: for there is no difference: ²³For all have sinned, and come short of the glory of God;

Paul was not under the Law.

We should be like Paul and work to rescue Seventh-day Adventists and Sabbatarians who put themselves under the law.

Cor. 9:20 (NIV) - To the Jews I became like a Jew, to win the Jews. To those under the law I became like one under the law (though I myself am not under the law), so as to win those under the law.

Rom 6:14 (NIV) - For sin shall not be your master, because you are not under law, but under grace.

Gal 5:14 (NIV) - The entire law is summed up in a single command: “Love your neighbor as yourself.”

Gal 5:18 (NIV) - But if you are led by the Spirit, you are not under law.

The Apostles opposed the Judaizers that were trying to impose the law on Gentiles.

The issue was keeping the Law of Moses. Notice that the Sabbath was not included in the discussion. In the Jewish mind a gentile must first be circumcised before he could keep the Sabbath. This would have been an excellent time to tell the gentiles to keep the Ten as do SDA's.

Acts 15:5 (NIV) - Then some of the believers who belonged to the party of the Pharisees stood up and

said, "The Gentiles must be circumcised and required to obey the law of Moses."

Acts 15:10 - 11 (NIV) - Now then, why do you try to test God by putting on the necks of the disciples a yoke that neither we nor our fathers have been able to bear? ¹¹ No! We believe it is through the grace of our Lord Jesus that we are saved, just as they are.

Acts 15:19 - 21 (NIV) - "It is my judgment, therefore, that we should not make it difficult for the Gentiles who are turning to God. ²⁰ Instead we should write to them, telling them to abstain from food polluted by idols, from sexual immorality, from the meat of strangled animals and from blood. ²¹ For Moses has been preached in every city from the earliest times and is read in the synagogues on every Sabbath."

The Sinai Covenant is Slavery represented by earthly Jerusalem. Jewish and Gentile Christians are free in the New Jerusalem in heaven which is of faith.

What was given on Mt. Sinai? The 10 Commandments and the Sabbath.

Gal 4:21 - Gal 4:31 (NIV) - Tell me, you who want to be under the law, are you not aware of what the law says? ²² For it is written that Abraham had two sons, one by the slave woman and the other by the free woman. ²³ His son by the slave woman was born in the ordinary way; but his son by the free woman was born as the result of a promise. ²⁴ These things may be taken figuratively, for the women represent two covenants. One covenant is from Mount Sinai and bears children who are to be slaves: This is Hagar. ²⁵ Now Hagar stands for Mount Sinai in Arabia and corresponds to the present city of Jerusalem, because she is in slavery with her children. ²⁶ But the Jerusalem that is above is free, and she is our mother. ²⁷ For it is written: "Be glad, O barren woman, who bears no children; break forth and cry aloud, you who have no labor pains; because more are the children of the desolate woman than of her who has a husband." ²⁸ Now you, brothers, like Isaac, are children of promise. ²⁹ At that time the son born in the ordinary way persecuted the son born by the power of the Spirit. It is the same now. ³⁰ But what does the Scripture say? "Get rid of the slave woman and her son, for the slave woman's son will never share in the inheritance with the free woman's son." ³¹ Therefore, brothers, we are not children of the slave woman, but of the free woman.

The New Covenant is God writing his laws on the Christian's heart.

Hebrews 8:10 (NIV) - This is the covenant I will make with the house of Israel after that time, declares the Lord. I will put my laws in their minds and write them on their hearts. I will be their God and they will be my people.

What are the laws that God has written on our hearts?

Seventh-Day Adventists would have you believe that God is writing the same old covenant law of sin and death on our hearts. The Apostles tell us what they are.

Law of Faith. To know we are justified before God without keeping the Old Covenant.

Rom. 3:27-28 (NRSV) - Then what becomes of boasting? It is excluded. By what law? By that of works? No, but by the law of faith. ²⁸ For we hold that a person is justified by faith apart from works prescribed by the law.

The Law of the Spirit has set us free from the law of sin and death.

Rom. 8:1 - 4 (NIV) - Therefore, there is now no condemnation for those who are in Christ Jesus, ² because through Christ Jesus the law of the Spirit of life set me free from the law of sin and death. ³ For what the law was powerless to do in that it was weakened by the sinful nature, God did by sending his own Son in the likeness of sinful man to be a sin offering. And so he condemned sin in sinful man, ⁴ in order that the righteous requirements of the law might be fully met in us, who do not live according to the sinful nature but according to the Spirit.

Live by the Spirit. If you are led by the Spirit, you are not under the law.

Gal. 5:16 - Gal. 5:21 (NIV) - So I say, live by the Spirit, and you will not gratify the desires of the

sinful nature. ¹⁷For the sinful nature desires what is contrary to the Spirit, and the Spirit what is contrary to the sinful nature. They are in conflict with each other, so that you do not do what you want. ¹⁸But if you are led by the Spirit, you are not under law. ¹⁹The acts of the sinful nature are obvious: sexual immorality, impurity and debauchery, ²⁰idolatry and witchcraft; hatred, discord, jealousy, fits of rage, selfish ambition, dissensions, factions ²¹and envy; drunkenness, orgies, and the like. I warn you, as I did before, that those who live like this will not inherit the kingdom of God.

Law of Christ.

Gal. 6:2 (NIV) - Carry each other's burdens, and in this way you will fulfill the law of Christ.

Law of liberty.

James 2:8 -9 (NIV) - If you really keep the royal law found in Scripture, "Love your neighbor as yourself," you are doing right. ⁹But if you show favoritism, you sin and are convicted by the law as lawbreakers. ¹⁰ For whoever keeps the whole law and yet stumbles at just one point is guilty of breaking all of it. ¹¹ For he who said, "Do not commit adultery," also said, "Do not murder." If you do not commit adultery but do commit murder, you have become a lawbreaker.

James mentions two distinct laws – that is, (1) the royal law and the law of liberty (which are identical) and (2) "the whole law" (which includes the entire Torah, all the Laws of Moses). James tells us that the royal law is "Love your neighbor as yourself." This law, found in Leviticus 19:18, is one of many laws that the Lord gave to Moses to instruct Israel regarding how to live moral lives and develop good interpersonal relationships with others. James also states that, as in the old covenant law, if you broke even one point of the whole law, you were guilty of the entirety of the old covenant. Likewise, if you fail to show proper love for even one person by showing partiality, you are guilty of breaking the law of Liberty. Therefore to break one point in the Ten or in the "whole law" consisting of 613 commands, YOU are a lawbreaker.

Jesus gave a new commandment to love one another.

Will a Christian that loves one another, murder, steal, commit adultery, and worship idols? There is no need for that obsolete law or the Ten Commandments. Love does no harm to one's neighbor therefore love fulfills the law. Keeping the law does not fulfill it. Another way to look at this is that, if a Christian has love for even his enemies, he would not commit these acts, seeing as these things are a result of an unconverted heart, not motivated by love. Do you trust the Holy Spirit to guide you? If not, you are just like Israel in that you have no faith.

John 13:34 - John 13:35 (NIV) - "A new command I give you: Love one another. As I have loved you, so you must love one another. ³⁵By this all men will know that you are my disciples, if you love one another."

The world will know you are Jesus' disciples if you love one another.

Paul tells Titus what to teach. Notice that nothing is said about keeping the Sabbath.

Titus 2:11 - Titus 2:15 (NIV) - For the grace of God that brings salvation has appeared to all men. ¹²It teaches us to say "No" to ungodliness and worldly passions, and to live self-controlled, upright and godly lives in this present age, ¹³while we wait for the blessed hope—the glorious appearing of our great God and Savior, Jesus Christ, ¹⁴who gave himself for us to redeem us from all wickedness and to purify for himself a people that are his very own, eager to do what is good. ¹⁵These, then, are the things you should teach. Encourage and rebuke with all authority. Do not let anyone despise you.

DO SABBATARIANS FOLLOW JESUS' EXAMPLE?

Sabbatarians enjoy pointing to Jesus as our example to keep the Sabbath. Is this a valid argument? If we are to follow Jesus' examples of how he lived under the old covenant, we should consider this:

Do Sabbatarians Follow Jesus' Example? No!

Jesus wore tassels on a robe with a blue cord. Jesus paid tax to the temple and supported temple worship

Jesus went to a Jewish synagogue on Sabbath and read from the Torah in Hebrew.

Jesus spoke out against the Jewish Leaders.

Jesus limited his study only to the Torah.

Jesus kept all 12 Sabbaths including eating the Passover lamb.

Jesus did not baptize anyone.

Jesus did not own a home, did not marry, was not employed, had no income, stayed in other people's homes, and rode a donkey.

Paul Used the Sabbath For Evangelism

Whenever the Apostles are mentioned in connection with the Sabbath, it was for evangelism and not Sabbath keeping. Paul often went to the Temple and synagogues to preach Christ to both Jews and Gentiles. It is never recorded that Paul or the Apostles preached Sabbath keeping to Jews or Gentiles. Notice Acts 17:2. Paul did not go to the synagogue to keep the Sabbath or to worship. Worship was done at the Temple, not the synagogues. The synagogues were used to teach the Torah. Paul taught from the Torah how Christ fulfilled the prophecies found in the Torah. Not once in the book of Acts is the Sabbath a point of discussion. Gentiles were coming into the church by the thousands and were not taught to keep the Sabbath Command or the penalties for breaking the Sabbath.

Acts 17:2 - Acts 17:4 (NIV) - As his custom was, Paul went into the synagogue, and on three Sabbath days he reasoned with them from the Scriptures, ³explaining and proving that the Christ had to suffer and rise from the dead. "This Jesus I am proclaiming to you is the Christ, he said. ⁴Some of the Jews were persuaded and joined Paul and Silas, as did a large number of God-fearing Greeks and not a few prominent women.

Does Paul, quoting the Ten Commandments, prove that the Sabbath is binding on Christians?

Paul was always silent when it came to Sabbath keeping. He does quote the Ten Commandments, but not as a duty for the church. Paul is saying the duty for Christians is to love your neighbor as yourself and it is this that fulfills the requirements of the Torah/Law. The Jewish audience that Paul was addressing believed that if they kept the Ten Commandments they were fulfilling all the Torah/Law but they were not, if they did not love their neighbor.

Rom. 13:8 – Rom. 13:10 (NIV) - Let no debt remain outstanding, except the continuing debt to love one another, for he who loves his fellowman has fulfilled the law. ⁹The commandments, "Do not commit adultery," "Do not murder," "Do not steal," "Do not covet," and whatever other commandment there may be, are summed up in this one rule: "Love your neighbor as yourself." ¹⁰Love does no harm to its neighbor. Therefore love is the fulfillment of the law.

Argument: Jesus did not abolish the Ten Commandment law; therefore the Sabbath is binding.

(This argument used by Robert Sanders with the permission of William H. Hohmann.)

Matt. 5:17 – Matt. 5:19 (NIV) - "Do not think that I have come to abolish the Law or the Prophets; I have not come to abolish them but to fulfill them. I tell you the truth, until heaven and earth disappear, not the smallest letter, not the least stroke of a pen, will by any means disappear from the Law until everything is accomplished. Anyone who breaks one of the least of these commandments and teaches others to do the same will be called least in the kingdom of heaven, but whoever practices and teaches these commands will be called great in the kingdom of heaven.

The above declaration by Jesus Christ is interpreted by those who hold to Sabbath keeping as proof that the Ten Commandments, including the Sabbath command, are binding on Christians. At first glance, this appears to be true, until one subjects the above to proper Biblical scholarship and critical analysis.

If it were a matter of being points of law, then the phrase "law or the Prophets" would not make sense, seeing as there are no laws codified in the Prophets to "fulfill". It is erroneously concluded that it is the law that is "fulfilled" and not the

prophecies located in the law and prophets.

The first problem that arises is over the interpretation of “fulfill” in verse 17. The Sabbatarian argument is that this “fulfill” is to be understood as “filling to the full” or “filling up” the law. Jesus came to bring it up to full strength, as it were. This view forces a conclusion that Sabbatharians overlook in this interpretation. **The law was deficient or incomplete; the same law they claim to be “God’s law” and a perfect, eternal law.**

And if it is being “magnified” in this regard, how can this be accomplished without altering it way beyond jots and tittles? What of those portions of “God’s law” that are sacrificial and ceremonial in nature that the Sabbatarian insists are not binding on Christians? What happened to their “jots and tittles”?

And finally, how can you fill up or fulfill the law in that portion of Scripture referred to as “The Prophets” where there is no codification of law? The opening declaration again states: Think not that I am come to destroy the law, or the prophets: I am not come to destroy, but to fulfill. How can one “destroy” the prophets, and how can one “fulfill” the prophets?

So here we have a situation where one cannot fulfill that section of the Bible called the Prophets regarding law, seeing there is no law codified in the Prophets that has the potential to be fulfilled or destroyed. But this potential exists in the law and the prophets in regards to prophecies, as there are prophecies in the law and the prophets.

The next question to be asked is, Did Jesus come to fulfill the prophecies found in the law and the prophets? Yes he did. At this point, we need to address the context of verse 18:

Till heaven and earth pass, one jot or one tittle shall in no wise pass from the law, till all be fulfilled.

Seeing as the law and prophets are addressed in the preceding verse, we cannot quickly assume that now just the law, or the first 5 books (the Pentateuch) are being solely addressed, for quite often the term “the law” is used to indicate the entire old testament.

Those who hold to the “fill the law to the full” view are quick to point out that not all things were fulfilled prophetically by Jesus; the heavens and earth are still here, ergo the context is about filling up the law. If not A, then B is the logic, without examining any other possibilities. This is commonly called “black and white thinking” and is poor Biblical scholarship. We have already seen how this does not hold up in regards to verse 17, and when we try to apply this understanding to verse 18, even greater problems arise.

If this is about filling up the law, then we have a condition here that once the law is filled up, completed, or brought up to full strength, then it passes away with the passing of heaven and earth. Does it make sense to build up the law for the purpose of doing away with it, especially in light of a belief that insists this law is eternal?

Do we run into such illogical errors when we conclude it is a matter of things prophesied to occur culminating in a new heaven and earth? Not at all. When all things foretold in the law have come to realization, then all things have been done and there is an end to those things followed by the new heavens and earth.

What then of the apparent conflict where it is claimed Jesus did not “fulfill” all prophecies that culminate with the passing of heaven and earth? It is a result of trying to connect two things that are actually separate in the context of the two verses.

Verse 17: Think not that I am come to destroy the law, or the prophets: I am not come to destroy, but to fulfill.

This needs to be taken in the context of that moment. Did Jesus come at that time; at that moment to fulfill all things as related to in verse 18, or did he come at that time to fulfill what was prophesied concerning his coming then and there?

And he said unto them, These are the words which I spake unto you, while I was yet with you, that all things must be fulfilled, which were written in the law of Moses, and in the prophets, and in the psalms, concerning me. — Luke 24:44

Then he took unto him the twelve, and said unto them, Behold, we go up to Jerusalem, and all things that are written by the prophets concerning the Son of man shall be accomplished. — Luke 18:31

Is Jesus here referring back to when he spoke the words here in Matthew 5:17? It sure looks that way.

What is so conveniently overlooked by Sabbatarians is that verse 18 compliments verse 17 from this time perspective. First, Jesus came to fulfill those things written of him in the law, prophets, and psalms. Verse 18 begins a new thought that follows this same line of reasoning concerning fulfillment of scripture. For verily I say unto you, Till heaven and earth pass, one jot or one tittle shall in no wise pass from the law, till all be fulfilled.

Likewise, absolutely everything written in the law culminating in the passing of this heaven and earth will also be fulfilled. Nothing will be left undone. No prophecy will go unfulfilled. Everything will be done “by the book.”

Jesus came at that time to fulfill “all things” concerning him for that time and place. Likewise, all things prophesied to occur in this age will also come to pass. After all these things have been accomplished, this heaven and earth pass away and the new age begins, starting with the new heavens and the new earth, as also prophesied. Jesus speaks from the perspective of then and there to the perspective of the future *from* then and there.

If we were to enter that time and listen to what was being said then, and take into account what the people were thinking then about Jesus and the confusion surrounding Him and what he taught, we might have concluded He had come to do something contrary to the prophesies in scripture, seeing as he was not doing those things they thought and believed the coming Messiah would do regarding Israel and the kingdom restored to her. It would be like Jesus saying to us:

Don't think I am going to act contrary to what was written and prophesied concerning me and my appearing; I am going to do exactly what was written of me. Likewise, all things will be done written in the law foretold to the end of the age and time. He then continues his dissertation to the people concerning the kingdom of God (heaven) and talks about those who will be great and those who will be least, depending on how well they heed his words and commandments that followed.

This Sermon on the Mount was not about law as the prophets spoke. It is about Jesus the Messiah preaching the gospel and his coming kingdom, often couched in parables as a veil to their understanding. He also shows how the law holds to a standard that no man can achieve or comply with. He subtly provides an alternative to that law. Those who attempt to read into the narrative their pet beliefs will surely not understand the gospel being preached even now; salvation through His grace, given to those who place their trust, faith and assurance in Him. Or would you rather pluck out your eyes in a vain attempt to keep the law?

Now we come to verse 19:

Whosoever therefore shall break one of these least commandments, and shall teach men so, he shall be called the least in the kingdom of heaven: but whosoever shall do and teach them, the same shall be called great in the kingdom of heaven.

Notice the context says “these” commandments and not “the” commandments. “These” contextually demands cited commandments. Does the context leading up to verse 19 indicate that Jesus was talking about commandments? No. Does Jesus begin referencing commandments following this verse? Yes, unless one wishes to redefine what a commandment is, as though Jesus did not proceed to give commands to those followers of His that he was addressing.

The Sabbatarian likes to conclude that Jesus was talking about Old Covenant commandments by force-fitting them into the preceding verses, and ignores that Jesus proceeds to give commandments to his followers in the context of that statement in what follows. Jesus then goes about, quoting from the law commandments in the law, and proceeds to alter points of law way beyond jots and tittles! How is this possible if he was claiming just moments before that none of the law was to be altered even down to the strokes of the letters of the law until heaven and earth had passed? But this sort of cognitive dissonance is common when holding to misinterpretations and misrepresentations of scripture.

The pattern now is one of “the law says this, but I say unto you something else” where in some cases the law is totally nullified in the process. For example, performing one's oaths. But Jesus commands that his followers swear not at all; to not make an oath to begin with. It is also stated in the law that one was to hate their enemy and love their neighbor. Jesus declares we are to love even our enemies.

The most telling of all is Jesus' teaching on divorce. The law (this same law called “eternal” and “perfect” and not to be

altered even down to the strokes of a letter) allowed a man to divorce his wife for just about any reason. What was Jesus' take on divorce as found in the law?

The Pharisees also came unto him, tempting him, and saying unto him, Is it lawful for a man to put away his wife for every cause? And he answered and said unto them, Have ye not read, that he which made them at the beginning made them male and female, And said, For this cause shall a man leave father and mother, and shall cleave to his wife: and they twain shall be one flesh? Wherefore they are no more twain, but one flesh. What therefore God hath joined together, let not man put asunder. They say unto him, Why did Moses then command to give a writing of divorcement, and to put her away? He saith unto them, Moses because of the hardness of your hearts suffered you to put away your wives: but from the beginning it was not so. And I say unto you, Whosoever shall put away his wife, except it be for fornication, and shall marry another, committeth adultery: and whoso marrieth her which is put away doth commit adultery. — Matthew 19:3-9

The law allowed for an easy divorce. It was a concession in the law because the people were carnal, hard hearted and devoid of God's Spirit. So the law allowed for something that was wrong from the beginning. So much for the claim that the law existed from creation and was kept by the Patriarchs of old!

(End of the dissertation by William H. Hohmann cited by Sanders.)

Has Jesus altered the law beyond jots and tittles? Only a blind one would say no.

Argument: The Ten Commandments are the eternal Gospel from the beginning of the World.

If so did Adam honor his mother?

Argument: Commandments in the NT means the Ten Commandments.

Seventh-Day Adventists use these two texts to show that "God's commandments" are the Ten Commandments. There is nothing in the texts that tell us this.

Rev. 14:12 (NIV) - This calls for patient endurance on the part of the saints who obey God's commandments and remain faithful to Jesus.

1 John 2:3-4 (NIV) - We know that we have come to know him if we obey his commands. ⁴The man who says, "I know him," but does not do what he commands is a liar, and the truth is not in him.

Christians indeed keep God's commandments that God addressed to Christians. But if we are going to assume that this means old covenant commandments, then why not commandments God gave to other individuals in the Bible? God commanded one prophet to bake his bread over cow manure. It is a commandment of God. Shall we keep this commandment also?

Baking Bread over cow manure:

Ezek. 4:14 - 15 (NIV) - Then I said, "Not so, Sovereign LORD! I have never defiled myself. From my youth until now I have never eaten anything found dead or torn by wild animals. No unclean meat has ever entered my mouth." ¹⁵Very well," he said, "I will let you bake your bread over cow manure instead of human excrement."

Jesus commanded his disciples to preach to people. Do you do this?

Mark 6:8 - 10 (NIV) - These were his instructions: "Take nothing for the journey except a staff—no bread, no bag, no money in your belts. ⁹Wear sandals but not an extra tunic. ¹⁰Whenever you enter a house, stay there until you leave that town.

Jesus commanded Peter to pay their taxes by getting a coin out of the fish's mouth. Do you do this?

Matt. 17:27 – (NIV) - "But so that we may not offend them, go to the lake and throw out your line. Take the first fish you catch; open its mouth and you will find a four-drachma coin. Take it and give it to them for my tax and yours."

CHAPTER NINETEEN
WHY THE SABBATH CAN NOT BE
A MORAL LAW

William H. Hohmann

WHY THE SABBATH CANNOT BE A MORAL LAW

by William H. Hohmann

CHRISTIANS WORKING ON SABBATHS: UNINTENDED CONSEQUENCES

Jesus made an interesting statement to the religious leaders of His time in regards to the Sabbath.

He asked them if it was a sin to do good on the Sabbath; a good work, versus doing evil. The answer should be obvious. However, if any of us were to ask the same question, we might find ourselves being accused of asking a loaded question.

When the Sabbath was instituted with Israel, in Leviticus chapter 23, it was defined as being a “holy convocation” in relation to being or remaining in one’s dwelling on that day. During the duration of that day, the Israelite was perceived as being in the presence of God, and commanded to refrain from doing “any” work on that day. That day was to be a day of complete rest from work. The Israelite was not to be doing any work while perceived to be in the presence of God on that day.

When Adam and Eve sinned against God, they were cast out of the Garden of Eden and out of the presence of God. God does not allow sinful beings to be in His presence. One who sins is cut off from God, and spiritually dead – separated from God (Colossians 2:13; Isaiah 59:2).

When Christ took on the sins of the world, and Christ was hanging on the cross, He called out, “Eloi, Eloi, lama sabachthani? which is, being interpreted, My God, my God, why hast thou forsaken me? (Mark 15:34b)

God wants it understood that sin cannot abide in the presence of God.

Jesus stated that it was not a sin to do good on the Sabbath. The people had been taught that it was perfectly all right to pull an animal out of a pit on the Sabbath, or to take an animal out to feed or drink, even though these things were defined as work.

And when he was departed thence, he went into their synagogue: And, behold, there was a man which had his hand withered. And they asked him, saying, Is it lawful to heal on the Sabbath days? that they might accuse him. And he said unto them, What man shall there be among you, that shall have one sheep, and if it fall into a pit on the Sabbath day, will he not lay hold on it, and lift it out? How much then is a man better than a sheep? Wherefore it is lawful to do well on the Sabbath days. Then saith he to the man, Stretch forth thine hand. And he stretched it forth; and it was restored whole, like as the other. Then the Pharisees went out, and held a council against him, how they might destroy him. —Matthew 12:9-14

And he was teaching in one of the synagogues on the Sabbath. And, behold, there was a woman which had a spirit of infirmity eighteen years, and was bowed together, and could in no wise lift up herself. And when Jesus saw her, he called her to him, and said unto her, Woman, thou art loosed from thine infirmity. And he laid his hands on her: and immediately she was made straight, and glorified God. And the ruler of the synagogue answered with indignation, because that Jesus had healed on the Sabbath day, and said unto the people, There are six days in which men ought to work: in them therefore come and be healed, and not on the Sabbath day. The Lord then answered him, and said, Thou hypocrite, doth not each one of you on the Sabbath loose his ox or his ass from the stall, and lead him away to watering? And ought not this woman, being a daughter of Abraham, whom Satan hath bound, lo, these eighteen years, be loosed from this bond on the Sabbath day? And when he had said these things, all his adversaries were ashamed: and all the people rejoiced for all the glorious things that were done by him. —Luke 13:10-17

And the scribes and Pharisees watched him, whether he would heal on the Sabbath day; that they might find an accusation against him. But he knew their thoughts, and said to the man which had the withered hand, Rise up, and stand forth in the midst. And he arose and stood forth. Then said Jesus unto them, I will ask you one thing; Is it lawful on the Sabbath days to do good, or to do evil? to save life, or to destroy it? And looking round about upon them all, he said unto the man, Stretch forth thy hand. And he did so: and his hand was restored whole as the other. And they were filled with madness; and communed one with another what they might do to Jesus. —Luke 6:7-11

Jesus makes it plain that it is not a sin to do good on the Sabbath. These religious leaders were “filled with madness” over Christ’s interpretation of the Sabbath and work. The hardness of their hearts blinded them to this truth; this spiritual truth.

And he entered again into the synagogue; and there was a man there which had a withered hand. And they watched him, whether he would heal him on the Sabbath day; that they might accuse him. And he saith unto the man which had the withered hand, Stand forth. And he saith unto them, Is it lawful to do good on the Sabbath days, or to do evil? to save life, or to kill? But they held their peace. And when he had looked round about on them with anger, being grieved for the hardness of their hearts, he saith unto the man, Stretch forth thine hand. And he stretched it out: and his hand was restored whole as the other. And the Pharisees went forth, and straightway took counsel with the Herodians against him, how they might destroy him. —Mark 3:1-6

Sabbath keepers insist the Sabbath, due to its association with the other 9 commandments of the “Ten”, is a “moral” law, even though it can be demonstrated how Jesus treated the Sabbath in association with “ceremonial” laws. But what needs to be examined carefully is that the Ten Commandments are not “moral” laws per se, but rather laws that deal with man's *immorality*. If, for example, you refrain from committing adultery today, this does not prove you to be a moral person. If you refrain from murder today, or tomorrow, or never commit a murder, this too does not prove you to be a moral person. Have you ever thought about committing adultery with another woman (assuming you are a married man)? Have you ever hated another person? Have you ever desired anything belonging to another? Your heart condemns you, regardless of whether you have broken the letter of the law here or not.

Man's works, devoid of God and His sphere of influence, are seen by God as evil.

And this is the condemnation, that light is come into the world, and men loved darkness rather than light, because their deeds were evil. For every one that doeth evil hateth the light, neither cometh to the light, lest his deeds should be reproved. But he that doeth truth cometh to the light, that his deeds may be made manifest, that they are wrought in God. —John 3:19-21

But the one doing truth comes to the light, in order that his works may become-visible —that they have been worked in God. —John 3:21, Transline Translation

In this the children of God are manifest, and the children of the devil: whosoever doeth not righteousness is not of God, neither he that loveth not his brother. For this is the message that ye heard from the beginning, that we should love one another. Not as Cain, who was of that wicked one, and slew his brother. And wherefore slew he him? Because his own works were evil, and his brother's righteous. —1 John 3:10-12

Then came the word of the LORD unto Jeremiah, saying, Behold, I am the LORD, the God of all flesh: is there any thing too hard for me? Therefore thus saith the LORD; Behold, I will give this city into the hand of the Chaldeans, and into the hand of Nebuchadrezzar king of Babylon, and he shall take it: And the Chaldeans, that fight against this city, shall come and set fire on this city, and burn it with the houses, upon whose roofs they have offered incense unto Baal, and poured out drink offerings unto other gods, to provoke me to anger. For the children of Israel and the children of Judah have only done evil before me from their youth: for the children of Israel have only provoked me to anger with the work of their hands, saith the LORD. For this city hath been to me as a provocation of mine anger and of my fury from the day that they built it even unto this day; that I should remove it from before my face, Because of all the evil of the children of Israel and of the children of Judah, which they have done to provoke me to anger, they, their kings, their princes, their priests, and their prophets, and the men of Judah, and the inhabitants of Jerusalem. And they have turned unto me the back, and not the face: though I taught them, rising up early and teaching them, yet they have not hearkened to receive instruction. But they set their abominations in the house, which is called by my name, to defile it. And they built the high places of Baal, which are in the valley of the son of Hinnom, to cause their sons and their daughters to pass through the fire unto Molech; which I commanded them not, neither came it into my mind, that they should do this abomination, to cause Judah to sin. —Jeremiah 32:26-35

The Sabbath keeper looks at the Sabbath and insists it is a “moral” law and that we are commanded to rest on that day; that it is immoral to work on that day, but somehow, not “immoral” to work on the other days of the week. When it comes to what is called a “moral” law, there can never be an excuse for transgressing it. It is never excusable to murder, commit adultery, or bear false witness. This cannot be claimed for the Sabbath commandment.

God looks at the Sabbath in the context of being commanded of Israel, where the Israelites were to rest on the Sabbath

because it was a holy convocation, with them seen or perceived as being in the presence of God on that day, and that they could not therefore be performing their evil works before Him. They could do “good” acts on that day; works that were merciful or acts of kindness for the benefit of animals, for example, and Jesus points out that a human being is of greater value than an animal. The Israelites seemed to have had no problem being compassionate to their animals, and seeing to their needs on the Sabbath, but due to the hardness of their hearts, they could not be compassionate regarding their fellow man in their hearts. Hence, their “works” were evil, even as Cain’s works and sacrifices were evil, seeing as he hated his brother.

Jesus made it clear to the people of His time that if one had an issue with his brother, he was to postpone any offerings at the Temple, reconcile with his brother first, then give his offering. Else, he was wasting his time, seeing as God was not going to accept him and his offering.

In the theology of the New Covenant, Paul points out that love “fulfills” the law; all of it, including the Sabbath:

Owe no man anything, but to love one another: for he that loveth another hath fulfilled the law. For this, Thou shalt not commit adultery, Thou shalt not kill, Thou shalt not steal, Thou shalt not bear false witness, Thou shalt not covet; and if there be any other commandment, it is briefly comprehended in this saying, namely, Thou shalt love thy neighbour as thyself. Love worketh no ill to his neighbour: therefore love is the fulfilling of the law. —Romans 13:8-10

Jesus healed a man who was lame for 38 years, and as usual, does this on a Sabbath, escalating the conflict between himself and the religious leaders of the time who were big on the law and Sabbath. The narrative is found in John chapter 5. From verse 16 we read:

And for this reason, the Jews were persecuting Jesus – because He was doing these things on a Sabbath. But Jesus answered them, “My Father is working until now, and I am working.” Therefore, for this reason the Jews were seeking more to kill Him– because He was not only breaking the Sabbath but He was also calling God His own Father, making Himself equal to God! —John 5:16-18, Transline Translation

Sabbatarians are quick to claim that Jesus didn’t really break the Sabbath, but that John was writing from the perspective of the Jews.

This claim is typical of Sabbatarians who are quick to defend the Sabbath, resorting to any conceivable explanation in order to preserve the Sabbath and prevent the appearance of Jesus sinning, for in the eyes of the Sabbatarian, “sin is the transgression of the law” citing I John 3:4 which is actually a mistranslation and a misinterpretation of the Greek¹. The KJV proffers this interpretive translation into English as such, following the translation of the earlier Geneva Bible. No modern English Bible makes this translation, as such a translation does not follow the meaning of the Greek.

What is important to understand is that the Greek word used here in John 5:18, translated “breaking” is the Greek word “elyon” or “eluen”, rendering the understanding of Jesus having “loosed” the Sabbath command; having nullified its authority. The Sabbath command was not relevant to works done from a righteous perspective, where one does good, and not evil works, selfish in nature, devoid of God’s involvement in one’s life. With this understanding of the Greek, it can hardly be claimed that John was writing what he did from the perspective of the Jews, for the Jews did indeed believe Jesus was breaking the law, and would never claim or admit that Jesus had the right to “dismiss” or nullify the Sabbath command! Yet even Sabbatarians are quick to point out that Jesus is the “Lord of the Sabbath!”

Jesus did not transgress the Sabbath law like a man would; He nullified it. He rendered it irrelevant. He set it aside. He showed that it truly was *not* a sin to do *good* on the Sabbath, when one’s works are in unison with God’s will and His influence in one’s life.

Jesus even went out of His way to call what He did on Sabbaths, healing people, “work.” Note again the citation above, where Jesus says, in relation to the Sabbath, that He works, and that even the Father in Heaven works.

¹ I Jn 3:4: “its use here so soon after the references to the antichrists may be significant. The writer probably intended it to be a strongly pejorative description of sin. It seems likely, in view of I John 3:7, that the antichrists had a softened view of sin which John wished to refute.” (Excerpted from *The Bible Knowledge Commentary* on I Jn. 3:4)

Did not Moses give you the law, and yet none of you keepeth the law? Why go ye about to kill me? The people answered and said, Thou hast a devil: who goeth about to kill thee? Jesus answered and said unto them, I have done one work, and ye all marvel. Moses therefore gave unto you circumcision; (not because it is of Moses, but of the fathers;) and ye on the Sabbath day circumcise a man. If a man on the Sabbath day receive circumcision, that the law of Moses should not be broken; are ye angry at me, because I have made a man every whit whole on the Sabbath day? Judge not according to the appearance, but judge righteous judgment. —John 7:19-24

Jesus here again refers to His healing on the Sabbath, “work.” He also tells us several other important things. These religious leaders and people who were big on the law and Sabbath didn't really keep that law. This makes them hypocrites. Jesus also points out that circumcision was more important than Sabbath keeping, and that circumcision takes precedence over the Sabbath. Why then don't Sabbatarians insist on practicing circumcision? It's too easily demonstrated as not required of Christians, whereas it is easier to obfuscate the facts and evidence when it comes to the Sabbath.

Finally, Jesus states that one should not judge according to appearance, but to judge righteous judgment. Yet judging Christians and Christianity regarding the Sabbath is all about appearance, for not even the Sabbatarian truly keeps the Sabbath, any more than those hypocrites of Jesus' time kept the law, given to them, according to Christ, by Moses, and not God. Moses was the moderator of that covenant, whereas Jesus was the moderator of the New Covenant, and it was His blood spilled, and not that of substitute animals.

When we read the next verse after I John 3:4 it says: “And ye know that he was manifested to take away our sins; and in him is no sin.”

So since that's the case, we are no longer seen as committing lawlessness, wickedness, etc.

The works of the law are dead works and can never bring life.

Is the law then against the promises of God? God forbid: for if there had been a law given which could have given life, verily righteousness should have been by the law. — Galatians 3:21

Christianity is not about “keeping” the old covenant law of the letter, where one was commanded to rest on the Sabbath. Resting was just part of the issue. One sinned by *working* on that day; works that were *not* good in the sight of God.

Christianity is about “fulfilling” the law through love, and the apostle declares, as cited above, that this includes all the commandments, including the Sabbath commandment. Why? How? Because our works are pleasing to God, for God is involved in our lives. Christian works are good works *every* day, even on the Sabbath, even as Christ did. A Christian, in possession of the Holy Spirit, is in the presence of God always, and a Christian's works are not seen by God as being evil works. Our works are our fruit. Our works are a reflection of who and what we are: Christians.

How much more shall the blood of Christ, who through the eternal Spirit offered himself without spot to God, purge your conscience from dead works to serve the living God? —Heb 9:14

As Sabbatarians are fond of saying, “shouldn't we be following Christ and His example”?

Let us understand. The Sabbath served a purpose and function in relation to the children of Israel:

It was a day of rest from labor; something they did not have while captive in Egypt.

It was a memorial of God and the Creation Week, where God rested from His work of Creation.

It was a memorial of God liberating them from the bondage of Egypt where there was no rest.

It was a shadow of Christ (Col. 2:16-17) that looked forward to the spiritual rest found in Christ, also known as “God's rest” (*sabbatismos*) in Hebrews chapter 4.

It served as a means of separating Israel from the pagan nations around them, as did other laws unique to the old covenant.

It was a holy convocation in relation to remaining in one's dwelling on that day, one being in the presence of God on that day.

It was the sign between God and the Israelites in relation to that old covenant between them.

Now, in the Christian dispensation, a number of things have changed.

There is to be no separation between Jew and Gentile in the Gospel. The barriers in the law that previously separated the two previously disparate groups were removed – done away with. The old covenant came to an end, terminated by the death of Christ, who was the God of the old covenant Incarnate. Paul explains this in Romans chapter 7 using a marriage covenant as an example.

God's rest (*sabbatismos*) that could only be entered into through faith, of which the weekly Sabbath (*sabbaton*) was merely a shadow of, is entered into by Christian believers, both Jew and Gentile. There is a “rest” from labors that were previously futile and indeed sinful, seeing as the previous life was and is viewed by God as a sinful life, devoid of God and His Influence in one's life.

The Christian is now always in the presence of God, and the works of a Christian are not evil. The Christian has been “purged” of dead works as cited above. A Christian's works are pleasing to God, and in accordance with His Will. The fruits of a Christian are manifested in the works of a Christian.

What then is the implication of the Sabbatarian who insists we must rest from work on the Sabbath? It is a declaration by the Sabbatarian that a Christian's works are sin after all, if done on a Sabbath.

Is there a conflict here? Absolutely! It is a good example of trying to force the new wine into that old wineskin. It is a case of Sabbatarians declaring that good is evil, and evil is good.

Woe unto them that call evil good, and good evil; that put darkness for light, and light for darkness; that put bitter for sweet, and sweet for bitter! – Isaiah 5:20

A Christian has abandoned the darkness of the world, and entered into the light of the Gospel. He or she is a new creation. Even still, the Sabbatarian seeks to force-fit the Christian back into the old covenant, and back into darkness.

The devil could not possibly be more pleased. A Christian's good works in the sight of God are declared sin by Sabbatarians if performed on the Sabbath. The works of a Christian, wrought in God, are stifled. What God has declared as good the Sabbatarian has declared to be sin and evil.

They profess that they know God; but in works they deny him, being abominable, and disobedient, and unto every good work reprobate. – Titus 1:16

The Sabbatarian declares the good works of a Christian sin when done on a Sabbath. They deny God when it comes to Christian works when done on a Sabbath. It is they who are disobedient to the faith while claiming to be obedient to the law.

The Christian is brought back under the old covenant where there is condemnation for transgressing it, and all transgressed that law. The “fruit” of that law is death, and not life, as attested to by Paul:

For when we were in the flesh, the motions of sins, which were by the law, did work in our members to bring forth fruit unto death. – Romans 7:5

And the commandment, which was ordained to life, I found to be unto death. For sin, taking occasion by the commandment, deceived me, and by it slew me. – Romans 7:10-11

CHAPTER TWENTY
WHAT GOD'S LAW IS

Robert K. Sanders

WHAT GOD'S LAW IS

by Robert K. Sanders

Preface by Kerry Wynne

As we noted earlier, it is a cheap theological trick Sabbatarians use when they dismiss all available evidence to the contrary and say things like, "Well, the Sabbath is part of God's law. If you take away God's law, everyone would have license to kill, steal, and commit adultery." The heresy of Sabbatarianism develops for at least two reasons. First, it results from the failure to take into consideration to whom God was speaking and under what circumstances. Second, there is the failure to understand what Bible writers meant when they used the term, "Law." The idea that the 10 Commandments represent "God's Law" is only partly true. Sometimes the greatest deceptions are those that have some truth mixed in with the error. Just because part of a teaching is correct does not mean that all of it is.

God gave the Sabbath to Israel and to Israel alone. He gave it to them as a sign that would set them apart from all other nations of the world. Logic tells us that it is impossible to have a factor that distinguishes two different groups from each other to be a shared attribute:

Exodus 31:14-17 (NIV) - "Observe the Sabbath, because it is holy to you. Anyone who desecrates it is to be put to death; those who do any work on that day must be cut off from their people. ¹⁵For six days work is to be done, but the seventh day is a day of Sabbath rest, holy to the Lord. Whoever does any work on the Sabbath day is to be put to death. ¹⁶The Israelites are to observe the Sabbath, celebrating it for the generations to come as a lasting covenant. ¹⁷It will be a sign between me and the Israelites forever, for in six days the Lord made the heavens and the earth, and on the seventh day he rested and was refreshed."

Who is to observe the Sabbath? Israel. It is to be celebrated by Israel as a covenant. God did not make a covenant with any other nation but Israel. It is the sign that they are the covenant people. Now, let Robert K. Sanders explain what God's Law really is. Observe that nothing escapes its reach, and only the Holy Spirit can fully teach it to the believer's soul.

THE LAW OF THE SPIRIT

We observe that most Sabbatarians have no knowledge of this law. They have been indoctrinated in the law of the flesh, known as the Old Covenant in the New Testament. They have been led to believe that they must keep the Ten Commandments or they will lose their salvation. Jesus taught the Jews the spiritual aspects of the Law, that if they lust after a woman they had adultery in their hearts. The Jews under the Law did not have the Law of the Spirit within their hearts. They hated the Gentiles as well as their fellow Jews.

At the time of Noah before the flood God said that His ***Spirit would not always "contend with man."*** The Holy Spirit put a basic understanding of moralistic law into the consciences of every human being. God said in Genesis 6 that the thoughts of man were evil continually. Mankind rejected God's moralistic laws. God declared Noah to be a righteous man, and only he and his family were saved from the flood.

King David understood the concept of the Law of the Spirit. After he committed adultery with Bathsheba and killed her husband, he wrote:

Psalms 51: 10-11 (NIV) - Create in me a pure heart, O God, and renew a steadfast spirit within me. Do not cast me from your presence or take your Holy Spirit from me.

God tells Jeremiah that He was going to make a new covenant with Israel that would not be like the one He made with them when he delivered them from Egypt:

Jeremiah 31:31 (NIV) -The Lord said, "I will put my law in their minds and write it on their hearts."

The Jews were devoid of the spirit of God as they were an idolatrous, rebellious people which are the reasons God gave them the Old Covenant law so that they would know what sin was.

Paul explains that God writes His law on the hearts of Christians. The ministry that brings death was written on stone and was fading away, and the ministry of the spirit is more glorious. What was written on stone and "fading away"? The Ten Commandments with the Sabbath!

2 Cor. 3:3 (NIV) ³You show that you are a letter from Christ, the result of our ministry, **written** not with ink **but with the Spirit of the living God, not on tablets of stone but on tablets of human hearts.**

2 Cor. 3:7 - 8 (NIV) ⁷**Now if the ministry that brought death, which was engraved in letters on stone,** came with glory, so that the Israelites could not look steadily at the face of Moses because of its glory, **fading though it was,** ⁸**will not the ministry of the Spirit be even more glorious?**

Paul writes that the Gentiles that "do not have the law" still have the requirements of the law written on their hearts. The Gentiles as well as the Jews who follow the Spirit written in their hearts will be eternally saved when God judges the world through Jesus Christ (Verse 16):

Rom. 2:14 - 16 (NIV) ¹⁴(Indeed, when **Gentiles, who do not have the law, do by nature things required by the law,** they are a law for themselves, **even though they do not have the law,** ¹⁵since they show that **the requirements of the law are written on their hearts,** their consciences also bearing witness, and their thoughts now accusing, now even defending them.) ¹⁶**This will take place on the day when God will judge men's secrets through Jesus Christ, as my gospel declares.**

Rom 2:7 (NIV) – ⁷**To those who by persistence in doing good seek glory, honor and immortality, he will give eternal life.**

Heb. 8:10 (NIV) - ¹⁰**This is the covenant I will make with the house of Israel.**

God has been speaking to each person who comes into the world through their consciences from Adam to Moses and from Moses till the end of the world (See St. John, Chapter One). The various moralistic codes of the world seem to agree to a remarkable extent. As C. S. Lewis once pointed out, there are few if any societies on Earth where lying, cheating, and stealing are looked upon with admiration and approval. Similarly, as Lewis observed, these societies have disagreed about how many wives a man could have, but few, if any, have believed that a man could take any woman he wanted for a wife.

The writer of Hebrews references Jer. 31:31 to illustrate that a new covenant was part of God's plan for the future of his people:

Jer. 31:31 (NIV) "The days are coming," declares the Lord, "when I will make a new covenant with the people of Israel and with the people of Judah.

Here is the text from Hebrews:

Heb. 8:13 (NIV) - ¹³By calling this covenant "new," he has made the first one obsolete; and what is obsolete and aging will soon disappear.

King David did not need any written laws to tell him it was wrong to commit adultery with Bathsheba and kill her husband. The real laws of God seem to explain themselves: Don't do anything to others that you would not want them to do to you. If a person steals someone from someone else, that person may fight the thief to get his things back, and in the process one or both of them may die. Kerry Wynne knows a particular atheist very well. He observes that he despises dishonesty and has a sharp conscience when it comes to business dealings. Recently he thought someone had stolen several hundred dollars from him. He had no trouble seeing that what he experienced was intrinsically "wrong." Wynne observes that if those who do not even profess to believe in a Higher Power have a good sense of right and wrong forged into their minds, it should not be difficult to understand how Christians, who are under control of the Holy Spirit, would have the REAL "Law of God" emblazoned deeply in their souls—the Law of the Spirit—and would have an innate understanding of God's LAW that would greatly transcend a mere list of "do's" and "don'ts" that govern sins of commission to encompass an understanding of sins of omission and motive.

Kerry Wynne tells of a remarkable incident that took place between a Seventh-day Adventist missionary and a head hunter

in Borneo during the 1970's. This head hunter's village was feuding with another village, and a war between them seemed likely. The missionary was working to try to prevent the fight. In a discussion with one of the cannibal warriors, the missionary asked him if he planned to eat the people he killed in battle. The warrior got a solemn look on his face, put his hand over his heart, and said, "No, master. I could never do that. Something in here (At this point he thumped the area over his heart.) tells me that would be very wrong. No, I will not eat them." Even the Heathen know when they are doing evil. The LAW is, indeed, written on their hearts.

Wynne also relates an interesting discussion he had with a Christian who questioned whether there was any direct commandment in the Bible against a man having more than one wife. A careful analysis of Scripture proves that there is not. The Bible is full of examples of polygamy, and although King David had many wives there is no record that God ever rebuked him for this practice. In fact, God said that David was a "man after His own heart." Wynne asked his believing friend whether or not he would wish to share a woman that he was crazy about with several other men. The friend evaded the question. Then Wynne pointed out that surely he would not wish to do so if he was deeply in love with her and then suggested that if he were a woman who was deeply in love with her husband, she would not want to share him with several other women. If we follow the command of Jesus to love others like we love ourselves, it is a "no brainer" that we would not want to do anything to someone else that we would not want that person to do to us. There is no question that the Law of the Spirit is vastly superior to the Ten Commandments, the entire Law of Moses, or even the lists of sins that St. Paul gave us.

Wynne also observes that Romans 7 demonstrates that when Paul said Christians are not under the LAW, he meant, in a very real sense, that they were no longer under any written codification of LAW whether it be ceremonial or moralistic, when it came to the process by which salvation works. Notice that the example he gives in this particular discussion of the Law is the sin of adultery. The claim that Paul only targeted the ceremonial LAW is refuted by this fact. At the same time there is no license to sin because the standard of the Law of the Spirit is much higher. Following the direct and unrelenting influence of the Holy Spirit leads the sinner away from all the sins that a Sabbatarian legalist is "worried about," and more. The LAW that Jesus confirmed, that we are to love God supremely and others as ourselves, is comprehensive and enables us to decide every moralistic issue that confronts us. He gave this "law" to Israel in the Old Testament, and He confirmed it in the New Testament.

There should be no moralistic issue that can't be resolved to the best of a believer's conscience with the combination of the Law of the Spirit and the comprehensive principle that Jesus gave us that we are to love God supremely and others as ourselves. Let's say, for example, that you are a fetus in your mother's womb, but the man who fathered you does not care about your mother and has no interest in being a parent to you. Do you want to be butchered and aborted without a chance to see the light of day just because your father is a no-good? Do you, then, simply because your father was a no-good, not care to ever see flowers and trees, hear the song of a bird, or behold the glories of a star-studded sky at night? Of course not! You want to see the light of day. Your mother, then, really knows what to do. If your situations were reversed, what would she do? Also, notice Jesus Himself "replaced" the 7th Commandment against adultery with something far more comprehensive. He said that not only must a man not commit the act of adultery itself, but that he must not even look at a woman with lust in his heart. Surely the Law of the Spirit is a principle that is not difficult to grasp.

CHAPTER TWENTY-ONE
NOAHIDE LAW AND ISRAEL'S DUAL
COURT SYSTEM DEFLATE SABBATARIANISM

by Larry Dean, J. D.

NOAHIDE LAW AND ISRAEL'S DUAL COURT SYSTEM DEFLATE SABBATARIANISM

by Larry Dean, J. D.

WOOPS! ELLEN WHITE STUMBLES ONTO THE CONCEPT OF THE NOAHIDE LAW!

Oh Oh! What will she do now? Will she let a sleeping dog lie, or will she wake it up and open the can of worms that it's big paws are guarding? You probably already know the answer, but read all about it now. Sometimes the journey is as much fun as getting to your destination.

Nobody argues that Ellen White should have plagiarized *more*. So strenuously arguing that Ellen should have stolen *more* from others is not an argument we adopted casually. Somebody had to do it first, and we are hoping to be the first before anyone beats us to it. We here-by **condemn** Ellen White for not stealing *enough* of the writings of Alfred Edersheim to write her book, *Patriarchs and Prophets*. If something is worth doing, you might as well do it right. She didn't, and her *failure to steal to the best of her ability* appears to have been deliberate, and willful. At the same time we concede that her wrongdoing did not break any of the Ten Commandments. With the exception of the Sabbath law, all the Ten Commandments list "sins of commission."

To understand our case against Ellen White, you need to grasp just how massive her borrowing from Edersheim was. Then you will see why we are so unhappy that she didn't finish the job. Please study the following links. If the links are cold by the time you read this, please use a good search engine and enter these terms: "Ellen White" "Plagiarism" "Patriarchs and Prophets" "Edersheim."

<http://www.bible.ca/7-WL-exhibits-pp.htm> <http://www.nonsda.org/egw/rea/rea5.htm>

Here, in the midst of the wholesale material Ellen White "borrowed" from Edersheim, is what Ellen White chose not to plagiarize:

"Perhaps we ought also to notice in this connection that, whatever may have been the common practice before, now for the first time the use of animal food was expressly permitted, with the exception of the blood, and that probably for the reason afterwards mentioned in the case of sacrifices, that the blood was the seat of life. (Leviticus 17:11, 14) Another and most important change is marked by the solemn prohibition of murder, with this addition, that "whoso sheddeth man's blood, by man shall his blood be shed." Such crimes were no longer to be avenged directly by God Himself, but He delegated His authority to man. (Romans 8:1, 2) As Luther rightly says, "In these words the civil magistracy is instituted, and the Divine right of bearing the sword." For when it is added, as a reason why murder should be punished with death, that God made man in His own image, it seems to convey that vengeance might not be taken by any one at his own will, but that this belonged to those who on earth represented the authority of God, or were His delegates; whence also they are called in Psalm 82:6, "gods," or rather "Elohim."* And, as Luther rightly argues, "If God concedes to man the power over life and death, assuredly this carries with it authority over that which is less than life, such as goods, family, wife, children, servants, and land." Thus the words spoken by the Lord to Noah contain the warrant and authority of those who are appointed rulers and judges over us. In later times the Jews have been wont to speak of what they called the seven Noachic commandments, which, according to them, were binding upon all Gentile proselytes. These were a prohibition (1) of idolatry, (2) of blasphemy, (3) of murder, (4) of incest, (5) of robbery and theft, (6) of eating blood and strangled animals, and (7) an injunction of obedience to magistrates. (Comp. also Acts 15:20) (Emphasis added)

Are your eyes glazing over yet? At this point of our study we are not expecting our target audience to be particularly alarmed. It will not ring a bell with our target audience because it **DID** with Ellen White. (We will explain that later.) In this paragraph there are several things present to the thoughtful eye:

- The world before the Flood had only six commandments.
- The world after the Flood had only seven commandments.

- There was no Sabbath Commandment by the time of the Flood.
- The Jews understood that within the borders of their country, they were to hold the resident Gentiles accountable only to those seven laws.
- These laws were known as the Noahide Laws.
- Both Edersheim and Martin Luther insisted that the 7 Noahide Laws were restated as rules of living for the Gentile Christian converts of Antioch, following the AD 50 Council of Jerusalem in Acts 15.

While complete comprehension may be too much to ask of our readers at this point, it is not too much to ask of Ellen White. We know that she read widely because we have been able to identify a very large number of writers from whom she borrowed. She was apparently smarter than most of us and exhibited a kind of Clintonian intelligence that helped her pull off some amazing things. This is one of them.

If all of this still doesn't ring a bell, it is because it did with Ellen. After stumbling onto this bad news she wanted to make sure that her readers would never learn a thing about Noachian law. Why? Because this law set contains a cup of Hemlock for the idea that the Sabbath was ever intended for any Gentile at any time and any place. It demolishes Seventh Day Adventism's crazy Sabbath-Centric ideology. The Noachian laws came from God, and were integral to God's promise to Noah that never again would God destroy the human race. The Jewish Courts of the Nation of Israel later treated them as binding law that controlled the legal status of the Gentiles who came, for one reason or another, to reside within its borders. The Sabbath was never a part of the law that was applied to resident Gentiles like it was a resident Hebrew.

Picture Ellen alone with Edersheim's book. Her angel guide who attended her daily for over 26 years might have been with her. Suddenly she is confronted with a momentous choice. Would she accept the new light of truth, or would she reject it and keep teaching her view that Christians— mostly Gentiles— must keep the Jewish Sabbath? Her decision? Keep teaching the untruth! It is our contention that she made a deliberate, calculated decision to withhold the evidence of these Noahide Laws from Adventist membership. Why? Because existence of these laws destroys any argument that the Sabbath applied to either Gentiles or Christians.

This study will not be an easy one. Adventism's Sabbath-Centric ideology is based solely on disconnected proof texts. The alternative is honestly looking at the Bible as a whole, in its proper historical context, with an open mind, using recognized principles of sound scholarship and hermeneutics. Ellen White understood this so well that she didn't want her followers to ever know anything about it— just like she didn't want them to know about the Eastern Orthodox Church's supremacy during the first 500 years of the Faith. It is a long study, but if you read it prayerfully and with an open mind, you will be astonished at the total carnage it makes of her idea that Gentiles like you and me are obligated to keep the Jewish Sabbath.

The existence and role of the Jewish court system and its application of the Noahide Laws can be demonstrated using principles derived from *sola scriptura*. The essential foundations of this amazingly-advanced legal system are solidly based in Scripture, so that is where we are going to begin.

First we will establish the biblical case for the legitimacy of the sacred oral traditions— the ones that were finally reduced to writing around 200 CE— and how they prove beyond a reasonable doubt that the legitimacy of the sacred oral (now written) Law proves that there was no Sabbath in Eden and that Gentiles were never— before or after the Gospel— required to keep the Sabbath in order to be saved.

JESUS “BLESSES” THE SACRED ORAL TRADITIONS

Matthew 23 – Jesus and the Pharisees

Here is what Jesus said:

Then Jesus said to the crowds and to his disciples: ²“The teachers of the law and the Pharisees sit in Moses’ seat. ³So you must be careful to do everything they tell you. But do not do what they do, for they do not practice what they preach.

Jesus had his choice of three distinctly-different groups of Jewish scholars with their corresponding teachings to recommend

to His followers, including the Essenes and the Sadducees. The Essenes were unacceptable for various reasons, and the Sadducees were out of the question. They didn't even believe in a resurrection for anyone. When you're dead, you're dead, they believed. Incidentally, this argument is along the same line as the "Soul Sleep" doctrine of Adventists.

By contrast, the Pharisees were the only major sect of Judaism at the time of Christ that fully-accepted the Oral Law. ***The Essenes and the Sadducees flatly rejected the Oral Law!*** The Pharisees had to have taught the Law correctly, because Jesus said that His followers were to do the things that they taught. At the same time Jesus recommended against doing the things they DID because they didn't follow their own teachings. In our Western culture, with its ignorance of Jewish culture, language, and law, it is easy to think that the "Law" that the Pharisees protected was only the Torah. This is what Ellen White would like her followers to believe, but this isn't the case. During the time of the Exodus, God instructed Moses to set up a court system. The Mosaic court system of Israel superseded the Justice system that both Edersheim and Martin Luther believed was established at the time of Noah. Israel's court system kept a living memory of its decisions. Those decisions were finally reduced to writing after the destruction of the Second Temple. Here are some key points about Israel's court system:

The Israelites established, under Divine guidance, a dual court system. The notorious modern-day example of such a dual system was South Africa under *apartheid*. Black and white citizens of *apartheid* South Africa had entirely different laws, enforced by the same court system. The United States under the "Jim Crow" laws also legally discriminated between the White and Black races.

The **first** system was for the "resident Gentiles" who lived within the borders of Israel. The standard of behavior to which they were held was that of the Seven Laws of Noah, or the Noachian, or Noahide laws. As Edersheim and the *Mishnah* make clear, the Noahide Laws featured a fully-functioning court of justice. This earlier court system was swallowed up by the later court system founded by Moses under the direction of God.

The **second** system was for Israelites— circumcised Israelites who were part of the Hebrew covenant. They were held to the *Torah*, complete with 613 commandments and the court rulings where those commandments were enforced against real life litigants.

Israel's law system was the most advanced one in the world because, under the influence of God's leading, a system of records was set up to establish *legal precedence*. These records of court decisions have been dated back as far as the time of the prophet Samuel. This would make sense because he was the first judge of Israel (after Moses).

These records were kept to a very high standard of word-to-word accuracy by oral tradition, which is commonly misunderstood in the West as "a game of telephone." That is NOT what oral tradition meant in the civilizations of the Mid-East. The *Gospel of Mark* - the first Gospel - was not written down for at least 40 years after the Resurrection. The three other Gospels came even later. Any attack on the oral traditions of Judaism instantly draws into question the credibility and veracity of the Gospels. Many famous rabbis could lecture on the Law for more than ten hours without making a single mistake. In one celebrated case, a rabbi lectured for twenty-three straight hours on the oral law without making a single mistake. In Old Testament times, passing down information orally was viewed as MORE accurate than in writing. The oral record of the interpretations of the laws of the Torah as they were applied in cases before the Jewish courts, in a fair and impartial manner, were crucial to fairly deciding cases that came afterward. In the middle of a heated court hearing, all of the participants rely on memorized law. There is no time to look it up. That was just as true in ancient Israel as it is now.

The judges recognized that if the records of legal proceedings were to fall into the hands of their enemies it would have been a serious breach of national security. So it was an unthinkable crime to write any of this information down. That changed after the destruction of the Second Temple— an event which accelerated the dispersal of the Jews throughout the Roman Empire and resulted in the slaughter of most of the highest-ranking, most learned rabbis.

Around 200 CE, the ancient world had been revolutionized by the convulsions in the Roman Empire caused by Christianity and imperial overstretch. The Jews had been forcibly dispersed throughout the Roman Empire, so Jewish leaders decided that these oral traditions must be written down for the first time ever. The documents that record this legal precedence going back to the time of Samuel are called the *Mishnah* and the *Talmud*.

When you see references to the *Mishnah* and *Talmud* in this study, please keep in mind that our friends, the Adventist apologists, argue that these documents did not originate until 200 CE and that by then, that hatred of the Jews for Gentile

Sabbath-keepers, inflamed by the pain inflicted on them by the rise of Christianity, had driven them to exhibit this anger by adding the death provision. Once you understand the process by which these sacred oral traditions got into writing, this Adventist escape route is blocked by an avalanche of facts. There had been no change in this provision for thousands of years, guaranteed by their obsession with the accuracy of the process. Here is an explanatory comment from an authority on the *Mishnah* and *Talmud*:

Ernest R. Trattner writes: "The destruction of the Jewish National State and the burning of the Temple necessitated tremendous changes of a structural nature. Many old regulations had to be abolished. The High Court at Jamnia also took upon itself the power to suspend certain Biblical laws which were either obsolete or incapable of being fulfilled due to changed conditions. Of the many prohibitions abrogated by the rabbis none benefited Judaism more than setting aside the age-old tradition against putting the Oral Law into written form. Despite the fact that for centuries it was regarded as a serious transgression of Judaism to commit any part of the Oral Law into writing, the demands of the new age were entirely too compelling to be denied. The time had now come when the memory of the sages (even as it was trained in those days) could no longer hold the vast accumulation by oral transmission. Since the destruction of the Temple, the growth of the Oral Law, and the extension of its principles, mushroomed into a huge bulk. Individual teachers, jurists, and disciples resorted to jotting down various aspects of the Oral Law as aids to memory. From such beginnings as these arose the vast literature of the Talmud." (*Understanding the Talmud*, p. 8)

THE DEVELOPMENT OF ISRAEL'S LEGAL SYSTEM

Off To An Unofficial Start: Exodus 18

Even before the Law was given to Israel, God led in the establishment of a legal system that operated within the time period of the Exodus journey. Look at Exodus 18 in the NIV:

¹³The next day Moses took his seat to serve as judge for the people, and they stood around him from morning till evening. ¹⁴When his father-in-law saw all that Moses was doing for the people, he said, "What is this you are doing for the people? Why do you alone sit as judge, while all these people stand around you from morning till evening?"

¹⁵Moses answered him, "Because the people come to me to seek God's will. ¹⁶Whenever they have a dispute, it is brought to me, and I decide between the parties and inform them of God's decrees and instructions."

¹⁷Moses' father-in-law replied, "What you are doing is not good. ¹⁸You and these people who come to you will only wear yourselves out. The work is too heavy for you; you cannot handle it alone. ¹⁹Listen now to me and I will give you some advice, and may God be with you. You must be the people's representative before God and bring their disputes to him. ²⁰Teach them his decrees and instructions, and show them the way they are to live and how they are to behave. ²¹But select capable men from all the people—men who fear God, trustworthy men who hate dishonest gain—and appoint them as officials over thousands, hundreds, fifties and tens. ²²Have them serve as judges for the people at all times, but have them bring every difficult case to you; the simple cases they can decide themselves. That will make your load lighter, because they will share it with you. ²³If you do this and God so commands, you will be able to stand the strain, and all these people will go home satisfied."

²⁴Moses listened to his father-in-law and did everything he said. ²⁵He chose capable men from all Israel and made them leaders of the people, officials over thousands, hundreds, fifties and tens. ²⁶They served as judges for the people at all times. The difficult cases they brought to Moses, but the simple ones they decided themselves.

GOD FORMALIZES THE LEGAL SYSTEM POST-SINAI:

Leviticus 17

(NIV) - ⁸If cases come before your courts that are too difficult for you to judge—whether bloodshed, lawsuits or assaults—take them to the place the Lord your God will choose. ⁹Go to the Levitical priests

and to the judge who is in office at that time. Inquire of them and they will give you the verdict. ¹⁰You must act according to the decisions they give you at the place the Lord will choose. Be careful to do everything they instruct you to do. ¹¹Act according to whatever they teach you and the decisions they give you. Do not turn aside from what they tell you, to the right or to the left. ¹²Anyone who shows contempt for the judge or for the priest who stands ministering there to the Lord your God is to be put to death. You must purge the evil from Israel. ¹³All the people will hear and be afraid, and will not be contemptuous again.

LATER IN THE EXODUS JOURNEY:

Deuteronomy 25

Deuteronomy 25 also spells out the jurisdictional rudiments of the earliest Jewish Courts:

When people have a dispute, they are to take it to court and the judges will decide the case, acquitting the innocent and condemning the guilty. ²If the guilty person deserves to be beaten, the judge shall make them lie down and have them flogged in his presence with the number of lashes the crime deserves, ³but the judge must not impose more than forty lashes. If the guilty party is flogged more than that, your fellow Israelite will be degraded in your eyes.

STILL LATER: THE TIME OF KING JEHOSHAPHAT

II Chronicles 19

The court system of Israel went through some ups and downs, usually depending, we suppose, on the kind of king Israel had at the time. Jehoshaphat seemed to be doing a reasonably good job. Notice the different categories of laws that were to be enforced:

⁴Jehoshaphat lived in Jerusalem, and he went out again among the people from Beersheba to the hill country of Ephraim and turned them back to the Lord, the God of their ancestors. ⁵He appointed judges in the land, in each of the fortified cities of Judah. ⁶He told them, "Consider carefully what you do, because you are not judging for mere mortals but for the Lord, who is with you whenever you give a verdict. ⁷Now let the fear of the Lord be on you. Judge carefully, for with the Lord our God there is no injustice or partiality or bribery."

⁸In Jerusalem also, Jehoshaphat appointed some of the Levites, priests and heads of Israelite families to administer the law of the Lord and to settle disputes. And they lived in Jerusalem. ⁹He gave them these orders: "You must serve faithfully and wholeheartedly in the fear of the Lord. ¹⁰In every case that comes before you from your people who live in the cities—whether bloodshed or other concerns of the law, commands, decrees or regulations—you are to warn them not to sin against the Lord; otherwise his wrath will come on you and your people. Do this, and you will not sin.

¹¹"Amariah the chief priest will be over you in any matter concerning the Lord, and Zebadiah son of Ishmael, the leader of the tribe of Judah, will be over you in any matter concerning the king, and the Levites will serve as officials before you. Act with courage, and may the Lord be with those who do well."

The earliest Judges were appointed directly by Moses, but the kings of Israel seemed to have appointed them later as the bureaucracy of the Jewish Nation developed and became more sophisticated. .

ANALYSIS AND APPLICATION TO SABBATH

It was the job description of the Jewish law courts to "**purge the evil from Israel.**" Talk about a wide-ranging mandate! This sacred charge plainly equals the duties of the prophets! It is CLEAR that the Jewish judges of the Law were as venerated as highly as the office of the prophet. In some cases, the office of judge and prophet were combined (cf. Samuel, Moses, Ezra). **Deuteronomy 17** is stark. If one is under the Mosaic Law, one is absolutely bound by the legal decisions of the law courts, and their interpretation of the *Torah*. **Deuteronomy 17** alone demolishes Adventist ideas about the Sabbath. They are in direct disobedience to God, insofar as they reject the **Talmud's** and **Mishnah's** God-inspired rulings on proper

Sabbath-keeping. Disagreement with the rulings of the judge in the Land of Israel might well cost you your life. And those decisions of the Jewish law courts are found in the *case law* of the **Mishnah** and the **Talmud**.

The decisions of the Jewish courts eerily resemble American case-law, the written decisions of cases that are litigated in American Courts. An important part of legal realism and legal reasoning by analogy is the concept of *Stare Decisis*, which requires a court to apply the law similarly to every litigant before the court. This is how the promise of “equal justice under the law” and “fundamental fairness” is achieved. *Stare Decisis* is the basis for the Common Law, which again is indebted to the **Mishnah** and the **Talmud**. *Stare Decisis* requires knowing how prior litigants were treated. This requires a **recorded** decision. Prior to the destruction of the Second Temple, those decisions were memorized. Around AD 200, they were written down.

Common law, also known as case law, evolved similarly and tends to follow the rule of *hilkheta ke-vatra'ei*. As Rabbi Michael J. Broyde, a professor of law at Emory University, points out, common law is definitely influenced by Jewish law. He wrote, “The great early writers of the common law had *Maimonides' code of Jewish Law* in front of them in the Latin translation.”

The British legal system has employed common law since the middle ages. It is also widely used in nations that trace their legal heritage to England as former colonies of the British Empire. These include the United States, to some extent, Malaysia, Singapore, Pakistan, Sri Lanka, India, Ghana, Cameroon, Canada, Ireland, New Zealand, South Africa, Hong Kong, and Australia.

Common law (the *Mishnah* and *Talmud*) is distinguished from statutory law (written *Torah*) in that decisions are based on previously decided cases, but prior cases need not be decisive. They are granted more or less weight in the deliberations of a court according to a number of factors:

- Is the precedent “on point”? That is, does it deal with a circumstance identical or very similar to the circumstance in the instant case?
- When and where was the precedent decided? A recent decision in the same jurisdiction as the instant case will be given great weight. Next in descending order would be recent precedent in jurisdictions whose law is the same as local law.
- Does the precedent stem from dissimilar circumstances, older cases that have since been contradicted, or cases in jurisdictions that have dissimilar law? (These would be given least weight.)

The God-given, unbridled discretion wielded by the Jewish Judges is **less than** the power given the Apostles in this passage:

Matthew 18:18 - Truly I tell you, whatever you bind on earth will be bound in heaven, and whatever you loose on earth will be loosed in heaven.

Is there any doubt that the Apostles had the power to abrogate the entire Mosaic Law? Didn't they have MORE power over the law than did the Jewish courts? This text makes the unbridled power of the Apostles unambiguous. Thus, St. Paul could flick away the Mosaic Law for any reason, or no reason. And he did so in **Colossians** 2 and Acts 15. The Mosaic Law was inferior to the power of the Apostles. **Yet no apostle ever tried to modify the rulings of a Jewish court! They didn't dare.** The Great Commission was the priority of the Apostles. The “missionary” commission in the *Torah* and Jewish tradition was to bring the Noahide Laws to the Gentiles, to civilize them. Judaism had and has **NO** other missionary exhortation. None of the Apostles were under the illusion that the Mosaic Law could be separated from its Godly enforcement mechanism, the Jewish courts. They well knew that the Mosaic law was flatly incompatible with The Great Commission. The Jewish courts had evolved into the Sanhedrin by the time of Christ. The Sanhedrin was not portable. It could not be transported to Greece to resolve disputes between Gentile Christian converts. NOTHING said by Jesus or St. Paul abrogated or diminished the jurisdiction of the Jewish Law judges in matters involving the Mosaic Law. The oral tradition was never criticized by Paul. He knew it was inseparable from the written Law. The major sects of Judaism scrambled for survival after the destruction of the Second Temple. Only the Pharisees survived, as the Jews were dispersed throughout the Roman Empire. All of the modern sects of Judaism trace their lineage back to the Pharisees, with, perhaps, the exception of the Karaites. It is obvious that the Pharisee's adherence to the vibrant and “living” oral tradition is responsible for this.

Christianity never joined into the fierce jousting for power and survival among the Jewish sects, nor did it join into the various

revolts that rocked Judea under Roman occupation. It had no part of the doctrinal convulsions rocking the Jewish world. The early Christian church was preoccupied with the Great Commission. The Gospel caught on like wildfire, unburdened by the obsolete Mosaic Law. It eventually forced the surrender of the mighty Roman Empire at the First council of Nicea. It was the first defeat of the Roman Empire. *Pax Romana* — founded on the bankrupt ideas — of diseased paganism — was living on borrowed time. Vibrant Christianity was the wave of the future.

JESUS VALIDATED THE *MISHNAH* AND THE *TALMUD*:

Its Implications For Sabbatarianism

Once again, recall the words of Jesus: Here's Matthew 23:

Matthew 23:2-3 (NIV) - The teachers of the law and the Pharisees sit in Moses' seat. ³So you must be careful to do everything they tell you. But do not do what they do, for they do not practice what they preach.

Recall that the Pharisees were the only sect of Judaism that accepted the *Mishnah* and the *Talmud* as an inspired oral tradition that God gave Israel to help them interpret the *Torah*. Jesus told his followers to follow the teachings of the Pharisees. There is no way to get around this fact of the Scriptures.

The fact that Jesus validated the sacred oral traditions means that its teachings are to be followed in the interpretation of all 613 rules and regulations of the *Torah*, including the Sabbath.

It is difficult, if not impossible for the Western mind to understand *Torah* Law simply by reading a translation of it in one's own language. It has been said that reading the Talmud is like existing in Alice's Wonderland. Nothing about the Talmud feels similar to Western literature. Western law is linear and logical. The *Talmud* is more like spokes from a hub. Talmud studies requires having and understanding of the way people think in Hebrew and the same knowledge of Jewish culture and history that a Jew has to even begin to interpret it correctly. It is tough. Not many Westerners try it. At the same time, the Jews insist that *Torah* Law is incomprehensible without the interpretation and guidance provided in the *Mishnah* and the *Talmud*. It is often stated that the *Torah* is merely the "index to the *Talmud*." All conservative modern-day Jewish legal scholars teach that the oral ***Mishnah*** was given to Moses by God at the same time he was given the written *Torah*. The written *Torah* is the Law. The ***Mishnah*** is the *understanding* and *application* of that law.

Look at just one example. The *Torah* occasionally instructs Israel to kill every man, woman, and child of the enemy. A literal interpretation of this command represents a profound misunderstanding of the written Law. Notice that the oral traditions, now written down for us, moderated this *Torah* law to the extent that there is no record in the Old Testament where Israel actually completed such a military operation after the time of the conquest of Canaan. The Oral Tradition presents an entirely different portrayal of the God of Israel and the Old Testament. Instead of a blood-lusting genocidal deity that is often ridiculed by atheists, the ***Mishnah*** presents a God who gave the Gentile nations multiple chances to accept the Noahide Commandments before they were finally eliminated. Furthermore, the ***Mishnah*** makes it clear women and children were totally off-limits. Whether the Nation of Israel was allowed to go to war in the first place, and the goals of that war, were often decided by the Jewish courts.

There can be no doubt the instructions of the "teachers of the law" and "Pharisees" that Jesus described are found in the ***Mishnah*** and the ***Talmud***. Adventism's multiple weird and dishonest ideas about the Law are flatly unbiblical on many different levels. They are in open defiance of both Deuteronomy 17 and Jesus's clear instructions in Matthew 23. In addition to Deuteronomy 17 and Matthew 23, it is clear simply on *sola scriptura* grounds that the Jewish law courts acted in the stead of God, in interpreting and applying God's law, which resulted in the written legal opinions of the ***Talmud*** and ***Mishnah***:

Those Jewish courts were given virtually unbridled discretion to interpret and enforce the Mosaic Law. Any limitations on their discretionary powers were those which they imposed on themselves. The ***Mishnah*** and ***Talmud*** have detailed rules of criminal and civil procedure that the Jewish law courts devised and then imposed on themselves. It is really true. The Pharisees "sat in the seat of Moses" just like the prophets "sat in the seat of Elijah."

Adventists inadvertently concede that the Sabbath law is not self-interpreting by publishing their own detailed, extra-biblical rules for Sabbath observance. In doing so, they tacitly concede that a court system, with its record-keeping of its decisions,

was, and still is, necessary to manage Sabbath observance. This fact condemns the Institution of Adventism. Why? Because the legal system of ancient Israel got its authority directly from God, and the heritage of Sabbath-keeping law it developed received the commendation of Jesus Himself. By contrast, the Sabbath-keeping guidelines published by the General Conference of Seventh-day Adventists have no authority from God, are frequently in conflict with the interpretations of the God-ordained legal system that Jesus approved, and ultimately trace the authority for their development to Ellen G. White— a brain-damaged woman who developed her Sabbath concepts under the tutelage of an “angel” who appeared to her in the guise of a young man for the first 26 years of her ministry.

Adventists fail to obey the admonition of Jesus to follow the God-directed interpretations of the Pharisees in regard to the observance of the Mosaic Law. The Pharisees of Jesus’ day accepted the oral traditions as inspired by God, and what He said strongly agrees with them. ***Nothing in the sayings of Jesus or the writings of Paul distinguishes between the oral and written law.*** To Jesus and Paul, the “Law” constituted a seamless body of rules and regulations comprised of both its oral and written components. This combination of written law (or statutory or constitutional law) and oral law (case law or the common law) is remarkably similar to the modern U.S. legal system. Therefore, the instructions given in the oral law about Sabbath-keeping are those that should be followed today if someone wants to keep the Sabbath correctly. The Bible makes this clear. The decisions of the Jewish courts were to be followed on pain of death. And those courts determined who could keep the Sabbath and how it must be kept.

Adventists ignore the rulings of God’s courts as well as the clear provisions of the *Torah* itself. They leave their dwellings on Sabbath, which is contrary to the Law of Moses, and drive to church. The internal combustion engine in Adventist cars lights thousands of fires per minute in violation of the Old Testament law. Elsewhere in this book we tell the story of how the General Conference made a fool of itself over a change of the international date line involving some Pacific islands. As a result of its decision, Adventists now are keeping “Sunday” along with all the other Sunday keepers on the islands. They got a dispensation from the General Conference “pope” to worship on the “wrong” day.

Adventists have substituted the opinion of the untrained legal lay persons of the General Conference in place of the opinions of the Jewish judges who were appointed directly by God and/or Moses. The judges whose opinions are not acknowledged by the Adventists went through many years of rigorous training and learning in the exacting standards of the Mosaic Law. Adventists leaders received no such training. Instead, they just guess.

ST. PAUL’S LEGAL TRAINING

Eastern Orthodox tradition teaches that St. Paul learned the *Talmud*, the *Gemara*, and the *Mishnah* at the feet of Gamaliel. Gamaliel is shown defending Paul before the Sanhedrin on at least one occasion in the *Book of Acts*. Orthodox tradition maintains that Gamaliel had embraced the Christian faith, and his tolerant attitude toward the early Christians is explained by this. According to Photius, he was baptized by Saint Peter and Saint John, together with his son Abibo (Abibas, Abibus) and Nicodemus. The Clementine literature suggested that he maintained secrecy about his conversion and continued to be a member of the Sanhedrin for the purpose of covertly assisting his fellow Christians. Gamaliel is recognized as a full-fledged saint under Orthodox tradition for all of these reasons, and his saint day is August 2. Paul was a Pharisee, and the sect of the Pharisees was the only one that fully embraced the concept that the oral traditions were in a real sense, inspired. There can be no doubt, as our study demonstrates, that at the very least the Jewish court systems were established by God. So, if we want to know what Paul meant when he referred to the “Law,” we know that his views were shaped by the sacred oral traditions as well as by the 613 written rules and regulations of the *Torah*. And nobody but an ex-Pharisee had the credibility and legal acumen to spark the jettisoning of the Mosaic Law that is shot through the Pauline Epistles, and with finality at the circa AD 50 Council of Jerusalem. Perhaps Jesus’ command to obey the Pharisees found its ultimate fulfillment in the life of Paul, the Pharisee, who embodied the fusion of the Great Commission with the Noahide Commandments as the moral law that guided Christian behavior.

THE DEVELOPMENT OF ISRAEL’S DUAL COURT SYSTEM

So now we know that Paul received a very deep education in Jewish law, from the leading experts in it of his time. Jesus Himself advised His followers to do the things the Pharisees taught, and the Pharisees taught from both the *Torah* and the various oral traditions that were later written down about 200 CE. What were the laws administered in these courts, and how did Israel’s legal system evolve from an idea suggested by Moses’ father-in-law to becoming a system ordained by God and

validated by Jesus?

The story of Israel from the Exodus forward shows that God instructed its leaders to create a court system that was just and fair. As the Hebrews settled in the Land of Canaan, small populations of Gentiles settled within Israel's borders, perhaps as the result of trade. Naturally, they began to get into trouble. Crimes were committed against Jews as well as other Gentiles. The judges of Israel had a mandate from God to judge the people fairly and equitably. Since access to Torah law was only through circumcision and conversion to Judaism, their Gentile residents were subject only to the Noahide laws.

Very early in Israel's development as a nation, then, they utilized a dual court system. In the form of the sacred oral traditions that were put into writing about 200 CE, we have nearly 5,000 years of legal precedence to show how the Jews interpreted both the Noahide laws in Gentile cases and the *Torah's* laws in Jewish cases. This blend of oral and written law is what the Jewish lawyers of Christ's day studied. What Paul knew about Jewish law was not unique. As we have mentioned before, he knew that Adam and Eve and their descendants had only six commandments, Noah had only seven, and that the Ten Commandments with its Sabbath law and the whole morass of the Mosaic Law did not arrive until the time of the Exodus. Therefore, Paul knew that the Gentiles were not allowed to keep the Jewish Sabbath like the Jews upon penalty of death because the Sabbath represented a sign between God and Israel only. If an Israelite were to so much as even touch a Gentile, the Israelite had to undergo a ritual cleansing procedure. How could a Gentile share a Sabbath meal with the Hebrews? One of the functions of the Jewish Sabbath, as well as the dietary laws, was to place a barrier between Jew and Gentile social interaction. God did not want the Jews socializing with the Gentiles because of the temptations to evil that would result. By contrast it is the intent of the Gospel to break down this barrier between Jew and Gentile. Recall the New Testament story of Peter's vision about the unclean animals.

Paul also knew that the courts viewed the Sabbath as a kind of sacred national holiday, such as Americans might think of July 4th. Even wars unessential to national safety were permitted to be launched on the Sabbath, although this fact is not surprising because the Old Testament Canon tells stories of warfare directed by God that appear to have been fought on the Sabbath. In the example that follows from I Kings, we cannot be absolutely positive that the fighting spilled over into the hours of the Sabbath. This is because the Hebrews kept a lunar-based Sabbath. It is possible, then, that if the fighting commenced near the end of the month, there would be some "extra days" left over before the first sighting of the new moon into which this fighting could have extended.

I Kings 20:26-29 (NIV) - The next spring Ben-Hadad mustered the Arameans and went up to Aphek to fight against Israel. ²⁷When the Israelites were also mustered and given provisions, they marched out to meet them. The Israelites camped opposite them like two small flocks of goats, while the Arameans covered the countryside.

²⁸The man of God came up and told the king of Israel, "This is what the Lord says: 'Because the Arameans think the Lord is a god of the hills and not a god of the valleys, I will deliver this vast army into your hands, and you will know that I am the Lord.'"

²⁹For seven days they camped opposite each other, and on the seventh day the battle was joined. The Israelites inflicted a hundred thousand casualties on the Aramean foot soldiers in one day. ³⁰The rest of them escaped to the city of Aphek, where the wall collapsed on twenty-seven thousand of them. And Ben-Hadad fled to the city and hid in an inner room.

In another chapter, we will demonstrate how detached Sabbath-keeping can be from true morality in the discussion of the Sabbath-keeping of Adventists versus the SDA position on involvement in the Civil War, Germany's world wars, and more recently in Rwanda.

EXAMPLES OF LEGAL GUIDELINES FOR THE DUAL COURT SYSTEM

With the background we have established so far, an investigation into what the sacred oral traditions teach about who can keep the Sabbath and how it should be kept should serve to reinforce the credibility of what we say. Following are the key excerpts. As you will soon see, the Noahide Laws and the Nation of Israel's dual legal system pull out the rug from underneath the idea that the Mosaic Laws ever applied to Gentiles. To begin with, we will establish the basis of the dual court system, which enforced the seven Noahide Laws against resident Gentiles in the Land of Israel. The following are excerpts from the *Mishnah*, which is found in part here:

Here we find the oral law's establishment of a unified court system that enforced the seven Noahide laws regarding resident Gentiles. Now do you see why Ellen refused to plagiarize the section from Edersheim's study of the Old Testament cited at the first of this chapter, and why we are so upset with her failure to steal? Here is the oral law's support of Edersheim's and Martin Luther's descriptions of the metes and bounds of the Seven Noahide Laws:

9.17 What must they do to fulfill their requirement regarding the Law of Justice? They have to set up magistrates and judges in each district to judge the people with regard to these Six Commandments; and they must issue warnings (about them) to the people. A non-Jew who violates one of the Seven Commandments is executed by means of the sword.

Note: One of the "Seven Commandments" was to set up a Court of Justice. Recall that after the flood, God promised Noah that never again would the human race be destroyed by flood. The covenant between Noah and God is found beginning in Genesis 9:5:

I will demand an accounting from every animal. And from each human being, too, I will demand an accounting for the life of another human being. "Whoever sheds human blood, by humans shall their blood be shed, for in the image of God has God made mankind.

As long as Noah and his progeny established an "accounting for the life of another human being," God promised that "Never again will all life be destroyed by the waters of a flood; never again will there be a flood to destroy the earth." A court system that enforced the Noahide Laws was the human obedience component of this covenant.

The *Mishnah* thus puts the legal "flesh and blood" on the "bones" of the Noahide Covenant found in the *Book of Genesis*. It demanded the establishment of courts of justice. The other six laws governed human behavior. The following excerpts from Jewish oral tradition are consistent with the theme of the *Book of Genesis*, which never mentions any patriarch keeping the Sabbath; being commanded to keep the Sabbath; or being instructed on how to keep the Sabbath:

9.1 Adam, the first man, was commanded with six commandments: 1) idolatry, 2) "blessing" (euphemistically) the Name (of G-d), 3) murder, 4) illicit sexual relations, 5) thievery and, 6) establishing a system of justice.

9.2 Even though all of these have been received as a Tradition from Moses our Teacher and we can understand the rationale for them, nevertheless, from (verses in) the Torah (we learn that) it was these that they were commanded. A seventh commandment forbidding the eating of a limb torn from a live animal was added for Noah, as it says, "Even flesh, life is in the blood, do not eat of it" (Genesis 9:4).

9.3 These commandments were universally applicable—until Abraham. With Abraham, circumcision was also commanded and he prayed Shacharis (the Morning Prayer). Isaac separated out a tithe and added another prayer in the afternoon and, with Jacob, the prohibition against eating the sciatic nerve was added, as was the Maariv (Evening) Prayer. In Egypt, Amram was commanded with other precepts and, with Moses our Teacher, the *Torah* was completed.

If it is starting to impress you that the moral laws given to both Adam and Noah did not contain a Sabbath requirement, you are on the right track. No where in the *Book of Genesis* is the Sabbath mentioned. No patriarch prior to Sinai is mentioned keeping it, much less receiving instructions on how to implement its provisions. Contrast that with the detailed rules for Sabbath-keeping found in the Mosaic Law. Genesis 17 contains the entire covenant between God and Abraham, which added circumcision to Noah's covenant. The Story of Abraham and his covenant is startling. Abraham is claimed by both Judaism and Islam as the "Father" of their religions. Circumcision was the unique "sign" of the Abrahamic Covenant. In fact, Ishmael (the ancestor of Islam) was circumcised before Isaac (the Father of Judaism). To this day, Islam insists on circumcision of a baby boy on the 8th day. This is reflected in the *Mishnah*:

10.10 Our Sages have said that the sons of Ketura, those who are the descendants of Abraham who came after Ishmael and Isaac, are obligated with (the Commandment of) circumcision. However, today, since the descendants of Ishmael have commingled with the children of Ketura, all of them are obligated with

circumcision on the eighth day. However, they are not executed.

NEVER have Muslims demanded to share the special sign that God gave only to the Children of Israel – the Sabbath! In fact, the Muslim day of worship is Friday, which developed because that was the day when all Muslim merchants met in Mecca to take advantage of the trade with the Jews on the day before the Sabbath day. Friday became the traditional Muslim worship day due to the weekly shopping needs of Jews! Similarly, Christians never kept the Sabbath, because the “sign” of the New Covenant was the Eucharist. Thus, the historical basis for the Noahide Laws is deeply consistent with the **Mishnah** and Islamic and Christian history, as well as the **Book of Genesis**. This comprehensive body of law’s existence demolishes the following claim of Ellen White:

The holy Sabbath looked glorious—a halo of glory was all around it. I saw that the Sabbath was not nailed to the cross. If it was, the other nine commandments were; and we are at liberty to go forth and break them all, as well as to break the fourth. I saw that God had not changed the Sabbath, for He never changes. But the Pope had changed it from the seventh to the first day of the week; for he was to change times and laws.

<http://text.egwwritings.org/publication.php?pubtype=Periodical&bookCode=Broadside3&year=1847&month=April&day=7>

Note: There is no record in Genesis of Adam, Noah, Abraham, Isaac or Joseph receiving a copy of the Ten Commandments, as Moses received on Mount Sinai. It should now be clear that the Ten Commandments were part and parcel of a comprehensive legal system involving 613 Commandments that was a special sign between God and the Children of Israel only. Amazingly, even Muslims recognize this obvious and irrefutable fact! And the “dual court system” that is fleshed out in the **Mishnah** applied the same standards to the Gentiles in cases of murder, theft, sexual immorality, dishonesty and idolatry that were applied to Jewish defendants.

God’s commands regarding the conquest of the Lands of Canaan and the Heathen enemies of Israel are deeply intertwined with the Noahide Commandments:

5.4 It is a Positive Commandment to exterminate the Seven Nations, as it says, “surely, you shall destroy them” (Deut. 20:17). Anyone who comes across any of these nations and fails to kill them violates a Negative Commandment, as it says, “you shall not keep alive any soul” (Deut. 20:16). Nonetheless, they have already all been destroyed and their memory forgotten.

If Ancient Judaism had a “missionary mandate,” it was to spread the Noahide Commandments to the Heathen nations that they conquered. Instead of a genocidal god that pitilessly ordered the slaughter of man, woman, and child; the **Mishnah** presents a loving God that gave the Heathen world the choice of adopting the rudiments of civilization and sanity via Jewish conquest:

6.1 War is not conducted against anyone in the world until they are first offered peace (and refuse it), whether this is a Discretionary war or a War of *Mitzvoh*, as it says, “when you come close to the city to fight with it, you shall call to it to make peace” (Deut. 20:10). If they make peace and accept the Seven Commandments incumbent upon the Sons of Noah (Gentiles), none of them are killed, but they must pay us tribute, as it says, “and they shall be for you a tributary, and they shall serve you” (Deut. 20:11).

6.5 If they do not come to peaceful terms or they make peace but do not accept the Seven Commandments, we engage in war against them and slay all their adult males. We take all their money and children as spoils. We do not kill the women or minors, as it says, “the women and the children” (see Deut. 20:14 and 2:34) which means the male children.

Rulings of the Jewish courts clearly subordinated the Sabbath to the needs of warfare, including wars that had no colorable connection to national self-defense or the commands of God. Even so-called “discretionary wars” trumped the Sabbath. This is analogous to the Sabbath’s subordination to the mandatory circumcision that was performed on the 8th day on Jewish baby boys:

6.15 We may besiege a non-Jewish city (even) on [Sabbath], and we may make war with them even on [Sabbath], as it says, “until it falls” (Deut. 20:20). We do battle on [Sabbath] whether it is a War of *Mitzvoh* or a Discretionary War.

Women who were taken into captivity as a result of the Jewish nation conquering a Heathen one went through an indoctrination in an attempt to convert them to following the Noahide Commandments:

8.9 If (at first) she does not want to convert, (we) talk with her repeatedly for twelve months. If she still doesn't want to (fully) convert, she may accept the Seven Noahide commandments, and he sends her away on her own. She then has the same status as any other resident convert. He cannot marry her, for we cannot marry anyone who has not fully converted.

The treatment of a captive Gentile woman who refused to adopt the Noahide Commandments refutes Ellen's contention that Idolatry would be tolerated in the absence of the Ten Commandments. Nor is the following capable with Adventism's wistful, oft-stated contention that the Sabbath applied to Gentiles as much as to Jews:

8.11 A Woman of Beauty who does not want to forsake (her) idolatry after the twelve months is executed. Similarly, we do not make a treaty with a city which came and made peace with us until they completely relinquish their idolatry, destroy its places, and accept the rest of the Commandments commanded of the Sons of Noah. For any non-Jew who is under our jurisdiction and fails to accept the Noahide Commandments is executed.

Both Moses's statement in **Deuteronomy** 5 and Paul's restatement of those facts in **Galatians** 3 are unambiguously consistent with this excerpt from the **Mishnah**:

8.12 Moses our Teacher did not bequeath the Torah and the Commandments to anyone but to Israel, as it says, "the Heritage of the Congregation of Jacob" (Deut. 33:4), and to anyone from the other nations who wishes to convert, as it says, "as you, as a convert" (Numbers 15:15). However, no one who does not want to convert is forced to accept the *Torah* and the Commandments.

Next, oral tradition integrates the Noahide Laws with the Jewish Nation's mandate to destroy the heathen nations. Note again how the omission of the Sabbath from this mandate is painfully-obvious:

8.13 Moses our Teacher was commanded by the Almighty to compel the world to accept the Commandments of the Sons of Noah. Anyone who fails to accept them is executed.

Anyone who does accept them upon himself is called a Convert Who May Reside Anywhere. He must accept them in front of three wise and learned Jews. However, anyone who agrees to be circumcised and twelve months have elapsed and he was not as yet circumcised is no different than any other member of the nations of the world.

Contrary to Ellen's views, there was no religious freedom in the Nation of Israel or in the lands conquered by it. The Noahide Laws emphatically prohibited Idolatry within Israel's borders:

10.4 We ignore the request of a non-Jew who had converted and was circumcised and immersed, and now wishes to turn away from G-d and change his status to Resident Convert as he was before. Rather, he is to conduct himself like any other Jew, or he will be executed. A child can annul his conversion when he grows up if he had been immersed by the Court when he was a minor. He may only become a Resident Convert. However, if he didn't annul his conversion at that time, he cannot do so later, and he becomes a Righteous Convert."

<http://halakhah.com/rst/kingsandwars.pdf>

The 7 Noahide Commandments were similar to modern-day laws of military occupation under the Geneva Convention, and vigorously-enforced in lands conquered by the Children of Israel. They were enforced against the conquered Gentiles by the Jewish courts. A "Righteous Gentile" – one who agreed to be bound by the 7 Noahide Laws – received all of the rights and privileges of a Jew, and conveniently avoided that fateful meeting with the grinning rabbi and the dull circumcision knife. Bonus! We have cited the comprehensive laws governing conduct of warfare and the law that governed the conduct of the Jewish kings, which also had deep implications for the status of Gentiles in lands occupied by Israel.

We now turn to the nub of the issue: simply put, Gentiles who attempted to read the *Torah* or keep the Sabbath were to be put to death. And as we have already proven, the Jewish courts that would put a Gentile to death for observing the Sabbath were carrying out the expressed will of God in ways that were explicitly endorsed by Moses, Jesus and Paul:

10.11 A non-Jew who busied himself with Torah is liable with his life. He must involve himself in their Seven Commandments only. Similarly, a non-Jew who “rested” as one would on [Sabbath], even on a weekday, is liable with the death penalty. There is no reason to mention (that he is culpable) if he invented his own holiday.

10.12 The principle here is that we do not permit them to make a new religion and create new commandments for themselves based on their own reasoning. They may only become Righteous Converts and accept upon themselves all the Commandments, or they must observe their own (Seven) Laws only, and not add or detract from them. If a non-Jew busied himself with Torah or made [Sabbath] or made up something new, we give him lashes and punish him and tell him that he is liable with the death penalty for doing this. But he is not executed.”

<http://halakhah.com/rst/kingsandwars.pdf>

Is this reason why no Gentile is ever mentioned keeping the Sabbath anywhere in the Old or New Testament? In addition to these passages from the *Mishnah*, several decisions in the *Talmud* affirm that a Gentile who attempts to study the Law on their own or keep the Sabbath should be put to death. *CF*: "A Gentile observing the Sabbath deserves death" (Sanhedrin 58b). The *Torah* was exclusively "the inheritance of the congregation of Jacob," therefore a Gentile reading the *Torah* on his own should be put to death. (Sanhedrin 59a) With these stern punishments to be levied on Gentiles for Sabbath-keeping and *Torah* reading, one is probably curious why the Old Testament was even included in the Christian Bible. The early church fathers were simply unanimous on this issue: The written *Torah* was included in the Biblical canon and was recommended for study for its typology (“foreshadowing”) of Jesus Christ. Justin Martyr, a second-century Christian polemicist and martyr for the faith, was particularly adamant on this point. The Old Testament is packed full of these “shadows” of Jesus Christ that Paul mentions in Colossians 2. However, the *Mishnah* and the *Talmud* were NOT included in the Christian Bible, since Christians who compiled the Canon recognized that Christians were clearly relieved from any obligation to observe the Mosaic Law, including the Sabbath. The Old Testament was never included in the Christian Bible as a comprehensive law primer. That would have made as much sense as including the statutes of Egypt, or the legal rulings of Greece. You cannot observe the Mosaic Law with only the Old Testament as your guide, without violating Deuteronomy 17 and Jesus’ explicit command in Matthew 23.

Jesus’ clear endorsement of the oral law dovetails with the strong Old Testament basis for the establishment of the Jewish Courts of Justice by God Himself. Those courts produced the *Mishnah* and the *Talmud* as the written record of their decisions. When all of these facts and authority are read in light of the *Genesis* accounts of the Noahide and Abrahamic covenants, the accuracy of Edersheim’s historical masterpiece in regard to the role of the Noahide laws in Ancient Israel is established. The hand of God is obvious throughout the seamless history of the amazing Noahide Laws. The love of God for the Heathen shines forth. There is a moral standard for them, and they can be eternally saved without keeping the Sabbath. These laws were the laws of Noah and Abraham that predated Moses’ momentous trip up Mt. Sinai. We cannot say it better than Moses himself did:

Deuteronomy 5:

Moses summoned all Israel and said: Hear, Israel, the decrees and laws I declare **in your hearing today**. Learn them and be sure to follow them. ²The Lord our God made a covenant with us at Horeb. ³**It was not with our ancestors[a] that the Lord made this covenant, but with us, with all of us who are alive here today.**

Could Moses have made himself any clearer in emphasizing that the Mosaic Laws and the Sabbath simply did not exist before Sinai? And yet God’s covenant with Noah and Abraham did not leave those patriarchs in a state of lawlessness and immorality in the absence of the Ten Commandments as Ellen so dishonestly inferred.

Moses’ unambiguous statement that the Mosaic Law, which included the Sabbath, did not exist prior to Sinai is powerfully restated and reaffirmed in **Galatians 3:16-18**:

¹⁶The promises were spoken to Abraham and to his seed. Scripture does not say “and to seeds,” meaning many people, but “and to your seed,” [i] meaning one person, who is Christ. ¹⁷What I mean is this: **The law, introduced 430 years later, does not set aside the covenant previously established by God and thus do away with the promise.** ¹⁸For if the inheritance depends on the law, then it no longer

depends on the promise; but God in his grace gave it to Abraham through a promise.

SUMMARY

Paul's statement in **Galatians** is seamlessly consistent with the amazing and revolutionary decision of the circa AD 50 Council of Jerusalem, which refused to apply the Mosaic Law— and the Sabbath— to the Gentile Christian converts at the church at Antioch. It was obvious to every Apostle at that fateful Council - discussed in Acts 15 - that the Mosaic Law was incompatible with The Great Commission; the unambiguous Commandment of Jesus Christ to take the Gospel to all the "Nations" of the World. There was an earlier set of ancient laws that would guide the moral conduct of Gentile Christian converts, which after all were explicitly designed by God for the Gentiles and Patriarchs who were not part of the Sinai covenant. The Noahide Laws provide a unifying theme of God's undying Grace throughout the Bible, the *Mishnah* and the *Talmud*. The early Christian church was primarily a missionary church to the Gentiles, ignited by vibrant Gentile churches that quickly eclipsed their Jewish foundation at Jerusalem. Those Gentile "nations" mentioned in The Great Commission are one and the same as the "Nations" mentioned repeatedly with such care and inspiration in the mighty God-given **Mishnah**, and which through God's grace were gifted with a remarkable set of laws that stretched back to Noah. The **Talmud** sets forth a stirring prayer that was used to bless the sessions of the Jewish courts:

May it be Your will, Lord my God and God of my fathers, that in Your great kindness You will shine upon the holy souls that renew themselves as "birds" and sing and praise and pray on behalf of the holy people Israel. Master of the world, gather and take in those sacred "birds" to the holy place of which it is said: No eye has seen it, except You, O God. May it be Your will, Lord my God and God of my fathers, that if I, Your servant, am of the tribe of Judah, the Torah section of whose prince I have recited today, then may there shine upon me all the holy "sparks" and all the holy lights which are contained in the holiness of this tribe, to understand and comprehend in Your Torah and in the fear of You, to do Your will all the days of my life—I and my children and my children's children, from now and forever. Amen.

http://www.chabad.org/library/article_cdo/aid/495714/jewish/The-Nasi-in-English.htm

When the Great Commission was liberated from the dead hand of the obsolete Mosaic Law by the revolutionary decree of the apostles in Acts 15, the Gentile nations became the magnificent and brave vanguard of the Lord Jesus Christ, and embodied the "holy sparks" and the "holy lights" of this timeless prayer. Acts 15 - and its incorporation of the Noahide Laws into the Great Commission - lit the fuse that blew the ancient pagan world to smithereens. The Apostle's dedication to forgo their lives and sacred honor in this effort demonstrates that nothing - including the Mosaic Law - would be allowed to get in the way of spreading The Christ, "The Medicine of Immortality" to the sin-sick, diseased pagan world. They were men on an urgent mission.

Meanwhile, as former independent SDA theologian, Robert D. Brinsmead, pointed out in his 1980's essay, "**Sabbatarianism Re-examined**," the Jewish churches which insisted on clinging to the Sabbath and Law-keeping quickly abandoned the Faith, evolved into the Divinity-of-Christ-denying Gnostics and Ebionites; disappeared from the world of Christianity, and nearly disappeared from history itself. As Brinsmead so succinctly pointed out, the Sabbath-keeping Christians were not the heroes of Christianity. They became its worst enemies.

For the Gospel-based, Gentile churches, there was no time to lose. The message of Christ's Divinity and His saving power of Grace must be carried to the entire world in fulfillment of The Great Commission.

CHAPTER TWENTY-TWO
WHAT DID JESUS SAY?

William H Hohmann

WHAT DID JESUS SAY?

Wm. Hohmann

There has been of late a popular Christian practice of asking, in relation to one's Christian walk and behavior, "What Would Jesus Do". Bracelets with the initials WWJD were quite the fad for awhile in this regard. So then, in relation to the Sabbath I ask the logical question, "What did Jesus Say?"

When it comes to important doctrinal issues, we should consider the teachings and commands of Christ above all else. We should not assume that Jesus will automatically concur with Moses and the prophets, thereby defaulting to those authors, with the potential of overlooking something important said by Jesus the Christ.

Sabbatarians are quick to claim their Jesus kept the ten commandments, with an emphasis on keeping the Sabbath. They further claim that if He had indeed broken any of the Ten Commandment laws, He would have sinned as a result, and would have disqualified Himself as our Savior. With this rationale, the Sabbath is kept intact and inviolate for all, for Christ is, after all, our example, and we can't have a Christ who sinned. If He kept the Sabbath, we should keep the Sabbath; goes the rationale. If John wrote in John 5:18 that Jesus "broke" the Sabbath, John must have meant something else other than Jesus actually "breaking" the Sabbath.

But this begs the question, can God sin? Or, to word this another way, can God sin against Himself? If God could sin, then how could He be God? God is perfect. It is man who is imperfect and subject to sin, and not God. This creates a dilemma of sorts for the Sabbatarian. If Jesus is God, and cannot sin, yet He broke the Sabbath, then there is a problem with one's understanding of the Sabbath law, and not God. The solution grasped by the Sabbatarians was therefore to deny the divinity of Christ as God. Your first reaction may well be one of incredulity that I would make such a statement, but upon careful examination of the beliefs and teachings of Sabbatarian groups, that is exactly what they have done, albeit surreptitiously. Read on.

I would point out here that in all "Christian" cults, Jesus/God is diminished in some fashion in order to emphasize their distinctive, whatever that might be. With Sabbatarian organizations, it is, obviously, the Sabbath, along with any other pet doctrines they hold dear that are not clearly found in the Scriptures.

When it came to the Sabbath, Jesus went out of His way to heal people on the Sabbath. One of His greatest miracles was that of healing a man born blind on a Sabbath. It was a miracle that would be extremely difficult to deny, perhaps even more-so than raising one from the dead, for it would be a relatively easy thing to claim the dead person was not really dead after all to begin with, through a variety of circumstances and/or trickery. But a man born blind, known to untold numbers of people over time, would be nearly impossible to fake.

The religious leaders of the time were faced with what seemed like an impossible dilemma. They agreed and understood that only one who was not a sinner could have performed such a miracle, yet they held Jesus to be a sinner. What possible "work around" was available to them? The modern Sabbatarian work around is to claim Jesus did not really break the Sabbath. They claim that what He broke or transgressed were the added prohibitions; the "fence around the law" that the Jewish religious leaders had created in order to further prevent one from actually breaking the Sabbath, having given their added laws the weight of Scripture so as to conclude the transgression of their Sabbath laws was to also transgress the Sabbath itself.

This indeed sounds reasonable and plausible. The problem with it though is that it is not true. The law was quite specific regarding the Sabbath in that no one was to do "any" work. The modern day Sabbatarian Pharisees resort to Clintonian semantics in order to circumvent the plain wording of Scripture. "Any" does not really mean "any." As evidence, they cite Jesus' statement regarding pulling a sheep out of a ditch on a Sabbath, with no sin being inferred, but it was still a case of breaking the Sabbath. There were times when a justification existed for breaking the Sabbath, even as David was deemed guiltless when he and those with him ate the consecrated show-bread which was not lawful for him to eat. Such explanations however go way beyond the Sabbatarian's comprehension, as I will show shortly.

The problem is further compounded by Jesus' declaration that His healing people on the Sabbath was indeed "work" and that in relation to the Sabbath, even the (His) Father in Heaven, works.

Sabbatarians today insist we follow the supposed example of Jesus in keeping the Sabbath. Jesus was following the example of the Father by working on the Sabbath.

There was tacit agreement that the Father in Heaven did work, always, but they had to turn all this back on Jesus in order to discredit Him, seeing as they already perceived of Him as being a sinner, and His attempt here at associating Himself with the Father in Heaven was the distraction they needed to take the emphasis off of the Father and on to Jesus working on the Sabbath.

The Sabbath was not greater than the Father, but it had to be demonstrated that the law -- the Sabbath -- was greater than the Son.

So a miracle, that could only be attributed to God, was denied in favor of the Sabbath law. The Sabbath became greater than the Lord of the Sabbath. The law, and the Sabbath, were their true "god". They served the law. You are the servant of the one you serve. The law and Sabbath were held in the highest regard and esteemed above all else. The law and Sabbath were their idol, and "God" backed them up in all this, for it was, after all, "God's law and God's Sabbath".

Our modern Sabbatarians are quick to point out that Jesus is the "Lord of the Sabbath" and that it would be incongruous for the Lord of the Sabbath to "do away" with the Sabbath. Contextually though, Jesus referred to Himself as being Lord "also" of the Sabbath. Nothing is outside His purview. With this understanding, that there is nothing Jesus is *not* Lord of, it is interesting that the modern day Sabbatarian argument is that Jesus is not "Lord of the first day of the week" aka "Sunday". It is claimed by many Sabbatarians, especially the Seventh-day Adventists, that this day was stolen from God by pagans for pagan sun worship, thereby forever spoiling it for any godly purpose, so much so that anyone today worshipping on this day is perceived as having received the mark of the beast of Revelation upon themselves as a result.

God is diminished in order to proffer a particular belief system. God was too weak to protect one of His days He is the Creator of and Lord of. The almighty Pagans stole that day from God, thereby forever spoiling it for any godly purpose, such as corporate worship of God.

Seeing as Jesus is the "Lord of the Sabbath" we should study the Scriptures to see what Jesus actually had to say and teach in regards to the Sabbath.

Two things of note are discussed by Jesus in relation to the Sabbath.

Judging righteous judgment:

Did not Moses give you the law, and yet none of you keepeth the law? Why go ye about to kill me? ²⁰The people answered and said, Thou hast a devil: who goeth about to kill thee? ²¹Jesus answered and said unto them, **I have done one work, and ye all marvel.** ²²Moses therefore gave unto you circumcision; (not because it is of Moses, but of the fathers;) and ye on the sabbath day circumcise a man. ²³If a man on the sabbath day receive circumcision, that the law of Moses should not be broken; are ye angry at me, because I have made a man every whit whole on the sabbath day? ²⁴Judge not according to the appearance, but judge righteous judgment. – John 7:19-24

Note if you will that Jesus referred to healing a man as "work". What is implied is that the act of performing a circumcision was also "work" – a work that took precedence over the Sabbath requirement to abstain from work.

Understand also that if righteous judgment is being contrasted to judging according to appearance, then to judge according to appearance is to judge unrighteous judgment. Defining this as such is avoided by Sabbatarians, for it exposes their belief and practices as unrighteousness. A man is judged by them as guilty of sin should a man be found working on the sabbath; the same work that on another day would not be sin. This is an enormous departure from the old covenant laws, especially the Sabbath law. It is no longer the action that follows intent one judges, but the intent only, for God, ultimately, judges the heart and intent of heart, and this principle holds true with God even under the old covenant. This is covered in greater detail below.

It is lawful to do good on the Sabbath:

And, behold, there was a man which had his hand withered. And they asked him, saying, Is it lawful

to heal on the sabbath days? that they might accuse him. ¹¹And he said unto them, What man shall there be among you, that shall have one sheep, and if it fall into a pit on the sabbath day, will he not lay hold on it, and lift it out? ¹²How much then is a man better than a sheep? **Wherefore it is lawful to do well on the sabbath days.** – Matthew 12:10-12

And it came to pass, that he went through the corn fields on the sabbath day; and his disciples began, as they went, to pluck the ears of corn. ²⁴And the Pharisees said unto him, Behold, why do they on the sabbath day that which is not lawful? ²⁵And he said unto them, Have ye never read what David did, when he had need, and was an hungred, he, and they that were with him? ²⁶How he went into the house of God in the days of Abiathar the high priest, and did eat the shewbread, which is not lawful to eat but for the priests, and gave also to them which were with him? ²⁷And he said unto them, The sabbath was made for man, and not man for the sabbath: ²⁸Therefore the Son of man is Lord also of the sabbath. – Mark 2:23-28

And he entered again into the synagogue; and there was a man there which had a withered hand. ²And they watched him, whether he would heal him on the sabbath day; that they might accuse him. ³And he saith unto the man which had the withered hand, Stand forth. ⁴And he saith unto them, **Is it lawful to do good on the sabbath days, or to do evil? to save life, or to kill?** But they held their peace. – Mark 3:1-4

If this declaration were not in Scripture, and asked by any critic of Sabbatarianism today, that person would quickly be accused of asking a loaded question. But it is not so easily dismissed, seeing as it was asked by Jesus of His antagonists.

Like the conflict between the Ordinance of Circumcision and the Ordinance of the Sabbath, we see a similar conflict between the command of Moses not to do any work on it with Jesus' statement that it is lawful to do good works on it.

Is it any surprise that the modern day Sabbatarian leans towards Moses and their own contrived list of what is permissible and what is not in an attempt to make it look like they are accommodating and incorporating Jesus' instructions?

Here then is where the Sabbatarian dares not tread. If it is lawful to do good on the Sabbath, and not lawful to do evil, and seeing as the Hebrews were prohibited from working on that day, then the conclusion is obvious; their works were evil. Being faithless, stiff-necked and rebellious were their hallmarks.

Do we have Scriptural backing for this conclusion? Yes, we do.

For the children of Israel and the children of Judah have only done evil before me from their youth: for the children of Israel have only provoked me to anger with the work of their hands, saith the LORD. – Jeremiah 32:30

Blessed is the man that doeth this, and the son of man that layeth hold on it; that keepeth the sabbath from polluting it, and keepeth his hand from doing any evil. – Isaiah 56:2

We also have this relevant Scripture:

And GOD saw that the wickedness of man was great in the earth, and that every imagination of the thoughts of his heart was only evil continually. – Genesis 6:5

According to this, those people were destroyed in the flood because of their evil hearts and the resultant thoughts and imaginations of their hearts. This is a departure from the Sabbatarian paradigm where it is the transgression of that "Ten Commandment" law as cited in the flawed translation found in I John 3:4 in the KJV that results in sin and the resultant condemnation.

And he said, That which cometh out of the man, that defileth the man. ²¹For from within, out of the heart of men, proceed evil thoughts, adulteries, fornications, murders, ²²Thefts, covetousness, wickedness, deceit, lasciviousness, an evil eye, blasphemy, pride, foolishness: ²³All these evil things come from within, and defile the man. – Mark 7:20-23

What is too often overlooked in this context is how God judges mankind. It is what Jesus referred to as "righteous judgment" which he contrasted to judging according to appearance. Sabbatarians look to the law of the Sabbath and judge according

to appearance. The religious leaders of Jesus' time did exactly the same. When a Sabbatarian claims one sins by "breaking" the Sabbath, unrighteous judgment results. The emphasis is placed on the action and the intent of heart is ignored. You are denied a justification for your actions solely by the whim of those who administer the Sabbath law. If you were the typical Sabbatarian legalist, judging according to appearance allows you to ignore your own heart and intent of heart. It allows you to use the Sabbath law as a means of persecuting your enemies, all the while cloaking your own evil heart of hatred. An evil motive is hidden, not by the one breaking the Sabbath, but by the one upholding the Sabbath law.

Understand; Jesus went out of His way to work on the Sabbath. And being God, His works could only be good works. He "broke" the Sabbath, not due to evil motive as the Pharisees and other religious leaders insisted, but through a godly motive of love and compassion.

Are we not called to emulate Him? What then of the work of employment? Sabbatharians desperately want to draw the line here when confronted with this good versus evil argument. They claim the end result is that no Sabbath is kept as a result. Well, that is the logical end point! Even our works of employment, being a Christian, are good works in the eyes of God. Otherwise, what do you have? God judging according to appearance, and not righteous judgment. This is what is untenable. The Sabbath letter of the law gives way to the spirit of the law; good works, performed every day for the furtherance of a Christian life. The reality here is that adherence to the Sabbath letter of the law is completely incompatible with real Christianity.

Sabbatarians are fond of citing James chapter 2 where it says, "faith without works is dead". What then of faith and works on the Sabbath? If there are no works of faith; good works on the Sabbath, then guess what? Dead faith one day a week. Keeping the Sabbath in the old covenant letter of the law results in a faithless state of being. Small wonder Paul wrote that the law is not of faith; a statement of fact incomprehensible to a Sabbatarian.

For we are his workmanship, created in Christ Jesus unto good works, which God hath before ordained that we should walk in them. – Ephesians 2:10

That the man of God may be perfect, thoroughly furnished unto all good works. – 2 Timothy 3:17

Who gave himself for us, that he might redeem us from all iniquity, and purify unto himself a peculiar people, zealous of good works. – Titus 2:14

One of the nearly innumerable claims/accusations of Sabbatharians in regards to the Sabbath is that the devil will stop at nothing in order to get people to transgress the law, especially the Sabbath. It is one of those claims designed to psychologically instill both fear and pride in the Sabbatarian. Fear of transgressing the Sabbath; pride in believing they alone "figured it out with God's help" so as to avoid sinning against "God's Sabbath".

But what is it that the devil *really* wants? He wants people under condemnation, and the law serves that purpose quite nicely. It is, after all, what the apostle Paul called the ministration of death and condemnation. All who lived by the law were condemned by the law. All who lived by the law broke the law. The law was, and is, a "dead end".

Sabbatarians believe they have thwarted the wiles of the devil by embracing and keeping the Sabbath. All they have accomplished is to develop a harder heart of stone that works against good works. Any good works they perform are those on their "approved list". There is no personal decision and by extension, no personal responsibility for making said decision, in an attempt to remain safe in the never ending quest against sin; a vain pursuit that takes one's focus and goal off of Christian development and growth. One "buries" their talent/pound.

The devil desires Christians, who are not under the Law, hence not under the Sabbath, to abandon good works. The Sabbath now serves his purpose in this regard also. If a Sabbatarian does a "good work" from the approved list, then that work is not motivated by the Spirit, but a list. "I can do this because it is approved by my church. I cannot do this other thing because it is not approved by my church." There is no true moral agency involved. Motive of heart is supplanted by motive through permission or restriction. If they were truly motivated by the Spirit, there would be absolutely no need for a list of what is permissible and by default, what is not.

Everything done by Christ is undone by Sabbatarianism. The Sabbatarian theological model creates a God of contradiction thereby removing righteous judgment from the equation. Through the redefinition of sin and how God judges, the gospel itself is the real casualty of the Sabbatarian belief system. A Christian, called to do good works always, and who is seen as

being dead to that law, is resurrected back to it for the sole purpose of putting him or her back under the Sabbath and the resultant restrictions against "work" unless specifically addressed by the Pharisaical Sabbatarian leadership; their yardstick religion of do's and don'ts. The works of a Christian, wrought in God, are declared sin by them if wrought on a Sabbath. The Sabbatarian declares, through the use of deceptive reasoning and manipulation, that evil is good, and good is evil. Woe unto them!

Everything is backwards in the Sabbatarian theological worldview. The Hebrews sinned by working on the Sabbath because their works were evil. Only by not working were they able to refrain from violating the sanctity of the Sabbath. If by chance they did an act of mercy or compassion, such as pulling an animal out of a ditch or pit, it was a work justifiable with no sin being associated with the action. God judged the heart and intent of heart even then as He does now. The Sabbath was "broken" but the transgressor was not deemed guilty, simply because of the situation of the heart. GOD DOES NOT CONDEMN ONE FOR DOING GOOD, EVER. To do so would be for God to violate His own nature. What then does this say about the "God" that the Sabbatarians perceive? It is a twisted, distorted, perception that produces an evil "God" who maintains a double standard and judges according to appearance and whim, just like people, or more precisely, just like Sabbatarians. Their "God" is an anthropomorphic creation of their own perversions. They make God over into their own image.

In II Corinthians chapter 3, the apostle Paul makes an observation that Sabbatarians reject out of hand, simply because they believe it impossible to be true, yet there it is, written for all to see. Those who remain in the writings and teachings of Moses have a veil before their eyes, blinding them from seeing the true Jesus. Their Jesus kept the law. Their Jesus kept the Sabbath. Their Jesus judges according to appearance, for that is what the law of Moses is all about, for the most part.

Did Moses write down and teach the Ten Commandments? Yes, but to the Sabbatarian, this can't possibly be what Paul was writing about. The Sabbatarian is under a strong delusion, even a curse, for the end result of the Sabbatarian theology is ultimately a false gospel. They say they believe and teach the gospel; salvation as a matter of faith only, yet disguise their true beliefs through semantics. You have heard the arguments and rationalizations in order to justify keeping the Sabbath, as though all the law were embodied in the Sabbath. One need only ask a simple question in order to verify their true belief regarding salvation, being works oriented and a false gospel.

What happens to your salvation should you quit keeping the Sabbath?

The most often heard response is that one would not be permitted entry into paradise should they abandon the law and begin a life of murder, adultery, theft, etc. and that the Sabbath is no different. Thus they admit to their false gospel through this back door rationalization of their true belief.

Murder is an act of hatred. Hatred is the spirit of murder. Violating any of those other laws is a reflection of a godless spirit. Violating the Sabbath and being guilty was done by being of the same spirit. Having God place His "Law" within the believer; His Holy Spirit; that "new heart of flesh", changes the dynamics. The believer's motivation is from the Spirit, and not the flesh. One's motivation is to good works. The Sabbatarian insists one is still motivated by the flesh. Why? Because this is all they truly know.

Are your works good, or evil?

CHAPTER TWENTY-THREE
HISTORY'S GREATEST RELIGIOUS "COVER-UP"
Jesus Working On The Sabbath

by Larry Dean J.D.

HISTORY'S GREATEST RELIGIOUS "COVER-UP"

Jesus Working On The Sabbath

Larry Dean

Conspiracy theories are fun, and popular. No major event in the world can escape being analyzed as the result of some devious, dark conspiracy nowadays. The popular television program *The X-Files* explored the possibility of a decades-long interstellar alien-abduction effort that was being controlled by an alphabet-soup-governmental-agency conspiracy that "explained" how everything from the Kennedy Assassination to 9-11 were the result of this alien/human joint conspiracy. The Truth? "It's Out There." The dark *Cigarette Man* was the ringleader and *eminence grise* of these anonymous sinister forces.

Guess what? Seventh Day Adventists have joined the fear-and conspiracy-theory-mongering bandwagon with two recent videos of their prophecy seminars appropriately-titled *History's Greatest Religious Cover-up*. It turns out the "truth" isn't "out there."

It's now on Youtube:

<https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=9ov5UljMxro> <https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=wCotpTEwdI0>

The long and short of it? These Adventist videos argue that a centuries long Papal/Pagan, Rome/Jesuit/ Unidentified-Others conspiracy "changed the Sabbath day to Sunday." To put it in colorful and popular recent conspiratorial terms, these videos argue that a papal conspiracy assassinated the Sabbath from the Grassy Knoll. But what if the Sabbath was destroyed by a lone gunman with a magic bullet? Or was the Sabbath abducted by aliens? But what if it was Jesus who squeezed off the Sabbath's mortal head shot from his window perch of the Texas Book Depository? What if he acted alone? And what if Adventists are well-aware of the non-existent historical and Biblical support for their Sabbath-to-Sunday Conspiracy theory?

What if they have unwittingly admitted that Jesus ended the Sabbath all by himself?

William Hohmann has spelled out the sound Biblical Basis for our contention that Jesus willfully broke the Sabbath and provided a full set of examples for us to analyze:

There is no intellectually honest way to get around this fact. There were several occasions when either Jesus or His disciples broke the Sabbath. You can read about two of them in Matthew 12. On one particular Sabbath day, His disciples harvested grain as they walked through a field. Then they went to the synagogue where Jesus healed the man who had a withered hand. In neither case did Jesus deny that they were not really working. In John 5, Jesus healed an invalid at a pool on the Sabbath and was again accused of Sabbath-breaking. Note that John could have said that the Pharisees planned to kill Jesus because they thought He was breaking the Sabbath, but he chose to state that they were trying to kill Him because He had broken the Sabbath.

Unfortunately, proving that Jesus violated the Sabbath by using biblically sound methods of exegesis is the type of proof that is rarely convincing to an Adventist. But what if Adventists have conspired to hide the fact that they agree that Jesus broke the Sabbath? What if Adventists do not believe their own commonly-asserted argument that Jesus did not break the Sabbath, but only demonstrated how to "do good" on it? What if the General Conference of Seventh Day Adventists prohibits their own membership from doing exactly the same kind of "good" on the Sabbath that they claim Jesus taught us to do? It turns out they have.

Jesus was a habitual Sabbath breaker according to Adventist Hospital system policies.

Most of the time Jesus was accused of Sabbath Breaking for healing people. As William Hohmann pointed out, His disciples also harvested grain on the Sabbath in Matthew 12, and in John 5 he told the man "to take up your bed and walk." Both of those actions were blatant examples of violating the 4th Commandment's prohibition against "working" on the Sabbath. Not "working" on the Sabbath is the heart of the 4th Commandment. But Adventists are crafty and fleet-footed skulking creatures. Confront them with the grain harvesting of Matthew 12 or the bed-carrying of John 5, and they will immediately try to change

the subject to discuss the healings that took place on those same days. It just sounds plain awful and cold-hearted to condemn Jesus for healing people on the Sabbath, doesn't it?

Let's take a look at Adventist Hospital policies regarding appropriate medical procedures that can be conducted on Saturdays— the day that they insist, against staggering evidence, is the only proper and sacred day for Christian worship. In light of Adventism's own hospital policies, it is very clear that Adventists tacitly agree that Jesus' four-different Sabbath healings mentioned in scriptures violated the 4th Commandment. The Adventist policies for its Hospitals that govern appropriate Sabbath medical procedures are found here:

<http://www.adventist.org/en/informat...th-observance/>

We will cite to the relevant sections of the General Conference guidelines, and provide some general argument and observation on each section. Then we will apply the Adventist Hospital guidelines to the recorded facts of Jesus' Sabbath healings, and provide an analysis of Adventist sincerity perfidy.

The following applications of Sabbath observance principles are recommended:

Provision A:

Provide emergency medical care willingly and cheerfully whenever needed with high levels of excellence. However, neither Adventist institutions nor physicians and dentists should provide the same office or clinic services on the Sabbath as they do on weekdays.”

As a preliminary observation, it is obvious that ALL of Jesus's healings that took place on the Sabbath would violate the last sentence of that policy statement. NONE of Jesus's healings constituted a legitimate “emergency.” Nobody was dying, or had suffered a serious accidental injury. Most of the people that Jesus healed were people who had been suffering from their ailments for long periods of time. Some of the ailments were lifelong. Some were decade's long. Most of them could be characterized as long-term disabilities. All of the healed people went about living normal lives, in spite of their disabilities. In today's world, they would be put on a long waiting list. If they went to an Adventist emergency room on a Saturday, they would be told to make an appointment with their primary care clinic. Then they would be sent home. None of Jesus's "patients" would qualify for emergency medical care in an Adventist hospital.

Provision B:

Discontinue all routine activities that could be postponed. Usually this means a complete closing of those facilities and departments not immediately related to patient care, and the maintenance of a minimum number of qualified people in other departments to handle emergencies.

In the preceding guideline, Adventist policy demonstrates that they are well-aware that “emergencies” were ALWAYS appropriate on the Sabbath, under EVERY known interpretation of the 4th Commandment prohibition against “work.” Emergency care for the sick and injured is technically “work” under the 4th Commandment, but rabbinical tradition had clearly set forth detailed exceptions for life-saving and emergency care. This was based on the very strong presumption that saving a life was far more important than the Sabbath. As we noted earlier, the Sabbath Law always was shot through with exceptions big enough to drive a Peterbilt truck through. Both discretionary (optional) wars and wars of self-defense were fought on the Sabbath. Circumcision was required to be conducted on the 8th day, Sabbath or no.

The Sabbath had ALWAYS taken back seat to saving a life. Adventism hypocritically adopts those particular "man-made traditions" of the rabbis, while it continues to hypocritically-denounce other explicit Old Testament guidelines of the Sabbath as "man-made traditions!" A full discussion of Ellen White's misconceptions about appropriate conduct can be read in ***The Desire of Ages***, page 204, paragraph 1, Chapter Title: **Bethesda and the Sanhedrin**.

Ellen White specifically rejected the explicit Old Testament prohibitions against lighting fires and carrying loads by pejoratively characterizing them as "man-made traditions!" She simply ignored the Old Testament's requirements of Sabbath sacrifices and the imposition of the death penalty for Sabbath violations. She flatly lied that the Jews had allowed Gentiles to do Sabbath work that was prohibited to a Jew. See the following link:

http://www.chabad.org/library/article_cdo/aid/1140867/jewish/The-Myth-of-the-Shabbos-Goy.htm

Provision C:

Postpone elective diagnostic and therapeutic services. Decisions as to what is necessary or of an emergency nature should be made by the attending physician. If this privilege is abused, it should be dealt with by the hospital administration. Non-administrative institutional employees should not become involved in making these decisions nor should they be obliged to confront the attending physicians. Misunderstandings may be avoided by making it clear in medical staff bylaws that only surgical, diagnostic, or therapeutic procedures which are not postponable because of the condition of the patient, will be done. A clear understanding with all who are appointed to staff membership, at the time of appointment, will do much to avoid misunderstandings and abuses.

ALL of Jesus's healings would now be classified as "elective diagnostic and therapeutic services." Again, **NONE** of Jesus' Sabbath healings were "of an emergency nature." Here, whether a Sabbath procedure is an "emergency" or not is left in the discretion of the "attending physician!" No attempt is made to have that physician's decisions second-guessed by a biblical scholar or theologian. By contrast, under the strict terms of the biblical Sabbath, the Sanhedrin had the power over life and death when it came to determining what a medical emergency represented. This Adventist procedure falls FAR short of the biblical requirement that the Sanhedrin review the Sabbath behavior of a physician because he or she is given unrestrained discretion on what constitutes appropriate Sabbath procedures!

Provision D:

Convenience and elective surgery should be discouraged or limited on Fridays. Procedures thus scheduled allow the patient to be in the hospital over the weekend and hence lose fewer days at work. However, this places the first post-operative day, usually with the most intensive nursing care, on the Sabbath.

Here, the General Conference lets the cat out of the bag. This is nothing short of a grotesque hypocrisy. Probably all of Jesus' Sabbath healings would not be allowed on a **Friday** in an Adventist hospital, let alone on a Saturday!

Next, we turn to the Gospel record to evaluate examples of Jesus' Sabbath healings for analysis, comparison, and contrast with Adventist Hospital policies:

Luke 14

Luke 14:1-4 (NIV) One Sabbath, when Jesus went to eat in the house of a prominent Pharisee, he was being carefully watched. ²There in front of him was a man suffering from abnormal swelling of his body. ³Jesus asked the Pharisees and experts in the law, "Is it lawful to heal on the Sabbath or not?" ⁴But they remained silent. So taking hold of the man, he healed him and sent him on his way.

Larger medical providers in the United States are required to offer telephone advice programs that enable its patients to talk to a nurse for a variety of reasons, including whether or not they should go to the emergency room. The 2012 edition of Julie K. Briggs' highly respected and widely used *Telephone Triage Protocols for Nurses* indicates that in the case of general swelling in the absence of heart disease or symptoms that have developed very recently, such as difficulty breathing, the patient is to seek medical care within 24 hours. This is a conservative summary of what the Briggs protocol indicates. In most cases a telephone triage nurse who took a phone call from a patient complaining of general swelling for many days without any recent changes in condition would instruct the caller to phone his or her clinic for an appointment. There is no indication that an Adventist hospital's emergency room, or any hospital's emergency room for that matter, would admit such a patient to the hospital as the result of an emergency room visit.

At the time Jesus worked this miracle, the Pharisees surely must have recognized that this general chronic body swelling did not represent a life-threatening emergency and understood that Jesus had gone out of His way to demonstrate to them that He was deliberately breaking the Sabbath. There was nothing to debate between Jesus and the Pharisees. Jesus knew He had broken the Sabbath. So did his opponents.

Luke 13

Luke 13:10-13 (NIV) - ¹⁰On a Sabbath Jesus was teaching in one of the synagogues, ¹¹and a woman was there who had been crippled by a spirit for eighteen years. She was bent over and could not

straighten up at all. ¹²When Jesus saw her, he called her forward and said to her, “Woman, you are set free from your infirmity.” ¹³Then he put his hands on her, and immediately she straightened up and praised God. ¹⁴Indignant because Jesus had healed on the Sabbath, the synagogue leader said to the people, “There are six days for work. So come and be healed on those days, not on the Sabbath.”

We do not need to consult a telephone triage protocol for this case. It is clear that if this woman visited an emergency room at an Adventist hospital she would be advised to make an appointment with her primary care provider to get a referral to an orthopedic surgeon. In such cases it can take 30 days or more to get an appointment with a specialist.

Again in this case, Jesus knew He had broken the Sabbath. The Pharisees understood that He had broken the Sabbath.

Jesus never disputed the direct accusation of “working” on the Sabbath, but instead deflected it with some adroit questions. He demanded that the leader analyze it in light of another recognized exception to the Sabbath’s prohibition against “working,” such as the watering of livestock. Non-emergency medical care such as this had never been recognized in Israel as a Sabbath-allowable type of work. It is clear that Jesus did what He did to make a point, and that point was that as God in human flesh, He could do with the Sabbath what He wanted.

John 9

As he went along, he saw a man blind from birth. ² His disciples asked him, “Rabbi, who sinned, this man or his parents, that he was born blind?”

³ “Neither this man nor his parents sinned,” said Jesus, “but this happened so that the works of God might be displayed in him. ⁴ As long as it is day, we must do the works of him who sent me. Night is coming, when no one can work. ⁵ While I am in the world, I am the light of the world.”

⁶ After saying this, he spit on the ground, made some mud with the saliva, and put it on the man’s eyes. ⁷ “Go,” he told him, “wash in the Pool of Siloam”(this word means “Sent”). So the man went and washed, and came home seeing.

⁸ His neighbors and those who had formerly seen him begging asked, “Isn’t this the same man who used to sit and beg?” ⁹ Some claimed that he was.

Others said, “No, he only looks like him.”

But he himself insisted, “I am the man.”

¹⁰ “How then were your eyes opened?” they asked.

¹¹ He replied, “The man they call Jesus made some mud and put it on my eyes. He told me to go to Siloam and wash. So I went and washed, and then I could see.”

¹² “Where is this man?” they asked him.

“I don’t know,” he said.

¹³ They brought to the Pharisees the man who had been blind. ¹⁴ Now the day on which Jesus had made the mud and opened the man’s eyes was a Sabbath. ¹⁵ Therefore the Pharisees also asked him how he had received his sight. “He put mud on my eyes,” the man replied, “and I washed, and now I see.”

¹⁶ Some of the Pharisees said, “This man is not from God, for he does not keep the Sabbath.”

To fix eyes like these in surgery, if it were even possible, would require an entire surgical team in a hospital. Clearly this kind of surgery would not be permissible in an Adventist hospital on a Saturday. Furthermore, TWICE in the text Jesus readily admitted that what He had done was “work,” which is explicitly forbidden on the face of the 4th Commandment. Most revealing about this incident is the fact that the Pharisees could not agree on whether the healing was “sinning.” John unequivocally-rejects the usual Adventist accusation that violating the Sabbath amounts to “sinning.” It turns out that Adventists agree only with some (but not all) of the Pharisees that Sabbath breaking equals “sinning.”

Matthew 12/Luke 6/Mark 3

Mark 3:1-6 (NIV) -Another time Jesus went into the synagogue, and a man with a shriveled hand was there. 2 Some of them were looking for a reason to accuse Jesus, so they watched him closely to see if he would heal him on the Sabbath. 3 Jesus said to the man with the shriveled hand, “Stand up in front of everyone.”

4 Then Jesus asked them, “Which is lawful on the Sabbath: to do good or to do evil, to save life or to kill?” But they remained silent.

5 He looked around at them in anger and, deeply distressed at their stubborn hearts, said to the man, “Stretch out your hand.” He stretched it out, and his hand was completely restored. 6 Then the Pharisees went out and began to plot with the Herodians how they might kill Jesus.

Jesus heals a man’s withered hand on the Sabbath. He readily admitted this was “working.” This is a no-brainer. Nothing about this healing would qualify for an emergency surgery on Saturday in an Adventist Hospital. This is plainly an elective surgery of the most minor kind.

John 5

John 5:1-10 (NIV) - Some time later, Jesus went up to Jerusalem for one of the Jewish festivals. ²Now there is in Jerusalem near the Sheep Gate a pool, which in Aramaic is called Bethesda^[a] and which is surrounded by five covered colonnades. ³Here a great number of disabled people used to lie—the blind, the lame, the paralyzed. [4] ^[b] ⁵One who was there had been an invalid for thirty-eight years. ⁶When Jesus saw him lying there and learned that he had been in this condition for a long time, he asked him, “Do you want to get well?”

⁷“Sir,” the invalid replied, “I have no one to help me into the pool when the water is stirred. While I am trying to get in, someone else goes down ahead of me.”

⁸Then Jesus said to him, “Get up! Pick up your mat and walk.” ⁹At once the man was cured; he picked up his mat and walked.

The day on which this took place was a Sabbath, ¹⁰and so the Jewish leaders said to the man who had been healed, “It is the Sabbath; the law forbids you to carry your mat.”

This is the most aggravated and blatant example of Jesus’ Sabbath Breaking. First, he healed a man of his “lameness,” who had been in that state **for 38 years**. Furthermore, Jesus torpedoed any colorable claim of innocence when he readily-admitted that he was “working,” a clear violation of central prohibition of the 4th Commandment. Can there possibly be any dispute that any surgical procedure warranted for a 38 year-old disability could not be performed in a Seventh Day Adventist Hospital. Then to “throw gasoline on the fire,” Jesus told the man “to take up his bed and walk.” Carrying loads on the Sabbath was repeatedly forbidden in the Old Testament.

LUKE 6:1-5

One Sabbath Jesus was going through the grainfields, and his disciples began to pick some heads of grain, rub them in their hands and eat the kernels. ²Some of the Pharisees asked, “Why are you doing what is unlawful on the Sabbath?” ³Jesus answered them, “Have you never read what David did when he and his companions were hungry? ⁴He entered the house of God, and taking the consecrated bread, he ate what is lawful only for priests to eat. And he also gave some to his companions.” ⁵Then Jesus said to them, “The Son of Man is Lord of the Sabbath.”

It is difficult to ignore the relevance of this Sabbath-breaking incident even though it is not medically related. Adventist hospitals try to do everything possible to get as much of the food ready on Fridays so at least some of the work of food preparation can be avoided on the Sabbath. Harvesting grain is food preparation, and the *Torah* required that food be prepared ahead of time on the Sabbath. His disciples were not priests, and if they went into the temple and ate the shewbread, they would have been in deep trouble. Never the less, in his response to the Pharisees, He met them on their own ground at one level and on His own ground on another. In regard to the latter, He cited His divinity and communicated

the concept to them that as God He would do whatever He pleased with the Sabbath. For all the world it would seem that Jesus was trying to prepare Israel to understand that He was planning to abolish the Sabbath shortly.

CONCLUSION

Jesus broke the Sabbath no less than five times with healings that would *never* be allowed as surgical procedures in an Adventist hospital on a Saturday. His disciples prepared food on the Sabbath— a clear violation of both Torah law and the laws of the sacred oral traditions. There is no possibility the apostles could have witnessed Jesus Christ's repeated and flagrant Sabbath breaking without recognizing that the Sabbath had lost its power over Israel in the Presence of Jesus. In retrospect, we understand that the Sabbath "shadow" lost all validity in the Presence of the living Christ— the Reality which make the shadow of Him even possible.

The anti-Sabbatarian statements of the Apostle Paul in Galatians, Romans, Colossians and Acts 15 simply reflected this pre-existing reality. Acts 15 depicts the circa AD 50's Council of Jerusalem's deliberations, wherein the Apostles ruled that Gentile Christian converts were exempt from the Mosaic Law. By even that early date (roughly two decades after the Resurrection), the Sabbath was already a dead letter, particularly in light of Jesus's chronic and flagrant Sabbath Breaking. By applying Seventh Day Adventism's own hospital policies to the facts of Jesus' Sabbath healings, we absolutely refute Adventism's sinister conspiracy to "cover-up" the truth about the Sabbath. We have caught Adventists trying to talk out of both sides of their mouth at the same time. Jesus deliberately violated the Sabbath with His healings, and He did so in a public and flagrant way to rub the Pharisee's noses in it. By doing so, he nullified it. It was HIS Sabbath to nullify. Any claim that Jesus "sinned" by breaking the Sabbath is a subtle attack on His divinity. He broke His own law, but in doing so He did not sin. To say that He did sin would be to elevate the creation (the Sabbath) over its Creator (Jesus).

Jesus acted alone when he made the Sabbath obsolete. He shot it dead in front of many witnesses. We do not need a pope or anything else to beat a dead horse further.

CHAPTER TWENTY-FOUR
HELLENIZED JEWS, THE SEPTUAGINT AND THE
PASSOVER: ANNIHILATING DR. BACCHIOCCHI'S
JEWISH PERSECUTION THEORY

By Larry Dean, J.D.

JEWISH PERSECUTION THEORY

By Larry Dean, J.D.

It was the colossal failure of Dr. Samuele Bacchiocchi's defense of Sabbatarianism, in his 1977 book, *From Sabbath to Sunday*, to make a convincing case for its theology and historical claims that launched the modern anti-Sabbatarian movement. It was his absurd theological Judaization of Christianity and its slippery historical account of the status of the Sabbath during the first 600 years of the Christian Faith that galvanized the production of the First Edition of *Lying for God* nearly a decade ago. By the time Dr. Bacchiocchi made his debut as a theologian at the Seventh-day Adventist Seminary in Berrien Springs, Michigan at Andrews University, high level Adventist leaders and scholars knew that they were in serious need of a new Sabbath abandonment theory. Not too long afterward, Ellen White's claim that God had showed her that the pope had changed the Sabbath lost all credibility as a result of the revelation in the late 1970's and early 1980's that she habitually borrowed content from other writers while claiming that the information had come to her in vision from God. Seventh-day Adventist leadership apparently had high hopes that Dr. Bacchiocchi would find a plausible blockbuster explanation for Sabbath abandonment during his years as a Ph.D. candidate at the Pontifical Gregorian University at the Vatican, but their hopes were dashed when the best thing he could produce was historically shoddy and blatantly contradicted Ellen White in regard to things she had said came to her in vision.

Bacchiocchi postulated a brand-new theory of Christian Sabbath Abandonment, theorizing that this alleged development occurred in the aftermath of the 135 AD **Bar Kokhba revolt** when Emperor Hadrian outlawed Sabbath-keeping following the third Jewish revolt. Indeed, Sabbath worship was outlawed throughout the Roman Empire when Hadrian issued decrees forbidding the study of the [Torah](#), [Sabbath](#) observance, [circumcision](#), Jewish courts, meeting in [synagogues](#), and other Jewish ritual practices.¹ Bacchiocchi argued that Christian abandonment of Sabbath-keeping was thus universal no later than 135 CE, some 200 years earlier than Ellen White had claimed, since she stated that Emperor Constantine's 321 CE Sunday edict was the precise date when Christianity formally adopted Sunday worship.² White's theory of Sabbath abandonment had been the foundation of the historical claim of Seventh Day Adventism's Sabbatarianism for over 150 years. This theory rested entirely on the credibility of Ellen White's prophetic authority, as even her *de facto* historian, J.N. Andrews, conceded that Sabbath abandonment took place hundreds of years before Constantine. When her credibility was destroyed by a number of revelations about her plagiarism and false prophetic claims during the 1970's and 1980's, the Adventist Church reluctantly but unofficially and quietly adopted Bacchiocchi's novel new "Jewish Persecution" theory as the basis of its Sabbatarianism. There seems to have been a certain amount of awareness among the Adventists that the Jewish Persecution Theory was questionable because other Adventist theologians, as well as the General Conference of Seventh-day Adventists itself, went right to work to develop alternative theories. (These other ideas about how Sunday observance began are examined elsewhere in *Lying for God*.)

Bacchiocchi Gives Short Shrift to the Hellenized Jews

Bacchiocchi played fast and loose with history. It would appear that he sought to create a revisionist history that would support his novel theory of universal Sabbath abandonment by 135 AD. He did this by giving the existence and influence of the Hellenized Jews short shift in his analysis, as well as the role that all Christians played, by their non-participation in the 135 AD Jewish revolt. In doing so he chose to ignore a large body of standard information about Hellenized Jews that has been known to scholars for nearly 2,000 years — facts about them that we believe should have triggered Dr. Bacchiocchi's doctoral dissertation committee to suggest to him that this body of knowledge would seem to invalidate the major premise of his thesis (The Jewish Persecution Theory) "before the horse was even out of the gate."

Bacchiocchi claimed that the Hellenized Jewish Christian converts bore the brunt of the first persecution of Christians by the Jewish authorities in Palestine as reported in Acts 6-8.³ Bacchiocchi curtly dismissed the Hellenized Jews as merely "a non-

¹ <https://www.jewishvirtuallibrary.org/jsource/Judaism/revolt1.html>

² <http://m.egwwritings.org/en/book/1089.608>

³ http://www.friendsofsabbath.org/Further_Research/SDAs/sab2sun.pdf, p. 137

conformist group of Jewish Christians seemingly quite different from the main body of the Church.”⁴ He insisted “that the whole community did not share in the very peculiar and bold ideas of this group [i.e. Hellenists].”⁵ However, then Bacchiocchi turned around and praised the Hellenized Jews for their bold and vocal missionary activity resulting in the evangelization of Samaria (Acts 8:14).⁶ Is it really possible that he was deficient enough in the knowledge of basic world history that he did not understand these implications?

Bacchiocchi argued that these “Christian Hellenists” (Greek-speaking Jews who were actually known as **Hellenized** Jews) “publicly claimed for themselves Jesus’ own freedom with regard to the Sabbath”⁷ and thus adopted Sunday observance. Bacchiocchi dismisses these views as mere “gratuitous conjectures”:

It should be observed that these Hellenists represented only a radical group that was early detached from the mother Church where the Apostles resided. Inasmuch as they were not the spokesmen of the Church, they could hardly have enjoined the Church at large to accept a new day of worship. Moreover, if indeed Sunday observance was one of the distinguishing marks of their religious practices, this would have stirred a sharp controversy within the Church, especially in view of their “vocal” missionary activity. But no echo of such a polemic can be detected in Acts. At the Jerusalem council, for instance, Sabbath observance was not among the issues of the day. In fact, we now shall consider overwhelming indications of its regular observance, particularly in the ultra-conservative Jewish-Christian community of Jerusalem. (p.137, Internet version, *From Sabbath to Sunday*.)

He also cited the following authority to suggest that the Jews mentioned in Acts 6-8 were primarily observant Jews who had converted to Christianity:

“W.D. Davies, a well-recognized specialist on early Christianity, concisely and sagaciously summarizes the religious situation of the time: “Everywhere, especially in the East of the Roman Empire, there would be Jewish Christians whose outward way of life would not be markedly different from that of the Jews. They took for granted that the gospel was continuous with Judaism; for them the new covenant, which Jesus had set up at the Last Supper with his disciples and sealed by his death, did not mean that the covenant made between God and Israel was no longer in force. They still observed the feasts of Passover, Pentecost and Tabernacles; they also continued to be circumcised, to keep the weekly Sabbath and the Mosaic regulations concerning food. According to some scholars, they must have been so strong that right up to the fall of Jerusalem in A.D. 70 they were the dominant element in the Christian movement.

In examining the possible origin of Sunday observance among primitive Jewish-Christians, we have just concluded that it is futile to seek among them for traces of its origin, because of their basic loyalty to Jewish religious customs such as Sabbath-keeping.” (cited on p. 164, Internet Version, *From Sabbath to Sunday*.)

http://www.friendsofsabbath.org/Further_Research/SDAs/sab2sun.pdf P. 143-144, p. 164.

A more dishonest portrayal and diminishment of the role and history of the Hellenized Jews cannot be imagined. Bacchiocchi fundamentally and affirmatively misrepresented the history and impact of the Hellenized Jews on early Christianity. Rather than being merely a “non conformist group of Jewish Christians” and fringe “holders of peculiar ideas” and “radicals,” they were the overwhelming majority of the early Jewish Christian converts. The Apostle Paul was a thoroughly Hellenized Jew!^{8 9 10} Hellenized Jews had translated the Hebrew Scriptures, the Septuagint, into Greek over 200 years before Christ, clearly rendering the typology and “shadows” of the coming Messiah in this remarkably accurate translation. Without its widespread use in the Greek-speaking parts of the Roman Empire, the explosion of Christianity in these areas would probably not have happened. All of the preceding facts are buttressed by the fact that the New Testament **nowhere** mentions any of the Jewish revolts, including the one that destroyed the Second Temple. Bacchiocchi simply does not grapple with the overwhelming trauma that was caused by the loss of the Temple, and yet ironically the New Testament

4 *Ibid.*

5 *Ibid.*

6 *Ibid.*

7 *Ibid.*

8 *The Rise of Christianity: A Sociologist Reconsiders History* By Rodney Stark, Pp., Pp. 48-50

9 http://www.thinkingfaith.org/articles/20081027_1.htm

10 <http://www.moyak.com/papers/ancient-alexandria.html>

nowhere mentions this dramatic fulfillment of Jesus's prophecy. The New Testament's silence is easily explained by the overwhelming domination of Jewish Christianity by the Hellenized Jews, who had abandoned Jewish temple rites long before the birth of Christ. Finally, we will present an argument in a later section of this Chapter that The *Book of Hebrews* was written to Hellenized Jews by a writer who was steeped in their most prized cultural attributes: the Septuagint and classical rhetoric.

The true story of the Hellenized Jews overwhelmingly refutes Bacchiocchi's theory of "Jewish Persecution" Sabbath Abandonment in 135 AD. They neither kept the Sabbath, nor did they participate in the Jewish revolts. The Masoretic (or Hebrew) texts used by the observant, non-Hellenized Jews of the First Century lent itself more easily to the disastrous succession of self-described Jewish messiahs that conceived of and directed all three Jewish revolts. The Hellenized Jews and their beloved Septuagint stuck to the sidelines.

Bacchiocchi appears to have been unaware that the Hellenized Jews had abandoned Sabbath-keeping, circumcision and the Jewish Food Laws long before the birth of Christ. The only Jewish custom that most Hellenized Jews retained was the yearly Passover. Many academic sources indicate that Jerusalem was probably an overwhelmingly Hellenized city long before the birth of Christ.^{11 12} These Hellenized Jews had abandoned Sabbath observance long before Christ, and for this reason, escaped persecution during the Seleucid occupation of Judea, when the Sabbath, Circumcision and Jewish food laws were outlawed.^{13 14} Finally, since Hellenized Jews had abandoned the Sabbath about two-hundred years before the Birth of Christ, there is no biblical or historical evidence that they adopted Sabbath-keeping *after* they converted to Christianity. We will demonstrate that Bacchiocchi's depiction of these Hellenized Jews — **who represented the majority of Jewish Christian converts** — was nothing short of an exercise in intellectual and academic dishonesty.

The Septuagint: The Handbook of the Hellenized Jews

That Bacchiocchi **never mentions** that the Hellenized Jews were solely-responsible for the Greek translation of the Bible is simply jaw-dropping. Jesus and the Apostles almost always quoted from the Septuagint. There are 340 places where the New Testament cites the Septuagint but only 33 places where it cites the rabbinical Hebrew texts. (G. Archer and G. C. Chirichigno, *Old Testament Quotations in the New Testament: A Complete Survey*, pp. 25-32). The common abbreviation for it—LXX, or the Roman numerals for 70— that is the number of translators of the Septuagint,¹⁵ and legend has it the argument that the work was done in the North African city of Alexandria was because King Ptolemy II wanted a Jewish "Bible" for the city's highly esteemed library. At the time, Alexandria was the center of the Greek Empire, and the Hellenized Jews that populated it had risen to the upper echelons of Greek power. (See *Wikipedia* article, "Septuagint.") At the same time, the Septuagint was officially commissioned by the Sanhedrin and the high priest in Jerusalem. As a practical matter, the Hellenized Jews in Alexandria used the Septuagint as an early missionary tract to begin the process of convincing the rational Greeks of the truth of monotheism.¹⁶ This is yet another earlier prototype of The Great Commission, analogous to the purpose of the 7 Noahide laws, which in the *Mishna Torah* were described as God's great gift to the civilizing of the Gentile Nations. The *Mishna* and the 7 Noahide commandments provided the Gentiles with the rudiments of civilization; whereas the Septuagint prepared them for Christianity and monotheism. We have discussed this "missionary" effect of the Noahide Laws elsewhere in *Lying for God*.

By contrast, the contemporary Hebrew-derived text used during the time of Christ had evolved through the normal rabbinical processes, probably from either the same Hebrew text or a close variant of it. Much later, the rabbinical Hebrew text was translated into what is now known as the Masoretic text, but it was not put together with a large, centralized process since it was written after the destruction of the Temple, and all central authority of the Sanhedrin had been demolished.¹⁷ The same ancient Hebrew text (or a close variant) as the one used to produce the Septuagint was utilized by rabbinical scholars during the same period of time to produce translations for contemporary Jewish use. Because these translations were in Hebrew,

11 *Intricately Connected: Biblical Studies, Intertextuality, and Literary Genre*, By Heerak Christian Kim, p. 63-64

12 <http://www.myjewishlearning.com/article/the-maccabees-heroes-or-fanatics/#>

13 <https://www.biblegateway.com/passage/?search=2%20Maccabees%206&version=GNT>

14 <https://www.biblegateway.com/passage/?search=2%20Maccabees%207&version=GNT>

15 <http://www.catholic.com/quickquestions/in-which-passages-does-jesus-quote-the-septuagint-and-where-does-the-new-testament-al>

16 http://orthodoxwiki.org/Judaism_and_Early_Christianity#The_Dialogue_of_Judaism_and_Hellenism

17 http://oodegr.co/english/protestantism/masoretic_vs_septuagint.htm

they tended to highlight the legal relationship between the Jewish Nation and God, and the centrality of the Mosaic Law. Interestingly, both the Greek and Hebrew texts were actual translations, and the fact that the same original text could produce such different results is simply the result of the ordinary etymology and the semiotic development of the respective languages.^{18 19 20} There have been some accusations that some of the translators of the Septuagint took paraphrasing liberties with parts of the text, but when it was compared against portions of Scripture that turned up with the discovery of the ancient Dead Sea Scrolls, the agreement rate is similar to the Masoretic text and very high. About 5% of the Septuagint content is available for comparison in the Dead Sea Scrolls found at Qumran. (For details, see the *Wikipedia* article on the Septuagint.)

This is a fertile field for conspiracy theorists who argue that the almost exclusive use of the Septuagint (with its etymological and semiotic de-emphasis on the “legal” aspects of the Torah) led to a quick “apostasy” caused by “pagan influences” on the early church. The existence of so many Hellenized Jews in the early church seems to plausibly support such a notion. After all, Bacchiocchi’s book — and its studied-ignoring of the Hellenized Jews — led directly to the modern-day Adventist “Feast Keeper” movement.²¹ The Feast Keeper’s movement is rooted in an “immediate pagan influenced apostasy” conspiracy theory. This “pagan apostasy” theory is easily refuted on two grounds.

First, as we have shown elsewhere in ***Lying For God***, the Protestant Reformers rejected Sabbatarianism on strictly *Sola scriptura* grounds, and the Protestant Bibles were based on the Masoretic text, not the Septuagint. Martin Luther insisted on translating the Lutheran Bible’s Old Testament directly from the Hebrew text into German. He well knew the “legalistic” bias of the Masoretic text. Nonetheless he firmly rejected Sabbath-keeping for Protestants. Furthermore, since the Deuterocanonical books were not in the original Masoretic texts (but in the Septuagint), Luther eliminated them from the Protestant canon.²² Similarly, John Calvin rejected Sabbath-keeping based on his known reliance on the Masoretic Text.^{23 24}

Secondly, it seems obvious that the High Priest and the Sanhedrin that commissioned the Septuagint 200 years before the birth of Christ could not have known how its obvious typology of Jesus the Messiah would lead to the violent destruction of Palestinian Jewry, or to Christianity’s wholesale-rejection of the Mosaic Law. The hatred the Talmud expresses at the Septuagint didn’t happen until after First Century Christians began using the Greek Old Testament to demonstrate the obvious typology of Christ. Most critically these Hellenized Jews did not participate in any of the Jewish revolts, including the one in 135 AD, since the Septuagint clearly shows that the Torah’s typology could only be reasonably be applied to One Messiah — Jesus.

The Septuagint made the prophecies and typologies that applied to Christ so clear that the Jewish high priest eventually forbade its study. While the intent of the translation was NOT to provide a book full of typology that supported Christianity’s focus on Jesus as the Messiah, in practical application that is precisely what happened:

The Talmud declared that the day on which the Bible had been translated into Greek was as fateful as that on which the golden calf had been worshiped (Soferim i.); that at the time when this translation was made darkness had come upon Egypt for three days (Ta’an. 50b); and they appointed the 8th of Tebet as a fast-day in atonement for that offense. Not only was the study of the Greek Bible forbidden, but also the study of the Greek language and literature in general. After the war with Titus no Jew was allowed to permit his son to learn Greek (Soṭah ix. 14); the Palestinian teachers unhesitatingly sacrificed general culture in order to save their religion.²⁵

The Early Christian Church relied on the Septuagint almost exclusively anyway, since Greek had always been the language of the Church and because the prophetic passages that pointed to Jesus as the Christ were so clear in the Septuagint, but were ambiguous or absent in the Hebrew:

The writers of the New Testament, also written in Greek, quoted from the old Greek versions

18 Translation Technique and Theology in the Septuagint of Amos. A Dissertation submitted to the faculty at the University of Minnesota. W. Edward Glenny, Pp. 43-46

19 *The Use of the Septuagint in New Testament Research* By Tim McLay, Pp. 30-34

20 *On the Trail of the Septuagint Translators: Collected Essays* By Anneli Aejmelaeus, Pp. 43-50

21 <http://www.giveshare.org/HolyDay/bacchiocchifestivalsrev.html>

22 <http://aprofaith.tripod.com/bible.html>

23 *John Calvin’s Commentaries On Ezekiel 13- 20 (Extended Annotated Edition)* By John Calvin

24 *John Calvin’s Commentaries On Isaiah 17- 32 (Extended Annotated Edition)* By John Calvin

25 <http://www.jewishencyclopedia.com/articles/7535-hellenism>

exclusively. **This is significant since the new Masoretic text prominently diverged in those passages which prophesied Christ.** Thus even when Latin, Syriac, Coptic, Armenian and other translations from the Greek appeared, Greek versions continued to be used by the Greek-speaking portion of the Christian Church....Recent Aramaic findings among the Dead Sea Scrolls read most closely with the LXX, and not with the Masoretic text. (Emphasis added) ²⁶

The Hellenized Jews were the source of the Greek Old Testament that was used almost exclusively by Jesus, all of the Apostles, and the Early Christian Church. It is the source of the majority of Old Testament quotes in the New Testament. Contrary to Bacchiocchi's dismissal of them as a fringe Christian group that represented a small minority of Jewish Christians, the Hellenized Jews were solely responsible for producing the canon of Scripture that predominated among the early Christians, including the non-Hellenized Jews and Gentile Christians. On top of all of this, the vast majority of the Jews of the diaspora were Hellenized. Bacchiocchi **does** concede that the Hellenized Jews were responsible for much of the missionary fervor of the early church, but without the acknowledgment that its success was powerfully facilitated by the Septuagint, which quickly became the version of the Old Testament that was studied by virtually all of the early Christian converts.

The Septuagint is to be recognized as a classic masterpiece of typology, since the Hellenized Jews were convinced by it beyond any shadow of a doubt Jesus Christ was the One and only Messiah. ^{27 28 29} This influence was enhanced by the fact that Hellenized Jews retained only the Passover as a Jewish custom. The combination of the Passover events and the Septuagint in AD 33 created an irresistible conclusion that Jesus indeed was the prophesied Messiah. Jesus was irresistible to Hellenized Jews. That's why they refused to be led by the three different self-appointed Jewish Messiahs that sparked the three major Jewish revolts that took place in First and Second Century Palestine. The Hellenized Jews emphatically had their own Messiah, already.

By itself, the very fact of the existence of the Septuagint represents a powerful argument against Bacchiocchi's Jewish persecution theory of Sabbath abandonment. The Hellenized Jews were in no danger of being persecuted since they had nothing to do with the Jewish revolts. They avoided the revolts, because they refused to follow any other Messiah but Jesus Christ— again because the Septuagint made it clear that He was the One and only Messiah. They realized this with stunning alacrity during Jesus' last Passover. Jesus, the Messiah of the Hellenized Jewish converts, had made it clear that the Jewish revolts were the type of thing that Christians must avoid. Jesus taught non-resistance to the Roman occupation in his Sermon on the Mount.³⁰ Additionally, the Hellenized Jews had abandoned the Sabbath long before the birth of Christ, so they couldn't have abandoned the Sabbath in response to the Roman persecution that followed the third Jewish revolt in AD 135. This will be discussed more fully later in this chapter. Because Bacchiocchi avoided discussing the existence of the Septuagint and misrepresented the numerical dominance, religious practices and beliefs of the Hellenized Jews, his entire "Jewish Persecution Theory" of Sabbath abandonment is fatally flawed.

Hellenized Jews Abandoned the Sabbath Before the Birth of Christ

That the Hellenized Jews had universally abandoned the Sabbath, Kosher food laws, and circumcision long before the Birth of Christ is not open to serious dispute. The **Books of Maccabees** spells this out in great and painstaking detail. ^{31 32} The **Books of Maccabees** describe a period of time before the birth of Christ roughly spanning 175 BC to 134 BC.³³ The **Books of Maccabees** were unanimously regarded by the Christian Church as Biblical Canon until they were unilaterally removed by Martin Luther after his separation from the Church of Rome.³⁴ They had been canonical Biblical texts since the 397 Council of Carthage.³⁵ Ironically, the Septuagint contained the **Books of Maccabees**, while the Masoretic texts did not. The

26 http://www.bibliahebraica.com/the_texts/septuagint.htm

27 *The T&T Clark Companion to the Septuagint* edited by James K Aitken Pp. 136-140

28 *Septuagint Quotations in the Context of the Petrine and Pauline Speeches of Petrine and Pauline Speeches of the Acta Apostolorum*, By Gert Jacobus Steyn, Pp. 20-30

29 *Jesus the Messiah in the Hebrew Bible* By Eugen J. Pentiu, Pp. 44-60.

30 http://www.newworldencyclopedia.org/entry/Jewish_Christians

31 <https://www.biblegateway.com/passage/?search=1+Maccabees+1&version=GNT>

32 <https://www.biblegateway.com/passage/?search=2+Maccabees+1&version=GNT>

33 https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Books_of_the_Maccabees

34 <http://beggarsallreformation.blogspot.com/2011/06/why-luther-removed-2-maccabees-from.html>

35 https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Councils_of_Carthage

very term “Hellenization” means the process of jettisoning native customs and adopting the customs of Greece. Paradoxically, Hellenization did not necessarily mean that Hellenized Jews adopted paganism. Some certainly did, but many of them— possibly even the majority of them — maintained their monotheistic beliefs and adherence to the universal Noahide laws. Beyond that, they acted as missionaries to the culture in which they existed in that many of them labored among the Heathen Greeks to get them to adopt monotheism and the Noahide laws. This fact is of great importance when we consider the fact that long before the birth of Christ, Jerusalem was almost entirely Hellenized:

However, it must be noted that Jerusalem was thoroughly Hellenized at the time of the Maccabean Revolt. Thus, it is even conceivable that the majority of the Jewish population in Jerusalem were not rigid about observing Jewish traditions, such as circumcision, a strictly kosher diet, and Sabbath Day observance. To be sure, even many Hellenized Jews who did not keep these customs valued the Jerusalem Temple as a redemptive medium for the Jewish people.

Maintaining Jewish identity meant to acknowledge the centrality of the temple at Jerusalem. But other identity markers, such as circumcision, a kosher diet, and Sabbath day observance were not necessarily agreed upon identity markers for those who considered themselves as Jews as the Jerusalem Temple. But in other regulations, the rules were more relaxed. Many Jewish sects disagree with each other. This was clear because during the Hasmonean times, there was great dissent in belief in practices between various Jewish sects, such as the Pharisees and the Sadducees. The Pharisees emphasized kosher and Sabbath day laws, but the Sadducees did not....Those who were Hellenized before the Maccabean Revolt continued to be Hellenized after the success of the revolt. Those who were strictly observant of kosher and Sabbath day laws before the Maccabean Revolt were observant after the success of the Maccabean Revolt.³⁶

Jerusalem was so thoroughly Hellenized during the time of the Maccabees that even Jason, the Temple High Priest, perceived his role as ridding the Jews of the Sabbath, the Kosher food laws and circumcision:

According to historian Elias Bickerman, Jason and Menelaus wanted to preserve aspects of Judaism that fit with Greek ideals, like a universal God, but to remove those parts of Jewish practice that separated Jews from others: dietary laws, Sabbath observance, circumcision. Some Hellenists continued to worship the Jewish God, but moved their worship to outdoor sanctuaries and sanctioned the pig as a sacrificial animal.³⁷

While the Hellenization of the Jews of Alexandria took place on a volunteer basis, it escalated in urgency with the reign of Seleucid Emperor, Antiochus Epiphanes’ reign over Palestine:

To secure his power there, Antiochus promoted “Hellenization” - a program of spreading Greek law, culture and religion. As he pursued this agenda, the emperor looked in Jerusalem itself for those who would support his cause, and he found considerable backing. After all, Hellenization was necessary to “stay with the times.” Jews in favor of Antiochus’ program joined together with him in a “Hellenistic Reform Movement.” Two new high priests, Jason and Menelaus, were even able to seize power over the temple by collaborating with Antiochus’ program. Those, on the other hand, who resisted Antiochus and the reform were instantly placed on the political margins: they defied the united will of Greek emperor and Jewish High Priest.

Antiochus asserted his power over Judea by plundering the vast treasures of the Jerusalem Temple. Later he returned to Jerusalem to promote a radically-accelerated policy of Hellenization. Sabbath and circumcision were outlawed on penalty of death. Possession of Torah scrolls was prohibited....Antiochus, together with his Jewish supporters, had set out to change Judaism forever and possibly destroy it.³⁸

Antiochus Epiphanes was greatly assisted in his goal of eradicating Judaism, and Hellenizing the Palestinian Jews by a succession of Hellenized Jews as High Priests:

But Jason was only a moderate Hellenizer compared with Menelaus, whose succession as high priest occasioned a civil war between their factions, with the Tobiads supporting Menelaus and the masses of the people standing behind Jason. As the scholars Bickermann, Tcherikover, and Hengel have shown, it

36 *Intricately Connected: Biblical Studies, Intertextuality, and Literary Genre*, By Heerak Christian Kim Pp. 63-64

37 <http://www.myjewishlearning.com/article/the-maccabees-heroes-or-fanatics/#>

38 *The Bible and the Dead Sea Scrolls* By Casey Deryl Elledge P. 34

was the Hellenizers, notably Menelaus and his followers, who influenced Antiochus Epiphanes to undertake his persecutions of Judaism so as to put down the rebellion of the Hassideans, who were supported by the masses of Jerusalem and who rebelled against the Hellenizers. Perhaps the account in the Dead Sea Scrolls of the war between the sons of light and the sons of darkness reflects this struggle.

It is not surprising that contact with Hellenism should have produced deviations from Jewish observance. Philo (*Post.*, 35–40) mentions the extreme allegorists, who insisted on interpreting the ceremonial laws as only a parable: these are undoubtedly forerunners of Pauline anti-nomianism. Others relaxed their Jewish observance in order to become citizens of Alexandria, an act that involved worship of the city gods. Actual apostasy was apparently rare, though there is mention of the case of Philo's nephew, Tiberius Julius Alexander, as well as those of Dositheos and Helicon, all of whom pursued careers at the imperial court. Philo on one occasion (*Spec.*, 3:29) does attack intermarriage, but the virulent anti-semitism in Alexandria must have served as a deterrent. A more common reaction to the challenge of secularism was for Jews to cease religious observance except on the Day of Atonement and Passover (Philo, *Spec.* 1:186). Finally, there is some evidence that the one city where Christianity seems to have made real inroads in converting Jews was the one most deeply influenced by Hellenism, Alexandria.³⁹

By the time of First Century Christianity, Hellenized Jews had become a large subset of Judaism. They had abandoned the Sabbath, circumcision and Kosher food laws at least 100 years before Christ. They were powerful enough to unite with the Maccabean Jews, to defeat the great armies of the Greeks, and to restore the Temple in fulfillment of Daniel 8:14's "2,300 evenings and mornings prophecy." Jesus celebrated this great victory by the combined armies of the Hellenized Jews and the Maccabeans when he commemorated Hanukkah (The "Festival of Lights," as it was known during the time of Jesus) as documented in John 10:22-23. Adventism via Bacchiocchi's research systematically has ignored the accomplishment and scope of the Hellenized Jews that formed the majority of Jewish converts during the First Century. The Hellenistic culture was adopted by the Roman Empire, and it dominated Christianity for at least its first 5 centuries:

While the Greek, or Hellenistic, Empire disappeared from the map when the Romans gained political and military supremacy, Hellenistic culture, nonetheless, was adopted by Rome and continued to be the dominant culture throughout the history of the Roman Empire. Therefore, the primary culture Christianity encountered in the first five centuries was essentially Greek. Hellenism, then, was really not just a factor during the time between the Old and New Testaments, which we call the intertestamental period, but it was also a significant factor culturally in the first five centuries of the church.⁴⁰

Because Adventism has failed to grasp the powerful impact of the Hellenized Jews' Septuagint, they are consigned to deal forever with the "mystery" of the failed prediction of Jesus' return in 1844. The *Books of Maccabees* lay out in very specific detail the "abomination of desolation" that was "cleansed" when the Jewish Temple was restored to the Jews, long before the birth of Christ. This is an interpretation of Daniel 8:14 that was accepted by all of the respectable Protestant commentators available during William Miller's life. The Hellenized Jews could not have abandoned the Sabbath after the 135 AD Jewish revolts, **since abandoning the Sabbath had been part of the very definition of being "Hellenized" for well over 200 years by that point.** When the Hellenized Jews converted to Christianity, nothing about their Sabbath observance changed. They weren't observing the Sabbath before their conversion to Christianity, and there is no Biblical or historical evidence that they commenced to do so afterwards. The history and culture of the Hellenized Jews is amazingly consistent with the un-refuted assertions of the Greek Orthodox Church that Sunday worship commenced on Resurrection morning. The Hellenized Jews never "gave up the Sabbath," because they had ceased keeping it at least several generations before the birth of Christ. They joined with Gentile Christian converts in celebrating the Resurrection of Christ on the First Day of the week at the outset of Christianity. Bacchiocchi's "Jewish Persecution theory" of Sabbath Abandonment is overwhelmingly refuted by the history of the Hellenized Jews.

The Preeminence of the Passover for Hellenized Jews

While Hellenized Jews jettisoned the weekly Sabbath, circumcision, and the Kosher food laws as a result of their adoption of Greek customs, the Passover was simply not open for discussion, even among these mostly secularized Jews. Their deep resistance to abandoning the Passover had profound influence on the eventual Christian adoption of Easter (Pascha in the

³⁹ <http://www.jewishvirtuallibrary.org/jsource/History/hellenism.html>

⁴⁰ http://www.wciu.edu/docs/resources/Russell_Hellenistic_Culture_Jewish.pdf

Eastern church) as a replacement for Passover; and in modern Rabbinical Judaism's innovation of the Seder Passover.⁴¹ A lengthy description of a Hellenized Passover meal demonstrates the obvious typology between this evolving annual event, and the Last Supper and days of Christ's life:

When eating a Hellenized Passover meal, the Jews reflected on its original meaning. For them, the exodus was a metaphor for anti-imperialism. The Passover meal, with its accompanying instructions, kept [the] memory of a desire for freedom alive. Having been dominated by one Gentile Kingdom or another since their days in Egypt and ruled by their own tyrannical kings, the Jews began to look for the day when God would liberate them from oppressive regimes and restore his kingdom under a Davidic messiah, who would manifest his rule over the nations.

But unlike the original Exodus exiles who ate in homes and in haste (Exodus 12:11), these Hellenized Jews "shall eat it in the sanctuary of your God," i.e., in the Temple court, and in a more relaxed fashion and with a joyous attitude. *Jubilees* was the first Jewish writing ever to mention the use of wine at the Passover table. Now that Passover was associated with the Temple, it "required a pilgrimage" to Jerusalem "where the sacrifice was held."

Philo (20 BCE-50 CE), an Alexandrian Jew, makes several scattered references to Passover and describes it as being practiced in a Hellenistic manner, i.e., a meal with two courses (*deipnon* and *symposion*) that incorporates the traditional Jewish traditions."⁴²

Hellenized Jews enthusiastically-participated in the Passover because its practice has become thoroughly "Greek" in its atmospherics:

Greek customs such as gathering in festival rooms and eating at a leisurely pace became the preferred way to dine. Formal festivities were elaborate occasions and included the supper proper (the eating course) followed by the symposium (drinking course). Diners reclined on couches throughout the evening as they partook of food and drink. Jews followed suit. According to M. Barth, the Passover meal likewise took on characteristics of a Greek festival meal. In the early second-century BCE, Ben Sirah intimates that Jewish males ate by reclining at the table. Although Bokser points out ways Passover difference from Hellenized meals, he does not adequately deal with the many ways they were the same. The Passover meal would have been viewed by Greeks as a standard sacrificial meal that included an offering, several cups of wine, hymns, instructions, conversation, and encouraged fellowship (*koinonia*), bonding (*philia*), and equality (*isonomia*) among the diners. Leonhard concludes that the Jewish Pesach is "indebted to Greco-Roman sympotic customs."⁴³

In Palestine during the time of Christ, scholars have established that Hellenized Jews accounted for at least 60% of the population. Diaspora Jews' Hellenization rates were far higher.^{44 45 46 47} These majoritarian Hellenized Jews were deeply-devoted to the Passover, even though they had jettisoned the Sabbath, circumcision, and the Kosher food laws with finality during the Maccabean days. They provided the majority of Jewish Christian converts, that facilitated the seamless transfer from the Jewish Passover to the yearly Christian Holy Days of Easter (in the West) and Pascha (in the East). The fact that Hellenized Jews insisted on the continuing validity of Passover is precisely analogous to the Septuagint as a potent source typology for Jesus Christ. No Hellenized Jew that knew about or witnessed Jesus Christ's Last Supper, His Crucifixion, and His Resurrection could fail to see the Passover as the greatest and most obvious of all typologies.

The Book of Hebrews: a Love Letter to the Hellenized Jews

The final piece of evidence that utterly demolishes Bacchiocchi's "Jewish Persecution Sabbath Abandonment Theory" is the *Book of Hebrews*, which was probably written before the destruction of the Second Temple (CE 70).⁴⁸ It was written by a

41 http://judaism.about.com/od/passover/a/seder_golinkin.htm

42 *Subversive Meals: An Analysis of the Lord's Supper under Roman Domination* By R. Alan Streebt PP 69-73

43 *Subversive Meals: An Analysis of the Lord's Supper under Roman Domination* By R. Alan Streebt, Pp. 68-71

44 <http://www.jewishvirtuallibrary.org/jsource/History/hellenism.html>

45 *Judaism and Hellenism in Antiquity: Conflict or Confluence?* By Lee I. Levine, Pp. 180-184

46 *The Jews in Late Ancient Rome: Evidence of Cultural Interaction in the Roman*, By Leonard Victor Rutgers, Pp. 139-150

47 *LXX-Isaiah as Translation and Interpretation*, By Ronald L. Troxel. Pp. 39-40

48 <http://www.earlychristianwritings.com/hebrews.html>

Hellenized Jew, and the Hellenized Jews in Jerusalem.⁴⁹ For both these reasons, one conclusion is inescapable: the Hellenized Jews thoroughly dominated the Jewish Christian Church in Jerusalem:

“The title “to the Hebrews” is a late addition to the text. However, the abundant Jewish content, including Israelite history, the sacrificial system, and Old Testament quotations, clearly demonstrates that the original audience was Jewish. Some scholars suggest that references to priests presume that the audience consisted of former priests or that the audience was located in Palestine. However, the use of the Septuagint when quoting the Old Testament, along with other Greek symbols and ideas, suggests instead that the audience consisted primarily of Hellenized Jews.”⁵⁰

The Book of Hebrews contains a number of unique themes that the targeted Hellenized Jews would have found fascinating, notwithstanding their repudiation of most distinctive Jewish customs:

The writer also introduces the book with a formulation that is clearly reminiscent of the “Hellenistic-Jewish wisdom tradition” which was “apparently current and meaningful for the audience.”²² In doing so he is establishing “emotional contact with his audience” by using divine Wisdom categories to portray Jesus as the royal Son (1:2; cp. Psalm 2) and royal Priest (1:3; cp. Psalm 11) as well as including reference to his “role in creation, revelation, and redemption [which are] recited in creedal fashion.” Such descriptions would be foreign to a Gentile audience and less common in Palestinian Judaism. The role of angels in the giving of the Law finds closer parallels with Hellenistic Judaism than with the Old Testament—an emphasis that would most likely have found a point of contact in the Hellenistic synagogue of the Diaspora. The centrality of Moses also substantiates this conclusion. It is difficult to exaggerate the significance of Moses in Hellenistic Judaism . . . [for] he is the supreme exemplar of perfection in the sense of immediacy and access to God. If such views were the common property of . . . the Hellenistic -Jewish community, this explains why Moses and Jesus are yoked and compared throughout the argument developed in Hebrews.

.....

Overall it appears likely that the author of Hebrews writes from a Hellenistic-Jewish-Christian perspective to those who have a similar background.⁵¹

Many of the main themes of the *Book of Hebrews* were popular among the Alexandrian subset of Hellenized Jews:

One of the first attempts to locate the Book of Hebrews within a specific Hellenistic context focused its attention on the striking similarities with the Alexandrian allegorical school best represented by Philo. An impressive list of scholars, the most recent being Spicq, derived much of Hebrew's imagery from a form of middle Platonism found in Philo. For example, the dualistic contrasts between the heavenly and earthly temple, the true form and its copy, the eternal and the ephemeral, the perfect and imperfect, seemed to support the thesis.⁵²

Because the *Book of Hebrews* is a brilliant masterpiece of classical rhetoric, and the Apostle Paul had no formal background in this ancient art form that was centered in Alexandria, the authorship of *Hebrews* is in dispute. The fault lines of this dispute are fascinating. Many Evangelical theologians reject the notion that Paul was the author. Classical Rhetoricians *insist that he was*, and base their argument on the extent of Paul's missionary travels in Greek areas and his close association with other Hellenized Jews.^{53 54} He would have easily picked up *in situ* what his formal education lacked, given his widespread participation in public debates and speeches.

Classical rhetoric was highly systematized in the education system of the Hellenistic period. Formal education included training in rhetoric with handbooks that standardized the discipline. *Even those who lacked a formal education were regularly exposed to the principles of rhetoric through public speeches.* The Book of Hebrews is characterized by stylistic elegance and the finest Greek in the New

49 <http://www.earlychristianwritings.com/hebrews.html>

50 <http://www.gcfweb.org/institute/general/hebrews-1.php>

51 http://www.bbc.edu/journal/volume3_2/hebrews-decker.pdf

52 *Biblical Theology of the Old and New Testaments: Theological Reflection on the Christian Bible* By Brevard S. Childs P. 308

53 http://www.fpcr.org/blue_banner_articles/Who-Wrote-Hebrews.htm

54 <http://www.sbl-site.org/assets/pdfs/pubs/060366P.front.pdf>

Since the audience for *Hebrews* was primarily Hellenized Jews, *Hebrews* 4 points those secular Jewish readers to a future “rest” that is available to any Christian that accepts the Gospel, and harshly denounces the disobedience of the hated Hebraic Jews who never received that “rest” with their perfunctory weekly Sabbath Day. No similar New Testament Book was written to the Hebraic Christian converts of Jerusalem. *Hebrews* pitched a “low, wide one” to the worldly Hellenized Jews, and facilitated their seamless transfer into Christianity. It promised the yearned-for permanent “rest” from the heavy yoke of observant Judaism.^{56 57} No wonder relieved Hellenized Jews flocked to Christianity in droves!

Bacchiocchi’s Intellectual and Academic Fraud

We have set forth a serious case that Dr. Bacchiocchi committed intellectual and academic fraud with his dismissive and blatantly-unhistorical treatment of the Hellenized Jews. Our view is sustained by the fact that Bacchiocchi ***was formally accused by his own university of participating in various kinds of fraud in his doctoral dissertation; dishonesty in his subsequent claims of his academic achievements; and the possible yawning disparity between the “abridged” subsequent book that is treated by this instant chapter.***^{58 59} At the very least, the present-day Seventh Day Adventist Sabbath Doctrine is based on a theory that was produced under circumstances that evidence multiple levels of disturbing, unresolved and very serious and credible evidence of Academic fraud. These allegations include the vast disparity between the arguments presented in his doctoral dissertation and those ones put forth in his book. Unfortunately, it was the book that was widely-distributed to unsuspecting Adventist lay people. Where his dishonest and dismissive treatment of the Hellenized Jews of First Century Christianity fits within this overall controversy about his academic achievements remains to be seen. Notably, Bacchiocchi’s dissertation appears to have been based on a theory that Early Christianity jettisoned Sabbath-keeping based on anti-Semitism. If the history of the Hellenized Jews was systematically ignored in his dissertation in order to “prove” a theory that Sabbath-keeping was jettisoned out of primitive anti-Semitism, he had to know before he even wrote his dissertation that his entire “Jewish Persecution Theory” was virtually self-evidently impossible “before the horse was even out of race track’s gate.” The Hellenistic Jews, who seem to have made up the majority of the converts to Christianity during the first 100 years after the Resurrection, had not been keeping the Sabbath before they became Christians, and would have to have known this even if he had only a moderate command of ancient world history.

The New Testament nowhere mentions the three Jewish revolts or the disastrous destruction of the Temple, because Christians never participated in the revolts. The Temple was completely irrelevant to them, since the majority of Jewish Christians were Hellenized and Gentile Christian converts had no connection with the Temple (by 135 AD, the Gentiles’ own Temples in Greece were being destroyed). Not only did Hellenized Jews rise to the upper echelons of power in ancient Alexandria,^{60 61} the Capital of the mighty Greek Empire, but they rose to the highest levels of Jewish society in Palestine as well. They were commissioned by the Sanhedrin to translate the Torah into Greek. During the time of the Maccabees, at least two Hellenized Jews in a row became High Priests at the Second Temple. Finally, the Apostle Paul was a thoroughly Hellenized Jew and a Roman citizen. The Hellenized Jews were not a marginal fringe group among the Early Christians, nor does the ***Book of Acts*** imply that they were. The dispute in the *Book of Acts* between the Hellenized Jews and the Hebraic Jews was about unequal support for widows— not about doctrine or canon. The Septuagint— the high-water point of Hellenized Jewish scholarship— was used almost exclusively by the Apostles as the preferred translation, since the Great Commission commanded that the Gospel be taken to the Gentile nations. The Greek Old Testament was crucial to this. Hellenized Jews converted overwhelmingly to Christianity and were the real backbone of Jewish Christianity. Bacchiocchi does concede that they were the vanguard of Christian missionary activity, but does not explain how such a “radical” group of minority “marginalized” Jews managed to accomplish such a thing. Since the Apostle Paul was **THE** “point of the spear” of “Christian missionary activity— and because he was a thoroughly Hellenized Jew; and because he exclusively quoted

⁵⁵ *A Discourse Analysis of the Letter to the Hebrews: The Relationship between discourse and meaning* By Cynthia Long Westfall P. 4.

⁵⁶ *From Hebrews to Revelation: A Theological Introduction* By Lewis R. Donelson Pp. 29-33

⁵⁷ *Allegory Transformed*, By Stefan Nordgaard Svendsen Pp. 105-120

⁵⁸ <http://www.biblicalperspectives.com/Gregoriana/>

⁵⁹ http://www.biblicalperspectives.com/endtimeissues/et_160.pdf

⁶⁰ http://classes.maxwell.syr.edu/his301-001/jeishh_diaspora_in_greece.htm

⁶¹ <http://www.moyak.com/papers/ancient-alexandria.html>

from the Septuagint in his Epistles — Bacchiocchi's praise is extremely grudging and pinched.

Hellenized Jews had overwhelmingly abandoned the Sabbath, circumcision and Kosher food laws long before the birth of Christ. There is not a stitch of Biblical or historical proof that they ever kept the Sabbath again. During the reign of Antiochus Epiphanes, Hellenized Jews **assisted** the Greeks in persecuting observant Jews for Sabbath-keeping. **The Books of Maccabees**— which Bacchiocchi never cited in his dismissive treatment of the Hellenized Jews — paints a stark picture of secularized Jews who had evolved into true Greeks in nearly every sense of the word. The only exception was the retention of the Passover with many of them retaining their belief in monotheism and the Noahide laws. Some of the Hellenized Jews even underwent the painful procedure to have their circumcisions reversed.^{62 63} Hellenized Jews blended into Greek society by jettisoning most of the distinctive rites under the Mosaic Law, which after all, were specifically efficacious in separating Jew from Gentile. The Passover was the lone exception, which was a clear “type” of Jesus Christ's sacrifice.

Hellenized Jews could not have abandoned the Sabbath in accordance with Bacchiocchi's Jewish Persecution Theory because they had abandoned the Sabbath long before Christ (never readopting it) and because the Septuagint (and the Passover which Hellenized Jews had retained) so clearly pointed to just one Messiah, the founder of Christianity. All three Jewish revolts featured self-proclaimed Jewish messiahs. The Hebrew text permitted these catastrophic interpretations, but the Septuagint simply did not. Hellenized Jews already had their Messiah, and His Sermon on the Mount prohibited them from engaging in fruitless wars with the Romans. Hellenized Jews had converted to Christianity in droves and were the backbone of Christian missionary activities to the Gentiles. They were focused on carrying out the Great Commission, not on simmering local political revolts involving the Hebraic Jews and their constant political friction and bloody uprisings with the Romans. And the *Book of Hebrews* flatly promised the Hellenized Jewish Christians the “rest” that observant Judaism had never delivered with its temple rituals, holy days, and endless political strife. They “rested” from the revolts, just as they had already “rested” from Sabbath-keeping, circumcision and Kosher food laws.

The outcome of Bacchiocchi's muddled thinking is obvious: He went on to supply the intellectual firepower for the far-out modern-day Adventist “Feast Keeper” movement. The explicit Judaizing outcome of Bacchiocchi's novel reinterpretation of Colossians 2:16 in his 1977 book, *From Sabbath to Sunday*, has horrified both evangelical and traditional Adventists almost equally. His dismissive treatment of the Apostle Paul's personal Hellenization process seems to have been done in support of the long-brewing contention in the halls of Adventist academia that Paul should be jettisoned, since his Epistles are pure Kryptonite to Adventism's revived Judaizing heresy. The Hellenized Jews were not a “fringe” or “radical” part of Jewish Christianity; they were the living and beating heart of it. And Paul's unequivocal rejection of the Mosaic Law as something that should never be applied to Christians had roots deep within the history of Hellenized Jewry. Of all the factions of Second Temple Judaism, Hellenized Jewry as a group were the only ones who received the “rest” available from the Gospel.

62 <http://www.cirp.org/library/restoration/hall1/>

63 <http://www.pbs.org/wnet/need-to-know/the-daily-need/jews-who-went-to-the-gymnasium-or-the-real->

CHAPTER TWENTY-FIVE
EXAMINING THE TANGLED ROOTS OF THE
HEBREW ROOTS MOVEMENT

By Martin H. Klayman and Elce “Thunder” Lauriston

In Collaboration with Kerry Wynne, William H Hohmann, and Larry Dean

EXAMINING THE TANGLED ROOTS OF THE HEBREW ROOTS MOVEMENT

By Martin H. Klayman and Elce “Thunder” Lauriston

In Collaboration with Kerry Wynne, William H Hohmann, and Larry Dean

Introduction by Kerry Wynne

Readers are naturally curious about the perspective of the writer. Introducing two new co-authors for the *Lying for God* research project for the 11th Edition-- Martin H. Klayman and Elce “Thunder” Lauriston.

Martin H. Klayman is our new director of Jewish studies. He was born and raised in a middle class Jewish family which kept the key Jewish traditions. At age 11 he began attending a *Talmud Torah* religious school and successfully entered Jewish manhood with celebration of his *Bar Mitzvah*. He spent some time in the U. S. Army, got a degree in business, and had a variety of work experiences. Meanwhile, he found no peace.

At age 33 he was introduced to Christianity through a person who shared end-times Bible prophecies with him. He found Christ, and for the first time in his life found peace and meaning. Ever since he has shared his faith in Christ in a variety of ways as a Completed Jew. His six children have been raised in a Christian home that has also provided them with an understanding of Judaism.

Up until recently **Elce “Thunder” Lauriston** was a popular Daniel and Revelation seminar speaker for the Seventh-day Adventist Church as well as a student at the Seventh-day Adventist seminary in Montego Bay, Jamaica. As he began to apply his newly-found knowledge of New Testament Greek to Adventist proof texts, he found that the Church’s self-serving interpretations of them could not be substantiated. He turned his back on a promising Church career and accepted the Gospel of Christ as articulated by the apostles.

Lauriston has stepped in to help Marty with the challenging New Testament texts involved in this study. Once you have read Lauriston’s exegesis of these passages, you will never be able to read them the same way.

I should also mention that our co-author, Larry Dean, has contributed to this chapter by helping us understand that the Old Testament passages utilized by Rambo apply to the end-times events.

THE HEBREW ROOTS MOVEMENT SNEAKS UP ON THE CHRISTIAN FAITH

The Hebrew Roots Movement is currently sweeping through some Sabbath-keeping Christian congregations, including those of the Seventh-day Adventists and Messianic Jews. We were quite interested to see an online article posted by *The Adventist Review and Herald*, entitled “The Jews of Adventism.” Here is an excerpt from it which can be found at this Internet address:

<http://www.adventistreview.org/the-jews-of-adventism:>

Every Sabbath a growing number of Seventh-day Adventist congregations are taking on a distinctive appearance: men wearing skullcaps and prayer shawls, alongside women, recite prayers in the Hebrew language of their forebears. In many places the Torah, a parchment scroll of the first five books of the Bible—authored by Moses—is read from the platform. A Jewish flavor permeates the proceedings; even the potluck suppers.

And while the congregations are thoroughly Adventist – using the same Sabbath school quarterly (edited by Clifford Goldstein, a Jewish Adventist) and holding the same doctrines as other congregations around the globe – there’s something different here. Worshipping one God and His Son, the Messiah, dozens of Jewish Adventist congregations are demonstrating the connection between the Sabbath keepers of ancient Israel and many of God’s followers today.

DR. SAMUELE BACCHIOCCHI, ADVENTISTS, AND THE HRM MOVEMENT

The focus of this book is not to denounce Sabbath observance kept by Messianic Jews – Jews who believe in Jesus. It is on the universalism of this approach and particularly on Adventism and its “sister” Sabbatarian denominations that sprung

up in the aftermath of the now defunct Worldwide Church of God.

Elsewhere in this book, we will discuss the role of the late Seventh-day Adventist Sabbath scholar, Dr. Samuele Bacchiocchi played in opening the door to the “New Adventism” and feast-keeping. Dr. Bacchiocchi recognized the linguistic certainty that the Sabbath in the third position of Colossians 2:14-17 was a reference to the weekly Sabbath of the Decalogue. His work-around this problem theorized that Paul was not condemning Sabbath keeping itself, but rather the observance of the extra rules and regulations that the Judaizers had added to make the observance of these ordinances more rigorous, and therefore, more meritorious. By taking this pathway, Dr. Bacchiocchi brought the sabbaths and Jewish dietary laws kicking and screaming into the Christian dispensation. Unavoidably, Bacchiocchi’s approach brought the extra baggage of feast-keeping with it. Having done that, only one more step is necessary to arrive at the total Judaization of Christianity.

THE ROOT OF THE HEBREW ROOTS MOVEMENT

Our analysis suggests that the primary rationale for the Hebrew Roots Movement is the story in the *Book of Acts* about St. Paul undergoing a purification ritual and sacrifice at the temple in Jerusalem. Because he was a participant in a Torah-related ceremonial activity, and because he did not rebuke the Jewish Christians for continuing to observe the TORAH, Paul supposedly taught by example that Christians must keep the TORAH.

Peter Rambo, an advocate of the Hebrew Roots Movement, wrote a short article entitled, “**10 PARADIGM-SHIFTING NEW TESTAMENT VERSES.**” He challenges everyone to see the importance of observing the entire TORAH. We were quite taken back by his effort to make Paul say exactly the opposite of what he taught in his various epistles.

Marty Klayman, having been raised Jewish and later converted to Christianity, sees cognitive dissonance almost everywhere in the teachings of the Hebrew Roots Movement. Here are some of his observations:

The modern Sabbath-keeper seems to have a much easier job keeping the Sabbath than the Israelites did. I couldn’t help wondering where have all the Sabbath laws gone in Sabbath-keeping denominations, like Adventism, and even in the HRM congregations. For example, if the members of the HRM congregations took the TORAH seriously, they would not drive to Sabbath services on Sabbath morning. Also, it seems to me that if the Sabbath is a “moral” law, the TORAH’s Sabbath-supporting laws would have to be considered moral, rather than ceremonial; laws that would continue to be in effect even after Christ’s death on the Cross. And how do they distinguish between the way to keep the annual and monthly Sabbaths from the weekly one? Do they keep them the same way? There are light switches, opening heavy refrigerator doors, and all kinds of things that would have to be considered “doing work” in today’s modern society. And this is the yoke that the HRM people want to put back on top of the Christians of today? That’s outrageous!

DENIAL OF THE BASICS OF THE CHRISTIAN FAITH

The HRM’ers typically deny the following teachings:

Ephesians 2:8-9 (NIV):

⁸For it is by grace you have been saved, through faith—and this is not from yourselves, it is the gift of God—⁹not by works, so that no one can boast.

They promote the Law by citing Matthew 5:17,18, which says, “I have not come to destroy the Law or the Prophets but to fulfill them”, while avoiding Paul’s teaching that by the deeds of the Law no flesh shall be justified in His sight. (Romans 3:20 KJV).

Secondly, HRM theology rejects the Doctrine of the Trinity. The Trinity is hard to understand, and its development began in early Christianity, having been studied for centuries resulting in rigorous theological debate. HRM’ers ignorantly label the Trinity “Pagan” by emphasizing the Oneness of God over the Triune nature of God revealed in the New Testament. Although a common argument against the Trinity is that Constantine forced the Doctrine of the Trinity into the Bible, the early church father, Tertullian, wrote about the Trinity toward the end of the First Century and the beginning of the Second Century.

God’s Triune nature is laid out in Jesus’ Great Commission baptismal formula and His command to baptize new believers in the name of the Father, Son, and Holy Ghost. (See Matthew 28:19.) To deny this passage is to deny the key importance of fulfilling the Great Commission, and in effect, the Christian Faith as we understand it.

HRM'ers have created a legalistic system based on a works mentality. Their identity will be in the Jewish culture rather than the Jewish Messiah. They will cause much disunity in the Body of Christ.

The tangled roots of the Hebrew Roots Movement seems to represent a horrific twisting of the significance of St. Paul's visit to the temple when he underwent purification rites for himself and four others who accompanied him. The following HRM "manifesto" has been written out by a man name Pete Rambo, a write-up which we found posted on Facebook in a Sabbatarian-related discussion group. Rambo's statements are provided in blue and our analysis in black.

RAMBO POINT NUMBER ONE

JESUS/YESHUA SAID, WHOEVER THEN ANNULS ONE OF THE LEAST OF THESE COMMANDMENTS, AND TEACHES OTHERS TO DO THE SAME, SHALL BE CALLED LEAST IN THE KINGDOM OF HEAVEN; BUT WHOEVER KEEPS AND TEACHES THEM, HE SHALL BE CALLED GREAT IN THE KINGDOM OF HEAVEN. MATTHEW 5:19 [THE SERMON ON THE MOUNT]

RIGHT HERE, YESHUA TELLS US EXACTLY HOW TO BE LEAST IN THE KINGDOM. EVER NOTICE THAT? HE SAYS, "HERE'S HOW TO BE LEAST IN THE KINGDOM, ANNUL ONE OF THE LEAST OF THE COMMANDMENTS AND TEACH OTHERS TO DO THE SAME." WHO WANTS TO BE LEAST IN THE KINGDOM? ANY TAKERS? NO HANDS?

MARTIN KLAYMAN RESPONDS - GREATEST VERSUS THE LEAST COMMANDMENTS

In the first place, it is difficult to see how keeping a collection of ceremonial laws, such as those we find in the TORAH, could possibly please God so much that He would consider them to result in extra special citizens of Heaven. I can hear Jesus now saying, "Marty Klayman! You taught the washing of those ceremonial bowls so well that your descendants never mishandled a single one down through your long blood line till the end-time events stopped Jewish history. For this accomplishment, you get to sit right here at my left hand! Ladies and gentlemen of Heaven! I now present to you the great bowl washer, Martin H. Klayman!"

More seriously, the Jews never thought of the Ten Commandments apart from the TORAH. Jesus mentions the concept of "least commandments," which validly implies that there are contrasting "great" commandments. When Jesus was asked in Matthew 22 which commandments were the greatest, Jesus said that they were the ones to love God supremely and others as yourself. Note that Jesus took these greatest commandments from the other 603 rules and regulations of the TORAH—not from the Ten Commandments part. In the context of His statement about these "least commandments," Jesus begins to amplify the laws against murder, adultery, and divorce. Then, Jesus continues His discussion by focusing on the need to love one's enemies – a theme which seems to fall under the category of the two greatest commandments.

Perhaps these "lesser" commandments are lesser because they are simply statements of moral action and reaction among human beings that hardly need any explanation. Perhaps an illustration from scientific laws will help. You don't have to do much explaining to someone about the Law of Gravity. The Law of Gravity is, perhaps, then, the scientific law that needs the least explanation. You throw a rock up in the air, and it returns to the ground. Similarly, if you steal, the person you stole from may want that item back badly enough to fight you for it, and one or both of you may die in the fight that ensues. On the other hand, Einstein's Law of Relativity requires a much greater effort to explain. One provision of this scientific law is that the faster an object travels, the slower time progresses. Theoretically, if you could accelerate your body to the speed of light or beyond for an extended period of time, when you returned to Earth your friends might be decades older than you!

In contrast with the general moralistic laws of God, the commandment from the Law of Moses that you must love God supremely and your neighbor as yourself is such a profound concept that to understand it fully requires a re-birth by the Holy Spirit.

When Jesus talks about not even the tiniest points of the TORAH being done away with until all is fulfilled, we need to consider the two major themes of the other 603 laws of the TORAH:

One - Adding moralistic laws that were not present in the Ten Commandments.

Two - Defining rituals that related to the concept of Propitiation.

In retrospect, Christians can now look back and see that many of the ceremonial provisions of the TORAH centered around ordinances that pointed forward to the death of the Messiah. There do not seem to be any specific texts in Scripture that support the idea that the Israelites necessarily understood this concept at the time. But the fact is, especially when viewed

in retrospect, that many aspects of the TORAH centered around the propitiation for the sins of those who believed in a coming Messiah. Therefore, since, in reality, the purpose of the TORAH was to point forward to the coming Messiah and His death on the Cross, we can safely say that it is only fitting that St. Paul said the TORAH was nailed to the Cross. It appears that all was fulfilled much sooner than anyone thought at the time.

MARTIN KLAYMAN RESPONDS IN REGARD TO THE CONTEXT OF THIS STATEMENT

Rambo neglects to consider the full context of what Jesus said about the Law and Prophets. You have to take the entire passage to see it. Read it carefully, and you will see that the things Jesus is talking about remain only until EVERYTHING IS ACCOMPLISHED. This part of the statement is the key to understanding the length of the TORAH's jurisdiction. Let us examine Matthew 5 (NIV) in its greater context:

¹⁷“Do not think that I have come to abolish the Law or the Prophets; I have not come to abolish them but to fulfill them. ¹⁸For truly I tell you, until heaven and earth disappear, not the smallest letter, not the least stroke of a pen, **will by any means disappear from the Law until everything is accomplished.** ¹⁹Therefore anyone who sets aside one of the least of these commands and teaches others accordingly will be called least in the kingdom of heaven, but whoever practices and teaches these commands will be called great in the kingdom of heaven. ²⁰For I tell you that unless your righteousness surpasses that of the Pharisees and the teachers of the law, you will certainly not enter the kingdom of heaven.

This passage of Scripture is challenging, as can be realized by studying the various Bible commentaries on it. Therefore, as I write I am not expecting to achieve any particularly great theological breakthrough. My greater versus least commandment theory is only a theory, but these things seem clear:

One - As a Jew, as well as the Author of the Law of Moses, Jesus viewed the Law as 613 rules and regulations that could not be separated from each other. For this one reason alone, we find ourselves moved in the direction of interpreting this passage to mean that the entire TORAH perished at the Cross.

Two - Jesus is discussing righteousness in regard to the Pharisees. Elsewhere in Jesus' sayings and teachings, He rebukes the Pharisees for inventing the practice of Corban, which enabled an Israelite to avoid the responsibility of caring for his aged parents by declaring that his resources were going to be donated to the temple service after his own death. I believe that Jesus is focused on REAL moralistic laws in this passage. This effort to get around the spirit and intent of the moralistic laws of God is surely what Jesus was condemning here. Abandoning one's parents in their old age is not only harmful to society, but it frustrates God's love for His aging people. No one should expect to receive a warm welcome at the Pearly Gates who acted in such a selfish manner here on Earth.

It would be extremely difficult to twist this passage to support the HRM concept that the TORAH must be kept today. Such an idea leads to severe cognitive dissonance. For example, the TORAH requires that two spotless lambs be sacrificed on the weekly Sabbath. The Spotless Lamb of God has already sacrificed Himself. The TORAH is one single unit. You break one of its commandments, and you have broken them all. With the TORAH, it is ALL or NOTHING. Fail to offer two spotless lambs on the weekly Sabbath in the temple at Jerusalem, and you have broken all 613 rules and regulations of the TORAH. Also, if the Sabbath is a “moral” law, as Sabbath-keepers claim, all the Sabbath laws are moral, by virtue of their connection with the “main” “moral” law, and they must be obeyed to the jot or tittle. One of the jots is execution by stoning for breaking these laws.

ELCE “THUNDER”LAURISTON RESPONDS

A profound point to observe from this passage is that Jesus expressly taught that the Law and Prophets (a designation for the entire Old Testament) had a lifespan, beyond which it will cease to be in force. In Matthew v. 17, Jesus made it clear that His mission was not to destroy the Law and Prophets, but to fulfill them. Then, in v.18, Jesus gives the lifespan thereof-

For truly I tell you, until heaven and earth disappear, not the smallest letter, not the least stroke of a pen, **will by any means disappear from the Law until everything is accomplished.**

This text is so easy to understand that one wonders how the HRM and Law-pushers could possibly misconstrue it! In this text Jesus is doing two things:

(1) He is expressing the validity, reliability and purpose of the Law and

(2) He is assuring His listeners that it has a lifespan and will continue to be in force until He fulfills them.

I am quite sure that we all can agree with point #1, therefore I will focus mainly on point #2. In moving forward, I want to pose two questions: What does Jesus mean by saying that He came to fulfill the Law and Prophets? And, did Jesus fulfill the Law and Prophets?

In John 5:39, Jesus said to the religious leaders, "You search the Scriptures because you think that in them you have eternal life; and it is they that bear witness about me." That's right! The Scriptures (Old Testament in this context) testified about Jesus. Further on in v. 46, Jesus said, "For if you believed Moses, you would believe me; for he wrote of me." Indeed, Moses wrote about Jesus in the Law (Genesis to Deuteronomy). The entirety of the Old Testament Scriptures bore witness to Jesus' life, ministry, death, resurrection, and atonement for humanity. And Jesus had to fulfill the Law and Prophets to the letter in order to be the Messiah. Only a novice in the Scriptures will deny this often repeated biblical fact. In verse 17, we observed that Jesus said His mission was to fulfill the Law and Prophets (OT Scriptures). The Greek word πληρῶσαι (plerosai) is from the root word πληρῶ (pleroo) which means "to fill up, to render full or complete (to fill to the top so that nothing is lacking), and (to fill to the brim). This is "progressive fulfillment." Jesus came to progressively fulfill the Old Testament Scriptures until nothing was lacking or left undone. As we read of Jesus' life and ministry in the Gospels, we constantly read how He progressively fulfilled the Scriptures. These few passages will highlight this:

Matt. 1:22-23: - All this took place to fulfill [Gr. pleroo] what the Lord had spoken by the prophet:

²³"Behold, the virgin shall conceive and bear a son, and they shall call his name Immanuel."

Matt. 4:14 - so that what was spoken by the prophet Isaiah might be fulfilled [Gr. pleroo]:

Matt. 21:4-5: - This took place to fulfill [Gr. pleroo] what was spoken by the prophet, saying, ⁵"Say to the daughter of Zion, 'Behold, your king is coming to you, humble, and mounted on a donkey, on a colt, the foal of a beast of burden.'"

Mark 15:28 - So the Scripture was fulfilled [Gr. pleroo] which says, "And He was numbered with the transgressors."

Luke 4:21 - And He began to say to them, "Today this Scripture is fulfilled [Gr. pleroo] in your hearing."

John 13:18 - I do not speak concerning all of you. I know those whom I chose; but that the Scripture may be fulfilled [Gr. pleroo], 'He who eats bread with Me has lifted up his heel against Me.'

Many more Scriptures could have been used but these are sufficient to illustrate my point. Throughout His life and ministry, Jesus progressively fulfilled the Law and Prophets (Old Testament Scriptures).

In the closing scenes of Jesus' ministry, we read these words in John 19,

"After this, when Jesus knew that everything was now accomplished that the Scripture might be fulfilled, He said, "I'm thirsty!" ²⁹A jar full of sour wine was sitting there; so they fixed a sponge full of sour wine on hyssop and held it up to His mouth. ³⁰When Jesus had received the sour wine, He said, "It is finished!" Then bowing His head, He gave up His spirit. (HCSB).

Jesus fulfilled the Law and Prophets! He had stated in Matt. 5:18 that the Law would be in force until "all is accomplished", and at His death we read that everything was now accomplished. Then Jesus said, "IT IS FINISHED." It is interesting to note that the Greek word used in John 19:28 and 30 is not πληρῶ (pleroo) but τελέω (teleo). Whereas pleroo connotes "progressive fulfillment", teleo connotes "consummatory fulfillment" because it means "to bring to a close, to finish, to end, to execute, to complete, etc. Jesus executed and brought to a close what was written in the Law and Prophets about Him. Jesus has fulfilled everything in the Law and Prophets and to suggest otherwise would be bordering on blasphemy! "It is finished" is the Gr. Τετέλεσται (tetelestai). It was written on bills and promissory notes when they were paid off; it is in the perfect passive indicative conjugation and means completed action with unending potency and efficacy. Tetelestai literally means "It has been and continues to be paid in full" or "It stands completed!" There is nothing more that can be added to what Jesus has accomplished on the Cross! He has perfectly met ALL the requirements of the Law and Prophets!

To deny this fact, as the HRM and Law-keepers insist on doing, is to deny Jesus' very Messiah-ship and atonement on Calvary! Furthermore, it would be a denial of Jesus' own testimony concerning Himself! We read in Luke 24:25–27; 44–48:

And he said to them, "O foolish ones, and slow of heart to believe all that the prophets have spoken! ²⁶Was it not necessary that the Christ should suffer these things and enter into his glory?" ²⁷And beginning with Moses and all the Prophets, he interpreted to them in all the Scriptures the things concerning himself... ⁴⁴Then he said to them, "These are my words that I spoke to you while I was still with you, that everything written about me in the Law of Moses and the Prophets and the Psalms must be fulfilled." ⁴⁵Then he opened their minds to understand the Scriptures, ⁴⁶and said to them, "Thus it is written, that the Christ should suffer and on the third day rise from the dead, ⁴⁷and that repentance and forgiveness of sins should be proclaimed in his name to all nations, beginning from Jerusalem. ⁴⁸You are witnesses of these things.

Now that Christ has fulfilled the Law and Prophets, should we go back to law-keeping? Absolutely not! In Gal.3, we read:

"Why then the law? It was added on account of transgressions, **until the seed should come to whom it had been promised**; and it was commanded through angels by the hand of a mediator. ²⁰Now the mediator is not for one person, but God is one. ²¹Therefore, is the law against the promises of God? By no means! For if a law had been given which was able to give life, truly righteousness would have been by the law. ²²But the Scripture has confined all under sin, so that the promise by faith in Jesus Christ might be given to those who believe. ²³**But before faith came, we were kept in custody under the law, having been hemmed in for the faith which was to be revealed.** ²⁴**Therefore the law has become our guardian, leading us to Christ, so that we might be justified by faith.** ²⁵**But after faith has come, we are no longer under a guardian."**

The Law has been fulfilled. Our focus now is on Christ, not on law-keeping. He is the Goal and Consummation of the Law (Rom.10:4) and it is in Him that we find salvation, justification, and righteousness not in reverting to law-keeping (Rom. 3:21-26).

HOHMANN - Verse 19 cites Jesus as saying "these" commandments, and not "the" commandments as if to imply old covenant commandments. "These" commandments follow in the narrative regarding the necessity of having a righteousness that exceeds that of the Pharisees. Their righteousness was based in that old covenant law. Jesus touches on behaviour that goes beyond the letter of that law into the spirit of the law. Jesus also shows the futility of the righteousness found in the law in that it is totally lacking when you factor in the spirit of the law, where just thinking about committing adultery was enough to send you packing off to hell, and the impossibility of a person; even a Pharisee, of avoiding such a fate even if one resorted to the drastic action of plucking out an eye or lopping off a hand.

Ramshackle makes the classic error legalists make; assuming whenever "law" is mentioned, it must mean the legalities of the law, whereas in this case in Matthew 5:17-18, it is about the prophecies found in both the law (first 5 books penned by Moses) and the prophets wherein we find prophecies Jesus came to fulfill. Verse 19 then begins a new thought or expression, where we would normally place the text in a new paragraph; a concept that did not exist in the Greek of that time. A Christian who believes the gospel, but is negligent in applying the teachings of Christ (commandments of His) would indeed find themselves least in the Kingdom of God. A Pharisee whose dedication to the old covenant law that **Rambro** here would pale in comparison, isn't going to see the Kingdom, given what all is stated here in Matthew 5. That righteousness isn't going to "make the cut."

Finally, I would ask, is circumcision a part of this law **Rambro** is discussing? Does he really want to go there? Isn't the New Testament writings clear enough on this point of law?

RAMBO: BELIEVE IT OR NOT, 99% OF ALL CHRISTIAN DENOMINATIONS, FROM ROME TO THE UTMOST PARTS OF THE EARTH, TEACH NOT THAT THE 'LEAST COMMANDMENTS' ARE 'DONE AWAY WITH,' BUT WHOLE CHAPTERS NO LONGER APPLY... MOST REFORMED PRESBYTERIAN DENOMINATIONS ABIDE BY THE WESTMINSTER CONFESSIO OF FAITH. CHAPTER XIX, III SAYS, "ALL WHICH CEREMONIAL LAWS ARE NOW ABROGATED, UNDER THE NEW TESTAMENT." THE DICTIONARY SAYS THAT 'ABROGATED' MEANS 'ANNULLED,' THEREFORE THIS DOCUMENT, DRAFTED BY MEN DIRECTLY CONTRADICTS THE WORDS OF YESHUA. WHO DO WE BELIEVE? THE WESTMINSTER DIVINES? OR, THE DIVINE MESSIAH? DO WE WANT TO BE LEAST IN THE KINGDOM? OR, GREAT? HMMM... SEEMS LIKE A NO-BRAINER, BUT THEN VERSES LIKE THIS ONE DEMAND THAT WE USE OUR BRAIN AND SWIM AGAINST THE TIDE OF THEOLOGICAL

EDITOR'S NOTE - THE ABOVE TRANSLATED INTO PLAIN ENGLISH

Rambo claims that the popular Christian churches are disobeying Christ's statement that not one single law of the TORAH is to perish. Rambo claims that there is not any scriptural authority to terminate any of the laws of the TORAH-- not even the ceremonial ones.

MARTIN KLAYMAN RESPONDS

Since the TORAH perished, and rightfully so at the Cross, the Christian Church is entirely right to "confess" that all the "ceremonial" laws have been nailed to the Cross. The "Westminster Divines" of the Christian world are correct! Cognitive dissonance is unavoidable unless they are right. Christianity must make sense. God is the God of logic. Ceremonial laws were literally made to be broken at some time in the future. Looking back in retrospect from the Christian Era, many of the laws of the TORAH governed ceremonial pathways that, in one way or another, pointed to Christ's future death. But the "future" is passed. We are living now in days of future, passed.

WHAT WERE THE GREATEST AND THE LEAST COMMANDMENTS?

We have already examined this question. Recall that when Jesus was asked which commandment was the greatest, Jesus cited one that was part of the Law of Moses but which was not from The Ten Commandments:

Matthew 22:36-40 - (NIV)

³⁶ "Teacher, which is the greatest commandment in the Law?"

³⁷ Jesus replied: "Love the Lord your God with all your heart and with all your soul and with all your mind."^[a] ³⁸ This is the first and greatest commandment. ³⁹ And the second is like it: 'Love your neighbor as yourself.'^[b] ⁴⁰ All the Law and the Prophets hang on these two commandments."

Once again, note that Jesus chose the two greatest commandments, not from the Ten Commandments part of the Law of Moses, but from the other 603 rules and regulations of the TORAH. Therefore, the Ten Commandments could be considered "lesser" in the light of these two greatest commandments.

THE LAW OF MOSES DID GET ABROGATED

The secret agenda of some, but not all, of the Hebrew Roots Movement's leaders, appears to be an effort to save the "baby" along with the wash. To some of them, the "baby" is the preservation of the seventh-day Sabbath. They seem to feign a concern for the fate of the ceremonial laws of the TORAH because you can't hang onto the Sabbath unless you take the ceremonial laws along with you.

To an objective onlooker, this is nothing but silly business. Every moralistic law, including those which regulate deviant sexual behavior, are fully covered in the New Covenant in the many lists of sins recorded by the apostles in their epistles.

Note that Jeremiah prophesied that a new covenant would replace the present covenant Israel was living under. From Jeremiah 31:31-34 (NIV):

³¹ "The days are coming," declares the Lord,
"when I will make a new covenant
with the people of Israel
and with the people of Judah.

³² It will not be like the covenant
I made with their ancestors
when I took them by the hand
to lead them out of Egypt,
because they broke my covenant,
though I was a husband to them,"
declares the Lord.

³³ "This is the covenant I will make with the people of Israel

after that time," declares the Lord.
"I will put my law in their minds
and write it on their hearts.
I will be their God,
and they will be my people.
³⁴No longer will they teach their neighbor,
or say to one another, 'Know the Lord,'
because they will all know me,
from the least of them to the greatest,"
declares the Lord.
"For I will forgive their wickedness
and will remember their sins no more."

WHY THE OLD COVENANT – THE LAW OF MOSES – NEEDED REPLACEMENT

Look at this unusual provision of the TORAH and see if you think that Jesus would have wanted to make it a whole lot better. Jesus said that He had come to magnify the Law, and this is certainly one of the laws of the TORAH that needed to be magnified:

A soldier who captures a beautiful girl in combat has special sexual privileges with her which are not typical of the other pronouncements governing sexual conduct in the Law. While the warrior is allowed to keep her in his own home, he must shave her head to baldness and spend 30 days talking to her first. Then he is allowed to rape her. Then he must marry her or discharge her honorably to be a respected Gentile citizen of Israel. (Deut. 21:10-14)

Is it possible that this odd provision of the LAW was given to Israel because of the hardness of their hearts? Jesus said the Law of Moses permitted divorce only because of the hardness of the people's hearts, and then He explained that divorce was only to be permitted in cases of adultery.

If Jesus were to have addressed the problem of sexual conduct related to military operations, would He not have amplified it also? If Jesus had included this upgrade of the "covenant," He might have said something like this:

It has been said unto you that if a warrior of Israel captures a beautiful woman in combat, he can take her to his house, shave her head, and then rape her after 30 days whether she wants to marry him or not, or whether he wants to marry her or not. But I say unto you that Moses gave you this law because of the hardness of you hearts. Behold, I give you a new command. From now on, the warrior must take her to the home of his parents, the home of a family member, or the home of a priest and his wife. There she is to be treated with honor and respect while she is taught how to worship the True God in Spirit and in truth for thirty days. He must not touch her under any circumstances during this time, although he is encouraged to visit her daily and spend hours getting acquainted with her under the proper chaperonage of her hosts. If she becomes a worshiper of the True God, the warrior may marry her, but only if she wants him as her husband. If she doesn't want to marry him, or if she does not want to marry him, she is to be released from that household to become a full-fledged citizen of Israel, whether that citizenship be that of a Jew or a Gentile. The warrior is not to marry her unless she becomes a worshipper of the True God, since otherwise they would be unequally yoked together.

Note that if the TORAH applies to Christians today, we have to let our soldier boys take liberties with the women they capture in war that no truly Christian boy would think for even a moment was right! And since the greatest law is to do unto others as you would have them do unto you, the boy would have to think to himself, "If I were her, how would I like to be treated? I certainly wouldn't want to get raped!" Is there any girl alive who would want a soldier who captured her to shave off her head and rape her thirty days later before marrying her or setting her free?

Perhaps this one example is evidence that the TORAH was obsolete and needed to be replaced with things like the teachings and sayings of Jesus, such as the Sermon on the Mount.

In studying various rabbinical commentaries on this puzzling TORAH law, the general consensus is that God granted this unusual provision to the soldiers of Israel because of what we would consider the hardness of their hearts. Boys will be boys, but if you can make them feel like they are obeying the law but still might get what they want if they follow the

guideline, they might have a long enough time to think about what they are doing to see the injustice of treating the captured woman with anything less than the same respect that they would want if they were in her place. Additionally, the MISHNAH, further regulates this law so that a soldier would be even less likely to rape his beautiful captive. In Israel's Jewish court system, the TORAH and MISHNAH worked together to administrate the 613 rules and regulations of the TORAH. Recall that the Jews believed that the MISHNAH's earliest content was the oral law that God gave Moses on Mt. Sinai. Recall also that the Pharisees rejected all other parts of the oral law except the MISHNAH, complaining that all these other parts of the law were, unlike the MISHNAH, simply the opinions of men and were not divinely inspired or guided. And, as we mention elsewhere, Jesus validated the following points about the MISHNAH's teachings: (1) No Sabbath until Exodus 16. (2) Sabbath for Israel and Israel alone. (3) Gentiles may not keep the Sabbath without converting to Judaism and complying with the Ordinance of Circumcision.

What we have recently learned about the attitude of the Pharisees to the different parts of Israel's oral law explains why Jesus commanded His followers to obey the teachings of the Pharisees. In doing so, Jesus validated the continuance of the moralistic laws expressed in the MISHNAH into the Christian dispensation, even if these laws were not spelled out in detail by New Testament authors. The MISHNAH comments on all the sins of sexual perversion. For the most part, the dual court system of Israel required that both its Gentile and Jewish citizens be stoned to death for these sins. In the Sermon on the Mount and other sayings and teachings of Jesus, the Law of Moses most certainly did get magnified. He who lusts after a woman commits adultery with her in his heart. He who hates someone is guilty of murder.

Sabbath-keepers, and HRM thinkers especially, like to declare that the only difference between the Old Covenant and the New Covenant is that the New Covenant would have the SAME old laws, but those same old laws would be written on the hearts of the people. This concept makes no sense, as Jesus dramatically altered the content of the Old Covenant in the Sermon on the Mount and in His other sayings and teachings. The content of the covenant is what matters. A book is still the same book whether it is leather bound, a paperback, or a Kindle digital book.

Jesus definitely altered the content of the Old Covenant by the expanded moralistic teachings He gave but this limitation is self-serving and only intended to keep the Sabbath "baby" along with the wash.

POINT NUMBER TWO

IN ACTS CHAPTERS 6 AND 7 WE READ THE STORY OF THE FIRST MARTYR, STEPHEN. HAVE YOU EVER PAID ATTENTION TO WHY HE WAS MARTYRED? EXACTLY HOW DID HE WIND UP BEFORE THE SANHEDRIN? THIS VERSE WILL SHAKE UP SOME THEOLOGY.

THEY PUT FORWARD FALSE WITNESSES WHO SAID, "THIS MAN INCESSANTLY SPEAKS AGAINST THIS HOLY PLACE AND THE LAW; 14 FOR WE HAVE HEARD HIM SAY THAT THIS NAZARENE, JESUS, WILL DESTROY THIS PLACE AND ALTER THE CUSTOMS WHICH MOSES HANDED DOWN TO US." ACTS 6:13-14

STEPHEN WAS STONED TO DEATH FOR 'TEACHING AGAINST THE TEMPLE AND AGAINST THE TORAH!' HOWEVER, THE SANHEDRIN HAD TO USE FALSE WITNESSES TO BRING THE CHARGES. FALSE WITNESSES!! LET THAT SINK IN.

DO YOU KNOW WHAT THAT MEANS? YEP, IT MEANS STEPHEN, A MAN FILLED WITH THE HOLY SPIRIT, IN THE MONTHS OR YEAR IMMEDIATELY FOLLOWING THE RESURRECTION OF MESSIAH WAS NOT TEACHING AGAINST THE LAW. IN FACT, HE WAS ZEALOUS FOR MOSES AS WE'LL SEE IN A MINUTE.

IRONICALLY, 99% OF CHRISTENDOM TODAY COULD BE CHARGED WITH 'TEACHING AGAINST THE TEMPLE AND THE TORAH' AND THE CHARGES WOULD BE TRUE! HMMM...

BY IMPLICATION OF THE TESTIMONY OF THESE FALSE WITNESSES, YESHUA DID NOT "ALTER THE CUSTOMS WHICH MOSES HANDED DOWN TO US." PARADIGM SHIFTER!

MARTIN KLAYMAN RESPONDS

Rambo's statement is another prime example of reverse logic. Stephen preached the death and resurrection of Christ. When Christ died, the veil of the temple was ripped apart, signifying that its services were no longer needed. The very nature of the Gospel message teaches that there is no longer any need for a temple and its sacrificial system. A careful reading of this story, together with a little common sense, indicates the real reason why the two witnesses against Paul were

false witnesses. See Acts 6 and Acts 7 for the entire context of this story:

⁸Now Stephen, a man full of God's grace and power, performed great wonders and signs among the people. ⁹Opposition arose, however, from members of the Synagogue of the Freedmen (as it was called)—Jews of Cyrene and Alexandria as well as the provinces of Cilicia and Asia—who began to argue with Stephen. ¹⁰But they could not stand up against the wisdom the Spirit gave him as he spoke.

¹¹Then they secretly persuaded some men to say, **“We have heard Stephen speak blasphemous words against Moses and against God.”**

¹²So they stirred up the people and the elders and the teachers of the law. They seized Stephen and brought him before the Sanhedrin. ¹³They produced false witnesses, who testified, **“This fellow never stops speaking against this holy place and against the law. ¹⁴For we have heard him say that this Jesus of Nazareth will destroy this place and change the customs Moses handed down to us.”**

The witness of these men was false, not because what they said was not true, but because the witnesses had not actually heard Stephen say these things.

If you read Stephen's speech that led to his stoning, he, in fact, in essence, and unavoidably by the very nature of the Gospel, did teach against the temple. He told them that God didn't need a temple to live in. Note from Acts 7:45-50 (NIV), the words of Stephen:

⁴⁵After receiving the tabernacle, our ancestors under Joshua brought it with them when they took the land from the nations God drove out before them. It remained in the land until the time of David,

⁴⁶who enjoyed God's favor and asked that he might provide a dwelling place for the God of Jacob.[k]

⁴⁷But it was Solomon who built a house for him.

⁴⁸“However, the Most High does not live in houses made by human hands. As the prophet says:

⁴⁹“Heaven is my throne,

and the earth is my footstool.

What kind of house will you build for me?

says the Lord.

Or where will my resting place be?

⁵⁰Has not my hand made all these things?

Stephen spoke against the temple with these words.

There is no evidence in the Scriptures that Stephen was “jealous” for Moses or that he believed the Law of Moses continued after the Cross. Rambo extracts this idea from Scripture by invoking something like magical textual extraction via reverse logic. The truth is that there is little evidence in the account of Stephen's stoning to indicate whether he was for the Law or against it. Stephen got stoned because he told the Jews the truth about their evil ways, and his hearers got very angry.

As we pointed out before, the TORAH had to end at the Cross because, as we see in retrospect, its sacrificial provisions were designed to cause the Hebrew worshipper to think forward to the death of the coming Messiah, which represented the real propitiation for their sins. Moses' first hint at the coming of a Propitiator was in connection with the prophecy God gave to Adam and Eve at the Fall in Genesis 3:14-15 (NIV):

¹⁴So the Lord God said to the serpent, “Because you have done this,

“Cursed are you above all livestock

and all wild animals!

You will crawl on your belly

and you will eat dust

all the days of your life.

¹⁵And I will put enmity

between you and the woman,

and between your offspring and hers;

**he will crush your head,
and you will strike his heel.”**

In AD 70, with the destruction of the temple, TORAH-keeping became literally impossible. Recall that the Israelites could only offer animal sacrifices at the temple in Jerusalem. If the TORAH could not possibly be kept in AD 71, it cannot be kept today.

HOHMANN – [Rambunctious](#) here overlooks the blatantly obvious. The issue was never about whether the Jewish Christians quit keeping the law, but rather whether it was required of the gentile converts to Christianity. The answer, according to the leadership of the church, was “no.” The gentiles did not have to become “Jews” first in order to become Christians second.

POINT NUMBER THREE

THE APOSTLE PAUL, IN COMING UP TO JERUSALEM TO GIVE A REPORT [OF GOD’S WORK AMONG THE GENTILES], TELLS OF THE WONDERS BEING WORKED IN ASIA MINOR. ACTS 21:20 RELATES TO US THE EXCITED RESPONSE ABOUT THOSE WHO BELIEVED IN JERUSALEM:

AND WHEN THEY HEARD IT THEY BEGAN GLORIFYING GOD; AND THEY SAID TO HIM, “YOU SEE, BROTHER, HOW MANY THOUSANDS THERE ARE AMONG THE JEWS OF THOSE WHO HAVE BELIEVED, AND THEY ARE ALL ZEALOUS FOR THE LAW-- ACTS 21:20

BELIEF IN MESSIAH DOES NOT NEGATE OR NULLIFY THE TORAH. RATHER, IT SHOULD INCREASE OUR ZEAL FOR OBEDIENCE OUT OF LOVE!

HERE’S A QUESTION: DO THEOLOGIANS, 1,000 TO 2,000 YEARS REMOVED FROM JERUSALEM AND THE APOSTLES KNOW MORE THAN JAMES AND PAUL AND ALL THE ELDERS WHO ARE STANDING HERE WITNESSING THIS MEETING? ... I DIDN’T THINK SO. THIS VERSE IS PARADIGM-SHIFTING.

MARTIN KLAYMAN RESPONDS

Belief in the Messiah absolutely does nullify the TORAH because it was largely about propitiation. If you believe that Jesus was God and that He died on the Cross for your sins, there is no longer any room for the TORAH. It is the demonstration of the incredible love of Christ for us sinners that chips away at our desire for sin that results in our obedience. Sin is not difficult for the born-again Christian to grasp. Anything that doesn’t proceed from Faith is sin. Not loving God supremely and not loving your neighbor as yourself is sin.

Consider the fact that there is no law in Scripture, Old Covenant or New Covenant, and forbids the sin of polygamy. It is not forbidden by the Law of Moses. It is not mentioned in any of the lists of sins spelled out by New Testament writers. King David had many wives and concubines, and yet God called him a man after His own heart! At the same time, everyone, man or woman, recognizes that polygamy is one of the worst imaginable sins on Earth. The troubles! The heartbreak! The jealousy! The effect on the children! Only one of the GREATEST laws is able to handle this one. We are to love our neighbor as we love ourselves. No man who loves a woman – really loves a woman – is in any mood to share her with any other man. We can only wonder about how many husbands and boyfriends have killed a man who dared to mess with his woman. Sometimes the jealous man kills both the rival man and the unfaithful woman. No one would dare say that a man could not understand the situation in reverse – that if he were a woman, he would not be in any mood to share her man with one or more other women. One of the greatest commandments steps in and provides absolutely clear moral direction in the question of polygamy.

One of the most constant themes throughout Judaism is that neither Jew nor Gentile can keep the Sabbath without the head of the household complying with the Ordinance of Circumcision. No circumcision! No Law of Moses! No Sabbath-keeping! No ceremonies can be enacted. There is nothing left of Judaism. This is an immovable FACT of the Jewish faith and the Law and the Prophets. The Hebrew Roots Movement teachings are biblically impossible, since the Ordinance of Circumcision is no longer a requirement.

In AD 50, a group of apostles met at the Council of Jerusalem to determine what Christianity would be like for the new Gentile converts coming into the church. The Ordinance of Circumcision was nixed! This action made it impossible for a

Gentile to keep the Sabbath or TORAH because, with the exception of eunuchs, circumcision was an unwavering requirement. There is no excuse for any discussion about Sabbath-keeping or TORAH keeping after AD 50. In fact, we should not have to have this present discussion. Let's look at Acts 15:1-19 (NIV):

Certain people came down from Judea to Antioch and were teaching the believers: "Unless you are circumcised, according to the custom taught by Moses, you cannot be saved." ²This brought Paul and Barnabas into sharp dispute and debate with them. So Paul and Barnabas were appointed, along with some other believers, to go up to Jerusalem to see the apostles and elders about this question. ³The church sent them on their way, and as they traveled through Phoenicia and Samaria, they told how the Gentiles had been converted. This news made all the believers very glad. ⁴When they came to Jerusalem, they were welcomed by the church and the apostles and elders, to whom they reported everything God had done through them.

⁵Then some of the believers who belonged to the party of the Pharisees stood up and said, "The Gentiles must be circumcised and required to keep the law of Moses."

⁶The apostles and elders met to consider this question. ⁷After much discussion, Peter got up and addressed them: "Brothers, you know that some time ago God made a choice among you that the Gentiles might hear from my lips the message of the gospel and believe. ⁸God, who knows the heart, showed that he accepted them by giving the Holy Spirit to them, just as he did to us. ⁹**He did not discriminate between us and them, for he purified their hearts by faith.** ¹⁰**Now then, why do you try to test God by putting on the necks of Gentiles a yoke that neither we nor our ancestors have been able to bear?** ¹¹No! We believe it is through the grace of our Lord Jesus that we are saved, just as they are."

¹²The whole assembly became silent as they listened to Barnabas and Paul telling about the signs and wonders God had done among the Gentiles through them. ¹³When they finished, James spoke up. "Brothers," he said, "listen to me. ¹⁴Simon has described to us how God first intervened to choose a people for his name from the Gentiles. ¹⁵The words of the prophets are in agreement with this, as it is written:

¹⁶"After this I will return
and rebuild David's fallen tent.

Its ruins I will rebuild,
and I will restore it,

¹⁷that the rest of mankind may seek the Lord,
even all the Gentiles who bear my name,
says the Lord, who does these things—

¹⁸things known from long ago.

¹⁹"It is my judgment, therefore, that we should not make it difficult for the Gentiles who are turning to God. ²⁰Instead we should write to them, telling them to abstain from food polluted by idols, from sexual immorality, from the meat of strangled animals and from blood. ²¹**For the law of Moses has been preached in every city from the earliest times and is read in the synagogues on every Sabbath.**"

First, we need to deal with Verse 21. It seems to be just tacked on at the end. We have to discuss all possibilities to be fair with this Scripture. **Possibility #1** - Peter was saying that despite narrowing it down to three basics, the Gentiles had to keep all 613 laws of the TORAH. This possibility is not logical, so it should be discarded. **Possibility #2** - Peter is trying to clarify that it is OK for the Jews to maintain their extra dietary laws and other customs, so he would not be misunderstood to be saying that Jews who wanted to keep more aspects of the Law of Moses were not supposed to. Peter was, therefore, trying to reduce the chance of causing dissension with the Jewish believers. This possibility seems to make sense.

Possibility #2 makes even better sense when we understand that the transition of the Christians in Jerusalem away from the Law and the temple services toward the full Gospel of Christ as articulated by St. Paul was much more gradual than was characteristic of the Gentile churches. The temple was there, and the TORAH was focused on laws that could only be observed at the temple in Jerusalem. The temple was destroyed in AD 70. After that there was no possibility of keeping the

TORAH! Sabbath-keeping was not presented by St. Paul as a sin – just as not a requirement.

It does not appear that The Council of Jerusalem changed what the Gentile believers were observing. The Council, rather, represented a message to the Jewish believers that what the Gentile believers were practicing was acceptable within the Christian faith. Historically, there is no evidence that the Gentile congregations ever kept the Sabbath. By contrast, the church in Jerusalem appears to have clung to Sabbath-keeping and the observance of some of the portions of the TORAH until the temple was destroyed in 70 AD, after which observing the TORAH was impossible.

Meanwhile, the Gentile church flourished and spread the Gospel to the entire world because of its emphasis on Grace. As the former SDA theologian, Robert D. Brinsmead once observed, if it hadn't been for the Gentile church, Christianity would all but have disappeared from the face of the earth.

POINT NUMBER FOUR

4. JUST A COUPLE VERSES LATER MAY BE THE SINGLE MOST SHOCKING VERSE IN THE NEW TESTAMENT FOR MOST CHRISTIANS. AS A PASTOR, WHEN I READ AND FULLY UNDERSTOOD THIS VERSE, IT TOTALLY ROCKED MY WORLD.

THEN PAUL TOOK THE MEN, AND THE NEXT DAY, PURIFYING HIMSELF ALONG WITH THEM, WENT INTO THE TEMPLE GIVING NOTICE OF THE COMPLETION OF THE DAYS OF PURIFICATION, UNTIL THE SACRIFICE WAS OFFERED FOR EACH ONE OF THEM-- ACTS 21:26

YEP, YOU JUST READ THAT PAUL, THE APOSTLE AND POSSIBLE AUTHOR OF HEBREWS, WAS 'IN THE TEMPLE' OFFERING 'SACRIFICES' SOME 20+ YEARS AFTER THE DAMASCUS ROAD EXPERIENCE. HE WAS SEIZED, NOT FOR OFFERING SACRIFICES, BUT FOR 'ALLEGEDLY' BRINGING GENTILES INTO THE TEMPLE COURTS. (FALSE WITNESSES AGAIN...)

PAUL WAS OFFERING SACRIFICES IN THE TEMPLE. PONDER THE SIGNIFICANCE TO MOST THEOLOGY THAT SAYS 'THE SACRIFICIAL SYSTEM HAS BEEN DONE AWAY WITH'.... YES, THIS IS REALLY HEAVY, BUT IT IS A REALITY IN SCRIPTURE THAT MUST BE DEALT WITH.

ZECHARIAH 14:21 SPEAKS OF FUTURE SACRIFICES. SO DOES EZEKIEL 43 AND 44. PARTS OF ISAIAH ALLUDE TO THE SAME... HERE IS ONE POST DIGGING DEEPER INTO THIS PARADIGM-SHIFTING TOPIC.

MARTIN KLAYMAN RESPONDS

In First Corinthians 9:20, Paul talks about how his main goal is winning souls, and that in order to do that he will blend in the best he possibly can with any group so as not to offend anyone and thus destroy his ability to witness for the Gospel. This explains Paul's willingness to blend in with the Jewish traditions of the Jewish Christians in Jerusalem.

HOHMANN – I don't know what translation [Ramble](#) is citing, but verse 27 makes it clear enough that the 7 days were not yet completed and therefore their sacrifices had not yet been performed. Was Christ manipulating the circumstances to see to it that this did not happen? Regardless, [Ramble](#), the "pastor" here has no difficulty in misrepresenting the passage in order to suit his own purpose, claiming Paul did indeed offer a sacrifice. The issue is rendered moot regardless, when you understand the back story. This all was not Paul's idea. The leaders of the church there wanted Paul to allay the claims and fears of the Jewish Christians that he was teaching the Jews elsewhere to abandon Moses and the law by demonstrating that he kept the law, being a Jew himself. Nothing in the narrative here then relates to gentiles keeping the law or being taught to keep the law. But there is something here easily overlooked. Paul WAS teaching that the gentiles did not have to keep the law, and some of these Christian Jews thought, as a result, he was teaching Jewish Christians not to keep the law. If, as [Rambutt](#) claims, Paul was indeed teaching gentiles to keep the law, then where do you suppose this rumor came from? The reader should take a good look at Acts chapter 21 here, with an emphasis on verse 25.

Martin Klayman continues;

Let us look at the texts Rambo cites:

In regard to Zachariah 14.20,21 –

²⁰On that day holy to the Lord will be inscribed on the bells of the horses, and the cooking pots in the Lord's house will be like the sacred bowls in front of the altar. ²¹Every pot in Jerusalem and Judah will

be holy to the Lord Almighty, and all who come to sacrifice will take some of the pots and cook in them. And **on that day** there will no longer be a Canaanite^[c] in the house of the Lord Almighty.

The phrase, "ON THAT DAY," is one typically used by Old Testament prophets to refer to end-times prophecies. This prophecy cannot possibly apply to the Christian Church of today, since the temple was destroyed in 70 AD, making compliance with the TORAH literally impossible.

Biblical scholars, and especially students of end-times prophecy, tend to see this prophecy as either a reference to what the history of Israel would have been like if it had accepted its Messiah at His first Advent or what Israel would be like during end-time events. Recall that, so far, the end-times interpretation seems the most reasonable, since, just like the prophets said would happen, Israel miraculously was gathered from the four corners of the world to become its own nation again in 1948. Look at the entire chapter of Zechariah 14 to grasp this concept. Adventists will find this line of Bible prophecy difficult to grasp, since Ellen White misled her followers by teaching that the pope of Rome is the AntiChrist of end times:

Zechariah 14 (NIV):

The Lord Comes and Reigns

A day of the Lord is coming, Jerusalem, when your possessions will be plundered and divided up within your very walls.

²I will gather all the nations to Jerusalem to fight against it; the city will be captured, the houses ransacked, and the women raped. Half of the city will go into exile, but the rest of the people will not be taken from the city. ³Then the Lord will go out and fight against those nations, as he fights on a day of battle. ⁴On that day his feet will stand on the Mount of Olives, east of Jerusalem, and the Mount of Olives will be split in two from east to west, forming a great valley, with half of the mountain moving north and half moving south. ⁵You will flee by my mountain valley, for it will extend to Azel. You will flee as you fled from the earthquake in the days of Uzziah king of Judah. Then the Lord my God will come, and all the holy ones with him.

⁶On that day there will be neither sunlight nor cold, frosty darkness. ⁷It will be a unique day—a day known only to the Lord—with no distinction between day and night. When evening comes, there will be light.

⁸On that day living water will flow out from Jerusalem, half of it east to the Dead Sea and half of it west to the Mediterranean Sea, in summer and in winter.

⁹The Lord will be king over the whole earth. On that day there will be one Lord, and his name the only name.

¹⁰The whole land, from Geba to Rimmon, south of Jerusalem, will become like the Arabah. But Jerusalem will be raised up high from the Benjamin Gate to the site of the First Gate, to the Corner Gate, and from the Tower of Hananel to the royal winepresses, and will remain in its place. ¹¹It will be inhabited; never again will it be destroyed. Jerusalem will be secure.

¹²This is the plague with which the Lord will strike all the nations that fought against Jerusalem: Their flesh will rot while they are still standing on their feet, their eyes will rot in their sockets, and their tongues will rot in their mouths. ¹³On that day people will be stricken by the Lord with great panic. They will seize each other by the hand and attack one another. ¹⁴Judah too will fight at Jerusalem. The wealth of all the surrounding nations will be collected—great quantities of gold and silver and clothing. ¹⁵A similar plague will strike the horses and mules, the camels and donkeys, and all the animals in those camps.

¹⁶Then the survivors from all the nations that have attacked Jerusalem will go up year after year to worship the King, the Lord Almighty, and to celebrate the Festival of Tabernacles. ¹⁷If any of the peoples of the earth do not go up to Jerusalem to worship the King, the Lord Almighty, they will have no rain. ¹⁸If the Egyptian people do not go up and take part, they will have no rain. The Lord[b] will bring on them the plague he inflicts on the nations that do not go up to celebrate the Festival of Tabernacles. ¹⁹This will be the punishment of Egypt and the punishment of all the nations that do not go up to celebrate the Festival of Tabernacles.

²⁰On that day holy to the Lord will be inscribed on the bells of the horses, and the cooking pots in the Lord's house will be like the sacred bowls in front of the altar. ²¹Every pot in Jerusalem and Judah will be holy to the Lord Almighty, and all who come to sacrifice will take some of the pots and cook in them. And on that day there will no longer be a Canaanite in the house of the Lord Almighty.

Note how Zechariah and Ezekiel seem to correlate their prophecies of Israel, despite the fact that they wrote in different generations:

In regard to Ezekiel 43:

GOD'S GLORY RETURNS TO THE TEMPLE

Then the man brought me to the gate facing east, ²and I saw the glory of the God of Israel coming from the east. His voice was like the roar of rushing waters, and the land was radiant with his glory. ³The vision I saw was like the vision I had seen when he^[a] came to destroy the city and like the visions I had seen by the Kebar River, and I fell facedown. ⁴The glory of the Lord entered the temple through the gate facing east. ⁵Then the Spirit lifted me up and brought me into the inner court, and the glory of the Lord filled the temple.

⁶While the man was standing beside me, I heard someone speaking to me from inside the temple. ⁷He said: "Son of man, this is the place of my throne and the place for the soles of my feet. This is where I will live among the Israelites forever. The people of Israel will never again defile my holy name—neither they nor their kings—by their prostitution and the funeral offerings^[b] for their kings at their death.^[c] ⁸When they placed their threshold next to my threshold and their doorposts beside my doorposts, with only a wall between me and them, they defiled my holy name by their detestable practices. So I destroyed them in my anger. ⁹Now let them put away from me their prostitution and the funeral offerings for their kings, and I will live among them forever.

¹⁰"Son of man, describe the temple to the people of Israel, that they may be ashamed of their sins. Let them consider its perfection, ¹¹and if they are ashamed of all they have done, make known to them the design of the temple—its arrangement, its exits and entrances—its whole design and all its regulations^[d] and laws. Write these down before them so that they may be faithful to its design and follow all its regulations.

¹²"This is the law of the temple: All the surrounding area on top of the mountain will be most holy. Such is the law of the temple.

THE GREAT ALTAR RESTORED

¹³"These are the measurements of the altar in long cubits,^[e] that cubit being a cubit and a handbreadth: Its gutter is a cubit deep and a cubit wide, with a rim of one span^[f] around the edge. And this is the height of the altar: ¹⁴From the gutter on the ground up to the lower ledge that goes around the altar it is two cubits high, and the ledge is a cubit wide.^[g] From this lower ledge to the upper ledge that goes around the altar it is four cubits high, and that ledge is also a cubit wide.^[h] ¹⁵Above that, the altar hearth is four cubits high, and four horns project upward from the hearth. ¹⁶The altar hearth is square, twelve cubits^[i] long and twelve cubits wide. ¹⁷The upper ledge also is square, fourteen cubits^[j] long and fourteen cubits wide. All around the altar is a gutter of one cubit with a rim of half a cubit.^[k] The steps of the altar face east."

¹⁸Then he said to me, "Son of man, this is what the Sovereign Lord says: These will be the regulations for sacrificing burnt offerings and splashing blood against the altar when it is built: ¹⁹You are to give a young bull as a sin offering^[l] to the Levitical priests of the family of Zadok, who come near to minister before me, declares the Sovereign Lord. ²⁰You are to take some of its blood and put it on the four horns of the altar and on the four corners of the upper ledge and all around the rim, and so purify the altar and make atonement for it. ²¹You are to take the bull for the sin offering and burn it in the designated part of the temple area outside the sanctuary.

²²"On the second day you are to offer a male goat without defect for a sin offering, and the altar is to be purified as it was purified with the bull. ²³When you have finished purifying it, you are to offer a young bull and a ram from the flock, both without defect. ²⁴You are to offer them before the Lord,

and the priests are to sprinkle salt on them and sacrifice them as a burnt offering to the Lord.

²⁵“For seven days you are to provide a male goat daily for a sin offering; you are also to provide a young bull and a ram from the flock, both without defect. ²⁶For seven days they are to make atonement for the altar and cleanse it; thus they will dedicate it. ²⁷At the end of these days, from the eighth day on, the priests are to present your burnt offerings and fellowship offerings on the altar. Then I will accept you, declares the Sovereign Lord.”

EZEKIEL 44:24

“In any dispute, the priests are to serve as judges and decide it according to my ordinances. They are to keep my laws and my decrees for all my appointed festivals, and they are to keep my Sabbaths holy.

It is extremely difficult to try to apply this prophecy to the Christian church. God’s glory has not yet returned to the temple. In fact the temple in Jerusalem was destroyed in AD 70. **If this prophecy is going to be fulfilled, the temple at Jerusalem has to be built again.** Many students of Bible prophecy believe that Scripture teaches that the temple will be rebuilt at some time after the Children of Israel are gathered back to their homeland. This event, nothing short of a miracle, occurred in 1948.

Also, we find language that is characteristic of what Israel would have been like if it had accepted the Messiah at His first advent or that would apply to the restoration of the temple services at end of time should such an interpretation of last day events afford such. It appears “for all the world” to be highly symbolic language that expresses God’s invitation to Israel to return to Him and enjoy His blessings whether temporal or spiritual. If Israel had accepted its Messiah, the “End Times” would have arrived 2,000 years ago, and the history of Planet Earth for these two millenniums would have been greatly different.

Our readers might also be interested to see how these prophecies fit into the category of end-times prophecies by reading Larry Dean’s new chapter on the Turkish anti-Christ, which is also new to the 11th Edition.

POINT NUMBER FIVE

5. HAVING READ AND WRESTLED WITH THE PREVIOUS QUESTION, MANY COME TO THE CONCLUSION THAT PAUL WAS JUST ACTING ACCORDING TO CUSTOM AND MEANT NO THEOLOGICAL HARM. WHILE THIS WOULD MAKE HIM OUT TO BE A LIAR, LET’S JUST GO TO ONE OF FOUR OF HIS LEGAL TESTIMONIES.

AFTER PAUL ARRIVED, THE JEWS WHO HAD COME DOWN FROM JERUSALEM STOOD AROUND HIM, BRINGING MANY AND SERIOUS CHARGES AGAINST HIM WHICH THEY COULD NOT PROVE, 8 WHILE PAUL SAID IN HIS OWN DEFENSE, “I HAVE COMMITTED NO OFFENSE EITHER AGAINST THE LAW OF THE JEWS OR AGAINST THE TEMPLE OR AGAINST CAESAR.” ACTS 25:7-8

AHHH, THE PRESENCE OF FALSE WITNESSES. PAUL, BY HIS OWN TESTIMONY CLEARLY STATES THAT HE HAS NOT COMMITTED OFFENSE AGAINST THE TORAH OR THE TEMPLE.

EITHER HE IS LYING, OR HE IS TELLING THE TRUTH.

MARTIN KLAYMAN RESPONDS

What Rambo has said above indicates that he has created a straw man argument so he can knock down something that doesn’t exist. None of the apostles fought against the Gentiles being under the Law more than St. Paul. He DID tell them they didn’t have to be circumcised. It was his desire to be everything to all people to advance the Gospel that Paul wanted to showcase his respect for the Jewish customs of the Jewish Christians at Jerusalem that created the difficulties he found himself in. All Paul said is that he had not committed any offense against the Law of the Jews or against the temple within the confines of this one temple incident!

There is no issue here of any benefit to the Hebrew Roots Movement. While Paul demonstrated his respect for Jewish customs, he DID publicly teach while he was among the Gentiles that they did not have to be circumcised.

RE: IF PAUL IS LYING, CAN WE TRUST ANYTHING ELSE HE HAS WRITTEN?

Again, we have a Straw Man argument that doesn’t stand the simplest test of logic. Of course Paul didn’t lie, but he wasn’t talking about anything that is of any relevance or benefit to the HRM Movement. The fact is that Paul DID teach the Gentiles

that they didn't have to keep the Mosaic Law in that the Council of Jerusalem forbid the church to require that they be circumcised. No circumcision! No Law of Moses. No Sabbath-keeping.

There is simply no issue about what Paul taught because he wrote what he wrote all over his epistles. In this regard it is irrelevant whether the witnesses told the truth or lied or whether or not Paul himself lied. Of course, Paul was never disposed to lying or intentionally tried to deceive people.

RE: IF HE IS TELLING THE TRUTH, HOW CAN WE CLAIM HE TAUGHT AGAINST THE LAW?

How could anyone arrive at such an illogical conclusion? We know what the requirements of the Law were in regard to purification offerings. Of course he didn't violate those laws! He didn't commit an offense against the Law of Moses by doing what he did. What in the world does this have to do with the issue of whether Paul taught that the Gentiles didn't have to keep the Law? Nothing! He told the truth, and this is a no-brainer, that he did nothing to violate the requirements of that law.

RE: TEACHING AGAINST THE TORAH IS AN OFFENSE AGAINST THE TORAH THAT IS PUNISHABLE BY DEATH!! SEE DEUTERONOMY 12:32-13:11!

Before the death of Christ, this statement in Scripture may have been valid. Glad you Hebrew Roots Movement people pointed this out, however, because you just shot yourself in the foot. If you violate even one of the 613 rules and regulations of the TORAH, you have broken all of them. If you HRM people do not stone those who break one of these 613 laws, you have failed to keep the TORAH yourselves, and you deserve to be stoned to death yourselves. And if you say you can't keep all of the laws because the temple is not still standing, you have just admitted that you can't keep all of the laws of the TORAH. Recall that most of the themes of the TORAH point forward to the propitiation of Christ on the Cross, and that required animal sacrifices at the Temple. Nowhere else! You HRM people are pinned to the wall by your ears! Our righteousness is not dependent on our keeping the Law, but it is received by the imputation of the righteousness of Christ.

SERIOUSLY, IF PAUL WAS TEACHING AGAINST THE TORAH, WHY DIDN'T HIS ACCUSERS SIMPLY GO GET A COPY OF THE LETTER TO THE GALATIANS? ACCORDING TO CHRISTENDOM IT WAS HIS DEFINING WORK AGAINST THE TORAH... D'UH! THERE'S ALL THE PROOF HIS ACCUSERS NEEDED... AND, JUST FOR THE RECORD, THAT WAS A LETTER HE LIKELY WROTE BEFORE ACTS 15, THEREFORE, IT WAS WIDELY AVAILABLE TO HIS ACCUSERS IN THE NEARLY TEN YEARS PRIOR TO HIS ARREST..

MARTIN KLAYMAN RESPONDS

At the simplest level, Paul's accusers didn't obtain a copy of Galatians because they didn't need one. Their false charges were all they needed. Paul got arrested.

At a somewhat deeper level, Paul wrote Galatians to the Gentiles, and each copy of his letter had to be copied by hand. Most likely his accusers knew nothing of the existence of this epistle.

At a still deeper level, Galatians was almost certainly not available at the time frame of Acts 15. This incident in the temple likely took place around 50 AD, and experts believe Galatians was written between 57 and 60 AD. Rambo is likely wrong about the order of these events.

At the ultimate level, Galatians is not the best evidence that Paul taught against the LAW. Absolute proof that Paul and other apostles "taught against the Law" was their decision at the Council of Jerusalem in AD 50 that nixed circumcision for the Gentiles. In Jewish civil and religious law, neither Gentile nor Jew could keep the Law of Moses, which included the Sabbath commandment, without first complying with the Ordinance of Circumcision. Every Jew in the world knew this at the time, if not still today. The Law and the Prophets only makes one exception to this rule. Eunuchs could become members of the Jewish Faith and keep the Sabbath without being circumcised because circumcision was physically impossible. Their "part" was totally missing. See Isaiah 56 for this exception.

HOHMANN – What a shame [Dumbo](#) here hasn't read Galatians himself, especially chapter 4.

LONG STORY SHORT, GALATIANS IS NOT ABOUT 'DOING AWAY WITH THE LAW.' IT IS ABOUT THE MISUSE OF THE LAW FOR SALVATION. [I DO NOT THINK IT MEANS WHAT YOU THINK IT MEANS!]

MARTIN KLAYMAN RESPONDS

Doing away with the TORAH does not do away with God's moralistic laws. God's moralistic laws are almost exactly like natural laws, such as the Law of Gravity. No one could do away with moralistic laws, and Grace-oriented Christians are not interested in trying to do this. The TORAH was focused on multiple streams of symbolic ritual that were designed to get the Israelite worshiper to think about the love of God as manifested in a Great Exchange that was going to take place in the future. These multiple streams converged on the Cross, and the symbols utilized for this purpose became obsolete the moment Christ died as the Spotless Lamb of God.

Grace-oriented Christians believe that a person who is born again will be led by the Holy Spirit away from sin, so the result is a Christian who, in a very real sense of the word, "keeps" all God's moralistic laws. But keeping the TORAH is a kin to blasphemy, since it focused on symbols of Christ when Christ is here and the Great Exchange, to which the TORAH looked forward to symbolically.

If the TORAH were used as a requirement for salvation, no one would be saved, since all have come short. Break one of the laws of the TORAH, and you have broken them all. Once you have broken a law, there is no way to undo that fact. The dirty deed is done. The death sentence has been incurred. You are going to Hell. The Great Exchange solves this problem for every believer in Christ. The Christian is saved by what Jesus did – not what he or she did for Him.

**PAUL SAYS, 'I HAVE COMMITTED NO OFFENSE AGAINST EITHER THE LAW OF THE JEWS OR AGAINST THE TEMPLE...'
PONDER DEEPLY. NO OFFENSE AGAINST THE LAW.... PARADIGM-SHIFTER.**

MARTIN KLAYMAN RESPONDS

Again, crazy reverse logic! Simply not breaking a Torah law while Paul was visiting the Temple does not constitute an endorsement of its continuance into the Christian dispensation for Gentiles. It would have been foolish for Paul to publicly violate the Law of Moses or the rules of the temple. After all, Paul is the one who said that he was very careful to blend into whatever culture or society he was in to maximize his ability to witness for Christ. In fact, the concept of "When you are in Rome, do as the Romans do," is attributed to the example of Paul. If you are a missionary to a Heathen tribe and they offer you fried grubs to eat as a gesture of heart-felt hospitality, you better eat the fried grubs lest you end up with a poison spear in your chest.

POINT NUMBER SIX

PAUL WROTE MANY OF THE EPISTLES AND OFTEN VERSES ARE TAKEN OUT OF CONTEXT TO PROVE AN ANTINOMIAN, OR 'ANTI-TORAH,' BIAS. HERE IS SOMETHING THE APOSTLE PAUL SAID THAT THEOLOGIAN LOVE TO IGNORE OR COMPLETELY TAP DANCE AROUND,

DO WE THEN NULLIFY THE LAW THROUGH FAITH? MAY IT NEVER BE! ON THE CONTRARY, WE ESTABLISH THE LAW. ROMANS 3:31

BUSTED! IN ONE VERSE, PAUL DECLARES, 'THROUGH FAITH WE ESTABLISH THE LAW, WE DO NOT NULLIFY IT!'

MOST PAULINE THEOLOGIAN MISUSE PROOF TEXTS TO DEMONSTRATE THAT HE 'DID AWAY WITH THE LAW.' YET, PAUL AFFIRMS THE TORAH OVER AND OVER. IF IN SOME PASSAGES HE OVERTURNS THE LAW AND IN OTHERS HE AFFIRMS THE LAW, THEN WE HAVE A SCHIZOPHRENIC APOSTLE ON THE LOOSE!!

MAYBE, JUST MAYBE, WE HAVE MISUNDERSTOOD OR WILLFULLY MISUSED SOME OF HIS WRITING TO BE STIFF-NECKED AND REBELLIOUS JUST LIKE OUR FATHERS!!

MEDITATE ON THIS: PAUL SAID, 'BY FAITH WE ESTABLISH THE LAW.' PARADIGM-SHIFTER.

ELCE "THUNDER" LAURISTON RESPONDS

The very thing that Rambo is accusing theologians of committing (proof-texting), he blatantly commits here in order to buttress his twisted nomistic predilection. Does Rom. 3:31 support Rambo's conclusion? An analysis of the paragraph from where this is taken will demonstrate this to be a resounding NO!

The paragraph from Romans 3:21 reads:

²¹But now the righteousness of God has been manifested apart from the law, although the Law and the Prophets bear witness to it— ²²the righteousness of God through faith in Jesus Christ for all who believe. For there is no distinction: ²³for all have sinned and fall short of the glory of God, ²⁴and are justified by his grace as a gift, through the redemption that is in Christ Jesus, ²⁵whom God put forward as a propitiation by his blood, to be received by faith. This was to show God's righteousness, because in his divine forbearance he had passed over former sins. ²⁶It was to show his righteousness at the present time, so that he might be just and the justifier of the one who has faith in Jesus.

²⁷Then what becomes of our boasting? It is excluded. By what kind of law? By a law of works? **No, but by the law of faith.** ²⁸For we hold that one is justified by faith apart from works of the law. ²⁹Or is God the God of Jews only? Is he not the God of Gentiles also? Yes, of Gentiles also, ³⁰since God is one—who will justify the circumcised by faith and the uncircumcised through faith. ³¹Do we then overthrow the law by this faith? By no means! On the contrary, we uphold the law. (ESV)

The subtopic of this chunk of Scripture is “The righteousness of God through faith”, and from this observation alone we can glean the central message of this passage. This passage demonstrates the means by which we are justified or declared righteous by God and that is by faith alone. Paul reiterated this throughout the passage (vv. 22, 24, 26, 28, 30). Paul commences by stating that, “the righteousness of God has been manifested apart from the law...”, that is, in the absence or nonexistence of the law, God’s righteousness stands apparent. Paul further states that the Law and the Prophets (a designation for the entire Old Testament) bear witness to this righteousness of God through faith. In other words, Paul is saying that in the absence of the Law, God’s righteousness by faith is evident, and also within the Law and Prophets, this righteousness of God by faith is testified about. In vv. 22-25, Paul highlights the fact that all have sinned (Jew and Gentile) and fallen short of God’s glory; there is no distinction between Jew and Gentile as to how this righteousness is received because it is by grace through faith to all who believe in Christ, and that justification and forgiveness of sin took place as a result of what Christ did on the Cross. As we analyze this, we can see that Paul is making a strong case for the exclusive justification of man (both Jew and Gentile) by God by grace through faith in Christ, and man’s inability to justify himself by works of the law (law-keeping). Paul is very cautious to highlight that this justification happens apart from law (Gentiles don’t have the law chap. 2:14) and also that it is testified or spoken about by the Law and Prophets (Jews had the Law chap. 9:4). In v. 27 Paul continues, “Then what becomes of our boasting? It is excluded. By what kind of law? By a law of works? No, but by the law of faith.” In essence, what Paul is saying here is that no one can boast about being justified by law-keeping (law of works) because our justification is solely by the law of faith! So the Jew who had the law and can “boast” about that (Rom.9:4-5), has nothing to boast about, as his justification and that of the Gentile happens in the same way, by grace through faith in Christ. That is why Paul says boasting is “excluded”. The Greek word “excluded” means, “to shut out, to prevent from approaching, to turn out of doors”, in other words, boasting is completely shut outside and prevented from approaching the “doors” of justification, as man’s justification is completely outside of his sphere of works and law-keeping and solely on the merits of Christ’s sacrifice and the acceptance thereof by faith! He says exactly this in v. 28, “For we hold that one is justified by faith apart from works of the law.” Paul then continues, “²⁹ Or is God the God of Jews only? Is he not the God of Gentiles also? Yes, of Gentiles also, ³⁰ since God is one—who will justify the circumcised by faith and the uncircumcised through faith.” These two texts do not need much elaboration, as they are very self-explanatory and also, I have sufficiently repeated this point thus far. However, let me succinctly repeat, God is the God of both Jews and Gentiles and He justifies both groups of people by the same means- by grace through faith in Christ. This last verse of Romans 3 is so misunderstood by law-pushers and Torah-keepers, as was clearly demonstrated by Rambo, that I will re-translate it from the Greek to give a better sense of what Paul is saying. Rom. 3:31- νόμον οὐκ καταργοῦμεν διὰ τῆς πίστεως; μὴ γένοιτο, ἀλλὰ νόμον ἱσχύνομεν (Are we then demolishing the Law through faith? May it never happen! On the contrary, we are upholding the Law.) That translation is more in line with Paul’s trend of thought in the passage. One can basically say that this last verse is an exclamation and clincher of Paul’s exposition. And understanding it in that light, removes all possibility of further abuse by law-pushers and Torah-keepers. Paul is saying here that when one understands that one is justified by God by grace through faith in Christ, one upholds the Law. How does one do this in this respect? The answer is resident in v. 21, “the Law and the Prophets bear witness to it (the righteousness of God)”. That’s right! Jews and Gentiles who accept the righteousness of God by grace through faith in Christ do not demolish the Law, they uphold it! They do this because that very righteousness of God is testified about in the Law and when they obtain and promote this righteousness of God, they are upholding the veracity, validity and reliability of said law. In other words, they prove that the law did its job and is truthful about what it testified to, and that is, God’s righteousness!

Let me highlight a profound nugget from this verse. The root word for ἱστανόμεν (histanomen) is ἵστημι (Histemi) and it means “to cause or make (a person or thing) to stand (to keep its place), to make firm, establish, keep intact, etc). This is very instructive and corroborates with Paul’s other similar statements about the law. The law has its place; what is its place?

(1) To testify of the righteousness of God, which is justification and redemption through Christ’s vicarious atonement (Rom.3:21-25), it does just that (John 5:39-40, 46-47, Luke 24:25-27, 44-47, Rom. 10:3-4).

(2) To increase sin and demonstrate to man his utter hopelessness and need for grace (Rom.5:19-20).

(3) To be a guide to Christ (Gal.3:22-26).

These three things and much more more could have been added to this list, but these three functions of the Law are sufficient, given our present focus. These things delineate the respective “territories” where the “altars” to the Law can legitimately be built. When we accept God’s righteousness by faith, we build our altars to the Law in their proper place-- just across the Gospel “street” from where we have built our larger and more magnificent “altar to Faith.” This is what Paul means in Romans 3:31. Faith establishes and supports the real functions of the Law!

Had Paul meant that Christians should continue to live by and keep the Torah (all 613 commandments), it is my belief that he would have used the Greek word “τερειω” (tereo) or “ποιω” (poio), which means “to keep” (Rev. 12:17) and “to practice” (1John 3:7) respectively.

Romans 3:31 has been unduly misused and proof-texted by Rambo and fellow Law-pushers and Torah-keepers, but having looked at it within its context, we can see that it is an outrageous case of proof-texting to promote a law-based salvation and to ignore God’s righteousness by faith, and thus subtly drag believers under the bondage that Christ has delivered them from (Gal. 5:1-6).

HOHMANN – What I would impress upon the reader is the proclivity for [Rumbo](#) and other legalists to look at a passage of Scripture such as Romans 3:31 and see the word “law” and conclude, as a matter of habit, it must be referring to the legalities of the law to the exclusion of all else. So then, [Rambro](#) concludes it is the legalities of the law that are established. This is that veil spoken of by Paul in II Corinthians chapter 3. There is a blindness to all else. All that can be perceived is the legalities of the law in the law.

POINT NUMBER SEVEN

SO HOW DID PAUL EVER GET SO MISUNDERSTOOD AND ‘WHACKED OUT?’ THE APOSTLE PETER TELLS US AND ISSUES THIS WARNING:

BEAR IN MIND THAT OUR LORD’S PATIENCE MEANS SALVATION, JUST AS OUR DEAR BROTHER PAUL ALSO WROTE YOU WITH THE WISDOM THAT GOD GAVE HIM. 16 HE WRITES THE SAME WAY IN ALL HIS LETTERS, SPEAKING IN THEM OF THESE MATTERS. HIS LETTERS CONTAIN SOME THINGS THAT ARE HARD TO UNDERSTAND, WHICH IGNORANT AND UNSTABLE PEOPLE DISTORT, AS THEY DO THE OTHER SCRIPTURES, TO THEIR OWN DESTRUCTION.

17 THEREFORE, DEAR FRIENDS, SINCE YOU HAVE BEEN FOREWARNED, BE ON YOUR GUARD SO THAT YOU MAY NOT BE CARRIED AWAY BY THE ERROR OF THE LAWLESS AND FALL FROM YOUR SECURE POSITION. -- 2 PETER 3:15-17

PETER TELLS US PLAINLY, PAUL’S LETTERS CAN BE HARD TO UNDERSTAND. THE IGNORANT AND UNSTABLE DISTORT HIM, AND THE RESULT IS LAWLESSNESS.

WE WOULD EASILY AGREE THAT PAUL CAN BE HARD TO UNDERSTAND, BUT WHAT DOES THIS VERSE MEAN BY ‘IGNORANT AND UNSTABLE?’

THE IGNORANT AND THE UNSTABLE ARE THOSE WHO DO NOT HAVE A FIRM FOUNDATION IN THE TORAH. OTHER TRANSLATIONS CALL THEM ‘UNLEARNED’ OR ‘UNTAUGHT.’

MARTIN KLAYMAN RESPONDS

What! It is certainly within the realm of possibility that Peter might have been thinking of the ignorant and unstable in regard to their lack of knowledge of the TORAH, but there is no indication in the text or context to suggest this. However, it seems more likely that Peter was thinking about new converts who were not yet grounded in the Christian faith itself. The effort to spread the Gospel quickly resulted in more converts from Gentile and Hellenized Jewish groups. It is not likely that the Gentile converts would have any knowledge of the 613 rules and regulations of the TORAH who had not been attending synagogues. The Hellenized Jewish converts had jettisoned the Law of Moses centuries ago, retaining, for the most part, only the Seven Laws of Noah and the Ordinance of the Passover.

It seems most logical to view the “ignorant and unstable” as new believers who were not firmly grounded in the Gospel and might, perhaps, want to hang onto sin while enjoying the Gospel at the same time. It is easy to see how such a person could find Paul’s complex articulation of the issue of the Law versus Grace an excuse to think, wrongly so, that Grace permits sin.

St. Peter could also have been thinking that Paul’s unprecedented acceptance of the Gentiles was equally baffling to the Jewish Christians, who were still thinking that the Gospel was not for the Heathen. Paul publicly rebuked St. Peter for trying to distance himself from the Gentile Christians who were present when Jewish members of the Faith hosted a meal for some Gentile Christian guests.

ELCE “THUNDER” LAURISTON RESPONDS

Failing to read a text or two within its context can really run people into theological wreckage! Peter, by no stretch of the imagination, is not suggesting that the “unlearned and unstable” in the Torah misunderstood Paul’s hard sayings about the Law to their own destruction. In the context of the passage, Peter is saying that Paul’s pronouncements about Christ’s Second Coming are misunderstood to the unstable and unlearned individual’s own destruction. Let us consider the theme and immediate context of Peter’s comment about Paul. The whole chapter of 2 Peter 3 is about the events of the Second Coming and that day itself, but I’ll only highlight a few things from vv. 7-16. In 2 Pet. 3:7-16, we read,

⁷but the present heavens and earth, having been stored up by His word, are being reserved for fire until the Day of Judgment and destruction of ungodly men. ⁸But in this let it not escape your notice, beloved, that one day with the Lord is as a thousand years, and a thousand years as one day. ⁹The Lord is not slow to fulfill His promise, as some count slowness, but is longsuffering toward us, not willing that any should perish, but that all should come to repentance. ¹⁰But the day of the Lord shall come as a thief in the night, in which the heavens shall pass away with a rushing noise, and the elements, burning with heat, shall be dissolved, both the earth and the works that are in it shall be burned up. ¹¹Therefore, seeing that all these things shall be dissolved, what sort of people ought you to be in holy conduct and godliness, ¹²looking for and hastening the coming of the day of God, because of which the heavens, being set on fire, shall be dissolved, and the elements, burning with heat, shall melt? ¹³But according to His promise, we look for new heavens and a new earth in which righteousness dwells. ¹⁴Therefore, beloved, looking forward to these things, be diligent to be found by Him in peace, without spot or blemish; ¹⁵and consider that the longsuffering of our Lord is salvation—just as also our beloved brother Paul, according to the wisdom given to him, wrote to you, ¹⁶as also in all his letters, speaking in them about these things, in which are some things hard to understand, which the unlearned and unstable twist to their own destruction, as they do also the rest of the Scriptures.

Some things to observe from this passage are that 1) this world is reserved for fire until Judgment Day (v.7), 2) time is inconsequential with God, His promises are sure, and He delays His coming in an effort to save all (v.8-9). 3) Christ coming will be unexpected and cataclysmic (v.10). 4) as believers anticipate this day, they should be living in holiness and purity (v.11-14). 5) Paul wrote to the Christian Church about Christ’s patience and delay of the Second Coming.

As can be observed clearly, the immediate context of Peter’s comment about Paul’s writings or sayings is the subject of the Second Coming of Christ. Peter considered Paul to be a “beloved brother” who was given much wisdom. No doubt, Paul’s wisdom came from God, as he himself attested (1Cor.3:10, 15:9-10). Peter states further that Paul had “written to you”, that is, the Christian Church who had obtained a similar “precious faith” (2 Pet.1:2); Peter’s original audience. Peter elaborates that Paul had written to them in all his epistles about “these things” (v.16) and some of “these things” are hard to understand. What exactly are “these things” that Peter is referring to? Given the context of the passage, undoubtedly, “these things” are 1) the behaviour of doubters and scoffers (vv.3-6), 2) the reservation of the earth for destruction by fire on

Judgment Day (v.7); 3) time's inconsequential nature with God and God's forbearance and efforts to save everyone (vv.8-9) and; 4) the unexpected return of Christ, the destruction of the earth and the believers state of holy living while they anticipate that day. It is these themes, surrounding the Second Coming of Christ, that Peter referred to Paul as having written a lot about in his Epistles and the untrained (in Scripture) and unstable (in faith) twist to their own destruction. A casual perusal of Paul's Epistles will indeed demonstrate the veracity of Peter's statement. Consider that Paul indeed wrote about these very things- 1) the behaviour of doubters and scoffers (1 Cor.1:18-25, 15:12-19, 1Tim.4:1-5, 2Tim.3:1-9) 2) the reservation of the earth for destruction by fire on Judgment Day (Rom. 8:22, 1Thess. 5:3, 9, 2Thess. 1:6-10, Heb.10:26-27); 3) time's inconsequential nature with God and God's forbearance and efforts to save everyone (1Tim.2:3-4, 2Thess. 2:1-12, Rom. 14:7-9) and; 4) the unexpected return of Christ, the destruction of the earth and the believers state of holy living while they anticipate that day (Rom.13:11-14, 1Cor.15:51-55, Eph. 5:15-21, Col.3:5-6, 1Thess. 5:1-6, Tit. 2:11-15). Given these irrefutable facts and exegetical observations of 2 Pet. 3, we need not inject into Peter's statement what is not there, his subject matter, the Second Coming of Christ, which contextually let's us know which aspects of Paul's writings he is referring to. In closing, let me also note that Peter could not have had a misunderstanding of Paul's references to the Law that caused the destruction of the unlearned and unstable Christians and thus, encourage them to observe it as a means of earning or maintaining their salvation, as Peter along with the Jerusalem Council jettisoned the Torah and disobliged Gentiles from its observance and uphold faith in Christ alone as the avenue for both Jews' and Gentiles' justification (Acts 15:1-10). And when Peter himself shrunk back from this fact while visiting the Galatian Christians that consisted of Jews and Gentiles and was rebuked and corrected by Paul for that error (Gal.2:11-21), it is obvious to see that he accepted Paul's rebuke and correction and returned to salvation by grace through faith in Christ and not through the Law, by the mere fact that he hailed Paul as a "beloved brother" and was given much "wisdom" from God (2 Pet.3:15).

WE HAVE ALREADY SEEN THAT PAUL UPHELD THE TORAH AND WE SEE HERE THAT THE ERROR THESE 'UNLEARNED' TEACHINGS LEAD TO IS LAWLESSNESS! PAUL WAS STEEPED IN THE TORAH AND WAS ZEALOUS FOR THE TORAH. HE WOULD NOT DARE, OR EVEN DREAM OF TEACHING AGAINST THE 'PERFECT TORAH.'

MARTIN KLAYMAN RESPONDS

Where in the Bible does it say that Paul upheld the Torah and was zealous for it anywhere else but prior to his conversion? It does not say so. Rambo has NOT caused us to see that Paul viewed the TORAH in this manner. The only time Paul would not teach against the TORAH was before he became converted. This twisting of the facts of the story seems inexcusable and the result of an underlying personal agenda rather than an honest effort to understand the Scriptures for what they say.

THE ERROR OF TWISTING PAUL IS LAWLESSNESS.

MARTIN KLAYMAN RESPONDS

Paul made sure that his words could not be twisted in this manner. He clearly demonstrated that the result of Grace is righteousness that stems from love for God. He furnished the Faith with several lists of sins that he said would keep a person out of Heaven. One list had 22 sins, and in not one of his list of sins does he mention Sabbath-breaking.

DOES MODERN THEOLOGY TEACH LAWFULNESS, OR LAWLESSNESS? PETER WARNS, 'BE ON YOUR GUARD THAT YOU NOT BE CARRIED AWAY BY THE ERROR OF THE LAWLESS!' PARADIGM-SHIFT AHEAD!

MARTIN KLAYMAN RESPONDS

The Gospel does not teach lawlessness, and the Gospel never included Sabbath-keeping or TORAH-keeping. Try to refute this fact with Scripture, and you will not succeed. All of the Ten Commandments are reiterated in the New Testament except the Sabbath commandment! Numerous lists of additional sins are provided by apostolic writers. Even in the last book of the Bible, The Book of Revelation, there are two such lists, and neither one mentions Sabbath-breaking.

What we have here is a HRM writer setting up a Straw Man Argument so he will have something to knock down. But there is nothing to knock down! Sabbath-keepers are desperate to keep The Ten Commandments intact primarily because they want to hold onto the Sabbath commandment at all costs. Unfortunately, St. Paul commanded the church not to impose Sabbath-keeping on gentile converts. Note that in the mind of Hebrew thinkers, a command of God is usually accompanied by a rationale for that requirement. For example, God tells the people to obey their parents. Why? So that their days will be

long upon the Earth. Why did Paul say Christians should not force other Christians to keep the Sabbath? Because one of the sabbath system's purposes was to provide a shadow symbol of Christ's death on the Cross. After Christ died, these shadowy symbols were obliterated. Type met anti-Type. Jesus was REAL. The sabbaths were merely symbols that helped Israel to look forward to the real rest from the guilt of sin that only His death on the Cross could provide. (See Hebrews 4.)

We cannot speak to what Rambo means as "modern" theology, but Gospel theology – the Gospel of Christ as articulated by St. Paul– absolutely does NOT teach lawlessness.

HRM apologists forget that Adventists concocted the idea that The Ten Commandments represented the full character of God so that people would mistakenly think that the 4th Commandment could be treated like all the others. These HRM apologists hijacked this ploy from the Adventists and have sought to enlarge it to encompass the entire TORAH. Even Adventists are smart enough to see that you can't do this. Ellen White said that all the ceremonial laws were nailed to the Cross. Her big mistake was her failure to recognize that the Sabbath was a ceremonial law also– one that could be STOPPED and one which, in addition to its other attributes, represented the rest from sin that only Christ's death on the Cross could accomplish.

POINT NUMBER EIGHT

IN FACT, WHAT IS THE ERROR OF LAWLESSNESS? EVERYONE WHO PRACTICES SIN ALSO PRACTICES LAWLESSNESS; AND SIN IS LAWLESSNESS. I JOHN 3:4. THE LAW, THE TORAH, DEFINES SIN. BREAKING THE LAW IS SIN. THEREFORE, LAWLESSNESS IS SIN. 'DOING AWAY WITH THE LAW IS DOING AWAY WITH THE DEFINITION OF SIN, AND INDEED, THE ACT IS SIN ITSELF. ANNULL A COMMANDMENT? SIN! AVOID/IGNORE THE COMMANDMENTS? SIN! SEE? THIS IS WHY YESHUA COULD NOT HAVE CHANGED THE LAW OR ABOLISHED ANYTHING, BEFORE OR AFTER HIS ATONING SACRIFICE. DOING SO WOULD BE SIN! PARADIGM-SHIFTING!

MARTIN KLAYMAN RESPONDS

The TORAH is not synonymous with the LAW for the New Testament believer. Paul, in Romans 14:23 defines sin as anything that does not proceed from Faith. Paul also wrote that the Law is not of faith (Galatians 3:12). Jesus amplified the Law to mean anything that reflects a supreme love for God and loving one's neighbor as him or herself.

Identifying the TORAH as the LAW that is applicable to Christians leads to many absurdities. The TORAH specifies how cups are to be washed, and it is full of ceremonial instructions for ordinances that pointed forward to Christ's death on the Cross. Is it sin for a Christian not to wash his or her drinking cup according to the rules and regulations of the TORAH? Of course it isn't. We could utilize many examples of this type, but just one should suffice.

Applying this principle a little further, we would ask the HRM believer some other kinds of questions. If we are not going to use our brains and do some critical thinking, where is a text that authorizes the cessation of all the animal and grain offerings? Where is the scriptural support for abandoning the sabbath laws, such as the command to stay in one's dwelling on the Sabbath day?

For the letter killeth, but the Spirit giveth life, and to mix the letter of the law with the Spirit of the Law is detrimental to the whole purpose of why Jesus went to the Cross to die for our sins and stated while He hung there on the Cross that "it was finished." One of the things He was referring to was the old laws. That One has destroyed the bondage of the yoke of the Law. The Law was called "bondage." When Jesus said it was finished, our righteousness became based, not upon the works of the law, but upon trusting in the finished atonement of Christ. In essence the sinner is saved not by what he has done for God, but what Jesus did for the sinner.

The HRM people will not give this up and they want to put this bondage on other people. They want to put the yoke back on the believer that Paul said was taken off. We are no longer under the bondage of Old Covenant. All have been set free by receiving the righteousness of God through the finished atonement of Christ.

There are a number of times when "breaking" a law of the TORAH was not sin, such as when the Sabbath law was set aside to give priority to the Ordinance of Circumcision.

So, what is all this malarky about Jesus not being able to change any of the rules and regulations before or after the Cross?

Parents have a child. That child can't drive a car. But when he or she becomes sixteen years of age, the parents change and, under most circumstances, that teenager is allowed to drive the family car. The principle of the law stays the same. Protect the child from certain death on the highway as well as the other people on the road. But the "dispensation" has changed.

The TORAH was all about pointing the Israelite worshiper to the Great Exchange to be offered in his or her behalf at some time in the future. The Law of Moses was largely about this. So everything that pointed forward symbolically or ceremonially to Christ's death on the Cross would have to be changed after the Cross.

I think it is readily admitted that there are only a handful of truly moralistic laws in the 603 remaining laws of the Torah. Since these moralistic laws are based on natural principles of cause and effect, they, in and of themselves, could never be changed. But the ceremonial laws? Would it not appear silly to keep them in force when they no longer apply? It is almost as if the ceremonial laws of the TORAH were made to be broken at some time in the future.

In the 613 laws there was never a Scripture saying at any point that you can keep part of the 613 laws if you want to; so to try to reason that you can't keep all of them because the temple in Jerusalem has been destroyed answers the question as to the changing of the commandments—the laws. In other words, since the temple is no longer in existence, and the ceremonies of the TORAH could only be carried out in the temple at Jerusalem, TORAH-keepers are the ones who are "cherry picking" which laws they think they should keep from it. Can't do that! When Jesus said "It is finished" (John 19:30), He put the nail in the old covenant coffin with that statement.

As a Jew who has worshiped as a Jew, a Messianic Jew, and as an Evangelical Christian, Completed Jew, how well I know that even the Jews of today are stumped by the problem that they can't keep the Torah because the Temple is destroyed. They have no answer!

ELCE "THUNDER" LAURISTON RESPONDS

1 John 3:4 is a text that continues to be abused, misused, and taken out of context by Torah-advocates and law-pushers. A big reason for this is because it is erroneously translated by the KJV as, "Whosoever committeth sin transgresseth also the law: for sin is the transgression of the law." This mis-translation has been corrected by the vast majority of modern versions, which generally read as follows, "Everyone who practices sin also practices lawlessness, and sin is lawlessness." The Greek word for sin in this verse is ἀμαρτία (hamartia) and it literally means "to miss the mark" and lawlessness is ἀνομία (anomia) which means "a condition of being without law, wickedness, unrighteousness". Missing the mark, being wicked, unrighteous, or living in a lawless state is never something that is exclusively defined by the *Torah*, as is suggested by Rambo. Sin, wickedness, and unrighteousness, as used in Scripture, have to be understood within their context. So what exactly does "sin" and "lawlessness" mean in this context? The answer is within the passage. John illustrates profoundly that sin is incompatible with birth from God (vv.1-3). He had shown that birth from God involves self-purification (v.3); he now shows where sin, that is, the lack of self-purification, is, there is no birth from God. God is pure (v.3). He is the standard or "law" of what we should strive to be and will ultimately be when He appears (v.2), but the one who continues to practice sin, that is, "missing the mark" of purity, are practicing lawlessness, missing God's standard, which is Himself. John emphasized this fact similarly in v.7 by using the opposite of lawlessness/unrighteousness, when he says, "... Whoever practices righteousness is righteous, just as He is righteous." Again, we see that God is the standard; He is righteous. The one who continues to sin and practice lawlessness/unrighteousness is missing the standard of purity and righteousness, God Himself. That person is not demonstrating that he was indeed born from God (vv.8-9), and that Jesus has indeed taken away his sins (vv.5-6). John forcefully drove this same point home just before he closed this epistle by saying, "All unrighteousness is sin...We know that everyone who has been born of God does not keep on sinning, but he who was born of God protects him, and the evil one does not touch him." (vv.17-18). This is the message that 1 John 3:4 is conveying and that has nothing to do with the Torah as the absolute definer of sin. As a matter of fact, John does not even use the Greek word that usually refers to the *Torah*, νόμος (nomos), in this entire epistle. The often repeated Johannine word "commandment/s" is not referring to the Torah either, as that Greek word ἐντολή (entole) is referring to the commands to believe in Jesus Christ and His teachings and to love one another (3:22-24).

Rambo's belief that the Torah exclusively defines sin and that that is what 1 John 3:4 is saying is sheer folly and theological ignorance at best. The New Testament has at least thirteen basic words for sin or similar acts. They are:

κακός -"Kakos," bad (Romans 13:3);

πονηρός - "poneros," evil (Matthew 5:45);

ἀσέβειας - "asebeias," godless (Romans 1:18);

ἔνοχος - "enochos," guilt (Matthew 5:21);

ἁμαρτία- "hamartia" sin (1 John 3:4)

ἁμάρτημα - "hamartima," sin (I Corinthians 6:18);

ἄδικια - "adikia," unrighteousness (I Corinthians 6:9);

ἄνομος - "anomos," lawlessness (I Timothy 1:9);

Παραβάσις - "parabasis," transgression (Romans 5:14);

ἀγνοεῖν - "agnoein," to be ignorant (Romans 1:13);

πλανω - "plano," to go astray (I Corinthians 6:9);

παραπτώμα - "paraptoma," to fall away (Galatians 6:1); and

Ὑποκρίσις - "hypocrisis," hypocrisy (I Timothy 4:2).

We also see other definitions of sin as follows in these New Testament texts;

"But whoever has doubts is condemned if he eats, because the eating is not from faith. For whatever does not proceed from faith is sin." (Romans 14:23 ESV)

"So whoever knows the right thing to do and fails to do it, for him it is sin." (James 4:17 ESV)

"If anyone sees his brother committing a sin not leading to death, he shall ask, and God will give him life—to those who commit sins that do not lead to death. There is sin that leads to death; I do not say that one should pray for that. All wrongdoing is sin, but there is sin that does not lead to death. (1 John 5:16-17 ESV)

For Rambo's assertion to be correct, all of these texts and Greek words that define sin and similar actions would have to be incorrect! And if his postulation, that the *Torah* is the exclusive definer of sin, is correct, then he will have a difficult, perspiring time explaining these passages;

Rom. 2:13-15: For it is not the hearers of the law who are righteous before God, but the doers of the law who will be justified. ¹⁴For when Gentiles, who do not have the law, by nature do what the law requires, they are a law to themselves, even though they do not have the law. ¹⁵They show that the work of the law is written on their hearts, while their conscience also bears witness, and their conflicting thoughts accuse or even excuse them

Rom. 5: 12-14: Therefore, just as sin came into the world through one man, and death through sin, and so death spread to all men because all sinned— ¹³for sin indeed was in the world before the law was given, but sin is not counted where there is no law. ¹⁴Yet death reigned from Adam to Moses, even over those whose sinning was not like the transgression of Adam, who was a type of the one who was to come.

Gal. 3:16-18: Now the promises were made to Abraham and to his offspring. It does not say, "And to offsprings," referring to many, but referring to one, "And to your offspring," who is Christ. ¹⁷This is what I mean: the law, which came 430 years afterward, does not annul a covenant previously ratified by God, so as to make the promise void. ¹⁸For if the inheritance comes by the law, it no longer comes by promise; but God gave it to Abraham by a promise.

No doubt should be left in your mind that Rambo's reliance on the flawed interpretation of 1 John 3:4 and his outrageous, Torah-promoting assertions are unsound and theologically incoherent.

POINT NUMBER NINE

Yeshua did not change the Law! How do we know besides His own declaration that 'I did not come to abolish the Law?'

Klayman Responds: Jesus said that he had come to fulfill the Law, and He fulfilled it when He died on the Cross. It's over.

HOHMANN – [Ramrod](#) tries to jam a concept down our throats, misquoting what Jesus actually said:

Matthew 5:17: Think not that I am come to destroy the law, or the prophets: I am not come to destroy, but to fulfil.

As mentioned earlier, when [Ramblingbo](#) reads “law” he sees this to the exclusion of all else. By excising “or the prophets” an entirely different idea is proffered that ignores the context.

The author of Hebrews declares, Jesus Christ is the same yesterday and today and forever. Hebrews 13:8

MARTIN KLAYMAN RESPONDS

God’s character never changes, but He is not a baby in the manger any more. He isn’t on the Cross at this time. Circumstances change. A teenage boy grows up and visits his parents. Before he was 16 he wasn’t allowed to drive a car. Are his parents going to try to take away his keys now? This is fuzzy logic at its worst. Recall that Paul said the Law was like a schoolmaster to lead us to Christ. Once we are in Christ, the Holy Spirit takes over and leads us steadily away from every possible kind of sin.

This reference in Hebrews is to Jesus’s love and His promises concerning salvation. The context does not have anything to do with whether or not He changes laws. His ministry today is not the same as it was during His earthly ministry.

HOHMANN – This is a good example of what legalists do in how they interpret Scripture. It is “assumptive reasoning” used as a poor substitute for proper hermeneutics. Assumptions lead to deceptions.

Not only was Yeshua present at Creation, but He was present at Mount Sinai and likely was the One who met Moses on the Mountain. Thus, He gave the Torah!!

MARTIN KLAYMAN RESPONDS

So what? Jesus also gave The Sermon on the Mount. You can’t keep the TORAH anyway, since its provisions could only be enacted at the temple in Jerusalem.

What is practical about taking a day off not to turn your light on, not getting in your car and driving down the road to pick up an emergency prescription. What spiritual truth is going to be gained by forcing Christian believers to comply with the terms of a covenant and “constitution” that was abrogated at the Cross?

HOHMANN – He gave the Torah, via a covenant, to the children of Israel. Why then is [Ramrod](#) so intent on forcing this covenant law upon people who were never a legal party to that covenant?

He is ‘the same yesterday and today and forever!’ When we truly understand His eternity and involvement at every level of Scripture, then we realize, the Memra, the Word doesn’t change. The Law doesn’t change.

Isn’t that what Yeshua said? ‘Until heaven and earth pass away not one jot or tittle will pass from the Law and the prophets?’

Not one jot!! Not a single consonant! Not ONE!! Paradigm-shift!

MARTIN KLAYMAN RESPONDS

I addressed this issue earlier.

The words of the KJV could not put it any better. Till all be fulfilled! Jesus fulfilled it when He died on the Cross. No more need to wash ceremonial drinking glasses a certain way. No more animal sacrifices. No more drink or grain offerings. No more sacred feast days, like the annual, monthly, and weekly Sabbaths. All of these things were fulfilled forever, at the moment Christ said “It is finished.”

HOHMANN – Let’s humor [Ramjet](#) here. If the law remains; if it doesn’t change, then circumcision is still required. I therefore volunteer my services to [Ramjet](#) to remedy this “small” matter for him, as I have a reasonably sharp knife. Look at how important circumcision was in the law. It even trumped keeping the Sabbath when there was a conflict.

POINT NUMBER TEN

What we absolutely have to come to grips with is that Yeshua and the Father are One (echad/united). They are not in opposition. Yeshua ONLY taught what the Father gave Him and nowhere is the Law ever prophesied to be done away with or in any way reduced. Never!

MARTIN KLAYMAN RESPONDS

Of course Jesus and His Father are One. They DO teach the same doctrine. But Jesus and God are One in teaching, through the prophets, that the Old Covenant would be done away with and a New Covenant would be put in its place. We get a preview of this idea in Hosea 4 where God tells Israel that He is going to do away with all of their Sabbaths! What! Yes! God is telling His people that the day will come when there are no more Sabbaths. The Sabbaths are gone if for no other reason that they cannot be given the attribute of holiness without animal sacrifices, and Jesus has already died as the Spotless Lamb of God, indicating to any reasonable person that to continue to offer animal sacrifices is a blatant denial that Jesus paid the price in full on the Cross.

HOHMANN – [Ramble](#) apparently never read Jeremiah 31. He apparently never read II Corinthians 3. He apparently never read Galatians 4. Note further the claim that the Law would never be in any way reduced. Therefore, a simple divorce, found in the law, is still valid in the sight of the Father despite the protestations of Jesus in Matthew chapter 19.

Yeshua said, “My doctrine is not mine, but his that sent me.” John 7:16:

¹⁴Not until halfway through the festival did Jesus go up to the temple courts and begin to teach. ¹⁵The Jews there were amazed and asked, “How did this man get such learning without having been taught?”

¹⁶Jesus answered, “My teaching is not my own. It comes from the one who sent me. ¹⁷Anyone who chooses to do the will of God will find out whether my teaching comes from God or whether I speak on my own. ¹⁸Whoever speaks on their own does so to gain personal glory, but he who seeks the glory of the one who sent him is a man of truth; there is nothing false about him. ¹⁹Has not Moses given you the law? Yet not one of you keeps the law. Why are you trying to kill me?”

Yeshua ONLY taught the Word of His Father.

MARTIN KLAYMAN RESPONDS

As you can see from the full passage of Scripture above, the context of what Jesus is talking about is not whether His teaching was like that of God, His Father, but whether it was from God or the Devil. In this context, Jesus was being accused of speaking the words of Satan. Taking things out of context can lead to unwarranted conclusions. As we noted a little earlier, Jesus and God the Father both taught through the prophet, Hosea, that the sabbaths would be eliminated. This text is of no use to HRM apologists. To discuss this text in this light is an exercise in futility. If God the Father said Israel’s Sabbaths would be stopped, Jesus said it. If God the Father said the Sabbath was a special commandment that was designed for Israel and Israel alone to distinguish it from every other nation on Earth, Jesus said that too.

Be on guard that you not be carried away by the error of lawless men!!”

MARTIN KLAYMAN RESPONDS

Be on guard for people who twist Scripture by taking it out of context and trying to apply it to things that are unrelated. Be aware of the Judaizers – the ones that St. Paul fought most of his ministry. Watch out for them, because what they teach is “another Gospel.”

CONCLUSION BY MARTIN KLAYMAN

The HRM movement teaches that the gospel means obedience to the law, the very antithesis of the true Gospel. Paul circumcised Timothy because his mother was Jewish, in Acts 16 verse 3. This is important. Paul did not circumcise Titus, who was entirely Greek. Galatians 2:3. Paul saw that circumcision was right and good for the Jewish believer in Yeshua, but made no sense for the Gentile. The fact is Paul did not see the Torah as having the same application to Gentiles as to Jews under the New Covenant. Paul was the apostle to the Gentiles. If the HRM had any doctrinal validity, Paul would have

been the one to preach it. He preached no such thing. We do not believe the Gentile Church is called to observe the Sabbath, the Levitical feasts, the dietary laws, and other Mosaic laws that are specific to Israel. We don't forbid anyone to do these things, and we don't fault the church for not keeping them. The apostles in Acts 15 dealt with the issue of Gentile Torah observance squarely on point. As Peter said in Acts 15:10, "Why do you put a yoke on the neck of the Gentiles which neither our fathers nor we were able to bear?" The apostles knew that the power of the Gospel was not based on legal observance. It was based on Faith in the Messiah and was equally available to the uncircumcised Gentile as it was to the circumcised Jew.

CHAPTER TWENTY-SIX
SABBATH-KEEPING
IN THE EARLY CHURCH

New for the 11th Edition

Martin H. Klayman

SABBATH-KEEPING IN THE EARLY CHURCH

Martin H. Klayman

THE CHALLENGE

Adventist apologists like to find evidence that there has been an unbroken line of Christians who did not apostatize from the original Faith by abandoning Sabbath-keeping for Sunday observance. In doing so they are seeking to validate Ellen G. White's revisionist, "replacement" history of the first 2,000 years of the Christian Faith, represented by her signature book, *The Great Controversy*. There is abundant evidence that there have always been a number of small pockets of Christian believers who have clung to the heresy of Sabbath-keeping. Our research has demonstrated a very early date for the universal abandonment of Sabbath-keeping by Christians as discussed in other chapters.

An examination of several examples of actual Sabbath-keeping by early Christians is profitable because, in an indirect way, one's findings demonstrate not only how rare a practice this was, as well as the perils involved in claiming that certain Christian groups were truly Sabbath-keepers. Therefore, we will take a look at the two best examples that Adventist historians might have to offer. A third group is discussed in our chapter on the Lunar Sabbath and documents both Christian and Jewish groups that kept the Jewish Sabbath according to the four phases of the moon.

To determine which Christians kept the Sabbath and which Christians did not keep the Sabbath during the first 300-400 years is complicated by differences in terminology. For example, some early Christian writers referred to Sunday as the "Sabbath." Other writers talked about Sabbath observance, which was different than Sabbath-keeping. Most of the churches seem to have observed the Sabbath festival in addition to their Sunday day of worship. Also, there is controversy over the use of the term, "Lord's Day." Was the Lord's Day the Sabbath or Sunday? Elsewhere in this book you will find a chapter devoted to what the term, "Lord's Day" meant, and when language usage patterns, Greek linguistics, and Greek vocabulary are considered, this term was never used to refer to the Jewish Sabbath. Sometimes these questions can only be answered by reading a writer's complete works. At other times one author's usage of these terms must be compared with that of others.

First we will turn our attention to the Nazarene Christians.

THE NAZARENES

The earliest believers in the Messiah were called "Christians" or "Messianists" as the Greek word would imply. These terms were applied to them in a derogatory manner by local unbelievers. (See Acts 11:26) Later, the Apostle Peter used it himself to describe the followers of the Messiah. (See 1 Peter 4:16) The Greek word is *Christianos*. It comes from the word *Christos*, which means "Messiah" or "Anointed One."

Early writings of the church fathers, such as Jerome, Eusebius, and Origen, along with the Jewish *Talmud*, record that the earliest Christians were known by their Jewish counterparts as "Nazarenes."

The name, "Nazarene," occurs about a dozen times in Talmudic literature. In all but two of these instances it refers to "Yeshua the Nazarene." From references to the early Nazarenes from various sources we have learned that they observed the Law of Moses.

Jerome tells us that the Jewish Nazarenes, or followers of Yeshua-Notzgra, were cursed in the synagogues by the Pharisees and that they mixed faith in the Messiah with the keeping of the Law.

An interesting point is that Jerome tells us that in a letter written to Augustine he indicates that they are to be found "in all the synagogues amongst the Jews."

Epiphanius, an early church father and writer, referring to the Nazarenes, said, "Also they are trained in the Law, in Circumcision, the Sabbath, and other things (See Ray Pritz, *Nazarene Jewish Christianity*, pages 33-34 as cited at <http://www.hope-of-israel.org/nazarene.htm>.)

Pritz adds:

The Nazarenes, as Jews, continued to observe certain aspects of the Mosaic Law, including Circumcision and the Sabbath, and it was this that brought about their exclusion from the church. This rejection and exclusion was, however, gradual.

Gentile Christianity rejected the Nazarenes because of their adherence to the commandments of Jehovah God and the *Torah*. The Nazarenes themselves rejected the Church's setting aside of the Law of Moses.

History testifies that the Sabbath continued to be kept strictly by the Jewish believers for centuries after the Resurrection, and there is a possibility that a few isolated pockets of Gentile Christian believers may have continued to keep the Sabbath along with the Sunday assemblies.

Pentecost is the birthplace of the Christian church. It is not unreasonable to think that at that particular moment, they were all Sabbath-keepers. It is, in fact, possible that for the first ten years after the Resurrection, the believers in Israel were made up entirely of Sabbath-keeping Jews. (See Acts 2:5)

We see from Acts 21:20 that the Jewish believers, true to their Hebrew roots, were protective of the entire Law of Moses, with the Covenant of the Ten Commandments and a notable subset. Not once were the Jewish Christians accused of Sabbath-breaking. It is even possible that the men who experienced Pentecost went back home and established churches that kept the Sabbath.

While an established belief about the early Church is that the Christians were expelled from the synagogues early-on because they confessed that Jesus was the Messiah, exactly how and when this may or may not have happened in Gentile areas or Jewish territories is not well-understood. One interesting theory is that the Nazarenes continued to worship in the synagogues with their Jewish brothers and sisters up until the time of the Bar Kokhba Revolt, which was fought between 132-136 AD. This theory suggests that the Nazarenes were tolerated in the synagogues up until this event, being expelled from the synagogues because the Jews who practiced Judaism had come to believe that Bar Kokhba was the Messiah, whereas the Nazarenes insisted that Jesus was the Messiah.

D. W. Ekstrand, in his book, *Worship in the Early Church*, provides evidence that the Bar Kokhba theory is not particularly valid. In 90 AD, twenty years after the temple was destroyed, the Sanhedrin, which is like a Jewish supreme court, convened to discuss the problem of synagogue members who believed in Christ. At a special Sabbath service, many of the rabbis issued a special "benediction" that essentially forced the Jewish believers in Christ out the door of the synagogues. This Sanhedrin action included a decree to rid Judaism of any trace of Christianity and to condemn any Jew who accepted Jesus as the Messiah.

There is some evidence that the Nazarenes may have survived in small numbers up through 400 AD. John D. Keyser, in a paper he edited entitled, "The Mysterious Relationship of The Early Nazarene Christians and Rabbinic Judaism," provides this evidence, citing Ray A. Pritz. (Note that John D. Keyser is possibly the world's foremost authority on the Lunar Sabbath concept. You will find him cited frequently on our chapter on the Lunar Sabbath.):

Jerome, about 404 A.D., in a letter to Augustine, said, "They believe in Christ, the Son of God, born of Mary the Virgin, and they say about him that he suffered under Pontius Pilate and rose again." In the Nazarene commentary on Isaiah 29:17-21, they wrote against the Scribes and Pharisees that they "made men sin against the Word of God in order that they should deny that Christ was the Son of God" (see Ray A. Pritz, *Nazarene Jewish Christianity: From the end of the New Testament Period until its disappearance in the Fourth Century*, The Magnes Press, Hebrew University, Jerusalem, c.1992, p.35, 43, 53-54). In their commentary on Isaiah 31:6-9, they understand the passage as saying: "O sons of Israel, who deny the Son of God with such hurtful resolution."

<http://www.hope-of-israel.org/nazarene.htm>

We know from our experience with Keyser's work that he is a very deep and thorough researcher; so we are comfortable with suggesting that Jewish Sabbath-keeping may have continued for hundreds of years after the Resurrection. Cross referencing Keyser's other research on the Lunar Sabbath, it is possible that the Nazarenes, in particular, probably kept the Sabbath according to the four phases of the Moon.

THE COPTIC CHURCHES OF EGYPT AND ETHIOPIA

Recently a few Seventh-day Adventist apologists have discovered that there is a Roman Catholic denomination in Ethiopia which keeps Saturday holy. We propose a theory which raises the real probability that these Catholic Christians and their predecessors may have been keeping the Sabbath from the very beginning of the Faith. It is possible that our core group of researchers have put together a number of sources together to demonstrate an explanation of how this happened that has never been widely understood.

Historians, to the extent of the limitations that fall upon those who research the question of Sabbath-keeping during the first 400 years of the Faith, believe they have determined that true Sabbath-keeping persisted much longer among the Southern Copts than it did with the Northern Copts. Until we developed our theory, even some highly regarded historians believed that this was because the two geographical areas of the believers used differing versions of a document that developed early among the Greek Christians which came to be known as the *Apostolic Constitutions*. Let us examine what seems to have

been discovered about this phenomenon prior to our work.

SEPARATE ORIGINS: NORTH AND SOUTH

Well-supported tradition credits St. Mark with founding the Northern Coptic Church. The situation is summed up well by the researches at Ancient Origins Dot Net:

The Coptic Church of Egypt is the earliest Christian church in the world, going back to around 42 AD. According to Bishop Eusebius of Caesarea, as well as Coptic traditions. Saint Mark the evangelist, who wrote the earliest of the four New Testament gospels, was the founder and first bishop of the Church of Alexandria, even before the Church of Rome was established. In his landmark *History of the Church*, written in Greek about the year 310, Eusebius writes: "Now, *they say* that this Mark was the first to have set out to Egypt to preach the gospel, which he had already written down, and the first to have organized churches in Alexandria itself" (Eusebius, *HE*2.16.1). This information is supplemented by Eusebius's *Chronicle*, where he places Mark's arrival in Alexandria in the third year of Claudius' reign, which would be AD 41-42 or 43-44. This is no more than ten years after the date fixed for the death of Jesus, traditionally held to be in AD 33.

Meanwhile, the traditional Egyptian account regarding the history of the early Coptic Church agrees with Eusebius on Mark's role as the founder of the Alexandrian Church. However, Sawirus ibn al-Muqaffa' gives a slightly later date to Mark's arrival in Alexandria: "In the fifteenth year after the Ascension of Christ (c. AD 48), the holy Peter sent Saint Mark, the father and evangelist, to the city of Alexandria, to announce the good tiding (Gospel) there".¹ The *History of the Patriarchs* attributed to Sawirus ibn al-Muqaffa is actually a multi-generational compendium of Egyptian church history that relies on several early Coptic sources, and was redacted and translated into Arabic in the eleventh century.

More information on Mark's life in Egypt is found in the Coptic account recorded by Sawirus, which is believed to have come from an earlier source. This source, known as the *Acts of Mark*, gives more details about Mark's activities in Egypt, including the account of the evangelist's martyrdom in Alexandria. The *Acts of Mark* has collected some early oral traditions and set them within a larger narrative, describing the details of Mark's mission and martyrdom in Alexandria. While the exact date of composition for the *Acts of Mark* is uncertain, these traditions are traceable at least to the late fourth or early fifth century. The *Acts* incorporates two streams of tradition within a single narrative. The first stream concerns Mark's founding of the church in Alexandria. The second stream concerns Mark's martyrdom, and provides an explanation for the establishment of his martyr church on the outskirts of Alexandria.

<http://www.ancient-origins.net/history/origins-ancient-coptic-church-egypt-002462>

As we will demonstrate with tentative certainty in this chapter, there is no evidence that the Northern Copts ever kept Saturday as a Sabbath. The evidence is that these Christians appear to have observed both Saturday and Sunday, but neither day as a holy day with intrinsic sacredness.

By contrast, early church historians believe that it was the Apostle Philip who was either directly or indirectly responsible for establishing the Southern church. We have an important clue the likelihood in Acts 8, rendered in the NIV:

Philip and the Ethiopian

²⁶Now an angel of the Lord said to Philip, "Go south to the road—the desert road—that goes down from Jerusalem to Gaza." ²⁷So he started out, and on his way he met an Ethiopian[a] eunuch, an important official in charge of all the treasury of the Kandake (which means "queen of the Ethiopians"). This man had gone to Jerusalem to worship, ²⁸and on his way home was sitting in his chariot reading the Book of Isaiah the prophet. ²⁹The Spirit told Philip, "Go to that chariot and stay near it."

³⁰Then Philip ran up to the chariot and heard the man reading Isaiah the prophet. "Do you understand what you are reading?" Philip asked.

³¹"How can I," he said, "unless someone explains it to me?" So he invited Philip to come up and sit with him.

³²This is the passage of Scripture the eunuch was reading:

"He was led like a sheep to the slaughter,
and as a lamb before its shearer is silent,
so he did not open his mouth.

³³In his humiliation he was deprived of justice.

Who can speak of his descendants?

For his life was taken from the earth.”

³⁴ The eunuch asked Philip, “Tell me, please, who is the prophet talking about, himself or someone else?”

³⁵ Then Philip began with that very passage of Scripture and told him the good news about Jesus.

³⁶ As they traveled along the road, they came to some water and the eunuch said, “Look, here is water. What can stand in the way of my being baptized?” ^[37] [c] ³⁸ And he gave orders to stop the chariot. Then both Philip and the eunuch went down into the water and Philip baptized him. ³⁹ When they came up out of the water, the Spirit of the Lord suddenly took Philip away, and the eunuch did not see him again, but went on his way rejoicing. ⁴⁰ Philip, however, appeared at Azotus and traveled about, preaching the gospel in all the towns until he reached Caesarea.

So, whereas St. Mark appears to be the founder of Northern Coptic Church and the church in Alexandria, the Ethiopian Eunuch may have been the founder of the Southern Coptic Church. This explanation, is, perhaps, a bit oversimplified, but this fact in itself suggests a high degree of probability of the evolution of significant differences. The Northern Copts appear to have had a better chance to have had access to the writings of the Apostles, whereas the Southern Copts were more isolated.

DIFFERING VERSIONS OF THE APOSTOLIC CONSTITUTIONS?

One of the most respected historical theorists of the early church era has a Seventh-day Adventist background— the late Milson B. Bishai. Understandably, his bias is that Sunday observance represented apostasy, and his analysis of Sabbath-keeping during the first 400 years or so of the Coptic Churches might possibly reflect this bias. His interpretation of Coptic Church history is articulated in his paper, “Sabbath Observance From Coptic Sources.” At the time this paper was written, he was with the School of Advanced International Studies, The Johns Hopkins University, Washington, D. C. Later he transferred to the Department of Near Eastern Languages and Civilizations at Harvard. He attended Maryland’s Washington Missionary College and Adventist Seminary, then earning his Ph.D. in Oriental studies in 1959 at Johns Hopkins University.

Dr. Bishai points to evidence he found that suggests that the Southern Copts (primarily Ethiopia) held on to Sabbath-keeping for much longer than their Northern counterparts (Egypt and Syria, primarily). He seems to attribute these differences between the Northern and Southern churches to the use of differing versions of an instructional literary work for the Christian Church, or the *Apostolic Constitutions*:

Apostolic orders regarding Sabbath observance on the seventh day of the week appear almost exclusively in the **southern** group versions represented by Coptic, Ethiopic, and Arabic, and are included mainly in book VIII of the Constitutions, which is missing in the versions of the northern group. This study considers two statutes in the Coptic version, the first prohibiting any work on the Sabbath, and the other calling Friday “the preparation day.”⁶ Following is the Coptic statute regarding Sabbath observance:

Let the servants (of the Lord) work five days; On the Sabbath (Sabbaton) and the Lord's day (*kyriake*) let them rest for the church that they may be instructed in piety. The Sabbath because God Himself rested on it when He completed all the creation. The Lord's day because it is the day of the resurrection of the Lord.

In regard to the Northern group, he observes:

Perhaps the justification for observing Sunday as produced by the Ethiopic version of the *Statutes of the Apostles* does not appeal to either Jews or Christians today, yet it must have sounded reasonable to the Early Christians of the southern group of churches during the fourth century of our era. Nevertheless, the question is: Why did the editor of the Ethiopic version resort to such a justification? The only logical answer to this question is to suppose some sort of complaint on the part of people regarding working only on five days and resting on two. **This in turn leads us to think that prior to the fourth century, Christians in Egypt and Ethiopia may have observed only the seventh-day, and that for some reason the Coptic bishops more recently had introduced the observance of Sunday. Being conservative, the Copts in accepting Sunday did not abandon the Sabbath.** This assumption is strengthened by the fact that the Coptic bishop who represented the Copts at Nicea is known to have agreed to hold the Easter festival on Sunday instead of the Jewish passover. It does not seem sensible that they should have honored the resurrection day itself on the Jewish passover if they observed Sunday as a weekly rest. Comparing this attitude of the southern group of churches to that of the northern group as illustrated by the Syriac version of the Statutes of the Apostles, we find a sharp difference of opinion. Referring to a day of rest, the Syriac version mentions only Sunday: . . . **And make not your worldly affairs of more account than the word of God; but on the Lord's day leave everything and run eagerly to your church . . .**

The world's most respected authority in this area of history and Arabic languages is Dr. Robert Kraft. (To learn more about Dr. Kraft's accomplishments, please view the article on him in *Wikipedia*.) Dr. Kraft wrote a paper that explains a set of issues that tend to invalidate Dr. Bishai's conclusions about the alleged Sabbath-keeping differences between the Northern and Southern Coptic churches. We will explore Dr. Kraft's objections shortly. Dr. Kraft also focuses on the merits of the different versions of *Apostolic Constitutions*, but with different conclusions.

DR. KRAFT ON DR. BISHAI

Dr. Kraft's statements in this section are all taken from his paper, **Some Notes on Sabbath Observance in Early Christianity.**"

Dr. Kraft explains Dr. Bishai's position on Saturday and Sunday observance among the Northern Copts as follows:

In the inaugural issue of *Seminary Studies*, W.B. Bishai has attempted to shed some light on the development of the custom of observing Sunday as a rest day in addition to the seventh-day Sabbath in early Coptic (and related) Christianity.¹ He suggests that it may have been under the influence of the first Council of Nicea (A.D. 325) that this situation first came about:

(One) It seems possible that Sabbath observance among the Copts in Egypt and Ethiopia may have passed through three stages:

(Two) Only the seventh-day observed – from apostolic times until the Council of Nicea;

(Three) Sunday and the seventh-day Sabbath both observed – from the Council of Nicea until perhaps a century or two later

(Four) Only Sunday designated as a day of public worship – a practice still observed today (p. 31).

In simplified terms, Dr. Kraft argues that Dr. Bishai thinks he has sources to analyze that originate from a variety of sources, including proprietary Coptic and Alexandrian Coptic sources, when most of these sources ultimately came from Greek Christian writings which were translated into the Coptic language. **The problem, again simplified for my purposes, is that the Greek Christians seemed to have observed both Saturday and Sunday from the earliest dates that can be determined.**

Ellen White and her successors have taught for nearly the last 150 years that the early Christians kept both Saturday and Sunday with Sunday gradually displacing Saturday as a false and sinister replacement for the Bible Sabbath. This concept is the basis for the "Dual Day Theory" of Sabbath abandonment developed after 1980 by the General Conference of Seventh-day Adventists to replace the highly discredited and historically impossible teaching of Ellen White that the papacy "changed" the Sabbath from Saturday to Sunday. But as we will come to see, this information does not support a conspiracy-apostasy picture of the contrasting recognitions afforded to Saturday and Sunday "observance" by the Gentile churches. The details are in the unique view the first Christians observed both Saturday and Sunday without attributing any intrinsic sacredness to either day. While Saturday had a special function in their weekly lives, it was not treated as a holy day in the Jewish way.

Here is what Dr. Kraft says:

This suspicion is borne out by a closer look at the passages adduced – the "Coptic statute regarding Sabbath observance" which Bishai cites as prime evidence (p. 27) is in fact a verbatim translation from Greek and is preserved in a parallel Greek form in *Apostolic Constitutions* VIII. 33.2: *Greek Apostolic Constitutions* (11). *Sahidic Statutes*" (12)

Let the slaves(13) work five days. But on the Sabbath and the Lord's Day let them devote themselves to the church that they may be instructed in piety. The Sabbath, indeed, because God himself rested on it when he completed all the creation and the Lord's Day because it is the day of the resurrection of the Lord.

Thus the statement that such passages are exclusive to the "southern group" (Coptic-Arabic-Ethiopic) as opposed to the "northern group" (Greek-Latin-Syriac) is incorrect. On this point alone, the framework of Bishai's argument collapses – which is not to say that his conclusions are necessarily false, but only that they do not follow from the evidence he cites.

In the literature of the time, we find it very clear that these early Christians made an effort to distance themselves from the observance of the Saturday festival in the Jewish manner. Again, Kraft continues:

But the same Synod prescribes that "the Gospels along with other Scriptures be read on the Sabbath"

(Canon 16), and recognizes the special nature of the two days, Sabbath [Page 24] and Lord's Day, during Lent (*Canons* 49,51). A similar attitude is attested by the Christian editor (from Antioch-Syria?) who expanded the Ignatian Epistles at about the same time:

Therefore let us no longer observe the Sabbath in a Judaistic way and rejoice in idleness...
But each of you should observe Sabbath in a spiritual way, rejoicing in study of laws...
And after keeping the Sabbath, let every lover of Christ celebrate the festival of the Lord's Day – the resurrection day, the royal day, the most excellent of all days (19).

One of the keys to understanding the observance of both Saturday and Sunday in the Coptic Church is the fact that their guiding literature originated from the the Greek-speaking Christian sources. Again, Kraft continues:

Finally, if we are allowed for the moment to treat the *Apostolic Constitutions* as somewhat of a unity representing 4th-century Hellenistic Egyptian Christianity, we will find that it not only refers to the Sabbath and Sunday festal gatherings which commemorate creation and resurrection respectively,(20), and advocates rest from usual labors on these two days (See above on Bishai's main text, *Apostolic Constitutions* VIII.33.2), but it also guards against leaving the impression that a person should be "idle" on the Sabbath – for creature as for creator, Sabbath rest means study of the laws, not idleness of hands (21). The *Apostolic Constitutions* and related literature are also quite clear that one is not to fast on the Sabbath, except at Passover/Easter time in memory of the Lord's death/burial (See *Apostolic. Constitutions* V. 14.20; 18.1f; 20.-19 [above, n. 17]; VII.23.3f; etc.)--an attitude which is widely attested by other contemporary witnesses such as Basil of Cappadocia (*De jejuniis*, hom. I.7,10; II.4.7), John Chrysostom of Antioch, *In Gen.*, hom. 13.2), and even Augustine of Hippo (*Ep. 36, ad Casulanum* 2.4). [Page 25].

Larry Dean's new chapter on the explosion of Christianity in Greek-speaking areas of the Roman Empire explains the various cultural attitudes that would have made it impossible for the Gospel to succeed in these areas if the Jewish Sabbath and dietary laws had been imposed on the Greeks. The Greeks hated the Jewish Sabbath because it caused the Jews to be idle one-seventh of their lives away doing nothing. Similarly, the Greeks believed that pork was the best meat ever made available for consumption to the human race. If Paul had preached the Sabbath and the Jewish dietary laws, he would have gotten no-where with the Greeks. For a complete view of this picture, please study Dean's chapter. It is with this new understanding of the relationship between the explosion of Christianity as it related to all things related to the Greeks that Dr. Kraft's observation above take on added meaning.

As Dean so thoroughly documents in his chapter on Greek Christianity, there is no record that the Eastern Orthodox churches ever kept the Jewish Sabbath. The records of the Greek Orthodox Church go back almost to the very beginning, and the record is that the seventh-day was kept as a festival and the first day was observed as a day of gathering together for public worship.

Kraft argues that the message of ancient Greek-Coptic Christian literature does hint of the possibility that some small pockets of believers may have kept the Sabbath in the Jewish manner, but he is quick to note that such is not definitive. He lists several of these considerations:

There are, indeed, a few additional clues from second century Christian literature which suggest that some Christian communities habitually kept the Sabbath at that early date.

(1) *Didache* 8:1 retains the Jewish name [for the] ("day of preparation" before the Sabbath) for Friday, which might indicate that Sabbath was still observed. It could be argued, per contra, that [*Greek word here is not reproducible*] here has simply become a standard designation for the 6th day of the week and does not carry any implications concerning Sabbath observance. The Jewish-Christian flavor of the *Didache* in general, however, along with the apparently anti-Pharisaic polemic in 8:1 and the preservation of the *Didache* tradition by the Eastern communities which maintained the dual observance (it is embedded in *Apostolic Constitutions* VII) argue against such a neutral use of [*Greek word here is not reproducible*] In 14:1, the *Didache* also speaks of observing the Eucharist on the [*Greek here is not reproducible*] --the weekly Lord's Day (or does it mean Easter Sunday?) – showing that the first-day observance also seems to have been practiced by the communities which the *Didache* tradition represents (Syria? Egypt?).

(2) The *Martyrdom of Polycarp* also uses the designation [non-reproducible Greek word] (7:1) **and does not**

hesitate to record that Polycarp's death fell on (and was commemorated on?) a "Great Sabbath" (8:1; 21:1), despite the hostile attitude to the Jews exhibited elsewhere in that document (see 12:2; 13:1). Thus it may be that the churches of Asia Minor among whom the *Martyrdom* circulated also retained some contact with Sabbath observances in the later second century. Although neither the *Martyrdom* nor the preserved *Epistle of Polycarp* makes mention of Sunday observance, it would be difficult to conclude from [Page 27] this that Polycarp and those who revered him did not in fact also observe the Sunday day of gladness.

(3) There probably is more than symbolic significance to Logion 27 of *Gospel of Thomas*: "If you do not fast to the world, you will not find the Kingdom; if you do not keep the Sabbath as a true Sabbath, you will not see the Father." (25) These sentiments circulated in the second century in Greek, and some years later they were translated into Coptic also. They would seem to find their life-setting in a community which in some way observed the seventh-day Sabbath, although it is not at all clear whether this community also observed Sunday.

Furthermore, the second century provides us with another type of evidence that certain Christians may have continued to observe the Jewish Sabbath; namely, by the occasional polemic against such a practice. (1) In the opening years of that century, Ignatius of Antioch warns the Magnesians in Asia Minor not to live "in accord with Judaism" but to follow the insight which even the divine prophets of old had received through God's grace and to live "in accord with Christ Jesus," God's Son and God's Logos sent to man.

If then, those who walked in the ancient customs [i.e., the aforementioned prophets] came to have a new hope, no longer "sabbatizing" but living in accord with the Lord's life – in which life there sprang up also our life through him and through his death – ...how shall we be able to live apart from him, of whom the prophets also were disciples, since they had received him as teacher in the spirit? Wherefore, he whom they justly awaited when he arrived, raised them from the death.... Thus, we should be his disciples – we should learn to live in accord with Christianity... It is absurd to proclaim Jesus Christ and to "judaize". For Christianity has not placed its trust in Judaism, but vice-versa (26).

Again, thanks to Larry Dean's recent research on Greek Orthodox Christianity, we have another *Gestalt*. As noted elsewhere in this book, the Greek Orthodox Church celebrated only two Sabbaths a year. The first one was "The Great Sabbath." It was celebrated on the Saturday that came immediately before Easter Sunday, and it commemorated the last Sabbath there ever was – kept by Jesus as He rested in the tomb the night before Resurrection morning. Here is the *Wikipedia* entry from the article, "Holy Sabbath:"

In Eastern Orthodoxy this day, known as **Holy and Great Saturday**, is also called **The Great Sabbath** since it is on this day that Christ "rested" physically in the tomb. But it is also believed that it was on this day he performed in spirit the Harrowing of Hades and raised up to Paradise those who had been held captive there. In the Coptic, Ethiopian and Eritrean Orthodox Churches, this day is known as **Joyous Saturday**.

The second Sabbath observed once a year by the Greek Orthodox Church was Lazarus Saturday. It was celebrated on the Saturday immediately preceding Palm Sunday (See *Wikipedia* article, Lazarus Saturday.)

Dr. Kraft may not have understood that he was dealing with the work of a scholar who had Seventh-day Adventist connections. Dr. Bishai is likely to always want to see that an ancient church started out keeping the Jewish Sabbath and then transitioned over time to keeping the false Sabbath, or Sunday. The idea seems like a good one to bolster the credibility of Adventism's focus on the Sabbath, but the devil is in the details. A belief model that really works for them remains continually illusive. Again, Kraft takes on Bishai's Sabbatarian-friendly theory:

The central thesis of Bishai's argument, however, still remains to be considered: **Did Coptic Christianity observe only the Sabbath rest until the mid-4th century, when Sunday observance was added under the influence of Nicea?** The failure of adequate evidence from Coptic Christianity prior to the 4th century makes it impossible to discuss this hypothesis with precision. An important aspect of the problem is the date at which one can speak of "Coptic" Christianity as an entity to be compared with other types (e.g., "Hellenistic") of Christianity – Bishai implies that such a distinction is possible "from apostolic times" onward (p. 31), but this is open to serious doubt. Certainly there were Coptic and Ethiopian Christians soon after Christian missionary work began, but no distinctively Coptic Christian community [Page 30] emerges until the middle of the 3d century (29). Prior to that time, it would seem that whatever Christian communities did exist in "non-Hellenistic" Egypt used primarily Greek and not Coptic as their "official" language; since Greek was the political language of Egypt at this time, as well as the language of the Egyptian Church, organized around Alexandria, they were not particularly isolated from "Hellenistic Christianity." (30)

This, plus the fact that the **multitude of Coptic texts which refer to the observance of both Sabbath and Sunday in 4th-century Egypt give no hint that this is a new practice, seriously undercuts Bishai's thesis.** It would seem that as peculiarly Coptic Christianity developed (in the 3d century?), it adopted and translated certain traditions current in the Hellenistic East – like the *Apostolic Tradition of Hippolytus*. **Thus from its very beginnings, "Coptic Christianity" observed both Sabbath and Sunday, because such was the practice taught in its adopted traditions!**

SOLOMONIC JUDAISM IN ETHIOPIA:

THE KEY TO THE DIFFERENCES

Both scholars seem unaware of the astonishing fact that Ethiopia has apparently been a stronghold of Judaism from the time of King Solomon to this day. The story is told in greater detail in Larry Dean's chapter on the Ethiopian churches. A combination of credible legend and verifiable historical data suggests that King Solomon and the Queen of Sheba had a dalliance when she visited him at his palace in Jerusalem. King Solomon taught her the worship of the True God and sent copies of the Jewish sacred manuscripts with her back to Ethiopia. She taught Judaism to her people, built a temple for the worship of the True God, and bore King Solomon's son. Her son's name and accomplishments are known to history, but credible legend states that when the young man came of age, he went to visit his father, King Solomon, before he died. Seeing that the political situation in Judah was volatile, putting the Ark of the Covenant at risk, he and his soldiers built a replica of it, stole the original from the temple, and escaped to Ethiopia with his father's army trailing him in an unsuccessful pursuit. This legend explains why the Ethiopians claim to have the Ark of the Covenant in a dungeon deep inside the earth of one of their churches which is on an island.

It is only natural to conclude that the most likely explanation for the very early observance of the Jewish Sabbath in Ethiopia is exactly what would be predicted given the reasonable scenario of the Ethiopian Eunuch being a Jew who journeyed to Jerusalem to worship God. The Evangelist, Philip, teaches Him the Gospel, and he returns to the Kingdom of Sheba with the great news. Converts are largely from Judaism. Without the benefit of the writings of the apostles, the first Christians in Ethiopia would almost certainly continue the tradition of Sabbath-keeping. In fact, to this very day there is a large enclave of Sabbath-keeping Christians. They are Roman Catholics and give their allegiance to the pope of Rome.

Christian missionaries who came to Ethiopia a century or centuries later would likely be astonished to find both large groups of Jewish and Christian believers right smack in the depths of Africa. These missionaries, being from the Eastern Orthodox churches, never kept the Sabbath. They would have introduced Sunday observance and attempted to teach them that Sabbath-keeping was against the plain teachings of the apostles. As a result in Ethiopia you would find, Jews, Sabbath-keeping Christians, Sunday-observing Christians, and Christians who observed Saturday as a festival, as does the Eastern Orthodox family of churches, and Sunday as a day of public worship.

For documentation of the various Christian denominations in Ethiopia, please see Larry Deans chapter on this subject.

SUMMARY

Thanks to inputs from multiple sources over many decades of research by a number of different scholars, including ourselves, we are in a better position than ever before to paint a picture of Sabbath-keeping among Christians for the first 300-400 years of the Faith:

- There have probably always been small groups of Christians who kept the Sabbath in the manner of the Jews. One particular group is likely to have been the Nazarenes.
- From our chapter on the lunar Sabbath, we know that some Jewish sects, like the Nazarenes, and some isolated groups of Christians, kept the Jewish Sabbath according to the lunar calendar.
- The first Christians, and virtually all of the churches in the East, tended to OBSERVE Saturdays, but they did not KEEP it and did not view the day as possessing intrinsic sacredness in and of itself. It was observed as a festival – in fact, a religious festival.
- The first Christians seem to have OBSERVED both Saturdays and Sundays as religious “festivals,” not attributing any holiness to either day.
- The “Dual Day” Theory of Sabbath Abandonment created and promoted by the General Conference of Seventh-day Adventists is an unfortunate half-truth. What is true about it is that the first Christians honored both Saturday and Sunday as a general rule. What is wrong about this “Dual Day Theory” is that almost immediately, Christians everywhere ceased to view Saturday as the sacred Sabbath. Neither Saturday nor Sunday were considered to be sacred days. When the

church moved toward one major gathering day a week, the choice of Sunday did not represent the substitution of a phony “Sabbath” for the real one.

- One of the factions of the Southern Coptic church, Christian converts from the large and nearly mysterious pocket of Judaism in Ethiopia, probably always KEPT the seventh-day in the Jewish manner even if Sundays were attributed with similar reverence. Evidence that this generalization is likely to be very consistently true is that the “Seventh-day Catholics” of Ethiopia keep the Seventh-day Sabbath to this very day.

As a clearer picture of the conditions present within the early church progressed right up through the 1960’s and beyond, Adventism has struggled to maintain credibility with the following assumptions:

That Sabbath abandonment was the result of a sinister conspiracy that represented a very early apostasy.

That the pope changed the Sabbath.

That there was an unbroken chain of loyal Sabbath-keeping Christians of substance that kept the true Sabbath from apostolic times up until the present day.

As far as Adventist scholarship goes – if you can dignify it with that term – it has been one defeat after another in regard to its conspiracy-apostasy theory of Sabbath abandonment. As we present in other chapters, the members of D.A. Carson’s Sabbatarian research team – some of the finest biblical scholars in the world – studied the three theories of Sabbath abandonment proposed to replace Ellen White’s failed theory that the pope changed the Sabbath, and discredited them.

One of the themes of *Lying for God* is that top Adventist leadership has known for many years that Ellen White was a false prophet and that its Sabbath-keeping theology had been thoroughly discredited. We have pointed out numerous times that when it comes to these subjects, no amount of evidence to the contrary is acceptable.

In another chapter we tell the story of J.N. Andrews, Ellen G. White’s *de facto* historian, who conceded in writing that Sabbath-keeping was universally abandoned by 200 AD. It has been widely known for centuries that there was no bishop of Rome who qualified to be considered a “pope” until the mid 400’s. Yet, despite these immovable facts of history, Andrews was an outspoken supporter of Ellen White’s conspiracy theory that the pope had changed the Sabbath. He seems to have allowed the nearly undeniable supernatural element of her public visions to believe her words despite having the facts staring him right in the face that would have told any reasonable man that the woman was either lying or delusional.

If we want to give the Adventists some much needed slack, we can concede in their favor that determining Sabbath observance, Sunday observance, or both day observance during the first 400 years of Christianity is not easy. From the content of our other chapters, here is a summary of the reasons why examining the Christian writings of the first 300-400 years of the Faith must be conducted with extreme caution:

Some early writers viewed Sunday as the Sabbath, whether it was kept in the Jewish manner or as a festival, and in their writings they labeled it as the “Sabbath.” Exhaustive studies are often necessary to determine what day these writers meant. In some cases it is possible to determine their intent by the content of their entire set of writings and/or related writings, and in other cases it is not possible to determine which day was intended by the terminology of “Sabbath.”

There is little doubt that the Jewish Christians in Palestine clung to literal, Jewish Sabbath observance for many years. While some of them probably figured out that when Circumcision was nixed in 50 AD that the Sabbath observance was not required for Christians, they probably continued keeping the Sabbath as part of their Jewish heritage, as did the Nazarenes and other Christians who observed the Sabbath according to the four phases of the moon – the lunar Sabbath.

The Apostle Paul himself, seemed to allow for Sabbath-keeping, despite its serious theological ramifications, for either Jews or Gentiles. Through the Spirit of God he instructed Christians not to judge each other in regard to whether they kept the sabbaths or not.

For the serious theological problems with Sabbath-keeping, please see Kerry Wynne’s chapter about Colossians 2:14-17.

CHAPTER TWENTY-SEVEN
ISRAEL'S RESTORATION:
THE KEY TO END-TIME EVENTS

Martin H. Klayman

(new)

ISRAEL'S RESTORATION: THE KEY TO END-TIME EVENTS

Martin H. Klayman

The major and minor prophets of Israel foretold that God would restore the Nation of Israel to its former state in the end times. These prophecies are seen to include both its spiritual and national-political relationships. As early as 1900, Reverend Isaac Massey Haddleman, pastor of the Baptist Church of New York, and C. I. Scofield, began to teach that the Bible prophesied that Israel would be restored. In doing so they were essentially following in the footsteps of earlier Christian "greats" such as Dwight L. Moody and Charles Spurgeon.

At the time, scholars at most of the major universities and seminaries ridiculed the teachings of these men. They taught that Israel got spiritualized into the Christian church and that God has had no more dealings with the Jews as a people.

Let's examine the physical restoration prophecies first.

In Ezekiel 37:1-3 we are asked, "Can these bones live?" We are told in verses 11-14 and verse 22 that the "bones" represent the whole house of Israel:

Ezekiel 37:1-28 (KJV):

¹The hand of the Lord was upon me, and carried me out in the spirit of the Lord, and set me down in the midst of the valley which was full of bones, ²And caused me to pass by them round about: and, behold, there were very many in the open valley; and, lo, they were very dry. ³And he said unto me, Son of man, can these bones live? And I answered, O Lord God, thou knowest. ⁴Again he said unto me, Prophesy upon these bones, and say unto them, O ye dry bones, hear the word of the Lord. ⁵Thus saith the Lord God unto these bones; Behold, I will cause breath to enter into you, and ye shall live: ⁶And I will lay sinews upon you, and will bring up flesh upon you, and cover you with skin, and put breath in you, and ye shall live; and ye shall know that I am the Lord. ⁷So I prophesied as I was commanded: and as I prophesied, there was a noise, and behold a shaking, and the bones came together, bone to his bone. ⁸And when I beheld, lo, the sinews and the flesh came up upon them, and the skin covered them above: but there was no breath in them. ⁹Then said he unto me, Prophesy unto the wind, prophesy, son of man, and say to the wind, Thus saith the Lord God; Come from the four winds, O breath, and breathe upon these slain, that they may live. ¹⁰So I prophesied as he commanded me, and the breath came into them, and they lived, and stood up upon their feet, **an exceeding great army.** ¹¹**Then he said unto me, Son of man, these bones are the whole house of Israel:** behold, they say, Our bones are dried, and our hope is lost: we are cut off for our parts. ¹²Therefore prophesy and say unto them, Thus saith the Lord God; Behold, O my people, I will open your graves, and cause you to come up out of your graves, and bring you into the land of Israel. ¹³And ye shall know that I am the Lord, when I have opened your graves, O my people, and brought you up out of your graves, ¹⁴And shall put my spirit in you, and ye shall live, and I shall place you in your own land: then shall ye know that I the Lord have spoken it, and performed it, saith the Lord. ¹⁵The word of the Lord came again unto me, saying, ¹⁶Moreover, thou son of man, take thee one stick, and write upon it, For Judah, and for the children of Israel his companions: then take another stick, and write upon it, For Joseph, the stick of Ephraim and for all the house of Israel his companions: ¹⁷And join them one to another into one stick; and they shall become one in thine hand. ¹⁸And when the children of thy people shall speak unto thee, saying, Wilt thou not shew us what thou meanest by these? ¹⁹Say unto them, Thus saith the Lord God; Behold, I will take the stick of Joseph, which is in the hand of Ephraim, and the tribes of Israel his fellows, and will put them with him, even with the stick of Judah, and make them one stick, and they shall be one in mine hand. ²⁰And the sticks whereon thou writest shall be in thine hand before their eyes. ²¹And say unto them, Thus saith the Lord God; **Behold, I will take the children of Israel from among the heathen, whither they be gone, and will gather them on every side, and bring them into their own land: ²²And I will make them one nation in the land upon the mountains of Israel; and one king shall be king to them all: and they shall be no more two nations, neither shall they be divided into two kingdoms any more at all.** ²³Neither shall they defile themselves any more with their idols, nor with their detestable things, nor with any of their transgressions: but I will save them out of all their

dwelling places, wherein they have sinned, and will cleanse them: so shall they be my people, and I will be their God. ²⁴And **David my servant shall be king over them**; and they all shall have one shepherd: **they shall also walk in my judgments, and observe my statutes, and do them.** ²⁵And **they shall dwell in the land that I have given unto Jacob my servant, wherein your fathers have dwelt; and they shall dwell therein, even they, and their children, and their children's children for ever: and my servant David shall be their prince for ever.** ²⁶Moreover I will make a covenant of peace with them; it shall be an everlasting covenant with them: and I will place them, and multiply them, **and will set my sanctuary in the midst of them for evermore.** ²⁷**My tabernacle also shall be with them:** yea, I will be their God, and they shall be my people. ²⁸And the heathen shall know that I the Lord do sanctify Israel, when **my sanctuary shall be in the midst of them for evermore.**

It is clear that these bones do not represent the church. The remarkable reestablishment of the Nation of Israel in 1948 tells us that we are correct in believing that the bones represent Israel during the end-times.

In Ezekiel 36:19-28 we are told that God intends to physically take the Jews from among heathen lands and literally return them to the same soil from which they were taken:

¹⁹And I scattered them among the heathen, and they were dispersed through the countries: according to their way and according to their doings I judged them. ²⁰And when they entered unto the heathen, **whither they went, they profaned my holy name, when they said to them, These are the people of the Lord, and are gone forth out of his land.** ²¹But I had pity for mine holy name, which the house of Israel had profaned among the heathen, whither they went. ²²Therefore say unto the house of Israel, thus saith the Lord God; I do not this for your sakes, O house of Israel, but for mine holy name's sake, which **ye have profaned among the heathen, whither ye went.** ²³And I will sanctify my great name, which was profaned among the heathen, which ye have profaned in the midst of them; and the heathen shall know that I am the Lord, saith the Lord God, when I shall be sanctified in you before their eyes. ²⁴**For I will take you from among the heathen, and gather you out of all countries, and will bring you into your own land.** ²⁵Then will I sprinkle clean water upon you, and ye shall be clean: from all your filthiness, and from all your idols, will I cleanse you. ²⁶**A new heart also will I give you, and a new spirit will I put within you: and I will take away the stony heart out of your flesh, and I will give you an heart of flesh.** ²⁷And I will put my spirit within you, and cause you to walk in my statutes, and ye shall keep my judgments, and do them. ²⁸And ye shall dwell in the land that I gave to your fathers; and ye shall be my people, and I will be your God.

In thinking about this passage, several things come to mind. **(1)** It is difficult to see this as a conditional prophecy that was not fulfilled at the First Advent. **(2)** It is possible that this prophet has been shown that after the death of Christ, the Jews of the Dispersion denied that Jesus was their Messiah, thus profaning the name of Jesus. **(3)** It would have to refer to end-time events because the restoration is shown to be permanent.

Amos 9:8-15 also substantiates this (KJV):

⁸Behold, the eyes of the Lord God are upon the sinful kingdom, and I will destroy it from off the face of the earth; saving that I will not utterly destroy the house of Jacob, saith the Lord. ⁹For, lo, I will command, and I will sift the house of Israel among all nations, like as corn is sifted in a sieve, yet shall not the least grain fall upon the earth. ¹⁰All the sinners of my people shall die by the sword, which say, The evil shall not overtake nor prevent us. ¹¹In that day will I raise up the tabernacle of David that is fallen, and close up the breaches thereof; and I will raise up his ruins, and I will build it as in the days of old: ¹²That they may possess the remnant of Edom, and of all the heathen, which are called by my name, saith the Lord that doeth this. ¹³Behold, the days come, saith the Lord, that the plowman shall overtake the reaper, and the treader of grapes him that soweth seed; and the mountains shall drop sweet wine, and all the hills shall melt. ¹⁴And I will bring again the captivity of my people of Israel, and they shall build the waste cities, and inhabit them; and they shall plant vineyards, and drink the wine thereof; they shall also make gardens, and eat the fruit of them. ¹⁵**And I will plant them upon their land, and they shall no more be pulled up out of their land which I have given them, saith the Lord thy God.**

Again, since the prophecy is for a permanent restoration, this passage can only be applied to end-time events.

As a matter of fact, the majority of prophets in the Old Testament deal with this time of Israel's physical and literal restoration. The thread that runs through these prophecies is that there is to be a period of chastening and judgment before the final restoration. We have already looked at Ezekiel 36:8-15. See also Zechariah 8:6 (KJV):

¹Again the word of the Lord of hosts came to me, saying, ²Thus saith the Lord of hosts; I was jealous for Zion with great jealousy, and I was jealous for her with great fury. ³Thus saith the Lord; I am returned unto Zion, and will dwell in the midst of Jerusalem: and Jerusalem shall be called a city of truth; and the mountain of the Lord of hosts the holy mountain. ⁴Thus saith the Lord of hosts; There shall yet old men and old women dwell in the streets of Jerusalem, and every man with his staff in his hand for very age. ⁵And the streets of the city shall be full of boys and girls playing in the streets thereof. ⁶Thus saith the Lord of hosts; If it be marvellous in the eyes of the remnant of this people in these days, should it also be marvellous in mine eyes? saith the Lord of hosts. ⁷Thus saith the Lord of hosts; Behold, I **will save my people from the east country, and from the west country; ⁸And I will bring them, and they shall dwell in the midst of Jerusalem:** and they shall be my people, and I will be their God, in truth and in righteousness. ⁹Thus saith the Lord of hosts; Let your hands be strong, ye that hear in these days these words by the mouth of the prophets, which were in the day that the foundation of the house of the Lord of hosts was laid, **that the temple might be built.** ¹⁰For before these days there was no hire for man, nor any hire for beast; neither was there any peace to him that went out or came in because of the affliction: for I set all men every one against his neighbour. ¹¹But now I will not be unto the residue of this people as in the former days, saith the Lord of hosts. ¹²For the seed shall be prosperous; the vine shall give her fruit, and the ground shall give her increase, and the heavens shall give their dew; and I will cause the remnant of this people to possess all these things. ¹³**And it shall come to pass, that as ye were a curse among the heathen, O house of Judah, and house of Israel; so will I save you, and ye shall be a blessing:** fear not, but let your hands be strong. ¹⁴For thus saith the Lord of hosts; As I thought to punish you, when your fathers provoked me to wrath, saith the Lord of hosts, and I repented not: ¹⁵So again have I thought in these days to do well unto Jerusalem and to the house of Judah: fear ye not. ¹⁶These are the things that ye shall do; Speak ye every man the truth to his neighbour; execute the judgment of truth and peace in your gates: ¹⁷And let none of you imagine evil in your hearts against his neighbour; and love no false oath: for all these are things that I hate, saith the Lord. ¹⁸And the word of the Lord of hosts came unto me, saying, ¹⁹Thus saith the Lord of hosts; The fast of the fourth month, and the fast of the fifth, and the fast of the seventh, and the fast of the tenth, shall be to the house of Judah joy and gladness, and cheerful feasts; therefore love the truth and peace. ²⁰Thus saith the Lord of hosts; It shall yet come to pass, that there shall come people, and the inhabitants of many cities: ²¹And the inhabitants of one city shall go to another, saying, Let us go speedily to pray before the Lord, and to seek the Lord of hosts: I will go also. ²²Yea, many people and strong nations shall come to seek the Lord of hosts in Jerusalem, and to pray before the Lord. ²³Thus saith the Lord of hosts; **In those days it shall come to pass, that ten men shall take hold out of all languages of the nations, even shall take hold of the skirt of him that is a Jew, saying, We will go with you: for we have heard that God is with you.**

Note that God appears to have a special love for Jerusalem. It was the place that He died for the sins of humanity. It is the place where He dwelt with humanity for many years. This prophecy must refer to end-time events because the "fix" is portrayed as being permanent.

Multitudes of Christians have believed that God turned His back on Israel because the Jews "put Christ to death." Upon careful analysis, the idea that Israel, as a people, rejected Jesus does not stand up. Only a small group of leaders orchestrated His covert trial and execution. Furthermore, it was Rome that executed Him, at least partly as a result of the fear of a popular leader who might incite action against the Empire. This small band of wicked leaders were even forced to hire false witnesses to testify against Him at His trial. The common people loved Jesus, and He had a large popular following at the time of His death who would gladly have crowned Him King! The handful of priests who initiated His arrest deliberately operated with surprise and secrecy, almost certainly because they feared that the people would not be in support of their operation if they knew what was happening.

In all of these developments, God seems to have understood that the Jewish people were deceived and double-crossed by their leaders into believing that they still needed to look to the future to welcome their Messiah. The story of God's loving pursuit of Israel in the past, the significant number of Jews who are accepting Christ now, and the literal fulfillment of so

many of the end-time prophecies of Israel's return to its homeland, suggest that these prophecies will play out fully as predicted. In the long history of God's dealings with Israel, we have all the proof that we could ask for that the door of mercy is always open to individuals and nations. In Isaiah 54:3-8, God explains His love for his wayward bride— Israel:

Isaiah 54:3-8 (KJV)

³For thou shalt break forth on the right hand and on the left; **and thy seed shall inherit the Gentiles, and make the desolate cities to be inhabited.** ⁴Fear not; for thou shalt not be ashamed: neither be thou confounded; for thou shalt not be put to shame: for thou shalt forget the shame of thy youth, and shalt not remember the reproach of thy widowhood any more. ⁵For thy Maker is thine husband; the Lord of hosts is his name; and thy Redeemer the Holy One of Israel; The God of the whole earth shall he be called. ⁶For the Lord hath called thee as a woman forsaken and grieved in spirit, and a wife of youth, when thou wast refused, saith thy God. ⁷For a small moment have I forsaken thee; but with great mercies will I gather thee. ⁸In a little wrath I hid my face from thee for a moment; but with everlasting kindness will I have mercy on thee, saith the Lord thy Redeemer.

In view of the facts in regard to how Israel's acceptance of its Messiah got derailed by a handful of wicked leaders, and in view of the unquenchable love of God for Israel, explains why there is no mystery regarding the justice of God in giving Israel a second chance to accept Jesus as their Messiah. God intends to win them back to Him through signs and wonders, as He did long ago in Egypt.

Israel had not been an independent nation since 600 BC until 1948, when, once again, it became a country of its own. These prophecies have been largely fulfilled by the events leading up to the 1948 rebirth of the Nation of Israel. This event astonished the world and validated the prophetic interpretations of Haddleman, Scofield, and their predecessors. There is little reason to doubt that the later and final steps of the prophecy will not be fulfilled as prophesied.

Meanwhile, William Miller, Ellen G. White, and the Seventh-day Adventist Church had been teaching since the 1840's that Jerusalem would never be rebuilt. Miller was forced to rationalize his thinking and adopt this view because he had predicted that Jesus would return in 1844. Ellen White echoed the same thing because she thought Jesus was coming back in a few years. It took her at least four incidents of time setting before she herself finally got it through her head that Jesus knew what He was talking about when He forbade His followers to predict the time of His return. See the historical timeline in another chapter in this book for a thorough documentation of Adventism's blunders related to its rejection of the concept that Israel would be restored in the end-time.

St. Paul tells us that the day will come when "all" the Jews will be saved since Paul is writing after Israel had rejected its Messiah and crucified Jesus. The application must be to end-time events. See what he said in Romans 11:25-28 (KJV):

²⁵For I would not, brethren, that ye should be ignorant of this mystery, lest ye should be wise in your own conceits; that blindness in part is happened to Israel, until the fulness of the Gentiles be come in.

²⁶**And so all Israel shall be saved:** as it is written, There shall come out of Sion the Deliverer, and shall turn away ungodliness from Jacob: ²⁷For this is my covenant unto them, when I shall take away their sins. ²⁸As concerning the gospel, they are enemies for your sakes: but **as touching the election, they are beloved for the father's sakes.**

In view of the current situation in Israel, and in view of the promises God had made to Israel, it is evident that it will take a series of miracles to bring about the remaining chapters in the restoration of Israel. Turkey has invaded Syria with the assistance of U.S. troops. Hezbollah has special forces gathered along the border of Israel. A company of Israeli tanks has gone out to contain those forces if necessary. Hezbollah has 150,000 missiles pointed at Israel and Iran says it can destroy Israel in 8 minutes. Israel is a nuclear force, and if it is attacked it may well launch a "suicide" nuclear attack on its enemies that will wipe out those countries. Only divine power can arrest this powder keg and set up Israel as a power that the world will respect and revere. We are all watching these developments with keen interest.

See the following link for documentation of the missile strength of Hezbollah:

<http://www.truthrevolt.org/news/hezbollah-has-150000-missiles-thousands-pointed-israel>

Seventh-day Adventists deny 50% of the Old Testament by stealing the literal promises God gave to Israel and applying them to the church. They confuse who God is talking to. Is He talking to the Jew, the Gentile, or the church? Obviously he is

talking about Israel— literal Israel.

Zechariah 12:8-14 contains stunning prophecies. God will win Israel back to Him through signs and wonders— the same way He won their hearts when He delivered them from Egyptian slavery. He will destroy all the nations that attack them. Only a miracle can accomplish such a thing.

⁸In that day shall the Lord defend the inhabitants of Jerusalem; and he that is feeble among them at that day shall be as David; and the house of David shall be as God, as the angel of the Lord before them. ⁹And it shall come to pass in that day, **that I will seek to destroy all the nations that come against Jerusalem.** ¹⁰And I will pour upon the house of David, and upon the inhabitants of Jerusalem, the spirit of grace and of supplications: **and they shall look upon me whom they have pierced, and they shall mourn for him, as one mourneth for his only son, and shall be in bitterness for him, as one that is in bitterness for his firstborn.** ¹¹In that day shall there be a great mourning in Jerusalem, as the mourning of Hadadrimmon in the valley of Megiddon. ¹²And the land shall mourn, every family apart; the family of the house of David apart, and their wives apart; the family of the house of Nathan apart, and their wives apart.

The apostle Paul puts on the capstone of the Jewish restoration by saying three things:

Someday God, in a manner of speaking, is going to “dump” the Gentiles. See Romans 11:25, Jeremiah 3:11, Jeremiah 46:28, Jeremiah 50:47, and Isaiah 40:17.

Someday God is going to save Israel as a nation. See Romans 11:26, Daniel 12:1-4, and Jeremiah 30:7.

The greatest danger for the Gentiles is that they “become wise in their own deceits. See Romans 11:25, Psalm 2, Jeremiah 50:4-7, Isaiah 40:12-22, and Isaiah 45:11-24.

These Scriptures teach that the age of the Church will be eclipsed by the glory of Israel’s reconciliation with God and His Messiah. Today, Jews are being drawn by the thousands from all over the world to relocate in Israel. The final chapters of Israel’s history are being written right now before our very eyes.

CHAPTER TWENTY-EIGHT
THE ANTI-CHRIST – ISLAM OR THE PAPACY?

Larry Dean

THE ANTI-CHRIST: ISLAM OR THE PAPACY?

“When you hear that the Russians have captured the city of Crimea, you should know that the times of the Messiah have started, that his steps are being heard. And when you hear that the Russians have reached the city of Constantinople, you should put on your Shabbat (Sabbath) clothes and don’t take them off, because it means that the Messiah is about to come any minute.” Jewish Rabbi Eliyahu of Vilna, Rabbi Elijah ben Shlomo Zalman (1720-1797) known as the Gra, or the “Vilna Gaon” ¹

Most Evangelical/Protestant end-time scenarios have resolutely focused on Western Europe and papal Rome as the source of the “ten-horned” anti-Christ. This has been a tradition that is partially the result of the emotionally bitter local feuds that erupted between Rome and the reformers in the 16th Century. It is a view that is unfortunately based on little or no understanding of the history of the Roman Empire or early Christian history. A more complicated view of ancient Christianity and the continuing geostrategic importance of Constantinople/Istanbul, and its fascinating but usually overlooked connection with Eastern Christianity, provides a more modern basis for analyzing end-time events. At the same time, the Evangelical Protestant eschatological worldview has shifted from a “Rome-centric” to a “Middle East-centric” one since the stunning rebirth of the modern-day State of Israel in 1948. The stunning fulfillment of the first “prong” of the Gaon of Vilna’s prophecy is represented by the 2014 seizure of the Crimean Peninsula by Russia, the ongoing Syrian Civil War that threatens to develop into a war between Turkey and Russia, and the ever-increasing tensions in the Middle East. In view of these developments, the need for on-going analysis all the more urgent. It is with great trepidation and abundance of caution that we prayerfully set out the following argument.

CONSTANTINOPLE: THE CITY OF SEVEN HILLS OF REVELATION 17

The geostrategic, political, and religious dominance of Constantinople over the ancient world simply cannot be overstated. It was the capitals of both the Roman and Byzantine Empires and the center of Christianity for most of the religion’s first 1,400 years. It was an incredibly fortified, impregnable fortress city in the center of the Roman Empire with staggering geostrategic importance.² Many wars were fought over control of the Dardanelles straits from 1809 until 1924, demonstrating its overwhelming strategic importance.³ Eastern Christianity, which centered in Rome’s capital of Constantinople, was so powerful that it excommunicated the Roman pontiff in 1054 AD. This fact should deal a fatal blow to any theory of papal supremacy. What was “rotten” with Rome was perceived 500 years before the Protestant Reformation by Eastern Christianity. All seven of the Ecumenical Councils took place in the East– not the West– and within a 150 mile radius of Constantinople. Rome was 900 miles away and no pope attended any of the Great Councils in person. Muhammed predicted the city would be controlled by Islam.^{5 67}

Ancient Constantinople (modern Istanbul) is a city of Seven Hills.⁸ It “fits” the requirements of Revelation 17. It is the only city on earth that sits astride of both Europe and Asia, over sea lanes of unrivaled geostrategic importance. It is the only city on earth that was the capital of *both* the Roman and Byzantine Empires and the Islamic Empire.^{9 10} These are striking symbolic correlations with the “feet mixed with clay and iron” of Daniel 2. It was the city where the Roman emperor and empress attended church at Christianity’s “crown jewel,” and heard the preaching of the famed Bishop of Constantinople, St. John Chrysostom.^{11 12} No Roman Emperor likely ever attended church in Rome prior to the capital’s move to Constantinople, and never afterward.

¹ <http://destination-yisrael.biblesearchers.com/destination-yisrael/2014/05/the-prophecy-of-the-vilna-gaon-when-you-hear-that-the-russians-have-captured-the-city-of-crimea-the-.html>

² <http://neobyzantium.com/why-constantinople-was-so-hard-to-conquer/>

³ http://carnegieendowment.org/files/Aybet_Brief.pdf

⁴ <http://www.bl.uk/collection-items/strategic-important-constantinople-to-british-empire-general-staff>

⁵ <http://www.islamweb.net/en/article/28648/the-conquest-of-constantinople>

⁶ <http://lostislamichistory.com/mehmed-ii-and-the-prophets-promise/>

⁷ <http://www.sunnah.org/msaec/articles/Constantinople.htm>

⁸ https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Seven_hills_of_Istanbul

⁹ https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Seven_hills_of_Istanbul

¹⁰ <http://www.weloveist.com/istanbuls-seven-hills>

¹¹ <http://idlespeculations-terryprest.blogspot.com/2007/11/st-john-chrysostom-and-empress-eudoxia.html>

¹² <https://oca.org/saints/lives/2009/11/13/103292-st-john-chrysostom-the-archbishop-of-constantinople>

Modern-day Istanbul features some horrifying religious facts that exist nowhere else on earth. On each of the Seven Hills of Istanbul, an “imperial” Mosque has been built over the destroyed ruins of a Christian church and/or a Christian church that was desecrated by its conversion into a mosque, pursuant to an Ottoman imperial order that all of the Christian churches be destroyed and converted into mosques.¹³ They are as follows:



SARAYBURNU HILL

The glorious Hagia Sophia-- Christianity’s most spectacular cathedral-- was converted into an imperial mosque after the fall of Constantinople and is now a museum in modern secular Istanbul.¹⁴ In this picture, you can see the four Islamic minarets that were built next to the cathedral after Constantinople was sacked in 1453 by the Turkish invaders.



The massive Blue Mosque is built near the Hagia Sophia.¹⁵ ¹⁶It was the biggest imperial mosque of Istanbul and Turkey until it was surpassed by Istanbul’s gigantic Çamlıca Mosque, which was quietly opened in July 2016¹⁷:

ÇEMBERLİTAŞ HILL

The Ottomans built the massive Nuruosmaniye Mosque on top of Çemberlitaş Hill, after Christian Constantinople was sacked and destroyed by the Turkish invaders in 1453. This was a thriving Christian community that has been all but obliterated.

https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Nuruosmaniye_Mosque



¹³ Render Unto the Sultan: Power, Authority, and the Greek Orthodox Church in the Early Ottoman centuries, Papademetriou, P. 109.

¹⁴ https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Hagia_Sophia

¹⁵ https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Sultan_Ahmed_Mosque

¹⁶ <http://www.sacred-destinations.com/turkey/istanbul-blue-mosque>

¹⁷ <http://www.dailysabah.com/istanbul/2016/07/01/istanbuls-giant-camllica-mosque-holds-first-prayers-to-mark-laylat-al-qadr>



BEYAZIT HILL

Eyrek Mosque or Pantokrator Monastery is one of the two significant [mosques](#) built on this hill in [Istanbul](#). It is “made” of two former [Eastern Orthodox](#) churches and a [chapel](#).

Zeyrek Mosque shares the Hill with the magnificent imperial Süleymaniye Mosque, which has a design that was copied directly from the Hagia Sophia. It is one of Istanbul’s largest imperial Mosques:

https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/S%C3%BCleymaniye_Mosque



FATİH HILL (Fatih Mosque / Old Holy Apostles Church)

This was the original site of the Church of the Holy Apostles, second in size and importance to the Hagia Sophia. That church served as the headquarters of the Ecumenical Patriarch of the Greek Orthodox Church. It was demolished by the Ottomans to build the Fatih Mosque.

YAVUZ SELİM HILL

The Imperial Yavus Selim Mosque was built on this Hill, displacing one of Istanbul's most vibrant-Christian communities.

https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Yavuz_Selim_Mosque



EDİRNEKAPI HILL

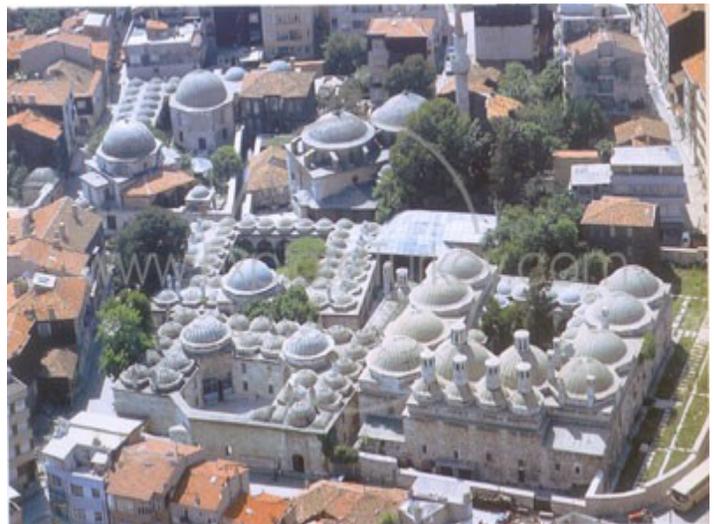
The Mihrimah Sultan Mosque was designed by [Mimar Sinan](#) ("Sinan the Architect") for the favorite daughter of [Suleiman the Magnificent](#), Princess [Mihrimah](#):

[https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Mihrimah_Sultan_Mosque_\(Edirnekap%C4%B1\)](https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Mihrimah_Sultan_Mosque_(Edirnekap%C4%B1))

KOCAMUSTAFAPAŞA HILL

This Hill is topped by the Hürrem Sultan Complex. The mosque complex was commissioned by [Haseki Hürrem Sultan](#), the wife of the [Ottoman Sultan Suleiman the Magnificent](#). She had married the sultan around 1534 and probably used her dowry to finance the project.

https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Haseki_Sultan_Complex



As the preceding photos demonstrate, the thriving Christian Byzantium religion and culture of Constantinople/Istanbul has been systematically erased following the conquest of the city in 1453, when it was brutally seized and vanquished by Turkish invaders. The vital prophetic importance of the city's immense transformation will become obvious when we discuss the nature of Islam's conquest of Jerusalem in 638 AD and the construction of the Dome of the Rock on the Temple Mount.

It is stunning and disturbing that Ellen White never discussed the immense transformation of Christian Constantinople into a fully Islamic city; let alone recognized it as the center of ancient Christianity; let alone its status as the capital of the Roman Empire-- let alone its status as the last capital of the Islamic Empire. To be sure, most Protestant prophecy experts have also overlooked these stunning facts, focusing on Roman Catholicism, Rome, and the papacy as the locus of prophetic end-time events. Protestants have long looked for a revived Western Roman Empire as the seat of the anti-Christ, as a fulfillment of the Daniel 2's vision of feet made of "iron and clay." Istanbul uniquely lies in *both* Europe and Asia. It is Europe's most populous city.¹⁸ It uniquely was the capital of *both* the Roman and Byzantine Empires *and* the Islamic (Ottoman) Empire. It uniquely has featured a blending of religion and state of *both* the Christian and Islamic variants. It is the strategic highway between the Mediterranean "Ocean" and the Black Sea, where over 100 wars have been fought over these vital straits since the early 1800's. Turkey is a member of NATO and has been trying to become a member of the European Union for many years. In recent years, as the Syrian Civil War has escalated, Turkey has drifted away from the West and is becoming more allied with its Sunni Arab co-religionists, against resurgent Shiite Islam. It has recently renewed relations with Israel. It is fighting a bitter civil war with its Kurdish population, which threatens to unravel the entire country. The Protestant Reformers, as well-meaning as they were, were not geopolitical military thinkers. Rome was of so little strategic importance that it was declared to be an open city near the end of the Allied sweep across Italy during World War 2.¹⁹ No battles of any importance were fought over Rome in World War 1. And yet one of World War I's most costly battles was fought over Istanbul/Constantinople and its all-important strategic waterways.

Modern-day massive Istanbul (Europe's largest city) is one of the key strategic crossroads of the modern world, and is the only city that is located in *both* Europe and Asia. It is also the watery link between the Black Sea and the Mediterranean Sea, and is a vital conduit for the Russian Navy. Warships from all of the countries of the world navigate the Bosphorus River, which divides Istanbul into its European and Asian "halves." The tight confines are demonstrated by this picture of an American warship headed for the Black Sea through downtown Istanbul, and a map that shows it's almost-absurdly tight strategic chokepoint^{20 21 22 23 24} location:



In the background across the Bosphorus is "European" Istanbul.

In the foreground of the left photo is "Asian" Istanbul.

¹⁸ https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/List_of_European_cities_by_population_within_city_limits

¹⁹ <http://www.nytimes.com/2004/01/11/books/the-fall-of-rome.html>

²⁰ <https://www.thenews.com.pk/print/143566-Pakistans-Turkish-delight>

²¹ <https://people.hofstra.edu/geotrans/eng/ch1en/appl1en/ch1a2en.html>

²² <https://istanbulalti.wordpress.com/2011/02/13/so-why-is-the-bosporus-so-important/>

²³ <http://www.newsweek.com/man-who-stares-boats-449088>

²⁴ https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Turkish_Straits_crisis

The tense strategic location of Istanbul is shown in the next photos; Russian Missile Frigates traversing from the straits of Dardanelles to the Black Sea. Russia is entirely dependent on this waterway to supply its troops in the Syrian Civil War.





And finally, a US warship passes under the bridge that links the Asian and European “halves” of Istanbul.

Christian Constantinople was the center of ancient Christianity, the capital of the Roman and Byzantine Empires, and also the general vicinity of the seven Ecumenical Councils that took place before the “Great Schism” that divided Eastern and Western Christianity in 1054. In that year, the Patriarch of Constantinople was powerful enough to excommunicate the Roman pope.²⁵ All of the Great Ecumenical Councils took place within a 200 mile radius of Constantinople. That Constantinople was a massive fortress city surrounded by impregnable walls is demonstrated by the following jaw-dropping photos:



But the city finally fell to Islam in 1453, after a long pitched battle, then Christians were butchered in droves.²⁶ ²⁷And instead of being the vibrant center of Christianity and the Roman and Byzantine Empires, it became the capital city of the Islamic (Ottoman) Empire and the center of Islam. Its churches were systematically destroyed and displaced by mosques. Modern-day Istanbul features almost 3,000 mosques, with new ones being built or planned.²⁸ It is illegal to repair or build Christian churches in the city, and nearly all Christian schools and seminaries have been shuttered or transformed into Islamic educational institutions. The profound prophetic importance of Constantinople comes into focus as we examine the early history of the Temple Mount in Jerusalem.

The Conquest of Jerusalem and the Temple Mount

Jerusalem and Temple Mount are special places that God has declared are reserved for Himself. Not only does the prophet, Ezekiel, place the city at the center of end-time events and the Second Coming, but God has repeatedly stressed His keen

²⁵ <https://www.britannica.com/event/Schism-of-1054>

²⁶ <http://militaryhistory.about.com/od/battleswars14011600/p/Byzantine-Ottoman-Wars-Fall-Of-Constantinople.htm>

²⁷ <http://www.historytoday.com/judith-herrin/fall-constantinople>

²⁸ https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/List_of_mosques_in_Istanbul

proprietary feelings of His “jealous” ownership of the city and Temple Mount.^{29 30 31}

About 600 years after the Destruction of the Jewish Temple in AD 70, Islam strode onto the world scene. The prophet Mohammed was born in Mecca about 570 AD. By 608 AD, the main shrine in pagan Arabia, the Kaaba in Mecca, was erected. And 30 years later, a world-shattering event took place that continues to reverberate in our world today: “On a February day in the year A.D. 638 the Caliph Omar entered Jerusalem, riding upon a white camel. He was dressed in worn, filthy robes, and the army that followed him was rough and unkempt; but its discipline was perfect. At his side was the Patriarch Sophronius, as chief magistrate of the surrendered city. Omar rode straight to the former site of the Temple of Solomon, whence his friend Mahomet had ascended into heaven. Watching him stand there, the Patriarch remembered the words of Christ and murmured through his tears: ‘Behold the abomination of desolation, spoken of by Daniel the prophet.’”^{32 33}

“When the Muslims took the city of Jerusalem from the Byzantine Christians in 638 AD, the Caliph Omar was given a tour of the city by the Patriarch of Jerusalem, a Christian monk named Sophronius. Omar wanted to see the spot where the Jewish Temple had been. The Christians for six centuries had left the Temple Mount lie in ruins. In fact, they used it as a garbage dump in order to fulfill Jesus’ words “there will not be left here one stone upon another that will not be thrown down.” (Matthew 24:2) For the first 30 years (638-691) of Muslim rule in Jerusalem, a simple wooden sanctuary was built south of the Jewish Temple and around 660 a house of prayer was built on the Temple Mount “at the blessed site where the Temple stood.” According to the writings of Arculf, a Christian visitor to Jerusalem from 679-688, the Muslims had “built an oblong house of prayer, which they pieced together with upright planks and large beams over some ruins” at “that famous place where once there stood the magnificent Temple.” In the mind of the early Muslims, the buildings on the Temple Mount, or the Haram, are the restoration of the Jewish site. The Dome of the Rock was the Muslim version of the Temple, only restored. It competed with the Church of the Holy Sepulcher in Jerusalem and with the shrines of the internal Muslim political opponents in Mecca and Medina.”³⁴

Long before Christian Constantinople suffered its horrible fate at the hands of Islam, Jerusalem suffered similarly when it was besieged and conquered by Islam in 638 AD.^{35 36} Soon after the conquest of Jerusalem, the Muslim caliph gave permission to the Jews to build a wooden synagogue on the Temple Mount:

“Perhaps the wooden structure that was built over the Foundation Stone was first intended for a synagogue, but even before it was completed, the site was expropriated by the city’s rulers. The Jews received another site on the mount for a synagogue in compensation for the expropriated building. Most probably there was an active synagogue on the Temple Mount during most of the early Muslim period. Solomon ben Jeroham, a Karaite (a medieval Jewish sectarian) exegete who lived in Jerusalem between 940 and 960, affirmed that Jews were permitted to pray on the Temple Mount, noting that “the courtyards of the Temple were turned over to them and they prayed there [on the Temple Mount] for many years.”³⁷

There are other credible witnesses who suggest that a wooden synagogue may have stood on Temple Mount up until approximately 675 AD^{38 39 40 41 42 43 44}.

²⁹ Zachariah 1 and 4 and 8; Joel 3:17; John 4:20; Hebrews 12; Matthew 28; Ezekiel 40; Ezekiel 8; Psalm 48;

³⁰ <http://www.churchisraelforum.com/jerusalem-important/>

³¹ <http://www.templemount.org/psalm2.html>

³² <http://www.templemount.org/allah.html>

³³ It is highly-recommended that the reader study Ellis Skolfield’s excellent analysis of Mohammed as the prophesied “False Prophet” of Revelations. It is downloadable free here: <http://www.ellisskolfield.com/pdf/TFP-2Ed.pdf>

³⁴ <http://www.generationword.com/jerusalem101/67-temple-mount-muslim.html>

³⁵ <https://www.britannica.com/biography/Sophronius>

³⁶ [https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Siege_of_Jerusalem_\(636%E2%80%93637\)#Aftermath](https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Siege_of_Jerusalem_(636%E2%80%93637)#Aftermath)

³⁷ <http://www.meforum.org/3556/temple-mount>

³⁸ Skolfield argues that the Abomination of Desolation occurred when the Temple was built, which he says was 688 AD. Skolfield says it was under construction from 685 until 705. Skolfield on p.47 said that the Caliph began “clearing the temple mount in 685 AD.”

<http://www.ellisskolfield.com/pdf/IITET.pdf>

<http://www.ellisskolfield.com/pdf/TFP-2Ed.pdf>

³⁹ <http://www.jpost.com/Blogs/Moskoff-on-the-Mount/A-synagogue-on-the-Temple-Mount-392770>

⁴⁰ <http://focusonjerusalem.com/allahandthetemplemount.html>

⁴¹ <http://www1.american.edu/ted/hpages/jerusalem/muslim.htm>

"The first known eyewitness testimony is that of the pilgrim, Arculf, who visited about 670. According to Arculf's account as recorded by Adomnán, he saw a rectangular wooden synagogue built over some ruins, large enough to hold 3,000 people.....

From 691 until approximately 715 AD, an octagonal Islamic building topped by a dome was built by the Caliph [Abd al-Malik](#) around the rock, for a myriad of political, dynastic and religious reasons. It was built on local and Quranic traditions articulating the site's holiness, a process in which textual and architectural narratives reinforced one another."^{45 46}

There are massive inscriptions on and in this Dome of the Rock shrine, that make Islam's central doctrine crystal clear: "GOD HAS NO SON."

Inner Face: South Wall. "In the name of Allah the Merciful the Compassionate. There is no God but Allah alone; he has no co-partner. He is the Kingship and His the praise. He giveth life and He causeth to die, and He hath power over everything."

South-East Wall. "Verily Allah and His angels pronounce blessing upon the Prophet. O ye who have pronounced blessings upon Him and give Him the salutation of peace. O, People of the Book [i.e. the Jews and Christians, always referred to as such by the Muslims -Ed.] do not go beyond the bounds in your religion and do not say about Allah anything but the truth. The Messiah, Jesus, son of Mary, is but a messenger of Allah and His word which He cast upon Mary, and a spirit from Him. So believe only in Allah and of His messenger, but do not say "Three" (Trinity) and it will be better for you. Allah is only one God. Far be it from His glory that He should have a son."

North Wall. "The Messiah will not deign to be in the service of Allah nor will the angels who stand in His presence. O Allah; pray upon Thy messenger "the servant Jesus - (N-W Wall) the son of Mary and peace be upon him the day of his birth, the day of his death and the day of his being raised alive." That is Jesus, son of Mary - a statement concerning which YOU are in doubt. It is not for Allah to take for Himself any offspring, glory be to Him."

West Wall. "Allah bears witness that there is no God but Him, likewise the angels and the people possessed of knowledge (S-W WALL) - Upholding justice. There is no God but He, the Almighty and All wise. Verily, the religion in Allah's sight is Islam."

Outer Face: "West and North-West Walls. In the name of Allah the Merciful and Compassionate. There is no God but Allah alone. Praise be to Allah who hath not taken to Himself offspring. To Him there has never been any person in the sovereignty. Mohammed is the messenger of Allah, may God pray upon Him and accept his intercession. Praise be God who has not taken unto Himself a son and who has no partner in sovereignty nor has He any protector on account of weakness."⁴⁷

The Temple Mount inscriptions unequivocally denounce the central doctrine of Christianity-- that Jesus Christ is God in the Flesh. No clearer refutation can be imagined than this shrine with massive inscriptions on top of God's mountain that is frequently referred to as the "Navel of the World."^{48 49} God has manifested a deep proprietary interest in this place. The New Testament contains four different dire warnings about any person who declares that God did not come in the flesh:

1 John 2:18 "Dear children, this is the last hour; and as you have heard that the antichrist is coming, even now many antichrists have come. This is how we know it is the last hour."

1 John 2:22 "Who is the liar? It is whoever denies that Jesus is the Christ. Such a person is the antichrist—denying the Father and the Son."

1 John 4:3 "but every spirit that does not acknowledge Jesus is not from God. This is the spirit of the antichrist, which you have heard is coming and even now is already in the world."

⁴² <http://israelbehindthenews.com/we-have-returned-to-the-temple-mount-a-survey-of-jewish-presence-on-the-jerusalem-temple-mount-from-the-destruction-of-the-second-temple-70-ce-until-the-six-day-war-1967/7256/>

⁴³ <http://israelbehindthenews.com/we-have-returned-to-the-temple-mount-a-survey-of-jewish-presence-on-the-jerusalem-temple-mount-from-the-destruction-of-the-second-temple-70-ce-until-the-six-day-war-1967/7256/>

⁴⁴ <http://www1.american.edu/ted/hpages/jerusalem/muslim.htm>

⁴⁵ Travels of Rabbi Petachia of Ratisbon – London: The Jewish Chronicle Office, (1856).

⁴⁶ https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Temple_Mount#Middle_Roman_period

⁴⁷ <http://www.templemount.org/allah.html>

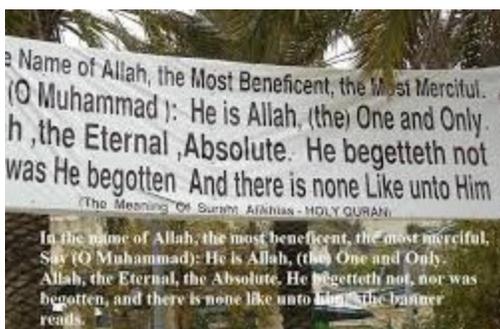
⁴⁸ <http://www.bibleprobe.com/templebomb.htm>

⁴⁹ <http://www.ancient-wisdom.com/israel.htm>

2 John 1:7 "I say this because many deceivers, who do not acknowledge Jesus Christ as coming in the flesh, have gone out into the world. Any such person is the deceiver and the antichrist."

Arabic inscriptions on the Dome of the Rock, on top of Temple Mount declare: "GOD HAS NO SON."

As if the massive inscriptions on the Temple Mount were not clear enough about Islam's absolute rejection of the Incarnation, the Muslim Waqf [an endowment made by a Muslim to a religious, educational, or charitable cause] has placed massive billboards around Israel declaring the same message:



Poster in Israeli train station.



The detailed descriptions of the events from the Fall of Jerusalem in 638 AD until the completion of the Dome of the Rock somewhere between 675 AD and 715 will become apparent in the next section. In this next section we will examine the events around the fall of the Ottoman Empire-- Judaism's and Christianity's mortal enemy for more than 1,000 years.

THE FALL OF THE OTTOMAN EMPIRE AND THE RISE OF THE MODERN SECULAR TURKISH STATE.

Modern historians agree that the Ottoman Empire did not actually collapse until the 1923 Treaty of Lausanne, when the Ottoman Empire finally dissolved, and Turkey divested itself of all of its imperial holdings.⁵⁰ A number of highly significant events led up to this key event, which continues to be of supreme prophetic importance to this day. Clearly these facts refute Ellen White's contention that the collapse of the "Sick Man of Europe"⁵¹ had occurred in 1841 as both White and Josiah Litch had claimed. First, Turkey won a massive military victory over the combined armies and navies of Britain, Russia, France, Australia and New Zealand in 1915, at the Battle of Gallipoli.⁵² Then the Balfour Declaration was issued by Britain in 1917, and provided the legal basis for the modern-day nation-state of Israel. Britain declared its support for a Jewish Homeland in Palestine in the Declaration, and began carrying out its promise when Palestine became a League of Nations Mandate.^{53 54} The Islamic caliphate was abolished in 1924, following the dissolution of the Ottoman Empire and the rise of the secular Turkish Republic.⁵⁵ Turkey took several significant steps toward full-secularization in the years leading up to 1935, when the Turkish Grand National Assembly formally removed the last reference to Islam from the Turkish

⁵⁰ <https://www.britannica.com/event/Treaty-of-Lausanne-1923>

⁵¹ https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Sick_man_of_Europe

⁵² <https://www.britannica.com/event/Gallipoli-Campaign>

⁵³ <https://www.britannica.com/event/Balfour-Declaration>

⁵⁴ <https://www.britannica.com/topic/Palestine-mandate>

⁵⁵ <https://www.britannica.com/place/Caliphate>

transition. The secular Turkish state passed many laws prohibiting religious clothing and outward signs of religious observance in the years between 1924 and 1935. Many religious schools and colleges were closed down and many religious groups were banned from the secular state.⁵⁶

The modern secular Turkish nation-state replaced the Ottoman Empire's caliphate after it was dissolved in 1924. The caliphate was a straightforward union of the state and religion.⁵⁷ There are on today's stage many different aspirants who wish to revive the caliphate, some of whom describe what occurred in 1924 as the "Deadly Wound."

(1) - **Al Qaeda, led by Osama Bin Laden**, announced after the 9-11 terrorist attacks in 2001 that the purpose of this terrorism was to bring about the reestablishment of the Islamic caliphate. He identified the collapse of the caliphate as a "Deadly Wound" and stated that this defeat was the cause of the widespread political and spiritual decay in the Muslim world.⁵⁸

(2) - **The Muslim Brotherhood**, which briefly held power in Egypt following the revolution of 2011, was formed to revive the Islamic caliphate. They have analyzed its collapse and labeled it "a deadly wound," and fingered this defeat as the cause of political and spiritual decay in the Muslim world.⁵⁹

(3) - **The Islamic State**, also known as ISIS, declared itself a caliphate after seizing control over large swaths of land in Syria and Iraq in the aftermath of the Syrian Civil War. They have analyzed the collapse of the Caliphate as a "deadly wound," and also labeled it as the cause of the political and spiritual decay in the Muslim world.

(4) **And most importantly for purposes of this analysis, the president of Turkey, Recep Tayyip Erdogan**, has designated himself as the next caliph and has stated that his goal is the revival of the caliphate.⁶⁰ ⁶¹He has labeled the collapse of the caliphate in 1923-1924 as a "deadly wound" and the primary cause of political and spiritual decay in the Muslim world. For an excellent analysis of Islam's prophet, Mohammed, and how he met the Biblical definition of the "false prophet" and "anti-Christ," Ellen Skolfield's, *The False Prophet*, is a must read.⁶²

The infamous (if you are an ex-Adventist) prophetic "days" of Daniel and Revelation of 1260⁶³ and 1290 days⁶⁴ have been much discussed by eager prophecy buffs, but if--and it is a very big "if"-- the day-equals-a-year principle can be properly applied to them, some remarkable mathematics can be achieved. Assuming that the conquest of Jerusalem happened in 638 and the building of the mosque on Temple Mount took place somewhere between 660 and 715, these interpretations appear to be more than just plausible in light of the significant dates surrounding the gradual collapse of the Ottoman Empire from 1917 until 1935:

Daniel's 1290 "days," if translated into years, could have been fulfilled in the time from 638 (the conquest of Jerusalem); until the midpoint of the transformation of the Ottoman Empire into a secular state, or 1928.

- Revelation's 1260 "days" if translated into years could have been fulfilled in the time from between 660 until 715 (the construction of the Mosque on Temple Mount) and the transformation of the Ottoman Empire into the secular Turkish State (between 1924 until 1935).

God repeatedly asserts that Jerusalem is "My city" and the Temple Mount is "My mountain." And modern-day Islamists, ranging from Osama Bin Laden, to the present-day Turkish President, to the Muslim Brotherhood, and to the Islamic State of Iraq and Syria, are in full agreement on one thing: What happened between 1924 and 1935 was the "Deadly Wound" of the Islamic caliphate. And they all agree that should be revived.

⁵⁶ <https://www.britannica.com/biography/Kemal-Ataturk>

⁵⁷ <https://www.britannica.com/place/Caliphate>

⁵⁸ <https://www.brookings.edu/wp-content/uploads/2016/06/The-ideology-of-the-Islamic-State.pdf>

https://www.cna.org/CNA_files/PDF/COP-2014-U-008247-1Rev.pdf

⁵⁹ *Ibid.*

⁶⁰ <https://www.washingtonpost.com/news/worldviews/wp/2015/03/19/the-caliph-is-coming-get-ready-pro-erdogan-turkish-politician-tweets/>

⁶¹ <https://www.aei.org/publication/is-erdogans-end-goal-a-caliphate/>

⁶² <http://www.ellisskolfield.com/pdf/TFP-2Ed.pdf>

⁶³ [Revelation 11:2–3](#); [Revelation 12:6](#)

⁶⁴ [Daniel 12:11–12](#)

The REVIVAL OF THE CALIPHATE AND THE RECOVERY FROM THE DEADLY WOUND.

The modern secular nation-state of Turkey is at a crossroads. Turkish president, Recep Tayyip Erdoğan, ⁶⁵ survived a coup attempt in July 2016,⁶⁶ after leading the secular state of Turkey in a gradual path of Islamization, since 2003.⁶⁷ ⁶⁸ He has been supportive of the Syrian rebels' attempts to overthrow the Syrian regime since the Civil War began in 2011.⁶⁹ Many of his policies led to a total break of relations with Russia, which supports the Syrian regime in the Civil War, after Turkish fighter jets downed a Russian aircraft in 2015.⁷⁰ Many analysts believe that Turkey and Russia are in a de facto state of war.⁷¹ ⁷² ⁷³

Russia fulfilled the first "prong" of the Gaon of Vilna's⁷⁶ prophecy when it seized the Crimean Peninsula in 2014, thus drastically-upending the balance of power in the Black Sea.⁷⁷ ⁷⁸ ⁷⁹ And Erdogan is ramping up his efforts to restore the caliphate in the aftermath of the July 2016 attempted coup.⁸⁰ ⁸¹ ⁸² Erdogan has posed in the controversial lavish new Presidential Palace in Istanbul with soldiers dressed in the period national garb of the various states that were part of the Ottoman Empire:



Just a few days before the recent attempted coup, the Turkish government quietly-opened Istanbul's newest Mosque and the largest on in Istanbul. It overlooks the Bosphorus.

Since Russia and Turkey are on *opposite* sides of the Civil War in Syria, Turkey has the right, under the 1936 Treaty of Montreux, to unilaterally-close the Dardanelles and Bosphorus sea lanes from the Mediterranean to the Black sea.⁸³

⁶⁵ https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Recep_Tayyip_Erdo%C4%9Fan

⁶⁶ https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/2016_Turkish_coup_d%27%C3%A9tat_attempt

⁶⁷ http://www.yourmiddleeast.com/culture/turkeys-journey-from-secularism-to-islamization-a-capitalist-story_41004

⁶⁸ <http://www.breitbart.com/london/2016/08/17/turkey-accused-aiding-islamist-extremism-leaked-report/>

⁶⁹ https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Turkish_involvement_in_the_Syrian_Civil_War

⁷⁰ <http://www.bbc.com/news/world-middle-east-34912581>

⁷¹ <http://www.zerohedge.com/news/2016-02-22/nervous-nato-fears-turkey-russia-may-soon-go-war>

⁷² <http://www.spiegel.de/international/world/nato-worried-about-possible-turkey-russia-hostilities-a-1078349.html>

⁷³ <http://www.breitbart.com/national-security/2015/12/04/world-view-russia-and-turkey-increasingly-on-war-footing/>

⁷⁴ <http://www.breakingisraelnews.com/54943/200-years-ago-war-between-turkey-russia-propheisied-sign-redemption-jewish-world/#DPSGWGcWO8Ej9HGI.99>

⁷⁵ <http://www.whatdoesitmean.com/index1950.html>

⁷⁶ This is not the first time the Gaon of Vilna predicted accurately. His prediction that the Hurva Synagogue in Jerusalem would be destroyed twice and rebuilt three times has occurred. <http://weseds.blogspot.com/2010/03/jerusalem-march-15.html>
<http://www.haaretz.com/israel-news/travel/religion-relics/.premium-1.608770>

⁷⁷ https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Annexation_of_Crimea_by_the_Russian_Federation

⁷⁸ <https://www.theguardian.com/world/2014/mar/23/ukraine-crimea-what-putin-thinking-russia>

⁷⁹ <https://www.foreignaffairs.com/articles/ukraine/2016-04-18/why-putin-took-crimea>

⁸⁰ <http://www.pbs.org/newshour/rundown/military-coup-attempted-turkey-says-prime-minister/>

⁸¹ <http://www.nationalreview.com/article/438006/turkey-failed-coup-erdogan-cracks-down>

⁸² http://www.huffingtonpost.com/christos-terzides/the-caliphate-of-sultan_b_11430874.html

⁸³ <http://www.israelnationalnews.com/Articles/Article.aspx/17978#.Vlx9X5vIvIU>

Additionally, the Black Sea has been destabilized since the 2014 Russian seizure of the Crimean Peninsula.⁸⁴ As stated previously, the two countries are all but in a state of war. Many strategic thinkers and naval experts believe that Turkey has now invoked its power under the Treaty of Montreux, but has not publicly stated whether they are blocking Russian Naval Vessels because Turkey is “threatened with aggression” or whether Turkey considers itself to be “at war.” This latest development of blockading Russian naval vessels is a massive and terrifyingly dangerous development. Blockading Russia and preventing its Black Sea fleet from traveling to the rest of the world, or back to its home port, is something that will not sit well with the Russians.⁸⁵ The significance of the Bosphorus and the Dardanelles can be seen in the amount of oil that passes through them, more than 2.9 million barrels per day transported by 5,500 oil tankers.⁸⁶ Russia justified its intervention in Syria in part on the persecution of Syrian Orthodox Christians by rebel forces. Russia is historically-indebted to Constantinople’s Christians, since they were the source of its Orthodox Christianity. The entire country converted as a result of the wonders experienced by the Czar’s emissaries at the Hagia Sophia, which was converted into a mosque after the Sack of Constantinople in 1453:

“And we went into the Greek lands, and we were led into a place where they serve their God, and **we did not know where we were, on heaven or on earth**; and do not know how to tell about this. All we know is that God lives there with people and their service is better than in any other country. We cannot forget that beauty since each person, if he eats something sweet, will not take something bitter afterwards; so we cannot remain any more in paganism.”⁸⁷

Turkey is cracking down on its tiny Christian population in the aftermath of the failed coup.^{88 89 90} Istanbul is geographically situated at one of the most strategically important cross-roads between East and West, thereby making her a geopolitical kingpin. With Turkey taking extremely provocative measures; and all but blockading Russia from accessing the Black Sea; the second “prong” of the Gaon of Vilna’s prophecy could well be at hand.

The Gaon of Vilna was quite possibly one of the most transformative Talmudic scholars in world history. He was a genius that had the Talmud memorized by the age of 7 and was giving public lectures to learned Rabbis by the age of 10. He transformed Palestine when many of his students made Aliyah in the Land of Israel, thus setting the stage for the Middle East being the focal point of today’s world events. He predicted that the Hurva Synagogue on Jerusalem would be destroyed twice and rebuilt three times.⁹¹ The new Hurva Synagogue opened in 2010.⁹² His prediction that Russia would annex Crimea has happened. If war between Turkey and Russia is in the future, it just may fulfill the second “prong” of his prophecy, given Istanbul’s unparalleled location of geopolitical importance.

Israel, the Supersign of the End-Times

In other chapters of *Lying for God*, we have debunked to the point of over-kill the contention that Rome or the papacy was responsible for Christianity’s adoption of the Sunday assembly in the First Century. We have done so on many different levels and from many different angles. In this section, we will analyze Adventism’s overall prophetic assumptions that focus on the Sabbath, Rome and the papacy in end-times events. This is routinely described as “The Great Controversy Worldview.” We will begin by analyzing Adventism’s and Millerism’s checkered history of getting Israel absolutely wrong. It is not open to dispute whether William Miller and Ellen White taught that Israel would NOT be the harbinger of end-time events. William Miller candidly admitted that his prediction of Christ’s return in 1844 was based firmly on the assumption that the Jews did not have to return to Israel before Christ could return. It is fair to say that most of Adventism’s unique doctrines are forced on it by the fact that Jesus’ Second Coming did not take place on October 22, 1844. Adventists have vigorously defended their face-saving “work-around” for well-over 100 years. By contrast, the assumption that the return of

⁸⁴ <http://www.jpost.com/Opinion/Op-Ed-Contributors/Turkey-vulnerable-to-rising-Russian-power-in-the-Black-Sea-349928>

⁸⁵ <http://www.globalresearch.ca/turkeys-blockade-of-russian-naval-vessels-access-to-the-mediterranean-russias-black-sea-fleet-completely-cut-off/5492688>

⁸⁶ <http://www.globalresearch.ca/the-strategic-significance-of-russias-black-sea-fleet/5503636>

⁸⁷ <https://www.christianhistoryinstitute.org/incontext/article/vladimir/>

⁸⁸ <http://www.aina.org/news/20160808193121.htm>

<http://christiandaily.com/article/turkish-christians-become-targets-of-muslim-persecution-after-failed-coup/55163.htm>

⁸⁹ http://www.christiantoday.com/article/concern_grows_for_christians_in_turkey_after_failed_coup/91058.htm

<https://patriotpost.us/opinion/43854>

⁹⁰ <http://www.express.co.uk/news/world/663089/Islamist-Turkey-Erdogan-seize-Christian-churches-Diyarbakir-persecution-state-property>

⁹¹ <http://weseds.blogspot.com/2010/03/jerusalem-march-15.html>

⁹² <http://www.haaretz.com/israel-news/travel/religion-relics/.premium-1.608770>

Israel to Palestine would represent the “Super Sign” of the arrival of end-time events is essential to the views of the mainstream Evangelical Protestant end-times community.^{93 94 95 96}

William Miller, Ellen White, and the Seventh-day Adventist Church have repeatedly insisted that Israel would NEVER become a modern-day nation. They insisted that the Jewish diaspora from their Palestinian homeland was permanent. William Miller frankly admitted this central assumption-- that the return of the Jews as clearly-predicted by several Old Testament prophets-- need not occur before the Second Coming:

“While thus studying the Scriptures, I became satisfied, if the prophecies which have been fulfilled in the past are any criterion by which to judge of the manner of the fulfilment of those which are future, that the popular views of the spiritual reign of Christ, a temporal millennium before the end of the world, and the Jews' return, are not sustained by the word of God; for I found that all the Scriptures on which those favorite theories are based, are as clearly expressed as are those that were literally fulfilled at the first advent, or at any other period in the past.”⁹⁷

And again:

“Mr. Miller looked for no return of the Jews previous to the resurrection of the just; and the righteous of that nation, who have died in the faith of Abraham, with all Gentile believers of like precious faith, he regarded as the subjects of all unfulfilled promises to Israel, -- the fulfilment of which will be in the new earth, and in the resurrection out from among the dead.”⁹⁸

Ellen White endorsed William Miller's views on prospects of a future state of Israel when she unequivocally predicted that Jerusalem would never be rebuilt:

"I saw that such a mission would accomplish no real good, that it would take a long while to make a very few of the Jews believe even in the First Advent of Christ, much more to believe in His Second Advent. I saw that Satan had greatly deceived some in this thing and that souls all around them in this land could be helped by them and led to keep the commandments of God, but they were leaving them to perish. I also saw that Old Jerusalem never would be built up; and that Satan was doing his utmost to lead the minds of the children of the Lord into these things now, in the gathering time, to keep them from throwing their whole interest into the present work of the Lord, and to cause them to neglect the necessary preparation for the day of the Lord.”⁹⁹

The White Estate has tried to wrangle its way out of this devastatingly incriminating statement as follows:

“How did Ellen White's readers understand this statement? That there was no light in the popular “age-to-come” teaching, that there is no Biblical significance in the Jews returning to Palestine, that Jerusalem will never be rebuilt in a future millennial period. She was not talking about a possible political rebuilding of Jerusalem *but of a prophetically significant rebuilding of Old Jerusalem*. To continue to think that way, she emphasized, was to sink further into Satan's deceptions and away from present duty.”¹⁰⁰

Despite its effort to downplay the significance of Ellen White's and William Miller's massive blunder, the Adventist Church continued its almost comical unbroken record of failure of their predictions about the modern state of Israel: In 1944, the Pacific Press published a book entitled *Palestine in Prophecy*. It unequivocally declared that there would be no national restoration for the Jews:

"Palestine and Jerusalem do not have a bright future in this present world, and those who are holding the hope of a national restoration for the Jews are following a theological will-o'-the-wisp.”¹⁰¹

⁹³ <http://christinprophecy.org/>

⁹⁴ http://www.lamblion.com/files/publications/blog/blog_End-Times-Signs-Converging.pdf

⁹⁵ http://www.brit-hadashah.org/legacy/newsletters/BHM2003_04.pdf

⁹⁶ <http://watchmanbiblestudy.com/articles/1948PropheciesFulfilled.html>

⁹⁷ <http://centrowhite.org.br/files/ebooks/apl/all/Miller/William%20Miller's%20Apology%20and%20Defence.%20August%201.pdf>

⁹⁸ Memoirs of William Miller, p. 198. By Sylvester Bliss.

<http://www.adventpioneerbooks.com/Text/pioneer/SBLISS/MEMOIRS.pdf>

⁹⁹ Early Writings, pp. 75, 76 <https://text.egwwritings.org/publication.php?pubtype=Book&bookCode=EW&pagenumber=75>

¹⁰⁰ <http://www.whiteestate.org/books/mol/Chapt43.html#note27>

¹⁰¹ <http://adventistlaymen.com/Documents/Jerusalem%20in%20Bible%20Prophecy.pdf>

- In 1947, the Pacific Press published another book-- *The Jews and Palestine*:

"The God of heaven who overthrew the city and nation and who because of their apostasy dispersed the inhabitants to the ends of the earth, forever settles the question of a complete return and restitution in old Canaan by asserting that it "cannot be."¹⁰²

In 1947, the Seventh-day Adventist denomination officially took the doctrinal position that a Jewish state would never be re-established in Palestine.¹⁰³

Just one year later, in 1948, the Jewish state declared independence. Perhaps to disguise their shame about these embarrassing failed predictions, many Adventists now claim that they have metamorphosed into "Spiritual Israel."¹⁰⁴

Adventist end-time predictions were as catastrophically wrong about the demise of the Ottoman (Islamic) Empire as they were at denying the concept that Scripture predicted that Israel would become a modern-day nation state:

"In 1840 another remarkable event took place that "for all the world" looked like a spectacular fulfillment of prophecy. This event understandably excited widespread interest at the time. Two years before, Josiah Litch, one of the leading ministers preaching the second advent, published an exposition of [Revelation 9](#), predicting the fall of the Ottoman Empire. According to his calculations, this power was to be overthrown in AD 1840, sometime in the month of August. Only a few days previous to the happening that appeared to be this amazing fulfillment of Bible prophecy, he wrote: "Allowing the first period, 150 years, to have been exactly fulfilled before Deacozes ascended the throne by permission of the Turks, and that the 391 years, fifteen days, commenced at the close of the first period, it will end on the 11th of August, 1840, when the Ottoman power in Constantinople may be expected to be broken. And this, I believe, will be found to be the case."—Josiah Litch, in *Signs of the Times, and Expositor of Prophecy*, August 1, 1840.

At the very time specified, Turkey, through her ambassadors, accepted the protection of the Allied powers of Europe, and thus placed herself under the control of Christian nations. "For all the world," this event appeared to be an exact fulfillment of prophecy. (See Appendix.) When this apparent fulfillment of this prophecy became publicized, multitudes were convinced of the correctness of the principles of prophetic interpretation adopted by Miller and his associates, and a wonderful impetus was given to the Advent Movement. Men of learning and position united with Miller, both in preaching and in publishing his views, and from 1840 to 1844 the work rapidly extended."¹⁰⁵

Of course, the Ottoman Empire did not collapse until 1924, when it was formally dissolved by the Treaty of Lausanne.¹⁰⁶

Ellen White was still alive when the Ottoman Empire was beating the combined Allied armies and navies their greatest defeat in World War 1.¹⁰⁷ *The Great Controversy* continues to be distributed with this blatant error addressed only passingly in footnotes.

Ellen White simply assumed that Rome was the "City of Seven Hills" mentioned in Revelation 17. She describes Martin Luther's visit to the city thusly:

"At last he beheld in the distance the seven-hilled city. With deep emotion he prostrated himself upon the earth, exclaiming: "Holy Rome, I salute thee!"¹⁰⁸

Ellen White based her claim that God had shown her these things on the assumption of the assumption of the Protestant Reformers, who upheld a distinctly "Rome-centric" approach when analyzing John the Revelator's prophetic statements.¹⁰⁹ Modern Adventists and many Protestants seem blind to the "game-changing" significance of the fact that the capital of the Roman Empire was moved from Rome to Constantinople in 330 AD. As a result of this blindness to the transfer of both political and ecclesiastical power away from Rome, they continue to insist that Rome is the only city on Earth that qualifies

¹⁰² Ibid.

¹⁰³ Ibid

¹⁰⁴ <http://3abn.org/questions/spiritual-israel/>

<http://godwantsyourheart.blogspot.com/2009/07/replacement-theology-used-by-seventh.html>

¹⁰⁵ The Great Controversy, Pp. 334-335

<https://text.egwwritings.org/publication.php?pubtype=Book&bookCode=GC&lang=en&pagenumber=335>

¹⁰⁶ <http://www.allaboutturkey.com/antlasma.htm>

¹⁰⁷ <https://www.britannica.com/event/Gallipoli-Campaign>

¹⁰⁸ The Great Controversy, Pp. 124-124, <http://www.whiteestate.org/books/gc/gc7.html>

¹⁰⁹ <https://m.egwwritings.org/en/book/1579.2672>

for the title of Revelation 17's description of a "City of Seven Hills."¹¹⁰ Here is a typical exploration of Adventist reasoning on the issue:

"Furthermore, the beast stands as a symbol of a political power or system. That the prostitute Babylon sits (or rides) on the beast shows that this religious system will have control over these worldwide political powers at the end of time. Thus, the prophecy shows us that at the end of time, there will be a religious-political union when the political powers of the earth will unite with the end-time apostate religious system named Babylon."¹¹¹

No Catholic pope in world history has denied that Jesus Christ was God in the Flesh, nor does Rome have 7 hills. The Vatican is located across the Tiber River from the original seven hills of ancient Rome, but there are three more hills that the Vatican is located upon, for a total of ten hills.¹¹² Additionally, Constantinople was the Capital of the Roman Empire for most of its lifespan, from 325 AD until 1453. By contrast, Rome has little or no geo-strategic importance.^{113 114 115} Unlike Constantinople, it does not sit astride one of the most important strategic waterways in the world, as described in Revelation 17:15: "And he saith unto me, The waters which thou sawest, where the whore sitteth, are peoples, and multitudes, and nations, and tongues." It was never the capital of both the Roman Empire and the Islamic Empire. It is not located in both Europe and Asia. It was never the center of either ancient Christianity or Islam. Finally, the Eastern half of Christianity, headquartered in Constantinople, has never recognized "Western" Rome's claims to supremacy.¹¹⁶

Moreover, ALL of the "Seven Cities of the Apocalypse" in the Book of Revelation are located in modern-day Turkey, and lie roughly in two "lines" parallel to the Turkish coast, just south of Istanbul. These cities are 900 nautical miles away from Rome, nowhere near modern-day Italy and the City of Rome. The Book of Revelations was clearly written to the ancient churches of "Asia Minor," leading many prophecy buffs to suspect that they are the key to understanding the rest of John's visions.^{117 118 119 120} A map shows their interesting location on the coast of Turkey, and inland:



The history of Adventist prophetic interpretation is an unbroken, systematic record of failure. Adventists have erroneously fashioned an end-times scenario that focuses on Rome and the Sabbath as the lynchpin of prophetic events. A major assumption of this prediction is that Israel would never become a modern-day nation state, and that the Islamic Empire collapsed in 1841. By contrast, nearly all Protestant prophecy experts consider Israel to be the "Super Sign" of eschatology, given Ezekiel's clear placement of Israel and the Middle East at the center of the end of the world events. This possibly-unmatched record of failure discredits the foundation of any and all Adventist end-time predictions and is one of the major Achilles heels of Adventist Sabbatarian-centered eschatology.

Is Turkey Gog? Is Gog the Anti-Christ?

The Old Testament Prophet Ezekiel forecasted an end-times battle between Israel and the armies of Gog/Magog in Ezekiel

¹¹⁰ http://amazingdiscoveries.org/S-deception_end-time_Babylon_Revelation_hills_Rome

¹¹¹ <https://www.ministrymagazine.org/archive/2013/12/the-seven-heads-of-the-beast-in-revelation-17>

¹¹² https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Seven_hills_of_Rome

¹¹³ https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Bombing_of_Rome_in_World_War_II

¹¹⁴ https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Vatican_City_in_World_War_II

¹¹⁵ <https://www.reference.com/history/did-constantine-move-capital-byzantium-a18aea93e20ade17#>

¹¹⁶ https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Eastern_Orthodox_opposition_to_papal_supremacy

¹¹⁷ <https://edraby.wordpress.com/2013/01/17/the-book-of-revelation-part-5-the-need-of-the-seven-churches-for-this-book/>

¹¹⁸ <http://lifehopeandtruth.com/prophecy/revelation/seven-churches-of-revelation/>

¹¹⁹ <https://www.biblegateway.com/resources/commentaries/IVP-NT/Rev/Seven-Messages>

¹²⁰ <https://www.blueletterbible.org/study/larkin/dt/22.cfm>

38-39. There is much speculation about who the main characters “Gog” and “Magog” might be, but for certain Russian and Iran are in an alliance to preserve the Syrian regime, an idea that would have been unthinkable just 10 years ago.^{121 122 123} Prophecy teacher and minister, Joel Richardson, has vehemently argued that the Turkish president is the Biblical Gog, and that Gog probably is the anti-Christ described in the Book of Revelation.^{124 125 126 127 128} His views of the “Islamic anti-Christ” are in the decided minority of prophecy watchers.^{129 130 131 132 133} However, foreign policy experts describe Erdogan as someone who “came into government as if it was like an alien from Jupiter or Saturn landing on Earth,” said Halil Berktaç, a professor of history at Sabanci University in Istanbul, adding that Erdogan’s party eventually “concluded an unholy alliance with the Gulenists” already installed in various corners of the Turkish state and enabled the promotion of countless more over the years.”¹³⁴ The inscriptions on the Dome of the Rock that repeatedly-declare that “GOD HAS NO SON,” along with the Biblical authority that clearly defines the anti-Christ, make a compelling case that Islam is the anti-Christ of the end-times. Islam is likely responsible for the deaths of 200 million Christians, vastly-exceeding the total of any other organization in history, secular or religious.^{135 136}

The Prophet Ezekiel prophesied that the Gog-Magog Battle will pit the descendents of Noah’s sons, Japheth and Ham, against Israel ([Gen. 10:2-7](#)). As every student of the Bible knows, Noah’s Ark came to rest on Mt. Ararat, which is located inside of Turkey, about 900 miles from Istanbul.

Ezekiel foresaw that the leader of the coalition that will attack Israel will be called “Gog, prince of Rosh, Meshech and Tubal” ([Ezek. 38:2-3](#)). The battlefield is probably in the Golan Heights according to many prophecy watchers,^{137 138} which Ezekiel refers to as the “mountains of Israel, which had long been desolate” ([Ezek. 38:8](#)). The attacking nations will “plunder and loot” and almost destroy the people of Israel ([Ezek. 38:12, 16](#)). The Golan Heights are disputed territory that Israel won in the 1967 Six-Day War, and formally annexed by the Jewish State in 1981. Israel’s annexation of the Golan Heights has been repeatedly denounced in resolutions from the United Nations General Assembly.^{139 140 141}

The result of Ezekiel’s predicted invasion by the combined forces of Gog/Magog on badly-outnumbered and tiny Israel will shock the world. The invading nations have been manipulated by God, pulled out of their lands as with “hooks in [their] jaws” ([Ezek. 38:4](#)), so that those nations can feel the “hot anger... [of] the Sovereign LORD” ([Ezek. 38:18](#)). Israel has recently made a stunning series of oil and natural gas discoveries in the disputed Golan Heights, with the potential of billions

¹²¹ https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Russia%E2%80%93Syria%E2%80%93Iran%E2%80%93Iraq_coalition

¹²² <http://atimes.com/2016/06/russian-iranian-alliance-in-syria-at-crossroads/>

¹²³ <http://nationalinterest.org/feature/the-russia-iran-alliance-weaker-you-think-15685>

¹²⁴ <https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=oowyGAodLQY>

¹²⁵ <https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=Aef-ieQmsWY>

¹²⁶ <https://books.google.com/books?id=GeF0m-poFA8C>

¹²⁷ <http://www.charismanews.com/world/49498-joel-richardson-points-to-startling-evidence-the-anti-christ-is-a-muslim>

¹²⁸ <http://www.charismanews.com/opinion/59072-how-the-system-of-the-antichrist-stalks-the-world-today>

¹²⁹ <http://christinprophecy.org/articles/the-muslim-antichrist-theory/>

¹³⁰ http://www.huffingtonpost.com/2013/02/07/islamic-antichrist-joel-richardson_n_2635806.html

¹³¹ <http://shoebat.com/2015/10/06/the-gog-of-turkey-erdogan-threatens-the-crusader-of-russia-putin-the-tension-between-russia-and-turkey-is-escalating/>

¹³² <http://hightimetoawake.com/gog-is-turkey-magog-is-its-leader/>

¹³³ <http://www.rightsidenews.com/life-and-science/culture-wars/we-are-in-the-end-of-days/>

¹³⁴ https://www.washingtonpost.com/world/middle_east/turkeys-purge-marks-endgame-in-islamist-civil-war/2016/08/04/4d0a6128-5811-11e6-82ea-8af882a4d163_story.html

¹³⁵ http://www.americanthinker.com/articles/2014/05/the_greatest_murder_machine_in_history.html

¹³⁶ <https://www.facebook.com/notes/knowledge-is-power/290-million-victims-of-islamic-terror/416083148469556/>

¹³⁷ <http://beforeitsnews.com/israel/2015/10/russia-will-attack-israel-in-the-golan-heights-2454996.html>

¹³⁸ <http://trackingbibleprophecy.com/israel.php>

¹³⁹ https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/United_Nations_Security_Council_Resolution_497

¹⁴⁰ <http://www.securitycouncilreport.org/un-documents/golan-heights-israelsyria/>

¹⁴¹ <http://www.reuters.com/article/us-israel-syria-un-idUSKCN0XN2FD>

of barrels of oil. ¹⁴² ¹⁴³ ¹⁴⁴ ¹⁴⁵ ¹⁴⁶ If Israel succeeds in extracting this massive oil find, it could depress the world price of oil for years. Oil revenues are the mainstay of the Syrian, Turkish, Russian, and Iranian economies. An Israeli oil find of a significant size might bankrupt those oil revenue-dependent economies.

In the end, tiny Israel is saved by obvious miracles from God, and the armies of Gog/Magog are utterly destroyed. ([Ezek. 38:22](#)).

CONCLUSION

Some of the Israeli pilots, will take off in their F-15 Strike Eagles, “locked and loaded” with 20 kiloton “Third Temple Weapons,” Israel’s “Holy of Holies”¹⁴⁷ nuclear weapons, streaking for the “Mountains of Israel,” Damascus and Tehran, on one-way suicide missions. Gog and Magog have found the “hook in the jaw” to be irresistible. Billions of barrels of oil are at stake. Those Israeli pilots know they will have no place to return to. Israel is about to be annihilated. Russia has been cut off from the rest of the world by the closure of Istanbul’s Bosphorus river, when Turkey invoked its treaty rights. A pitched battle rages through the streets of Istanbul, as the Russian Shock Armies, and its Black Sea fleet, seize both sides of the Bosphorus. And for good luck, the Crown Jewel, the Hagia Sophia, is finally returned to the rightful ownership of Christians.

The Israeli pilots will have no place to land, once Tehran and Damascus have been vaporized. Some of them ditch their jets in the Red Sea, and watch the end of the world from there. In the tight confines of Jerusalem (“My City”), mayhem will erupt on God’s Holy Mountain (“My Mountain”). The only open spot in Old Jerusalem is the vast empty expanses of Temple Mount. The Walls of Jerusalem will direct this massive human escape like a funnel. A human Tsunami will explode like a full-margin subduction earthquake across the face of Temple Mount. For now, the narrow rocky path to the top of Temple Mount is marked by signs that say “Jews Not Allowed” by order of the Rabbinate. Those will be cast aside when the rioting begins.

Today, none of that is happening. The shrine that declares in billboard letters that “God Has No Son” sits quietly in this future human inundation zone, tucked tightly inside the walls of Jerusalem. All day long, calls to prayer ring out from the Mount’s minarets. Christian worshipers continue to crowd the Church of the Holy Sepulchre and Jewish worshipers crowd the Grand Synagogue. Jews are being attacked daily in Jerusalem, as the “labor pains” get closer together near the Navel of the World. But that is routine.

Today.

Eighty miles north, thousands of feet below the surface of the Earth in the “Mountains of Israel,” the hand of a geological clock is somewhere in its slow sweep. Further North, pleasure boats and water skiers pass languidly through the straights of the Bosphorus and Dardanelles, unaware of their certain future. On the beaches of the Crimean Peninsula, people relax under umbrellas.

Across these regions, prophecy experts are looking at their watches, wondering how long we have, and what we will do, before prophetic time catches up to our own.

¹⁴² <https://flashtrafficblog.wordpress.com/2015/10/11/israel-makes-massive-discovery-of-oil-in-the-golan-heights-is-this-a-prelude-to-the-war-of-gog-magog-heres-the-answer-part-two/>

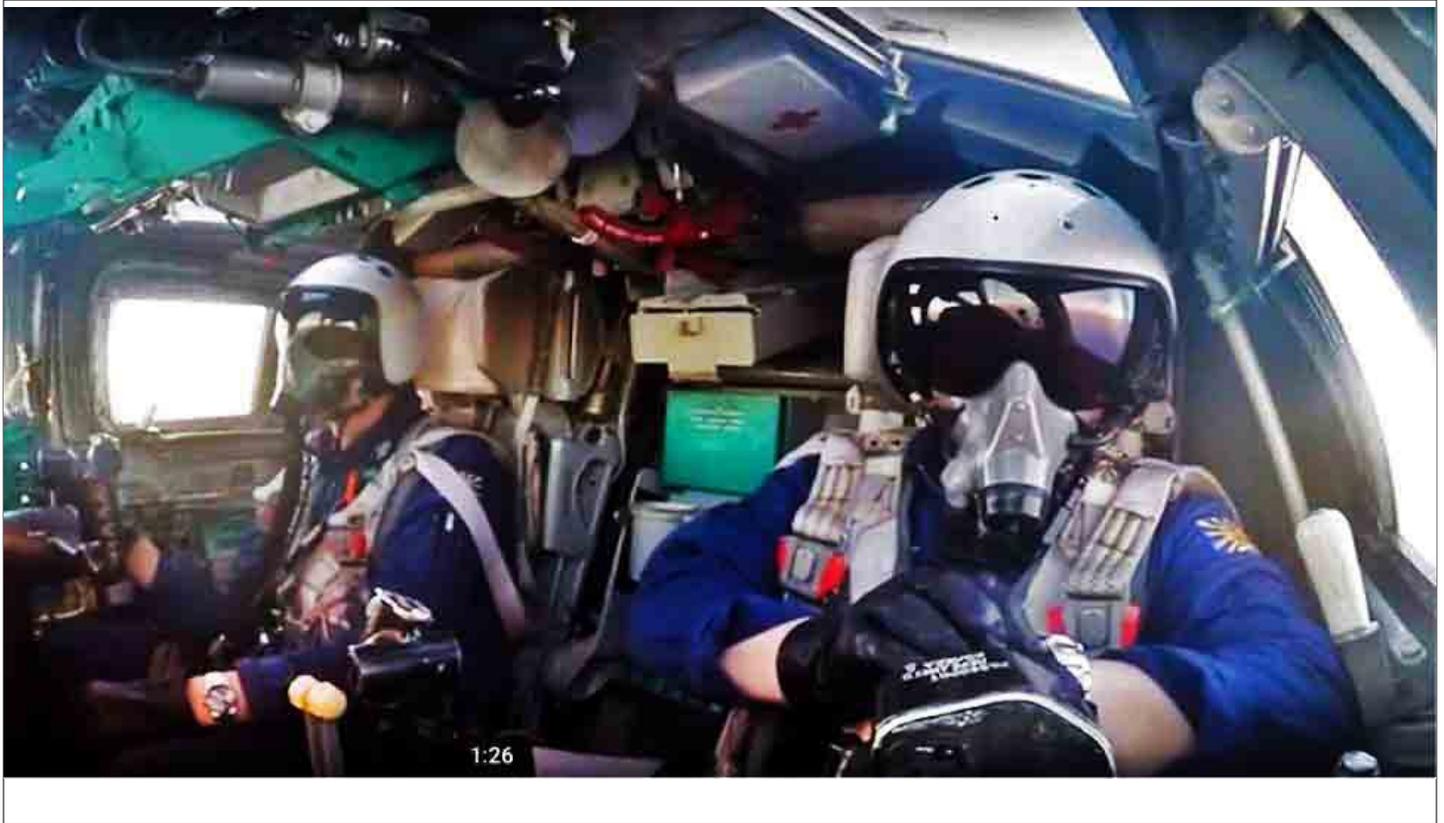
¹⁴³ <http://www.globes.co.il/en/article-huge-oil-discovery-on-golan-heights-1001071698>

¹⁴⁴ <http://www.nasdaq.com/article/major-shale-find-could-guarantee-israels-oil-supply-for-years-cm528693>

¹⁴⁵ <http://www.haaretz.com/israel-news/business/.premium-1.679315>

¹⁴⁶ <http://www.timesofisrael.com/major-oil-reserve-said-found-on-golan/>

¹⁴⁷ <http://www.au.af.mil/au/awc/awcgate/cpc-pubs/farr.htm>



Russian bomber pilots flying raids into Syria from Iran, the first time foreign forces have been allowed to use Iranian airspace since 1979. Turkey is rapidly reconsidering its relationship with NATO, and opening itself for the possibility of a strategic alliance with Russia.¹⁴⁸ In light of the rapidly-deteriorating relationship with Turkey, the US just removed its nuclear weapons from Incirlik Air base, where they formed NATO's major strategic counterweight to Russia. Some reports claim the removal was "rushed."¹⁴⁹¹⁵⁰

¹⁴⁸ <https://www.rt.com/news/356380-turkey-russia-military-nato/>

¹⁴⁹ <http://www.debka.com/article/25613/Rushed-evacuation-of-US-nukes-from-Incirlik>

¹⁵⁰ <http://www.haaretz.com/middle-east-news/1.737585>

CHAPTER TWENTY-NINE
IS THE CHURCH ISRAEL?

New

By Martin H. Klayman

IS THE CHURCH ISRAEL?

By Martin H. Klayman

Conceptual Barriers

Replacement Theology was brought into the church shortly after Gentile leadership took over after the initial Jewish leadership. This concept teaches that the church has replaced Israel in God's plan. In other words, the Jews are no longer God's chosen people and God has not had any special interest in the Nation of Israel after his Chosen People crucified His Son. Simply put, the church is a continuation of Israel.

Replacement Theology teaches that the promises, covenants, and blessings made to Israel in the Bible have been taken away from the Jews and given to the church, while, at the same time, the Jews are subject to the corresponding curses as a result of Israel's rejection of Christ. This line of thinking leads to the view that the prophecies concerning the restoration of Israel to the Promised Land and the blessings that come with that restoration are "spiritualized" or "allegorized" into promises of God's blessings for the church.

There are a number of extremely difficult barriers to this view. Including some very telling statements Paul made. Consider this one in **Romans 11:1-10** (NIV):

I ask then: **Did God reject his people? By no means! I am an Israelite myself, a descendant of Abraham, from the tribe of Benjamin.** ² **God did not reject his people, whom he foreknew.** Don't you know what Scripture says in the passage about Elijah—how he appealed to God against Israel: ³ "Lord, they have killed your prophets and torn down your altars; I am the only one left, and they are trying to kill me"^[a]? ⁴ And what was God's answer to him? "I have reserved for myself seven thousand who have not bowed the knee to Baal."^[b] ⁵ So too, at the present time there is a remnant chosen by grace. ⁶ And if by grace, then it cannot be based on works; if it were, grace would no longer be grace.

⁷ What then? What the people of Israel sought so earnestly they did not obtain. The elect among them did, but the others were hardened, ⁸ as it is written:

"God gave them a spirit of stupor,
eyes that could not see
and ears that could not hear,
to this very day."^[c]

⁹ And David says:

"May their table become a snare and a trap,
a stumbling block and a retribution for them.

¹⁰ May their eyes be darkened so they cannot see,
and their backs be bent forever."^[d]

Consider its meaning yourself from Romans 11: 25-29:

²⁵ I do not want you to be ignorant of this mystery, brothers and sisters, so that you may not be conceited: Israel has experienced a hardening in part **until the full number of the Gentiles has come in,** ²⁶ **and in this way^[e] all Israel will be saved.** As it is written:

"The deliverer will come from Zion;
he will turn godlessness away from Jacob.

²⁷ And this is^[f] my covenant with them
when I take away their sins."^[g]

²⁸ As far as the gospel is concerned, they are enemies for your sake; **but as far as election is concerned, they are loved on account of the patriarchs,** ²⁹ **for God's gifts and his call are**

irrevocable.

The context of what Paul said here appears to be a prophetic depiction of the restored Nation of Israel during End Times. The context of this passage prohibits the idea that Paul is discussing the destiny of Christian believers. If Israel, as presented in this passage, were to reference the Christian church, then it would be tantamount to saying “All Christians will be saved.” Of course all true Christians will be saved, but the focus of Paul’s statement is in regard to the fate of Israel, his beloved People. A reasonable reading of his statement would be that when Christ fulfills prophecy and assumes the Throne of David during the End Times, the Jews who are alive at that time will acknowledge that He is the Messiah. As a result of their faith in Him, all of those who confess that He is the Christ will be saved. In fact, immediately preceding that they will proclaim, “Blessed is He who comes in the name of the Lord.”

Continuing in Chapter 11 of Romans, Paul prepares his readers to accept his bold statement that Israel will be saved by reiterating his appeal in verse 11:

¹¹ Again I ask: Did they stumble so as to fall beyond recovery? Not at all! Rather, because of their transgression, salvation has come to the Gentiles to make Israel envious. ¹² But if their transgression means riches for the world, and their loss means riches for the Gentiles, how much greater riches will their full inclusion bring!

The idea that God spurned Israel just because a small minority of its leaders rejected Him is unfair to the vast number of the Jews of Jesus’ day, who would gladly have proclaimed Him King. The ordinary citizen of Israel seemed to want to make Him King, and they were ready to do it on the spot, given the chance. Shortly after the Resurrection, many of these Jews made Jesus the King of their Hearts. Recall that in Jerusalem alone, three thousand of them were baptized in one day. Given the relatively small population in ancient times, three thousand individuals most likely represented a large percentage of the population of Jerusalem. These Jesus-loving converts formed a major element of the first century believers who proclaimed the message to the world that Jesus is the Messiah.

Recall that the Sanhedrin arrested Jesus in secret for fear that an arrest carried out in public would start a riot. Jesus had healed every last sick person in many of the towns of Israel. Jesus had to resist the public’s attempts to crown Him King on a number of occasions. He had raised the dead several times. The people loved Him! He was arrested, tried, and executed in as much secrecy as possible by a core group of Israel’s religious leaders. Those who condemned Jesus probably lived in fear of a public reaction to His execution for a good while afterward. In fact the Resurrection may have saved Israel’s leaders from a dangerous popular backlash.

The miraculous Providence of God has kept the Jews a separate and distinct people against all odds. Without the preservation of their ethnic identity, there would have been no Jews left to return to their Palestinian homeland in 1948. God loves both Israel and the church, and He has special but different plans for them. True to God’s character, He never gives up on any nation or any individual.

The Hebrew prophets’ prediction that Israel would be reestablished as a nation near the time of the end of Earth’s history was dramatically fulfilled in 1948 when the Nation of Israel was established. These same prophets predicted that Israel’s temple would be rebuilt prior to the end of time. For decades, now, the Jews around the world have been working toward the day when Solomon’s temple can be rebuilt, and a committee has been operating in Israel for a good many years to conduct the planning and financing necessary for the restoration of the temple and its services. And as Larry Dean points out in his chapter about the Islamic anti-Christ, in mid October of 2016, a high level Islamic cleric, presumably speaking for the Turkish dictator, Erdogan, announced that the soon-to-be caliphate has plans to help Israel rebuild the “Prophet” Solomon’s temple. Larry Dean, explains that Erdogan has expressed his desire not only to reestablish the caliphate but to become its caliph. Interestingly, this Islamic cleric identifies the anticipated resurrected caliphate and its caliph as the figure that Christians refer to as the “anti-Christ!” The prophecies of the anti-Christ of the End Times seems to indicate that he is a specific person rather than a nation. It is difficult to evade the conclusion that Erdogan of Turkey qualifies in every way for this title.

The Jews, as a people, have retained their special identity against all odds over the last 1,900 years. Symbolic of this special identity, the Nation of Israel made a choice to make its national language Hebrew. Consider the fact that the Hebrew language evolved from proto-Hebrew into Modern Hebrew. By the time of Christ, the evidence available today indicates that Hebrew, Aramaic, and Greek were commonly spoken in Israel in the first century AD (“*The Languages Spoken by Jesus*,” by

Aaron Tresham at <https://www.tms.edu/m/tmsj20e.pdf>). It would seem that the founders of Modern Israel wanted to re-establish their identity as the same Israel of ancient times by choosing the language that was spoken back then.

Proponents of Replacement Theology have various motives for espousing it. The focus of this book is on Adventism, Armstrongism, and Sabbatarianism in general. In particular, many Seventh-day Adventist apologists, when confronted with the fact that the Hebrews did not keep the Sabbath for the first five weeks of their Exodus journey and that the Sabbath was given to Israel and Israel alone, begin to chant the “mantra” of “the Church is Israel.” What they mean is that no argument against Sabbatarianism is even possible since God gave the Sabbath to Israel, and the Christian church is now Israel.

Sabbatarians who adopt Replacement Theology as a vehicle for imposing Sabbath-keeping on Gentile Christians do not understand what they are demanding. As we have pointed out elsewhere in *Lying for God*, to an Israelite, the Law of God was all 613 rules and regulations of the *Torah*. No Jew ever separated the Ten Commandments from the other 603 laws of Moses. If you, as a Christian, were to have been grafted into Israel, rather than into Christ, then all the Sabbath laws would apply. If the Sabbath law is a moral law, which it clearly is not, there could be no fires on Sabbath, which means no driving cars, which start thousands of fires per minute while they are going down the road, and so on and so on. Let your imagination take you on a sightseeing tour of all 613 rules and regulations of the *Torah* before you ask to be a Jew and “live” in the environment of Real Israel. In fact, the Council of Jerusalem headed by James, made it clear that Gentiles were not required to take on themselves the whole yoke of the law.

Analysis

Let us examine some general arguments utilized by the proponents of Replacement Theology. Their arguments are generally rendered in blue type whereas our rebuttals are generally presented in black type:

REPLACEMENT THEOLOGY CLAIM: To be a son of Abraham is to have faith in Jesus Christ (Galatians 3:29).

²³ Before the coming of this faith,^[i] we were held in custody under the law, locked up until the faith that was to come would be revealed. ²⁴ So the law was our guardian until Christ came that we might be justified by faith. ²⁵ Now that this faith has come, we are no longer under a guardian.

²⁶ So in Christ Jesus you are all children of God through faith, ²⁷ for all of you who were baptized into Christ have clothed yourselves with Christ. ²⁸ There is neither Jew nor Gentile, neither slave nor free, nor is there male and female, for you are all one in Christ Jesus. ²⁹ **If you belong to Christ, then you are Abraham’s seed, and heirs according to the promise.**

REBUTTAL - the context of this passage is that of Faith – not ethnicity or nationality. There is no “thus saith the Lord” text that Replacement Theology advocates can cite to prove that this statement is meant to be taken nationally. On the other hand, there is no “thus saith the Lord” text that we who oppose Replacement Theology can reference to prove that this statement is only spiritually symbolic – not intended to be taken literally and nationally. A little common sense and intelligent analysis will help us here. The subject of the passage is faith, and Abraham is the symbol of what faith means, there is no justification to use it to force the yoke of the Law back onto Christians simply because Christians are now Israel. How long was the Law of Moses to be in force?

In Matthew 5:18, Jesus said that the Law was to last until everything was fulfilled. Since the majority of the rules and regulations of the Law of Moses pointed forward to the death of Jesus as the future Propitiator of the sins of the Israelites, a logical understanding of this comment is that, at least for Christians, the jurisdiction of this law ceased at the Cross. For those who accepted Christ as their Savior, the Law of Moses had limited meaning. For example, the Law of Moses required the sacrificing of two spotless lambs on the weekly Sabbath. The Spotless Lamb of God has already sacrificed Himself for our sins. The Greek word for fulfilled is problematic in that there is no English equivalent meaning for it:

The Greek word for "fulfill" [used here is *plerosai*. According to Greek scholars, the nuance and meaning of this word is difficult to express in English, and several possibilities have been offered. These are summarized by four options:

Jesus came to accomplish or obey the Holy Scriptures.

To bring out the full meaning of the Holy Scriptures.

To bring those Scriptures to their intended completion.

To emphasize that the Scriptures point to him as Messiah and are fulfilled in his salvation work.

<https://www.gci.org/bible/matthew517>

The conclusion of the *Expositor's Commentary*, a highly respected Bible commentary that was researched and edited, in part, by the well-respected Evangelical scholar, D. A. Carson, is as follows, as noted by the researchers at Grace Communion International:

After reviewing several ways of looking at the word "fulfill," the *Expositor's Commentary* on Matthew concluded by saying: "The best interpretation of these difficult verses says that Jesus fulfills the Law and the Prophets in that they point to him, and He is their fulfillment. The antithesis is not between 'abolish' and 'keep' but between 'abolish' and 'fulfill'" (page 143).

<https://www.google.com/url?q=https%3A%2F%2Fwww.gci.org%2Fbible%2Fmatthew517>

Perhaps this explanation tells us why Gentiles would not have to continue with things like animal sacrifices and Sabbath-keeping. But what about the Jews – Israel? The will of the people of Israel was to crown Jesus King, but their purpose was circumvented by a small group of plotting national leaders who arrested, tried, and had executed Jesus with the greatest secrecy possible.

Thinking this through, it would seem that in a very real sense, all was not fulfilled for literal Israel. It almost goes without saying that God's will was that Israel not accept its Messiah at the time of the First Advent. Apparently God knew that this was not going to happen, so He inspired the major and minor prophets of Israel to foretell the circumstances that would lead to Israel accepting its Messiah during End Times.

It comes to us as no surprise that Israel would still be keeping the Sabbath, because that is what Jews do. Adventists have tried for 150 years to apply this text, found in Isaiah 66, to the Heavenly Jerusalem— a city which is probably in a different universe and even a different dimension where there might not even be planets, moons, and galaxies. Until the spectacular developments regarding the fate of Israel in the End Times, it made good sense to apply Isaiah 66:18-24 to what would have been the history of Israel had the Jews accepted their Messiah at His First Advent. Read Isaiah 66:18-24 carefully:

¹⁸ "And I, because of what they have planned and done, am about to come^[a] and gather the people of all nations and languages, and they will come and see my glory.

¹⁹ "I will set a sign among them, and I will send some of those who survive to the nations—to Tarshish, to the Libyans^[b] and Lydians (famous as archers), to Tubal and Greece, and to the distant islands that have not heard of my fame or seen my glory. They will proclaim my glory among the nations. ²⁰ And they will bring all your people, from all the nations, to my holy mountain in Jerusalem as an offering to the LORD—on horses, in chariots and wagons, and on mules and camels," says the LORD. "They will bring them, as the Israelites bring their grain offerings, to the temple of the LORD in ceremonially clean vessels. ²¹ And I will select some of them also to be priests and Levites," says the LORD.

²² "As the new heavens and the new earth that I make will endure before me," declares the LORD, "so will your name and descendants endure. ²³ **From one New Moon to another and from one Sabbath to another, all mankind will come and bow down before me,**" says the LORD. ²⁴ **"And they will go out and look on the dead bodies of those who rebelled against me; the worms that eat them will not die, the fire that burns them will not be quenched, and they will be loathsome to all mankind."**

Whereas there will be no dead bodies lying around the walls of the Heavenly City of Jerusalem, there certainly could have been had the Jews crowned Jesus King at His First Advent and the enemies of Israel decided to attack it. This scenario is still more credible when it fits the End Time events regarding the fate of Modern Israel. Right now a military force of huge proportions has already gathered at Israel's borders. While attack is possible right now, as of 2016, it is more likely, following what we know from Bible prophecy, that Solomon's Temple must be rebuilt first. But when that attack does come, after the false peace brought about by the anti-Christ, only God can save Israel from utter destruction. Furthermore, it would appear that Israel's destruction would mean the nuclear destruction of Israel's primary enemies as well as the possibility of full

nuclear involvement by allies on both sides. There could be some dead bodies lying around the walls of Jerusalem when God intervenes to preserve Israel.

Since God has huge plans for literal Israel, we conclude that Jews are still Jews but that Jews can be Christians. Both Gentiles and Jews are grafted into Christ by faith. Jesus said that He is the vine and we are the branches (John 15:5). In this context, then, it would appear that a true Jew— a Completed Jew— is one who is born of Jewish lineage and is, additionally, a believer.

With this clear picture in our minds that God has not forsaken literal Israel, let us examine the theological gymnastics that Replacement Theology advocates must use to defend their idea that Israel morphed into the Christian Church after the Cross:

REPLACEMENT THEOLOGY CLAIM - The promise of the land of Canaan to Abraham was only a “starter.” Romans 4:3 indicates that it will be the church that inherits the world— not the Jews.

Romans 4:3 (NIV) - What then shall we say that Abraham, our forefather according to the flesh, discovered in this matter? ² If, in fact, Abraham was justified by works, he had something to boast about—but not before God. ³ **What does Scripture say? “Abraham believed God, and it was credited to him as righteousness.”**^[a]

Whereas the Jews failed to inherit the entire world through their disobedience, the Christian church, now the “real” Israel, will inherit the entire world by Faith.

REBUTTAL - This one is a whopping theological assumption. Faith does not turn you into a Jew, and your Faith does not cause you to inherit the entire world. The Jews in the End Times have not been promised the entire world. They have been promised the most important place in it. Furthermore, unless God intervenes in what seems is presently the beginning of the End Times, it looks like Islam is going to inherit the world.

REPLACEMENT THEOLOGY CLAIM - The Old Testament teaches that the Jews would lose their spiritual privileges and would be replaced by another people (Matthew 21:43).

⁴² Jesus said to them, “Have you never read in the Scriptures:

“The stone the builders rejected

has become the cornerstone;

the Lord has done this,

and it is marvelous in our eyes”^[b]?

⁴³ **“Therefore I tell you that the kingdom of God will be taken away from you and given to a people who will produce its fruit.** ⁴⁴ Anyone who falls on this stone will be broken to pieces; anyone on whom it falls will be crushed.”^[c]

REBUTTAL - Jesus was talking about the priests and Pharisees who had catastrophically failed in their duties as the leaders of the Nation of Israel. They would cease to be the leaders of God’s people, and others would assume that role.

REPLACEMENT THEOLOGY CLAIM: - A true “Jew” is anyone born of the Spirit, whether he is racially Gentile or Jewish (Romans 2:28-29). This reinforces what has been said throughout the Hebrew Scriptures— simply stated, “Are you a follower of the God of Israel?”

ROMANS 2:25-29 (NIV) - Circumcision has value if you observe the law, but if you break the law, you have become as though you had not been circumcised. ²⁶ So then, if those who are not circumcised keep the law’s requirements, will they not be regarded as though they were circumcised? ²⁷ The one who is not circumcised physically and yet obeys the law will condemn you who, even though you have the^[d] written code and circumcision, are a lawbreaker.

²⁸ **A person is not a Jew who is one only outwardly, nor is circumcision merely outward and physical.** ²⁹ **No, a person is a Jew who is one inwardly; and circumcision is circumcision of the heart, by the Spirit, not by the written code.** Such a person’s praise is not from other people, but from God.

REBUTTAL - The fact that Circumcision is an absolute requirement to keep the Law of Moses is an integral part of Judaism. Paul is discussing, not addressing, REAL Jews here. At the Council of Jerusalem, the apostles decided that the Gentiles were not to be required to be circumcised. It seems reasonable to think that if the apostles had been thinking along the line that Christian believers were the new REAL Israel, the Ordinance of Circumcision would have been maintained as a requirement for all believers, Jew or Gentile.

REPLACEMENT THEOLOGY CLAIM - Paul says that the church is really the same olive tree as was Israel and that the Christian church is now grafted back into that “tree.” This makes Christians Israel. See Romans 11:17-23 and Ephesians 2:12. First the passage in Romans:

ROMANS 11:11-21 (NIV) - Again I ask: Did they stumble so as to fall beyond recovery? Not at all! Rather, because of their transgression, salvation has come to the Gentiles to make Israel envious. ¹² But if their transgression means riches for the world, and their loss means riches for the Gentiles, how much greater riches will their full inclusion bring!

¹³ I am talking to you Gentiles. Inasmuch as I am the apostle to the Gentiles, I take pride in my ministry ¹⁴ in the hope that I may somehow arouse my own people to envy and save some of them. ¹⁵ For if their rejection brought reconciliation to the world, what will their acceptance be but life from the dead? ¹⁶ **If the part of the dough offered as firstfruits is holy, then the whole batch is holy; if the root is holy, so are the branches.**

¹⁷ **If some of the branches have been broken off, and you, though a wild olive shoot, have been grafted in among the others and now share in the nourishing sap from the olive root,** ¹⁸ **do not consider yourself to be superior to those other branches. If you do, consider this: You do not support the root, but the root supports you.** ¹⁹ You will say then, “Branches were broken off so that I could be grafted in.” ²⁰ **Granted. But they were broken off because of unbelief, and you stand by faith. Do not be arrogant, but tremble.** ²¹ **For if God did not spare the natural branches, he will not spare you either.**

And now the passage in Ephesians 2:

EPHESIANS 2:11-18: Therefore, remember that formerly you who are Gentiles by birth and called “uncircumcised” by those who call themselves “the circumcision” (which is done in the body by human hands)— ¹² remember that at that time you were separate from Christ, excluded from citizenship in Israel and foreigners **to the covenants of the promise**, without hope and without God in the world. ¹³ But now in Christ Jesus you who once were far away have been brought near by the blood of Christ.

¹⁴ For he himself is our peace, who has made the **two groups one and has destroyed the barrier, the dividing wall of hostility,** ¹⁵ **by setting aside in his flesh the law with its commands and regulations. His purpose was to create in himself one new humanity out of the two, thus making peace,** ¹⁶ **and in one body to reconcile both of them to God through the cross, by which he put to death their hostility.** ¹⁷ He came and preached peace to you who were far away and peace to those who were near. ¹⁸ For through him we both have access to the Father by one Spirit.

REBUTTAL - Writers, including Bible writers, use symbolism frequently to illustrate abstract concepts in concrete ways. Jesus said, “I am the Vine, and you are the branches.” In looking at all of this, the key question is, Who or What is the “nourishing sap?” Would you call the Nation of Israel “nourishing sap?” Not hardly! The Nation of Israel, prior to the Advent of Christ, was characterized as “dry bones.” The question was even asked whether or not these dry bones could ever live again! Thank God the wonderful answer was “yes.” Israel will live again in the End Times, which seemed to have gotten off to a new start in 1948.

Look at the grafting metaphor closely. What were the “branches that were broken off,” and what were they broken off of? They certainly were not broken off the “tree of Israel!” The Olive Tree must represent Jesus— God Almighty. The Jews broke off the Source of the “nourishing sap” of spiritual strength and power. The Gentiles were grafted onto Jesus, the Vine— the Olive Tree. Paul is not perfectly clear in regard to which group of people who can get grafted back onto the Tree again if they lose their unbelief. The group that seems like the most likely candidate is the Jews. Perhaps, then, Paul meant that Jews can be grafted back in if they become believers in Jesus.

The fact that the death of Christ tore down the barrier between Jew and Gentile does not mean that the single group of believers that resulted was literally Israel. You still have the Nation of Israel with its unbelieving Jews, and you have a second group of believers that includes believing, or “completed,” Jews, and Gentiles who also believe.

On the other hand, a Christian cannot become a Jew and join up with Israel without being circumcised. In 50 AD the Council of Jerusalem ruled that Gentiles did not have to be circumcised. Israel is Israel, and always will be Israel, and no one except Eunuchs ever got joined to Israel without becoming circumcised. God’s plan for Israel is different than His plan for the church.

Conclusion

Whereas many Christian groups espouse Replacement Theology and use it for various reasons, our interest in this subject centers on its use among Seventh-day Adventists, Armstrongites, and other Sabbatarians. Please note that Replacement Theology, which means the belief that the church is literally Israel, is not an official teaching of the Seventh-day Adventist Church. It is, however, a concept that is heard more and more often from Adventist apologists as the noose of the biblical and historical impossibilities of the Church’s Sabbath doctrine tightens around their necks.

Thanks to the Internet, Adventists are being confronted continually with a large variety of concepts, principles, and themes which prove that the idea that Christians must keep the Jewish Sabbath is contrary to what the Bible teaches through multiple pathways. Add to this the ever-increasing historical clarity that the non-Jewish wing of the early church did not abandon Sabbath-keeping as a result of a sinister conspiracy-apostasy, and the noose tightens to the point of choking. Ultimately, there is only one source for the idea that God gave the Jewish Sabbath to everyone on Earth, and that is the testimony of Adventist prophetess, Ellen G. White, who claimed that God showed her in vision that the Sabbath applies to everyone on Earth. Furthermore, she is the only source for the nearly incomprehensible idea that End Time events will be centered around the question of whether Christians will keep it or not. Her credibility has been blown out of the water as knowledge about her prophetic blunders and false claims of direct, divine inspiration have surfaced and churned since 1974 with the discovery of the *1919 Bible Conference Minutes*. (This subject is for another chapter, which you will find among the other chapters in *Lying for God*.)

With Ellen White’s authority demolished, with absolute proof that the original Hebrew text of the Pentateuch teaches against a Sabbath ordinance prior to the Exodus, and with the understanding that the Sabbath law was for Israel alone, the only remaining argument is Replacement Theology— a theory is vaporized by a little common sense and an honest study of the Scriptures.

SECTION II

ELLEN G. WHITE AND HER ENABLERS

SECTION II HAS BEEN RESEARCHED & WRITTEN BY:

KERRY B. WYNNE

**B.A. ENGLISH AND HISTORY, PACIFIC UNION COLLEGE (1970)
M.A., EDUCATIONAL ADMINISTRATION, ANDREWS UNIVERSITY (1978)**

WILLIAM H. HOHMANN

B.A., THEOLOGY, AMBASSADOR COLLEGE (1976)

ROBERT K. SANDERS

**FOUNDER, TRUTH OF FABLES WEBSITE
INDEPENDENT BIBLE RESEARCHER AND AUTHOR**

INTRODUCTION TO SECTION II

THE COMMANDMENTISM HERESY

In teaching that Christians must observe the Jewish Sabbath, Ellen White flaunted an entire set of both biblical and historical impossibilities that had been well-articulated by the early fathers, the Protestant Reformers, and prominent theologians from the post King James Era through her own day. There is not a single valid concept within the Christian belief system that would allow for it, and there are mountains of evidence against it. The more you pay attention to the major themes and principles spread out in Scripture, the clearer it is that the entire Bible is against the Sabbath existing outside the confines of the old covenant. The flawed premise of the SDA is found in The Ten Commandments. The first Christians and a whole host of theologians ever since had no trouble figuring out that the Ten Commandments represented a political treaty between God and the Hebrews, and was never intended to be thought of as the ultimate system of moral law. Although there is still no excuse for the misunderstanding, the reality is that it represented a Big One to the pioneers of the Advent Movement. Unfortunately these pioneer Adventists were not well-educated. Many of them came from agricultural backgrounds. As a whole they had no understanding of biblical languages and no comprehension of how to approach a subject through proper inductive reasoning or any standardized hermeneutic. Together they swallowed, hook, line, and sinker, the HERESY of Commandmentism. A belief in Commandmentism, or the concept that the Ten Commandments are essentially no more and no less the Law of God—leads to a theological can of worms that have unintended consequences, the most unfortunate of which is to denigrate the REAL Law of God. This unintended denigration of God's real Law opens the door to a whole list of additional moral sins, sins of omission, and sins of motive that exist without its boundaries.

Once more, Ellen White's angel is to blame for this unfortunate belief component of Adventism. She adopted this heresy during the formative years of the development of the unique doctrines of Adventism during which time this angel was helping her discern between “truth and error”.

Sabbatarians, like Ellen White, seem to use Commandmentism only when they need it to persuade Christians that they must keep the Jewish Sabbath. Otherwise they are happy, like other Christians, to talk about the additional “spiritual laws” of the Sermon on the Mount, the additional moral laws in the Torah (such as its prohibition of homosexual relationships), and the sins of omission and motive as listed by St. Paul in his epistles.

The paradoxical truth is that the heresy of Commandmentism unwittingly opens the floodgate to a Pandora's Box of sins—moral, omissive, and motival— that lie beyond the narrow boundaries of the political treaty called the Ten Commandments. If the Rich Young Ruler kept all the Ten Commandments and still lacked eternal life, what “commandment” did he disobey?

The 7th Commandment is only against adultery, which in the Hebrew language and culture is a very specific term. It can only mean sex between two people who are married to others, or between a married person and another who is not. To make a long story short, it does not prohibit sex between two people who are not married. Thus, like it or not, God saw that He needed to add other moral laws besides those within the Ten Commandments including those which prohibit sex between unmarried persons (fornication) and sexual relationships between people of the same sex (homosexuality).

The point here is that Sabbatarians can't discriminate between a “political” covenant, such as that represented by the 10 Commandments, and a full set of moral and spiritual laws that human beings might presume to refer to more broadly as “God's Law.”

The heresy of Commandmentism defies the Hebrew language and the culture that produced it. The Jewish rabbis have essentially always believed and taught that the only laws that apply to everyone on Earth are the Noachidæ Laws, loosely codified by God and explained to Noah around the time of the Great Flood. In fact, they have virtually always believed that if the Gentiles kept these laws they would enjoy eternal life in Paradise. This fact is relatively well known in biblical scholarship and Jewish thought.

The Noachidæ laws did not include the Sabbath commandment— a commandment the Jews rightly understand to have been given only to Israel to set them apart from every other nation on Earth as the only people who were ever rescued by God from Egyptian slavery by a series of miraculous events. This treaty between God and Israel was modeled after the

treaties produced by the cultures of their neighboring countries, which always included a ceremonial law of rehearsal in the middle of the treaty's basic provisions.

Commandmentism is a heresy that leads to unintended consequences. If you are not robbing banks or having an affair, you might even be keeping all ten of them right now— especially if you haven't insulted your mother or father recently. And since there is no prohibition of polygamy in the Ten Commandments, the Law of Moses, or anywhere in Scripture, a man could have multiple wives and still keep the Ten Commandments. Now isn't this interesting? Anyone in his or her right mind knows that polygamy is an insanely cruel practice. It treats women, who are in reality, the epitome of God's creative glory— like a bull would treat a herd of cows. Commandmentism largely ignores the principle that Jesus gave us, both in the old testament, and in the New Testament, that we are to love God supremely and love others as we love ourselves. Polygamy is an impossibly wicked sin when the practice is viewed by the standard Jesus gave us, both in the Old Testament and the New Testament, that you will not do to others what you yourself would not want them to do to you. In two sentences, Jesus gave us an all-inclusive view of the wideness and deepness of God's Law. Nothing escapes the reach of these two principles, and even a child can understand them.

Since it is quite possible to obey the Ten Commandments in the letter, this heresy often leads to the sin of self-righteousness. The Ten Commandments are God's law, and you are keeping them! Wow! So, you are ready to bypass the Judgment and receive a glowing welcome from Jesus, even though back on Earth you were the employee from Hell?

When we run into a doctrine that is as disastrous as Commandmentism— one which denigrates God's real Holy Law, God expects us to use our Berean brains and do some critical thinking. We do not have to leave our brains at the door when we walk into a church. From the science of logic we draw on the idea that one of the best ways to test any idea for truth is to push that principle as far as it could ever go. If that idea seems to go to Hell in a hand-basket by the time it gets to the end of the line, perhaps Hell is where that idea came from.

The purpose of any heresy is to impinge on God's Character and Majesty— in short to make Him look bad. Jesus didn't support Commandmentism. Neither do we. Unfortunately, Ellen White's angel approved the concept, perhaps as a result of his “youthful inexperience”.

While this book is all about the biblical and historical impossibilities of Sabbatarianism, it is also about what the Seventh-day Adventist leadership has virtually always known about these impossibilities. In the section dealing with the theology of the Sabbath, we are going to take the ideas, concepts, and principles of Sabbatarianism, run them to the end of the universe, and see just how well they stand up to logic, common sense, biblical principles, and the facts of history. In short, we are going to try to study to show ourselves approved.

For the sake of Catholic, Orthodox, and Protestant clergy who may be reading this book, it is divided into two major sections. Section One (*VERDICT: No Sabbath in Genesis or the New Covenant!*) tries to focus on problems with the doctrine of Sabbatarianism, whereas Section Two, *ELLEN WHITE AND HER ENABLERS*, focuses mostly on the false prophetic claims of Ellen G. White. Readers who are not particularly interested in the problems of Adventism can read Section One only.

It is difficult to discuss the problems of Sabbatarian doctrine without talking about Ellen White to a certain extent in Section One. She is the single most prominent spokesperson for it in history. She and her defenders down through time have put together more support for the doctrine than anyone else. Therefore, a discussion of Sabbatarian theology is not complete without exploring all of the arguments that she and her successors-enablers have developed over the last 150 years.

SECTION II

CHAPTER ONE

Revised For 11th Edition

The Prophetess From Hell

By Kerry B. Wynne

The Prophetess From Hell

By Kerry B. Wynne

We put on a sort of holy mask, and say things that we ourselves know were not exactly, true; and the brethren look soberly in our faces, and know that we are not saying it exactly as it is, and we keep looking soberly at one another, and saying things that we know are not exactly right; and the chairman makes explanations that he knows are not exactly true; but it would hardly do to say it exactly as it is, and so the smiling is up the sleeve, and not on the countenance, and we go on with it.— General Conference vice president, W. W. Prescott, quoted speaking at a General Conference session and reported in *The White Elephant of Adventism?*, published by Vowless in 1933.

ARIANISM OPENS THE DOOR

Arianism is the belief that Christ was not fully God. While her views on the nature of Christ evolved from her early unabashed Arianism to a more Trinitarian view by the 1890's. As a result, her writings are full of contradictory statements about the nature of Christ.

The most serious problem with this fact about Ellen White is that in all cases, she presented what she wrote as coming directly from God in vision. It is extremely unlikely that God would change His mind over Ellen's lifespan about His own nature. Therefore, we must conclude that she operated in this area of theology as a result of the human Arian influences that surrounded her or as a result of influences from the dark side. The heresy of Arianism appears to result in a "gospel" of perfectionism for reasons we will explain subsequently.

According to Richard Schwarz, A Seventh-day Adventist historian, "Most Adventist laymen were probably unaware of the fact that many of their prominent ministers had long held unorthodox Arian or semi-Arian views of the Godhead," a view rejecting the full deity of Christ.

(Ruth A. Tucker, *Another Gospel: Cults, Alternative Religions, and the New Age Movement*, Zondervan, 1945)

ELLEN WHITE, JOSEPH SMITH, AND RESTORATIONISM

Larry Dean theorizes that Mormonism, Adventism, and Jehovah's Witness-ism are based on two facetious arguments. First is the idea that the historic Christian church fell into an alleged "Great Apostasy." This concept is called "Restorationism." Second is the idea that Christ is somehow not fully God. Dean summarizes the Restorationist views of these three cults as follows:

They are all in agreement that this occurred very soon in ancient Christianity. Not only is this argument comically non-Biblical, but it is horrifying anti-historical. Left unsaid by all three of these cults is the fact that during the First Three Centuries of Christianity, the early church experienced quite possibly the worst persecution of any religion in history. Thousands of Christians were gruesomely tortured and underwent grizzly executions by the Romans, because they refused to relent in the slightest. Many of them could have avoided this awful persecution merely by *pretending* to "respect" the Roman worship rites. And yet Christians refused to do any of this in the first three centuries. They did not tolerate Paganism *at all*. And they paid dearly for this intolerance of Paganism. And yet somehow these are the same people that adopted Pagan rites and beliefs during an alleged "Great Apostasy?" These victims of savage torture and unbelievably grizzly executions "fell away" from the Truth?

Joseph Smith, the Mormon prophet, seemed to understand that if he were going to successfully devise and implement a

new religion to replace Christianity, he would have revised the history of the world and of the Christian Faith in order to demonstrate that Christians departed from the truth very early in the “game.” Therefore, he created his own restorationist history to replace the true history of the Christian faith with a false one. This false history would demonstrate that Mormonism was the legitimate successor to Christianity. His revisionist history is outlined in *The Book of Mormon*.

Modern researchers have found that the Seventh-day Adventist prophetess, Ellen White, borrowed liberally from the writings of Joseph Smith. The result of these comparison studies prove to the point of over-kill that she stole a lot of words and ideas from Smith.

To view these studies, please do appropriate Internet searches to view them for yourself. Try, for example, Ellen White + Joseph Smith + Plagiarism.

It is plain to see that she made an effort to disguise her copying by changing words and phrases much of the time, but the similarities are so striking as to rule out chance. Placing an excerpt from his writings across from hers shows that in many cases she followed the same thought order, although in slightly different words. Often, the words are exactly the same for short spurts. The verdict of plagiarism comes as a result of reviewing many passages, observing the same order of thought progression, and seeing the similarity of the words and phrases in Ellen White that one finds in Smith.

It is possible, and even likely, that Ellen White observed how Joseph Smith found that a replacement, restorationist history did a lot to help him launch his new religion, and she apparently reasoned that the same approach would help her establish her new religion—Adventism. If this is the case, Ellen White’s book, *The Great Controversy*, is a replacement, restorationist history conceptualized by Ellen White to demonstrate that Christianity departed almost immediately from the true faith by abandoning Sabbath-keeping. This concept, of course, would make room for her new religion where Sabbath-keeping is profoundly important.

Scholars do not believe that there is any truth to the idea that Jesus appeared to the North American Indians many centuries before Columbus discovered America and taught them the Gospel in the context of Mormon beliefs. Similarly, scholars do not see any truth in Ellen White’s claim that the Sabbath got changed from Saturday to Sunday. All the evidence points to the explanation that the Sabbath was abandoned for no other reason than that the principles, ideas, themes, and teachings of the Bible caused Christians to understand that the Sabbath was nailed to the Cross for a variety of reasons.

Did Ellen White get her replacement history-writing idea from Joseph Smith? No one can prove this fact, but a number of factors strongly suggest that she did.

THEOLOGY SHAPED BY JOSEPH SMITH

Joseph Smith taught that Jesus and Lucifer were rivals in celestial history. They were, and still are, brothers. Once upon a time they lived on a distant planet with the Mormon god, Elohim, and his goddess wives. In this scheme, Planet Earth was one of many places where these spirit babies were sent to find physical bodies. In this cosmological story, serious problems developed on Earth, and things had gotten so bad that no spirit children could be sent there anymore.

Elohim called Jesus and Lucifer, who were spirit brothers born to himself and one or more of his spirit wives, and assigned them each to develop a plan for fixing things on Planet Earth. Elohim chose Jesus’ plan, creating eternal jealousy between him and Lucifer. In Mormonism, then, it is this dualistic rivalry that is causing so much trouble right now on Planet Earth. For excellent documentation of Mormon beliefs, see the summary at the Christian Apologetics and Research Ministry on Mormonism. You can follow this link:

<https://carm.org/mormon-beliefs>

Sometime after Joseph Smith died, Ellen White began to write about a rivalry between Jesus and Lucifer in Heaven. Note that if Jesus is God, rivalry is not even possible between Him and Lucifer. This quote from her writings is found in *Spirit of Prophecy*, Vol. 1, pages 17 & 18:

[A special light beamed in his \[Satan’s\] countenance, and shone around him brighter and more beautiful than around the other angels; yet Jesus, God’s dear Son, had the pre-eminence over all the angelic host. He was one with the Father before the angels were created. Satan was envious](#)

of Christ, and gradually assumed command which devolved on Christ alone. The great Creator assembled the heavenly host, that he might in the presence of all the angels confer special honor upon his Son. . . . The Father then made known that it was ordained by himself that Christ, his Son, should be equal with himself; so that wherever was the presence of his Son, it was his own presence. . . . His Son would carry out His will and His purposes, but would do nothing of himself alone.

As Dr. Gerhard Pfandl of the Biblical Research Institute observes in his article, “The Doctrine of the Trinity Among Seventh-day Adventists:”

This seems to imply that after the angels were created, they did not know or recognize that Christ was equal with the Father and it took a special “heavenly council” to inform them of this. On the other hand, if Christ’s equality was a “special honor” which was conferred upon him, the implication is that he was not equal to the Father before that time.

Journal of the Adventist Theological Society, 17/1 (Spring 2006): 160–179.

It is remarkable that the position of Mormonism on the trinity of God is exactly like that which most Adventists remember being taught in Adventist schools and Sabbath School classes:

In the Mormon theology adhered to by most denominations of Mormonism, "God" means God the Father-Elohim, whereas "Godhead" means a council of three distinct divine beings; God the Father-Elohim, God the Son-Jehovah (or Jesus), and God the Holy Spirit. The divine Father and the divine Son have perfected, glorified, physical bodies, while the divine Holy Spirit is a spirit and does not have a physical body.

This conception differs from the traditional Christian Trinity; within Mormonism, the Father, the Son, and the Holy Ghost are not said to be one in substance or essence; instead, they remain three separate beings, or personages, completely united in will, purpose, and every other conceivable attribute, as one God. It also differs totally from the Jewish tradition of ethical monotheism in which Elohim (אֱלֹהִים) is a completely different conception. ———— *Wikipedia* entry, “God In Mormonism”

Note that this description of the Mormon view of God does not include an explanation that each male spirit child born into the Universe has the power to become a god with a triune nature who creates universes and rescues planets where spirit babies somehow get into trouble with a plan of salvation such as Mormons believe exists on Planet Earth.

For nearly two thousand years, Protestants, Catholics, and the Orthodox churches have considered this triunal view of the nature of God to be heresy. It is not at all the same as the Doctrine of the Trinity, which views all three members of the Godhead are fully equal and eternally existent— three manifestations of One Being. To begin with, Ellen White's earliest writings betray a basically Arian view of the nature of God. The combination of Arian and Mormon influences, both of which denigrated the status of Jesus within the Godhead, predisposed her to formulate her single most dangerous doctrine. Theologians classify her view of how a person is saved as the Doctrine of Progressive Sanctification. Here is the problem. This specious teaching is based on two denigrations of Christ: First, that he was never fully God having been created in the beginning of time by God the Father to have life within himself. Second, that while He was on Planet Earth, in addition to not really being fully God, He was 100% human.

According to Dean, Ellen White's characterization of Christ as not fully God and having a fully human nature, makes Christ, theologically, our EXAMPLE, rather than our SACRIFICE. “Progressive Sanctification” means that with God's help and a person's own effort, he or she can achieve the same *perfection* here on Earth that Christ achieved, because He was “no different” than we are. The implication of this view is that if we do not progress steadily toward this goal, he or she will be eternally lost. There is some room for Grace, but it is a combination of works and Grace that save a human being. While this concept may be a good way to look at some aspects of living the Christian life, Grace does not work like that. Ellen White's Arian and Mormon-like teachings seem to lead many of her followers to believe that perfection of character is within their grasp because “Jesus was no different than they are.” Then, when they reach the stage where they can actually “keep” the Ten Commandments, which, actually people can do, they think they have “arrived.” However, those who have more sense soon realize that perfection is not possible and that Jesus must have had something they do not have. Despair sets in.

Over time Ellen White's views on the nature of Christ evolved. While she continued to make somewhat contradictory statements on the nature of Christ up until a few years before she died, her view of Who Christ was came full-circle in her remarkably profound comment in her classic devotional on the life of Jesus, *The Desire of Ages*, on how Jesus happened to come forth from the grave by His own power

Still seeking to give a true direction to her faith, Jesus declared, "I am the resurrection, and the life." In Christ is life, original, unborrowed, underived. "He that hath the Son hath life." 1 John 5:12. The divinity of Christ is the believer's assurance of eternal life. (Page 530)

While we applaud her movement toward orthodox Christianity's recognition that Jesus never had a beginning, a serious problem with her evolution in thinking on this subject is greatly disturbing. At each step of the way in her journey from seeing Christ, essentially, as a created Being to viewing Him as totally self-existent, she claimed that God was showing her what to teach through visions.

THE INFLUENCE OF SPIRITUALISM AND FREEMASONRY

While Ellen White was formulating her religious views, Spiritualism had just launched with full force in America. One important theme of Spiritualism at the time was its emphasis on the progression of the soul toward greater purity toward oneness with the Force through ever rising astral planes via reincarnation. More rapid progress could be achieved through one's efforts and better decision making. There is too much similarity here to be ignored, especially in view of the occult and New Age imagery in her writings and her Freemason connection with her husband, son, and other early pioneers of Adventism.

Sadly, the more thoughtful followers of Ellen White soon figured out that perfection is an impossible goal, even with lots of help from God. Seeing the impossible standard she sets for salvation they sometimes conclude that it would be better never to have been born. The probability of damnation is so high and the punishment of Hell is so great.

Adventists who have spent more than a decade in Adventism quickly run into various factions within the Church who are obsessed with perfection. Their spirits are critically oriented. Some of these factions form organizations, including commune-like schools and living situations that focus on strict adherence to the letter of the law of Ellen White's writings.

An over-view of Ellen White's theological influences is shocking. She was strongly influenced by Arianism, Mormonism, and Spiritualism to develop ideas that have turned out to be a curse to those who have been influenced by her teachings. Yet, things get still worse regarding the influences that shaped her views. No wonder the General Conference of Seventh-day Adventists has been forced to re-write the history of both itself and Ellen White.

Astonishingly, there was an unholy trinity between Ellen White, the founders of Adventism, and Joseph Smith and Mormonism—Freemasonry. William Miller, James White (the husband of Ellen White), one of the White's sons, and numerous others of the pioneers of Adventism were Freemasons. Both Joseph Smith and his father were elevated to the highest degree of Freemasonry, and Joseph Smith designed a temple service for Mormonism modeled after Masonic ceremonies. (*Wikipedia*, article, "Mormonism and Freemasonry"). The *Wikipedia* article sums things up like this:

Mormon temple worship shares an extensive commonality of symbols, signs, vocabulary and clothing with Freemasonry, including robes, aprons, handshakes, ritualistic raising of the arms, etc.[4] The interpretation of many of these symbols has been adapted to the Mormon narrative from their original meanings in Freemasonry. For example, whereas Masons exchange secret handshakes to identify fellow Freemasons, **Mormonism teaches that these handshakes must be given to sentinel angels in order for Mormons to be admitted into the highest kingdom of heaven.** Mormon temple garments also bear the Masonic symbols of the Square and Compass, although Mormons have imbued these symbols with religious meaning that exceeds the meaning of the symbols as intended by Freemasonry.

Dozens of old photographs show the Whites and many church officials up through the early 1900's displaying the secret handshake positions. These handshake positions are not normal, and there is little chance that a person would develop a Masonic secret handshake position as the result of randomly assuming that kind of a stance. You can view these photos on the Web by searching for Ellen White + Freemasonry + handshake + photos, or something similar. The photos are definitive.

She and her Adventist pioneer cronies were exhibiting Masonic signs and without any “sign” of embarrassment.

MORMON INFLUENCES ON ELLEN WHITE'S OBSESSION WITH THE TEMPLE SERVICES

Mormonism and Adventism are both highly concerned with temple ritual, and both respective belief systems are contributing factors to their respective paganizations. Ellen's fascination with the sanctuary services of the Old Testament led her to the crazy idea that in the end, the sin bearer turns out to be Lucifer — not Jesus! Lucifer is the Scape Goat whose death cleanses the Universe! This theological rubbish has been a thorn in the flesh to perceptive Adventist theologians for over a century, and this fact has repeatedly surfaced as an argument against Ellen White's Sanctuary Doctrine. It doesn't take much imagination to compare Ellen White's Dualistic view of the Cosmic War with the “theology” of the Stephen Spielberg film trilogy, *Star Wars*, in which the death of Darth Vader, the leader of the Dark Side, cleanses the Galaxy and brings peace to the Universe.

Ellen found a connection with the occult component of Freemasonry. We will have more to say shortly about the New Age and occult references in her writings, the fact that her grave has an obelisk over it, and she tied the path of the Second Coming of Christ to the occult-associated constellation of Orion. It was her attending angel that showed her that the Holy City would descend from Heaven through Orion, a symbol if Nimrod, who was a human symbol of Satan.

Later sections of this book will explore the evidence that indicate Ellen White used occult and New Age language in her writings. If anyone had tried to tell us these things before we studied our way out of Adventism, we would have thought the person telling us these things was crazy. Sadly, these things don't just jump out of a hat, and everything ties together in one giant occult tangle.

PATHOLOGICAL LYING: EVIDENCE OF THE OCCULT

Why is it so difficult for Adventists to “get it” about how you cannot possibly have a pathological liar and a prophet of God in one and the same person? Study our time-line of the real history of Adventism, and you will see all the evidence and more that any reasonable person would need to see that Ellen White was a pathological liar. Study our book, *The Chicago Buildings Vision Fiasco*, and you will see how she wove a web of lies that entangled her. It is a terrible web that finally exposed her to the Battle Creek physicians as a fraud of a prophet but a better-than-average medium. You can access this book at TRUTHORFABLES.COM.

To many observers, honesty is one of the key marks of a Christian believer. Millions of Christian believers died a martyr's death because they refused to lie by stating that they rejected their belief in Jesus. Yet, the overwhelming characteristic of Adventism is the willingness of Ellen White and her enablers to step outside of their otherwise holy-appearing lives and lie like a rug when it comes to covering up the truth about Ellen White, the Investigative Judgment, the Sabbath, and the truth about the lunar Sabbath. A lifetime of pathological lying cannot be reconciled with the claim that a person is a prophet of God.

From a secret document stolen from the vaults of the General Conference of Seventh-day Adventists in the early 1970's, we learned that key Adventist leaders knew no later than 1919 that Ellen G. White, the Church's prophetess, was a fraud. From that document we also learned that these leaders knew, no later than 1919, that the prophetic interpretation of a certain prophecy in the Book of Daniel she used to support her Investigative Judgment Doctrine was historically impossible. Ellen White had said herself that if the Doctrine of the Investigative Judgment were ever invalidated, Adventism's entire belief system would collapse. It has been invalidated over and over again by some of the brightest minds of the Church, and still the doctrine, which clearly has its origin in Hell, persists to this day. Only the devil himself could think up such a terrible way to portray the character of God in dealing with His followers.

By no later than 1982, Adventist leaders knew that its Sabbath doctrine was biblically and historically impossible, thanks, in part, to the work of a team of biblical scholars led by D. A. Carson who began to research the Sabbath-Sunday Question in earnest. Their work actually proved, in the real sense of the word, that Moses used key literary devices in his wording of Genesis 2, Exodus 16, and Exodus 20 to make it absolutely clear that the actual Sabbath ordinance did not exist prior to the Exodus. Their work so clearly answered the Sabbath-Sunday Question that The Worldwide Church of God, a sister

Sabbatarian church to the Seventh-day Adventists, repudiated the Sabbatarian heresy in 1995 and became a Gospel-oriented denomination. The Worldwide Church of God and the Seventh-day Adventist Church share a common Sabbatarian ancestry which goes all the way back to the 1844 Millerite Great Disappointment, splitting up somewhat later over the controversy over Ellen White's "Shut Door" doctrine. Never in this history of the Christian Faith had a church turned its back on its single most identifying doctrine. Unfortunately, the leaders of the Seventh-day Adventist Church did not choose to follow in their sister church's footsteps.

No later than 1940, Adventist leaders almost certainly knew that it was keeping its own Sabbath the wrong way. This book documents Adventism's long battle against the astonishing yet historically accurate fact that Israel kept the Sabbath according to the four phases of the moon from Mt. Sinai up until about the time of the building of the Second Temple. Please hold your opinion until you see our extensive documentation. It is now clear that Adventist leaders value the preservation of the institution of Adventism even above keeping its "own" Sabbath the "right" way. The crisis reached its peak in the mid-1990's when three theologians on a special lunar Sabbath inquiry committee appointed by the General Conference, and ones believed by other delegates on the committee to be the three delegates from the Church's theological seminary at Andrews University, decided that the evidence in favor of the lunar Sabbath was so compelling that the Church should start keeping the Sabbath accordingly. Since the release of the Eighth Edition, additional study and review has provided enough evidence in favor of the lunar Sabbath concept that we now view it as real beyond any reasonable doubt. At the same time we point out that its truth wrecks havoc with the Sabbatarian doctrine that the Saturday of the fixed calendar is sacred time and that violation of its boundaries by working on it can send someone to Hell. Specifically, it wrecks havoc with Ellen White's teaching that the pope "changed" the Sabbath from Saturday to Sunday. And if Ellen White were a prophet of God given the responsibility to restore the honor of the Sabbath to the entire world, it would be difficult to imagine that God would not enlighten her on how to keep it the "right" way.

The well-accepted facts of history prove that Saturday is not really the Sabbath. From the beginning of recorded history, the world of human beings, both pagan and Hebrew, revolved around the four phases of the Moon. Lunar Sabbath researcher John Keyser in his paper, "From Sabbath to Saturday," provides extensive scholarly documentation of this fact. The knowledge base he has established represents a huge threat to Adventism. It invalidates the Adventist belief system without even addressing the question of whether or not Christians should keep the Sabbath. Ellen White's status as a prophet is demolished since she taught everyone to keep the Sabbath the wrong way. Her theory that the pope changed the Sabbath is rendered meaningless, if for no other reason, because the True Bible Sabbath has NEVER been Saturday.

Those of us who have managed to study our way out of Adventism often contemplate the awesomeness of the Seventh-day Adventist belief model. We find ourselves asking the question, "How could any human being, or any group of human beings, design a set of such seemingly interlocking components that seem to self-validate each other at every turn, rendering the appearance of a religious system that looks like it is impervious to attack. We observe that it seems to take years to complete the necessary biblical and historical studies to topple the pseudo foundations that appear to support it. Our research proves, however, that this belief system can only survive in a population of followers where access to challenging information is unavailable or extremely hard to obtain.

Again, our research proves to the point of over-kill is that Ellen White was a pathological liar. By no later than 1990, a key Adventist authority conceded that she had systematically lied about the source for her information for the book, *The Desire of Ages*. After evaluating her extensive literary "borrowing" against her frequent statements that she received the information directly from God, he said that there is no satisfactory explanation for it. The Chicago Buildings vision fiasco, which took place around the turn of the century, paints the shocking picture of Ellen White as a pathological liar who was willing to cover up one giant lie with as many lies as necessary to wiggle out of the fact that God had apparently given her incorrect information about a certain SDA physician by the name of Dr. Harvey Kellogg. You will see as you work through this book that the most remarkable characteristic of Ellen White was her habit of verbalizing things that she knew were not true. Even a highly placed Church official conceded that had she lied about her sources for the *Desire of Ages*, but keep in mind that the evidence proves that she lied about her sources from the beginning of her career. Spiritualist mediums can lie because they are not tied to a belief system of absolute values. The spirits that mediums work with lie to them, and the mediums have no expectations that these spirits will always tell them the truth. You can read all about the Chicago Buildings Vision fiasco our my book, *The Chicago Buildings Vision Fiasco*. We have documented this pattern of Ellen White's equivocation to the point of over-kill, but we do not expect you to believe it until you have thoroughly reviewed our research and analysis.

We said earlier that the Adventist belief system is so marvelously constructed that we do not see how any human being or any group of human beings could have devised it. Larry Dean, a retired defense attorney and former Adventist, posed an interesting theory. He notes that Ellen White wrote about the fact that she had an “angel” guide who attended her daily for over 26 years. She credits this angel guide with helping her discern between truth and error in her selection of doctrines. The blame for her collection of heretical doctrines, then, seems to fall squarely on the shoulders of her angel. Keep in mind that errant doctrines are labeled heresies because they tend to impinge of the glory, righteousness, and fairness of God.

It is interesting to see what doctrines her angel led her to select for her Church. The Sabbath doctrine has been rejected by the early fathers, including the last of the early fathers, The Venerable Bede, who died around 700 CE. He used Hebrew linguistics to prove that there was no Sabbath until the time of the Exodus. By no later than 1982 there was no question that Sabbatarianism hopelessly wrong. She selected the doctrine of soul sleep, which Catholic, Protestant, and Orthodox scholars have labeled a heresy virtually since the beginning of the faith. She selected the doctrine of annihilation, which has been considered by most Christian theologians to be heretical because it compromises the issue of God's fairness in regard to freedom of choice.

Perhaps her most unfortunate selections are doctrines based on the Arian heresy that Jesus is not fully God. She taught that Jesus was not God Almighty, that He was inferior to the other members of the Godhead, and that he could have sinned and lost His eternal life when He came down from Heaven to “try” to save us. How crazy is this idea? As God, Jesus knew everything. Even if Ellen White were to be correct — as she is not — Jesus would have known whether or not He would be “successful.” Do you think under this errant scenario that Jesus would have left Heaven for us if He had known in advance that He would fail? If so, wouldn't this foreknowledge have given Him an unfair advantage over us? All this stuff is nonsense that borders so close to blasphemy that we feel guilty about even formulating these thoughts in our minds. How dare Ellen White write about these things? Where did she get this information? None of this stuff is in the Bible! Either she made it up in her imagination, or she was led to believe it by her angel guide. If so, may God forgive her because she knew not what she did. If she got it from Hell — from the entity that would most likely want us to think that Jesus was merely Lucifer's more powerful “brother” — may she have repented before her life on Earth was over. I pray that she did.

It is difficult to contemplate a true prophet of God who is a pathological liar. It is not so difficult when it comes to the occult. To our amazement, an exhaustive analysis of Ellen White's writings by an expert in New Age and occult issues found that she utilized occult symbolism and references frequently in her writings, the single most notable example being her remarks about the constellation of Orion. The most astonishing comparative study, however, is one that identified the fact that Ellen White extensively utilized New Age terminology and imagery in her writings — astonishing because there were no New Age writers at the time from whom to borrow! The New Age was in its very infancy at the time. With no other sources seemingly at her disposal, it is not unreasonable to suggest that this information came from her attending angel — the one who attended her daily and helped her choose her words if she could not find exactly the right word to use — and who was her daily “companion” for over 26 years.

ELLEN WHITE'S ARIAN AND MORMON INFLUENCES AND PERFECTIONISM

Larry Dean's legal work took him inside many prisons. He says that the Adventist population within our prison system is greatly disproportional to the country's population when this population is sorted by a declaration of religious affiliation. At this point he is involved in formal research to better support his anecdotal “research,” but he points out that the broad generalizations he has developed through informal observation would be difficult to challenge. He says that the rehabilitation rate for prisoners who identify their denominational affiliation as “Seventh-day Adventist” almost certainly is the lowest of any other identifiable population, and that their rehabilitation rate is nearly zero. At the same time Dean has had 20 years of experience in Alcohol Anonymous as a mentor. Again, he reports that the population of program participants who identify themselves by denominational affiliation as “Seventh-day Adventist” is disproportionately large compared to the general population. And, just like with prison populations, Dean observes that former SDA participants have the lowest success rate of any group, and that their rehabilitation rate is even far below that of participants who identify their religious affiliation as “atheist!”

Dean has had about a year to contemplate the meaning of all this anecdotal “research,” because he has only been a Christian for the last year. (This part of the book is being written in March of 2015 and revised September of 2016.) After puzzling about what all of this could mean, his theory goes something like this. Ellen White's earlier, but still influential view teaching that Jesus was somehow not fully God is what made it possible for her to think that it was actually possible for Jesus to come to Earth and be 100% human while still hanging onto a certain amount of divinity. As fully human, then, it was within the realm of possibility that He could have lost His eternal life by into temptation. But, as 100% human, the fact that He never sinned is followed by the corollary that with our own efforts plus God's help, we can overcome sin and live an essentially sinless life just like Jesus did. In her writings, she implies that salvation will not be granted unless the believer achieves this perfection or is moving at a reasonable speed toward it by the time he or she dies. Unfortunately, no Adventist seems to know exactly the minimum permissible speed toward perfection that is acceptable to God. Former Adventists who have gotten into prison are hopeless because the errant theological concepts of Ellen White and burned into their brains. They gradually reach the understanding that their own efforts plus God's help will never get them anywhere near perfection. While it may not actually be the case, the picture that one often receives from the teachings of Ellen White is that the sinner must clean himself up before coming to Christ. They know that they are so dirty that they dare not approach God for the possibility of forgiveness. Since salvation is so incredibly hard and almost no one can be saved, they conclude that it would have been better had they never been born.

Kerry Wynne observes that in essence, Larry Dean has just explained one key reason why Adventism is a CULT. At the very core of its belief system is the Arian heresy that Christ is inferior to God the Father and the Holy Spirit. Adventism is, and will always be, fundamentally, “another gospel.” If, as Ellen White strongly implies, Jesus was created in the very beginning by God the Father but never-the-less created to have life within Himself, He is not fully God. This concept places both Lucifer and Jesus in a position of neither one being fully God, but with Jesus maintaining a significant advantage as a result of God “creating” Him to have life within Himself. Right now your jaw should be almost ready to drop. Recall that we have proof that Ellen White utilized literary “borrowing” of Joseph Smith's writings to incorporate his ideas into her own writings. The Mormon faith teaches that Jesus and Lucifer were two of several brothers who were raised by the god of all gods on the planet in the Universe where He lived with his wife-god. They got in a disagreement, and there was strife between them. Thus, in a very real way, Ellen copied the concept of the Mormon Dualism between Christ and Lucifer and incorporated strong elements of it into Adventism, but with her own twist.

Kerry Wynne reports that once he was discussing Ellen White's teaching that Jesus was fully human and partly God and that He could have sinned and lost His eternal life, with an Adventist friend. His Adventist friend commented that if Jesus had come to Earth without the possibility of sinning, His sacrifice would not mean nearly as much to him. It would not have been a real victory. Wynne reports that as he contemplated this situation, his reaction, which he kept to himself, was that knowing that the Great Sacrifice was made by a Being who is FULLY GOD and is FULLY EQUAL to the Holy Spirit and the Father, and Who was never created— is a far greater demonstration of the matchless love of God. God didn't just send His “Son” to do all the dirty work for Him. God came Himself, took off His gloves, and did the “dirty work” for us that was necessary to permit the penalty of the Law to fall on Himself.

Kerry Wynne adds that it doesn't take very many decades of living as an Adventist Christian to realize that you, as a human being, can NEVER achieve perfection in this life even with your best efforts and the help of God. The Gospel teaches that Christ is primarily our SACRIFICE. It does not deny the fact that Jesus is the Example we should emulate, but theologically He is NOT our Example if we are discussing the process of how salvation happens. It has been my privilege to get to know a number of individuals who are truly men and women of God, but the better you get to know them, the more faults they seem to have. Amazingly, these men and women of God seem at times to be absolutely blind to these faults.

One way to evaluate the likelihood of the truth of an idea is by applying logic to the furthest possible length. The Bible teaches that Jesus was tempted in all points like we are. But what is one's definition of temptation? Satan asked Jesus to do three bad things. Jesus didn't do any of those bad things. How could Jesus have been tempted (in the sense that we think of) to bow down to Satan to acquire control over the world when Jesus knew that with one word He could blot Satan completely out of existence? Perhaps there is no suitable word in English that a translator could use to convey the Bible writer's intended meaning. Jesus was tempted because the Bible says He was. It is more logical to think that the real temptation for Jesus would be to annihilate Satan on the spot. Zap, and he is gone forever! Perhaps another illustration might help. All four of us authors are “sanctified” in regard to any desire to smoke cigarettes. Only in a sense of the word

could someone “tempt” us to smoke. The cigarette can be offered, but there is no desire on our part to smoke it.

Ellen White's Mormonization of Adventism turned it into a pagan version of Christianity that bore a remarkable resemblance to the heresy of Dualism. Interestingly, it was the Jewish branch of Christianity — specifically the branch that clung to Jewish Sabbath-keeping— that fell into the heresies of Dualism and Arianism. (Investigate the topics of Ebionism and Gnosticism with a good search engine for more information on this subject.) It is her Arian view of Christ that prevents Seventh-day Adventists from being true Trinitarians. Just believing that there are three members of the Godhead does not make one a Trinitarian. If One of the Three is inferior to the others — perhaps even “created” by One of Them, you do not have a real Trinity. You have two plus one-half equals two and a half. You might even have a triunity.

Ellen White seems to have accepted the fact that Christ was absolutely and fully God Almighty as early as the 1890's, although her various statements on the subject continued to send conflicting messages in this regard. Earlier we shared with you her profound statement of the eternal existence of Christ in her book, *The Desire of Ages*. Trinitarians believe that all three members of the Godhead are equal, since the Bible specifically states that Jesus is the Lord God Almighty. When Jesus is referred to as “God's Son,” Trinitarians recognize that God chose to communicate the difficult aspect of Their Nature in a way that human beings could comprehend.

Here is a list of the heresies Ellen White brought into Adventism with the help and guidance of her attending angel:

JUDAIZING – Including Sabbath-keeping and the focus on keeping Old Covenant laws. The view that Christianity is merely Judaism with the event of Christ's First Advent tacked on the end.

EBIONISM - Sabbath-keeping, Jewish law keeping, vegetarianism, and denial of Christ's divinity. The Ebionites grew out of the Jewish faction of the early Christian believers. (Note that almost all of the early Christian-related heresies came out of Jewish, rather than Gentile, churches.)

SOUL SLEEP – This doctrine, absolutely essential to the Adventist doctrine of the Investigative Judgment, was denounced as heresy at the Fifth Ecumenical Council in 1514. We observe that this heresy impinges on God's fairness in key ways. If people are unconscious in death (soul sleep), they are being deprived of the joy of existence for each day up until the Resurrection. People who die early in the history of Planet Earth will have thousands of years less time to experience the joys of existence than people who die in the later years of Earth's history. Similarly, it would mean that someone who is cut down early in life has fewer days in eternity to enjoy the wonders of existence.

ANNIHILATION – If the wicked are not allowed to enjoy the consequences of their choices for eternity, there is no REAL freedom of choice in the Universe. It is like God saying, “I give you the freedom to choose, but if you do not choose to love Me, I will blot you out of existence.” We know two key things about God's character. He is loving, and He values freedom of choice above almost everything else in the Universe. Jesus told the Story of the Rich Man and Lazarus. This story is not a parable as Adventists would like us to believe. The lost live for ever but under conditions of their own making. Also, as some notable theologians have suggested, the doctrine of annihilation has encouraged many a sinner to persist in doing evil because the future consequences of their present evil-doing do not appear to be that painful. The wicked burn only for hours or minutes— just long enough to pay for their sins— and then they just fall asleep forever. While you can proof-text support for either side in this debate, it would appear that the only interpretation of Scripture that honors God's character is the view that Hell provides for eternal, continued existence. Perhaps this is why the vast majority of Christians have held this view and considered any other view heresy. Such an interpretation even raises the possibility that after spending a while in Hell, a lost sinner might approach God and say something like, “You know, I really appreciate your fairness in letting me continue to exist, but I have reached the decision of my own free will that I would like you to make me as if I never existed. I can't take this Hell any longer, even though I once thought that any kind of existence would be better than not existing at all.”

ADOPTIONALISM – Christians believe that Jesus was 100% God while living among us in human form. There is no possibility that He could have sinned. Orthodox Christian belief down through the ages has insisted that Jesus was 100% God when he appeared in human form. Just like the angels who appeared to

Abraham “under the tree” did not give up their angelic nature when they APPEARED in human form, SO JESUS DID NOT CEASE BEING GOD WHEN HE APPEARED IN HUMAN FORM! By contrast, Ellen White's teaching that Jesus, in addition to being God's “Son,” had a real human nature that made Him capable of sin. This heresy wreaks havoc with orthodox Christian theology. As Larry Dean points out, this heresy makes Jesus our EXAMPLE, rather than our SACRIFICE. If Jesus remained free from sin, we can become sin-free also, because He is our **Example**, and God would not require of us any less high a standard than that of the perfection of Christ. This heresy is one of the contributing factors of the Adventist emphasis on perfectionism and is in direct conflict with the Gospel of Jesus as articulated by St. Paul and other New Testament writers. The closer a Christian walks with God, the greater understanding he or she has of the evils that lurk within the heart. At the worst is borders on blasphemy – words that should never come out of a human being's mouth – the insinuation that Jesus essentially gave up being God when He came to Earth. Ellen White said, in *Bible Readings for the Home Circle* (p. 115, 1915 edition):— **In His humanity Christ partook of our sinful, fallen nature. If not, then He was not "made like unto His brethren," was not "in all points tempted like as we are," did not overcome as we have to overcome, and is not, therefore, the complete and perfect Saviour man needs and must have to be saved.** It is not possible to be God and at the same time partake of human sinful nature. This statement is a white lie, and sounds to us like a White blasphemy.

COMMANDMENTISM – Paradoxically, the teaching that the The Commandments equal the Law of God approaches blasphemy for a few reasons. Jesus minimized their keeping for achieving salvation (Story of the Rich Young Ruler), repeated two commandments that were far greater, and broke the Sabbath. (Yes, as you may recall, the Gospel writers did actually state that Jesus really DID break the Sabbath.) By stating that the Ten Commandments are to be equated with God's Law, they unwittingly accuse Jesus of being a sinner.

As we mentioned earlier, Sabbatarians are motivated to validate the 10 Commandments by the desire to enforce Sabbath-keeping on Christians. The 10 Commandments leave out a myriad of sins of omissions and motive. Even God recognized this fact because He went on to give Moses a total of 613 additional rules and regulations, some of which were clearly moralistic laws. Examples of these additional laws covered the commission sins of homosexual relationships, heterosexual relationships between two unmarried persons (fornication versus adultery), and sexual relations with animals. Spiritual pride and sins of omission and motive were never so clearly articulated in Scripture as when Jesus gave us His parables and the Sermon on the Mount. Robert K. Sanders points out that St. Paul provided three lists of sins, including one list of 23, that added, among other things, sins of omission and motive. The heresy that the 10 Commandment equates to the Law of God represents an inadvertent insult to the REAL Laws of God. One more example. Polygamy is not forbidden anywhere in the Bible, but the enormity of this sin is easily recognized when you apply Jesus' commandment to love others as you love yourself. No man in his right mind would want to trade places with a woman who had to share one husband with several other women.

THE DENIAL OF THE EFFICACY OF CHRIST'S ATONEMENT – Ellen White taught that our salvation was not actually secured by Christ's death on the Cross until Jesus entered the Most Holy Place in the Heavenly Sanctuary in 1844. The absurdities of this amazing claim aside, if it were true it would mean that until October of 1844, all the believers who died before that date went to their graves not knowing for certain that Jesus' sacrifice for them would be sufficient. This heresy takes away from the awesomeness of God by suggesting that He is tied to space and time in ways that have the potential to derail the escape plan for the human race. On top of that, it would seem that any time someone teaches something that is exactly the opposite of what Jesus said is teaching a false doctrine. When Jesus died on the Cross, he said, “It is FINISHED.” Quoting *The Great Controversy*, Ellen said this: **“The ministration of the priests throughout the year in the first apartment of the sanctuary (Which sanctuary Mrs. White places in heaven and not on earth!-Ed.) . . . represents the work of ministration upon which Christ entered at His ascension.... For eighteen centuries this work of ministration continued in the first apartment of the sanctuary. The blood of Christ, pleaded in behalf of penitent believers, secured their pardon and acceptance with the Father, yet their sins still remained upon the books of record.”** How can a sinner's sins still be on the books for more than a thousand years after he or she dies, yet he or

she is actually forgiven during this wait time?

THE DOCTRINE OF THE INVESTIGATIVE JUDGMENT – This interesting heresy had no precedence in church history. It was a first-time heresy created exclusively by Ellen White, and probably after a major brainstorming session in the pit of Hell. Jesus said that the saved bypass the judgment and go straight to Him (John, Chapter 5). Ellen White said that the Judgment of the dead was completed in 1844; that the judgment of the living is currently on-going, and that once it gets to your name, your fate is determined at that moment. Subsequent repentance is not possible, even if you continue to live.

SATAN, NOT JESUS, BEARS OUR SINS – Distancing herself from Christianity, which teaches that Jesus bears all of our sins, Ellen White teaches that in the end, our sins are transferred to Satan, and then Satan bears the price of our sins by suffering long enough to pay for all of those sins and then being blotted out of existence. She said in *The Great Controversy*, “It was seen also that while the sin-offering pointed to Christ as a sacrifice, and the high priest represented Christ as Mediator, the scapegoat typified Satan, the author of sin, upon whom the sins of the truly penitent will finally be placed. When the high priest by virtue of the blood of the sin-offering removed the sins from the sanctuary, he placed them upon the scapegoat. When Christ, by virtue of His own blood, removes the sins of His people from the heavenly sanctuary at the close of His ministration, He will place them upon Satan, who in the execution of the judgment must bear the final penalty. The scapegoat was sent into a land not inhabited, never to come again into the Congregation of Israel. So will SATAN be forever banished from the presence of God and His people and he will be blotted from existence in the final destruction of sin and the sinner.” So it is Satan who dies for our sins, and it is Satan who suffers for our sins? We believe Ellen White has the wrong hero.

THE MORMONIZATION OF JESUS – We discussed this earlier. Jesus is not God Almighty. He and Lucifer are almost like brothers. Lucifer was jealous of his “brother,” Jesus, and the players in the battle for the allegiance of the human race looks suspiciously with the Gnostic heresy of Dualism.

THE EVIDENCE: WHERE DID ELLEN WHITE'S VISIONS COME FROM?

So, what are we to do with Ellen White's claim that Christians must keep the Jewish Sabbath? The question may, in part, depend on just where her visions came from. She spoke of her Sabbath vision, which is now referred to as her “Halo Vision,” in a letter to Joseph Bates April 7, 1847:

“In the holiest I saw an ark; on the top and sides of it was purest gold. On each end of the ark was a lovely cherub, with its wings spread out over it. Their faces were turned toward each other, and they looked downward. Between the angels was a golden censer. Above the ark, where the angels stood, was an exceeding bright glory, that appeared like a throne where God dwelt. Jesus stood by the ark, and as the saints’ prayers came up to Him, the incense in the censer would smoke, and He would offer up their prayers with the smoke of the incense to His Father. In the ark was the golden pot of manna, Aaron’s rod that budded, and the tables of stone which folded together like a book. Jesus opened them, and I saw the Ten Commandments written on them with the finger of God. On one table were four, and on the other six. The four on the first table shone brighter than the other six. But the fourth, the Sabbath commandment, shone above them all; for the Sabbath was set apart to be kept in honor of God’s holy name. The holy Sabbath looked glorious—a **halo** of glory was all around it. I saw that the Sabbath commandment was not nailed to the cross. If it was, the other nine commandments were; and we are at liberty to break them all, as well as to break the fourth. I saw that God had not changed the Sabbath, for He never changes. But the pope had changed it from the seventh to the first day of the week; for he was to change times and laws.” — *A Word to the Little Flock*, p. 18- *Spirit of Prophecy* Vol. 1, p. 349.

As Robert K. Sanders points out, there are definite problems with this so-called “vision.” Exodus 32:15-24 says the two

tablets were inscribed on both sides. What she “saw” contradicts the Bible's description of them. When Jesus was asked which commandment was the most important, He taught that it was the one that instructed Israel to love God supremely and their neighbors as themselves. Colossians 2:14-17 teaches that the Law was, indeed, nailed to the Cross. Note that Ellen G. White also said that the pope was the one responsible for changing the Sabbath. This claim is both historically impossible and conceptually irrelevant since the original Bible Sabbath was almost certainly a LUNAR Sabbath that wandered through the days of any fixed week calendar scheme. With these problems as starters, it is remarkable that Adventism escaped any significant challenge to its Sabbath doctrine until the 1980's — with the single exception of the largely ineffective efforts of D. M. Canright, who apostatized in 1887.

THE EVIDENCE FOR THE SUPERNATURAL ELEMENT IN THE VISIONS

A critical review of the 7th Edition of *Lying for God* chastised us for continuing to label Ellen White a false prophet after conceding that a wide range of both her supporters and opposers acknowledged the supernatural nature of many of her visions. If God were the only source of supernatural phenomena, the reviewers' objections would be valid. However, this argument ignores the fact that Satan can also produce supernatural phenomenon. Here are the possibilities for your consideration:

While she may have created in her own mind the things she attributed to visions—and she probably did—the evidence is that many of her visions had an undeniable supernatural element.

Since many of her visions were conceded by her contemporary supporters and critics alike, we must conclude that her visions came from the Dark Side because so many of the prophecies she obtained in this way turned out to be false and/or taught ideas that contradicted the Gospel teachings of the Bible. She claimed that she got a lot of her information from her “angel” guide who had presented himself to her in the guise of a young man for over 26 years. An eye-witness account of the phenomenon of table-tipping at one of her public visions is about all the evidence anyone would need to conclude that her visions were from Satan. **At the time, table-tipping was synonymous with Spiritualism.** (There will be more about the table-tipping later.) A later chapter will amplify her occult connections.

If Ellen White hadn't had public visions that were accompanied by supernatural phenomena, and if she hadn't had a so-called angel guide, we could dismiss her errors and seeming blasphemies as the result of either poor Bible study methods or an over-stimulated visual cortex caused by her childhood head injury. But Ellen White claimed that her angel companion showed her that the Sabbath commandment was the most important one of all and that Christians would be keeping it in Heaven. (Recall that she documented this claim in her “Halo Vision”, which is recorded in her early publication, *A Word to the Little Flock*.) At the same time her “angel” guide sometimes gave her information that only a supernatural being could have known, such as knowledge of the secret sins of Church members, while at the same time feeding her information and predictions that turned out to be highly inaccurate. In fact, her “angel” companion exhibited all the characteristics of a spirit guide who enjoyed playing her for a fool.

The biblical standard for a prophet is 100% accuracy. The standard for Spiritualist mediums is considerably lower. Mediums have to be right a great deal of the time to be considered a gifted Spiritualist. How many times has a medium been able to help the police find a missing body under humanly impossible circumstances only to have his or her next prediction turn out to be a ruse?

A substantial body of evidence demonstrates that Ellen White met all the standards of a Spiritualist medium. At the same time she failed six of the seven tests of a biblical prophet. Recall that we have also discovered that what Ellen White taught about the process of salvation, known to theologians as *Progressive Sanctification*, is remarkably like what Spiritualists teach about the progression of the reincarnated soul to higher levels. Both are based on human effort, only the players are different. With Ellen White's “Christian” version of salvation by *Progressive Sanctification*, the players are God, angels, and humans. In the Spiritualist version, the players are Satan, fallen spirits, and humans.

A string of prophetic blunders, such as her prediction that England would come over and fight with the South against the North, combined with the prominent supernatural features of her public visions, appear to have influenced several of her

prominent followers to leave the Christian faith and join the ranks of the Spiritualists. In fact there is good reason to believe that during the decades that she was having public visions that featured paranormal activity, hundreds of her followers may have flocked to the ranks of the Spiritualists. Moses Hull may have been one of them, as we will explain shortly.

During these years of public visions she continued to reveal remarkable secret knowledge, such as the private sins of individuals, along with predictions that turned out to be impossibly wrong. (At the same time she used human detective work to find out about the secret sins of Church members and then pawned off this knowledge as something God “showed” her.) A well-known Adventist preacher, Moses Hull, was the most prominent Adventist leader to become a Spiritualist. In the camp of the Spiritualists He became so notorious for his wickedness that he was shunned even by the movement he joined. Ellen White predicted that God would catch up with him very soon and that he would come to an untimely death. Mocking her prophecy, he lived to a ripe old age and squeezed every possible ounce of sinful delight from his earthly life before he died.

In an uncanny comparison, a Battle Creek physician and former devoted follower of Ellen White, Dr. William S. Sadler, left Adventism after her bizarre Chicago Buildings Vision and started a Spiritualist “church,” the Urantia Movement, which he modeled after Adventism in two striking ways. The Urantians have a body of writings which they claim were imparted to them by spirits through a sleeping medium, very much like Ellen White’s voluminous writings that were largely imparted to her by a young-appearing male “angel” who gave thousands of pages of information to Ellen White through visions. Adventism has its White Estate, which controls the release of her writings to the public. Similarly, the Urantians have their Urantia Foundation which controls the release of these thousands of pages of spirit-dictated writings to the public. Additionally, the Urantians have a “Bible” developed from these writings, *The Urantia Book*, which begs to be compared with the new Adventist “bible,” the *Clear Word*, which mixes the spirit-dictated writings of Ellen White with the words of the Holy Bible together, confusing readers, at times, in regard to whether a Bible writer wrote it or whether it originated with Ellen White and here spirit guide.

MORE ON ELLEN WHITE AND FREEMASONRY

Amazingly, an obscene obelisk violates the virgin sky above the grave of James and Ellen White. This obelisk, which now forces its way skyward in a lewd gesture of phallic power above their graves, was erected during the lifetime of Ellen White after James’ untimely death. The obelisk is a key symbol in Freemasonry and numerous heathen religious systems that utilized sexual orgies to “worship” their deities. It was first used by Nimrod, who is symbolized by the constellation Orion. There is little possibility that the Whites didn’t know this. Both William Miller and Captain Joseph Bates had been deep into Freemasonry at least during the earlier years of their lives, and these men had a profound influence over Ellen. Her own husband, James White, was a Mason, and one of their sons became a Mason as well. As a result, she had an intimate knowledge of practices of Freemasonry. Later we will tell you the story about how she used this knowledge to fool a Church leader who was involved with Freemasonry into thinking that God showed her what happened in a high order meeting in the Masonic temple that he had recently attended.

She used New Age terminology in her writings, such as “vital force,” almost before there was an organized New Age movement. She quoted poets who used terminology such as “Mother Earth,” without a word of condemnation, and her spirit guide (angel guide?) showed her that God would speak through a special opening in the constellation of Orion and send the Holy City down from Heaven through it at the Second Coming. Again, we are faced with the occult connection, as Orion-Nimrod became the enemy of God and established the use of fertility rites in false systems of worship. It was Nimrod who first utilized the obelisk as a symbol of this rebellion. The connection between the obelisk and Orion is a firmly established link in occult tradition. We are also faced with the stark reality that since Ellen White had no significant body of New Age sources at the time from which to borrow, her New Age concepts must have come from the spirit guide.

Not only did Ellen White have an “angel” spirit guide, but she wrote about how her dead husband, James, appeared to her. They went for a carriage ride together after his death, and he gave her counsel for the future. While she presented this account of her contact with James as a vivid dream or vision, she put credence in what he told her, accepting the prophecy of her dead husband as valid. As a result of his counsel, she altered her plans for the future.

Freemasonry is based on Jewish mysticism and the subsequent cult of Gnosticism that grew out of it. The fact that Adventism was shaped by it explains much about the denomination’s emphasis on Sabbath-keeping and works-oriented law-keeping.

MORE ON ELLEN WHITE AND THE SUPERNATURAL

Once when we were going to the place of prayer, we were met by a slave girl who had a spirit by which she predicted the future. She earned a great deal of money for her owners by fortune-telling. This girl followed Paul and the rest of us, shouting, "These men are servants of the Most High God, who are telling you the way to be saved." She kept this up for many days. Finally Paul became so troubled that he turned around and said to the spirit, "In the name of Jesus Christ I command you to come out of her!" At that moment the spirit left her. When the owners of the slave girl realized that their hope of making money was gone, they seized Paul and Silas and dragged them into the marketplace to face the authorities.

(Acts 16:16-19, NIV from Bible Gateway.Com.)

Therefore, behold, I am against the prophets, saith the LORD, that steal my words every one from his neighbour. Behold, I am against the prophets, saith the LORD, that use their tongues, and say, He saith. Behold, I am against them that prophesy false dreams, saith the LORD, and do tell them, and cause my people to err by their lies, and by their lightness; yet I sent them not, nor commanded them: therefore they shall not profit this people at all, saith the LORD.

(Jeremiah 23:30-32 from the King James Version)

Why do Seventh-day Adventists in general have such a difficult time understanding the fact that just because someone claims to be righteous, holy, and honest is no guarantee that he or she speaks the truth. "By their fruits shall ye know them" is a good Bible standard. No one expects any Christian believer to be perfect. The standard is much higher for someone who claims to be a prophet of God. Not even Bible prophets were perfect. Elijah ran away from Jezebel and prayed that he would die instead of standing firm and trusting the Lord to help him. However, we have no Bible record of a prophet who exhibited a pattern of pathological lying for his entire life-time.

On December 13, 1892, Ellen White met with a recent Australian convert to Adventism, **N. D. Faulkhead**, with the purpose of persuading him to give up his involvement in Freemasonry and to devote himself full-time to the Advent work. In a 50-page letter she read to him an account of what he had experienced in the last meeting he had attended at the Masonic Lodge. The story is lauded in the SDA book, *Believe His Prophets*, Chapter 8, pp. 127-129.

In this meeting she told him where he sat, the kind of seat he sat on, the position that he occupied in the lodge, and the attitude that he manifested in transacting its business. Then she made a secret Masonic sign with her hand, and then she said, "The angel gave me this message for you, but I cannot relate all that was given to me." Faulkland, stunned by the detail and accuracy of the information, said, "Why, Sister White! Do you know what you have done? You have given the secret sign that is known only to Masons." Then she added that in the meeting someone had addressed him as "Worshipful Master." The account of this incident states that she made another secret sign with her hand, and Faulkhead "turned deathly pale," responding that she had given him the sign of a Knight Templar. Later Ellen White would claim that her attending "angel" had revealed to her the sign of a Knight Templar (*Ellen G. White*, Volume 4, "The Australian Years 1891-1900," by Arthur White, p. 52 / N.D. Faulkhead, Oct. 5, 1908). As a result of this "divine" revelation of his wrong-doing, the story ended with his resignation from the Masons.

Unfortunately, an 1896 photo of the members of his Masonic Temple shows him in the picture. He was still a Freemason as of 1896. Beyond this, upon Faulhead's death in 1923, the Freemasons conducted his graveside ceremony (Milton R. Hook, *Letters to Aussie Colonials: Case Studies from the E.G. White Letters*, pp. 2,3).

As the researchers at JesusIsFreedom.Net observe,

"Ellen White spent virtually all of her ministry surrounded by Masons who assisted her to continue 'the dark agenda' of corrupting the Gospel with its Gnostic law-keeping." They further observe, "It is embarrassing to know that while Mrs. White was supposedly presenting herself as a prophet to lead congregations, she was also participating with secret societies in the unfruitful deeds of darkness." Then they quote Galatians 3:10-14, "All who rely on observing the law is under a curse, for it is written: "Cursed is everyone who does not continue to do everything

written in the Book of the Law.”

The evidence that Ellen White and her family were steeped in Freemasonry is abundant and embarrassing. Once one knows what to look for, the secret hand signs of Masonry are easy to spot. **These hand positions are not natural, and you do not see ordinary people pose for photographs with their hands in Masonic-like positions.** Consider this evidence:

A photograph of the Adventists who attended the camp meeting at Hornellsville, NY shows James White standing behind Ellen showing one of the Masonic hand positions.

In an undated photo which included Edson and Ellen White, Edson is displaying the “Sign of the Master of the Second Veil.”

1873 (Circa?): In an undated photo of Ellen White, she displays the hand position of the “Sign of the Fellow Craft.”

1874: Ellen and James White conceived and commissioned a lithograph entitled, “The Way of Life.” On a large tree positioned to the R hand side of Christ hanging on a cross (L side of lithograph), there is the Masonic, All-Seeing Eye placed where the trunk of the tree turns in to its branches. This lithograph is located at Loma Linda University.

A White Estate photo of SDA Elder William C. Gage, a manager at the Review and Herald Publishing Company, shows Elder Gage displaying the Masonic hand position of The Sign of the Master of the Second Veil. (This photo was likely taken around the turn of the century.)

A photo of Nathaniel C. McClure, who was twice president of the California Conference (1890-1891 and 1894-1896), shows him displaying The Sign of the Master of the Second Veil.

In a photo of Ellen White posing with a group of over 20 leadership ministers at the Reno, Nevada Camp Meeting, SDA leaders Arthur Hickox, N. C. McClure, John Norton Loughborough, and two Masons known as L. A. Scott and “Derrick” display the Masonic Master of the Second Veil” hidden hand sign. This hand sign is displayed by members of the Satanic Fraternal Cult of Freemasonry.

DOCUMENTATION: THE OCCULT AND MASONIC IMPRINT ON ELLEN WHITE'S WRITINGS

Ellen White used extensive Masonic imagery in her writings, the most notable expression being the “all-seeing eye of God.” See the following for extensive documentation of this fact:

<http://www.jesusisfreedom.net/seventh-day-adventists-symbols.html>

Her connection with occult influences came when she claimed that God showed her that the New Jerusalem would descend through a major opening in the constellation of Orion. The connection with the occult is unmistakable. Here is what the **Jesus Is Freedom.Net** Organization observes about its occult connection:

So, just who is the "god" of Ellen G. White and her faithful Seventh-Day Adventist (SDA) followers? That's the question, and the answer can be found on page 41 of Ellen G. White's *Early Writings*.

See: (<http://www.gilead.net/egw/books2/earlywritings/ewindex.html>):

"Dark, heavy clouds came up and clashed against each other. The atmosphere parted and rolled back; then we could look up through the open space in Orion, whence came the voice of God. The Holy City will come down through that open space."

What you have just read is an excerpt from Ellen G. White's, “Shaking Of The Powers Of Heaven,” and it's through this same "prophetic utterance" that we can come to grips with what Ellen G. White "believed in" and what her SDA Church is being taught through her teachings.

Ellen G. White proclaimed that God would both "speak" through and "bring down the Holy City" through the "open space in Orion". However, the following three Scriptures are the only mention

of the constellation "Orion" in the entire Holy Bible:

"Which maketh Arcturus, Orion, and Pleiades, and the chambers of the south."
(Job 9:9 KJV)

"Canst thou bind the sweet influences of Pleiades, or loose the bands of Orion? "
(Job 38:31 KJV)

"Seek him that maketh the seven stars and Orion, and turneth the shadow of death into the morning, and maketh the day dark with night: that calleth for the waters of the sea, and poureth them out upon the face of the earth: The LORD is his name: " (Amos 5:8 KJV)

So, what does it all mean? Just what is the true spirit behind this constellation called Orion?

Orion — Hebrew, “the fool”; in Job 38:31 he appears fettered with “bands.” The old legend represented this star as a hero, who presumptuously rebelled against God, and was therefore a fool, and was chained in the sky as a punishment; for its rising is at the stormy period of the year. He is Nimrod (the exceedingly impious rebel) among the Assyrians; Orion among the Greeks. Sabaism (worship of the heavenly hosts) and hero-worship were blended in his person. He first subverted the patriarchal order of society by substituting a chieftainship based on conquest (Gen.10:9, Gen.10:10). (Jamieson, *Fausset And Brown Commentary*)

Now with that in mind, it shouldn't be too hard to figure out that the spirit of Nimrod/Orion is about as evil as they get. You might even call him the forerunner of the Antichrist!

See the article, “Ellen G. White, Seventh-Day Adventist, and The Antichrist” at

<http://www.fmh-child.org/SDA.html>

Ellen White also used New Age imagery and language at times in her writings—amusing in view of her allegation that Dr. Harvey Kellogg's book, *The Living Temple*, was full of Pantheism. She quoted Fannie Johnson, a New Age writer contemporary to her, in the March 1, 1871 and May 1, 1981 edition of the *Health Reformer*, referring to this Earth as “Mother Earth.” The credits for this research go to Gary and Lisa Ruby's website, *Liberty to the Captives*, in their article, "Seventh-day Adventism and the New Age Movement: New Age/Occult Marking on Ellen G. White's Writings— "Mother Earth," "Vital Force."

See <http://libertytothecaptives.net/default.htm>.

May has come, with all her beauties of the sunshine, clothing nature with a glorious dress. Mother earth has laid off her brown mantle, and wears her cheerful robes of green. The trees and shrubs upon the lawn are decorated with their opening buds and flowers of varied tints. The peach and cherry are covered with blossoms of pink and white, and the pure music from a thousand of nature's happy and cheering songsters, unite to awaken joy and thankfulness in our hearts. (*Health Reformer*, “The Beautiful May,” May 1, 1871, paragraph 1)

The trees, shrubs, and flowers, will soon be attractive to the eye, inviting all who delight in the beauties of nature to enjoy life out of doors. The flowers and green foliage have not appeared, but mother earth has thrown from her bosom her white mantle, and she even now bears a cheerful aspect in the bright sunshine and shadows. All should now seek employment some hours every day out of doors. (*Health Reformer*, March 1, 1871 par. 3)

Again, the source of this information is that of Gary and Lisa Ruby, quoted word for word what Ellen White quoted from the New Age writer, Fannie Johnson:

Ellen G. White chose Beltane (the highest holiday in Druid witchcraft) as the time to cite a lengthy passage by Fanny B. Johnson that contains New Age terminology and teaches New Age

doctrine:

Lovely May is here. Enjoy her, all you who can, while she is with us. Read what Fanny B. Johnson, in *Laws of Life*, says under the caption, {HR, "The Beautiful May" May 1, 1871 par. 4}

Mrs. White endorsed Fanny Johnson's highly New Age passage in which she urged Mother Nature's children to "come out of doors, and take part in the grand entertainment which she has gotten up with wondrous skill, taste, and power:"

IN BEHALF OF OUR GOOD MOTHER NATURE, I HEREBY INVITE AND ENTREAT ALL HER CHILDREN WITHIN SOUND OF MY VOICE OR SIGHT OF MY PENTRACES TO COME OUT OF DOORS, AND TAKE PART IN THE GRAND ENTERTAINMENT WHICH SHE HAS GOTTEN UP WITH WONDROUS SKILL, TASTE, AND POWER. {HR, May 1, 1871 par. 5} (Emphasis added)

Johnson presented Mother Nature (not the Lord Jesus Christ) as the way for poverty-stricken, burden-bearing human beings to escape from their condition:

MOTHER NATURE WILL TAKE YOU IN HER LAP, WILL WOO YOU WITH THE BREATH OF APPLE BLOSSOMS AND CLOVERS, WILL FAN YOUR CHEEK WITH PERFUME-LADEN AIRS, WILL SOOTHE YOU TO SLEEP WITH DROWSY HUM OF BEES, AND MURMUR OF STREAMS, AND RUSTLE OF MYRIAD FLUTTERING LEAVES, WILL WAKEN YOU WITH JOYOUS VOICES, WILL TAKE AWAY FROM YOUR SPIRITS THE PEEVISHNESS AND LITTLENES THAT IS SURE TO GATHER IN A NARROW ROUND OF CARE, AND PUT IN THEIR PLACE SOMETHING OF HER SPIRIT OF CHARITY, AND LARGENESS, AND HARMONY, AND BRING YOU INTO SYMPATHY WITH THE DIVINE.

THERE WAS NEVER BETTER CHANCE FOR POVERTY-STRICKEN, BURDEN-BEARING HUMAN BEINGS TO ESCAPE FROM THEIR CONDITION AND INDULGE IN LUXURIES FURNISHED WITHOUT MONEY AND WITHOUT PRICE. I PROMISE YOU NATURE WILL SHOW NO FAVORS ON ACCOUNT OF WORLDLY DISTINCTIONS. SHE WILL MINISTER NO MORE GRACIOUSLY TO THE QUEEN OF A REALM THAN TO HER HUMBLEST MENIAL, PROVIDED THAT MENIAL BE LOYAL TO HERSELF. BUT TO THOSE WHO LOOK UPON HER WITH "LOVERS' EYES" SHE MUST OF NECESSITY BE PARTIAL. SHE SHOWS THEM WONDROUS THINGS IN HER PAGES, AND REVEALS HERSELF TO THEM AS SHE CANNOT TO OTHERS. {Health Reformer, May 1, 1871 par. 6} (Emphasis added)

Ellen G. White did not disclaim any of Fanny Johnson's New Age teachings or warn her readers to refrain from being wooed by the devil in Mother Nature's garb. An ambassador of the Lord Jesus Christ would contradict Fanny Johnson and insist that Jesus Christ's invitation to the weary is the only one that is valid:

"Come unto me, all ye that labour and are heavy laden, and I will give you rest." (Matthew 11:28)

The Lord Jesus Christ offers the only legitimate spiritual rest but the devil seeks to ensnare the weary with a counterfeit rest via Ellen G. White's endorsement of Johnson's "Mother Nature," who is known to New Agers as Earth Mother, or Gaia.

Again, keep in mind that what you read above was researched by Gary and Lisa Ruby, citing Ellen White's entry in the

Health Reformer of 1871 in which Ellen White quoted secular author, Fannie Johnson, without bothering to call attention to her dangerous New Age-like, occult sentiments. Your authors are in agreement with Gary and Lisa Ruby. A true prophet of God would have condemned the blasphemous giving of the power of the True Creator-God to Mother Earth, or Gaia and New Agers call their planet-god now.

As the Ruby's point out, Ellen White also used occult terminology in her writings. Their study focuses on one particular term: "Vital Force." Quoting them, they observe:

Ellen G. White favored the occult term, "vital force." Vital Force is a foundational concept in New Age doctrine. Vital Force is another name for Chi which is commonly known in the West as life force, vital force, universal energy, subtle energy, etc.

Chi (also ki, qi or ji) - A "life force" pervading the universe that sustains the body & the material world.

These terms & concepts come from Eastern beliefs but are most prominently used in the martial arts and in alternative healing. Both ki & chi can be seen in the following terms: Aikido, Tai Chi, Reiki (energy healing). This force may also be known as the life force, vital force, the vital energy, bioenergy, universal life force, or universal energy. The belief in such a force is at the heart of occultism and is also found in New Age beliefs. New Agers believe that Vital Force (subtle energy) is a non-material force that sustains life:

Vital force (bioenergy, cosmic energy, cosmic energy force, cosmic force, cosmic life energy, cosmic life force, elan vital, energy of being, force of life, force vitale, inner vital energy, internal energy, life, life energy, life force, life force energy, life power, life source energy, nerve energy, nerve force, personal energy, spirit, subtle energy, universal energy, universal life energy, universal life energy power, universal life force, universal life force energy, universal life principle, vital cosmic force, vital element, vital energy, vital energy force, vitality, vital life force, vital life force energy, vitalistic principle, vitality energy, vital life spirit, vital magnetism, vital principle, vital spirit): An alleged nonmaterial "force" that sustains life. (2)

Subtle Energy, vital force, universal life force, etc. (demon spirits) can be manipulated and sent on assignment to perform lying wonders (2 Thess. 2:9) via various forms of witchcraft that are often disguised as alternative medical treatments—such as Reiki and acupuncture. Man cannot control or manipulate God (or healings from God)—ever.

Man can manipulate demons (which disguise themselves under sophisticated and scientific-sounding terms) if he submits to the occult methodology necessary for their cooperation but the result of such sin (even if it is engaged in under the guise of New Age alternative medicine) is eternal destruction in the Lake of Fire.

Examples of Ellen G. White's use of the term, "vital force."

Please note that Mrs. White used the term, "vital force" in the same manner New Agers do today:

God has endowed us with a certain amount of vital force. He has also formed us with organs suited to maintain the various functions of life, and He designs that these organs shall work together in harmony. If we carefully preserve the life force, and keep the delicate mechanism of the body in order, the result is health; but if the vital force is too rapidly exhausted, the nervous system borrows power for present use from its resources of strength, and when one organ is injured, all are affected. [*The Ministry of Healing*, pg. 234] (Note: in this passage Ellen G. White teaches that God gives vital force.)

Food should not be eaten very hot or very cold. If food is cold, the vital force of

the stomach is drawn upon in order to warm it before digestion can take place. [*The Ministry of Healing*, pg. 305]

Sometimes the result of overeating is felt at once. In other cases there is no sensation of pain; but the digestive organs lose their vital force, and the foundation of physical strength is undermined. [*The Ministry of Healing*, pg. 306]

These unpleasant symptoms are felt because nature has accomplished her work at an unnecessary outlay of vital force and is thoroughly exhausted. The stomach is saying, "Give me rest." But with many the faintness is interpreted as a demand for more food; so instead of giving the stomach rest, another burden is placed upon it. As a consequence the digestive organs are often worn out when they should be capable of doing good work. [*The Ministry of Healing*, p. 307]

[Note: in the passage above, Ellen G. White attributed vital force to nature. Mrs. White's practice of citing God and nature as the source of vital energy is an example of Christian/New Age syncretism.]

Where wrong habits of diet have been indulged, there should be no delay in reform. When dyspepsia has resulted from abuse of the stomach, efforts should be made carefully to preserve the remaining strength of the vital forces by removing every overtaxing burden. [*The Ministry of Healing*, pg. 308]

In the following passage, Ellen G. White links Christian growth with vital force:

Let a living faith run like threads of gold through the performance of even the smallest duties. Then all the daily work will promote Christian growth. There will be a continual looking unto Jesus. Love for Him will give vital force to everything that is undertaken. [From *Christ's Object Lessons*, pp. 356-360]

Those who think that perhaps Mrs. White used these terms unknowingly and innocently taught New Age doctrine, please understand that New Age teachings were not widely known in the United States in the 1800s. Ellen G. White learned these doctrines from someone...and that someone was not God.

Ellen G. White's "Christ" bestowed vital force:

He was the originator of all the ancient gems of truth. Through the work of the enemy, these truths had been displaced. . . . Christ rescued them from the rubbish of error, gave them a new, vital force, and commanded them to shine as jewels, and stand fast forever. [Manuscript 25, 1890.]

[Note: The context of this quote has to do with Mrs. White's defense of her practice of claiming authorship of material she did not write but she did use the occasion to link Christ with vital force. I ask which "Christ" might that be? It is the New Age Christ who afflicts his followers with subtle energy.]

In the next passage Ellen G. White was correct to warn against the dangers of drugs, but that does not negate the fact that she was functioning as an early spokeswoman for the New Age Movement by her continual promotion of the idea that vital force keeps the body in good health. We see Christian/New Age syncretism at work again via Ellen G. White's attribution of vital energy to nature in some passages and to God in others:

People need to be taught that drugs do not cure disease. It is true that they sometimes afford present relief, and the patient appears to recover as the result of their use; this is because nature has sufficient vital force to expel the poison and to

correct the conditions that caused the disease. [*The Ministry of Healing*, pg. 126]

Here Mrs. White attributed vital force to God:

The Lord will put new, vital force into His work as human agencies obey the command to go forth and proclaim the truth. . . . The truth will be criticized, scorned, and derided; but the closer it is examined and tested, the brighter it will shine. . . . [*Selected Messages*, book 1, p. 201]

God endowed man with so great vital force that he has withstood the accumulation of disease brought upon the race in consequence of perverted habits, and has continued for six thousand years. . . . [From *My Life Today*, page 126]

According to Mrs. White, vital force is highly desirable and parents should take care not to deny this force to future generations:

If the mother is deprived of the care and comforts she should have, if she is allowed to exhaust her strength through overwork or through anxiety and gloom, her children will be robbed of the vital force and of the mental elasticity and cheerful buoyancy they should inherit. [The Ministry of Healing, pg. 375]

Children who are robbed of that vitality which they should have inherited from their parents should have the utmost care. [*Vital Vigor and Energy*, 204]

Rather than tell her followers not to overwork lest they become too tired and run down, Ellen G. White presented the New Age concept that overexertion depletes vital force to the hurt of one's health:

Those who make great exertions to accomplish just so much work in a given time, and continue to labor when their judgment tells them they should rest, are never gainers. They are living on borrowed capital. They are expending the vital force which they will need at a future time. [From *My Life Today* - Page 142]

Mrs. White promoted the New Age teaching that drugs destroy vital force:

Break Down Vital Forces.—Drugs always have a tendency to break down and destroy vital forces. —[*Medical Ministry*, p. 223 (General Manuscript entitled "Sanitarium," 1887).]

According to Mrs. White, frequent child-bearing depletes women of vital energies. This of course conflicts with God's command to multiply and be fruitful and 1 Timothy 2:15: "...she shall be saved in childbearing..."

Everywhere you may look you will see pale, sickly, care-worn, broken-down, dispirited, discouraged women. They are generally overworked, and their vital energies exhausted by frequent child-bearing. [*Vital Vigor and Energy*, 203]

While it is a fact that frequent child-bearing can be physically exhausting, giving birth has nothing do with losing a non-material "force" that sustains life.

Mrs. White taught that snacking causes the unnatural stimulation and wearing of the vital forces. The context suggests that an imbalance of the vital forces leads to sin:

Children are generally untaught in regard to the importance of when, how, and what they should eat. They are permitted to indulge their tastes freely, to eat at all hours, to help themselves to fruit when it tempts their eyes, and this, with the pie, cake, bread and butter, and sweetmeats eaten almost constantly, makes them gourmands and dyspeptics. The digestive organs, like a mill

which is continually kept running, become enfeebled, vital force is called from the brain to aid the stomach in its overwork, and thus the mental powers are weakened. The unnatural stimulation and wear of the vital forces make them nervous, impatient of restraint, self-willed, and irritable. . . . It is difficult to arouse them to a sense of the shame and grievous nature of sin. [*Selected Messages*, book 1, p. 201.]

The God of the Bible is NOT the god of Vital Force.

Ellen G. White, regardless of what she may have stated in her other writings, chose to repeatedly use the occult phrase, "vital force" to promote the pagan belief that "an alleged non-material force sustains life." The Bible clearly states that it is by the Lord Jesus Christ that all things consist:

For by him were all things created, that are in heaven, and that are in earth, visible and invisible, whether they be thrones, or dominions, or principalities, or powers: all things were created by him, and for him: Colossians 1:16

And he is before all things, and by him all things consist. Colossians 1:17

It is in Jesus Christ that we live, move and have our being: For in him we live, and move and have our being; Acts 17:28

The Holy Bible refutes the New Age lie of vital force. It is by Jesus Christ himself, not a non-material force that all things consist. It is in Jesus Christ (not vital force) that Christians live and move and have their being. It is God, not Vital Force That Sustains Mankind.

This passage was cited earlier in the article; but in conclusion, please note that Ellen G. White taught her followers that vital force has enabled man to live on earth for six thousand years without becoming extinct:

God endowed man with so great vital force that he has withstood the accumulation of disease upon the race in consequence of perverted habits, and has continued for six thousand years. . . . If Adam, at his creation, had not been endowed with twenty times as much vital force as men now have, the race, with their present habits of living in violation of natural law, would have become extinct. [From *My Life Today*, page 126]

It is God himself, not a non-material "vital force" who has mercifully sustained mankind's existence upon the earth for all these years. Ellen G. White promoted the "vital force" doctrine of devils long before Eastern religious thought became prevalent in the United States and other parts of the western world.

For an additional, staggering collection of the documentation of the occult and New Age elements of Ellen White's writings, see the research brought forward in the article, "Ellen White Uses Masonic Words at this Internet address:

<https://archive.org/details/EllenG.WhiteUsesMasonicWords>

Please note, once again, that these researchers question where Ellen White acquired her New Age vocabulary, since the New Age was in its infancy. Where else would her New Age inspiration have come from but her spirit guide — the "angel" who appeared to her in the form of a young man and was her constant companion for many years. It is also worthy of note that Ellen White's view of salvation by *progressive sanctification* was not much different than that of New Age thinking. Both belief systems are based on the principle that Man can save himself through his own efforts. The players are simply different. With the false Christian version of *progressive sanctification* you have God, angels, and humans. With the New Age Reincarnation model, the players are spirit guides, an impersonal god who controls the reincarnation process and imparts a vital force to living things, and humans. While it is true that later in her career she mouthed acceptance of salvation by Righteousness by Faith, it seems like she still viewed Faith as something mustered up by human effort and

rewarded by God with salvation. The Christian view of salvation by contrast, differs from all other religions in the world. The faith that we have comes from God and our salvation is totally based, not on what we do for Jesus, but what He did for us.

Just like the owners of the fortune-telling slave girl used her to make money for themselves, so the early leaders of the Advent Movement used Ellen White's visions to assure income for themselves and the fledgling Church. In reviewing what these early leaders knew about her, it is difficult to come to any other conclusion. It appears that her visions were frequently accompanied by supernatural manifestations. These manifestations were taken as evidence that her visions were from God. The accounts of her amazing vision experiences spread far and wide among the Advent believers, and the belief that God was speaking directly to them through Ellen White scared the money right out of their hands into the Church's coffers.

There are three theories about the source of Ellen White's visions. **The first theory;** that her visions came from God, is impossible. Her prophetic track record is a disaster by biblical standards but easily meets the standard for a spirit medium. There are seven requirements for a true prophet. She meets only one out of seven of them.

The second theory; that her visions came from the Dark Side, is supported by a wealth of evidence that supernatural events, or at least the appearance of supernatural phenomena, attended her visions — especially her earlier ones.

The third theory; that her visions were the result of her childhood head injury, is supported by extensive clinical evidence and professional medical opinion.

The second and third theories are not very flattering. Even if her visions resulted from her head injury, this explanation creates more questions than it answers. Regardless of the source of her visions, she should have quickly recognized that the information she was either receiving or imagining was usually wrong, and she should have stopped telling people she was receiving the information from God. Instead, she chose to lie about things to maintain the appearance that the visions were from God.

Even during the pioneer days of Adventism there was an ever-growing body of evidence that the “angel” who controlled her in vision was a lying spirit. In looking back at our historical time-line, we see that as early as 1861 **J. N. Andrews**, who wrote a history of the Sabbath, knew that Christians “abandoned” Sabbath-keeping hundreds of years before there was a pope or a Roman Catholic Church. When Ellen White was “shown” that the Catholic Church “changed the day,” Andrews and other leaders had to have known that her “angel” guide lied to her about very important matters. It seems like Andrews and the other pioneers of the Advent Movement were overwhelmed by the manifestation of the supernatural to the point where they were blinded to the clearest evidence staring them in the face from their knowledge of the facts of history.

By the end of the Civil War, Adventist leaders knew the angel had lied to her about England coming over to fight with the South against the North. By 1866, Snook and Brinkerhoff of the Iowa Conference of Seventh-day Adventists had figured out that Ellen White was a fraud and had published a book documenting their evidence to the point of over-kill. Their book included a lengthy list of contradictions in her writings and statements that disagreed with the known facts of science. One example they mentioned was her claim that the bones of human beings who were several times larger than those of people living today had been found in the ground. Her statement was true in regard to animals, but not in regard to human fossils. Keep in mind that the Seventh-day Adventist Church had organized just three years earlier in 1863. Adventist leaders, again, seemed so overwhelmed with the supernatural powers that accompanied Ellen White's visions that they chose to hang onto her visions in the face of the mountain of evidence that she was a fraud as clearly outlined by the research of Snook and Brinkerhoff. You can read their book doing an Internet search.

Why didn't the Church repudiate her as a false prophet at that time? By then what Adventists refer to as “The Work” had grown rapidly to include a network of churches, institutions, and a bureaucracy to care for it and pay the salaries of its workers. Since Ellen White's visions gave power to each of the key beliefs of the Church via a “heavenly” endorsement by an “angel” from God, repudiation of Ellen White's prophetic ministry would have meant an end to the success of Adventism. This kind of event would have ended the salaries of Church employees, including those of the leaders at the top. The families of these “workers” might have gone hungry. Adventist leaders might have had to find some kind of honest work.

No one knew the power of the visions to generate money more-so for the “business” of the Church than her husband, James White, who was a very astute businessman. At the same time, no one else knew better than he did that her visions were fraudulent, with— perhaps— the exception of D. M. Canright, who worked closely with the Whites and other

top SDA leaders for nearly 30 years before he apostatized. A story related by Canright in his book, *Life of Mrs. E. G. White* — *Her Claims Refuted*, suggests that these early leaders had little faith in the genuineness of her visions:

Elder J. N. Andrews told me that he once sat by while Mrs. White read a mild testimony of reproof to her husband. He said, “Ellen, hand me that.” She obeyed, and he took it and threw it into the fire!

Andrews, as you may recall, authored two important early Adventist books on the Sabbath, and you may have noted that Canright made reference to two of Andrews’ books in his own writings.

Recall that back in 1983, Ron Graybill, who was then associate director of the White Estate, was fired when copies of his doctoral dissertation were stolen and distributed to key Adventist leaders all over the world without his knowledge or consent. His dissertation, completed at a non-Adventist university, included documentation which provided abundant evidence that Ellen White was a fraud. Perhaps for the first time in the history of Adventism, a number of its leaders had the proof of her fraudulence hit them smack in the face by one of their “own.” After spending over a dozen years with unlimited access to every word that Ellen White wrote, he reached the following conclusions:

1. She made fraudulent claims.
2. Her personal character was seriously flawed.
3. She appeared to have produced her so-called “visions” when necessary to defeat her opposition.

It would seem that Ron Graybill knew more about the stupid stuff Ellen White had written than anyone else alive at the time. A logical mind would conclude that no testimony against her could be more powerful than his. Reason would demand that Adventist leadership respond to this astonishing revelation of Ellen White’s deceptions by demanding that the Church immediately repudiate her and organize campaigns to burn her books in front of every Seventh-day Adventist Church in the world. Unfortunately, as Bill Hohmann points out in another chapter, religion should make sense, but often it doesn't.

At the moment these SDA leaders received irrefutable proof that she was a fraud, they became accountable to God to stand on the side of truth. However, the Church did not change direction.

The supernatural manifestations that accompanied those visions included remarkable feats of super-human strength, the cessation of breathing, and a gaze that could not be broken by even extraordinary distraction techniques. While a few of her critics dismiss all of this phenomenon as the result of a mental condition caused by the blow to the head she sustained as a young girl, most witnesses seemed convinced that the manifestations were supernatural. Researchers, including both her supporters and critics, have studied both her own accounts of her vision experiences and the testimony of her observers, both supporters and opposers, and have come away with the conviction that the best explanation for these happenings was that they were not likely to be of human origin.

It is a matter of public record that that Ellen White claimed to have an attending “angel” throughout her ministry. Looking back at the train wreck of her prophetic record from the perspective of today (2014), an unfortunate conclusion is unavoidable. Her angel lied to her on a regular basis. Here is a partial list of the lies she was “shown:”

- Several dates for the Second Coming of Christ between 1844 and 1851.
- That at least one person in an 1859 meeting would be alive when Jesus came.
- England would join the South to fight against the North.
- The Civil War was being fought to preserve slavery.
- Slavery would return to the United States at a later time.
- Moses Hull would die an unexpected death as retribution from God.
- Spiritualism would pervade the main-line churches before long.

- God fooled His people about the Sanctuary question to test them.
- The prophetic charts of William Miller were accurate and exactly how God wanted them to be.
- The development of the black race [implied] was the result of the genetic mixing of people and animals.
- Mountains were formed by high winds piling up debris after the flood. (in *Selected Messages*)
- The bones of human beings many times larger than human beings living today are found buried in the earth as a result of the flood. (In *Selected Messages*.)
- Sun worship influenced Christians to abandon the Sabbath.
- The Roman Catholic Church influenced Christians to abandon the Sabbath.
- Only the ceremonial parts of the law were nailed to the cross.
- The Fox Sisters did not use “human trickery” in regard to the “rappings.”
- That Jupiter had an incorrect number of moons.
- That the main-line Protestant Churches would fully adopt spiritualism and that to speak against the 'rappings' would be considered by them to be a sin.
- That Dr. J. H. Kellogg built buildings in Chicago with funds he diverted from the Battle Creek Sanitarium.
- That Dr. J. H. Kellogg was a Pantheist.

Logic is a science. By the rules of logic, there is no other possible conclusion other than this angel guide lied repeatedly to her. The Bible is very clear about the following facts:

Angels DO NOT impart false visions to true prophets of God.

Evil spirits DO give false information to spirit mediums.

As we mentioned, Ellen White’s critics have always speculated that Ellen White’s visions could have been caused by a serious head injury she sustained while a young girl. Along this line, **D. M. Canright** cites the opinion of several physicians who were contemporary to Ellen White and took this position, but our research concludes that the White Estate has effectively demonstrated that the medical credentials and characters of some of the “doctors” who stated that they believed her visions were the result of the head injury were not well-qualified. We hasten to add the fact that even if they did not have the best medical credentials, they probably enough common sense to see that something was wrong with her.

SDA physicians who have researched the accounts and opinions of her contemporary evaluators are divided in their opinions. One expert researcher, SDA Loma Linda Neurologist, **Dr. Donald I. Peterson, MD**, does not believe her head injury explained the phenomena of her visions. He published an article entitled “Visions and Seizures— Was Ellen White the Victim of Epilepsy?” (Copyright 1988, Pacific Press Publishing Association, Boise, Idaho) He makes a very good case for the probability that Ellen’s particular type of head injury is not the kind that would likely produce visual disturbances. He provides what seems like reliable eye-witness accounts of her public visions that suggest the phenomena observed were supernatural. Dr. Peterson’s paper was written to refute the conclusions of two articles to the contrary, one written by Pediatrician **Delbert H. Hodder, MD** in a 1981 issue of *Evangelica*, and one written by (then) retired dermatologist, **Dr. Molleurus Couperus**, in a 1985 issue *Adventist Currents*. Both papers attempted to demonstrate that Ellen White’s visions were primarily due to her temporal lobe epilepsy. However, both these writers seem to have difficulty with the fact that a significant number of eyewitnesses testify that she did not seem to breathe during her visions (See **Donald I. Peterson, “Visions Or Seizures— Was Ellen White the Victim of Epilepsy?”**) at: <http://www.whiteestate.org/issues/visions.html>

He cites the observations of a prominent early SDA leader, **J. N. Loughborough**, who testified he saw Ellen White in vision “about fifty times” and that while in vision “she does not breathe, yet her pulse beats regularly.”

Dr. Peterson cites Elder Loughborough’s quote of a statement made by **Daniel T. Bourdeau**, who was skeptical of Ellen

White's visions before he had the privilege of evaluating her during an actual vision himself:

[On] June 28, 1857, I saw Sister Ellen G. White in vision for the first time. I was an unbeliever in the visions; but one circumstance among others that I might mention convinced us that her visions were of God. To satisfy my mind as to whether she breathed or not, I first put my hand on her chest sufficiently long to know that there was no more heaving of the lungs than there would have been had she been a corpse. I then took my hand and placed it over her mouth, pinching her nostrils between my thumb and forefinger, so that it was impossible for her to exhale or inhale air, even if she had desired to do so. I held her thus with my hand about ten minutes, long enough for her to suffocate under ordinary circumstances; she was not in the least affected by the ordeal.

According to Butler and others, the length of time Ellen White was in vision "varied from fifteen minutes to one hundred and eighty" and possibly more. This, to say the least, is a remarkable length of time to suspend breathing.

Today's critics and defenders have been dependent on the historical record for a very long time. Depositions left by eye-witnesses stating that Ellen White did not breathe while in vision are so consistent, clear, and unequivocal that even Hodder is constrained to admit that "it is possible that something 'supernatural' was happening." He seeks to explain away this apparent supernatural phenomenon by theorizing that her breathing was merely "imperceptible." Similarly, Couperus also theorizes that her breathing appeared to be "almost imperceptible." Neither critic cites sources to support his conclusions.

Another eye-witness account of Ellen White in vision was **George I. Butler**, a General Conference president during some of the years that she was having public visions. He made these observations:

"All we ask is that people shall be reasonable. We are prepared to support by hundreds of living truthful witnesses all that we shall claim, so far as facts are concerned, of the manifestation itself, for this thing has not been done in a corner. For nearly thirty years past these visions have been given with greater or less frequency, and have been witnessed by many, oftentimes by unbelievers as well as those believing them. They generally, but not always, occur in the midst of earnest sessions of religious interest while the Spirit of God is specially present, if those can tell who are in attendance. The time Mrs. White is in this condition has varied from fifteen minutes to one hundred and eighty. During this time the heart and pulse continue to beat, the eyes are always wide open, and seem to be gazing at some far-distant object, and are never fixed on any person or thing in the room. They are always directed upward. They exhibit a pleasant expression. There is no ghastly look or any resemblance of fainting. The brightest light may be suddenly brought near her eyes, or feints made as if to thrust something into the eye, and there is never the slightest wink or change of expression on that account; and it is sometimes hours and even days after she comes out of this condition before she recovers her natural sight. She says it seems to her that she comes back into a dark world, yet her eyesight is in no wise injured by her visions.

"While she is in vision, her breathing entirely ceases. No breath ever escapes her nostrils or lips when in this condition. This has been proved by many witnesses, among them physicians of skill, and themselves unbelievers in the visions, on some occasions being appointed by a public congregation for the purpose. **It has been proved many times by tightly holding the nostrils and mouth with the hand, and by putting a looking glass before them so close that any escape of the moisture of the breath would be detected. In this condition she often speaks words and short sentences, yet not the slightest breath escapes. When she goes into this condition, there is no appearance of swooning or faintness, her face remains its natural color, and the blood circulates as usual. Often she loses her strength temporarily and reclines or sits; but at other times she stands up. She moves her arms gracefully, and often her face is lighted up with radiance as though the glory of heaven rested upon her. She is utterly unconscious of everything going on around her while she is in vision, having no knowledge whatever of what is said and done in her presence. A person may pinch her flesh, and do things which would cause great and sudden pain in her ordinary condition, and she will not notice it by the slightest tremor.**

"There are none of the disgusting grimaces or contortions which usually attend spiritualist mediums,

but calm, dignified, and impressive, her very appearance strikes the beholder with reverence and solemnity. There is nothing fanatical in her appearance. When she comes out of this condition she speaks and writes from time to time what she has seen while in vision; and the supernatural character of these visions is seen even more clearly in what she thus reveals than in her appearance and condition while in vision, for many things have thus been related which it was impossible for her to know in any other way.

"Peculiar circumstances in the lives of individuals, whom she never before had seen in the flesh, and secrets hidden from the nearest acquaintances, have been made known by her when she had no personal knowledge of the parties other than by vision. Often has she been in an audience where she was wholly unacquainted with the individuals composing it, when she would get up and point out person after person whom she never had seen before, in the flesh, and tell them what they had done, and reprove their sins. I might mention many other items of like nature, but space forbids. These things can be proved by any amount of testimony, and we confidently affirm that they are of such a character that they could not be accomplished by deception." — *Review and Herald*. June 9, 1874. (J. N. Loughborough, *Heavenly Visions*, pp. 76a-76d.)

See: <http://www.ellenwhite.info/visions-no-breath-3.htm>

Still another interesting eyewitness account of one of Ellen White's visions gives powerful credence to the likelihood that her visions were the result of satanic deception. Dirk Anderson comments on some information he discovered while digging through some really old material he obtained recently. In a letter from a Brother Hicks, dated September 3, 1884, and published in the periodical, *Messenger of Truth*, Vol. 1, No.3, p. 3 (October 1854), Anderson quotes the following excerpt:

“As concerning Ellen G. White's visions, I have heretofore known but little about them. I once saw her have one, and I once saw a table tip over and then tip back again of its own accord so far as I could discern. Neither the phenomenon of the vision, nor of the table tipping did I understand.”

Anderson says the significance of this detail did not occur to him at first:

I marked this quote and didn't pay too much attention to it, but 2 days later I was reading the *USA Today* newspaper, and since it being near Halloween, they had an article on “ghosts”. While I usually ignore these, this one was about Dan Aykroyd (the actor) and his family's involvement with séances, so I started reading it. In that article Dan's father witnessed a séance and one of the phenomena he reported seeing was “tipping tables”. I then checked the Internet and found that “tipping tables” is a common theme associated with séances. In fact, the online *Thesaurus* lists “table tipping” as a synonym for a séance. (E-mail Dirk Anderson to Kerry Wynne, Oct. 17, 2009).

There is other evidence that her visions were spiritualistic phenomena. As we have mentioned before, Ellen White often talked about a supernatural “guide” who accompanied her in her visions. She often referred to him as her “accompanying angel.” Spiritualistic mediums often claim to have a spirit guide. Here is one of her interesting statements from an 1875 article in the *Signs of the Times*, Nov. 11; and also *Counsels on Health*, p. 465. [Cited in Kaspersen, *Ellen G. White— the Myth and the Truth*]:

The following night I dreamed that a young man of noble appearance came into the room where I was, immediately after I had been speaking. This same person had appeared before me in important dreams to instruct me from time to time during the past twenty-six years.

Also, she often reported sensing the fragrance of flowers during her visions. This is most interesting, since psychic mediums often write of exactly the same thing when referring to their supernatural experiences. One such instance, an 1890 event recorded in *Life Sketches*, the 1915 edition, p. 30, is this one, also cited in Kaspersen:

Climbing the stairs, she knelt by the bed, and before the first word of petition had been offered she felt that the room was filled with the fragrance of roses. Looking up to see whence the fragrance came, she saw the room flooded with a soft, silvery light.

In another instance, A. T. Jones, in his paper, “**Some History, Some Experience and Some Facts,**” demonstrated that the

people who worked closest to Ellen White did not appear to believe and follow her Testimonies. The context of the following quote is to show that Ellen White didn't follow her own Testimonies. In the following quote, she tells of a supernatural vision that showed her that Dr. John Harvey Kellogg was His physician and that she should treat him well. Not long after that she launched a vicious campaign to destroy him. Notice the fragrance of flowers theme again:

Well, we knelt down to pray; and I was asking the Lord where I should go and what I should do. I was for backing out and not going anywhere. Sadie says, 'You are not fit to go anywhere. Well, while I was praying and was sending up my petition there was as on other times,—I saw a light circulating right round in the room, and a fragrance like the fragrance of flowers, and the beautiful scent of flowers, and then the Voice seemed to speak gently, and said that I was to 'Accept the invitation of My servant, John Kellogg, and make his house your home.' Then the word was, 'I have appointed him as My physician. You can be an encouragement to him.' That is why I am here, and that is why I am at his home. Now I want in every way possible, if I can, to treat Dr. Kellogg as God's appointed physician, and I am going to do it. p. 49, Para. 2, [SHSESF].

To complicate matters still further, Kaspersen notes that epileptics, during a seizure, often report experiencing the scent of flowers. Ellen White had a serious head injury that some medical experts believed caused a special kind of seizure disorder in her.

Recall once again that in the aftermath of the Chicago Buildings Vision Fiasco, a SDA businessman with the Kellogg name and Dr. William S. Sadler started the largest and most respected spiritualistic movement of all—URANTIA. We will have much more to say about this elsewhere. All of the Battle Creek physicians associated with Dr. John Harvey Kellogg would have been acquainted with the evidence that much of the vision activity of Ellen White seemed to be undeniably supernatural. It is worth thinking about that since some spirits are thought of as “good” and some spirits are thought of as “bad,” they are not expected to be reliable sources of information. For this and other reasons, these doctors, who had known Ellen White for much of their lives, concluded that her visions were genuine psychic phenomena, despite the fact that she was wrong at times. This concept explains how they could become thoroughly disillusioned with Ellen White's claim that God Himself communicated with her, yet followed the “call” of Spiritualism thereafter.

The White Estate, by seeking to prove that Ellen White's visions were supernatural, takes the issue of the source of her power from the frying pan into the fire. Logic demands the following sequence of reasoning. We do not and cannot know for certain if her visions were the result of a medical problem— a brain injury. However, we can know, and do know, with absolute certainty that Ellen White was completely wrong about a whole host of prognostications she made under the influence of her attending “angel.” If we cannot excuse her failed predictions on the basis of behavior that results from a brain injury, and if the evidence is almost overwhelming that her visions were supernatural, we must conclude that her “angel” guide was a “fallen” angel. 100% accuracy has always been required of God's prophets. Adventists apply this principle against other false prophets of her day, like Joseph Smith, but refuse to apply the same standard to their own prophetess! Over 100 years later we see even more clearly that most of her long-range predictions were total failures, but her prophetic blunders were so great even during the early decades of her ministry that there was no excuse for Adventist leaders to regard her as anything but delusional, a fraud, or an instrument of Satan. Again, using the simple science of logic, we are faced with the “unthinkable”:

- 1. Ellen White experienced the supernatural in vision according to credible witnesses.**
- 2. Her predictions failed.**
- 3. Her supernatural guide lied to her.**
- 4. God's angels do not lie to God's prophets.**
- 5. Her “angel” guide was an evil spirit.**

The predictions of Ellen White that were fulfilled were apparently the result of either a good guess on Ellen's part or a good guess of the part of the evil spirit which controlled her. Her visions could not possibly have come from God.

In the years that followed the eye-opening events of the 1970's and 1980's that followed the discovery of the 1919 Bible Conference transcripts, researchers began to scrutinize her writings. Douglas Hackleman, for example, found that Ellen

White altered the dates in her diary so that it would look like she received information from God in advance of events she predicted. How much lower could a person go than what is revealed by his research about the Salamanaca "Vision:"

On November 3, 1890, Ellen White allegedly received a vision during her stay at Salamanca, New York. Because this vision apparently was fulfilled in a striking manner, it is often referred to as "proof" of her prophetic gift. However, a closer investigation of the circumstances around the vision and the alleged "fulfillment", throws serious doubts on Ellen White's honesty.

In short, she allegedly received a vision on November 3, 1890, which she was unable to recall. Four months later (March 8, 1891), she claimed that she was awakened by an angel in the midst of the night (the "young man"?) who instructed her to write down the vision she had received four months previous, but which she could not recall.

On the previous evening, March 7, 1890, the General Conference had been holding an important meeting behind closed doors. The matter in question was the magazine *The American Sentinel*, a forerunner of today's *Liberty Magazine*. Some people had been claiming that *The American Sentinel* should downplay its name and the Sabbath in order to gain influence among politicians and other leading people in the United States.

Early in the morning, at 5:30 AM the following day (March 8), a few hours after Ellen White allegedly had been awakened by the angel and instructed to write down the vision she had received four months earlier, the General Conference was going to hold a preacher's meeting. Shortly after O. A. Olsen, the President of the GC, had opened the meeting, Ellen White entered the room, accompanied by her youngest son Willie. She then read the manuscript she had written down according to the instructions the angel had given her during the night. She told the congregation that she had been receiving a vision four months earlier in Salamanca, about what was going to happen during the meeting the night before, and that a hard and unchristian attitude was being manifested during this meeting.

When Ellen White was finished reading her manuscript, Albion F. Ballenger was the first man to arise to his feet and confess that they had been following a wrong course during the meeting. Other people gave similar confessions. This was being considered a direct intervention by God to prevent a mistake in regard to *The American Sentinel*, and a mighty proof for Ellen White's prophetic gift. After all, she had seen in a vision four months earlier what in fact did happen during the meeting the night before, but was instructed to write down the vision a few hours before the morning meeting, and read it before the preachers.

An analysis of this vision and the circumstances around it could be read in *Adventist Currents*, September 1986, in an article by Douglas Hackleman. The conclusion is inevitable: Ellen White both lied and behaved as deceiver with the "Salamanca Vision."

Ellen White's diary from this time shows up with misdated entries, and matters of a later date which clearly had been put into previous entries to create the impression that the later matter was of an earlier origin. The matter in the diary which had been mis-dated 21 November 1891, gives no reason whatsoever to the claim that this was a "revelation" from God, and that it depicted a meeting to be held four months later. She had mis-dated four paragraphs in her diary to create the impression that she knew about things before she actually learned about them. She was in the habit of putting things of a later date into earlier matter in her diary. Douglas Hackleman says,

"The appearance of evil is then strong. The evidently false dating of these is a serious business that should become the basis for a more extensive study of White Estate manuscripts to ascertain the extent of this practice." (Douglas Hackleman, *Adventist Currents*, Sept. 1986.)

In her diary, under November 4, 1890, the day after the "vision," she wrote that she was very frustrated because she was not able to recall the vision, or to write down what she had been

shown. But in a letter to W. P. Burke (October 1891), she writes about this experience, and that she "immediately began to write it down" in her diary. However, no one is able to find this today - at least not with clear reference to Salamanca.

Ellen White makes it very plain that no one had told her anything before she wrote down the vision from 1890 during the night on March 8, 1891. Recalling this experience, she says,

"The circumstances were such that on this occasion the excuse could not possibly be used, 'SOMEONE HAS TOLD HER.' No one had an opportunity to see me or speak with me between the evening meeting [March 7] and the morning meeting that I attended [March 8]." (EGW Diary, May 20, 1905. Quoted in *Adventist Currents*, Sept. 1986. Emphasis supplied.

Because Ellen White during the morning-meeting could describe what had taken place during the evening-meeting the night before, the question arises: From where, or from whom did she get her information? There are just two possibilities: Either the information came from the vision four months earlier, which she was instructed to write down a few hours before the morning-meeting, or somebody had told her. She makes it plain, however, that no one had any opportunity to inform her, because "No one had an opportunity to see me or speak with me between the evening meeting and the morning meeting that I attended".

"The angel" awoke her sometime between 01:00 and 04:00 AM. Edna K. Steele, who slept in the room adjacent to Ellen White's room, recalled that Ellen told her secretary, Sara Mc Enterfeer, about five in the morning, that she had no intentions to be present at the morning-meeting, and that she (Sara) just could sleep on [Ed. Note: could continue to keep sleeping if she wished?]. Obviously Ellen did not wish her secretary to be present at that particular time for some reason.

Ellen White's statement that no one had had any opportunity to talk with her between the evening-meeting and the morning-meeting, does not square up with the statement in the book, *Life Sketches of Ellen G. White* (1915) about the same incident:

"Sunday morning, about 5:20, Brethren A. T. Robinson, W. C. White, and Ellery Robinson were passing Mrs. White's residence on their way to the early meeting. They saw a light in her room, and her son ran up to inquire about her health. He found her busily engaged in writing. She then told him that an angel of God had wakened her about three o'clock, and had bidden her go to the ministers' meeting and relate some things shown her at Salamanca. She said that she arose quickly, and had been writing for about two hours." (*Life Sketches*, 1915 Edition, p. 315.)

It becomes therefore plain that Ellen White contradicts herself in this respect. Her son William Clarence ("Willie") was with his mother early in the morning and accompanied her to the meeting.

The documentation shows that Willie was with his mother before the morning-meeting, and had ample opportunity to talk with her and give her information on what had been going on at the evening-meeting the night before, which he had attended. This is in contradiction with Ellen White's letter from 1905, where she strongly rejects any claims that somebody could have informed her because, as she said, no one had any opportunity to talk with her between the two meetings.

The circumstances regarding this "Salamanca Vision" are so full of contradictory statements, inaccuracies, undated and misdated entries in Ellen White's diary, and also later matter inserted in earlier matter in the diary, that her own version of the entire story has to be taken with a big pinch of salt. The Ellen White defenders are catching at straws when they use the "Salamanca Vision" as proof that she "saw" things in advance which later were exactly "fulfilled".

When Douglas Hackleman wrote to Arthur White in 1982 requesting a copy of Ellen White's hand-written diary for the period November 3, 1890 to March 8, 1891 (the period for the

"Salamanca Vision" and the later meetings in the General Conference), he never received a reply from Arthur White. However, he discovered that his request had created some activity in the White Estate. Later in the year Mr. Hackleman went to Washington, D.C., and visited the White Estate in order to get an opportunity to see this diary. He had, however, called the Estate in advance, to inquire. *During this call, the Estate informed him that the diary possibly was not there— that somebody was doing research in connection with the diary, and may have borrowed it.* [The previous sentence rendered in italics has been extensively edited by your authors to make it make sense. The Internet posting of this passage was corrupted. We believe our editing preserves the intended meaning of the author.]

Mr. Hackleman pointed out that that would not be in harmony with the Estate's policy. The original manuscripts would never be removed from the vault— just copies. However, Mr. Hackleman took his chance and went to the White Estate. When he arrived, they informed him that he would not get permission to see the diary. He expressed his astonishment and told them that all who asked if there was anything in the vaults they would not be allowed to see, had been informed that church members could just come in and see everything they wanted, including the so-called "Z-file", containing sensitive material.

Obviously, the prince of the vaults did not have clean hands in regards to this particular diary, and possibly other things in the vaults. However, the person who in reality did not have clean hands, was Ellen White herself, the author of the diary.

THE CHRISTIAN MEDIUM IN ACTION!

The Chicago Buildings Vision Fiasco

Many of the delegates to the 1919 Bible Conference had lost their belief in Ellen White for good reasons. Tracing from cause to effect, we have to go back to the turn of the twentieth century and examine Adventism's Battle Creek Crisis, which came to a head as a result of her Chicago Buildings Vision that we told you about earlier. At the time of the "vision," the General Conference of Seventh-day Adventists was located in Battle Creek, and Ellen White was in residence there. She claimed to have had a vision from God which showed her that a prominent physician at the Battle Creek Sanitarium, Dr. Harvey Kellogg, had diverted funds intended to be used at the "San" to construct some buildings in Chicago. All of these accusations turned out to be untrue. It was this bizarre "vision" that would have destroyed Adventism during the Battle Creek Crisis near the turn of the nineteenth century had it not been for the skillful damage control techniques of the General Conference and Ellen White herself. Unfortunately, she had rebuked Kellogg in the form of a testimony she had sent to him in 1899. She was wrong about her accusations, and many individuals knew it was a farce! The knowledge of this fiasco somehow got suppressed to a great degree over time until attention was re-focused on it by the troublesome revelations of the problems of Adventism that developed during the 1970's and 1980's.

Ellen White's hypocrisy in regard to the occult and the New Age ironically contributed greatly to her the fact that the leadership of the Church had figured out she was a fraud no later than the 1919 Bible Conference. She had a strong dislike for Dr. Harvey Kellogg, who was the powerful operator of the Battle Creek Sanitarium. Near the time of the Chicago Buildings Fiasco, which we will discuss next, Dr. Kellogg wrote a book of healthful living entitled *The Living Temple*. Ellen White was writing a book on the same subject. She made the equivalent of millions in today's dollars by publishing her books, and it seems that she did not want any competition in the marketplace for her own book. She launched a shameless campaign to label Dr. Kellogg as a Pantheist. She told him not to publish the book and that the message had come to him through her from God. Kellogg stopped distributing his book. Kerry Wynne secured a copy of *The Living Temple*, reviewed research papers written about it, and failed to find any evidence to support her charges. Her writings reflected the same terminology. As we mention elsewhere in this book, the accusation that Kellogg was a Pantheist was proven false by a Seventh-day Adventist of somewhat high stature who worked for Dr. Kellogg in Kellogg's later years. The real Pan accused the pot of being blackened by the occult when it was actually the other way around. Even at the time, Ellen's accusations puzzled Adventist leaders, who commented that they had read Kellogg's book and could not find any fault with it.

As more and more revelations of her prophetic blunders surfaced and needed more and more damage control, Ellen White

prophesied that a sword of judgment hung over Battle Creek because her followers were straying from her counsels. A set of suspicious fires began which, over a course of nearly two decades, burned down almost all the major buildings associated with the Adventist “work” in Battle Creek. Perceptive Adventists would have to ask whether or not God would burn these buildings down in punishment, or would Satan be allowed to do it? Or was it simply a mentally disturbed follower of Ellen White who wanted to make sure that her predictions would be fulfilled and acted on his “own?” If it was her spirit guide rather than just her own vivid imagination that gave her the Chicago Buildings Vision, that spirit guide played her for a fool.

The Battle Creek Crisis was multifaceted, but the single most important contributing factor was her Chicago Buildings Vision. Between the Battle Creek Crisis at the turn of the century and her death in 1915, a string of prophetic blunders continued unabated. Our historical time-line tells this story. Thus, the stage was set to force the delegates to the 1919 Bible Conference to address what should be done, if anything, about her fraudulent prophetic claims.

The confusion ensued in Battle Creek in 1899 when she accused the CEO of the Battle Creek Sanitarium, Dr. John H. Kellogg, of constructing buildings in the Chicago Area to serve the unworthy poor with funds he had supposedly diverted from the Battle Creek Sanitarium. The accusation came in the form of a “testimony,” which was understood by the followers of Ellen White to mean that the information had come to her by direct, divine revelation. The accusation was bizarre, inappropriate, and baffling, not only to the staff of Adventist physicians who were associated with Dr. Kellogg at the Sanitarium, but to other Adventists who were involved with the “Work” in Battle Creek, and to Ellen White herself, who stated in the heat of the fallout from the trouble she created by saying that she did not understand the vision herself when it was given. Also, Battle Creek was the denominational headquarters for the Seventh-day Adventist Church at that time. Ellen White possessed a Clintonian intellect for evasiveness, and she had managed to get herself out of many a tight spot. However, as smart as she was, she was no match for the genius IQ levels of this group of world-class physicians. As we noted in Chapter I, they had no trouble figuring out that the whole thing was a sham. She met her Waterloo at Battle Creek in the form of this group of very smart physicians and professionals whose incomes were not dependent on the Church.

This bizarre incident could not exactly be characterized as the straw that broke the camel's back. It was more like the elephant that leaned against the side of a dilapidated shack and caused the whole thing to collapse. Her blunder made her the laughing stock of Battle Creek. For over a decade prior to the crisis, the Battle Creek physicians had been identifying a lot of areas where Ellen White failed to meet the tests of a biblical prophet, and they had been bombarding her with requests that she explain herself— requests that went unanswered. It was the 1899 letter from White to Kellogg about the Chicago Buildings Vision that caused the Battle Creek physicians to step up their campaign to get answers from her. At first Ellen claimed she received a vision from God that she should answer their questions, and she invited all who had such questions to submit them to her in writing. After the questions started rolling in, she was “shown” that she was *not* supposed to answer questions related to her prophetic claims. By 1907, **Dr. Charles E. Stewart**, frustrated with her refusal to answer their questions, put them together in booklet form and published it for what he intended to be for a very small audience. Demand for copies of the little publication grew, and it received a much wider circulation than he had envisioned.

http://www.truthorfables.com/A_Response_to_Urgent_Testimony.htm

These were some of his concerns: **(1)** The influence of others in writing her books when she claimed that God helped her choose the very words she wrote. **(2)** The Chicago Buildings Vision. **(3)** Plagiarism in regard to her wholesale copying from the book by British authors Conybeare and Howson on the life of St. Paul— ***Sketches From the Life of Paul***. **(4)** Her copying of the health writings of Dr. Cole while presenting the information as having come to her from God in vision. **(5)** Continuing to eat meat and unclean meats like oysters for decades after she began to preach the importance of a vegetarian diet, and: **(6)** Her crazy statements about medicine. The fact that she had opened herself up to these kinds of questions is, in itself, a condemnation of her prophetic claims. She lied about where she got the information for her book on the life of Paul. It was clear to the Battle Creek physicians that the main issue was not the plagiarism itself— which was bad enough— but the lying.

The timing of her Chicago Buildings Vision could not have been worse. Not only were the Adventists in Battle Creek finding a variety of reasons to question her prophetic claims, but the “vision” came at a time of political up-roar that was already threatening to destroy Adventism. The General Conference had been working to break the power of Dr. Kellogg, who had already succeeded in wresting control of the newly re-built Battle Creek Sanitarium from the Church and minimizing its control over the American Medical Missionary College in Chicago. Sensing that her credibility as a prophetess was sinking

quickly— even before the Chicago Buildings Vision— she had begun agitating to get the Battle Creek College moved to a rural location and the General Conference headquarters moved somewhere else. As you may recall, she had claimed that God showed her that a “sword of judgment” hung over the “Work” in Battle Creek, and a series of tragic fires had already destroyed a number of key Adventist institutions, including the old Battle Creek Sanitarium building. By 1922, when fire destroyed the Battle Creek Tabernacle Church, there were no significant Adventist buildings left standing that had been associated with the Adventist Work when Ellen White and the General Conference were there. It did not take any special revelation from God to understand that she and Adventism were doomed if its main hub remained in Battle Creek.

Interestingly, Ellen White continued to assert that these fires represented judgments from God until Pacific Press, a California Adventist publishing house, burned to the ground some years later. In this fire she lost many thousands of dollars of printing plates and precious art work that she had purchased from New York artists to illustrate her books.

For perhaps the deepest research ever conducted on the Chicago Buildings Vision, Kerry Wynne has written a book, *Ellen G. White and the Chicago Buildings Vision Fiasco*, which you can access at: WWW.TRUTHORFABLES.COM.

ELLEN WHITE: THE “FACE” THAT LAUNCHED THOUSANDS INTO SPIRITUALISM

Is this the face that launched a thousand ships, or is this the ship that launched a thousand faces? So far as we can tell, all of the Adventist doctors and business associates of Dr. Harvey John Kellogg, perhaps with the exception of Dr. David Paulsen, who pioneered the Hinsdale Sanitarium for Dr. Kellogg in Chicago, left Adventism because they finally grasped the fact that she was a fraud. Dr. Paulsen seemed to have decided that her prophetic claims were not genuine, but he remained in the Adventist fold by keeping his views of Ellen White to himself. In a key letter to Ellen White he expressed his doubts about her prophetic gifts and told her that he no longer believed her claim that she was inspired by God at the verbal level. Since she claimed inspiration at the verbal level, and since she never answered him on this point, we have to understand that he successfully accused her of lying. **Wilfred Custer Kellogg**, a relative of J. H. Kellogg and a successful Battle Creek businessman, joined **Dr. William S. Sadler** in a journey into spirit channeling, founding a new religion modeled after Adventism, based, supposedly on thousands of pages of information written by “channeled” spirits who were on their way from one universe to another. **Dr. Charles E. Stewart**, the author of *A Response To An Urgent Testimony*, or the “**Blue Book**,” as it is now called, is listed by ex-SDA, **Monica Vowless**, of New Zealand, as a prominent former SDA physician who had either left Adventism or had been expelled by the Church (See “My Defense,” by Monica Vowless, who passed away in 1935, available at www.ex-sda.com.)

Information available from the Urantia organization indicates that Dr. Sadler never gave up his belief that Ellen White's visions were supernatural in origin. He maintained that she was a spirit medium. Earlier in Ellen White's ministry, another Adventist leader, **Moses Hull**, who was familiar with the supernatural component of her visions, also had joined the ranks of the Spiritualists. There is a strong suggestion here that these men understood that spirit guides can appear to be good, can be thoroughly bad, and that some of them seem to enjoy playing tricks on their human mediums. Apparently Dr. Sadler, understanding that spirit mediums did not have to meet a 100% accuracy rating, simply made an “adjustment” to his thinking about the prophetic gifts of Ellen White.

Ellen White claimed that God showed her that Dr. Kellogg was a Pantheist. She based this claim on some of the statements he made about the power of God being in living things in his book on healthful living, *The Living Temple*. Our research shows that his statements about the power of God being in living things are not particularly different from statements that Ellen White made in her own books on nature and healing. By its very definition, Kellogg was never a Pantheist, and Ellen White's accusation was ridiculous. A Pantheist does not believe in a personal God and believes that Nature is god and god is Nature. Kellogg taught that it was a personal God— in fact Jesus Christ— Who imbued living things with the energy of life. Elsewhere we have more to say about Ellen White's quoting of New Age authors, including the concept of Mother Earth, and language that is characteristic of Freemasonry. To the total discrediting of Ellen White's prophetic claims, Dr. Kellogg remained a Christian and a Sabbath-keeper until the day he died.

SDA Church leader and historian, **Alonzo L. Baker**, was closely associated with **John Harvey Kellogg** from September 1939 to June 1942, serving in the dual capacity of field secretary for his eugenics and genetics organization, the Race

Betterment Foundation, and associate editor of his monthly journal, *Good Health*. Baker's SDA denominational career included the shared editorship of the SDA publication, *Health*, a monthly publication of Pacific Press, with Percy T. Magan, one-time president of the College of Medical Evangelists (now Loma Linda University School of Medicine), who was a graduate of Dr. Kellogg's American Medical Missionary College. In an article published in the autumn, 1972 edition of *Spectrum*, an ultra-liberal independent journal that reviews issues related to Adventism and is barely tolerated by the Church, Baker said:

Kellogg kept the Sabbath right up to the last Sabbath of his life. His two institutions, one in Michigan and one in Florida, always observe the seventh-day Sabbath. When I was in his employ, he would ask almost every Sunday, “Baker did you go to church yesterday? What did the preacher talk about? Did you get a blessing from the service?”

One Sunday morning in Battle Creek after his usual inquiry about my attendance at church on Sabbath, I asked, “And just what did you do all day yesterday, Doctor, if I may ask?”

“In the morning,” he replied, “I read from my Bible in John’s story of the life of Christ. John, as you know, Baker, was closer to Christ than any other of the twelve.” In the afternoon I had Freddie [his masseur and chauffeur] drive me out to the cemetery, for I wanted to pray beside Mrs. White’s grave there. After I read from the book of John in the morning, I took down *The Desire of Ages* and read a chapter there which dilates on what I had read from John. You know, don’t you, Baker, that Mrs. White’s book on the life of Jesus is the greatest ever written?”

In Kerry Wynne's book, *Ellen G. White and the Chicago Buildings Vision Fiasco*, which is devoted exclusively to the Chicago Buildings Vision, he cites Alonzo L. Baker’s statement that Dr. Kellogg showed him the actual testimony (letter) that Ellen White sent to him in which she told him that God had shown her that he was constructing buildings in Chicago with funds that he had siphoned from the Battle Creek Sanitarium.

Between the Chicago Buildings Vision at the turn of the century and the 1919 Bible Conference, Adventist leaders were forced to contemplate the effects of the aftermath of the Battle Creek Crisis that her prophetic blunders had created. They saw almost all of the SDA doctors at the Battle Creek Sanitarium leave Adventism as a result of a constant string of indicators that the prophetic claims of Ellen White were fraudulent– the Chicago Buildings Vision having been the elephant that collapsed the shack. They saw a number of important Adventists from the Battle Creek scene turn to Spiritualism because they concluded that Ellen White's supernatural visions did not come from God, and they were confronted with growing evidence that she had been plagiarizing the writings of other authors for her books while leading her readers to believe that the information came straight from God. By 1911, just four years before her death in 1915, the Church was forced to spend \$3,000 to revise her book, *The Great Controversy*, because widely-read individuals were finding more and more examples of sources where she copied from other authors without giving proper credit. Alonzo Baker, as we will mention later, says that Ellen White got a lot of her medical information from Dr. Kellogg and passed it along to her readers as “inspired” information.

Ellen White’s explanation of the Chicago Buildings Vision was that God showed her a fully constructed building and that the interpretation of what that meant was hers. She argued that the vision served its purpose by actually preventing the construction of the building. Here is some interesting documentation:

Ellen G. White

April 2, 1906 MS 33, 1906

Copied from Dr. Steward's MSS June 5, '06

Sanitarium, California, March 20, 1906

Paragraph 3: Shortly after the meetings closed, Judge Arthur and his wife spent part of a day at my home. We had much pleasant and profitable conversation. Among other things discussed was the matter **of the representation that had been given me of an expensive building in the city of Chicago**, used for various lines of medical missionary work. I related how that when I was in Australia, **I was shown a large building in**

Chicago, which, in its erection and equipment, cost a large amount of money. And I was shown the error of investing means in any such buildings in our cities.

Paragraph 6: Sometime after this, **I was shown that the vision of buildings in Chicago**, and the draft upon the means of our people to erect them, and their destruction, was an object lesson for our people, warning them not to invest largely of their means in property in Chicago, or any city....

A simple time-line of events easily exposes the comic elements of this rationalization. Prevented the construction of what building? One for serving the unworthy poor of Chicago, as she had stated in her testimony, or the new building for the American Medical College which she and her son had both voted for earlier in a meeting of the trustees of the San? Here are the elements of the Fiasco:

1. Ellen White shouldn't have needed any vision to tell her what Dr. Kellogg was doing in Chicago because he corresponded with her regularly about his work there.
2. No supernatural intervention was necessary to motivate her to look into his Chicago activities more closely because the old American newspaper article she read while in Australia, while inaccurate on certain points, painted a very good picture of what Dr. Kellogg was doing in Chicago. She didn't need a dream.
3. Kellogg never planned to build a building in Chicago for serving the poor. He learned about the work of a planning committee to build it when he returned from an extended trip of several months to Europe.
4. It was common knowledge in Battle Creek that there was a strong need to build a new building for the American Medical College, and this project was being widely discussed in the Church at the time when Ellen White had her Chicago Buildings Vision. In the 1901 General Conference session, Ellen G. White and her son, Willie C. White, had strongly supported the project to build this particular building. The Adventists involved with the project, upon hearing about Ellen White's testimony against building a building in Chicago, did not pay any attention to her message because they thought she was talking about some other project.
5. Ellen didn't know what building she was talking about, but if it was the one for the American Medical College, she should have rebuked each member of the planning committee that worked on it while he was away in Europe.
6. Those involved with planning the new building for the American Medical College did not think that her testimony against Dr. Kellogg had anything to do with their planning for this proposed building, since Ellen White had been all in favor of the project. In the confusion, they continued to plan for the building because they thought she was unhappy about Dr. Kellogg's plan to construct some other kind of building for a different purpose.

When someone claims he or she has experienced a supernatural event, the first thing we look for is evidence that there is no natural explanation that is better. The many letters that transpired between White and Kellogg in the years before 1899, alone, would explain her fear that he might be constructing a building in Chicago, and reading the old American newspaper article explained everything without any need for divine intervention. She didn't need any vision from God to tell her that Kellogg might be up to something in Chicago. Furthermore, the idea that God cared more about building an expensive sanitarium in Australia more than He cared about the men and women who were perishing of starvation and disease in Chicago does not square with what we know about the character of God as exemplified in the life of Jesus.

The set of influences that we have traced from the D. M. Canright's apostasy through the blunders that created the Battle Creek crisis and the Chicago Buildings Vision fiasco to the 1919 Bible Conference not only helps us understand why many of the delegates to the 1919 Bible Conference had determined that Ellen White was a fraud, but helps us see how the discovery of the 1919 Bible Conference Transcripts in 1974 probably prepared Dr. Samuele Bacchiocchi to challenge, in writing, several "inspired" statements of Ellen G. White. One of those blunders resulted in the death of quite a number of Seventh-day Adventist missionaries. Adventists were, by this time, sending missionaries around the world. She wrote against the use of quinine, which was used in the treatment of Malaria. Here is a summary of that situation:

ELLEN WHITE'S TESTIMONY AGAINST THE USE OF QUININE

"Mercury, calomel, and quinine have brought their amount of wretchedness, which the day of God alone will fully reveal." *Spiritual Gifts*, Vol. 4A, p. 139.

WILLIE C. WHITE'S CONCESSION THAT HIS MOTHER KILLED MISSIONARIES

"One time while we were in Australia, a brother who had been acting as a missionary in the islands, told mother of the sickness and death of his first-born son. He was seriously afflicted with Malaria, and his father was advised to give him quinine, but in view of the counsel in the testimonies to avoid the use of quinine he refused to administer it, and his son died." (W. C. White letter, September 10, 1935)

DR. GREGORY HUNT'S RESEARCH

"A row of graves in Africa mark the site of the first SDA missionaries. They were told by authorities to take quinine, but as Adventists they got their marching orders from a higher source. They knew that quinine was valueless: they trusted Mrs. White that she had been shown this by God, and as a result they died."

—Gregory Hunt, M.D., *Beware this Cult*, Chapter 4, "Ellen White and Medicine", 1981.

The delegates to the 1919 Bible Conference, then, were working with a knowledge of Ellen White that was not very accessible to the average member of the Seventh-day Adventist Church. It should not be particularly surprising that a significant number of those delegates pushed gently and tacitly to take the action of repudiating her as a false prophet. So far as we know, there is no record of a Bible prophet giving false information that resulted in the death of those who followed the bad advice.

CHAPTER TWO

Was William Miller A White Collar Criminal?

By Larry Dean, J.D.

Was William Miller A White Collar Criminal?

By Larry Dean, J.D.

“Our expectations were raised high, and thus we looked for the coming of the Lord till the clock tolled 12 at midnight. The day had then passed and our disappointment became a certainty. Our fondest hopes and expectations were blasted, and such a spirit of weeping came over us as I never experienced before. It seemed that the loss of all earthly friends could have been no comparison. We wept, and wept, till the day dawn. I mused in my own heart, saying, My advent experience has been the richest and brightest of all my Christian experience. If this had proved a failure, what was the rest of my Christian experience worth? Has the Bible proved a failure? Is there no God- no heaven- no golden home city- no paradise? Is this all but a cunningly devised fable? Is there no reality to our fondest hopes and expectation of these things?” Hiram Edson, 1844.¹

“The Great Disappointment” is the catchy “brand name” usually applied to the failure of Jesus to return as predicted by William Miller in 1844. Was it **really** just a mere “disappointment,” or was Hiram Edson on the right track when he wondered if it were a “cunningly devised fable?” What if some of the modern-day Millerite sects are nothing more than a slickly-repackaged and marketed version of an earlier sophisticated white collar crime, perpetuated in a more innocent and unsophisticated day and time? What if the 1844 “perp” (perpetrator) got away slick and clean?

The behavior of the victims in the aftermath of the disaster gives us some potent clues that something more sinister and nefarious than a mere “Great Disappointment” might have happened:

The religious revivals of the nineteenth century coincided with- and indirectly encouraged- a boom in asylum building that saw the opening of approximately 24 new asylums in America between 1810 and 1850. 21 of the first 76 admissions to the New Hampshire Asylum for the Insane were thought to have resulted from religious excitement and the first was a Millerite. In 1843, 7% of the patients entered into the Worcester State Lunatic Hospital and over half of all cases resulting from religious causes could be charged to Millerism. According to Amariah Brigham, the insidious effects of Millerism stemmed less from its peculiar teachings than from its tendency to deprive "excitable and nervous persons" of needed sleep while they attended protracted meetings. Regardless of the reasons, Millerism was highly correlated with religious insanity in comparison to other practices at the time.²

The self-descriptions of modern-day victims of white collar crime sound strikingly-similar to the victims of the 1844 hoax:

It’s devastating. It’s embarrassing. It’s heartbreaking,” said Penny Wasser, who, along with her husband Marv, [lost her life savings to a con man](#). Her husband, remembering his feelings in the aftermath of the fraud, confessed: “You really wish you’d die.”

Richard Shapiro felt similarly shattered when he discovered [he’d lost most of his fortune in the Bernie Madoff Ponzi scheme](#): “I know it sounds crazy, but it’s like when people come back from war — it was just so shocking and so deep and so out-of-the-blue unexpected.”³

Modern victims of white collar crime have a plethora of expert counselors and victim witness professionals to help them survive the immense, crushing emotional and financial shock of being the victims of fraud that was simply unavailable to the victims of 1844. Yet the clinically-significant incidents of severe depression and other mental illness among victims of white collar crime is staggering.⁴ 29 percent of the victims of financial crime experience a major depressive incident within 20 months after the event.⁵ Would Ms. Wasser and Mr. Shapiro in the above quotes have ended up in the insane asylums of 1844 had the financial crimes they suffered occurred in the 19th century? What if the perpetrators of “The Great Disappointment of 1844” were nothing more than common criminals who simply callously victimized the innocent and the gullible?

¹ <http://jewette.wikispaces.com/TTH+3.30+-+The+Great+Disappointment>

² <http://jewette.wikispaces.com/TTH+3.30+-+The+Great+Disappointment>

³ <http://www.acfe.com/fraud-examiner.aspx?id=4294989200>

⁴ <http://www.jaapl.org/content/18/1/55.full.pdf>

⁵ Trusted Criminals: White Collar Crime In Contemporary Society, By David Friedrichs.

What is Criminal Fraud?

The actions of one or a few corrupt public officials and corrupt businessmen can affect the livelihoods of thousands, even millions of people. Fraudsters use a combination of persuasion and deceit to execute their crimes. Unfortunately, most people are unaware of how easy it is for fraudsters prey [on] on their behavioral and cognitive vulnerabilities.⁶

Proving criminal fraud is not easy. It has perhaps the highest standard of proof of any modern law. It requires proof of “intentional deception.” It must have a victim, who because of a “false representation,” was persuaded to part with property or money. They must rely on the intentional deception or misrepresentation. The criminal must have the specific intent of persuading the victim to part with property. The victim must part with property in reliance on the false statement. The perpetrator must deliberately keep the property from the victim.⁷ These elements of the crime of fraud can be proven with a wide-variety of evidence, including written records and eyewitness accounts. But all elements must be proven “beyond a reasonable doubt.” We believe that we can show by this analysis that William Miller fulfilled all of the elements of criminal fraud in his conduct before and after 1844, and that such criminal fraud was the proximate cause of the immense psychological and financial ruin of tens of thousands of victims.

William Miller’s Intentional Deception

William Miller left a vast paper trail that demonstrates clear-cut intentional deception. The following statements of Miller’s would be admitted in a court of law in a criminal fraud trial as “Admissions of a Party Opponent,” over any defense attorney’s hearsay objections.⁸ Miller’s frequent statements prove that he intentionally lied to his followers. At the heart of Miller’s prediction of Christ’s return in 1844 was his emphatic assertion that the “2300 days” prophecy found in Daniel 8 actually meant 2300 “years.” Miller deployed a variety of mathematical machinations and messaged historical dates that supposedly culminated in 1844, the year Miller claimed would feature the return of Christ and the end of the world. This “day for year” principle is the “smoking gun” at the heart of Miller’s false prediction. By what authority or logic did Miller claim for applying the “day for year” principle to the Daniel 8:14 prophecy? Let’s let him speak for himself:

In Miller’s *Apology and Defense*, he boasted of his two-year period of intensive study in 1816-1818. In reference to his usage of the “year-day” principle, Miller wrote, “I could only regard the time as symbolical, and as standing each day for a year, ***in accordance with the opinions of all the standard Protestant commentators.***” (emphasis added).^{9 10}

In a letter to Joshua Himes written in November 1844 in the aftermath of the catastrophe, Miller embellished his claim that his application of the “year-day” principle was supported by the “best” Protestant commentators:

“I had not a distant thought of disturbing our churches, ministers, religious editors, ***or departing from the best biblical commentaries or rules*** which had been recommended for the study of the scriptures. And even to this day, my opposers have not been able to show where ***I have departed from any rule, laid down by our old standard writers of the Protestant faith.***” (Emphasis added)^{11 12}

As Kenneth G.C. Newport has commented, the implications of this statement are clear: “Miller had read the ‘standard Protestant’ works, which, given those that were available to him and taking into account the context in which he wrote, must have included the historicism of Mede, Newton, Gill, Priestly *et al.*”¹³

⁶ <http://whitecollarfraud.blogspot.com/p/advice.html>

⁷ https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Fraud#As_a_criminal_offence

⁸ https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Party_admission

⁹ Miller, *Apology and Defence*, P. II. <http://centrowhite.org.br/files/ebooks/apl/all/Miller/William%20Miller's%20Apology%20and%20Defence.%20August%201.pdf>

¹⁰ http://www.academia.edu/1035050/A_Feast_of_Reason_The_Roots_of_William_Miller_s_Biblical_Interpretation_and_its_influence_on_the_Seventh-day_Adventist_Church, p. 146.

¹¹ In reference to this quote, Robert Brinsmead quite rightly asks, “How could Miller say this unless he was well acquainted with the standard works of his day?” He further states, “This must modify the legend of his laying aside the use of all commentaries and using nothing but the Bible and a concordance.” Robert D. Brinsmead, *1844 Re-Examined*, Revised ed. (Fallbrook: I. H. I., 1979), 21

¹² <http://centrowhite.org.br/files/ebooks/apl/all/Miller/William%20Miller's%20Apology%20and%20Defence.%20August%201.pdf>, p. 146.

¹³ Kenneth G. C. Newport, *Apocalypse and Millennium: Studies in Biblical Eisegesis* (Cambridge: Cambridge University Press, 2000), P. 157

Many of Miller's contemporaries recognized his use of such Protestant commentaries. In the Millerite-funded newspaper called *The Advent Herald and Signs of the Times Reporter*, February 21, 1844, the statement was made, "Since Mr Miller has shown that, **according to principles of interpretation adopted by all the standard protestant commentators**, we must be near the end of the present dispensation."¹⁴

The Millerite mouthpiece *Advent Herald and Signs of the Times Reporter* of April 24, 1844 emphasized once again Miller's claim that his application of the "year-day" principle was supported by the Protestant commentators: "...unless some error can be shown in our standard chronologies....We believe, as ever, that the visions of Daniel and John, **as interpreted by all the standard Protestant commentators...**"¹⁵ (emphasis added)

In one of his most widely-quoted sermons, Miller referred directly to the venerable John Gill's commentaries: "We have, therefore, been obliged to study for ourselves; and if we are to be cut off for honestly believing in the exactness of prophetic time, then *Scott, and Wesley, and the Newtons, and Mede, Gill, and others*, should all be excommunicated for the like offense. We, therefore, once more call upon you to show us our errors; and until this is done, we must continue to believe the Lord will come in this Jewish year."^{16 17}

It is clear that Miller repeatedly, unequivocally and publicly asserted that the "year-day" principle as applied to Daniel's "2300 Days" prophecy was supported by **all of the Protestant commentators**. Using that as his logical and authoritative "springboard," Miller extrapolated the formula into false predictions of Jesus's return in 1843 and 1844. Was this a truthful and reasonable statement of the views of Protestant commentators **that were available to Miller at the time he made these statements?** Can the views of the Protestant commentators available in the 18th Century be stretched to provide support for a definite date of the return of Jesus? The answer, as will be seen, must be an emphatic and unequivocal "No." We will begin with the venerable John Gill, since Miller specifically referred to his commentary, and since Gill was "The" Bible Commentator of choice for Baptist Ministers of Miller's day and time.¹⁸ After all, Miller was a licensed Baptist Minister. Let's let Gill speak for himself:

"That is, "Palmoni", the wonderful person, to whom the angel put the above question, gave the answer to it; not unto the angel that asked it, but unto Daniel that stood by; knowing that it was for his and his people's sake the question was asked, and therefore gave the answer to him, as follows: **unto two thousand and three hundred days;**

or so many "mornings" and "evenings" F8; which shows that not so many years, as Jacchiades, and others, are meant; **but natural days, consisting of twenty four hours, and which make six years, three months, and eighteen days**; and reckoning from the fifteenth day of the month Cisleu, in the year 145 of the Selucidae, in which Antiochus set up the abomination of desolation upon the altar, in the Apocrypha: "Now the five and twentieth day of the month they did sacrifice upon the idol altar, which was upon the altar of God." (1 Maccabees 1:59) to the victory obtained over Nicanor by Judas, on the thirteenth day of the month Adar, Anno 151, are just 2300 days; which day the Jews kept as an annual feast, in commemoration of that victory; and from that time enjoyed peace and rest from war F9: this way goes L'Empereur after Capellus; but others begin from the defection of the people from the pure religion by Menelaus, Anno 141; though Antiochus did not enter on his impieties till the following year; and, reckoning from the sixth day of the sixth month in that year, to the twenty fifth day of Cisleu in the year 148, when the Jews offered the daily sacrifice on the new altar of burnt offerings, in the Apocrypha:

"Now on the five and twentieth day of the ninth month, which is called the month Casleu, in the hundred forty and eighth year, they rose up betimes in the morning, 53 And offered sacrifice according to the law upon the new altar of burnt offerings, which they had made. " (1 Maccabees 4:52).....

.....**were just six years, three months, and eighteen days: and so it follows, and then shall the**

¹⁴ http://www.academia.edu/1035050/_A_Feast_of_Reason_The_Roots_of_William_Miller_s_Biblical_Interpretation_and_its_influence_on_the_Seventh-day_Adventist_Church, p. 146.

¹⁵ http://www.academia.edu/1035050/_A_Feast_of_Reason_The_Roots_of_William_Miller_s_Biblical_Interpretation_and_its_influence_on_the_Seventh-day_Adventist_Church, p. 146.

¹⁶ http://www.academia.edu/1035050/_A_Feast_of_Reason_The_Roots_of_William_Miller_s_Biblical_Interpretation_and_its_influence_on_the_Seventh-day_Adventist_Church, Pp. 168-169.

¹⁷ *Memoirs of William Miller*, Bliss, P. 253.

¹⁸ [https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/John_Gill_\(theologian\)](https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/John_Gill_(theologian))

*sanctuary be cleansed; as it was by Judas Maccabeus at the time above mentioned; when he purified the holy places, sanctified the courts, rebuilt the altar, renewed the vessels of the sanctuary, and put all in their proper places; in the Apocrypha.”*¹⁹

<http://www.biblestudytools.com/commentaries/gills-exposition-of-the-bible/daniel-8-14.html>

Gill absolutely cannot be read to support Miller’s fanciful “year-day” principle as applied to Daniel’s prophecy. In fact, Gill unequivocally restates the traditional Jewish interpretation that Daniel’s prophecy was fulfilled in a literal “2300 days,” during the occupation of Greece under Antiochus Epiphanes, reversed via the gallant military leadership of Judas Maccabeus. **This universally-held interpretation has provided the basis of the Jewish holiday Hannukah. And Jesus himself endorsed this interpretation of the prophecy when he celebrated Hanukkah in John 10:22-23.**²⁰ Certainly, there is no way that Gill, possibly the most eminent of all of the “Protestant commentators;” can be construed to support Miller’s “year-day” principle, let alone used to predict Christ’s second return in 1844. According to Gill, the prophecy was fulfilled long before the birth of Christ. Miller’s direct reference to Gill supporting his “year-day” principle was an intentional and known false statement. Just Gill’s commentary is enough to provide a *prima facie* case for this element in a court of law, given Miller’s direct reference to him.

Next, we turn to the equally venerable Matthew Henry, whose Bible commentary was virtually the Gold Standard of Protestant commentators of Miller’s time. How credible was Henry? “Famous [evangelical](#) Protestant preachers such as [George Whitefield](#) and [Charles Spurgeon](#) used and heartily commended the work, with Whitefield reading it through four times — the last time on his knees.”²¹ Here’s Henry on Daniel 8:14:

“All agree that this was Antiochus Epiphanes (so he called himself)—the illustrious, but others called him Antiochus Epimanes —Antiochus the furious. He is called here (as before, [ch. 7:8](#)), a little horn, because he was in his original contemptible....But that which is here especially taken notice of is the mischief that he did to the people of the Jews. They are not expressly named, or prophecies must not be too plain; but they are here so described that it would be easy for those who understood scripture-language to know who were meant; and the Jews....and therefore God sent Antiochus to take away the daily sacrifice and cast down the place of his sanctuary.....***But it is less forced to understand them of so many natural days; 2300 days make six years and three months, and about eighteen days;*** and just so long they reckon from the defection of the people, procured by Menelaus the high priest in the 142nd year of the kingdom of the Seleucids, the sixth month of that year, and the 6th day of the month (so Josephus dates it), to the cleansing of the sanctuary, and the reestablishment of religion among them, which was in the 148th year, the 9th month, and the 25th day of the month, [1 Mac. 4:52](#) .”²²

<http://www.biblestudytools.com/commentaries/matthew-henry-complete/daniel/8.html>

Both John Gill and Matthew Henry could not have made themselves any clearer: The fulfillment of Daniel 8:14 occurred in a literal 2300 days during the reign of Antiochus Epiphanes, long before the birth of Jesus Christ. We can find no direct evidence that Miller actually read Henry, unlike John Gill, whom he clearly indicated he had read. Nonetheless, Miller repeatedly stated that **all** of the Protestant commentators supported his “year-day” principle as applied to Daniel 8:14. So far Miller is batting 0-2. Let’s see what the storied Anglican Divine Charles John Ellicott²³ has to say about Daniel 8:14:

“It is clear from the language that the period here spoken of terminates with the cleansing of the sanctuary, and that it begins with the transgression that led to the awful events that occurred in the time of Antiochus Epiphanes. Judas Maccabeus took Jerusalem in the year B.C. 165, and kept the Feast of Dedication the same year, Antiochus being at the time in Armenia. The period apparently commences with the events mentioned in [2 Maccabees 4:32-39](#), which occurred about B.C. 171. The dates, however, not being recorded precisely, it is impossible to reckon with certainty whence the starting-point is to be dated. The phrase “evening morning” (see margin) is used to indicate a complete night and day, ***and 2,300 complete days of twenty-four hours make a period of six years 140 days.***”²⁴ (emphasis added)

¹⁹ <http://www.biblestudytools.com/commentaries/gills-exposition-of-the-bible/daniel-8-14.html>

²⁰ <http://www.wnd.com/2010/12/236333/>

²¹ https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Matthew_Henry

²² <http://www.biblestudytools.com/commentaries/matthew-henry-complete/daniel/8.html>

²³ https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Charles_Ellicott

²⁴ <http://biblehub.com/commentaries/ellicott/daniel/8.htm>

Quite plainly, Ellicott concurred with both Gill and Henry: the Daniel 8:14 prophecy was fulfilled in a literal **2300 days**, during the reign of Antiochus Epiphanes during the Greek occupation of Judea. None of them could have agreed that Jesus would return in 1844, let alone agree with Miller's flamboyant use of proof-texts. Miller is 0-3 with these widely-used and widely-available "Protestant commentators." Now we turn to Albert Barnes, whose commentary was something of a best seller during Miller's lifetime, selling over 1 million copies: ²⁵

"Unto two thousand and three hundred days - Margin, evening, morning. So the Hebrew, ערב בקר 'ereb boqer. So the Latin Vulgate, *ad vesperam et mane*. And so Theodotion - ἕως ἑσπέρας καὶ πρωῒ heōs hesperas kai prōi - "to the evening and morning." The language here is evidently what was derived from Gen. i., or which was common among the Hebrews, to speak of the "evening and the morning" as constituting a day. ***There can be no doubt, however, that a day is intended by this, for this is the fair and obvious interpretation.***

.....

There can be no doubt that Antiochus Epiphanes is denoted here. All the circumstances of the prediction find a fulfillment in him; and if it were supposed that this was written after he had lived, and that it was the design of the writer to describe him by this symbol, he could not have found a symbol that would have been more striking or appropriate than this. The Syriac version has inserted here, in the Syriac text, the words "Antiochus Epiphanes," and almost without exception expositors have been agreed in the opinion that he is referred to." ²⁶

Here, Miller drops to a miserable 0-4 among the most widely-available Protestant commentators, that were the gold standard of commentaries during Miller's lifetime. His use of Hebrew reveals an interesting inconsistency of Seventh Day Adventists. Adventists insist when discussing the Creation story in Genesis that a "day" means a literal "day." This is their last ditch argument to preserve the Sabbath from overwhelming biblical and historical proof otherwise. Yet when the exact same Hebrew word is used in Daniel, suddenly a "day" becomes a "year." Adventist manipulation of the Hebrew language seems to have a guiding principle: it must support Adventist oddball doctrines, depending on the subjective situation. *A //* of the Protestant commentators we have examined stand for the proposition that the prophecy was fulfilled during the reign of Antiochus Epiphanes. They ***all*** teach that the prophecy was fulfilled in a literal 2300 "days." Now we turn to the storied Matthew Poole,²⁷ one of England's most trusted Protestant commentators:

“1. Some explain it thus: A year contains three hundred and sixty-five days; then two thousand three hundred make six years, three months, and eighteen days, reckoning in two days of the leap years gained from the supernumerary hours and minutes. Now this time begins at the first entrance of Antiochus into Judea, when he profaned the priesthood; and takes in also his second coming in, when he interdicted their worship, set up an idol in the temple, and interrupted the daily sacrifice.

2. Others count the two thousand three hundred days from the people's revolt, which was procured by Menelaus, which began in the year 141 of the reign of the Seleucids, /APC 1Mac 1; but Antiochus did not act his impieties till the next year after, viz. 142, in the 6th month and the 6th day; from whence if we reckon to the 25th day of the 9th month of the year 148, there will fall out precisely six years, three months, and eighteen days.

3. Others reckon a little otherwise, from the beginning of Antiochus's profanations to his death; from 143 to 148, taking in both years to the number. For though Judas Maccabeus recovered the city and cleansed the temple in 148, yet Antiochus was not dead till 149, till when the work was not finished.

4. Others make it to, begin in the year of the Selenides 145, and to end anne 151, two years after Antiochus's death, for the abomination of desolation was set up in the month Chisleu, /APC 1Ma 1:57, for not till two years after Antiochus's death was Nicanor overthrown with all his army. Thus Jacob Capell, and L'Empereur.

²⁵ [https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Albert_Barnes_\(theologian\)](https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Albert_Barnes_(theologian))

²⁶ <http://sacred-texts.com/bib/cmt/barnes/dan008.htm>

²⁷ https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Matthew_Poole

5. Others reckon not days, but sacrifices, (at two every day,) and restrain the time to fewer years, out of Maccabees.”²⁸

Matthew Poole here joins with Gill, Henry, Ellicott, and Barnes for the **unanimous** proposition that Daniel's prophecy was fulfilled during the reign of Antiochus Epiphanes, in a literal 2300 days. Poole simply cannot be read to support Miller's claim of the "year-day" principle, as applied to Daniel 8:14. Miller is now 0-5 among the Protestant commentators that were practically mandatory reading among Protestant preachers, during Miller's lifetime. We turn now to the **Pulpit Commentary**, which was finished about the time that Miller began preaching:²⁹

The period referred to is that between the desolation inflicted on the temple by Antiochus Epiphanes and its cleansing by Judas Maccabaeus. It is somewhat difficult to fix the exact space of time intended by these two thousand three hundred evening-mornings. Does it mean two thousand three hundred days? For this may be urged that this succession, "evening and morning," not "morning and evening," resembles **Genesis 1**. If this resemblance is intentional, then "evening-morning" means a space of twenty-four hours. If the days are literal days, then the space of time would amount to nearly six years and a half, if we take the year here as three hundred and sixty days.³⁰

Although we believe we have established that Miller intentionally lied about having the support of **all** of the Protestant Commentators - to the point of ridiculous overkill - we elected to peek at Joseph Benson, since he was taught at the knee of Charles Wesley.³¹ Since Ellen White was a Methodist, we thought it would be fair to include Methodist views in the solid, unanimous wall of agreement. Surely, a Methodist would support Miller's "year-day" principle? Wouldn't he?

By the *transgression of desolation* seems to be meant the harassing and ravaging of the city by the garrison of Antiochus, setting up an idol to be worshipped in God's temple, and, by that and other heathenish superstitions, profaning it, and also the host, or the Levites; persuading them, either by threats or enticements, to quit the worship of Jehovah, the true God, or to mix it with the worship of idols, contrary to the divine law. *And he said, Unto two thousand and three hundred days* — Hebrew, *Until the evening [and] morning two thousand and three hundred*. This signifies a space of about six years, and is to be taken from the first invasion of Judea by Antiochus, when he profaned the priesthood, and includes his second coming into that country, when he forbade the worship of God in the temple, and set up an idol there. After this time of two thousand three hundred days, or about six years from the first coming of Antiochus, it is here declared that the temple should be purged, or cleansed from the polluted or unclean things which Antiochus had brought into it, or from those things in it which he had defiled, by using them for idolatrous rites: see 1 Maccabees 4.³²

We have quoted from 7 different highly-acclaimed Protestant Bible Commentaries that were widely-available before 1844. Not a single one of them support Miller's contention that Daniel 8:14 should be interpreted in light of his ruinous "year-day" principle. A dubious principle, after all that was clearly at the nucleus of the foreseeable 1844 catastrophe. The immense damage that Miller caused with his dishonesty was foreseeable, given the massive number of eminent Protestant preachers that strongly-denounced Miller from their pulpits. Miller repeatedly stated publicly that **all** of the Protestant commentators supported his theory, obviously attempting to rebut the stinging denouncement of his theories by real live ministers. It should be clear beyond any reasonable doubt that Miller intentionally lied about this very crucial matter. He was highly-motivated to lie, given the withering attacks on his theories by Protestant preachers. Yet, the Protestant commentators he claimed supported him were **solidly-opposed** to his hare-brained theories. He intentionally deceived his largely-illiterate and uneducated followers, by causing them to think that his main theory on interpreting Daniel 8:14 was supported by mainstream Protestant commentators. **He knew they didn't**. Not only did none of them agree with him, but all of them agreed that the prophecy's fulfillment took place during the reign of Antiochus Epiphanes, hundreds of years before the birth of Christ. It would be hard to conceive of a more obvious lie, told so intentionally, when there was so much historical documentation pointing in the opposite direction. Miller simply must stand alone among religious figures in being caught telling such obvious, brazen and harmful lies.

28 <http://biblehub.com/commentaries/poole/daniel/8.htm>

29 https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Pulpit_Commentary

30 <http://biblehub.com/commentaries/pulpit/daniel/8.htm>

31 https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Joseph_Benson

32 <http://www.studydrive.org/commentaries/rbc/view.cgi?bk=26&ch=8>

Miller was a brutal debater and tireless preacher. In 1845, he reflected upon his work, "I labored extensively in all the New England and Middle States, in Ohio, Michigan, Maryland, the District of Columbia, and in Canada East and West, giving about four thousand lectures in something like five hundred different towns."³³ Miller was a very busy preacher. In 1843, he is said to have toured New England and western New York, preaching eighty-five times in eight weeks. He was renowned for vigorously browbeating anyone who dared question his fraudulent theories, even though most of the Protestant ministers pointedly excluded Millerites from meeting in their churches, and publicly denounced and ridiculed the movement.³⁴ For his largely illiterate and uneducated following, such behavior would have been very intimidating. They had no way of realistically challenging Miller's assertions. Why would they? He said his theories and predictions were supported by *all* of the Protestant commentators!

Worse, Miller operated with a very high conscious knowledge of his obvious legal wrongdoing. His legal back-ground and training implicitly demonstrate that he well knew he was breaking the law by repeating such an egregious and intentional falsehood:

"In addition to his service as Constable and Deputy Sheriff, Miller also served as a Justice of the Peace. This was again a position of considerable responsibility. In Miller's time, Justices of the Peace were nominated and appointed annually by the General Assembly. Originally they had power to try all actions of a criminal nature, where the fines came within the sum of forty shillings, and the corporal punishment did not exceed ten stripes. They could also try civil actions (other than actions of defamation, replevin [a procedure whereby seized goods may be provisionally restored to their owner pending the outcome of an action to determine the rights of the parties concerned— courtesy Google definition], trespass upon the freehold, and where the title of land was concerned), where the debt and other matters in demand did not exceed the sum of four pounds; and also determine on all specialties, notes of hand, and settle accounts not exceeding the sum of eight pounds. They could also bind over to be tried, by the County or Supreme Court, all criminal offenders the enormity of whose offenses surpassed their power to try."³⁵

Miller had a career as a magistrate judge in today's vernacular! Not only was he well aware of the law, but he had to have an understanding of the elements of criminal fraud as described above. He thus operated with what is known in the legal profession as very high *mens rea*. *Mens rea* means "evil intent." His knowledge of the law sets him apart from most ordinary criminal defendants, most of whom are legal laypersons. His legal background transformed his criminal scheme uniquely into one that was highly aggravated, long-term, well thought out, and thoughtfully planned. Miller not only blared his intentional falsehoods to his close associates, but broadcast them to the unsuspecting public using the Millerite periodicals described previously. We have easily demonstrated that Miller intentionally and repeatedly lied about his fraudulent scheme, in order to buttress his credibility, against the devastating attacks by Protestant ministers.

Were William Miller's victims persuaded to part with money or property as a result of his intentional deception?

Miller built a very large tabernacle in 1844, which sparked a public outcry about the massive amounts of money that was flowing into his 13-year old public ministry. Miller worked full-time at his ministry during that entire period of time. Millerites spent lavishly on the building of the Tabernacle, paying his personal traveling and living expenses and the same for a "large number" of other full-time evangelists; as well as supporting a booming publishing effort that usually gave away its pamphlets for free. \$2,000 was spent in a very short time in 1844 on these pamphlets. Clearly, this was huge sums of money that was taken from his largely uneducated following and never given back.³⁶ While we could find no evidence that Miller misappropriated money or spent it extravagantly on personal luxury, that is irrelevant in a criminal fraud case. You can fraudulently take money from rich victims and give it to Mother Theresa, and you can still be guilty of criminal fraud. Miller's

³³ http://www.academia.edu/1035050/A_Feast_of_Reason_The_Roots_of_William_Miller_s_Biblical_Interpretation_and_its_influence_on_the_Seventh-day_Adventist_Church, p. 29

³⁴ See John Dowling, *An Exposition of the Prophecies, Supposed by William Miller to Predict the Second Coming of Christ, in 1843*, (CROCKER & BREWSTER: BOSTON), 1840, and,

A. Cosmopolite, *Miller Overthrown: Or the False Prophet Confounded*, (ABEL TOMPKINS: BOSTON), 1840

<https://archive.org/details/expositionofprop00dow/>

<http://www.worldcat.org/title/miller-overthrown-or-the-false-prophet-confounded/oclc/23077631>

³⁵ http://www.academia.edu/1035050/A_Feast_of_Reason_The_Roots_of_William_Miller_s_Biblical_Interpretation_and_its_influence_on_the_Seventh-day_Adventist_Church, p. 14.

³⁶ <https://archive.org/details/SearsC.e.DaysOfDelusionAStrangeBitOfHistory1924>, p. 125.

ministry received the money to support itself and obviously had huge expenses and overhead. Miller traveled extensively, as already noted, throughout the Eastern United States, speaking to, in many cases, large and attentive audiences. Sometimes his messages were readily received. Other times they were ridiculed and mocked by a large percentage of those who came to listen. The result of his preaching over the next 12 years called together a group of people preparing for Christ's coming, estimated between 50,000 to 1,000,000.³⁷ That Miller didn't personally enrich himself or live a life of lavish luxury isn't the relevant inquiry. Obviously, given his blistering lecturing pace Miller supported himself for several years on the earnings of his ministry. From 1832 to 1844, William Miller kept a log of his preaching. He included in this log the texts that were used for each presentation. During this period he preached over 3200 times, or an average of more than 266 times every year. That he lived humbly and relatively frugally does not negate the fact that large amounts of money were taken from his followers and spent on a huge and elaborate ministry and his personal living and travel expenses. His ministry had dozens of full-time evangelists. There is no record that any of this was given back to his followers, when it became obvious that his predictions of Christ's return had failed, and failed miserably and publicly. Miller fulfilled the second "prong" of criminal fraud analysis. We could find no record that Miller made the slightest effort to make amends to his many victims, many of which ended up confined to insane asylums or the poorhouses. Miller was clearly guilty of criminal fraud and criminal conspiracy to commit fraud.

RACKETEER INFLUENCED AND CORRUPT ORGANIZATION "RICO" ACT ANALYSIS

The modern-day "Racketeer Influenced and Corrupt Organization" ("RICO Act")³⁸ was not in effect during Miller's lifetime, but it is interesting to analyze his intentional criminal fraud and widespread criminal conspiracy in light of modern sensibilities. The RICO act has been applied to many "White Collar" criminal schemes, including religious organizations.³⁹ Among the so-called "predicate acts" that Miller likely committed that would qualify him for a modern-day hypothetical prosecution include mail fraud (mailing out literature that repeated his intentionally deceptive statements about the support of Protestant commentators); Conspiracy (Miller employed numerous full-time ministers and had a booming publishing arm to further his fraudulent scheme); and Crossing state lines in connection with a conspiracy to defraud (Miller's incredibly exhausting lecturing schedule qualifies here). Other possible "predicate offenses" include money laundering, obstruction of justice and racketeering. There can be no doubt that in this day and age, Miller could have faced a variety of theories of criminal misconduct and conspiracy under the RICO Act, given the terrific financial and psychological trauma his lies and intentional fraud caused to his thousands of victims. These prosecutions inevitably result in multi-decades long incarcerations in the Federal prison system, especially where there are tens of thousands of victims, as here.⁴⁰ Miller's victims may have even been in the millions.⁴¹ Given the open-ended malleability of the RICO Act, William Miller would have been easily convicted on a Federal Grand Jury indictment, based on the foregoing analysis, were such crimes committed today.

In prison slang, Miller's conduct might not end up today as merely "The Great Disappointment." It might end up as an "All Day and a Night Bounce,"⁴² which under the law means a life prison sentence without possibility of parole.

37 <http://www.adventistheritage.org/article/51/resources/pioneer-stories/william-miller-second-advent-preacher>

38 https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Racketeer_Influenced_and_Corrupt_Organizations_Act

39 https://www.rutherford.org/publications_resources/john_whiteheads_commentary/should_the_catholic_church_be_sued_as_racketeers

40 <http://nymag.com/news/crimelaw/66468/index1.html>

41 *Enemies Within: The Culture of Conspiracy in Modern America*, By Robert Alan Goldberg, p. 71.

42 <http://aren.org/prison/documents/dictionary/words.htm>

CHAPTER THREE
ELLEN WHITE FALSIFIES
THE HISTORY OF THE REFORMERS

By Larry Dean, J.D.

ELLEN WHITE FALSIFIES THE HISTORY OF THE REFORMERS

By Larry Dean, J.D.

Adventism has always portrayed its cultish doctrinal development— particularly its bizarre Sabbath fetish— as a continuation and fulfillment of the Protestant Reformation. Adventists argue that had Reformers had more time and more “present truth,” they would have surely adopted the Sabbath in due time. The problem, it seems, was the Reformers lacked their own version of Ellen White. Such a modern-day “prophet” could have drastically sped up their learning curve. Or, alternatively, since the Reformers didn’t adopt the Sabbath, they must have fallen mischievously under the wicked sway of Rome and its errors. This is why the Mainstream Protestant Sunday worshipers of Ellen White’s time were smeared by Adventists as the “Harlot Daughters of the Whore of Babylon” and their houses of worship labeled the “Synagogues of Satan.”

These wildly-schizophrenic and contradictory theories are codified in the 1957 book, *Seventh-day Adventists Answer Questions on Doctrine*, which portrays Adventism as a continuation of “the noble line of witnesses such as Wycliffe, Luther, Tyndale, Calvin, Knox, Wesley, and other great leaders of the past.” (Leroy Froom, *et al.*, *Seventh-day Adventists Answer Questions on Doctrine* (Washington, D.C.: Review and Herald Publ. Assn., 1957, p. 9.) Ellen White glumly criticized the Protestant Reformer’s failure to adopt the Sabbath as follows: “It is a sad thing,” she pouted, “when a people claiming to be reformers cease to reform.” *The Spirit of Prophecy*, p. 185.

Indeed.

In other words, the Protestant Reformer’s failure to adopt Sabbatarianism were either instances of craven intellectual dishonesty and laziness; or alternatively, corrupt and cowardly capitulation to the authority of Rome. After all, Rome “changed the day,” right?

Wrong. The Protestant Reformers had varied reasons for rejecting the Sabbath, but what is crystal clear is that they all in fact did reject it. There is a complete **absence** of evidence that they did this under pressure from Rome. This chapter will analyze the actual reasons for the Protestant Reformer’s rejection of Sabbatarianism, based on their **actual** statements on the subject. It turns out the Reformers didn’t reject the Sabbath out of intellectual laziness or dishonesty. Nor did they fall under the corrupt sway of Rome. They rejected the Sabbath out of varied principles, most of which were based on the doctrine of *sola scriptura*. From their study of the Bible alone, they recognized that Sabbatarianism was nothing more than the attempted revival of a very ancient heresy.

WILLIAM TYNDALE

William Tyndale was quite the rascal among the Protestant Reformers. He took the bull by the horns, and never hesitated to speak his mind. The “bull” he took by the horns was the *Papal Bull*, actually. Ellen White praised him to high heaven, but by telling her *Great Controversy* readers only half the truth about him, she unmask herself as a villain of masterful, willful deception. First she tells us that he is a man of uncompromising biblical scholarship:

He fearlessly preached his convictions, urging that all doctrines be tested by the Scriptures. To the papist claim that the church had given the Bible, and the church alone could explain it, Tyndale responded: "Do you know who taught the eagles to find their prey? Well, that same God teaches His hungry children to find their Father in His word. Far from having given us the Scriptures, it is you who have hidden them from us; it is you who burn those who teach them, and if you could, you would burn the Scriptures themselves. *The Great Controversy*, pp. 24.

What she does not tell us is that Tyndale was powerfully opposed to Christians keeping the Jewish Sabbath. Here is what he said, rendered in the Old English of his era. We will explain the context of his statement subsequently:

And as for the Saboth, a great matter, we be lords over the Saboth; and may yet change it into the Monday, or any other day, as we see need; or may make every tenth day holy day only, if we see a cause why. We may make two every week, if it were expedient, and one not enough to teach the people. Neither was there any cause to change it from the Saturday, than to put difference between us and the Jews; and lest we should become servants unto the day, after their superstition. Neither needed we any holy day at all, if the people might be taught without it.

The above opinion of Tyndale was in response to a statement Thomas Moore made in regard to Martin Luther's statement of the reasons that Martin Luther wrote for rejecting the Sabbath. Thomas Moore was the chief apologist for Roman Catholicism of the age and an outspoken opponent of the Reformation. He lashed out against both Luther and Tyndale. Luther opposed the Sabbath on the basis of *sola scriptura*. Tyndale rejected it on the basis of a bull-headed, icon-busting authority and rowdy independence of the British Anglican Church from Rome. Meanwhile, Thomas Moore cited the authority of the traditions of the Catholic Church and claimed that there were no biblical grounds for abandoning the Sabbath. Here is what Moore said in response to Luther's *sola scriptura* arguments against Sabbath-keeping, again rendered in the written English of the era:

Now must he by that means condemn the church of Christ for that they sanctify not the Saturday, which was the sabbath day institute by God among the Jews, commanding the sabbath day to be kept holy. And albeit the matter of the precept is moral and the day legal, so that it may be changed, yet will there, I wene, no man think that ever the church would take upon them to change it without special ordinance of God, whereof we find no remembrance at all in holy scripture....Many things are there like, which as holy doctors agree, were taught the apostles by Christ, and the church by the apostles, and so comen down to our days by continual succession from theirs.

Ellen White never mentioned Tyndale's outrageous and inflammatory polemic against the Sabbath. This is yet another egregiously dishonest example of her treatment of historical fact. And she was just flatly **wrong** that Tyndale's doctrines came only from the Bible. Tyndale's and the English Protestant Church's iconoclastic position rejected both Moore's appeal to Catholic tradition AND Luther's reliance on *sola Scriptura* to repudiate the Sabbath. Tyndale's position was based on the English Church's avowed, iconoclastic independence from Rome AND its rejection of the Reformation's primary doctrine of *sola scriptura*. To this day, Anglican theology is based on the idea of a "middle way"– the "three-legged stool of Scripture, Reason, and Tradition." Ellen White thus managed to deliberately fabricate both Tyndale's actual basis for correct theology– which clearly was NOT *sola scriptura*; **AND** she lied by failing to disclose his outright and energetic repudiation of the 7th Day Sabbath. If she committed a sin through her dishonesty, it was a sin of omission. She wanted her readers to focus on the conspiracy fodder that Thomas Moore provided– the false claim that the Catholic Church had the authority to change the Sabbath.

ULRIC ZWINGLI

Ellen White's description of Ulric Zwingli could not possibly be more glowing. Many of the "facts" of this reformer's life that she cites - unfortunately - are nothing more than elaborate fabrications based on nothing but her unrecognized talent for literary fiction. Ellen should have written the Great American Novel. Actually she did write something very close to one– *The Great Controversy*. Only we will call it, instead, "The Great Religious Travesty." Here's her description of Zwingli's basis of theology:

The more he searched the Scriptures, the clearer appeared the contrast between their truths and the heresies of Rome. He submitted himself to the Bible as the word of God, the only sufficient, infallible rule. He saw that it must be its own interpreter. He dared not attempt to explain Scripture to sustain a preconceived theory or doctrine, but held it his duty to learn what is its direct and obvious teaching. He sought to avail himself of every help to obtain a full and correct understanding of its meaning, and he invoked the aid of the Holy Spirit, which would, he declared, reveal it to all who sought it in sincerity and with prayer. *The Great Controversy*, pp. 173-174.

Unfortunately for Adventists, Zwingli's submission of "himself to the Bible as the Word of God" and the fact that the Bible "must be its own interpreter" led him inevitably to unequivocally-reject the Saturday Sabbath, based on a literal reading of the New Testament:

If we celebrate it after the Jews on the same down on which they celebrate it, it were then ceremonial, because it were then bound to time, which is an element of this world – an outward thing. Or, if we thought that the Lord's day, that is the Sunday, were also bound to time, so that we dared not transpose it and the hearing of God's Word to another day, if necessity required it, for example at the time of harvest, we can place the observation and rest of the Sabbath on another day, or we may work the whole of the Sabbath after having heard the Word of God; but this is only in case of necessity; in all other cases we ought to let our relatives and our servants rest, as has already said, and the one bear the other's burdens.....The Sabbath is, so far as it is a ceremony, abolished, and no longer concerns us, for Christ has freed us therefrom, that is from the ceremonial part of it. Zwingli, *The Rise of the Reformation in Switzerland*. P. 157.

Once again, Ellen White stood strangely silent on **both** the fact of Zwingli's unequivocal rejection of the 7th Day Sabbath, as well as his complex reasons for doing so. She effusively praised him for his reliance on only the Scriptures and rejection of Rome's theology, but dishonestly omits analyzing how his reliance on Scripture led him to an outright repudiation of the Jewish 7th day Sabbath. Zwingli's deep reliance on *sola scriptura* led him directly to repudiate the attempted Judaizing heresy of his time. As per her Standard Operating Procedure, Ellen White cynically withheld this from the largely illiterate Adventist membership.

JOHN CALVIN

Ellen White painted yet another glowing portrait of the great Geneva reformer, John Calvin, but curiously neglected to mention Calvin's harsh, outright repudiation of the 7th Day Sabbath:

Across the gulf of a hundred years, men stretched their hands to grasp the hands of the Lollards of the time of Wycliffe. Under Luther began the Reformation in Germany; Calvin preached the gospel in France, Zwingle [sic] in Switzerland. The world was awakened from the slumber of ages, as from land to land were sounded the magic words, 'Religious Liberty. *The Spirit of Prophecy*, vol. 4, p. 93.

A thoughtful, quiet youth, already giving evidence of a powerful and penetrating mind, and no less marked for the blamelessness of his life than for intellectual ardor and religious devotion. *The Great Controversy*, p. 219

.....

Ellen white saw nothing short of "the hand of God" and "Providence" in the arrival of Calvin to Geneva. *The Great Controversy*, p. 219

.....

For nearly thirty years Calvin labored at Geneva, first to establish there a church adhering to the morality of the Bible, and then for the advancement of the Reformation throughout Europe. *His course as a public leader was not faultless, nor were his doctrines free from error.* But he was instrumental in promulgating truths that were of special importance in his time, in maintaining the principles of Protestantism against the fast-returning tide of popery, and in promoting in the reformed churches simplicity and purity of life, in place of the pride and corruption fostered under the Romish teaching. *The Great Controversy*, p. 236.

Upon the Bible, he knew, the heretics rested their faith. He determined to study it, and discover, if he could, the secret of their joy. In the Bible he found Christ. *The Great Controversy*, P. 221.

Calvin's "powerful and penetrating mind," his "intellectual ardor," and his "religious devotion" unaccountably led him wide astray of Adventist Sabbath doctrine, since these sterling personal qualities were instrumental to his powerful and unequivocal rejection of the 7th Day Sabbath:

Early Christian writers are wont to call it typical, as containing the external observance of a day which was abolished with the other types on the advent of Christ. This is indeed true....there can be no doubt, that, on the advent of our Lord Jesus Christ, the ceremonial part of the commandment was abolished. He is the truth, at whose presence all the emblems vanish; the body, at the sight of which the shadows disappear. He, I say, is the true completion of the sabbath....If superstition is dreaded, there was more danger in keeping the Jewish sabbath than the Lord's day as Christians now do. It being expedient to overthrow superstition, the Jewish holy day was abolished; and as a thing necessary to retain decency, orders and peace, in the Church, another day was appointed for that purpose.....It was not, however, without a reason that the early Christians substituted what we call the Lord's day for the Sabbath. The resurrection of our Lord being the end and accomplishment of that true rest which the ancient sabbath typified, this day, by which types were abolished serves to warn Christians against adhering to a shadowy ceremony. Calvin, *The Institutes of Christian Religion*, Book 2, 28-34.

How is it possible that Ellen White could paint so many of the Reformers in such glowing and gushing terms, then dishonestly omit any reference to their unanimous and unequivocal rejection of the 7th Day Sabbath? Adding insult to injury, she then nastily slandered their reasoned and studied refusal to adopt Sabbath-keeping as the actions of the "harlot daughter of the Whore of Babylon" and their Sunday-observing Churches the "Synagogues of Satan." This represents willful dishonesty and deliberate, outright fraud on a host of levels. One simply cannot read *The Institutes of the Christian Religion*,

John Calvin's *Magna Opus*, and not be convinced that he rejected the 7th Day Sabbath on fiercely-loyal adherence to the doctrine of *sola scriptura*. The *Institutes* were widely-available in the 19th Century. It is clear that Ellen White had access to them, and the bevy of research assistants under her employ could not have missed Calvin's harsh denunciation of the 7th Day Sabbath. Nor could her *de facto* personal historian, J. N. Andrews. Elsewhere in this book we point out his documentation in Andrews' historical writings of things that flat-out make Ellen White's claim that the pope changed the Sabbath impossible. Ellen White's inference that Calvin obsequiously submitted to Rome on the matter of the Jewish Sabbath is simply deliberate intellectual dishonesty of the highest magnitude.

MARTIN LUTHER

Ellen White's worshipful and gushing depiction of Martin Luther could not possibly be more positive. Of all the Reformers, Luther is portrayed as nothing less than some sort of deity:

Foremost among those who were called to lead the church from the darkness of popery into the light of a purer faith, stood Martin Luther. Zealous, ardent, and devoted, knowing no fear but the fear of God, and acknowledging no foundation for religious faith but the Holy Scriptures, Luther was the man for his time; through him God accomplished a great work for the reformation of the church and the enlightenment of the world. *The Great Controversy*, P. 120.

Once again, Ellen White is silent on the fact that Luther's bullheaded acknowledgment of "no foundation for religious faith but the Holy Scriptures" compelled him to follow the well-worn path of the other Reformers. He too, unequivocally-rejected the 7th Day Sabbath, and did so based partly on his strong belief that it was nothing but the revival of the ancient Judaizing heresy. In answer to one of Adventism's favorite proof-texts, Luther restated his endorsement of the Noahide Laws:

Jesus was not speaking of the ceremonial law but of the moral law, which was in existence long before Moses and the patriarchs. It is, in fact, the universal law of humanity, though Moses gave the clearest expression to it. Similarly, the Sabbath or rest day is a universal law in order that the people may assemble for the worship of God. But that they should assemble on the seventh day applies only in the case of the Jews, and the observance of this day is not incumbent on other peoples.

Luther puckishly-argued that those who kept the "Jewish Sabbath" should also practice circumcision:

If Carlstadt writes more about the Sabbath, Sunday must give way and the Sabbath—that is, Saturday—must be kept holy. He would really in all things make Jews out of us and require circumcision.

Finally, Luther, made a clear statement that his rejection of the Sabbath was based solely on scriptural principles:

Those who judge that by the authority of the church the observance of the Lord's day instead of the Sabbath day was ordained as a thing necessary, do greatly err. Scripture has abrogated the Sabbath day; for it teaches that since the gospel has been revealed, all the ceremonies of the old law can be omitted. And yet, because it was necessary to appoint a certain day that the people might know when they ought to come together, it appears that the church [the apostles] designated the Lord's day for this purpose; and this day seems to have been chosen all the more for this additional reason, that men might have an example of Christian liberty and might know that the keeping neither of the Sabbath nor of any other day is necessary. (emphasis added)

Luther emphatically rejected the 7th Day Sabbath as a continuing obligation for Christians. He could not have made himself any clearer. He did so based on both principles of *Sola Scriptura*, and Christianity's historic animus to the Judaizing heresy. And yet Ellen White dishonestly omitted any discussion of his frequently-stated objections to the Saturday Sabbath; while at the same time extolling his doctrinal reliance on scripture alone. This is the textbook definition of "irony."

SUMMARY

Had Ellen White merely omitted just one of the major Reformer's views on the Sabbath, that would have been troublesome enough. This lapse would be a cause for deeply drawing into question her intellectual honesty and/or the rigor of her research. *But she completely omitted **any** mention of the unequivocal Sabbath rejection by all four of these major Reformers!* And then she compounded this abjectly-craven dishonesty by declaring that the churches founded by these

brave and intellectually-honest Reformers were “Synagogues of Satan” and “Harlot Daughters of the Whore of Babylon,” because their members merely followed the reasoning of their founders, and attended Church on Sunday. She thus obliquely accused the Reformers of either cowardly caving to the traditions of Rome and/or intellectual dishonesty and/or laziness. None of those were the case!

As we have demonstrated elsewhere, Ellen had a habit of cynically-making command decisions to withhold critical facts from her largely-illiterate followers. She withheld the stringently anti-Sabbatarian views of the Reformers because they demolish her Sabbath-Centric views of history. After all, they reached these views in isolation from the papacy. Like her suppression of the Noahide Laws from Adventist membership, Ellen is to be faulted for failing here to plagiarize **enough**. She had a moral duty to steal the Protestant Reformer’s anti-Sabbatarian polemics and to fairly present them to Adventists. This she did not do.

The Reformers unanimously and unequivocally rejected 7th Day Sabbath observance. There’s an obvious reason why they did. They were opposed to anything remotely resembling what they considered to be a heresy. They bravely subjected their lives and fortunes to the perils of defying the Roman juggernaut. And then, they did the same with the sporadic outbreaks of the Judaizing Heresy that misconstrued the intellectual ferment of the Reformation. The Judaizers of the 1500’s thought the break with Rome was fertile ground for the revival of their ancient heresy. They were wrong. The Reformers were as brave at confronting them as they were at confronting the errors of Rome. They rejected the Sabbath for a wide variety of reasons and their arguments spanned the divide between the English and Continental Reformation and the Swiss and German Reformation movements. What is clear from

this study is that the pope had nothing to do with their views, and more often than not the Reformer’s repudiation of the 7th Day Sabbath was based on deep adherence to the principles of ***sola scriptura***. They quickly realized that these transparent attempts to revive the Judaizing heresy were incompatible with the overall sense of the New Testament. They snuffed out this early form of dark Adventism in its crib. This is why Ellen White never mentions their thoughts on the Sabbath. Had she written in their day and time, she would have been immediately smoked out as one of the destructive Judaizing heretics. Elsewhere in the 9th Edition, we analyze Adventism’s claim that the “suppression” of the Sabbath is one of history’s “Great Religious Cover-ups.” The REAL religious cover up in the Christian world today is the fact that Ellen White systematically misrepresented, and suppressed from Adventist Church membership the courageous anti-Sabbatarian views of the Protestant Reformers, and managed to deftly revive the Judaizing Heresy in the 19th Century.

These courageous and brilliant Reformers are some of history’s all-time great lights. They became something beautiful for Jesus. We respect and admire them with all of the sincerity, but none of the sadness, of T.S. Eliot’s hero. No scuttling across silent seas here. These crazy-brave Protestant Reformers roared across the historic landscape of Christianity, majestic and mighty.

CHAPTER FOUR
THE TWO FACES OF FRANK M. WILCOX

by Kerry Wynne

THE TWO FACES OF FRANK M. WILCOX

by Kerry Wynne

I was stunned when I realized the significance of what I had just found in my library of SDA books! Could the author of this unabashed defense of Ellen G. White's prophetic gift really be F. M. Wilcox? Was not Frank M. Wilcox unequivocal in his assertion that her claim to be an inspired prophet was fraudulent as recorded in the "leaked" stenographer's transcript of the **1919 Bible Conference Minutes**? Soon my amazement turned to anger! How could such a thing be possible? How could anyone do such a thing? What could possibly justify such whopping perfidy on the part of a man whose appearance of piety earned him the honor of serving as the editor of the official church paper of Seventh-day Adventists, *The Review and Herald*, from 1911 to 1944?

The book in my hands was his ***The Testimony of Jesus***, published in 1934— just 15 years after he stated that he did not believe her writings were any more inspired than those of any other author. Had it not been for the 1974 discovery, theft, and later unauthorized publication (*Spectrum* magazine, 1979) of this "bomb shell" stenographer's transcript of the secret 1919 meeting— one convened to decide what should be done about Ellen White's fraudulent prophetic claims— we could look back on Frank Wilcox as an Adventist leader of the highest integrity. General Conference President, A.G. Daniells, who conducted the meeting, understood the danger to Adventism that this transcript represented, so he ordered it to be sealed for a minimum of 50 years. He put it in a plain paper bag and banished it to the furthest depths of the huge vault at the General Conference Headquarters in Washington, DC, where **Dr. F. Donald Yost** found it in 1974.

This smoking gun transcript shows the meeting's participants agonizing over the Ellen White problem. Should they repudiate her and deal with the havoc that would ensue, or should they continue trying to cover-up her prophetic blunders? If they decided to continue the present cover-up, how would they keep the truth about her from the Church's seminary students? They discussed her prophetic blunders, biblical and historical errors, and blatant plagiarism in cautious terms. Each participant seems aware that saying too much could finish his or her denominational career. Yet, despite this fear, the hard facts spill out into the open and are addressed with painful caution. That even one of the participants was willing to risk his or her career to speak out on this explosive issue is, in itself, evidence that the Ellen White problem had become impossible to ignore.

Indeed, the transcript reveals that Wilcox was one of the most vocal participants in denouncing Ellen White's prophetic claims. He declares his opinion that her writings are not any more inspired than those of anyone else:

I would like to ask, Brother Daniells, if it could be accepted as a sort of rule that Sister White might be mistaken in details, but in the general policy and instruction she was an authority. . . It seems to me I would have to accept what she says on some of those general policies or I would have to sweep away the whole thing. Either the Lord has spoken through her or he has not spoken through her; and if it is a matter of deciding in my own judgment whether he has or has not, then I regard her books the same as every other book published. I think it is one thing for a man to stultify his conscience, and it is another thing to stultify his judgment. It is one thing for me to lay aside my conscience, and it is another thing for me to change my judgment over some view that I hold.

Could he have changed his mind during those 15 years that followed?

We now turn to a consideration of how the problems with Ellen White as revealed by the 1974 discovery of the transcript of the *1919 Bible Conference Minutes* might have influenced Dr. Bacchiocchi to challenge her prophetic claims with the publication of his 1977 book, *From Sabbath to Sunday*.

100+ YEARS OF ENABLING

While our readers will find some repetition of what they have already learned, we are now going to present some of what we have already discovered more in the context of proving what Ellen White and her contemporary and subsequent enablers knew, and, to the best of our ability, when they knew those things.

Dudley M. Canright was the most prominent Seventh-day Adventist leader to apostatize. In earlier years he was a constant companion of James and Ellen White. They even went on an extended camping trip together in Colorado. Few of the

pioneer leaders of Adventism had such a close relationship. Unfortunately for the Whites, this relationship afforded Canright an opportunity to get a first-hand look at Ellen White's prophetic blunders. Apparently when he had accumulated enough evidence to see that she was a fraud, he began to revisit her teachings. He began to study the Sabbath doctrine in depth, but secretly so. By 1887 he was ready to make his break. He stunned SDA leaders not only by his apostasy but with a body of scholarly research which proved that unless the church could come up with better biblical and historical support for its Sabbath doctrine, the (then) present status of it was that it could not possibly be true. He proved, for example, that it was impossible that the Catholic Church could have "changed" the Sabbath from Saturday to Sunday.

Fast-forward to 1974. Samuele Bacchiocchi had been preparing his doctoral dissertation for years to present to a committee of scholars who would review his research. His degree was to be in church history, and he had chosen to write about the history of the Sabbath. We conjecture that the prospects of facing this committee caused him to realize that his approach to Colossians 2:14-17, a known barrier to Sabbatarianism in Catholicism, would have to appear to be based on principles of good scholarship. This is another way of saying that he knew he could not use the traditional defenses that his Seventh-day Adventist up-bringing had provided. We believe that this realization is what led to his bizarre theory that the "shadows" referred to the extra rules and regulations imposed on the observance of the Jewish dietary laws and Sabbaths rather than to the ordinances themselves. It had a nice ring to it, was entirely new in concept, and it was not a simple matter to refute the concept.

A suppressed chapter out of Seventh-day Adventist history helps to put all of this into perspective. The pioneer Adventist leaders of the 1880's did not appear to have any good answers to Canright's attacks on their belief system, so they launched a campaign to smear his personal character. He was accused of apostatizing because he was jealous of Ellen White's power and wanted a higher position in the Church. Somewhat later the rumor was started that Canright had recanted his apostasy on his death-bed and affirmed his belief in Ellen White and the Sabbath. One such account has him weeping because he had forfeited his eternal life. Interestingly, Canright had anticipated that the Church would likely start such rumors after his death, and in every book he published he included a section entitled "My Present Standing" to make it more difficult for such rumors to attain credibility. This idea we credit to an article by former Adventist, "Wiredog," on his blog at:

<https://outofadventism.wordpress.com/2011/04/08/canright-be-wrong-give-it-a-rest/>

Also, on March 8, 1916, Canright signed an affidavit attesting to the fact that he had not recanted Adventism. (He died May 18, 1919.) You can see a photocopy of this affidavit at this Internet link, and you can see the text of it by going to our historical time-line to 1916.

<http://outofadventism.files.wordpress.com/2011/04/affadavit2.jpg>

Also, see our historical time-line for 1916 for the text of the affidavit.

Courtesy of the Robert K. Sanders' collection of Adventist-related documents, we are able to present evidence that he did not recant between 1916 and his death in 1919. In 1939, the pastor of the Belden Avenue Baptist Church, Howard C. Fulton, responded to an inquiry by a certain Brother Keithly regarding whether Canright had ever recanted. Fulton responds, as you will see in a photocopy of this letter (See the historical time-line for 1939.) that he has a statement from Canright's niece, put in writing by Canright's daughter, Mrs. Genevieve C. Day [Some sources list her last name as "Dey"], that there was no truth to these rumors. The niece was a Seventh-day Adventist, and she had taken care of him while he was in the hospital where he died. The probable connection here was that Canright had pastored a Baptist church in Grand Rapids Area some time after leaving the Adventist Church.

In **1888**, Adventist leaders published the Church's first anti-Canright book, ***Replies to Elder Canright***, anticipating that he would release a full-length anti-Adventist book shortly. Canright did publish such a book, ***Seventh-day Adventism Renounced***, a year later in **1889**. Thanks to the Church jumping the gun, Canright was able to reference his refutations of their rebuttals to the page numbers of ***Replies to Elder Canright***. Because early Adventist leaders liked to put everything in writing, we have a record of exactly what Church leaders knew and when they knew it regarding the serious problems with their Sabbath doctrine. Subsequently the Church published a full-length version of its anti-Canright book, ***Replies to Elder Canright's Attacks on Seventh-day Adventists*** (Review and Herald), in **1895**. Canright revised his book several times between 1889 and 1914 (See the 1914 edition of ***Seventh-day Adventism Renounced***). We have a wealth of evidence, therefore, of the exchange of arguments for and against the Sabbath between Canright and the Church leaders of his day, including his rebuke to those leaders for knowing that for forty years they had been unable to explain away the fatal-to-

Sabbatarianism implications of Colossians 2:14-17. He knew a lot about the Church's struggle to defend its Sabbath doctrine since he had preached in favor of the Sabbath for decades as a high-profile SDA leader. We can see that after reviewing Canright's research on this key passage, Bacchiocchi had no choice but to develop his new theory that the "shadows" that Paul labeled "obsolete" represented the man-made rules of the Judaizers, rather than the ordinances themselves. At the same time we can easily see why he could not, in his dissertation, follow critical analysis of the theory that the Catholic Church "changed" the Sabbath from Saturday to Sunday. He would have been the laughing stock of the dissertation committee because those scholars knew that this explanation of Sabbath abandonment was historically impossible. (While a few irresponsible officials of the Catholic Church have boasted that the Church "changed the day," the Church's official position has nearly always been that Sabbath abandonment took place during the time of the apostles and during the life-time of the "first pope," or St. Peter.)

Well before Canright's apostasy, and way before Bacchiocchi's day, J.N. Andrews, the earliest real Sabbath scholar of the Advent Movement, cited historical sources that stated that Sunday observance was already pervasive by the end of the second century (or 200 AD). In his 1873 revised edition of *History of the Sabbath and the First Day of the Week*, he quotes a respected very early historian, **Joachim Meander** (1650–1680), who said this:

Now let us read what Neander, the most distinguished of church historians, says of this apostolic authority for Sunday observance:

"The festival of Sunday, like all other festivals, was always only a human ordinance, and it was far from the intentions of the apostles to establish a divine command in this respect, far from them, and from the early apostolic church, to transfer the laws of the Sabbath to Sunday. Perhaps at the end of the second century a false application of this kind had begun to take place; for men appear by that time to have considered laboring on Sunday as a sin. (Emphasis by authors)

The absurdity of Ellen White's Roman Catholic Church Theory is self-evident. Andrews could not possibly have failed to see that White's theory was contrary to all the facts available to him at the time. Canright had not discovered anything new, and Bacchiocchi had not stumbled onto very much that Andrews and Canright had not already known. Bacchiocchi's research merely gave additional clarification to the process of Sabbath "abandonment" and put a more exact date on when the process had fully matured— 140 AD. Certainly, the process had come to its full development, since by 200 AD it was considered to be a sin to work on Sunday.

It is important for our readers to understand that Andrews, Canright, Bacchiocchi and the four of us who wrote this book, concede that Sunday observance was "universal" by the end of the second century as well as that there have always been small pockets of Sabbath-keeping believers. When we side with Dr. Bacchiocchi on the 140 date, we mean that by this time the vast majority of Christians throughout the world were not keeping the Jewish Sabbath; that the primary recognition of the Sabbath concept was to celebrate it as a festival day at certain points of the liturgical calendar, and that they were worshiping on Sunday. Additionally we know that the Greek Orthodox churches never kept the Sabbath because their well-kept records prove this, and we believe that all the evidence points to the fact that the Church at Rome got its doctrines and practices from the East long before there was such a thing as the papacy or Roman Catholic Church.

Even though Dr. Bacchiocchi was either ignorant of the overwhelming supremacy of the Eastern Church during these early centuries or chose to ignore this fact, he tacitly conceded that Ellen White had lied about her Sabbath visions, and he was forced to develop a set of alternative theories to maintain his personal agenda— to demonstrate, somehow, that the Western Church was never-the-less responsible for the so-called "change of day." The replacement theory he developed to explain the phenomenon of Sabbath "abandonment" in the West— the Jewish Persecution Theory— was not accepted by biblical scholars because it contrasted badly with the facts of secular and ecclesiastical history. It didn't help, either, that Bacchiocchi was forced to concede that he could not prove any link between sun worship and the adoption of Sunday observance by Christians. We will discuss this key concession of his in a subsequent chapter.

Seventh-day Adventist leaders pretended the twin disaster of Bacchiocchi's insult to Ellen White on Colossians 2:14-17 and the pope changing the Sabbath never happened. He became the first Adventist theologian to avoid losing his job as a result of challenging Ellen White on things that she credited to visions from God. Conservative Adventists were appalled. Adventism dared not acknowledge the existence of some of the newer anti-Sabbatarian arguments, much less try to refute them, because even the mention them could sow seeds of doubt that might cause a perceptive follower of Ellen White to start questioning

things that would be “better left alone.” Instead, the Church continued to pay Dr. Bacchiocchi’s university salary, and he continued to write books to defend his work from the growing storm of criticism from both Adventists and Evangelical sources that the publication of ***From Sabbath to Sunday*** had created. By 1995 Dr. Bacchiocchi was forced to respond to his critics by publishing ***The Sabbath in the New Testament***. In this new book he appears to have opened to the possibility that the Sabbath of Colossians 2:14-17 was a reference to a ceremonial Sabbath feast day — perhaps an annual one — in essence, returning to the traditional SDA position on this text. He seems to have moved closer to trading the difficulties of his iconoclastic views for the impossibilities of the traditional Adventist interpretation. In 1998 he published ***Sabbath under Crossfire*** which was designed to answer the charges leveled at him by his anti-Sabbatarian opponents during the previous two decades. It also modified his position on what exactly was nailed to the cross in Colossians 2:14-17. (See the historical time-line section for 1995 and 1998) His effort to calm the controversy he stirred up was futile. The anti-Sabbatarian movement continued to strengthen. During the later years of his career he published a set of three books that instruct Christians in how to keep the Jewish sacred days that he believed still have relevance which extends into the Christian dispensation— thus still maintaining his unavoidable corollary teaching that Christians must keep all of the Jewish ordinances mentioned along with the weekly Sabbath in this passage.

Thirty years after Dr. Bacchiocchi published his troublesome defense of the Sabbath doctrine, the Church commissioned **Dr. Skip MacCarty** of Andrews University Pioneer Memorial Church to write another full-length apology for the Church’s Sabbath doctrine. One would think that Adventist leaders would want to bury the memory of the Bacchiocchi Sabbath fiasco forever, but such was not the case. Unfortunately, MacCarty’s steering committee appears to have guided him in the preparation of a book that would merely sugar-coat Dr. Bacchiocchi’s ideas. (You can read a complete analysis of his teachings in our book, *Doctors Bacchiocchi, MacCarty, and du Preez Wreak Havoc with the Sabbath and Ellen White.*)

In the aftermath of the Bacchiocchi fiasco, the Church paid the salaries of other Adventist theologians to develop alternative theories that could explain both Sabbath abandonment and Colossians 2:14-17 in ways that did not conflict with Ellen White. Later we will look at the **Out of Easter Theory** as articulated by **Kenneth A. Strand** and the **Animal Sacrifices Theory**, developed by **Dr. Ronald du Preez**, entitled ***Judging the Sabbath: Discovering What Can’t Be Found In Colossians 2:16***. Additionally we will look at the “**Dual Day Theory**” developed by the General Conference of Seventh-day Adventists as an alternative to Dr. Bacchiocchi’s failed **Jewish Persecution Theory**.

Dr. Bacchiocchi proved Ellen White’s claim that God had shown her that the Roman Catholic Church had changed the Sabbath was factually incorrect. If Christianity is supposed to be rational, the rules of logic demand that she be classified as a false prophet. However, this *modus operandi* was nothing new for Adventist leaders. Just three years after the Seventh-day Adventist Church officially organized in 1863, Iowa Conference leaders, **Snook** and **Brinkerhoff**, documented her lying cover-ups and failed prophecies in their 1866 book, ***The Visions of E. G. White Not of God***. They did not even know about her habit of claiming that God had directly inspired material that she copied from other writers. However Church officials were not impressed. Ellen White herself was one of the primary founders of the Seventh-day Adventist Church.

In 1867, just four years after the Church organized, Thomas J. Preble left Adventism after just four years of membership and published his critical book, ***The First Day Sabbath Proved***. Preble, clearly a brilliant biblical scholar and historian, presented most of the arguments against Sabbatarian that modern anti-Sabbatarians use today. Additionally he used the facts of ecclesiastical history to prove that the Catholic church could not possibly have “changed” the Sabbath,” and demonstrated beyond any reasonable doubt that SDA biblical “scholar,” J.N. Andrews, would have to have deliberately twisted historical facts to teach that Sabbath abandonment was the result of some kind of sinister apostasy. Specifically he disassembled Andrews’ claim that significant numbers of the Waldenses kept the Sabbath during the Dark Ages. There is no doubt that Andrews was forced to face his errors, since he and Preble carried out an extensive written debate about these matters, yet Andrews did not withdraw his error-ridden book, *History of the Sabbath*.

Also in the year 1974, Andrews University history professor, **Donald R. McAdams**, found disturbing similarities between Ellen White’s book, ***The Great Controversy***, and a book written some years prior by First Day Advent writer, **H. L. Hastings**, entitled ***The Great Controversy Between God and Man— Its Origin Progress and End***. He notes that even her chapter titles have similar names and were arranged in similar order. (Cited in **Douglas Hackleman’s**, “***Ellen White’s Habit***,” referencing McAdams, ***Ellen G. White and the Protestant Historians***, 1974.)

Problems with ***The Great Controversy*** were not new. In 1911 the Church was forced to spend \$3,000 to revise this book

due to anger over the fact that she had borrowed so much of material. \$3,000 was a lot of money back in 1911. The revisions were demanded by Church leaders because many of her sources were still not properly credited. The trouble in 1911 began when Battle Creek Sanitarium physician, **Dr. Charles E. Stewart**, stumbled across evidence that she was using material she had found in the works of other authors while claiming and/or implying that the source for this information came to her as a result of direct, divine revelation. Stewart took the time to do some research to find out how extensive her copying was. In a booklet, ***A Response to An Urgent Testimony*** he published in 1907, he placed her borrowing alongside of the original sources she had not credited. Although he did not intend for this booklet to receive wide distribution, the demand for it was very great, especially from individuals within the Adventist community in Battle Creek.

In **1976 Dr. Ronald Numbers**, then a professor at the Church's medical school, Loma Linda University, published his book, ***Prophetess of Health***, in which he demonstrated that Ellen White got her ideas about health reform from other authors who had preceded her by as much as 20 years—in particular a certain Dr. Jackson. As usual, the problem of her copying was minor compared to her lying about where that information came from. Her actions embarrassed God because much of her health teachings turned out to be dead wrong. For example, benefits of drinking coffee and tea have been thoroughly established by science just within the last 10 years. Ellen White said that God showed her that it was a sin to drink these beverages.

Recall that In 1982 SDA pastor, **Dr. Walter Rea**, published his devastating book, ***The White Lie***, which became a *New York Times* best seller. Dr. Rea was granted special access to the personal library of Ellen White for a project he was doing, and while he was looking through her books he discovered that she had copied freely, nearly word for word, from these other authors, while claiming that God had shown her these things in vision. In his book, Dr. Rea demonstrated her copying to the point of over-kill. Then in 1990, an eight-year, exhaustive study conducted by SDA theologian, **Dr. Fred Veltman**, concluded that over 80% of the material in ***The Desire of Ages*** was “borrowed” from other writers.

We will address the problem of Ellen White's habit of “plagiarism” later. For the moment, we add that a noted Seventh-day Adventist Sabbath and Ellen White scholar, Kevin Morgan, has demonstrated that, technically, the term, “plagiarism,” is not accurate in describing how she handled her borrowed source material. In Morgan's book, *White Lie Soap*, Chapter 6, he explains that her work was far from being totally devoid of source attribution and that much of the source material she used was highly synthesized and often injected with original thought. Specifically, in regard to her book, *Great Controversy*, he notes that her frequent use of ellipses indicated that she was not trying to hide the fact that she was utilizing other sources. He adds that A.G. Daniells was mistaken when, in a secret session of the 1919 Bible Conference, he complained that there were pages and pages in her writings, and specifically in the *Great Controversy*, where she copied material without any indication that she was borrowing the material.

We counter that this kind of defense of Ellen White's actions represents a “Band-Aid” approach to the problem, since the real trouble is that she made a variety of claims that the over-all process of writing her books, including *The Great Controversy*, was guided by direct, divine revelation to one degree or another—that however you label her borrowing processes, she lied about how she got the information and inspiration for her books. Along with being deceitful about her sources, many of the prophecies of future events found in the *Great Controversy* did not come true as predicted. We will deal more with these problems in a subsequent chapter. Also, the context of A.G. Daniells' comments related to her plagiarism problem was that her plagiarism was just one part of the evidence that her prophetic claims were fraudulent. In fact, that particular session of the 1919 Bible Conference was to discuss the fact that their Church prophetess was a fraud and to develop a consensus of whether or not it would be in the long-term best interests of the Church to continue its cover-up of this fact. We further observe that it is remarkable that there are present-day apologists for Ellen White who have far more faith in her than did the General Conference president and a whole host of other SDA leaders back in 1919. Most of the delegates recorded in the transcript of this meeting tacitly expressed their conviction that she was a fraud. (See the chapter on the real history of Adventism for additional information and documentation.)

As the decades have passed since Dr. Bacchiocchi proved that Ellen White lied about the source of her information for her claim that the Roman Catholic Church changed the Sabbath, one SDA theologian after another has attempted to develop a satisfactory theory to replace her impossible claim. Not one of them has succeeded. If Ellen White had met the biblical tests of a true prophet, no replacement theories would be necessary.

Also, in recent decades researchers uncovered problems with the claims of Ellen White in regard to her statements about the direct, divine revelations she claimed to have had in regard to the tithing system. At first, James White rejected the 10%

of income concept. In 1861 he said, **"We do not urge the Israelitish tithing system** as embracing the whole duty of the believers in the third [angel's] message....**That system was necessary in God's plan of the Levitical priesthood;** but in the closing message [it] presents a far greater call for something of the kind." (*R&H, April 9, 1861, p.164*). (Editor's note: This "closing message" was a reference to an article about giving that appeared in an early and obscure Advent Movement publication.) Instead the Church adopted a different method of collecting money from its flock, called "Systematic Benevolence." This fund raising method didn't work very well, and eventually the Church adopted the same Israelitish tithing system that James White had rejected earlier. None other than D.M. Canright pushed for its adoption after seeing that the Systematic Benevolence program wasn't working.

Ellen White claimed that God first showed her that the Systematic Benevolence was the plan God wanted for His Church, and later she claimed that God had apparently changed His mind and wanted them to adopt a variation of the Israelitish system that demanded 10% of each member's income. As we will demonstrate in another chapter, this bastardization of the Israelitish tithing system could not have even been applied to Israel during the Theocracy period of its history. We will enlarge on the subject of Ellen White and tithing elsewhere.

Our research has uncovered a collection of SDA "smoking gun memos," both written publicly and in secret— that prove that the Church founders knew there were impossible problems with the Church's Sabbath doctrine more than 10 years before the denomination formally organized in **1863**. We mentioned the 1866 findings of **Snook and Brinkerhoff, the 1867** publication of ***The First Day Sabbath Proved*** by **Thomas Preble**, and the highly damaging evidence brought forward by **D.M. Canright** beginning in 1887, the **1919 Bible Conference Minutes**, the 1982 Walter Rea book, ***The White Lie***, and the ***Veltman Report*** which was published in *Ministry* magazine in **1990**. However, the business-as-usual way Adventism has used deception and propaganda to cover up the truth about the lack of a factual basis for the three pillar doctrines of Adventism—the Sabbath, Ellen White's prophetic gift, and the Doctrine of the Investigative Judgment.

In (circa) 1853, **J. N. Andrews** attempted to refute the idea, expressed in an anti-Sabbatarian paper by **O. R. L. Crosier**, that the Sabbath was not instituted at Creation. This proves that Andrews, from the very beginning of his Sabbath research efforts, was familiar with the logic and facts behind the concept that the Sabbath was not given to His people until the Exodus. In the same paper, **"Review of Objections to the Seventh-day Sabbath,"** Andrews concedes that Sunday observance began during apostolic times:

1. We have never said that the keeping of Sunday as a festival, began with Constantine, or originated from the law which he enacted in its behalf. On the contrary, we believe that the Papal apostasy as stated by Paul began even in the days of the apostles. 2 Thess. 2. Hence we are not surprised that sometime after the days of the apostles, men began to pay some regard to Sunday, as also to Good Friday and to Holy Thursday. (p. 8, Para. 8, "Review of Objections to the Seventh-day Sabbath.")

This document is not dated, but it seems to have been written no later than 1853. You can access this document at this web address for the Early Advent Pioneer Resource Library # 1:

<http://temcat.com/L-1-adv-pioneer-lib/Advent-Pioneer.htm>

While Ellen White and J.N. Andrews were embellishing their impossible Roman Catholic Church theory, a contemporary of theirs, Scottish biblical scholar, **Robert Cox**, had been conducting exhaustive research on the Sabbath-Sunday Question. We know that Andrews was familiar with Cox's work because he quotes him, but only to the advantage of his own Sabbatarian agenda— something made possible because Cox's document contains both the arguments for and against Sabbath-keeping. In **1865**, just two years after the **1863** official organization of the Seventh-day Adventist Church and only one year prior to the unmasking of Ellen White as a false prophet in **1866** by Snook and Brinkerhoff's book, ***The Visions of E. G. White Not of God***, Cox published his comprehensive two-volume set, ***The Literature of the Sabbath Question***.

As a catalog of ideas, Cox's work was about as objective as a book on this controversial study could be. However, as neutral as his presentation was, **just the facts as listed in his work proved one thing for certain, and that is that Sabbatarianism has always been opposed by the Christian Church on well-articulated biblical grounds, and many times has been opposed on both biblical and historical grounds. Cox demonstrated that this principle is true whether looking at the writings of the Early Fathers, the Reformers, or the theologians and biblical scholars from the Reformation until the present time.** Andrews cites Cox in his later versions of his (Andrews) ***History of the Sabbath***,

according to Canright, but he seems oblivious to the many fatal-to-Sabbatarian concepts cataloged within its pages. At the conclusion of his section on the writings of the Early Fathers in *Volume One*, Cox made these generalizations:

Did They Consider the Sabbath as Abolished by Christ?

It is universally admitted that they often speak of it as abolished with the other Jewish institutions, and that, if they ever recognize a primeval Sabbath at all, they nowhere allude to it as an institution surviving in Christian times. In the fact of this silence, Holden sees no adequate reason for concluding that they did not however believe in the continued existence of a Sabbath instituted at the Creation; while Domville maintains that the whole tenor of their teaching about the Sabbath is incompatible with the notion that they so believed. (See Heylyn, Part I, Ch. ii. iii. iv.; Holden, 42, 330; Domville, ii.130-148; Cook, ii. 291-8; James,142.) It was a prevailing opinion among them, as after-wards among the Reformers, that the Creator's rest on the seventh day, and likewise the Sabbath of the Jews, were typical of the Christian's rest in the present world from evil works, and in the next from sublunary toils and troubles. This "spiritual Sabbath" on earth they frequently contrast with the "carnal Sabbath" or bodily rest of the Jews (Neale, 88; Domville, I. 295-9; but see Holden, 323-330, and James, 123-6), which no writer before the promulgation of Constantine's Edict recommends to be observed by Christians on Sunday.

Did the Fathers Regard the Lord's Day as either the Sabbath Shifted to the Beginning of the Week, or a Substitute for the Sabbath?

All who claim any knowledge of the works of the Fathers say these ancient writers usually, if not invariably, speak of the Lord's Day as an independent institution, of which neither the Fourth Commandment nor a primeval Sabbath is once referred to as the foundation (Heylyn, Part II. Ch. Ii.; Taylor, *Life of Jesus*, Part II. Sect. Xii Disc. x. ss 24, and Duct. Dubit., B. II.ch.ii. Rule VI. SS, 49-53— *Works*, Heber's ed., iii.29; xii.415-421; Baxter, *Pract. Works*, xiii. 385; Cook, ii.291-303; Holden, 334; Bannerman, 130; Neale, 90, 237; Domville, I. 291-9; Bunsen, *Hippolytus and his Age*, iii.76). Certainly both institutions were long kept, each on its appropriate day, by the oriental Christians; but whether even the converts from Judaism observed the Saturday Sabbath so early as the first century is disputed by some, in spite of Acts xxv.8 and xxviii. 17, Rom. XIV 5, Gal. iv.10, Philip. Iii. 6, and Col. Ii.16, 17. (Bingham, *Antiq. Of the Christ. Church*, B. XIII Ch. IX. Ss 3; Kneader, *Hist. Of the Christ. Church*, I. 410; III. 421-2; Holden, 335; James, 157, 164, 169, 170, 179-1818, 193-4, 255; Coleman, 533; Cox, 279-281, 527-9.) How the two institutions were respectively kept, is told by Bingham, B. xvi. Ch. Viii., and B. xx.ch.ii and iii.

Did the Fathers Ascribe the Observance of Sunday to the Injunctions or Example of Jesus or his Apostles?

In regard to the Fathers who wrote before the reign of Constantine and whose opinions are alone of importance, Domville, after elaborate inquiry, answers this question in the negative; nor can he discover that any of them has appealed to the Christian Scriptures in proof of a Christian Sabbath (vol. i. p. 302, and Supp.; see also Cox, 531, note). Equally unable is Mr. Baden Powell to find that "these writers in any instance pretend to allege any Divine command, or even apostolic practice, in support of its observance." (Kitto's *Cyclop. of Bibl. Lit.*, ii. 270, 1st ed.) Two of them however, Barnabas and Justin Martyr, assign other reasons, of which those given by the one writer differ from those given by the other; each, as Domville shews, assigning as one of his reasons what is either too absurd or too improbable for belief. The credible reason alleged by Justin is, that on Sunday Jesus Christ our Savior arose from the dead. (Domville, i. 307-9.)

In addition to the work of Cox, we know from our study of J.N. Andrews' work that he was also familiar with Peter Heylyn's 1636 book, ***History of the Sabbath***. Access to the 1636 edition of this book has always been available to researchers. This authoritative book saved the Church of England from becoming a nation of Sabbath-keepers by demonstrating the biblical and historical impossibilities of the concept that Christians must keep the Jewish Sabbath. We will tell you more about the research of Heylyn and Cox elsewhere. No wonder neither J. N. Andrews nor Ellen White cared to say much about its content.

Despite his knowledge of the works of Heylyn, Cox, and "apostate" Adventist and scholar, Thomas J. Preble, J.N. Andrews published a revised and expanded edition of his 1859 classic, ***History of the Sabbath and the First Day of the Week***, plus a new book, ***Testimony of the Fathers of the First Three Centuries Concerning the Sabbath and the First Day***, in

1873. With the subsequent release of these books, we have proof that Andrews had immersed himself even more deeply in a wealth of information that should have told him that the papacy could not possibly have been responsible for a shift from Saturday to Sunday observance— whether Sabbatarianism were true or not. Andrews' writings are inconsistent in that he conceded on one hand that Sabbath "abandonment" was virtually immediate— evidence, he said, that the "apostasy" began very early— but still pushed the idea that the Roman Catholic Church, which did not come into existence until around 600 AD, "changed the day." He appears to have placed more faith in the supernatural manifestations of Ellen White's visions than in the facts that were hitting him smack in the face from the pages of the history books he was reading.

A wide number of eyewitnesses of various persuasions testify to the supernatural activity that frequently accompanied Ellen White's visions. These testimonies cannot easily be dismissed as merely stories concocted to substantiate a legend, and some of the eye-witness accounts come from outside the control of Adventist circles. After studying a variety of statements by these witnesses, it is our opinion that it is not reasonable to conclude that her visions were not of supernatural origin. Even table-tipping was observed by an eyewitness at one of her visions. While we will have much more to say about this subject in a subsequent chapter, we cannot be too harsh on J. N. Andrews for going along with what he believed were special revelations directly from God.

THE "SISTER" CHURCH'S RESPONSE

The Worldwide Church of God and the Seventh-day Adventist Church developed from the same group of post-Millerite Sabbath-keeping believers. This group split shortly after the Great Disappointment of 1844 over the **Doctrine of the Shut Door** adopted and taught by Ellen G. White after a vision showed her that it was the truth. The Church of God Seventh Day split into two factions in 1933, and eventually Herbert W. Armstrong branched off of one of those factions, and his followers metamorphosed into what later became **The Worldwide Church of God** in **1968**. Thus, these denominations had shared the same Sabbath heritage from the beginning. (See *Wikipedia*, "Grace Communion International.") Note: This is the new name adopted by The Worldwide Church of God a number of years after it repudiated the Sabbath and allegedly became a fully Gospel-oriented denomination.

In **1995**, The Worldwide Church of God renounced Sabbatarianism, opened its doors for "business" on Sundays, and became a more Gospel-oriented denomination. No greater rebuke to the perfidy of Adventist leaders could be offered. The turning from a religious cult to an orthodox, grace-oriented, Evangelical Christian denomination had never happened before to our knowledge.

Unfortunately, despite ridding itself of the heresy of Sabbatarianism, the cultic behavior of the ministry of the Worldwide Church of God continued despite the change in theology to conform to a more "orthodox" view. Splinter groups broke away and continued to teach that Christians must keep the Jewish Sabbath. It appears that the desire for income over ethics was still extant, and that the split that occurred was anticipated so that the ministry, despite whether they accepted the changes or not, were still guaranteed an income, seeing as the "replacement" Sabbatarian church was already set to go.

See: <http://www.exitsupportnetwork.com/resrch/oiu%27s/oiu3pt2.htm#The%20United%20Church%20of%20God%20is%20Born>

Never-the-less, the story of the circumstances that led its sister Sabbath-keeping denomination to repudiate Sab-batarianism represents a stern rebuke to the refusal of Adventist leaders to acknowledge the (by now) unequivocal evidence against its Sabbath doctrine that had accumulated by 1995. To follow is the story of how it all happened.

Dale Ratzlaff, a Seventh-day Adventist pastor and Bible teacher, left Adventism in **1981** because he could not find biblical support for Ellen White's Doctrine of the Investigative Judgment. Eventually he also studied his way out of the Sabbath doctrine by reading the research of Robert D. Brinsmead, Carson, and others. In **1990** Ratzlaff published his own refutation of the Sabbath doctrine, ***Sabbath in Crisis***, which since has been renamed ***Sabbath in Christ***, and is now widely recognized as the most extensive and authoritative book on the Sabbath heresy. Meanwhile the leaders of **The Worldwide Church of God** were searching for answers due to most of Armstrong's prophecies revolving around 1972 and 1975 failing to come to pass. Even in his last book before he died, Armstrong was claiming the end time events leading up to the return of Christ would come about before the end of the twentieth century (*The Mystery of the Ages*; p. 298).

Somehow one of the leaders of The Worldwide Church of God came across the writings of Brinsmead and Ratzlaff. The WWCG ordered large numbers of Ratzlaff's book. These findings were presented to the Pastor General, **Joseph W. Tkach**,

Sr., by his son, **Joseph W. Tkach, Jr.**, and a few trusted associates. After studying the evidence, Joseph W. Tkach Sr., initiated the doctrinal change that did away with the Sabbath doctrine, and in 1995 this former cultic denomination became a Grace-oriented, Sunday-observing Church. Joseph Tkach Sr. died in 1995, and his son, Joseph Tkach Jr., fully implemented the doctrinal changes that led to the denomination's relatively recent acceptance into the National Association of Evangelicals (WWCG Video, "Called to Be Free", 2004).

There is no doubt that this astonishing development struck terror into the hearts of Seventh-day Adventist leaders everywhere, but there was no effort on their part to follow in the footsteps of their sister church. Apparently they observed the financial disaster that ensued as a result of The Worldwide Church of God's profound doctrinal changes, and they decided the financial risk of major doctrinal reform was too great.

Money has been a huge problem for both denominations. Here are several remarkable similarities that beg comparison:

1. Both churches had a prophet figure that required their followers to tithe and give generously to the organization on the basis that the "church" is the one and only true church.
2. Both denominations taught a version of the Jewish tithing system that is so twisted in its concept that it could not have been applied to Israel back in the days of the theocracy.
3. Both organizations developed financial and moral corruption that was way out of proportion to membership size.
4. Both the Seventh-day Adventist Church and The Worldwide Church of God developed this unprecedented financial and moral corruption at almost the same time.
5. Both denominations appear to have developed this large scale corruption because their leaders became increasingly aware that they were following false prophets and that they were teaching their followers to believe what they, themselves, did not believe.

Here is a summary of these parallel developments:

SEVENTH-DAY ADVENTIST CHURCH – The Seventh-day Adventist Davenport Scandal came to a head in 1980-1981 after multiple revelations of the problems with Ellen White in the 1970's. SDA physician, Dr. Donald Davenport, had managed to bilk over 25 million dollars of SDA Church funds– mostly tithe funds– from various SDA entities, as well as from private SDA investors. (You will learn more about this scandal in a subsequent chapter on Adventist corruption. It is being mentioned here because it is relevant to the story of these sister denominations at this point.) A quick look at our historical time line for the 1970's lists a set of astonishing developments, including the discovery and subsequent publication of the *1919 Bible Conference Minutes* in 1974-1975, which proved that SDA leaders had known she was a fraud since no later than 1919.

WORLDWIDE CHURCH OF GOD - A huge financial scandal came to light in 1979 after a series of revelations that the cult's founder and prophet, Herbert W. Armstrong, had prophesied things that did not happen, the surfacing of the moral problems of Herbert W. Armstrong and his son, Garner Ted Armstrong, and their lavish life-styles. For a comparison with the details of the Adventist record of corruption, here is a condensed version of what happened with The Worldwide Church of God:

Garner Ted Armstrong blamed Stanley Rader (legal counsel to HWA) for his two-time ousting from his father's church. Garner Ted and other former and discontented members of the Worldwide Church of God prompted the State of California to investigate charges of malfeasance by Rader and others involved with the AICF [Ambassador International Cultural Foundation]. By 1979, California Attorney General George Deukmejian had brought civil charges against the church, and the church was placed into an investigative financial receivership for one year.

The group of dissidents also gained the attention of Mike Wallace who investigated the church in a report for the TV program *60 Minutes*. Using documentary evidence obtained, Wallace brought to light lavish secret expenditures, conflict of interest insider deals, posh homes and lifestyles in the higher ranks, and the heavy involvement of Stanley Rader in financial manipulation.

Wallace invited Rader to appear on *60 Minutes* April 15, 1979. Wallace showed Rader a secret tape recording in which Herbert Armstrong had alleged Rader was attempting to take over the church after Armstrong's death, reasoning that the donated tithe money might be quite a "magnet" to some evangelists. Rader abruptly

ended the interview.

Rader, with the approval of Herbert Armstrong, was spending millions to fend off any financial audit or examination of the Church's income and expenditures by litigating the issue all the way to the United States Supreme Court, several times, unsuccessfully. Having lost in the courts, Rader lobbied the California legislature to force the California Attorney General to drop the charges against the church and him. Under Rader's lobbying, the California State Legislature passed legislation known as the Petris Bill, signed into law by Governor Jerry Brown, which changed the applicable law of California so that the Attorney General had no authority over churches in such circumstances.

THE INVESTIGATIVE JUDGMENT COVER-UP

It was her habit to take a doctrine introduced by someone else and report that God had shown her in a vision that it was the truth. It was Ellen White who, in this manner, chose the doctrines she wanted for her new Church and “gave” them God’s seal of approval. Her greatest triumph was her adoption and promotion of the Doctrine of the Investigative Judgment. This remarkable feat of theological gymnastics rescued the Adventist Movement from the jaws of defeat and turned it into the biggest little money making church there has ever been.

The Great Disappointment of 1883-1844 was based on William Miller’s poorly conceived concept of what he thought were prophetic time periods that all came together to “prove” that Jesus would return at that time. Later we will study the convoluted calculations that led to his prophetic blunder. Ellen White claimed that God had shown her that He didn’t want anything changed on Miller's charts and said that God had placed His hand over the errors to create a set of circumstances that would test His people. His conclusion that Jesus would return in 1843 (and then 1844) was based on a single word, mistranslated by the team that produced the King James Bible, rendered as “cleansed.” Miller concluded that the sanctuary that was to be “cleansed” was Earth, which would mean that Christ would come and destroy the world with the brightness of His coming. When Christ did not return in 1844, an Advent believer by the name of Hiram Edson had a sudden epiphany while walking through a cornfield. He “saw” that the sanctuary cleansed in 1844 was the sanctuary in Heaven. The Advent believers then studied the earthy sanctuary services and determined that in 1844 Jesus passed from the Holy Place of the Heavenly Sanctuary into the Most Holy Place. Drawing a parallel with the operations of the earthy sanctuary, the Advent believers concluded that a judgment process began in Heaven in 1844. An Advent Movement preacher by the name of O. R. L. Crosier was the one who actually articulated the Doctrine of the Investigative Judgment in its complete form. Ellen was “shown” in vision that Crosier's concept was correct. Not much later, Crosier renounced his own teaching, denouncing it as just a crazy idea that had come into his head.

This judgment, according to Ellen White, started with the dead in 1844, and at some point unknown to anyone but God, the judgment of the living begins after the last dead person has been judged. When the judgment gets to the name of a living person, that person doesn’t know it, and his or her eternal fate is sealed at that very moment. For logistical reasons, the concept of the Investigative Judgment requires that the dead be truly unconscious, which necessitates the Adventist doctrine of soul sleep.

Down through the history of the Church, many an Adventist leader has questioned this doctrine and lost his Church employment. The Doctrine makes no sense in light of the Gospel, and as the Gospel of salvation by Grace began to make small inroads into Adventism, more and more perceptive Adventists began to see that there was no possible way to reconcile the two. No one had ever been able to suggest a good reason why the sanctuary in Heaven would need to be cleansed. With Jesus' death on the cross as the ultimate sacrifice, why would the temple service continue in Heaven when it ceased for Christians on Earth?

In the year 2002, the most respected Seventh-day Adventist theologian of all time, **Dr. Raymond F. Cottrell**, published a complete expose of the Church’s cover-up of its problems with the Sanctuary Doctrine after he retired from Church employment. This essay, “*The ‘Sanctuary Doctrine:– Asset or Liability’*” (2002), is the written version of a speech he presented before the Adventist Forum in San Diego. In it he dismantled the single most important doctrine of Adventism— the **Doctrine of the Investigative Judgment**— which is also known as the **Sanctuary Doctrine**. Dr. Cottrell demonstrated to the point of over-kill that there is no biblical support for it— a highly significant development since for nearly two decades he had chaired the top secret committee that the General Conference president had formed to try to find biblical evidence for the doctrine.

Ironically this top secret and entirely unsuccessful Sanctuary Doctrine Committee had disbanded only a few years before the Church defrocked **Dr. Desmond Ford** at Glacier View Ranch in 1980 for voicing his reservations about the Investigative Judgment at a forum at Pacific Union College. The General Conference president at the time, Neal C. Wilson, knew, of course, that the secret sanctuary committee had not been able to find any biblical support for the doctrine before he flew out to Colorado to preside over the proceedings at Glacier View. Dr. Cottrell had chaired the committee. We will have more to say about Wilson's behavior surrounding this situation shortly.

Dr. Raymond F. Cottrell is widely recognized both inside and outside of Adventism as the greatest of all SDA theologians. That he rejected the Sanctuary Doctrine is bad news for Adventists. It means that the Great Disappointment of 1844 was a huge theological joke rather than the inaugural event God ordained to bring the Seventh-day Adventist Church into existence for the express purpose of warning the world about the beginning of the so-called Investigative Judgment in 1844 and the consequences of Sabbath breaking. Worse yet, the total lack of biblical support for this doctrine makes Ellen White's claim that God used deception to test the faith of the Millerites appear blasphemous. As we mentioned earlier, she alleged that God held His hand over certain parts of William Miller's prophetic charts so His people would not see their own errors:

["I have seen that the 1843 chart was directed by the hand of the Lord, and that it should not be altered; that the figures were as He wanted them; that His hand was over and hid a mistake in some of the figures, so that none could see it, until His hand was removed."](#) (*Early Writings*, p. 74.)

Then she alleges that God played another joke on His people later by "un-fooling" them:

["The hand of the Lord was removed from the figures, and the mistake was explained. They saw that the same prophetic periods reached to 1844, and that that same evidence which they had presented to show that the prophetic periods closed in 1843, proved they would terminate in 1844."](#) (*Early Writings* p. 236)

Ellen White's brilliant shifting of the blunders of the prophetic calculations of William Miller to God and the shifting of the cleansing of the sanctuary on Earth to the sanctuary in Heaven were very successful, but the price she paid for this feat was committing the "White Collar" crime of blasphemy— charging God with using deception in dealing with His own people.

We will trace the history of the Church's cover-up of the problems with the Investigative Judgment doctrine in subsequent sections, along with the problems of the Sabbath and Ellen White. Many thousands of hours of research over ten years have brought us to the following conclusions, for which we will offer abundant support in the pages of our formal study. Please withhold your judgment until you have read the entire book. The Adventist version of Sabbatarianism is much more complex than that of other Sabbath-keeping churches. Rome was not built in a day. Neither will the Adventist concept that Rome changed the Sabbath be easily refuted, since this concept has become part of the DNA of Adventism. Here is what we see:

1. The more evident it became to leaders of the Movement that the Sabbath doctrine is biblically and historically impossible, the louder the propaganda from the Church— in particular the fantastic, fairy-tale story of how the Roman Catholic Church supposedly "changed the Sabbath" from Saturday to Sunday as the result of a diabolical conspiracy.
2. As the factual basis for Adventism was destroyed by a series of block-buster revelations about the Church's cover-up of Ellen White and the weaknesses of the Sabbath doctrine in the 1970's and 1980's, the Seventh-day Adventist leadership became more corrupt than any other Christian denomination of comparable size. There are two relatively recent large-scale scandals at the General Conference level that subsequent leadership has refused to investigate and prosecute. One example will suffice. There is no sign that the new General Conference president (as of June 2010), Ted Wilson, plans to clean up the mess created by *The David Dennis Affair* which surfaced previous to the administration of the General Conference president who preceded him. (Note that David Dennis is the innocent party here, and that he was the whistle blower who called attention to a host of illegal activities at the General Conference, including the buying of General Conference positions of leadership and the ADRA financial scandal.) It is also interesting to note that Ted Wilson is the son of former General Conference President, Neal C. Wilson, who shamelessly lied about the proceedings at the 1980 Investigative Judgment "trial" of Dr. Desmond Ford at Glacier View Ranch. Neal C. Wilson flew back to GC Headquarters in Washington after the trial and

announced that the committee unanimously rejected Dr. Ford's ideas when in fact the committee unanimously agreed with Dr. Ford on six of his eight major tenets and partially agreed with him on the other two points. The following year Wilson received a public written rebuke for his lying which was signed by around 40 SDA scholars who witnessed what really happened at the trial. This document is known as the ***Atlanta Affirmation***.

3. The single most important reason why Seventh-day Adventist Sabbatarians are unwilling to give up their belief in the Sabbath is their non-biblical view of the nature of the 10 Commandments. The Scriptures explain that the set of 10 Commandments represented a covenant between God and Israel. The Bible does not teach that they represent a complete moral code in and of themselves, and God proved this fact Himself by giving Moses additional laws, not written in stone, which have equal moral value, such as laws against the non-adultery sin of fornication (sex between a man and a woman, neither of whom are married), bestiality, and homosexual relationships. The sins of adultery and fornication are strongly differentiated in Jewish law and culture. Nor are sins of the heart included. By contrast, St. Paul listed a number of sins of the heart that will keep a person out of Heaven. The New Covenant, then, provides a far more complete picture of what a life lived according to the influence of the Spirit of God is like.

4. The reason for the development of this non-biblical view of the 10 Commandments seems to be the failure of Sabbatarian leaders— and in the case of Adventism, specifically the pioneers of the Advent Movement— to use good Bible study methods. Sabbatarianism is a pleasing theory because it gives the believer a wider role in the working out of his or her own salvation. Adventism was not strongly confronted with the Gospel of Grace until 1888 when Wagner and Jones presented the concept of salvation by faith alone at the Minneapolis General Conference session. The True Gospel message was rejected by the Church at that time, and it is widely acknowledged that Seventh-day Adventists maintained a strong legalistic approach to Christianity for almost the next 100 years largely as a rejection of their message. It seems to us that when someone is confronted with Scripture they do not wish to believe, they alter it in order to get Scripture to conform to their beliefs. William Hohmann has spent a significant amount of time analyzing the errors of logic that have created the Sabbatarian belief model, including inference, assumption, drawn out conclusions, proof-texting, altering or redefining words and terms, and the violation of the rules of Critical Thinking. See Bill Hohmann's presentation of logic and Bible study methods in his chapter, "Does Religion Have To Make Sense?"

We believe the evidence we have provided regarding the specific Sabbatarian theology of the Seventh-day Adventists, as well as Adventist theology in general, demonstrates very serious flaws, not only in regard to the theology and methodology of Sabbatarianism, but also explains the resultant abuses of power and position that the flawed theology has produced. It is also interesting to note that the official salvation doctrine of Seventh-day Adventists, or Progressive Sanctification, is suspiciously very much like the Roman Catholic view of how a person is saved, or a combination of faith and works.

CHAPTER FIVE

THE “GENOCIDE EXCEPTION” TO THE SABBATH:

*Adventists Violate the Sabbath with impunity
as long they are willing participants in Genocide.*

By Larry Dean, J.D.

THE “GENOCIDE EXCEPTION” TO THE SABBATH:

Adventists Violate the Sabbath with impunity as long they are willing participants in Genocide.

By Larry Dean, J.D.

“He has made us competent as ministers of a new covenant—not of the letter but of the Spirit; for the letter kills, but the Spirit gives life.” — 2 Corinthians 3:6

Adventism’s explicit disobedience to the Apostle Paul’s repeated warnings against the Judaizing heresy has not resulted in good outcomes. The Mosaic Law cannot change the human heart. Paul, the leading expert among the Apostles on the Law, made himself abundantly clear in the above text. As we have shown in several new chapters in ***Lying For God***, the New Testament has a strong and consistent theme: the Sabbath was nailed to the Cross after Jesus repeatedly violated it during his earthly ministry. Adventism’s contra-historical and unbiblical revival of Sabbath-keeping 1800 years after the Resurrection has had mixed effects, at best. As we have demonstrated in another chapter, the blossoming of financial scandals after the Adventist world was repeatedly rocked by doctrinal upheavals late in the 20th century has had a causal relationship with general moral decline of the Church leadership. Doctrines that are not founded on sound biblical exegesis all-too-often have a deleterious moral effect. Aberrant doctrines founded on a dishonest ideology with no basis in the Bible or history cannot possibly lead to good outcomes. “By their fruit, ye shall know them.” Adventism made a calculated decision early in its founding to un-moor itself from the fabric of history. It teaches “Another gospel” that bears no resemblance to historic Christianity. ***The Great Controversy*** - which is Adventism’s ***Book of Mormon*** - represents nothing short of a totalitarian and blatantly dishonest rewriting of history. According to George Santayana, “Those who do not learn history are doomed to repeat it.” Mark Twain waggishly-modified Santayana’s maxim by declaring “History doesn’t repeat itself, but it does rhyme.” ***The Great Controversy*** “rhymes” with the Judaizing heresy that St. Paul so stringently denounced in the ***Book of Galatians*** and elsewhere in his letters. This chapter defines the moral morass that the institution of Adventism has subjected itself to by its willful disobedience of Paul’s clear statements in Galatians.

The repeated history of Adventist participation in genocide and/or being on the wrong side of history’s marked evolution towards greater and greater protection of human rights has had a sinister repetitive rhyme to it. Intertwined with this sad history is Adventism’s adamant insistence on the primacy of the Sabbath above and beyond all other commands of the Decalogue. Ellen White saw a “halo around the Fourth Commandment,” and declared that the Sabbath was the greatest of all Commandments. It appears that this overemphasis on the 4th Commandment and giving it a thoroughly unbiblical place of primacy has had more than an incidental deleterious effect on Adventism’s history of actively participating in the violation of human rights, up to and including genocide. This chapter studies and analyzes that checkered, consistent and disturbing history.

THE CIVIL WAR AND THE ANTI-SLAVERY MOVEMENT:

Adventism sits it out on the sidelines.

“Is not this the kind of fasting I have chosen: to loose the chains of injustice and untie the cords of the yoke, to set the oppressed free and break every yoke?” — Isaiah 58:6

It is not overstating the case to declare that the spearheading of the anti-slavery movement surrounding the events of the Civil War was Protestantism’s finest hour— its zenith of power and influence in America. The Protestant churches actively defied the federal Fugitive Slave Act by being the driving force for the Underground Railroad that assisted many thousands of slaves to escape to freedom in Canada. Protestant churches were used as “stations” in this massive, active and coordinated effort, and hid and succored slaves fleeing from Southern slave-owners. Many Northern Protestant churches were burned to the ground by outraged slavery bounty hunters. Henry Ward Beecher, widely-regarded as the most flamboyant anti-slavery preacher, was the target of a \$500,000 bounty raised by a consortium of Southern slave owners. The bounty would have been paid to anyone that brought Beecher back to the South, “dead or alive.” Beecher famously-mocked and ridiculed those Southerners as cowards and charlatans in his stem-winding, fire-eating sermons. His church famously bought rifles for the Kansas anti-slavery militias, and derisively called them “Beecher Bibles.” Beecher passed the offering plates around in his church, where his soaring, electrifying oratory convinced his parishioners to donate their

wedding rings to buy freedom for escaped slaves.¹ The bravery of these Protestant abolitionists is historically unique, and almost beyond belief.

Roman Catholicism did not take a direct role or official position on the active assistance of fugitive slaves. Newly-arrived Catholic immigrants provided a grossly out-sized share of the men who fought and died on the Federalist side of the Civil War. While precise statistics on Catholic service in the Civil War are unknown, the vast majority of the Irish and thus Catholic community sided with the Union over the Confederacy. One Catholic brigade served with distinction in combat, losing over half of its numbers at both Antietam and Fredericksburg. Further casualties at Chancellorsville and Gettysburg reduced its size to mere regimental strength. By 1864, the Irish Brigade was disbanded due to the extremely-severe casualty rate, but not before winning the praise of the Northern public and encouraging the enlistment of many more Irish Catholic Americans. Yet, the overwhelming majority of Catholics in the North supported the Union war effort, if for no other reason than to prove the loyalty of their Church and ethnicity to their adopted homeland.² Seven Union generals were Irish-born while an estimated 150,000 Irish-Americans fought for the Union during the war. More than 200,000 German Catholics fought for the Union.³ Four Italian-American Catholics were Union generals, including General [Luigi Palma di Cesnola](#), who was wounded, and who received the [Medal of Honor](#).⁴ At the 1862 [Battle of Fredericksburg](#), the Union [Irish Brigade](#) charged up [Marye's Heights](#), suffering 41.4% casualties. During the [Battle of Gettysburg](#) in 1863, the Irish Brigade held a [Catholic mass](#) before facing Pickett's Charge.⁵ The archbishop of New York, "Dagger" John Hughes, who built St. Patrick's Cathedral, was a very important figure in the Northern war effort. He strongly supported the Union. Abraham Lincoln consulted him a number of times during the war. And he was instrumental in calming New York after the draft riots.⁶

Adventism, by glaring contrast, encouraged its members NOT to sign up for the Union effort and its support of the fugitive slave effort amounted to primarily lip service.⁷ James White acknowledged Adventism's manifest lack of participation in the war, and attributed it to the nascent sect's obsessive focus on the Sabbath and the Ten Commandments:

But for reasons which we will here state, our people have not taken that part in the present struggle that others have....The attention of many was turned to Sabbath Keepers because they manifested no greater interest in the war and did not volunteer. In some places they were looked upon as sympathizing with the rebellion.....The fourth precept of that Law is "Remember the Sabbath Day to keep it holy;" the Sixth says, "Thou shalt not kill."⁸

Ellen White, in turn, bitterly and publicly criticized President Lincoln's prosecution of the war during the North's darkest hours, predicting the ultimate defeat and collapse of the Union; the entry of Great Britain on the side of the Confederate States; and the continuation of slavery after the war ended.⁹ She characterized the war as one **against Sabbath Keepers**:

There was need of moving with wisdom to turn away the suspicions excited against Sabbath-keepers. We should act with great caution. "If it be possible, as much as lieth in you, live peaceably with all men." We can obey this admonition, and not sacrifice one principle of our faith. Satan and his host are at war with commandment-keepers, and will work to bring them into trying positions. They should not, by lack of discretion, bring themselves there.— *Testimonies*, Vol. 1, p. 356 (January, 1863).¹⁰

White actively discouraged Adventist enlistment in the war, as always placing the Sabbath above all other considerations:

"The position which our people have taken relative to the perpetuity and sacredness of the law of God contained in the ten commandments, is not in harmony with all the requirements of war. The fourth precept of that law says, "Remember the

1 <http://www.plymouthchurch.org/history/article388259.htm?links=1&body=1>

2 <http://www.acton.org/pub/religion-liberty/volume-21-number-4/onward-catholic-soldiers-catholic-church-during-am>

3 https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/German_Americans_in_the_American_Civil_War

4 https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Luigi_Palma_di_Cesnola

5 https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Irish_Americans_in_the_American_Civil_War#Irish_service_to_the_Union

6 http://www.fathersforgood.org/ffg/en/big_four/civil_war_catholic.html#sthash.OpB4hC8Y.dpuf

7 <http://www.oakwood.edu/goldmine/hdoc/blacksda/champ/>

8 http://dedication.www3.50megs.com/egwtestimony_civil%20war.html

9 <http://dedication.www3.50megs.com/egwprophecy3.html#bitter>

10 <http://www.whiteestate.org/issues/MilitaryService.html>

Sabbath day to keep it holy;" the sixth says, "Thou shall not kill." *Review and Herald*, August 12, 1862 ¹¹

The *Review and Herald* defended White against the ensuing outcry caused by her intemperate remarks, just two weeks later:

“This is no time for Christian gentlemen to give way to feelings of prejudice, and virtually charge us with teaching Sabbath-breaking and murder. You had better all go to God with this matter, and secure to yourselves a humble, teachable spirit; then if any of you are drafted, and choose to have a clinch with Uncle Sam rather than to obey, you can try it. We shall not contend with you, lest some of you non-resistants get up a little war before you are called upon to fight for your country.” *Review and Herald*, Aug. 26, 1862.¹²

If there was any possible ambiguity to her opposition to Adventists fighting against slavery and to preserve the Union, Ellen cleared up any misconceptions:

I was shown that God's people, who are His peculiar treasure, cannot engage in this perplexing war, for it is opposed to every principle of their faith. ***In the army they cannot obey the truth and at the same time obey the requirements of their officers.*** *Testimonies*, Vol. 1, pp. 361-362.¹³

The White's statements in opposition to Adventist men participating in the Civil War on the side of the Union and Ellen White's bitter denunciation of Lincoln and her prediction of ultimate Northern defeat and the inevitable continuation of slavery seem oddly tone deaf, if not outright disloyal and even seditious in retrospect. Given the massive and heroic Roman Catholic and Mainstream Protestantism's participation in the Union/anti-slavery effort, her vehement and strident anti-Catholic statements in her writings can be construed as nothing short of deliberate stabs in the back to some of the Union's bravest, most honored and most selfless combat warriors. In our next section, we will contrast the expressed primacy of the Sabbath and the Ten Commandments as the justification for Adventism's complete lack of support of the Union and its weak lip service paid to the anti-slavery movement; compared with Adventism's wholehearted support of Germany's aggressive militarism during World War 1, and Nazi Germany in World War 2, **up to and including outright abandonment of the Sabbath!**

Adventist Support of German Aggression in World War 1

Now if the ministry that brought death, which was engraved in letters on stone, came with glory, so that the Israelites could not look steadily at the face of Moses because of its glory, transitory though it was, will not the ministry of the Spirit be even more glorious? — 2 Corinthians 3:7-8

In sharp contrast to Adventism's vocal opposition to its men serving with the Union Army on the grounds of the sanctity of the primacy of the Sabbath and Adventism's unprecedented and unique interpretation of the Sixth Commandment's prohibition against murder; European Adventism quickly abandoned both doctrines in order to facilitate the mass enlistment of Adventists in the German Army during World War I. European Adventist leadership swiftly jettisoned a resolution of the Seventh Day Adventist Church promulgated in the aftermath of the Civil War, which had declared that Adventists are "compelled to decline all participation in acts of war and bloodshed." *The Review and Herald*, May 23, 1865.¹⁴

This action ultimately led to a schism in the European Adventist Church, birthing the Adventist Reform movement. Approximately 98 percent of Adventist men of fighting age quickly abandoned the Sabbath and the Church's traditional interpretation of the Sixth Commandment, and joined up to support Imperial Germany's European war of naked aggression and conquest. The two percent of Adventists who repudiated this move on the part of the Institutional Church formed the Seventh Day Adventist Reform Movement.¹⁵ The Adventist Reform Movement sought to apply the same standards to German Adventist involvement as had been in place that prevented Adventists from fighting in the Civil War. Incredibly, when German conscientious objectors were disfellowshipped from the German Church, this controversy led to a permanent

¹¹<http://www.whiteestate.org/issues/MilitaryService.html>

¹²<http://www.whiteestate.org/issues/MilitaryService.html>

¹³http://www.whiteestate.org/issues/MilitaryService.html#Counsel_Concerning_Enlistment

¹⁴<http://www.calltorepent.com/sdas-in-time-of-war-1>

¹⁵<http://www.sdarm.org/about-us/origin>

split in the Seventh Day Adventist Church that exists to this day.^{16 17} Efforts were made following World War I to reunite Reform Adventism with the Institutional Church, but failed in the face of mutual suspicion and animosity.¹⁸ One observer stated the following:

The German Adventists seem to have fallen short of their proclamation of religious liberty at the time of World War I, between the two wars and during World War II. In Imperial Germany, most Adventists espoused extreme nationalism and active military collaboration. An Adventist author argued Sixth Commandment; second, that fighting on the Sabbath is no transgression of the fourth law'. The German church leaders, however, recognized the error of their policies after the war and confessed their loyalty to the worldwide Adventist community at the European Division meeting at Gland, Switzerland on 2 January 1923.¹⁹

By comparing and contrasting Adventism's Civil War-era Sabbath and Sixth Commandment policies with the jaw-dropping immediate abandonment of those same policies that allowed Adventist military participation in service of Imperial Germany's goals of conquest and aggression, we find some disturbing, amoral confusion at play. Institutional Adventism was on the wrong side of history in both wars. Adventists were unwilling to fight to preserve the Union and end slavery while they were astonishingly-eager to fight for Germany's aggressive and militaristic attempt to conquer much of Europe, merely to facilitate Germany's naked imperial ambitions. Adventists were unwilling to violate the Sabbath in service of freeing the American slaves, but eager to abandon the Fourth Commandment in order to facilitate Imperial Germany's barbarous "rape of Belgium."^{20 21 22} To Adventists, the Sabbath was an insurmountable and sacred barrier to doing much to end slavery; but it could be jettisoned with surprisingly-swift haste in service of Imperial Germany's genocidal, aggressive imperial ambitions that sparked a war that ended up slaughtering over 17 million people.^{23 24}

Adventism's Support of Nazi Germany's Policies of Genocidal Extermination

If the ministry that brought condemnation was glorious, how much more glorious is the ministry that brings righteousness! For what was glorious has no glory now in comparison with the surpassing glory. And if what was transitory came with glory, how much greater is the glory of that which lasts!
— 2 Corinthians 9-11

German Adventism's wholehearted support of Nazi Germany is easily the sect's darkest hour. The rabid level of the German Adventists' support of Adolph Hitler's drive to exterminate the Jews and Catholics in Europe is jaw-dropping and stomach-churning.

In the Adventist town of Friedensau, Germany 99.9% voted for the Nazi parliamentary state.²⁵ Dr Zdravko Plantak, author of *The Silent Church: Human Rights and Adventist Social Ethics*, makes this observation:

As early as 1928, before Adolf Hitler came to power, Adventists were calling for a strong *Fuehrer*. Article after article dealt with this *Fuehrer's* ideal in German writings as well as in Adventist publicationsOtto Bronzio went a step further, saying in the official Adventist paper, *Der Adventbote*, that 'the National Socialist Revolution was the greatest of all time, because it made the maintenance of a pure inheritance the basis of its ethnic life'.²⁶

16<http://spectrummagazine.org/article/2015/04/11/seventh-day-adventist-reform-movement-president-explains-century-old-church-split>

17<http://sabbathsermons.com/2010/07/23/the-adventist-church-and-war/>

18<http://areuready.org/wp-content/uploads/2008/03/protokol.pdf>

19<http://www.everythingimportant.org/seventhdayAdventists/NaziAdventists.htm>

20https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/The_Rape_of_Belgium

21<http://ww1centenary.oucs.ox.ac.uk/memoryofwar/the-rape-of-belgium-revisited/>

22<http://www.bl.uk/world-war-one/articles/civilian-atrocities-german-1914>

23https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Fritz_Fischer

24https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/World_War_I_casualties

25<http://www.history.ucsb.edu/projects/holocaust/Research/Proseminar/corrieschroder.htm>

26<http://www.everythingimportant.org/seventhdayAdventists/NaziAdventists.htm>

This shocking support of Hitler's policies even led the institutional Adventist Church to assist the Nazis in ferreting out the members of the Adventist Reform movement and Jews.²⁷ "The official Adventist Church, since there was also a Reformed Adventist Church that opposed the Nazi Party in those years, readily went along with the policies of the Nazi regime and went out of its way to comply with the wishes of the party. The official organ of the Church, *Gegenwarts-Frage*, for example, supported the extermination of the Roma People, Catholics, homosexuals, Jews and people with physical infirmities."²⁸ German Adventism's official newspaper actively supported some of the most egregious Nazi policies:

The mentally weak, schizophrenics, epileptics, blind, deaf, crippled, alcoholics, drug addicts – all were to be sterilized. 'This law,' an article in the Seventh-day Adventist paper, *Jugend-Leitstern* said, was 'a great advance in the uplifting of our people.'²⁹

The official German Adventist periodicals ran editorials loudly endorsing Hitler's drive to exterminate the Jews and Catholics of Europe:

Some friends have counseled us not to fight a two-front war, not against the Jews and Jesuits at the same time. They are still being fooled by these two international enemies of Germanism. For the sad situation of Germany since November 1918 we can thank the ... Jews and Jesuits ... The Jesuits are no less dangerous enemies than the Jews.³⁰

Adventists were eager to demonstrate their Nazi bonafides by eliminating "Jewish words" from their denomination's terminology. Instead of calling it "Sabbath School," Adventists began calling it "Bible School." Adventist males enlisted in staggering numbers in the German Wehrmacht and the Waffen SS. Adventists broke the Sabbath and worked on it in order to demonstrate their loyalty and support for Hitler. It was no longer the "Sabbath" but was now the "Day of Rest." Adventists changed some of their fundamental terminology in order to distinguish themselves from Jews.³¹ Adventists actively supported and assisted the Nazis in apprehending Jews for eventual extermination in the death camps:

We renamed Sabbath School to 'Bible School'—[we] didn't use the [original] term because it meant taking a risk," Pöhler said. "We were in danger of being confused with the Jews. By refusing to call it Sabbath School, you make a statement; you make a little distance between yourself and the Jews."³²

60 years after the end of World War 2, the Seventh Day Adventist General Conference finally publicly-apologized for the sect's support of Adolph Hitler's policies of mass genocide:

The church leaders adapted and even took over some anti-Semitic ideology from the Nazis; in some instances, they did more than was necessary to please the [Nazi] authorities. This is something which is really strange for us."

....."Asked how a church that considers keeping the Sabbath as one of its core beliefs could forsake Jewish Sabbath-keepers during a time of persecution, Brugger suggested that it was political, not theological, considerations that may have led to the strategy."³³

An overwhelmingly strong historical theme can now be stated at this point. Adventism's all-consuming fixation on the Sabbath does not seem to give the Institution of Adventism or its adherents a very useful moral rudder when it comes to decision-making about REAL right and wrong. Usually, but not always, rigid in its implementation, the sect's Sabbath-keeping does not prevent incomprehensible compromises with great evil. In fact, when the welfare of the Adventist Church and its followers are threatened with personal danger for keeping the Sabbath holy, it can be jettisoned even though their personal belief systems tell them that they are absolutely trampling on God's holy law by doing so! What an amazing contrast with the first Christians who instantly agreed to be eaten by the lions rather than deny Christ! This comparison is a

²⁷<http://www.history.ucsb.edu/projects/holocaust/Research/Proseminar/corrieschroder.htm>

²⁸<http://www.everythingimportant.org/seventhdayadventists/naziadventists.htm>

²⁹Ibid. R. Sulzmann, "Erbkrank," *Gegenwarts-Frage*, vol. 9, nr.1, 1934, p.8, quoted by: Sicher, "Seventh-day Adventist Publications and the Nazi Temptation," 19.

³⁰http://www.adventistpeace.org/_data/assets/pdf_file/0011/1541/Sicher-SDA-Publications-and-the-Nazi-Temptation-1977.pdf

³¹http://www.history.ucsb.edu/projects/holocaust/Research/Proseminar/corrieschroder.htm#_ftn44

³²Ibid.

³³<http://news.adventist.org/all-news/news/go/2005-08-15/europe-german-austrian-churches-apologize-for-holocaust-actions/>

stark testimony to the inability of law-keeping to convert the soul of the Christian believer!

Ellen White's obsession with law-keeping blinded her to the self-obvious, unavoidable, powerful moral obligation of people everywhere, and especially Christians, to put an end to the shameless, REAL, GENUINE EVIL of slavery. Her opposition to the Civil War represented the incredible paradox in that, to her, Sabbath-keeping was more important than either the vanquishing of slavery or the preserving of the sacredness of this country's national unity!

Inexplicably, in the darkest hour of President Lincoln's prosecution of the war, Ellen White and her enabling General Conference leaders had the audacity to kick him mercilessly while he was down on the ground. While Lincoln was on his knees asking the God of Heaven to turn the tide and save both the slaves and the Union, they were publicly denouncing the courageous president, demanding that Adventist men be exempt from service in the Northern army, demonizing heroic Catholic soldiers who were suffering overwhelming casualty rates, and loudly predicting that the North would lose the war—essentially predicting that slavery would continue.

At the same time, another theme of Adventism rears its ugly head. Adventism's focus on law-keeping means that it will quickly abandon both its Sabbath-keeping and historic non-combatancy policy when it feels that it's institution and members have something critical to gain. Look what happened in Nazi Germany when it entered a war to facilitate the wicked and shameless goal of conquering the world and systematically exterminating Jews, Catholics, and other minorities. They showed themselves willing to participate in a horrific, single-minded genocidal frenzy, quickly abandoning both their Sabbath-keeping and the Church's historic non-combatancy stance. In an astonishing and shocking repudiation of all human sensibility, they stooped lower than low by betraying their Adventist brothers and sisters—the Adventist Reformists—resulting in the death of thousands of German Sabbath-keeping Adventists. At the same time they worked hand in hand with the Nazi killers in the hunting down and murdering of the Jews of their own country. It was Sabbath-keepers eating other Sabbath Keepers alive! Such behavior defies the imagination!

RWANDA: ADVENTIST-ON-ADVENTIST GENOCIDE

Rwanda in 1994 was one of the heaviest Adventist-membered countries on earth.³⁴ So it is not surprising that heavy Adventist-on-Adventist genocide took place during a massive genocidal slaughter where as many as 1 million minority Tutsi tribe members were butchered with machetes and other primitive methods. Since 1 out of every 27 Rwandans were Seventh Day Adventists, it has been estimated that between 20,000 and 40,000 Adventists may have been murdered in the frenzied fratricide.³⁵ The Adventist moral catastrophe was well-stated in *Spectrum*, a barely tolerated Adventist on-line periodical:

They were not, and they are not, shaken to their bones by the memory of Seventh-day Adventists hacking their fellow Adventists to death with purging zeal during the Rwandan genocide, *pausing to rest on the Sabbath* (in what was perhaps the most Adventist country in the world by share of the total population).³⁶

The stinking moral bankruptcy of the Adventist leaders who participated in this horrific genocide was not lost of the war tribunals who were left to try to mete out a measure of justice after the fighting was finally brought to a halt. In one of the most infamous moments in the history of Adventist leadership, the court sentenced the former head of the Seventh Day Adventist Church in Western Rwanda to ten years in prison. His own son, a doctor at an Adventist hospital, was sentenced to 25 years in prison for crimes against humanity and genocide:³⁷

The Rev. Elizaphan Ntakirutimana, 78, the former head of the Seventh-day Adventist Church in Western Rwanda, was sentenced to 10 years in prison for aiding and abetting genocide. His son, Dr. Gérard Ntakirutimana, 45, who worked at the church's hospital, received a total sentence of 25 years for the same charges and for shooting two people to death.

This particular localized genocide occurred when approximately 3,000 Adventists of the Tutsi tribe had fled to the Adventist compound at Mugonero. The two Adventist leaders who were eventually convicted of genocide belonged to the Hutu tribe,

³⁴<http://blacksdahistory.org/files/40119037.pdf>

³⁵Ibid.

³⁶<http://spectrummagazine.org/article/2015/07/20/summer-reading-group-darwin-and-disgust>

³⁷<http://www.nytimes.com/2003/02/20/world/rwandan-pastor-and-his-son-are-convicted-of-genocide.html>

and actively participated in the slaughter of all 3,000 Tutsi Adventists.³⁸ Sure enough, a pause in the slaughter occurred on the Sabbath!

But the Rwandan catastrophe provides a distinctive, new corollary to the three previous serious proofs of the ability of the Adventists, due to the fixation on the Sabbath and Law-keeping to turn real right and wrong upside down. An unflattering review of what we have just surveyed goes like this:

In the first case, Adventism's focus on Sabbath-keeping blinded Ellen White to real right and wrong, resulting in her directing her enablers to do REAL wrong by avoiding participation in the vanquishing of one of the greatest evils on the face of the Earth— slavery.

In next two cases we studied, the inability of Sabbath and law-keeping to provide a REAL moral compass enabled the German Adventists to abandon the Church's single most distinguishing doctrine— Sabbath-keeping— throwing the door open to the active wholesale participation in Germany's genocide and naked imperialistic aggression during both World War I and World War II.

Our last study reviewed the effect of the Adventist law-keeping, Sabbath-focused belief model on Ellen White's followers during the Rwandan Civil War. We saw how this heresy blinded them so badly that they could go as far as to carve up the innards of their own Adventist brethren while resting from the carnage on their precious Sabbath.

SUMMARY

Perhaps the the story of the Jews of Europe after World War II can punctuate this dismal discussion on the history of Adventist Sabbatarian perfidy on something of a backhanded positive note. Recall that both William Miller and Ellen White predicted that Jerusalem would never be rebuilt. The victims of Nazi genocide thus have enjoyed the last historical and ironic laugh at Adventism's dismal Sabbatarian-related human rights debacles. The European Jews that fled from Nazi Germany refuted Ellen White's prophecy by rebuilding Jerusalem as a haven for persecuted Jews. Here's Ellen White's prophecy on the subject:

*Then I was pointed to some who are in the great error of believing that it is their duty to go to Old Jerusalem, and think they have a work to do there before the Lord comes. Such a view is calculated to take the mind and interest from the present work of the Lord, under the message of the third angel; for those who think that they are yet to go to Jerusalem will have their minds there, and their means will be withheld from the cause of present truth to get themselves and others there. I saw that such a mission would accomplish no real good, that it would take a long while to make a very few of the Jews believe even in the first advent of Christ, much more to believe in His second advent. I saw that Satan had greatly deceived some in this thing and that souls all around them in this land could be helped by them and led to keep the commandments of God, but they were leaving them to perish. **I also saw that Old Jerusalem never would be built up; and that Satan was doing his utmost to lead the minds of the children of the Lord into these things now.** Early Writings, p. 75³⁹*

By issuing a manifestly false prediction that Jerusalem would never be rebuilt, Ellen White did little harm compared with the four instances in history where her Sabbatarianism ideology put Adventists directly on the wrong side of history. In four major conflicts, Adventists— due in large part to their focus on Sabbatarianism— ended up on the wrong side of what Ellen White always described as “The Great Controversy.” According to Ellen White, good would prevail in the end. Martin Luther King, speaking in more general terms, said, “The arc of the moral universe is long, but it bends towards justice.” King may have been right, and all Christians believe that good will win in the end. However, there can be no doubt that the first century and a half of Adventism demonstrates that its Judaizing heresy often bends Martin Luther King's arc away from justice.

In other chapters of this book we demonstrate to the point of over-kill that Adventism has exhibited a chronic problem with

³⁸<http://spectrummagazine.org/node/2716>

³⁹<http://text.egwwritings.org/publication.php?pubtype=Book&bookCode=EW&pagenumber=75>

pathological prevarication. The Devil is the father of lies. What else can you expect when a large group of "believers" defy the plain Word of God? St. Paul, in Colossians 2:14-17, gave us the inspired command that Christians were not to observe the Jewish dietary laws, the annual sabbath feast days, the monthly Sabbath feast days, and the weekly Sabbath of the Decalogue. He had good reason to issue this command.

As we present in other chapters of this book, a confused Gospel is exactly what one would expect from a woman who kept company with an attending angel who appeared to her in the form of a young man almost daily for the first 26 years of her ministry. It is also what we might expect from a prophetess whose husband and son were Freemasons for much of their lives. The stated goal of Freemasonry, known only to the deeply initiated, is to confuse the Gospel of Christ.

CHAPTER SIX
THE REAL HISTORY OF THE
SABBATH AND ADVENTISM
Revised for the 11th Edition

THE REAL HISTORY OF THE SABBATH AND ADVENTISM

Revised for the 11th Edition

This first section of this timeline is based on some dates supplied by Bishop Ussher. Some of the early dates are calculated by genealogies, and somewhat later by interpolating historical dates from known events recorded in ancient histories. We are indebted to the following website for some of these dates:

<http://www.bibletruths.net/archives/btar199.htm>.

Please suspend your demand for scholarly sources for the earliest dates and have a little fun with us as we try to reconstruct dates for the earliest events of Earth's history and the development of the Nation of Israel. Enjoy a little humor along the way. We are indebted to *Wikipedia* for still other dates. Now that the Internet is here and nearly universally available, you can easily verify this information for yourself with a few clicks of your mouse. In general, you will find documentation for these events and the significance of these events in the other parts of this book.

THE HISTORY OF THE SABBATH FROM CREATION TO THE CROSS

4004 BC – October 23 – The date James Ussher calculated that God created Planet Earth.

4004 BC – October 26 – God gave Mankind instructions for how he was to determine when his sacred days were to be scheduled:

And God said, "Let there be lights in the vault of the sky to separate the day from the night, and **let them serve as signs to mark sacred times**, and days and years, 15 and let them be lights in the vault of the sky to give light on the earth." And it was so. 16 God made two great lights—the greater light to govern the day and the lesser light to govern the night. He also made the stars. 17 God set them in the vault of the sky to give light on the earth, 18 to govern the day and the night, and to separate light from darkness. And God saw that it was good. 19 And there was evening, and there was morning—the fourth day.

4004 BC – October 28 – God creates Adam and Eve. When God brings Eve to Adam, she is so beautiful that Adam faints dead on the ground, and God has to revive him.

4004 BC – October 29 – God CEASED creating Planet Earth and asked the human race to remember this **one single day in the history of Planet Earth**. To make sure this one day in the history of Planet Earth would be remembered, he set it aside and made it holy. *COMMENTARY – Sabbatarians claim that setting aside this one single day somehow made this "hallowing" jump down and land on the next 7th multiple of that one 7th day of Creation, and then to the next one, and so on and so on for eternity. This is a silly idea because God gave Mankind instructions for how to determine sacred times by world clocks. God would not give human beings two separate ways to figure out days of worship. It looks like that until Exodus 16, God's people on Earth had a lot of flexibility as to how they chose to worship Him.*

2350 BC – The Great Flood – Around this time Moses records at least some of the laws of God, which later become known as the **Seven Laws of Noah**. The Sabbath commandment is not included. Scholars do not believe that Noah listed all of God's laws here, and this fact gives Sabbatarians an excuse to say that the Sabbath law might have existed and Noah just didn't say anything about it.

1720 BC – The Story of Job, the "Gentile" "Patriarch," takes place. He did not live in the land of Canaan. There is nothing in the Book of Job about the Sabbath ordinance. However, Job, his friends, and God had a lot to say about God's laws. While this story is believed to have taken place prior to the time of Abraham, it was probably written down much later in history, having been, we suppose, extracted from oral traditions. It could have evolved over many centuries and gotten into its final form as late as 200 years before Christ. It is significant in that it discusses moral laws in concept, but there is no mention of a Sabbath commandment. While arguments from silence are certainly not the best ones, when one considers that the Pentateuch does not mention the Sabbath until the Exodus, we have two witnesses from silence. Given the awesome importance attached to the Sabbath in Judaism, the silence has more significance than you would normally ascribe to it.

In terms of the progress of redemption, Job is best understood as having lived before the Abrahamic covenant, which narrows the covenant community to a particular family." Longman, T., III, & Dillard, R. B. (2007). *An Introduction to the Old Testament*(Second Edition.) (226). Grand Rapids, Michigan: Zondervan. (Referenced at: <http://www.theopedia.com/book-of-job>.)

1920 BC – The Time of Abraham – God gives Abraham the sign of circumcision to set him and his descendants apart from every other nation on Earth. *Islamic theologians state that Muslims do not keep the seventh-day holy because they trace their covenant with God back to Abraham, and Abraham was not given any Sabbath commandment.*

1491 BC – The Exodus From Egypt – The Children of Israel leave Egypt. They exit a day or two prior to the 6th day of the week and march for five weeks across the desert before they keep their first Sabbath. Four weeks after leaving Egypt, they had arrived at the edge of the Wilderness of Sin on the 7th day of the lunar week around 5 pm. At this time God gives them their very first instructions on the Sabbath and the Manna as an obedience test. They can't keep this 7th day of the week as the Sabbath because they have marched across the desert on it to get there from the Red Sea. God uses the seven days of Creation as a MODEL for His new Sabbath ordinance and explains that the Sabbath is a sign that will set Israel apart from every other nation on Earth. The Jews believe the Oral Law is given to Moses on Mt. Sinai, which becomes the basis for the *Mishnah* part of the *Talmud* and correlates with God's directive to establish a system of courts. Note that God gave the Sabbath commandment to Israel on the High Sabbath of the pagan lunar month. While in Egyptian captivity, the Egyptians kept a pagan lunar sabbath that was governed by the four phases of the moon and which was based on fertility and superstitious themes. The Hebrews, then, were familiar with the Sabbath principle. God just needed to cleanse the concept from its heathen associations and give it the holy attributes it had throughout the history of Israel.

1400 BC - The judges begin to govern Israel, covering about 305 years – Israel establishes a court system which soon becomes dual in its operation. The Seven Laws of Noah govern the Gentile citizens of Israel. The full 613 rules and regulations of the TORAH govern Israel's Jewish citizens. Sexual sins, especially those of sexual perversion, are treated almost exactly the same for both the Gentile and Hebrew citizens of Israel-- stoning. The judges of Israel are operating with the promise that God will guide their decisions. These judges supplement what God dictated to Moses on Mt. Sinai by recording the legal precedence of the decisions of these courts down through time in an oral law called the MISHNAH. The Pharisees rejected all the other parts of Jewish oral law, citing the reason that these other parts represent human tradition whereas the MISHNAH was inspired and directed by God. The MISHNAH was utilized throughout the history of Judaism to interpret and apply the TORAH to Israel's citizens.

1055 or 1010 BC – David becomes King of Israel – The Ancient Hebrew language has not evolved yet. Archaeological evidence demonstrates that the language used to write things down in cities of Israel that predated the time of King David used different characters than Ancient Hebrew. Currently this language cannot be translated, although scholars are working on it. Moses probably wrote the *Pentateuch* in Egyptian. For hundreds and hundreds of years it would have to have been translated and retranslated because the language of Israel evolved through the proto-Canaanitish languages, and then through the Canaanitish family of languages until it arrived at its Ancient Hebrew form several hundred years after the reign of King David. By the time the Book of Genesis arrives in the earliest form in which it was recorded in Ancient Hebrew, it had probably been translated many times over almost a thousand years.

992 BC - The Queen of Sheba visits Solomon – Legend with a certain amount of historical support indicates that King Solomon and the Queen had a dalliance during her visit. When she returned to Ethiopia (Sheba), she took Judaism with her, along with the Pentateuch. She bore King Solomon's son, whose name and accomplishments are recorded in secular histories. He became a godly young man and returned to see his father when he grew up. He observed that conditions in Israel were unable and that the Ark of the Covenant was in danger. He stole the Ark and escaped with it to Ethiopia, where it is now kept on an island under heavy guard. As a result there is a big Jewish population in Ethiopia. After some Roman Catholic missionaries arrived, an Ethiopian Catholic Church was established which kept the Jewish Sabbath. These Christians are still part of the Roman Catholic Church and give their allegiance to the Pope of Rome. The Nation of Israel recognizes the Jews of Ethiopia as legitimate, as evidenced by the fact that Israel had taken many of them to Israel to live.

C 950 BC – The son of the Queen of Sheba and King Solomon, Menelik I, becomes the first Solomonic Emperor of Ethiopia. According to well-established legend, he is believed to be the son of King Solomon of ancient Israel and Makeda, ancient Queen of Sheba. He is alleged to have ruled around 950 BC, according to traditional

sources. Tradition credits him with bringing the Ark of the Covenant to Ethiopia, following a visit to Jerusalem to meet his father upon reaching adulthood. As a result of this union, Ethiopia has a large Jewish population, and as a result of both Catholic and Protestant missionary work, there are at least two major Christian churches there. The Catholic Church is Sabbatarian, keeping the Jewish Sabbath. We like to refer to them as Seventh-day Catholics. See *Wikipedia* article, “Menelik I at this address:

https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Menelik_I

C 715 to 686 BC – The Reign of King Hezekiah – During these years God turns the sundial back. Apparently this was a real miracle that altered the Earth’s rotation and pathway around the sun. Historical sources from all over the world indicate that for several hundred years after this event, there were global catastrophes, earthquakes, and strange weather patterns. More importantly, the lunar calendar got so far out of sync with the solar calendar that societies all over the world abandoned their lunar calendars and explored various fixed calendar schemes. Up until this time, no one had ever thought about any other way of keeping time than by the lunar calendar.

597 BC - Jerusalem is captured by Babylon – Babylon has adopted a fixed calendar by this time. For the previous hundred years or so, strange weather patterns, earthquakes, and other catastrophes are recorded worldwide in the ancient histories, suggesting that the turning back of the sundial for Hezekiah had profound natural consequences. Babylon pressures its Jewish captives to adopt the fixed calendar in place of the lunar calendar. Rabbinical Judaism seems to capitulate to these demands, and Rabbinical Judaism may have adopted a fixed week for determining its Sabbaths. The precursors of the Karaite Jews rose up against this capitulation to Heathen influences and insisted that the lunar calendar must be used to determine all Jewish sacred days.

457 BC - Ellen White’s Bogus start date for the 2,300 day prophecy - Dirk Anderson of Amazing Fiction.Com explains the problem.

Artaxerxes' decree is found in Ezra 7:12-26. A simple reading of this passage will prove that there is no command in this decree to "restore and to build Jerusalem." The decree of Ezra 7 permits the return of all Israelites to Jerusalem, and it provides funds for the offerings, for vessels, and anything else needed for the Temple. It did not call for the rebuilding of Jerusalem, the walls, the street, or the Temple. In fact, the Temple had already been rebuilt 58 years prior to this decree! (see Ezra 6:14-15.) Aware of this problem, Adventists claim Artaxerxes decree was the "culmination" of three decrees, one issued by Cyrus, one by Darius, and this last one by Artaxerxes. Whether or not the 457 BC decree is a "culmination" is pure speculation, but regardless, it must be emphasized that there is nothing in Artaxerxes' commandment about rebuilding Jerusalem. The commandments of Cyrus and Darius actually did command the rebuilding of Jerusalem, as did Artaxerxes' commandment to Nehemiah in 444 BC. Therefore, the 457 BC decree is the least likely of all the decrees to be a fulfillment of Daniel's prophecy because it contains none of the specifications of that prophecy.

334 BC - Battle of Granicus - In reference to Daniel 8, the context for the beginning of the 2,300 day prophecy is the development of the power of the Greek Empire. Shortly after Alexander the Great came to power, he sought to conquer the Persians, and remove their influence from Greece. His first momentous, and very important battle in this conquest was the **Battle of Granicus in 334 BC**. In Jewish context, the significance of this battle and defeat of the Persians to the Greeks marked the passing from Medo-Persian rule to Hellenistic rule over Israel and Judah. Darren Jack used this start date, and it took him to 1967-- a key year in the history of Modern Israel. It contrasts with the bogus start date of 457 BC adopted by Ellen White.

175 to 164 BC. - Antiochus Epiphanes rules Israel during this period of time. During it, he desecrates the Jewish temple for exactly 2,300 days, fulfilling the prophecy of Daniel 8:14 to the very day.

C 124 BC - The estimated date when II Maccabees was written. It is believed to have been written in Alexandria, Egypt around 124 BC. It records both the history of the reign of Antiochus Epiphanes his desecration of the temple. Its text demonstrates that the Hebrews understood that these events were the fulfillment of Daniel 8:14.

06-03 BC – Jesus Is Born – By this time The Ancient Hebrew language, which had evolved within a few hundred years after the reign of King David, has further evolved into “Modern” Hebrew, which evolved still further into Aramaic. Jesus spoke and

read in Aramaic, and probably in Modern Hebrew. The Jews always train sufficient numbers of rabbis to understand the Modern Hebrew language, but only a few few to learn the Ancient Hebrew form of the language. At the time of Jesus the MISHNAH is still a part of Jewish oral law. Everyone was astonished with the knowledge of the Law that Jesus had, since He had supposedly never attended the synagogue schools. He was probably taught both the Torah and the Mishnah.

04 BC - The popular and most accepted date for the death of Herod the Great. The death of Herod is the only reference in history that helps us estimate the date for the birth of Christ. Josephus, the Jewish historian, had estimated the death of Herod by the fact that an eclipse had occurred in the year he died. The trouble with the eclipse in 04 BC is that it was a very small one and occurred during a time of the day when no one would likely have seen it take place.

01 BC - The most probable date for the death of Herod, based on the fact that a major eclipse took place in this year, and the historian, Josephus, had estimated the date for his death with a year in which there was an eclipse.

FROM THE APOSTOLIC CENTURY

31-33 AD – Crucifixion & Resurrection - Jesus, the Spotless Lamb of God, is crucified and resurrected. The TORAH, which is characterized by multiple symbolic pathways that point forward to the death of the Messiah, is nailed to the Cross. One of the provisions of the TORAH is that on the weekly Sabbath, two spotless lambs will be sacrificed in addition to the normal animal and grain offerings required on the other sacred feast days. The shadows represented by many provisions of the TORAH disappear when TYPE meets ANTI-TYPE. St. Paul will explain later that at Christ's death, the sabbaths and Jewish dietary laws became obsolete "shadows."

33-35 AD (Circa) – Unquestionably the original church, The Eastern Orthodox Church, sends missionaries to Italy and sets up a church "mission" in Rome. The Church at Rome continues to be controlled by the Eastern Orthodox Church for the first 1,000 years or so if its existence, deposing bishops of Rome who strayed too far from Orthodox doctrine and practice. There is no record that the Eastern Orthodox family of churches ever kept the Jewish Sabbath as anything but a festival.

33-40 AD (Circa) - Philip baptizes the Ethiopian Eunuch. Tradition that is well-founded in probable reality indicates that Philip established the Coptic Church in North Africa. Once again, there is no evidence that this church ever kept the 7th day of the week in the Jewish sense of a "Sabbath." The result of composite studies suggests that from the very beginning the Northern Coptics observed both Saturday and Sunday-- Saturday as a festival and not in the Jewish sense of a Sabbath, and Sunday as the day of corporate worship. There is no evidence that the Northern Coptics ever kept Sunday with the idea that the day was intrinsically sacred. In other words, Sunday was not a holy day in any sense of the word like the Sabbath was to the Jews.

50 AD – Council of Jerusalem – The apostles officially notify the Church that Sabbath-keeping is no longer to be imposed on Christians by nixing the requirement that the Gentiles observe the Ordinance of Circumcision. In Jewish sacred and civil law, neither Jew nor Gentile can keep the Law of Moses and the Sabbath ordinance contained in it without first complying with the Ordinance of Circumcision. The only exception is for Eunuchs, who, for self-evident reasons, are able to become a fully practicing Jew without being circumcised.

52 AD – St. Thomas Arrives In India – With more credibility than mere legend, there is evidence that St. Thomas founded the Christian church in India. The church in India is a part of the Eastern Orthodox Church family of churches. There is no record that the Christians of India ever kept the Jewish Sabbath. Like virtually all of the other members of the family of Orthodox churches, they have always observed the Lord's Day, or the first day of the week, and they do so to this very day. These Christians seem to have no knowledge of any Sabbath being "changed."

54-68 AD - The reign of the Roman Emperor, Nero. He persecuted Christians for exactly 1,260 days. Christians have viewed this fact as a direct fulfillment of the prophecy of Daniel 7. Nero did a lot of changing of "times and laws," but he didn't change the Sabbath as Adventists like to claim is the meaning of this text. He messed with the calendar and hammered Christianity into a religion that was barely recognizable when he got finished with it. Ellen White got this prophecy all wrong because of her obsession with the pope of Rome.

59 AD – Universal Abandonment of Sabbath-keeping by Christians – With the exception of a few pockets of Christian believers who cling to the Jewish practice of Sabbath-keeping, the Church has totally abandoned Sabbath observance. This

question was researched by none other than the late Seventh-day Adventist Sabbath scholar, Dr. Samuele Bacchiocchi, whose research in the ancient documents available to him at the Vatican validated the fact that Sabbath abandonment was universal by the end of the AD 50's. Bacchiocchi attributed this virtually complete Sabbath abandonment to the nixing of the Ordinance of Circumcision at the Council of Jerusalem. This documentation is available in the doctoral dissertation, written in Italian, and presented in 1974 to The Gregorian Pontifical University at the Vatican. In his 1977 book, *From Sabbath to Sunday*, he conceded only 140 AD.

C67 AD – Death of Paul – By the death of St. Paul, Circa 67 AD, he has authored three clearly defined statements against Sabbath-keeping: **(1)** The Sabbath ordinance is an obsolete shadow that was nailed to the Cross. **(2)** No day has any sacredness in and of itself since the Cross. **(3)** Don't concern yourselves with keeping sacred days.

C 155 – C 240 AD – The Life of Tertullian – This early Christian writer wrote against the keeping of the Jewish Sabbath by Christians, laying out some of the biblical arguments against it. Sabbatarians claims that he taught Sabbath-keeping. Sabbatarians teach that he changed his views from against the Sabbath in his early years to Sabbath-keeping in his later years. Kerry Wynne read nearly every work of Tertullian to answer the question of his persuasion. When the fact is understood that Tertullian refers to the Sabbath festival instead of the Jewish Sabbath, it is clear that he never seems to have believed or taught that Christians were obligated to keep the 7th day of the week in the manner of the Jews.

100-165 AD – The Life of Justin Martyr - One of the earliest writers to discuss the biblical and not-so-biblical reasons why Christians did not keep the Jewish Sabbath.

321 AD - The Roman Emperor, Constantine, passes the first Sunday law. Contrary to helping Adventists support their Sabbath abandonment conspiracy theory, it demonstrates the fact that Christians had been observing Sunday for hundreds of years before. The Law was designed to make it possible for Christians who were already observing Sunday, to be able to do so without interference. The law did not require any resting. It made it possible for Christian slaves to go to church because their masters were not allowed to keep them from attending church. Furthermore, it demonstrates that Sabbath abandonment had been going on a long time before any pope could have “changed” the Sabbath from Saturday to Sunday.

325 AD – First Major Church Council, the Council of Nicea - Held at a mere “bedroom community” of Constantinople, near the modern-day city of Iznik in Turkey. The Bishop of Rome is not in attendance. No discussion of the Sabbath Question. Presidents: Hosios of Carduba and the Emperor, Constantine.

330 AD – Capital of Roman Empire Moves From Rome To Constantinople – With the move, both the secular and religious center of the Roman Empire moved to Constantinople, which later became Istanbul. The Bishop of Constantinople is the most important bishop of the Christian church at this point. Soon the emperor and his wife began attending church services and listening to the Bishop of Constantinople preach. By contrast, Seventh-day Adventist prophetess, Ellen G. White, wants the readers of her revisionist, “replacement” history, *The Great Controversy*, to believe that the bishop of Rome had all the power during the first 1,000 years. She never mentions the fact that the religious and spiritual capital of the Roman Empire moved to Constantinople.

365 AD – The Non-Council, Synod of Laodicea - Convened in what is now known as modern Turkey, only one of the other minor regional synods discussed the Sabbath. That was a minor regional Roman Catholic event held in Toledo, Spain after the Great Schism, that governed **only** Western Christianity. The Synod of Laodicea has achieved near-mythical status among Seventh Day Adventists. The Synod concluded,

“Christians must not Judaize by resting on the Sabbath, but must work on that day, rather honoring the Lord's Day; and, if they can, resting then as Christians. But if any shall be found to be Judaizers, let them be anathema from Christ.”

Note that Ellen White said that the pope changed the Sabbath, but the first pope did not “sit” until around 500- 600 AD. If your bias is that the Sabbath got changed, you see this synod as evidence that the Sabbath was changed. If you do not have such a bias, it is simply documentation of the fact that very early in the church, the Jewish Sabbath had been “universally” abandoned by mainstream Christianity, but that there were small pockets of Christians who still held onto this Judaizing heresy. This was an event of the Western (Roman) Church. By contrast, there is no record that keeping the Sabbath in the Jewish way was ever mentioned in the annals of Eastern Christianity.

Notice that by the time of this Catholic synod, Sabbath-keeping is not valued, and rest on Sunday is merely optional.

381 AD - First Council of Constantinople - Held in the East in Constantinople, the new capital of the Roman Empire. Constantinople becomes the center of Christian influence, and it is in the “East.” The Bishop of Rome is just one of many bishops throughout the Roman Empire, and he is not present in this council. President: Timothy of Alexandria, Meletus of Antioch, Gregory Nazianzus, and Nectarius of Constantinople.

431 AD - Council of Ephesus – Ephesus is located about 200 miles south of modern-day Istanbul, on the shore of the Black Sea. Another major church council in the East. No bishop of Rome present. President: Cyril of Alexandria.

451 AD - Council of Chalcedon (451) – Chalcedon is located about 30 miles across the Bosphorus via ferry from Istanbul, yet still considered to be part of modern-day “metro” Istanbul. Note: held in the “East.” Council led by a board of government officials and senators, led by the patrician, Anatolius, who was a famous warrior-general in the Roman Empire. No bishop of Rome was present. In fact, one of the major tasks of this Council was to settle many disputes involving particular bishops and sees.

553 AD - Second Council of Constantinople - Held in the East. No bishop of Rome was present. The Council’s president was Patriarch George I of Constantinople.

570 AD – Approximate Year When the founder of Islam, Muhammad, is born.

608 AD - The main Muslim shrine in pagan Arabia, the Kaaba in Mecca, is erected.

638 AD – The Arab Conquest of Jerusalem - Caliph Omar enters Jerusalem, riding upon a white camel. He is dressed in worn, filthy robes, and the army that followed him was rough and unkempt; but its discipline was perfect. At his side was the Patriarch, Sophronius, as chief magistrate of the surrendered city. Omar rode straight to the site of the Temple of Solomon, whence his friend Mahomet had ascended into heaven. Watching him stand there, the Patriarch remembered the words of Christ and murmured through his tears: ‘Behold the **abomination of desolation, spoken of by Daniel the prophet.**’

680 AD - Third Council of Constantinople – Held in the East. No pope was present in person.

688 AD - The Muslims, who are now in control of Jerusalem construct the Dome of the Rock on the Temple Mount and forbid Jews to access to the most holy parcel of ground known to Judaism. Notice that if you add the 1,260 days of Daniel’s prophecy to 688 AD, you get to 1948-- the very year that Israel became a nation for the first time in nearly 2,000 years.

C 700 AD - The last of the “early fathers” of the church, The Venerable Bede, wrote about the fact that there was no Sabbath in Genesis and the fact that the Jewish Sabbath was not required to be observed by Christians. In particular, he cited the absence of the “evening and morning” suffixical phrase after Moses’ account of the events of the 7th day of Creation, nothing that there could be no “sunset” on God’s rest from creating Planet Earth, since His rest from creating was permanent.

787 AD - Second Council of Nicaea – Held in the East. No Bishop of Rome was present.

1054 AD – The Eastern Church excommunicates the Pope of Rome - This event should forever dispel any credibility to Ellen White’s claim that the papacy was supreme for 1,260 years. It was never supreme, and even the delegates to the secret meetings of the 1919 Bible Conference conceded that the papacy was only “supreme” for a short space of 200 years. This damaging assessment, bad enough as it was, ignored a whole body of information about the Eastern church and its supremacy for more than the first thousand years of the history of the Christian faith.

1453 AD – Constantinople Sacked By The Muslims – *Comment: Until this date, the political and ecclesiastical power of Rome was here-- not in Rome. As late as 1054 AD, the Bishop of Constantinople had the power to excommunicate the Bishop of Rome.*

1530 - The Augsburg Confession is presented to the Roman Catholic Church by the Lutherans. The document castigates the Catholic Church’s claim that it changed the Sabbath. It gives the Catholics a lesson in anti-Sabbatarian biblical principles, Colossians 2:14-17. In essence it explained to the Catholics that it was impossible they could have

changed the Sabbath since the Sabbath no longer existed.

1516–1558 - The reign of Mary I of England, known as Bloody Mary - This Catholic English queen persecuted Protestants in England. A group of these persecuted English Protestants, which came to be known as the **Marian Exiles**, leave England for Europe. Some of them settle in Holland, where there was what may have been the first significant appearance of Sabbatarian thinking and practice for a very long time. Many of these exiles became Sabbath-keepers at this time. Later they would return to England and agitate for national English Sabbath-keeping.

1558-1603 - Queen Elizabeth I of England reigns and the Marian Exiles return from Europe. The Exiles who have become Sabbath-keepers in Holland return to England and begin agitating to bring about an England that keeps the Sabbath.

1611 – King James Bible is published. King James of England is on the throne, and the King James Bible is published. The biggest Sabbath Crisis in the history of the world is brewing. Some of the Sabbatarians are Puritan in alignment and want Sunday to be kept like the Jewish Sabbath. Other factions want the Church of England to keep the Jewish Sabbath.

1625-1649 - The biggest Sabbath crisis ever to rock the world takes place during the reign of King Charles I of England. This Sabbath controversy puts England at risk for tearing England apart. This explosive theological debate had been smoldering for decades in England. King Charles turns to his court chaplain, Peter Heylyn, and orders him to research and report everything known to date about the Sabbath Question. Heylyn works feverishly to produce the book.

1639 - Peter Heylyn publishes his landmark book, *The History of the Sabbath*, and England is saved from becoming a Sabbath-keeping country with Sabbath laws enforced by the government. This massive book explored every biblical and historical argument for and against Sabbath-keeping by Christians. Although researched without bias, as to demonstrate a bias might have cost him his head, his overwhelming conclusion was that the concept that Sabbath-keeping was required of Christians was biblically and historically unsupportable. Sabbatarians sometimes quote his book in an attempt to prove Sabbath-keeping, not knowing that Heylyn reported both sides of the issue.

1657 - Thomas Tillam of England publishes *The Seventh-day Sabbath*. This book might possibly represent the first “modern” comprehensive presentation on the theory that the pope of Rome is the anti-Christ and the one responsible for changing the Sabbath from Saturday to Sunday. He blames a deceitful translation of Colossians 2:14-17 for much of the opposition of Christians to Sabbath-keeping.

WHAT ADVENTIST KNEW BETWEEN 1840 TO 1862

1840 – A competent but anonymous biblical scholar publishes a book which exposes the severe historical errors and the non-scholarly blunders of approach by William Miller, which he released as ***William Miller Overthrown by a Cosmopolite***. His analysis included an expose of the comedy of historical errors Miller put together to make the prophecies of Daniel suit his purposes. A key point here is that this cosmopolite rebuked Miller for trying to set a date for Christ's return when Christ Himself had instructed His followers not to do so. Keep in mind that later Ellen White claimed that God showed her that Miller's study methods were blessed by God and even stated that not one thing about his prophetic charts should be changed. By 1919 Adventists knew that virtually everything about his charts was wrong. If Ellen White had been a true prophet, would not God have revealed those errors to her and instructed her to rebuke Miller not only for trying to set dates for Christ's return but for teaching nonsense? Unfortunately, Ellen was too busy setting dates herself.

1840 (August 11) – The date the Collapse Of The Ottoman Empire is Predicted by Josiah Litch and Touted by Ellen G. White in her book, *The Great Controversy*. –

The truth of the matter is that the month of August, 1840, came and passed without any evidence of Turkey falling. This placed Litch in a quandary. He waited until November, and then came out with a statement saying that Turkey's rejection of a European peace offer on August 15, 1840, virtually assured war with Europe, and, therefore, doomed the Ottoman Empire. However, by early 1841, it became evident that war was not going to happen. So, Litch came up with a new story, arguing that the fulfillment of prophecy had occurred exactly on August 11, 1840, as predicted. The "fall" of Turkey consisted of a "voluntary surrender of Turkish supremacy in Constantinople to Christian influence." He claimed the Turkish ruler was now a puppet "of the great Christian powers of Europe." (Credit goes to Dirk Anderson's article on the fall of the Ottoman Empire posted on exsda.com.)

Ellen White, some time later, began to treat this incident as fulfilled Bible prophecy, even though it was very clear to the entire world that such was not the case. Adventism was officially organized in 1863. Ellen White never acknowledge this error, and Adventist leaders have had over 100 years to acknowledge this mistake. But to this day, no such thing as happened. The Ottoman Empire waxed and waned, but it was not until the next century that it would collapse. One of her books that continues this error is *The Great Controversy*, which is printed to this very day. What a remarkable commitment to deception!

As Ellen White lay on her deathbed in 1915, Turkish forces were defeating the combined forces of a variety of Western nations in an astonishing stroke of military genius at the **Battle of Gallipoli**. The Ottoman Empire did not actually fall until 1923. (See also 1923.) Despite this highly damaging fact, Adventist leadership never changed Ellen White's false prophetic claims about the Ottoman Empire in her signature book and revisionist history of the Christian faith, *The Great Controversy*. This prophetic blunder on the part of Ellen White should have identified her as a false prophet to Adventist leadership, but these church leaders did nothing to stop the deception.

1843 – Jesus does not return as Miller predicted. William Miller discovers that the Karaite Jews use the lunar calendar to determine when special feast days are to be observed, and his prediction centers around the time of the year for a particular Jewish holy day. From his study of the Karaite Sect, he must have learned that these Jews fully understand the impossibilities of determining which day of the week of our fixed calendar is actually an exact seven-day multiple of the seventh day of Creation. He would have learned that because of this understanding, the Karaites are willing to keep Saturdays as their seventh-day Sabbath according to the fixed calendar because Saturday is as good a guess as any of the other days of the week. Perhaps because of this reason, Miller does not demonstrate any interest in joining the Advent Movement which evolved out of the group of his disappointed followers. Ellen White tells her flock that Miller just could not “see” the Sabbath “truth” for the wonderful thing it was. We believe that Miller wasn't interested in becoming a Sabbath-keeper because he knew that there was only one chance in seven that the Adventists had the “right” day of the week in the first place.

1844 – Again, Jesus does not return as Miller had predicted. Later, Ellen White, the Church's prophetess, claims that God put His hand over the Bible truths that would have prevented this mistake in order to test His people. A few Advent believers stick together, searching for the meaning of what has happened. An Advent believer by the name of **Hiram Edson** claims he was shown in a cornfield that the sanctuary that was to be “cleansed” in 1844 was in Heaven— not the earth. How the sanctuary in Heaven came to be in a condition that it needed cleansing is never explained, but demonstrates how people's critical thinking skills are compromised by a belief system where the desire to “believe” trumps the need to carefully examine those beliefs. The small Advent flock continues to believe that the “door” to salvation is closed to those who rejected the message that Jesus was to return to Earth in 1844. The Doctrine of the Investigative Judgment is adopted by Ellen White from an Advent believer by the name of **O. R. L. Crosier**, who articulated it, promoted it for a short while, and later repudiated it. This brilliant tactic enables Ellen to snatch victory out of the jaws of defeat. Later she will claim to have been shown in vision that William Miller's failed prophetic chart was accurate and was exactly the way God would have it. (***Early Writings***, p. 64, 1882 Edition) Even a cursory reading of William Miller's prophetic interpretations demonstrates the absurdity of his methods. In writing like this, Ellen White insults the integrity and omnipotence of God, Who she makes to look as if He is unable to understand His own Bible and interpret it with any kind of sensibility. God becomes the “false prophet”, and not Ellen White. (For an explanation of William Miller's prophetic methodology, see Dale Ratzlaff's book, ***Cultic Doctrine of Seventh-day Adventists***.) Here is a condensed outline of five of Miller's crazy calculations as furnished by **E. F. Ballenger** in his (circa) 1950 book, ***Facts about Seventh-day Adventists***:

MILLER'S FIVE PROPHETIC PERIODS

Miller had a fertile mind in selecting time prophecies that he thought terminated in 1843. He presented at least five.

[The 2300 Days](#) -His most important date was the 2300 days of Dan. 8:14, which he started from 457 BC, at the time of the beginning of the 70 weeks of Dan. 9:24.

SDA's retain only the 2300 days of Miller's five periods, even though Mrs. White mentions “periods” (plural) eleven times in *Early Writings*.

The Earth is 6000 Years Old in 1843.

The 7th millennium would begin at that time.

The 2520 Years

“I will punish you seven times more for your sins.” Lev. 26:18. This he interpreted to mean seven prophetic years of 360 days of 2520 literal years. This period had to begin when Manasseh was taken captive to Babylon, in 677 BC.

The 50th Jubilee

The Jews had a special celebration every fiftieth year, called a Jubilee year. The last one they held, according to Miller, was in the fourth year of the reign of Jehoiakim, 607 BC. The fiftieth Jubilee of Jubilees would be held in 1843. That is 49 Jubilees had been missed, a period of 2450 years, and the coming of the Lord would introduce this fiftieth Jubilee.

The 1335 Days

Miller had the 1335 days of Dan. 12:12 begin in 508 AD and terminate in 1843.

In *Early Writings* Mrs. White no less than eleven times speaks of “prophetic periods” (plural) as terminating in 1844, yet the denomination retains *only one* of these periods — the 2300 days.

1844 (Circa & Prior) – William Miller declares that Jerusalem will not have to be rebuilt before Jesus returns. *Commentary: This is a strange claim since the Bible clearly teaches that Israel would have to return to the Holy Land before the end of time. Of course, if Israel had to return to Palestine before Jesus could return, Jesus could not have returned in October of 1844 as William Miller’s agenda required. What is even stranger is when, a little later, Ellen White picks up this idea and credits God for her source of inspiration. Was it Miller, or was it God? We know the answer to this question now, but the people living in Ellen White’s day did not.*

1845 – The Trial of **Israel Dammon** takes place, exposing the shocking fanatical behavior of Ellen White and the other members in attendance at a brawling “Pentecostal” meeting that includes men and women in questionable positioning with one another, so-called amazing manifestations of the Holy Spirit, and an arrest of the host of the meeting, Israel Dammon, for disorderly conduct. Ellen White’s testimony of the account, which supposedly demonstrated the power of God, totally contradicts that of the police and other witnesses. This level of prevarication suggests that Ellen White cannot be trusted to tell the truth of things. This means that there is no way to know, in any given instance, whether she has told the truth or not. (See also 1986.) Ellen White was actually jailed for unseemly behavior at the Dammon home according to the records of the newspaper in that town.

1845 – **Thomas M. Preble**, a theologian of some importance, published his pro-Sabbatarian tract, entitled **A TRACT, SHOWING THAT THE SEVENTH DAY SHOULD BE OBSERVED AS THE Sabbath, INSTEAD OF THE FIRST DAY, ACCORDING TO THE COMMANDMENT.** See **1867** when Preble studies his way out of Adventism and publishes a monumental work against the Sabbath, Ellen White, the SDA interpretation of the prophecies of Daniel, and the 1844 sanctuary doctrine. In many ways he was more thorough in his approach than D. M. Carrington, who apostatized later in the century and became an outspoken opponent of Adventism. See **1995**. SDA theologian and author, **George W. Knight**, reprinted this tract in his pro-Sabbatarian book on the history of the Sabbath and Adventism.

1846 – Ellen White receives a vision of the planets at Topsham, Maine in the house of a Mr. Curtis. An influential man by the name of **Captain Joseph Bates** is present. She is “shown” that Jupiter has four moons. Then she describes a planet with 8 moons, which Bates took to mean Saturn, and then she was “shown” a vision of Uranus with six moons. This scientific “accuracy” of this vision and the fact that Bates believed Ellen White had no knowledge whatsoever of astronomy convinces him that Ellen’s visions are from God. Bates then lends his influential support to the Whites and her visions. (See 1892.)

1847 – Ellen White writes a letter to Joseph Bates affirming her belief that the door to salvation is closed for those who rejected William Miller’s 1844 message. This teaching is referred to as the Shut Door Doctrine. Adventist leaders have denied that Mrs. White taught this perverted doctrine this late in her ministry and denied that she ever tried to cover up any

evidence that she had believed it this late in her ministry. Then, a General Conference photographer, **Skip Baker**, photographed the letter in **1980** and subsequently published the photos which showed that the bottom of page two had been mutilated so no one could read what had been written there, and subsequent pages had been mutilated to the extent that Ellen's handwriting could never be read again. What writing remained that was still legible proves that she fully believed in the Shut Door Doctrine up to this point in 1847 and proves absolutely beyond any possible question that she deliberately tried to cover up this fact and lied about the matter. At the same time it shows that the General Conference and White Estate lied about the existence of the letter until it was impossible to deny it. (See **Skip Baker's** article, "**The Secret Letter**," in *Adventist Currents*, July **1984**). Photos of this letter are available, as well as the text of the letter at:

http://www.truthorfables.com/EGW_to_J.Bates_1847.htm

Gorham, Maine, July 13, 1847

Dear Brother Bates:

As James is at work and sisters are from home thought I would employ myself in writing a line to you. My health is quite good for me. My faith is still strong that that very same Jesus that ascended up into heaven will so come in like manner as He went up, and that very, very soon. I have had many trials of late; discouragement at times has laid so fast hold upon me it seemed impossible to shake it off. But thank God, Satan has not got the victory over me yet, and by the grace of God he never shall. I know and feel my weakness, but I have laid hold upon the strong arm of Jehovah, and I can say today I know that my Redeemer liveth, and if He lives I shall live also. Oh how good it would be to meet with a few of like precious faith to exhort and comfort one another with words of holy cheer from the word of God. The sheep are now scattered, but thank God, they are about to be gathered to a good pasture.

Oh how sweet it will be to meet all the blood-washed throng in the city of our God. 'Tis then we'll sing the song of Moses and the Lamb as we march through the gates into the city, bearing the palms of victory and wearing the crowns of glory.

Brother Bates, you write in a letter to James something about the Bridegroom's coming, as stated in the first published visions. By the letter you would like to know whether I had light on the Bridegroom's coming before I saw it in vision. I can readily answer, No. The Lord showed me the travail of the Advent band and midnight cry in December, but He did not show me the Bridegroom's coming until February following. Perhaps you would like to have me give a statement in relation to both visions. At the time I had the vision of the midnight cry I had given it up in the past and thought it future, as also most of the band had. I know not what time J. Turner got out his paper. I knew he had one out and one was in the house, but I knew not what was in it, for I did not read a word in it. I had been, and still was very sick; I took no interest in reading, for it injured my head and made me nervous. After I had the vision and God gave me light, He bade me deliver it to the band, but I shrank from it. I was young, and I thought they would not receive it from me. I disobeyed the Lord, and instead of remaining at home, where the meeting was to be that night, I got in a sleigh in the morning and rode three or four miles and there I found J. T. He merely inquired how I was and if I was in the way of my duty. I said nothing, for I knew I was not. I passed up chamber and did not see him again for two hours, when he came up, asked if I was to be at meeting that night. I told him, No. He said he wanted to hear my vision and thought it duty for me to go home. I told him I should not. He said no more, but went away. I thought, and told those around me, if I went I should have to come out against his views, thinking he believed with the rest. I had not told any of them what God had shown me, and I did not tell them in what I should cut across his track.

All that day I suffered much in body and mind. It seemed that God had forsaken me entirely. I prayed the Lord if he would give me strength to ride home that night, the first opportunity I would deliver the message He had given me. He did give me strength and I rode home that night. Meeting had been done some time, and not a word was said by any of the family about the meeting.

Very early next morning J.T. called, said he was in haste going out of the city in a short time, and wanted I should tell him all that God had shown me in vision. It was with fear and trembling I told him all. After I had got through he said he had told out the same last evening. I was rejoiced, for I expected he was coming out against me, for all the while I had not heard anyone say what he believed. He said the Lord had sent him to hear me talk the evening before, but as I would not, he meant his children should have the

light in some way, so he took him. There were but few out when he talked, so the next meeting I told my vision, and the band, believing my visions from God, received what God bade me to deliver to them.

The view about the Bridegroom's coming I had about the middle of February, 1845.

While in Exeter, Maine in meeting with Israel Dammon, James, and many others, many of them did not believe in a shut door. I suffered much at the commencement of the meeting. Unbelief seemed to be on every hand. There was one sister there that was called very spiritual. She had traveled and been a powerful preacher the most of the time for twenty years. She had been truly a mother in Israel. But a division had risen in the band on the shut door. She had great sympathy, and could not believe the door was shut. (I had known nothing of their differences.) Sister Durben got up to talk. I felt very, very sad. At length my soul seemed to be in an agony, and while she was talking I fell from my chair to the floor. It was then I had a view of Jesus rising from His mediatorial throne and going to the holiest as Bridegroom to receive His kingdom. They were all deeply interested in the view. They all said it was entirely new to them. The Lord worked in mighty power setting the truth home to their hearts. Sister Durben knew what the power of the Lord was, for she had felt it many times; and a short time after I fell she was struck down, and fell to the floor, crying to God to have mercy on her. When I came out of vision, my ears were saluted with Sister Durben's singing and shouting with a loud voice. Most of them received the vision, and were settled upon the shut door. Previous to this I had no light on the coming of the Bridegroom, but had expected him to this earth to deliver His people on the tenth day of the seventh month. I did not hear a lecture or a word in any way relating to the Bridegroom's going to the holiest.

I had but very few privileges in 1842, 3 & 4. My sisters both went to the camp meetings in New Hampshire and Maine, while my health prevented me from going to but one, in Maine. I know the light I received came from God, it was not taught me by man. I knew not how to write so that others could read it till God gave me my visions. I went to school but very little on account of my health. I do not think I went to school a day after I was twelve years old, and did not go then but a few days at a time, when sickness would cause me to take my bed for weeks and sometimes for months. The first I wrote anything that could be called writing was after I had been sick the prayer of faith was put up for me, and healing [Here the sheet ends, and the remainder of the letter is gone.]

E. G. White-Letter 3, 1847

Manuscript Release #281—4

1847 – James and Ellen White publish their pamphlet, “**A Word to the Little Flock.**” This paper clearly teaches the doctrine of the Shut Door. Several years later the Whites begin to cover-up the fact that they had written in favor of the Shut Door doctrine in this paper. They lie about the contents of the pamphlet until their deception is unmasked by **A. C. Long** in 1882. (See **1882.**) Her “Halo Vision” is included in this publication.

1847 – See also **1887** and **1895.** The Seventh-day Adventist Church tacitly concedes that Adventism had been struggling to explain how Colossians 2:14-17 could be harmonized with Sabbatarianism, but without success, for **forty years.** This takes us back to this date of circa 1847. This fact proves that 16 years before the Advent Movement organized into the Seventh-day Adventist Church, its leaders knew that this passage represented a serious roadblock to their Sabbath doctrine, according to this 1887 statement of apostate Adventist leader, D. M. Canright:

“But it is argued that as 'the Sabbath days' of Col.2:16 'are a shadow of things to come' (verse 17), and the weekly Sabbath is a memorial of creation, pointing back to the beginning, therefore they cannot be the same; for the Sabbath could not point both ways. But is not this a mere assertion without any proof? How do we know that it cannot point both ways? The Passover was a memorial of their deliverance from Egypt, and always pointed back to that event. Ex.12:11-17. Yet it was also a shadow of Christ. Col.2:16, 17. 'Even Christ our Passover is sacrificed for us.' 1Cor.5:7. So all those annual feasts were types of Christ in some way, and yet all were memorials also of past events, as all know.... Paul says plainly that Sabbath days are a shadow of things to come; and one plain statement of Inspiration is worth a thousand of our vain reasoning. This is in harmony with Paul's argument in Heb.4:1-11, that the seventh day is a type. **For forty years we have tried to explain away this text, and to show that it really cannot mean what it says; but there it stands, and mocks all our theories.** The Sabbath is a type, for Inspiration says so.” **D. M. Canright**, *Advocate* of Oct. 1, 1887, (Quoted in the Seventh-day Adventist anti-Canright book,

1848 - The *Present Truth*, a periodical published by James White, teaches the **Shut Door Doctrine**— the belief that salvation was closed to everyone except the Adventists who believed the Advent message in 1844. (See 1950.) Down through the years copies of these original, suppressed writings have surfaced, proving this fact. **E. F. Ballenger** in his circa 1950 publication, *Facts about Seventh-day Adventists*, proves Adventist leaders lied in their attempt to cover-up this fact that proves that Ellen White lied about how long she believed and taught the Shut Door Doctrine.

1850 - Ellen White predicts Jesus will come within a few months. (See *Early Writings*, p. 58.)

1850 – **Sylvester Bliss**, an Adventist pioneer and Millerite at the time, published a book entitled *Analysis of Sacred Chronology*. He presents evidence that demonstrates that the week is not a biblical or natural measurement of time and that the biblical measurement of limited spans of time is the lunar month, divinely appointed at the time of Creation. He states that the derivation of the week is not even really linked to the phases of the moon, but rather to the command of God to work six days and rest one.

1850 - Ellen White predicts the City of Jerusalem will never be rebuilt. (The city has since been built way beyond its 1850 boundaries.)

1853 - **Dr. L. B. Cole** publishes his book, *Philosophy of Health*. Years later Dr. Sadler, a physician at Battle Creek Sanitarium and a devoted follower of Ellen White, will note a wealth of similarities between what Dr. Cole said in this book and what she claimed came to her in vision about health. See 1907 for details.

1853 – **J. N. Andrews** attempts to refute an anti-Sabbatarian paper by **O.R.L. Crosier** which dealt with, among other things, the biblical evidence that the Sabbath could not possibly have started in Eden and that the Early Fathers of the Church recognized this fact (J. N. Andrews, “**A Review of the Remarks of O.R.L. Crosier on the Institution, Design and Abolition of the Sabbath**”). Andrews addresses each anti-Sabbatarian argument Crosier presents, and Crosier presents many of the same arguments used by today’s anti-Sabbatarian Movement. It is a shocking revelation of how early the pioneer leaders refused to open their hearts to the Gospel truth and were willing to follow the unbiblical and unhistorical claims of Ellen White over the truths of the Bible.

1856 – Ellen White predicts that there will be at least one or more persons in the group to which she is speaking who will be alive when Jesus returns. There is nothing “conditional” implied in her words: “I was shown the company present at the Conference. Said the angel: ‘Some food for worms, some subject to the last plagues, some will be alive and remain upon the earth to be translated at the coming of Jesus’” (*Testimonies, Vol. 1*, p. 131). All these people have since died.

1858 (January) – H. L. Hastings publishes *The Great Controversy between God and Man— Its Origin Progress and End*. There is some evidence that Ellen White may have modeled her Great Controversy series after Hastings and utilized much of his material by adapting it to her own approach. The similarities of sequence, subject matter, and theological interpretation are striking, but there are some significant differences. Kevin Morgan, a preeminent Seventh-day Adventist apologist for Ellen White, makes a good case that “copying” is not an accurate term to describe how she may have processed his material, if, indeed, she did so. (See 1974 for additional discussion of this topic.)

Since Ellen White had a habit of borrowing from other writings and declaring that the information was “shown” to her by God, it is likely that she leaned more heavily on Hastings than Morgan would like to admit. Ronald Graybill, the former associate secretary of the White Estate who got fired when the Church found out he knew that Ellen White was a fraud, said this after his years of research at the Estate:

“Mrs. White borrowed not only the words and phrases used by these authors, but in some cases, followed the outline of their expositions and drew from [their] facts, illustrations, thoughts, and concepts. The material borrowed by Mrs. White included historical, geographical, and chronological information, as well as devotional material, theological concepts—and scriptural and prophetic expositions. She also employed extra-Biblical comments on the lives of various Biblical characters, often turning the speculations and conjectures of her sources into statements of positive fact.”

“These borrowings occurred not only in the historical sections of the *Great Controversy*, but also in its prophetic sections. They appear in descriptions of the content of specific visions given to Mrs. White. It

would be unwise at this point to assert that there is any particular book written by Mrs. White or any type of writing from her pen in which literary borrowing will not be found.”

“Many of the beautifully expressed thoughts, that is, many of the literary gems found in Mrs. White’s writings were borrowed from other authors. This fact, together with the knowledge that her writings were polished by literary assistants, leads us to avoid the suggestion that the literary beauty of her writings is an evidence of her divine inspiration.” – Ron Graybill, Associate Secretary, Ellen G. White Estate at the General Conference of Seventh-day Adventists, Nov. 15-19, 1981

For a list of nearly 100 similarities between Hastings’ book and Ellen White’s book, go to:

<http://loudcry.org/sda/archives/54>

1858 (March 14th) – Ellen White has her so-called Lovett’s Grove Vision, which she claimed gave her a panoramic vision of the future. Over a period of time, she would write out sections of it that would evolve into what we know today as The Great Controversy. As her critics we are much less concerned about questions of literary borrowing and attribution of sources than we are about the dismal failure of her prophecies that never came to pass. If she had the direct, divine inspiration that she claimed, how could so many of her prophecies utterly fail? She said that very soon—right around the corner—Sunday laws would be passed that would result in Sunday-observing Christians joining together with civil forces to capture and kill Sabbath-keepers while thinking, in doing so, that they were doing God’s will. Even if a Sunday law were to be passed today, it could not qualify as a fulfillment of her prophecy because of the nearly immediate time-frame she specified. She also said that within a very short time, Spiritualism would completely permeate the Protestant churches in the land, and soon it would be a sin to speak out against talking to the dead in church séances. Nothing of the sort ever happened, and there is no indication that such a thing is happening in the mainline Protestant denominations today.

1858 (March 18th) – James White’s publication, *Review*, features a review of H. L. Hastings’ book, *The Great Controversy Between God and Man: Its Origin, Progress, and End*. Dirk Anderson of Ellen White Exposed.Com demonstrates that while there was only a little direct copying of exact quotes from Hastings’ book, the similarity of main themes, topics, and structure was remarkable (www.ellenwhiteexposed.com). While Kevin Morgan’s research diminishes the similarities between the content of these two works, the timing of Hasting’s work getting into the hands of the Whites creates the suspicion, difficult to ignore, that Ellen White’s inspiration to write a book with the theme that she chose did come from Hastings rather than her so-called Lovett’s Grove Vision.

1858 – Ellen White publishes *Spiritual Gifts*, which represented the very first version of her Great Controversy series. A comparison of her first version of the Great Controversy series with later versions confirms that many of the things Ellen White attributed to direct, divine inspiration in the 1858 version persisted into the later editions and are still present today. With each edition she appears to have been forced to claim less for divine inspiration and to attribute more of her actual sources.

1858 – James White published Ellen White’s book, *The Great Controversy between Christ and His Angels, and Satan and His Angels*, Battle Creek, Michigan. The Introduction is almost entirely devoted to convincing the reader that Ellen White has the gift of prophecy and that Christians should expect and accept spiritual gifts when they present themselves as genuine. James is virtually crediting the entire work to direct, divine inspiration. An Internet search for the 1858 edition of the book will allow you to read it for yourself.

1858 (CIRCA) – J. N. Andrews thinks he sees great similarities between John Milton’s *Paradise Lost* and Ellen White’s account of a vision she “received” in March regarding the appearance of Satan in the context of the battle between good and evil in the Universe. Ellen denies having read Milton’s book before she had the vision. Her grandson, Arthur White, spun it away like this:

He [J. N. Andrews] told her some of the things she had said were much like a book he had read. Then he asked if she had read *Paradise Lost*. She replied in the negative. He told her that he thought she would be interested in reading it.

Ellen White forgot about the conversation, but a few days later Elder Andrews came to the home with a copy of *Paradise Lost* and offered it to her. She took the book, hardly knowing just what to do with it. She did not open it, but took it into the kitchen and put it up on a high shelf, determined that if there was anything in that book like what God had shown her in vision, she would not read it until after she had

written out what the Lord revealed to her.

(See *The Spirit of Prophecy, Vol. 4*," cited in "Ellen White's Habit," By Douglas Hackleman, *Free Inquiry*, Fall 1984, posted at ellenwhiteexposed.com.)

Back in the early years of Ellen White's ministry it might have been possible to believe such an excuse, especially if critical judgment is suspended. Today, in the context of everything we know about her track record of prevarication, there is little doubt but that she told a bold-faced lie in this case.

1859 – J. N. Andrews publishes his first book on the Sabbath, *The History of the Sabbath and the First Day of the Week* (Battle Creek, Steam Press, 1859). (See the *Wikipedia* article, "J. N. Andrews.") The earliest version we could find of this book was the one published in 1874. Therefore, it is unsafe to speculate about exactly what Andrews may have conceded about the problems with the Sabbath belief model in the original edition. However, his earlier writings about the Sabbath, such as his 1853 attempt to refute Crosier's anti-Sabbatarian paper, suggest that much of what he conceded in the 1874 edition was most likely conceded in the original 1859 edition. (See 1874.)

1859 – The Advent believers adopt a business model for the financial support of their work based on a concept called "**Systematic Benevolence.**" James White develops the concept, and Ellen White is "shown" that it is the model God wants for them. "Systematic Benevolence" does not work very well. If this "testimony" actually did come from God, He apparently must have been mistaken about what His little flock actually needed.

The plan of Systematic Benevolence is pleasing to God. . . God is leading his people in the plan of Systematic Benevolence" (pp. 190, 191). "Systematic Benevolence looks to you as needless; you overlook the fact that it originated with God, whose wisdom is unerring. This plan He ordained" (*Testimonies for the Church*, p. 545, cited in Canright, *Life of Mrs. E. G. White*).

CIRCA 1859-1863 – Ellen White predicts that England will join the South and fight against the North in the Civil War. This did not happen. There is nothing conditional in this prophecy, although Adventist apologists try to explain it away by saying that one word in the statement can have an alternative meaning that would change the prophecy into a conditional one. (See *Testimonies, Vol.1*, p.259.)

CIRCA 1859-1863 – Ellen White states the Civil War is being fought, not to abolish slavery, but to preserve it. This is an amazing statement and contradicts all known facts of Civil War history. (See *Testimonies, Vol. 1*, pp. 254,258).

1862 – J. N. Andrews published his book, *The Three Messages of Revelation XIV, 6-12, and particularly The Third Angel's Message and The Two-Horned Beast*. This book contains concepts that Ellen White said came to her by Inspiration, but appear to have been originated by Andrews and later adapted and enhanced by Ellen White for her series of books which eventually came to be known as *The Great Controversy*.

1862 - Ellen White predicts that **Moses Hull**, who is about to leave Adventism, would suffer a terrible catastrophe as a result. The implication is that he will die much sooner than he might expect to, but she couches her words in general terms: "If you proceed in the way you have started, misery and woe are before you. God's hand will arrest you in a manner that will not suit you. His wrath will not slumber." (*Testimonies for the Church, Vol. I.*, pp. 430, 431) Hull leaves Adventism and becomes a Spiritualist. He leads such an immoral life that even the leaders of the Spiritualist movement are anxious to distance themselves from him. He dies at a ripe old age after enjoying the pleasures of sin for many additional decades. (*The Life of Ellen White*, D. M. Canright, Chapter 15 - "Her Prophecies Fail.") Also, it is highly probable that the influence of Ellen White's combination of genuine super-natural manifestations during her public visions with her continuous failure to predict and prophecy with 100% accuracy influenced him to view her as a genuine spirit medium. He observed, in all probability, that spirit mediums do not expect their spirit guides to give them the right answers all the time.

WHAT ADVENTISTS KNEW

1863-1888

Immediately after the founding of the Seventh-day Adventist Church, the Christian community reacted to the claims

of Adventism that Sunday-keepers were apostate sinners. Ellen White's representation of Sunday-observing churches as evil and ignorant of the facts of the Sabbath-Sunday issue is a false one. By 1867, just four years after the denomination organizes, a well-respected biblical scholar who had joined the ranks of Adventism published a volume of nearly 500 pages to refute nearly every aspect of the Church's biblical and historical errors. Two Conference leaders apostatized in 1866 and published a volume of evidence that documented the deceptions and false visions of Ellen White and disproved some of the doctrines she taught. Meanwhile, Ellen White fumbles her prophetic predictions so many times and says so many absurd things that many thinking Adventists are catching on to her fraudulent claims. By 1887, a top-ranking SDA leader, D. M. Canright, left the inner circle of Adventist leadership and a close association with Ellen White to be one of the worst critics of Adventism the Christian world would enjoy for a long time. See 1887.

1863 – The Seventh-day Adventist Church officially organizes. By this time it has been a while since the group of faithful Adventist believers split into two groups over the issue of the Shut Door Doctrine. The group that held onto the Shut Door Doctrine for a number of additional years was the one that organized into the Seventh-day Adventist Church. The other group, rejecting the Shut Door Doctrine almost immediately, organized into the **Church Of God Seventh-day**. Many years later a dissident member of this denomination split away from the Church of God Seventh-day and started The Radio (later "Worldwide") Church of God. This developmental history makes the Seventh-day Adventist Church and The Worldwide Church of God "sister churches." A study of the early works of Advent Movement pioneer church historian and Sabbath scholar, J. N. Andrews, demonstrates that by 1863 Adventist leaders were already acquainted with most of the anti-Sabbatarian arguments D. M. Canright confronted them with in the late 1880's. Almost 100 years later, Canright was validated in one way or another by Dr. Samuele Bacchiocchi in the late 1970's.

1863 – Ellen White condemns the reform dress in *Testimonies Vol. 1*, pp. 421,422. In 1863, claiming God as her authority, she said that dresses should "clear the filth of the streets by an inch or two", and "Christians should not take pains to make themselves a gazing stock by dressing differently from the world."

Editor's note: The following information on Dr. Jackson and Ellen White comes from Dirk Anderson's article, "Mrs. White's Health Visions: Was it God or Dr. Jackson?" Anderson based his research on a collection of Ellen White letters that were not released by the White Estate until the 1980's and material taken from the chapter, "The Dansville Days", ***Prophetess of Health*** pp. 77-101, by **Ronald Numbers**, Ph.D. Every date and accompanying entry is supported by documentation from either these hitherto unreleased letters or by her very early published writings.

1863 (JANUARY) – The White's sons contract diphtheria. At this time the White's become familiar with Dr. Jackson's water treatment principles.

1963 (FEBRUARY) - James White reprints an article of Dr. Jackson's on February 17, 1863.

1863 (JUNE) – James White writes to Dr. Jackson requesting some of his books.

1863 (JUNE) – Ellen White has her health reform "vision."

1863 (AUGUST) - On August 13, 1863, one month before James supposedly had any knowledge of the operations and teachings at Dr. Jackson's Danville health resort, Dr. Jackson wrote him apologizing for his long delay in replying to James' request for information about his books. It appears that James had written Jackson sometime in June, for in December of 1864 his letter stated that eighteen months earlier (which would have been June 1863) he had sent off to Dansville for some of their books.

1863 (SEPTEMBER) – Ellen claims that this month is the first time James has heard of Dr. Jackson.

1864 (JUNE) – Ellen begins publishing *How to Live* articles– very similar to a series by Dr. Jackson.

1864 (AUGUST) – The Whites spend three weeks on a fact-finding mission to Dr. Jackson's clinic in Danville, New York. Despite this visit, Ellen claimed that her associations with Dr. Jackson did not have anything to do with her views on health, which came from God in vision. Ellen White, in Letter 6, 1864, p. 1. (To Brother and Sister Lockwood, September, 1864.), she made this astonishing claim:

That which I have written in regard to health was not taken from books or papers. As I related the things which I had been shown to others, the question was asked, 'Have you seen the paper, The Laws of Life or the Water Cure Journal?' I told them 'No, I had not seen either of the papers.' Said they, 'What you have seen agrees very much with their teachings?' I talked freely with Dr. Lay and many others upon the things which had been shown me in reference to health. I had never seen a paper treating upon health. After the vision was given me, my husband was aroused upon the health question. He obtained books, upon our eastern journey, but I would not read them. My view was clear, and I did not want to read anything until I had fully completed my books. My views were written independent of books or of the opinions of others.

1864 (AUGUST) – Ellen and James White have Dr. Jackson do phrenology readings on their boys and write about how they were impressed with the accuracy of his readings. A couple of years earlier, she had denounced phrenology as being from the devil:

"I think Dr. Jackson gave an accurate account of the disposition and organization of our children. He pronounces Willie's head to be one of the best that has ever come under his observation. He gave a good description of Edson's character and peculiarities." [Ellen White, Letter 6, 1864, p. 1. (To Brother and Sister Lockwood, September, 1864.)

1864 – H. L. Hastings publishes an updated edition of *The Great Controversy between God and Man: Its origin, progress, and Termination*.

1864 - Ellen White changes her mind about the Reform Dress, "not only to distinguish them from the world, but because a reform dress is essential to physical and mental health". Max Chugg, author of "*The Truth about the White Lie Refuted*," makes this observation:

Mrs. White's prescribed dress was similar to one worn by Dr. Harriet Austin from Dr. Jackson's clinic. Instead of the previously prescribed "inch or two", the hem was nine inches from the floor. It was extremely unpopular with those condemned to wear it because people stopped, stared, and mocked. One woman spoke of hiding in shops to avoid the troops of boys who followed her. Even F. D. Nichol admits that those who wore the dress were subjected to ridicule. But protests to Mrs. White brought back the reply that "I have done my duty, I have borne my testimony, and those who have heard me and read what I have written, must bear the responsibility of receiving or rejecting the light given. If they choose to venture to be forgetful hearers, and not doers of the work, they run their own risk, and will be accountable to God." *Testimonies Vol. 1*, page 523.

1864 – Volumes III and IV of *Spiritual Gifts* are published, which expands on the 1858 material on the subject of the Great Controversy. Note that this is the second version of Ellen White's books that fall into the Great Controversy series. Note also the coincidence that she revised her book in the same year as did Hastings. However, there is no proof that this was anything but a coincidence.

1865 – **Robert Cox**, a contemporary of **J. N. Andrews** and **Ellen G. White**, publishes his massive, two-volume *The Literature of the Sabbath Question*. This set, available to theologians both then and now, furnishes the student of the Bible with a compilation of every Bible text that relates in any way to the Sabbath question and everything of significance that had ever been written about the Sabbath by Jewish rabbis, the Early Fathers, the Reformers, and all the significant biblical scholars and theologians, up through 1865. His book presents a massive number of quotes from writings on the Sabbath-Sunday question from both pro-Sabbatarian writers and anti-Sabbatarian writers, along with the author's commentary along the way. This body of research included an explanation of the following barriers to Sabbatarianism: **(1)** The concept of circumcision is an impossible barrier to Sabbatarianism. **(2)** Colossians 2:14-17. **(3)** No Sabbath-keeping during or before the Exodus. **(4)** Sabbath a sign between God and Israel only to distinguish Israel from all the other peoples of the world. **(5)** The history of the early church proves that Christians abandoned Sabbath-keeping on biblical grounds and that the Catholic Church could not possibly have changed the Sabbath. Like everyone else, this book was available to Ellen White and J. N. Andrews for study.

1866 – Just three years after the Church officially organizes, two Iowa Conference leaders, **Snook and Brinkerhoff**, apostatize and expose a whole string of Ellen White's failed prophecies and doctrinal absurdities in their book, *The Visions of E. G. White Not of God*. At this early date these SDA leaders did not seem to know that Ellen White was a plagiarist.

They document the fact that Ellen White continued to teach the **Shut Door Doctrine** for a lot longer than the Church would admit. These authors prove that Ellen and James White covered up the fact that they had taught the Shut Door Doctrine for several more years than they would admit, and they discuss her failed prophecies. You can access their book at:

truthorfables.com/Visions_of_%20EGW_by_Snook_&_Brinkerhoff.htm

1867 – Thomas Preble, having been a convert to Adventism for only four years, apostatizes and publishes an extensive scholarly work debunking the Adventism he once espoused. He utilizes many of the arguments that the anti-Sabbatarians use today. He debunks not only the Sabbatarian belief model itself, but exposes the seemingly dishonest twisting of historical facts utilized by J. N. Andrews to make it look like there was historical evidence that the Roman Catholic Church had changed the Sabbath. Preble devotes a large portion of his book to demonstrate conclusively that the Waldenses never kept the Jewish Sabbath, proving that this claim was based on a misunderstanding of the terminology early Christian writers used when discussing the Sabbath festival and the “Christian Sabbath,” or Sunday. He devoted a section of his book to refute Andrew’s book, ***History of the Sabbath*** point by point. He devoted another section to showing the biblical problems with an early Sabbatarian publication, “**Both Sides**,” which purported to give a fair presentation of both the Sabbatarian and anti-Sabbatarian points of view. Preble’s work is so embarrassing that it is remarkable that Andrews did not renounce his work. Andrews had more faith in the prophetic claims of Ellen White than he did in the well-respected historical writings of the last 2,000 years. He has seen Ellen White in vision, and the supernatural manifestations of her public visions are more convincing than even a large set of historical facts. Cross reference also to **1845**, the year Preble published a paper in favor of Sabbatarianism.

1867 – Adventist leaders plan to construct a building in Battle Creek for the new Health Reform Institute (Sanitarium) and need God’s blessing on the project. They approach Ellen White, who then has a vision. Ellen says:

“Here, I was shown, was a worthy enterprise for God’s people to engage in. Other people should have an institution of their own. Especially should those who have means to invest in this enterprise.”
(*Testimonies for the Church, Vol. 1*, pp. 492,494)

James White, her husband, is away at the time. When he returns to Battle Creek, he is enraged because he had not been consulted. The first story of the building is already completed. He has the building dismantled and put up again according to his design at a loss of \$11,000, which in today’s terms would represent the squandering of over \$1,000,000. (This event, but not the financial equivalent, cited in Canright, ***Life of Mrs. E. G. White***) After her husband’s return, James demands another testimony to repudiate the first one. Here is that second “testimony:”

What appeared in Testimony No. 11 concerning the Health Institute should not have been given until I was able to write out all I had seen in regard to it. . . They [the officials at Battle Creek] therefore wrote to me that the influence of my testimony in regard to the institute was needed immediately to move the brethren upon the subject. Under these circumstances I yielded my judgment to that of others, and wrote what appeared in No. 11 in regard to the Health Institute. . . In this I did wrong. (*Testimonies for the Church, Vol. 1*, p. 563)

It is evident that James White, her own husband, knew that her visions were not from God, or he would not have dared to go against what he otherwise would have considered to be the revealed will of God.

1868 – James White claims that his wife’s books contain many things that are not in any other books and presents this as evidence that her visions are inspired. **Douglas Hackleman** in his article, “**Ellen White’s Habit**,” has the following observations about this outrageous claim:

James White, who served as his wife’s editor most of the time until his death in 1881, also made claims and denials. In his autobiographical *Life Incidents* (published by Steam Press, Battle Creek Michigan, in 1868) he argued that Ellen’s writings contained “many things... which cannot be found in other books” (p. 328). In his next sentence James provides as an example “her favorite theme, God in nature.” But Mrs. White’s best-known passage on God in nature is a close paraphrase of an apologetic digression against naturalism from a sermon by nineteenth-century Anglican clergyman Henry Melville.

James White dug a deeper hole for himself and Ellen in his next paragraph:

If commentators and theological writer generally had seen these gems of thought...and had been brought

out in print, all ministers in the land could have read them. These men gather thoughts from books, and as Mrs. W. has written and spoken a hundred things, as they are beautiful and harmonious, which cannot be found in the writings of others, they are new to the most intelligent readers and hearers. ... She could not have learned from books, from the fact that they do not contain such thoughts. [p. 328, 329]. *Life Sketches*, (1880 ed.), pp. 325-329. For whatever reason, when *Life Sketches* was reprinted in 1888, James White's statement was not reprinted. (This source information is from the EGW Estate.)

The discovery in recent years by a variety of Adventist researchers that Ellen White and her editorial assistants wove the writings of scores of authors into testimonies, articles, and books published over her byline calls into question the integrity of both Ellen and James White. The White Estate recently made available for purchase on request a document comparing eighty-five pages of parallel passages between Mrs. White and **Henry Melville** alone.

1868 – James White publishes *Life Incidents*, which discussed the United States in Bible prophecy, the mark of the beast, and the image to the beast. Dirk Anderson, former SDA and Ellen White fraud expert, notes that the idea that Sunday observance as the Mark of the Beast was first advocated by Joseph Bates in the 1840's. Additionally he notes that much of the material from *Life Incidents* was borrowed from J. N. Andrews' book, *The Messages of Revelation XIV, 6-12 and Particularly the Third Angel's Message and The Two-Horned Beast*. Here we have good evidence that Ellen White's source for these concepts in her book, *The Great Controversy*, came from these earlier sources, rather from visions from God.

1868 - Uriah Smith seeks to accomplish damage control for Ellen White by publishing his book, ***Visions of Mrs. E. G. White—Manifestations of Spiritual Gifts According to the Scriptures*** (Battle Creek: Seventh-day Adventist Publishing Association, 1868). Even at this early date there is widespread suspicion that the Whites are covering up the fact that in one of her earliest visions she was supposedly shown the “truth” of the Shut Door Doctrine by God. Later research by the critics of E. G. White have demonstrated that it is highly probable that the account of the **Camden Vision** which teaches the **Shut Door Doctrine** is authentic, despite the fact that the only record of this vision was made by a witness who later became one of her critics. The White Estate does not have anything written by Ellen White herself about this vision. Since Ellen White is now known to have tried to cover her tracks in regard to the Shut Door issue, it would be no surprise that she kept no record of this early vision.

1869 – **Dr. William Russell** examines Ellen White and determines that her visions are “the result of a diseased organization or condition of the brain or nervous system.” (See Canright, ***Life of Mrs. E. G. White.***) Note that the White Estate has done a good job of discrediting the credentials of this doctor. However, from everything we now know about Ellen White's behavior, it appears that whatever the case may be, Dr. Russell was able to diagnose her properly even if his medical training was received informally.

1870 – **H. E. Carver** publishes his book, ***Mrs. White's Claim to Divine Inspiration Examined***, describing among other stumbling blocks to his faith, “two instances in which she claimed to see in vision things that I had communicated to her myself.” (Source: Douglas Hackleman, “**Ellen White's Habit**,” *Free Inquiry*, Fall, 1984.)

1873 – The Church publishes a revised edition of J. N. Andrews' classic, ***History of the Sabbath and the First Day of the Week***. In this edition, Andrews quotes a respected very early historian, **Joachim Neander** (1650–1680):

Now let us read what Neander, the most distinguished of church historians, says of this apostolic authority for Sunday observance:

“The festival of Sunday, like all other festivals, was always only a human ordinance, and it was far from the intentions of the apostles to establish a divine command in this respect, far from them, and from the early apostolic church, to transfer the laws of the Sabbath to Sunday. Perhaps at the end of the second century a false application of this kind had begun to take place; for men appear by that time to have considered laboring on Sunday as a sin. (Emphasis by authors)

Note that while it is possible that this same quote is in his original 1859 edition of this book, we know for certain that Adventist leaders knew 14-15 years before the Canright Sabbath Crisis of 1887-1889 that Christians had universally adopted Sunday observance hundreds of years before there was a Roman Catholic Church or a pope. It is clear that Canright was not telling them very much that they did not know.

For the complete text of the 1873 edition of Andrews' book, go to the *Wikipedia* article, “J.N. Andrews,” and click on the link

to the book. You must have the Djvu Reader to view it, which you can download free from the Djvu website. Or, paste the following link in your web browser and go directly to it:

http://www.archive.org/stream/historyofsabba00andr/historyofsabba00andr_djvu.txt

1873 - The Church publishes *Testimony of the Fathers of the First Three Centuries Concerning the Sabbath and the First Day* by **Elder J. N. Andrews** (Steam Press, Seventh-day Adventist Publishing Association, 1873). Andrews now expands his original 1859 defense of the Sabbath with this book. As before, he discusses a wide variety of early Christian writers who documented the fact that Christians were observing Sunday very early in the history of the Early Church. By now it should be perfectly clear to Andrews that Ellen White lied about being shown by God in vision that the Roman Catholic Church “changed the day” because he has a wealth of evidence that the phenomenon of Sunday observance by Christians happened hundreds of years before there was a real Roman Catholic Church and a real pope whose authority was sufficient to spread beyond the city of Rome itself. Again, we see that Adventist leaders did not need **D. M. Canright** to confront them with all this evidence during the late 1880’s. Since Andrews published his first history of the Sabbath in 1859, it is apparent that the early leaders of the Advent Movement knew many of these same things for several years before the Seventh-day Adventist Church formally organized in 1863. By this year, 1873, they knew enough about the impossibilities of their unbiblical and unhistorical teachings to know it was not possible Ellen White’s claims of God’s divine revelations were true, thanks to the work of Snook and Brinkerhoff in their 1866 book, *The Visions of E. G. White Not of God*, and the work of Thomas Preble’s 1867 book, *The First Day Sabbath Proved*.

1874 – **Isaac Welcome** publishes his *History of the Second Adventist Message*. This several volume set documents the strange fanaticism of the Whites, and their stand, later denied by them, on the Shut Door Doctrine plus the additional covering up by the Whites of a number of their earlier theologically errant statements. (A Google search will provide extensive sections of this book for your study, and it is available from Andrews University in a reproduction as well, indicated by one of the Google links.)

1875 – Mrs. White says God changed His mind again about the reform dress. Again, Max Chugg, author of *“The Truth about the White Lie Refuted,”* makes this observation:

Eight years later God again changed his mind, and Mrs. White wrote in 1875 "As our sisters would not generally accept the reform dress as it should be worn, another less objectionable style is now presented" *Testimonies Vol. IV*, p. 640. This raises the obvious question, why did God demand that an objectionable dress should be worn? After all, God's "prophet" specifically stated that people should not make themselves a gazing stock. But if you go out in public, wearing clothing of objectionable appearance, you automatically become a gazing stock, as those unfortunate women who took their prophet's counsel quickly discovered.

Taking the side of the Adventist here, we would say that the dress was not objectionable to God but to women. For example, when Lot was to flee Sodom, he was supposed to go to the mountain but he objected. He pleaded with God for a destination that was less objectionable to him and God consented. The destination was not objectionable to God but to Lot and yet God “worked with him” in this situation. Similarly, God allowed divorce under the law because of the hardness of men’s hearts even though it was not what He really wanted. Again, He worked with them.

Some questions that I **would** ask those who actually believe that God told Ellen what style of dress all the sisters should wear:

In the first 6,000 or so years of God’s dealings with man, when did He ever feel the need to dictate the **specifics** of a dress code for women through a prophet?

Why, at the end of the ages, did He feel it is necessary to “show” a “prophet” just exactly what style of dress women should wear, or what exact length it should be in regards to the ground?

What style of dress did God prefer before the reform dress? Did He tell anyone or were the women supposed to guess?

Modesty is always to be observed but does modesty know only one form?

Is it possible that God has always allowed a variety of dress among His daughters as long as they stay within the parameters of modesty and their clothing befits a meek and quiet spirit?

If God really wanted all Adventist women to wear the reform dress then would you agree that God's will was that women should wear uniforms?

Why don't Adventist women wear uniforms today?

“For as many as are **led by the Spirit** of God, they are the sons of God.”

Because the prominent critic of this dress was Canright, Nichol tries to argue that the descriptions of the dress are probably wrong, and that Canright must be dogmatic with his descriptions or his argument would collapse. Sadly for Nichols, a photo of Harriet Austin in her ridiculous dress has been found. It agrees exactly with Canright's description.

1876 – Ellen White predicts that Swedish publishing house manager, **Charles Lee**, who was very ill, would live. He died a few days later.

1876 – The “Systematic Benevolence” financial model is discarded in favor of the 10% model developed by D. M. Canright. Ellen White is “shown” in vision that this is the method God wants to support His little flock, which is growing larger. If Ellen White’s testimony were really from God, she would not make it look like He did not know what was best for Seventh-day Adventists until He had an opportunity to learn by experience what His people really needed. Time after time, Ellen’s claim that God showed her things that He did not show her impinges on God’s character and power, making Him look incompetent. This is a form of White collar blasphemy that has occurred over and over up until this point and will continue to happen as long as Ellen White lives. **Robert Sanders** writes:

Dudley M. Canright: in a series of articles in 1876, **emphasized Malachi 3:8-11** as “the Bible plan of supporting the Ministry.” **He urged Adventists to adopt this plan** to glorify God...“*R&H, February 17, 1876, p.50, 51*”, see also *Spectrum 1986, Adventist Tithesaying— the Untold Story*, p. 139. [Cited in Sanders, “Tithing Not a Law for Christians,” posted at his website, <http://www.truthorfables.com/Tithing.htm>]

1881 - Ellen White's dead husband is sent to Ellen by “God” in a super-real dream to give her counsel and to predict her future. (Letter 17, 1881, pp. 2-4, to W. C. White, September 12, 1881.) Amazingly, she follows the advice of a dead person. The deceased James White tells her that she can do more with her pen than with her voice. She certainly did make a lot of money by selling her books.

1882 – Ellen White publishes a book called **Early Writings**, which claims to be a reprint of her first writings, including the pamphlet, “**A Word to the Little Flock.**” The Whites had claimed that their new book contained no significant changes to the text and no deletions, but lots of stuff got changed. (See Canright, **Life of Mrs. E. G. White.**)

1882 – SDA pastor **A. C. Long**, who had retained a copy of “**A Word to the Little Flock**” from years ago, publishes a pamphlet entitled “**Comparison of the Early Writings of Mrs. White with Later Publications.**” In this 16-page tract, he places the original text alongside of the altered new text, proving that Ellen White had deleted all the key words and phrases that would have betrayed that she taught the **Shut Door Doctrine** long after she claimed to have abandoned it. Again, we see a deceitful, lying prophet who claims to be directly inspired by God. (See Canright, **Life of Mrs. E. G. White.**)

1882 – Ellen White is “shown” that the wrong man committed a great mistake. Here is the account from D. M. Canright’s book, **Life of Mrs. E. G. White:**

Rebuked the Wrong Man

About the year 1882, two Adventist ministers, E. P. Daniels and E. R. Jones, were laboring together in Michigan. In giving a health talk one of them had made some remarks quite offensive to aesthetic tastes.

Not long afterward Elder Daniels received a testimony from Mrs. White, rebuking him for the offense, which she said took place at Parma, Michigan. But, as the event turned out, she rebuked the wrong man, and the incident did not occur at Parma, but at another place.

Eld. E. P. Daniel's Reply.

In the *Advocate Extra*, Prof. McLearn tells a little story which he claims to have heard from a "prominent minister in the cars [railroad cars?]" to the effect that Mrs. White met Eld. E. P. Daniels, and said, "Bro. Daniels, I have a Testimony for you. The Lord has shown me that you said things, and acted in a manner, unbecoming a Christian minister, when you preached in Parma, Mich.;" and that Bro. Daniels replied, "You must be mistaken: for I never preached in Parma in my life."

This, of course, is a very nice little story for our opposers to use; and they have a great fondness for such, and take no end of pains to circulate them. This is just about as true as many others they circulate. It is but justice to Bro. Daniels that he should have a chance to reply to it. The following from his pen is to the point. G. I. B. [George I. Butler, who served as a president of the General Conference of Seventh-day Adventists.]

Please keep in mind that if **E. P. Daniels** is completely honest here, Ellen White is innocent of any real wrong-doing. The key, here, is whether or not Ellen labeled her rebuke to him as a "testimony." Ellen White and her followers understood that any time she labeled any counsel she gave as a "testimony," it was not her own understanding, but that it was shown to her by a supernatural source. It is the opinion of your authors that it is very difficult to know what really happened as there are motives for distorting the story on both sides. Is E. P. Daniels covering for Mrs. White? We caution our readers to look at the general trend of Ellen White's problems rather than placing too much confidence in isolated incidents in cases where her critics may have been in error, or worse yet, deliberately put an unflattering slant that should not have been given to their report. On the other hand, the Church had every possible reason to protect Ellen White from damaging evidence that she was a false prophet. In this case, only God knows what actually happened:

TO ALL WHOM IT MAY CONCERN.

The story is in circulation that at an audience granted me by Mrs. White, I was informed by her that in a temperance lecture given by me in the village of Parma. I had used language unbecoming a Christian minister, and departed myself in a manner disgraceful to the pulpit, and that God had shown this to her in vision, all of which I then and there denied. This story I deny publicly, as I have several times already done in private. Mrs. White never told me that she had ever seen anything of this kind in vision, either about me or anyone else. Through a misunderstanding, I happened to be the person rebuked, in the place of the one for whom the rebuke was intended, and who justly merited it.

Were all the facts known, it would leave no room for even the slightest disrespect for the motives that influenced her, as she had, as she supposed, the best of reasons for believing that her informant had told her the truth. And indeed he had, but had made a mistake in the name of the person; all that she had said was true of another, though the incident did not occur at Parma. More than this, Mrs. White told me plainly that this report came from a gentleman whose acquaintance they had formed when traveling in the West.

Those who fight against Mrs. White and spiritual gifts would do well to forge their weapons of something more substantial than flying reports.

E. P. DANIELS,

Rankin Post Office,

July 25, 1888. Genesee Co., Mich.

What may be seen from the above information from both her supporters and opposers is that by this time Ellen had made enough mistakes to raise concerns and questions about her claim to be divinely led. Furthermore, E. P. Daniels may have fudged on this assessment of the problem by ignoring the fact that what he typically would have received from Ellen White was a "testimony." By its very definition, a testimony was a message sent to someone with a message from God through His human Messenger, Ellen White. Ellen White would not have to spell out the fact that God Himself had told her that he was the offending person in the content of the letter for Daniels to know that he was being directly rebuked by God. One might also ask *when* Ellen White told him that the report came from a particular person. Is that what she wrote in the letter or testimony, or is that how she explained her mistake to him later? If Daniels had intended to convey the fact that Ellen White had told him that she got the information from a human being in the letter or testimony, he certainly could have

worded his statement more clearly.

1883 - Ellen White publishes a book for which she claimed divine inspiration— *Sketches from the Life of Paul*. Later it was discovered to have been lifted almost entirely from a book published earlier in England. The point is that Ellen White *LIED* about her source for the book. **Compared to her lying, the issue of plagiarism is a much less serious evil.** (See *The Life of Ellen White— Seventh-day Adventist Prophet— Her False Claims Refuted*, by D. M. Canright, Chapter 10 - “A Great Plagiarist”).

1883 – Uriah Smith in a letter dated March 22nd, 1883 reveals that he does not believe in the visions of Ellen White. The “stunners” he is talking about refer to a situation where Ellen White, who sought a reputation as one to whom God reveals the secret sins of others, knew nothing about the fact that the denomination’s foremost evangelist was having sexual relationships with numerous women in one of the SDA churches on the East Coast. She had stayed in the home of this prominent minister and his wife when she visited his community. **E. F. Ballenger** tells the story in his circa 1950 book, *Facts about Seventh-day Adventists*:

Elder Uriah Smith was connected with the editorial staff of the RH for fifty years, most of the time as editor in chief. His works on the prophecies are still considered standard in the denomination.

In a letter written March 22, 1883, he said:

It seems to me that the Testimonies, practically, have come into that shape, that it is not of any use to try to defend the erroneous claims that are now put forth for them.... Bro. Littlejohn has preached on the subject here treating it mostly from a theoretical standpoint. But that does not touch the question at issue among us at all. I presume you noticed in the Review of March 13, Bro. Waggoner's extinguisher of the Mormon gifts. But, if the same reasoning will not apply somewhat to our own experience, I cannot see straight. The cases of F--, C--, and S-- S-- are stunners to me.

If all the brethren were willing to investigate this matter candidly and broadly, I believe some consistent common ground for all to stand upon could be found. But some, of the rule or ruin spirit, are so dogmatical and stubborn that I suppose that any effort in that direction would only lead to a rupture of the body.

Elder Smith was editor of the *Review and Herald*, the official periodical of the Seventh-day Adventist Church, for thirty years before he discovered that any omissions had been made from the early visions in *Early Writings*. We have a letter of his stating this fact.

The three people referred to above were all prominent workers in the Advent cause, associated with James White and his wife, but were very immoral in their conduct; yet Mrs. White never knew of their immorality until the women who were involved confessed their sin. The fact that she did not know of their vileness was a “stunner” to Elder Smith. It is a sad fact that Elder Smith after writing these things stultified his conscience and openly maintained his defense of the idea that Ellen White was inspired of God.

1884 – Ellen White further expands her *Great Controversy* material from 1858 and 1864 and re-names the book, *The Spirit of Prophecy, v. 4: The Great Controversy Between Christ and Satan From the Destruction of Jerusalem, to the End of the Controversy* (136,700 words).

WHAT ADVENTISTS KNEW:

1887-1919

D. M. Canright apostatizes, leaving the inner circle of SDA leadership and a close connection with the Whites. He publishes, over the years that follow, a series of books that document the fraudulent prophetic claims of Ellen White, the biblical impossibilities of Sabbatarianism, and the myth that the Catholic Church changed the Sabbath from Saturday to Sunday. He utilizes almost all of the anti-Sabbatarian arguments that anti-Sabbatarian writers use today. He makes little headway against the denomination. He is one of the first anti-SDA writers to clearly articulate and document the incessant plagiarism of Ellen White. However, we believe that the combination of the Canright Crisis, the Chicago Buildings Fiasco, and the prophetic blunders she made between the Chicago Buildings Vision and her death in 1915 combined to create an atmosphere of doubt about Ellen White that led delegates of the 1919

Bible Conference who attended the secret session on the prophetic claims of Ellen White to boldly concede that Ellen White was a fraud and to consider whether the denomination should publicly renounce her or initiate a cover-up plan. By failure to come to a clear choice of action, the delegates instituted a cover-up.

1887 – A powerful SDA leader, **D. M. Canright**, apostatizes from the Church and begins writing articles and papers against Adventism, including proof from historical and biblical sources that the Sabbath doctrine is impossible. By this time Canright is well aware of Ellen White's plagiarism, in addition to her failed prophecies and aberrant teachings.

1887 – **J. N. Andrews** publishes a revised edition of his book on the Sabbath, entitled ***History of the Sabbath and the First Day of the Week*** (Review and Herald). He quotes Sylvester Bliss's statement that the week is not a natural or a biblical measurement of time and that the biblical measure of time is the lunar month, appointed to measure human time from the time of Creation. This comment adds to the agitation over the lunar calendar issue that has seemed to be ever-present in the background of Adventism. **Editor's Note:** The fatal implications for the idea that Christians must keep the Jewish Sabbath are very clear once the lunar calendar is properly understood. It is especially threatening to Sabbatarians because it is considered to be a genuinely moral issue, and to follow the truth about the biblical way the Sabbath is to be kept would create mass confusion within Adventism, which, in turn, would result in a huge financial disaster that would cause a lot of workers employed by the Seventh-day Adventist Church to lose their phony baloney jobs. (Harumph harumph)

1887 (CIRCA) - Alonzo T. Jones writes a scathing rebuttal of the **lunar calendar** concept that according to editors at the website of the 4 Angels Publications was "more of an impassioned attack than a well-reasoned, logical refutation addressing the various evidences supporting the concept."

1888 – Ellen White expands her **Great Controversy** material from 1858, 1864, and 1884, and changed the name of the book to **The Great Controversy**. Ellen White's introduction claims strong direct, divine guidance in the book's preparation:

[Through the illumination of the Holy Spirit, the scenes of the long-continued conflict between good and evil have been opened to the writer of these pages. From time to time I have been permitted to behold the working, in different ages, of the great controversy between Christ, the Prince of life, the author of our salvation, and Satan, the prince of evil, the author of sin, the first transgressor of God's holy law.](#)

1888 – Fearing that Canright was about to release an anti-Sabbatarianism, anti-Adventist book soon, Adventist leaders attempt to beat him to the draw by publishing **Replies To Elder Canright's Attacks on Seventh-day Adventists**. This action turns out to have been unwise, since the following year Canright was able to refute their poorly constructed arguments and reference them by the Adventist book's page numbers.

1889 – Arch Apostate, **D. M. Canright**, publishes his classic **Seventh-day Adventism Renounced**. He presents encyclopedic evidence from reliable scholarly sources that prove Sabbatarianism is biblically and historically impossible. He refutes the SDA leadership point-by-point and page number by page number, referencing the Church's 1888 book, **Replies to Elder Canright's Attacks on Seventh-day Adventists**. **Editor's Note:** The "Replies" book's title demonstrates an attempt to discredit D. M. Canright as attacking Adventists, and not the Sabbatarian theology of the Adventists. Redefining issues and debates is a common ploy among cultic groups.

1889 - The Healdsburg, California *Enterprise* publishes a remarkable story, March 20, 1889, exposing Ellen White's plagiarism. The article compares five passages from her writings side by side with the passages from the authors she had copied. The reporter concludes that she is, indeed, a plagiarist. This is an interesting fact, since Adventist leaders try to say that back in Ellen White's day there was no well-defined concept of what constituted plagiarism. (You can do an Internet search to read the article from the *California Enterprise* for yourself.)

1890 – MARCH 7 - The General Conference holds a meeting behind closed doors to discuss a new religious liberty publication at **Salamanca, New York**. She deceives the participants into believing that she knew in advance about the bad things they were doing. Careful research in the 1980's conducted by Douglas Hackleman proves that there was ample opportunity for her to glean the information from human sources prior to the meeting and that she altered the dates in her personal diary to cover her tracks. He puts the events surrounding this incident together from a variety of sources, much as we did to get to the bottom of the Chicago Buildings Vision, and his findings are extremely interesting. (The information on the Salamanca Vision has been taken from *Adventist Currents*, September 1986.)

1891 – SDA pioneer, A. T. Jones, publishes his book, *THE TWO REPUBLICS: Rome and the United States of America* – Commentary: This is what happens when the writer has a predetermined destination to reach with his research. It falls squarely in the category of propaganda. Larry Dean provides this analysis of this book, which seems to have led many an Adventist believer to a solid faith in the Sabbath doctrine and the idea that the pope is the anti-Christ:

(a). He never mentions the powerful Bishop of Constantinople until the reign of Constantine, and rarely mentions it after that. All of the Ecumenical Church Councils were held within a 150 miles radius of Constantinople, at the beck and whim of the Bishop of Constantinople, NOT the Roman Pope. The Pope was in attendance at none of them. At NONE of them were disputes from Western Christianity adjudicated. It mimics the common Adventist delusion that the capital of the Roman Empire was Rome. Nothing in the book makes any hint of the overwhelming geo-strategic reasons that Constantine moved the capital there.

(b). The reason that Christians seemed to be "worshiping the Sun" to a semi-illiterate Adventist are mysterious, but a quick perusal of the Bible makes it clear what is up:

"In them hath he set a tabernacle for the sun, which is as a bridegroom coming out of his chamber, and rejoiceth as a strong man to run a race. His going forth is from the end of the heaven, and his circuit unto the ends of it: and there is nothing hid from the heat thereof."—Psalm 19:4-6.

"The Sun of righteousness."—Malachi 4:2.

(c). Jones simply has no comprehension of Greek Sun worship. he conflates it with Apollo and/or Hercules. The Greek Sun god was Helios. And the worship of Helios suffered an irreversible blow in 226 BC when the Colossus of Rhodes, at the epicenter of Greek Sun Worship, collapsed into the ocean during an earthquake. It was never rebuilt and was sold for scrap.

(d). Greek sun worship began dying out in around 500 BC due to Greek astronomy. By 300 BC, it was a completely-discredited religion practiced by Greek's hill snake handlers and an embarrassment. The King of the Greek gods was Zeus, who was worshiped in the Jewish Temple when Daniel 8:14 was fulfilled, during the reign of Antiochus Epiphanies. Jesus confirmed this fulfillment of Daniel 8:14 in John 10:22-23. Jones says NOTHING about this.

(e). He discusses the Bishops of the Christians Churches without mentioning the primary role of St. Ignatius of Antioch, whose 107 AD Epistles are filled with a "job-description" of the role of Bishops; the overwhelming role of the Eucharist (and which Jones gets absolutely wrong). Ignatius was a direct disciple of Paul, John and Peter (who was the first Bishop of Antioch)

(f). Here's the money shot: "Therefore, To the reign of Constantine the Great must be referred the commencement of those dark and dismal times which oppressed Europe for a thousand years. It is the true close of the Roman empire, the beginning of the Greek."

The Roman Empire was not extinguished until the fall of Constantinople in 1453 AD. This was no "Greek Empire." What an incredibly stupid statement!

(g). Jones mentions NOTHING about the effect of the empire being under siege by Islam. NOTHING!

(h). His account of Early Christianity's persecutions by either the Roman Empire or the Islamic Empire are simply laughable and have been debunked by modern-day historians.

(i). He never mentions the Eastern Church's primacy in all of the Ecumenical Councils, which teaches and has always taught that Christians began gathering on Sunday on the week after the Resurrection. If the Greeks had any inkling that Rome was behind the Lord's Day of Christianity, they would immediately cease gathering on Sunday and adopt. Jones mentions nothing about the fall of Constantinople in 1453 or the Excommunication of the Pope that occurred in 1054.

1892 – Astronomer, Bernard, at Lick Observatory discovers the 5th moon of Jupiter, proving that the source of Ellen White's visions must have been from a god who didn't remember what he or she had done when our solar system was created. (See also **1905**.)

1892 – Elder J. N. Loughborough publishes *Rise and Progress of Seventh-day Adventists*. His publishers have the

audacity to change the mention of Ellen White's words in regard to the moons of Jupiter to, "I see *eight* moons." This is absolute proof that the author and his publishers knew Ellen White was a fraud. Their actions are inexcusable. If the Church were not a religious business, their false "product" claims would be illegal. (See 1905.)

1892 – In his 1892 book, *Rise and Progress of Seventh-day Adventists*, **J. N. Loughborough** exalts Ellen White's predictions about the Civil War as evidence that her visions are from God without bothering to mention the fact that she predicted that England would fight with the South against the North. Instead he tells the story of how at a certain believer's home, she predicted that the sons of some of the people present in that room would die in battle. In a real history, Loughborough would have had no choice but to give the account of Ellen White's disastrous prognostications in regard to England joining the South to fight against the North, as well as other Civil War predictions and comments that were incredibly inaccurate and absurd. It is no wonder that the *Wikipedia* article on Adventist Studies says that Loughborough's book is now regarded as downright dishonest Adventist propaganda, rather than genuine history (**Roelf J. Poehler**, unpublished paper on the shut-door era. Quoted in "**Early Ad-ventures in Maine**", letter to the editor by **Donald E. Casebolt**, *Spectrum* 18:2 [1987], p. 63). To read Loughborough's 1892 book, you must down-load the Djvu reader from Lizard Technologies and then go to this SDA website: adventistarchives.org/docs/RP/RiseAndProgress/index.djvu

1893 – The General Conference exiles Ellen White to Australia. From what the 1919 Bible Conference minutes later reveal about what Adventist leaders knew about her, and from what we now know they knew about her as early as **1863** from the paper by **Snook and Brinkerhoff**, there is circumstantial evidence that the Church was aware of the fact that their prophetess was causing a lot of trouble for Adventism at the time. According to **Arthur L. White**, (*Ellen G. White: The Australian Years*, Review & Herald, 1983, p. 16), she sailed September 9, 1891. [The facts for this event, but not the interpretation of this incident, came from the paper, "**When the Visions Led: an Adventist Anomaly**," by **Douglas Hackleman**, March 25, 2006.]

1895 - The Church publishes a more complete version of *Replies to Canright*. The book's contributors reference Canright's 1889 book by the page numbers. This publication proves SDA leaders had to know that their Sabbatarian arguments were impossible. The best they are able to do is to obfuscate the issue in hopes that their readers will lose their focus on the importance of what Canright proved. They grapple poorly with the fact that the first Christian writers documented the extensive adoption of Sunday observance by Christians before the end of the First Century and attempt to use this evidence, which is highly damaging to their own position, as evidence that their preconceived notion of an "apostasy" began very early. They fail to acknowledge the fact that the angel "lied" to Ellen White about the Roman Catholic Church "changing the day," since they were trying to explain away proof that Christians were not keeping the Sabbath hundreds of years before there was a pope or a Catholic Church. Their attempted rebuttal of Canright on Colossians 2:14-17 is proven to be equally reprehensible. It does not address Canright's central point at all, and their quotation of Canright's exact words from his 1889 book prove that these early Adventist leaders had been struggling, without success, to explain away this devastating passage from Paul's writings from almost the very beginning of the Advent movement.

1895 (CIRCA) – **J. H. Wier**, a young Adventist pastor at this time, learned from his Hebrew teachers, who were Karaite Jews, that the Karaites used the lunar calendar to determine when their holy days would fall. He discovered that William Miller had used the lunar calendar to "correct" one of the errors in his calculations for determining the exact date for the Second Coming of Christ. He finds evidence that Ancient Israel probably used this lunar calendar for determining their weekly Sabbaths as well. He researches this subject for decades before he presents his findings to the General Conference. See **1932** and **1938** when he completes his research, presents it to the General Conference, and the issue is tabled because his conclusions appear to be valid and therefore threatening to the well-being of the institution of Adventism. Our reference is:

www.4angelspublications.com/amadon.php

1899 – **Ellen White** writes to **Dr. J. H. Kellogg** accusing him of erecting some buildings in Chicago with funds diverted from the Battle Creek Sanitarium. Dr. Kellogg and the Battle Creek Sanitarium represent the last road-block to the consolidation of power at the General Conference. Ellen White's son, **Willie White**, conceded that his mother was "shown" that the buildings were built but that, indeed, the buildings were not built. You will find an extensive presentation on this fiasco in a later chapter.

Compare that against the specific testimony of Dr. Kellogg by searching for "**The Kellogg File**." You can also reference the

mention of the date of 1899 for this event in the "Letter from **Dr. Charles Stewart** to Ellen G. White," dated May 8, 1907 at: http://www.ex-sda.com/perplexed_stewart.htm

1899 – Astronomer Professor W. H. Pickering discovers the 9th moon of Saturn. Adventist leaders should have realized that something smelled fishy in regard to Ellen White's claims that her visions came from God. Surely these leaders could use their brains to reason that the True God would know how many moons He created for Saturn. (See 1905.)

1901 – The first volume or volumes of the *Jewish Encyclopedia* is/are released. The final volume will not be released until 1906. This encyclopedia provides a number of interesting facts that make the case of Sabbatarianism more difficult: **(1)** The Jews probably kept the Sabbath according to the lunar calendar until sometime after the Captivity and the building of the Second Temple. **(2)** Keeping track of time with the lunar calendar was so characteristic of ancient peoples that it is highly likely that any knowledge of which day of our fixed calendar is an exact seven-day multiple of the 7th day of Creation Week is improbable. **(3)** Jews with only a few exceptions believe that the Sabbath was given only to them. **(4)** The majority of Jewish scholars—especially those with special training in Ancient Hebrew— do not believe that there is any Sabbath content in Genesis 2.

1902 – Dr. John Harvey Kellogg finishes preparation on the book, *The Living Temple*. Ellen White has a book of her own she wants to sell to the Church that teaches principles that are similar to those taught by Dr. Kellogg called *Ministry of Healing*. She accuses him of being a Pantheist and teaching pantheistic ideas in his book. Dr. Kellogg denies being a pantheist, but agrees not to publish the book. (Our comparison study between the books of these two authors indicated to us that both of them made statements that if stretched and taken out of context might possibly suggest a slight bent towards a hint of Pantheism. Our research could not substantiate Ellen White's charges of Pantheism against Kellogg.) Access "The Kellogg Files" with an Internet search. Note that several General Conference officials read the manuscript draft for *The Living Temple* and stated they did not see any Pantheism in it.

1903 – Ellen White claims that her books did not come from her, but came from God:

[Sister White is not the originator of these books. They contain the instruction that during her life-work God has been giving her. They contain the precious, comforting light that God has graciously given his servant to be given to the world. \(*Advent Review and Sabbath Herald*, Jan. 20, 1903.\)](#)

We note however that Ellen White had no problem keeping the money collected from the sale of God's books.

1903 – The General Conference moves its headquarters to Washington DC from Battle Creek, Michigan. The environment of the Battle Creek location had become inhospitable to Adventism, having made a bad name for itself in the treatment of Dr. J. H. Kellogg and the community's awareness of the behavior and false prophetic claims of the Church prophetess, Ellen White. Adventism could no longer flourish in a community beset by so much trouble and controversy.

1904 – A group of key physicians associated with Dr. J.H. Kellogg at the Battle Creek Sanitarium find numerous contradictions in the testimonies of Ellen White and begin to question whether she was inspired of God or not.

1904 – Ellen White reiterates her claim that her books are directly inspired by God in Letter H-339, December 6, 1904:

[These books contain clear, straight, unalterable truth and they should certainly be appreciated. The instruction they contain is not of human origin.](#)

1905 – A. F. Ballenger, a prominent SDA leader in England, discovers there is no biblical support for the Doctrine of the Investigative Judgment. Furthermore, he finds that the doctrine is squarely against what the Bible teaches about the concept of judgment and the Gospel. He writes of his concerns to Ellen White. Soon he is defrocked at a hearing held at the General Conference headquarters in Washington, DC. During his presentation he is bombarded with questions from the "jury" from the writings of Ellen White, but no one can provide Bible proof for the doctrine. He is deprived of his SDA income; he is forced to live in near poverty as he attempts to find a way to feed his family back on the farm. (See "On Trial for Heresy—The A. F. Ballenger Story," by **Dirk Anderson** at **Ellen White Exposed**:

www.ellenwhiteexposed.com/egw13.htm

1905 – Continuing the deliberate deception in regard to how long Mrs. White taught the Shut Door Doctrine, **J. N.**

Loughborough publishes *The Great Second Advent Movement*. In the section of his book devoted to an extensive defense of the charges that Ellen White believed in the Shut Door Doctrine for far longer than she admitted, he deliberately omits three words from a quotation from the very early Adventist publication of James and Ellen White, “**A Word to the Little Flock**” (1847) that proves that Ellen White's critics are correct. On page 263 of the 1905 edition, he quotes from this early work:

I believe the work [of Mrs. White] is of God, and is given to comfort and strengthen his scattered, torn and peeled people, since the closing up of our work. . . in October, 1844.”

Note the three little dots— ellipses— which indicate some words were left out. Here are those words from the original 1847 copy of “**A Word to the Little Flock**”: “*since the closing up of our work FOR THE WORLD in October, 1844.*”

These three words reveal the fact that Bates and the Whites did believe as late as 1847 that the door of mercy was shut to everyone but a tiny group of people who clung to the 1844 Message! By 1905, Loughborough had to have been acquainted with the 1882 work of **A. C. Long**, which had proved the Whites were guilty of covering up this fact to the point of over-kill! You can access the Loughborough publication by doing a Google search. In fact, it is now a Google Book. We learned of this deception from Canright's book, *Life of Mrs. E. G. White*, and verified it by going to the Loughborough book ourselves.

1905 - Astronomer Perrine at Lick Observatory discovers the 6th and 7th moon of Jupiter, again proving that the god who gave Ellen White the astronomy vision in 1846 was either very forgetful or was a liar who deceived her to make her look foolish later on. (See 1908.)

1905 - Astronomer W. H. Pickering discovers the 10th moon of Saturn, once again showing that the god who showed Ellen White the vision of the solar system had been out to lunch when the solar system was created.

1905 - Elder Loughborough revises his 1894 book, *Rise and Progress of Seventh-day Adventists* and publishes it under the title of *The Great Second Advent Movement*. On page 258 of that book, there is a footnote that says, “More moons to both Jupiter and Saturn have since been discovered.” Perhaps he and his publishers thought God might have created some additional moons for these planets after Ellen White's vision in 1846. How embarrassing! Absolute proof that SDA leaders knew her claim that her visions were from God was fraudulent! Imagine participating in a crime like this deception! (See D. M. Canright, *Life of Mrs. E. G. White* for the basic uncomplimentary information about the falsification of her visions. See the article, “J. N. Loughborough,” at The Narrow Way Ministries website for documentation of the re-naming of the book, which Canright does not indicate. Note that The Narrow Way Ministries is strongly Pro SDA and we use this source only for the purpose of getting the name change of Loughborough's book correct.)

1905 (MARCH) – Ellen White is distressed by the questionings of the Battle Creek physicians and is “shown” that she is to instruct them to write out their difficulties regarding her writings and send them to her, promising to respond to each concern. Here is her “testimony,” dated March 30, 1906:

Recently in the visions of the night I stood in a large company of people. . . I was directed by the Lord to request them, and any others who have perplexities and grievous things in their minds regarding the testimonies that I have borne, to specify what their objections and criticisms are. The Lord will help me to answer these objections, and make plain that which seems to be intricate. . . Let it all be written out, and submitted to those who desire to remove the perplexities. . . They should certainly do this, if they are loyal to the directions God has given.

Editor's Note: This statement of Mrs. White is dated to March 30, 1906 by A.T. Jones in a letter to Ellen White dated April 26, 1909 as posted on the Web. D. M. Canright credits it to March 30, 1905. Per EGW scholar, Robert K. Sanders, Canright made a mistake by dating it to 1905, since all three primary sources, Sadler, Jones, and Stewart, refer to EGW's 1906 date.

1906 (APRIL) - Dr. William S. Sadler, in a letter dated April 26, 1906, writes to Ellen White in response to her 1905 testimony that those who are perplexed by things they find in her writings should put a list of their concerns together and send them to her for explanation. Among other things, he asks Ellen White to explain how God could have shown her that Dr. Kellogg built buildings in Chicago when, indeed, he did not. Dr. Sadler is a Battle Creek Sanitarium physician and associate of Dr. J. H. Kellogg.

1906 (APRIL) - Many days after the San Francisco Earthquake took place on April 18th, Ellen White reports that an angel had shown her a vision of great buildings falling and awful destruction in a large city and that this had happened two days before the San Francisco earthquake. She claimed that these events had been shown to her in two sessions, one the night of April 16th and one the night of April 17th. She wrote that she did not announce that these visions had taken place until many days later because it had taken her so long to write out the extensive information the angel had shown her. **As D. M. Canright observes in *Life of Mrs. E. G. White*, she had learned to be cautious about naming dates and places until after the events had occurred due to her previous failures at foretelling the future. It is much safer to forecast events after the fact.**

1906 (APRIL) – Alanzo T. Jones, presented his paper, “***Some History, Some Experience and Some Facts***,” at the regular monthly meeting of the Battle Creek Sanitarium “family.” This paper exposes Ellen White's unethical use of her “Testimonies” to achieve the political victory over Dr. Harvey Kellogg. He demonstrates that Ellen White's closest associates in Battle Creek do not believe the Testimonies are from God with many examples of why this is so. HISTORICAL SIGNIFICANCE: Jones and Waggoner had preached the doctrine of righteousness of faith at the 1888 General Conference Session. Ellen White had said that God showed her that these men preached the truth, but the message was rejected by the delegates in general. The Church spread the story that Alanzo T. Jones had fallen away from the Truth in subsequent years, but it will never tell you that he did so because he discovered Ellen White was a fraud. According to a Google Book, ***Another Gospel: Cults, Alternative Religions, and the New Age Movement*** By Ruth A. Tucker, Jones left Adventist leadership but remained a Seventh-day Adventist until his death. It is our opinion that much of the Adventist history that makes up *Wikipedia* entries is supplied by pro-Seventh-day Adventist contributors. For example, in the *Wikipedia* article on Alanzo T. Jones, there is no mention of this fact.

See: <http://temcat.com/L-1-adv-pioneer-lib/ATJONES/SHSESF.pdf>

1906 (MAY) - The *Watchman* publishes an article entitled “***Religious Liberty***,” written years prior by Elder George E. Fifield, as an article written by Ellen G. White and presented to the Church as a revelation from God. The first page article in every issue of the *Watchman*, a weekly magazine published by the SDA publishing house, at Nashville, Tenn. was given to Mrs. White's supposed “writings in 1906,” excepting one issue which was devoted to reporting the proceedings of the Southern Union Conference. In the issue of May 1, the section devoted to the writings of Ellen G. White was used to perpetrate this blatant deception. (Courtesy: Robert K. Sanders, www.truthorfables.com)

See http://www.truthorfables.com/Great_Controversy_Plagiarism.htm

1906 (JUNE) - In a communication dated June 3, 1906, Ellen White is “shown” that God has apparently changed His mind about whether she should try to answer all the questions raised by the Battle Creek physicians. Now, Ellen says God does not want her to answer these questions. Her “testimony,” quoted in **A. T. Jones** letter of 1909, is as follows:

Sabbath night, a week ago, after I had been prayerfully studying over these things, I had a vision, in which I was speaking before a large company, where many questions were asked concerning my work and writings.

I was directed by a messenger from Heaven not to take the burden of picking up and answering all the saying and doubts that are being put into many minds.

1907 – Dr. Charles E. Stewart of the Battle Creek Sanitarium publishes an 89-page pamphlet, which questions Ellen White about evidence that would indicate that her prophetic claims were fraudulent. All these questions have been answered by now, and they have not been answered in her favor. He published his questions as a booklet because she would not answer any of the questions he had sent her in previous letters, and he was, as you can see, quite perturbed with her. You will recall that in 1905 Ellen sent out a letter inviting Stewart and everyone else to submit such questions to her. The pamphlet was published as ***A Response to an Urgent Testimony from Mrs. E. G. White***, and it soon became known as “***The Blue Book***.” You can read a complete copy of it at Robert K. Sander’s website, Truth or Fables at this Web address:

http://www.truthorfables.com/A_Response_to_Urgent_Testimony.htm#AResponse

Stewart placed Ellen White’s plagiarisms of **Conybeare and Howson’s** book, ***Life and Epistles of the Apostle Paul***, side-by-side with the sections she copied into her book, ***Sketches from the Life of Paul***. Then he asked her to explain why she

had claimed that the information had come from God. The comparison was devastating.

Stewart had noticed that the health message she taught and claimed was given to her by God read very much like what Dr. **L. B. Cole** had written in his book, *Philosophy of Health*, in **1853**. He showed her a devastating example of the kind of things he found in abundance, and made this remarkable statement to her:

We have read also Dr. L. B. Cole's *Philosophy of Health*, published first in 1853, a book which was so popular that it went through twenty-six editions and thirty-five thousand copies were disposed of. In your works we have not found a single essential point with reference to health reform which is not to be found in Dr. Cole's and other books written several years before you wrote anything on the subject. Since your writings on this point contain so much that is identical with that which is contained in books by other authors, are we not to infer that the special light you have upon this subject came, through your reading Dr. Cole's, Dr. Jackson's, and other writings on this particular topic, and also as in the case where you saw it in a new light when the selfishness of taking the lives of animals to gratify a perverted appetite was presented to you by a Catholic woman?

Note that as of the writing of this book, the Ellen White propaganda website, www.ellenwhite.info, tries to defend her plagiarism by arguing that the Conybeare and Howson book was in the public domain and that copyright laws were different in her day. **This propaganda outlet fails to disclose that the real problem with Ellen White in this instance is that she claimed to have gotten this information from God in vision, making her a liar and committing a White-collar type of blasphemy.**

1907 – Adventist leaders fight dirty in regard to Dr. J.H. Kellogg. He has too much power, and the Whites want to consolidate their power at the General Conference. The Church decides Kellogg must go. Two General Conference officials, Elder George W. Amadon and Elder A.C. Bourdeau, visit Dr. J.H. Kellogg in his home on October 7th. He is disfellowshipped without being given the opportunity to defend himself in a church board meeting, as is the customary practice when a Seventh-day Adventist member contests his charges and wishes to remain in the Church. He denies being a Pantheist and explains to them how Ellen White herself had earlier read his transcript for *The Living Temple* and had no criticism for it. He confronts the leaders with the fact that he did not build any buildings in Chicago— a fact by this time— and questions how God could have shown Ellen something that was not true.

http://www.truthorfables.com/Statement_by_MG_Kellogg.htm

1908 – **Astronomer Malotte** at the Greenwich Observatory discovers the 8th moon of Jupiter, again proving Ellen's 1846 astronomy vision to be either a product of her imagination or a diabolical spirit guide. (See 1914.)

1909 – **A. T. Jones**, a partner to **Elder E. J. Waggoner** in the 1888 "*Righteousness by Faith*" movement that was squelched by the Church, finds out that Ellen White had offered in March of 1906 to answer any questions people might have about things she has written. He writes Ellen that by now he has heard about the second "testimony" she was "shown" that she was not to answer the questions that her first "testimony" had told her to answer. He confronts her with the fact that Dr. Sadler and Dr. David Paulson had written to her on June 3rd, 1906 and she had not answered their questions. Furthermore, he tells her that it is impossible for her to answer their questions because there are no answers:

For if the writings were really the word of God -

a. They need no explanation.

b. If the writings to be explained were not the word of God, then I would not want any explanation of them; for I would not care anymore for them than for any other writings that were not the word of God.

Further I knew that the things that could be written, you simply could not explain; and that any explanation would be worse than no explanation. And the event has fully justified this view. (Cited in the letter Jones to White, April 26, 1909)

1909 – **A. F. Ballenger** publishes his classic *Cast out for the Cross of Christ*, which represents a very complete debunking of the **Doctrine of the Investigative Judgment**. He wrote this book after he moved to California to recover from the financial ruin that his termination from denominational employment caused and to promote the truth that he has learned about the Gospel. The book includes a presentation of the letter he wrote to Ellen White explaining, point by point, her

errors placed side-by-side with the Bible statements that show that what she teaches conflicts with Scripture. (See Dirk Anderson, “**On Trial for Heresy— the A. F. Ballenger Story,**” at:

www.ellenwhiteexposed.com

1909 – At the last General Conference Mrs. White attended, a certain minister was asked to read one of her unpublished testimonies. As he read it, he recognized that it was his own production. Since he had been taught all his life that Ellen received her testimonies from God, his faith in her was shaken. (See Canright, *Life of Mrs. E. G. White.*) Edward S. Ballenger, a former Adventist who published the anti-SDA/EGW paper, *The Gathering Call*, tells the story in the January-February 1938 issue, pp.16-23:

At the general conference of 1909, held at Washington, DC, the last conference Mrs. White attended, Elder W. A. Colcord was handed a batch of Testimonies supposedly from Mrs. White, to read at a special session of the Religious Liberty Association. In reading it over, previous to the session, he discovered an article that was quite familiar to him, and behold, the whole article was a product of his own pen, which he had sent to Mrs. White two or three years before, yet it was assigned to him to read as a revelation from God. We would be pleased to have Elder W.A. Spicer offer a satisfactory explanation of this kind of plagiarism.”

See: http://www.truthorfables.com/Great_Controversy_Plagiarism.htm

1911 - Ellen White writes in Letter 56 (*Colporteur Ministry*, p. 128): The book *The Great Controversy*, I appreciate above silver or gold, and I greatly desire that it shall come before the people. While writing the manuscript of *The Great Controversy*, I was conscious of the presence of the angels of God. And many times the scenes about which I was writing were presented to me anew in visions of the night, so they were fresh and vivid in my mind.” (Unfortunately, God appears to have sent her an angel that was deficient in the knowledge of the history of the world since the time of the Early Church.)

1911 – The Church spends \$3,000 to revise Ellen White’s book, *The Great Controversy*, due to the growing awareness that the book still had a large number of sections of borrowed information for which proper credits to the sources were not given. The revisions were demanded by Church leaders because she had copied from so many sources without giving credit to the original authors while she continued to maintain that her work was directly inspired by God. (See *The Life of Mrs. E. G. White: Her Claims Refuted*, by D. M. Canright, 1919, p. 113.) **The 1911 Edition is the version of the book that has been sold world-wide ever since.** (Dr. Charles E. Stewart had done extensive research on Ellen’s plagiarism for his 1907 booklet, which placed her plagiarisms alongside of the original sources she had not credited.) Until Walter Rea discovered extensive plagiarism in the writings of Ellen White in the early 1980’s, Seventh-day Adventist leaders denied any knowledge of significant literary borrowing by her as late as 1979. This deception is incredible in view of the fact that it was an official Church action, taken under extreme public pressure, to correct her blatant copying in the single most important book to Adventism, *The Great Controversy*. Additionally, Adventists leaders had to know about the anti-Adventist, anti-Ellen White periodical, *The Gathering Call*, published by the Ballengers between the early 1900’s and the mid 1950’s which exposed just about every deception Adventism had to offer from Ellen White’s cover-up of the Shut Door Doctrine to the internal controversies over the Investigative Judgment Doctrine. For information on *The Gathering Call* and associated exposures of Adventist perfidy, visit the website for TRUTHORFABLES.COM and do a search for “Ballenger” or “Gathering Call.”

Kevin Morgan, SDA author of *Sabbath Rest: Is there something missing in your busy life?*, as well as other books on a variety of Adventist-related topics, argues that we are blowing the problems of Ellen White’s literary borrowing in *The Great Controversy* out of proportion. Since he is a highly respected writer both inside and outside of Adventism, his view is worthy of consideration. From an e-mail from Kevin Morgan to Kerry Wynne on November 21, 2011, he explained some facts that he believes help to reduce the severity of our conclusions about her work:

Based on a statement in the 1919 Bible Conference made by A. G. Daniells, it would seem that there were no footnotes or quotation marks in "page after page" of *The Great Controversy*. This is misleading. There were footnotes in the 1884 and 1888 editions of GC. It was Scripture—an indication of what the author intended to emphasize. And there were quotation marks in the 1884 *Spirit of Prophecy* (predecessor to the 1888 *Great Controversy*), though Canright claimed that there were none. An observant reader should have noticed the quotation marks within quotation marks and the ellipses (...) inside quotation marks, denoting omitted portions of dialogue. Both of these indicate that Ellen White was using historical sources and not hiding the fact (e.g., 4SP 83, 92, 96, 108, 115, 125). To clear up any doubt about her use of sources for

It is the position of your present authors that although Ellen acknowledged her use of historical sources to a limited extent even from the beginning, her claim that God directly guided her in the writing of this book is the real and fatal issue. In an email to Kerry Wynne, sent August 22, 2014, Morgan comments that Dr. Charles E. Stewart challenged Ellen White for failing to reference her sources because he was ignorant of the (then) current literary standards for attribution. Additionally, Morgan asks us to believe that General Conference president, A. G. Daniells, had no legitimate basis for alleging that Ellen White was guilty of plagiarizing-like activity in the secret meetings of the 1919 Bible Conference and that he did so in ignorance. Then, he questions the testimony of D. M. Canright that the \$3,000 was spent by the Church primarily to fix problems related to plagiarism and wants us to believe that the revisions were required for other innocuous reasons. Unfortunately, we have three diverse "witnesses" who expressed concern about plagiarism in *The Great Controversy* both before and after the corrections were made at a cost of \$3,000. Had Ellen White not made such grandiose claims of the direct, divine guidance she received in writing the book, we could be more sympathetic to Morgan's position. Notice that in her introduction to the 1911 edition, Ellen White **still** claims a high degree of direct inspiration from God in the writing of the book. Since Ellen White made general claims that God gave her very direct guidance as she wrote her books, even helping her pick the right word if she could not think of it, her readers would view this statement in the context of her other grandiose claims of inspiration, and they would be led to have extremely high expectations from this book. Their expectations were disappointed. The angels who were helping her write the book seemed to have fallen asleep frequently while she was writing:

Through the illumination of the Holy Spirit, the scenes of the long-continued conflict between good and evil have been opened to the writer of these pages. From time to time I have been permitted to behold the working, in different ages, of the great controversy between Christ, the Prince of life, the Author of our salvation, and Satan, the prince of evil, the author of sin, and the first transgressor of God's holy law.

[In a subsequent paragraph]: As the Spirit of God has opened to my mind the great truths of His word, and the scenes of the past and future, I have been bidden to make known to others that which has thus been revealed—to trace the history of the controversy in past ages, and especially so to present it as to shed a light on the fast-approaching struggle of the future.

1912 – The Church publishes J. N. Andrews' book, *Advent History of the Sabbath*— a book that proves that Adventist leaders now have an exhaustive understanding of the breadth and depth of Early Church writings and understand that Sunday observance was characteristic of Christianity by around 100 AD. Andrews, in a much earlier, 1873 work, *Testimony of the Fathers of the First Three Centuries Concerning the Sabbath and the First Day*, proved that the Church was well aware of this fact. Actually, Andrews knew by 1859 that Sunday observance was widespread by 100 AD. as evidenced by the content of his 1859 book, *The History of the Sabbath and the First Day of the Week*. (See also 1859) As mentioned elsewhere, in 1867 Andrews received a full-volume explanation of his impossible prophetic interpretation methods and his embarrassing historical errors that should have, but did not, deter him at any time in the future from continuing to write on the subject. However, Andrews' 1912 book provides a much more extensive and more scholarly approach to the Church's defense of this difficult problem. D.M. Canright quotes the 1912 edition of Andrews' book in his own 1915 book, *The Lord's Day From neither Catholics Nor Pagans: An Answer to Seventh-day Adventism on This Subject*:

The "*Advent History of the Sabbath*," edition of 1912, is compelled to admit that Sunday observance was in the Christian Church at the beginning of the second century. The author says: "**The results of our investigation concerning the origin of Sunday [is] that it was not introduced into the Christian Church until the beginning of the second century**" (page 450).

In this same book, his research on the interpretation of a key section of Chapter 14 of the *Didache* is thorough and balanced. He seems to present all the facts. However, his general approach to the *Didache* and other such sources is to seek to demonstrate that they are invalid because they are forgeries or contain non-canonical ideas.

1912-1913 (CIRCA) Prominent Swedish Chicago Area SDA leader, **Aaron Nyman**, studies his way out of Adventism and begins challenging his former SDA associates to debates about the prophecies of Daniel. He is also a man of means, so he offers his home, valued at \$5,000, to any Adventist who can prove that the 2,300 days and the 70 weeks begin at the same time. There were significant written exchanges of letters between him and the Conference leaders, which are published in

his book. The debates never took place because the Conference backed down after studying his preliminary refutations.

1914 – Recently apostatized Swedish SDA leader, **Aaron Nyman**, publishes ***Astounding Errors***, a scholarly volume of over 450 pages which focuses on exposing the historical deceptions of Adventism’s twisting of the prophecies of Daniel and the blasphemous claims of Ellen G. White regarding her prophetic gift. He utilized excerpts from her book, ***Early Writings***, to point out that her claim that God led William Miller to make an error that would deceive God’s people for a brief while made God look like a hypocrite, disparaging His integrity and benevolence. **Editor’s Note:** Nyman was a brilliant businessman. People who are highly successful in business typically have a very high level of intelligence. Aaron Nyman’s great sense of logic makes the claims of Ellen White and the historical fantasies of J. N. Andrews to appear less than honorable. We have proof that SDA leaders were aware of Nyman’s arguments because he published the letters he received from them in his book.

1914 – **D. M. Canright** publishes his last revision of ***Seventh-day Adventism Renounced***. Adventist leaders are confronted with virtually all the fundamental, fatal-to-Sabbatarian arguments that the new anti-Sabbatarian movement of today uses with the exception of the facts of Hebrew linguistics in regard to the Creation Story and the discovery in more recent years of even stronger evidence that Chapter 14 of ***Didache*** was written as early as 50 AD. Canright disproves the theory that sun worship had any possible influence on the very early adoption of Sunday observance by Christians to the point of over-kill, and reminds his Adventist “brethren” of what they have known since 1873, when J. N. Andrews published his book on the history of the Sabbath— that Sunday observance was characteristic of Christianity by the beginning of the Second Century (100 AD.)

1914 – **Astronomer Seth B. Nicholson** at Lick Observatory discovers the 9th moon of Jupiter. By this time there is no excuse for Adventist leaders not to repudiate the prophetic claims of Ellen White. The biblical requirement for a true prophet is to be right 100% of the time in matters for which it is claimed God is responsible for communicating said information. This is a major disgrace! Her false claims would appear to “embarrass” God terribly, making Him look like He couldn’t keep track of His own moons. This is why Ellen White’s false claim that her visions came from God represents “White Collar” blasphemy. By now, you would think that the Adventist church would start publishing EGW’s prophecies in loose leaf binders for future ease of editing.

1915 - Life Sketches, published in 1915, p. 104, shows a photograph of page one in Ellen’s handwriting of the Bates’ letter, sent to him in 1847, a letter which proves that Ellen White lied about how long she held onto the Shut Door Doctrine. The incriminating information was centered on page two. The White Estate had full knowledge of the fact that Ellen believed in the shut door from her visions. This letter was put back in the White Estate Vault after 1915 and never saw the light of day till it was uncovered by **Skip Baker** in 1980 and later published in *Adventist Currents* in July 1984. Credit to:

http://www.culthelp.info/index.php?option=com_content&task=view&id=659&Itemid=8

1915 (APRIL) – **W. W. Prescott**, who will later attend the 1919 Bible Conference, carefully and cautiously *rebukes Willie White* for not cooperating with him and others who are trying to understand the truth about her writings in this amazing statement, which includes a prediction that a crisis over her writings will happen in the future since it has not been addressed by them at the time:

The way your mother's writings have been handled and the false impression concerning them which is still fostered among the people have brought great perplexity and trial to me. It seems to me that what amounts to deception, though probably not intentional, has been practiced in making some of her books, and that no serious effort has been made to disabuse the minds of the people of what was known to be their wrong view concerning her writings. But it is no use to go into these matters. I have talked with you for years about them, but it brings no change. I think however that we are drifting toward a crisis which will come sooner or later and perhaps sooner. A very strong feeling of reaction has already set in." [Emphasis by authors.]

W. W. Prescott to Willie C. White, April 6, 1915

1915 – **D. M. Canright** publishes ***The Lord's Day from Neither Catholics nor Pagans: An Answer to Seventh-day Adventism on This Subject***. This book utilizes a wide variety of scholarly sources that not only prove that neither the influence of the Roman Catholic Church or sun worship had anything to do with Sabbath abandonment. With evidence this

powerful, it is no wonder that much later, in 1977, Dr. Samuele Bacchiocchi had no choice but to concede that Canright was right about this fact, since he conceded that Christians had universally adopted Sunday observance by 140 AD., hundreds of years before there was a Catholic Church or a pope. It is also worthy to note that Bacchiocchi was also forced to concede that he could not prove a link between sun worship and the virtually immediate abandonment of Sabbath-keeping by the first Christians. Read this for yourself at:

truthorfables.com/The_Lord's_Canright.htm

1915 – Ellen White dies. On July 16, 1915, Ellen White died deep in debt from over-extending herself to pay for the personal care and the editorial staff she retained at her mansion at Elmshaven, California. Seventh-day Adventist leadership was forced to borrow money to settle her estate and acquire ownership of her publications. During her life-time she made more than the equivalent of two million dollars in today's dollar value (calculated in 2005) from her ministerial salary, which was paid from tithe funds, and from the royalties she received from the publication of her books. She had advised everyone else to follow the biblical principle of shunning debt, but apparently she felt that since she was writing books for God, she was entitled to be an exception to the rule. No wonder she taught that it was wrong to use the tithe money for anything else but to pay the ministry!

1915 - As Ellen White lay on her deathbed in 1915, Turkish forces were defeating the combined forces of a variety of Western nations in an astonishing stroke of military genius at the **Battle of Gallipoli**. The Ottoman Empire did not actually fall until 1923. (See also 1923.)

1915 - Seventh-Day Adventists continue to teach that the Lord Jesus Christ inherited a sinful, fallen nature. The following extract, taken from one of their own publications—*Bible Readings for the Home Circle*, makes these heretical statements (p. 115, 1915 edition):

In His humanity Christ partook of our sinful, fallen nature. If not, then He was not "made like unto His brethren," was not "in all points tempted like as we are," did not overcome as we have to overcome, and is not, therefore, the complete and perfect Saviour man needs and must have to be saved.

The idea that Christ was born of an immaculate or sinless mother,* inherited no tendencies to sin, and for this reason did not sin, removes Him from the realm of a fallen world, and from the very place where help is needed. On His human side, Christ inherited just what every child of Adam inherits—a sinful nature. On the divine side, from His very conception He was begotten and born of the Spirit. And all this was done to place mankind on vantage-ground, and to demonstrate that in the same way everyone who is "born of the Spirit" may gain like victories over sin in his own sinful flesh. Thus each one is to overcome as Christ overcame (Rev. 3:21). Without this birth there can be no victory over temptation, and no salvation from sin, John 3: 3-7.

The above information was taken from *SDA Exposed*, by Compiled by William C. Irvine, Loizeaux Brothers, Bible Truth Depot, New York. First Edition, 1917. Fifteenth Edition, 1944, and posted at the following Web address:

http://www.jesus-is-savior.com/False%20Religions/Seventh-Day%20Adventist/sda_exposed.htm

1916 – D. M. Canright publishes *The Complete Testimony of the Early Fathers Proving the Universal Observance of Sunday in the first Century*. This booklet confronts Adventist leaders of the day with every imaginable proof that Sunday observance was universal by the early part of the second century. He uses biblical evidence, discusses the meaning of various Greek words, and observes scholarly restraint in his claims. For example, he gives 125 AD. as the accepted date for the testimony of the *Didache's* documentation of Christians worshiping on the first day of the week, but adds that some authorities even date that part of this collection of the first Christian writings to 80 AD. By the 1980's, scholars, using a variety of analytical approaches, have dated the *Didache* to as early as 50 AD and no later than 125 AD. The *Wikipedia* article, "Didache," indicates that American biblical scholars are willing to date this document to as early as 50 AD. This booklet makes very interesting reading. It can be found at:

exadventist.com/Home/Sabbath/tabid/53/Default.aspx

It is in the form of a complete photocopy of the original pamphlet showing both sides of the page. Its contents should have moved Adventist leaders to abandon their apostasy theory of Sabbath abandonment and to cease their reprehensible

propaganda campaign.

1916 – Still continuing to cover-up the Shut Door Doctrine lies of Ellen White and the Church, Elder G. I. Butler writes to defend her claim that she had only believed and taught the Shut Door Doctrine for a very short time by quoting the same passage and suppressing the same three words as did his predecessor in that conspiratorial crime– J. N. Loughborough. (See 1905.) See also Canright, *The Life of Mrs. E. G. White*.

1916 – D. M. Canright signs an affidavit that he has not recanted his rejection of Adventism. He does so to counteract rumors started by the Adventist Church that he has recanted. We speculate that he deemed this necessary because he had made some kind remarks about Ellen White when he attended her funeral in 1915.

Here is the text from the affidavit:

State of Michigan

County of Kent

Dudley M. Canright, of the City of Grand Rapids, Kent County, and State of Michigan, being duly sworn says:

- A. I renounced Seventh Day Adventism in 1887, after twenty-eight years experience in that church, because I lost confidence in some of its chief doctrines.
- B. I have never once regretted that I withdrew from that church.
- C. A further study and experience have strongly confirmed my conviction, that, as a system, it is an error, and must in time, end in failure.
- D. I have never at any time, or anywhere, or to any person ever suggested that I wished to go back to that church.
- E. I believe now, just as I did in 1888, when I first published by book, *Seventh Day Adventism Renounced*, now in its fourteenth edition.
- F. I gladly bear witness to the various excellent principles Adventists hold in common with Evangelical Churches. But these do not sanctify their numerous errors. I have only kindly feelings toward them.
- G. Deponent further says that he makes this affidavit for the purpose of correcting certain erroneous statements concerning himself, that have become current in various parts of the world.

Dudley M. Canright

Subscribed and Sworn to Before

Me this 8th day of March, A. D. 1916.

Benn M. Corwin

Notary Public, Kent County, Michigan.

My Commission expires January 12, 1919

Rev. D. M. Canright died May 18, 1919. Funeral May 18, 2:30 P.M. At Otsego, Mich. All Baptist ministers of Grand Rapids took part.

Oliver W. Van Asdel [Oliver? Handwriting obscure.]

1917 – The editor of the *Youth's Instructor*, in the midst of all the controversy about Ellen White's plagiarism problems, writes a scathing rebuke of the practice of plagiarism. Here is what **E. F. Ballenger** said:

[It is quite fitting that we should reprint an editorial which appeared in the *Youths' Instructor* of Dec. 25,](#)

1917:

"Thus it goes. On every hand there are similar evidences of dishonesty. It is just as wrong to appropriate to one's self credit for productions written by another as to steal a horse. One who boldly signs his name to another's article, and allows it to appear in print as his own, is a thief of the darkest hue.

"Taking another's knowledge and parading it as one's own is a despicable thing to do. The student who copies at examination time is dishonest; but plagiarism is a meaner kind of thievery, if there are degrees of dishonesty.

"Why do people do it? It is a crime punishable by law. It is as much of a disgrace, to say nothing of the sin, as to break into a neighbor's house and steal his goods.

"All who profess common decency, much less Christianity, should eschew all forms of dishonesty. Let us be true and pure in all we do, that the Lord may claim us as His own, and that we may not grieve Him again by playing a Judas part in Life."

Editor's Note: Ballenger is not claiming here, so far as we can see, that the editor of the *Youth's Instructor* openly labeled Ellen White as the person who was guilty of plagiarism. To have done so would likely have cost him his job. However, in the context of years of controversy about Ellen White's plagiarisms and the high cost to the General Conference of having to remedy the plagiarisms in her book, *The Great Controversy*, it is quite clear that he was targeting her. At the very least this *Youth's Instructor* article is of keen interest because it shows that contrary to the claims of those who sought to defend Ellen White by saying that plagiarism was not considered wrong in her generation, it was, indeed, considered to be a grievous wrong. It shows that whatever their claims may have been, Ellen White should have known that she was doing wrong when she credited her material to divine revelation from God rather than to the various human authors she copied.— Kerry Wynne

See: http://www.truthorfables.com/Great_Controversy_Plagiarism.htm

1917 – William C. Irvine and A. Mc D. Redwood publish the first edition of *SDA Exposed*. The final edition is published in 1944. The book's main focus is on Ellen White's blasphemous heresies, comparing them with Christian doctrine. Fifteen editions of the work were published between 1917, two years after her death, and the last one in 1944. Her heresies included (1) **The Incomplete Atonement**, or the concept that Christ's sacrifice on the Cross did not complete the sinner's atonement and that this was not accomplished until Christ moved from the Holy to the Most Holy Place in the Heavenly Sanctuary in 1844. (2) **Satan is our sin-bearer** – Jesus is not the one who pays the ultimate price for our sins. Instead, in the final judgment, our sins are transferred to Satan, who pays the ultimate price for those sins by being annihilated. (3) **Christ was not fully God while on Earth.** - He gave up being God when he appeared in human form, and therefore He could have sinned. The authors treat this as blasphemy against God and maintain the Christian view-point that Jesus never gave up being God when he appeared on Earth in human flesh. (4) **Soul sleep** – The concept that in death a person temporarily ceases to exist. The authors label this a heresy because it disagrees with how Christ and other New Testament writers explained death. (5) **The Sabbath** – The authors label this teaching heresy because it flaunts what St. Paul said in Colossians 2:14-17 about the Sabbath being an obsolete shadow and because it flatly contradicts the New Testament teaching that the Christian is free from the "law."

1917 - The Balfour Declaration is issued by Britain - This agreement, signed by world powers, provided the legal basis for the Modern-Day Nation State of Israel to be established as soon as possible. Keep in mind that both William Miller and Ellen White have predicted that Jerusalem would never be rebuilt again. While there had been talk among world leaders earlier in regard to establishing a homeland for Israel, this is the first official action taken to plan for its establishment. Ellen White is on the way to being proved a false prophet.

1919 – D. M. Canright publishes his book, *Life of Mrs. E. G. White Seventh-day Adventist Prophet: Her False Claims Refuted*. In this book he thoroughly addresses her plagiarism. It is amazing that in the early 1980's, the secretary of the White Estate at that time, **Dr. Robert Olson**, stated that the charge of significant plagiarism on the part of Ellen White was unfamiliar to him. Canright's book is easy to find with an Internet search engine like Google, Yahoo, or Bing. Also incriminating is the fact that circa 1966 to 1968, Dr. Robert Olson recommended this book to Kerry Wynne, who was a student at Pacific Union College at that time. This Canright book deals extensively with Ellen White's plagiarism. What is the likelihood that Dr. Olson had not read this book carefully enough to know about the chapter on plagiarism?

1919 – Top Adventist leaders meet secretly for several days at the 1919 Bible Conference to discuss their growing realization that Ellen White was a fraud. They discuss her failed prophecies, historical errors, and her plagiarism, as well as other problems. They discuss whether to tell the truth about her at the time or to cover-up the whole thing. Special concern is expressed as to how to keep the truth about Ellen White from the Church's seminary students. You can access the portion of the transcripts that specifically deal with the fraudulent claims of Ellen White at its posting at *Spectrum* magazine at:

spectrummagazine.org/files/archive/archive06-10/10-1couperus.pdf

You can access the entire set of transcripts at the General Conference Archives:

<http://www.adventistarchives.org/documents.asp?CatID=19&SortBy=1&ShowDateOrder=True>

The stenographer's transcript of these meetings is ordered by General Conference president, A. G. Daniells, to be locked up in the vault and made inaccessible for 50 years. It will later be discovered in 1974.

1919 – Top Adventist leaders discuss the prophecies of Daniel 7, 8, and 11 at the **1919 Bible Conference**, secretly conceding that the little horn of Daniel 7 was a reference to Antiochus Epiphanes and that the use of the so-called 2,300 day prophecy to stretch to 1844 was both biblically and historically impossible. They conclude that this fact is so dangerous to Adventism that knowledge of it should be kept from Seventh-day Adventist students.

1919 – In the 1919 Bible Conference discussion of the problems with Ellen White and specifically with her book, *The Great Controversy*, W. W. Prescott diminishes the 1911 assessment of the divine element in this book by stating:

You are touching exactly the experience through which I went, personally, because you all know that I contributed something toward the revision of *Great Controversy*. I furnished considerable material bearing upon that question . . . When I talked to W. C. White about it (and I do not know that he is an infallible authority), he told me frankly that when they got out *Great Controversy*, if they did not find in her writings anything in certain chapters to make the historical connections, they took other books, like [Uriah Smith's] *Daniel and the Revelation*, and used portions of them...

1919 - Elder A. G. Daniells, speaking in the context of a secret meeting that took place at the 1919 Bible Conference on August 1st, and citing plagiarism as one example of her false prophetic claims, complained:

. . . we got Conybeare and Howson [for *Sketches from the Life of Paul* (1883)], and we got Wylie's "History of the Reformation," [for *The Great Controversy* (1888)] and we read word for word, page after page, and no quotations, no credit20

Kevin Morgan explains away this comment as one made by Daniells in error (*White Lie Soap*, Chapter 6, p. 86):

The reason Daniells saw "page after page" without quotation marks or credit in *Sketches from the Life of Paul* was because most of the similar phrasing on "page after page" is not verbatim but adapted paraphrase, and such material does not require quotation marks.

In an e-mail to Kerry Wynne, dated August 15, 2014, Kevin Morgan clarified that the 1884 Edition of the *Great Controversy* was characterized by Ellen White's extensive use of ellipses, which represents evidence that she was not trying to hide the fact that she was utilizing the material of other writers.

WHAT ADVENTISTS KNEW: 1920-1939

1922 – At the 1922 General Conference session, Adventist leaders **Holmes** and **Washburn**, having heard about what happened at the **1919 Bible Conference** from stories leaked out from some of the participants, work behind the scenes to purge as many of the delegates as possible who were not supportive of Ellen White. Since Ellen White had few supporters at the conference, the purge was a big one. **A. G. Daniells** loses his position as General Conference president. (See the *Wikipedia* article, "1919 Bible Conference.")

1922 – The Ottoman Empire totters. The sultanate was abolished on 1 November 1922, and the last sultan, Mehmed VI (reigned 1918–22), left the country on 17 November 1922. (Source: Posted at nonsda.org. Article by Dirk Anderson.)

1923 - The Islamic caliphate is abolished, following the dissolution of the Ottoman Empire and the rise of the

secular Turkish Republic. Notice that when you take 688 AD, the date when the Muslims denied the Jews any further access to the Temple Mount, and add 1,260 years to it from Daniel's prophecies, you get to 1923. Thereafter, many Islamic figures have referred to the defeat of the Ottoman Empire and the dissolution of the caliphate as the "deadly wound." Adventist leaders have had a very long time to fix the story about the collapse of the Ottoman Empire in 1940, but they have not done so. Incredible! To this day *The Great Controversy* maintains this lie. Adventists who read this book and have no education in world history grow up believing this historical falsehood. From *The Great Controversy*:

In the year 1840 another remarkable fulfillment of prophecy excited widespread interest. Two years before, Josiah Litch, one of the leading ministers preaching the second advent, published an exposition of Revelation 9, predicting the fall of the Ottoman Empire. According to his calculations, this power was to be overthrown "in A.D. 1840, sometime in the month of August;" and only a few days previous to its accomplishment he wrote: "Allowing the first period, 150 years, to have been exactly fulfilled before Deacozes ascended the throne by permission of the Turks, and that the 391 years, fifteen days, commenced at the close of the first period, it will end on the 11th of August, 1840, when the Ottoman power in Constantinople may be expected to be broken. And this, I believe, will be found to be the case."- Josiah Litch, in *Signs of the Times*, and *Expositor of Prophecy*, Aug. 1, 1840.

At the very time specified, Turkey, through her ambassadors, accepted the protection of the allied powers of Europe, and thus placed herself under the control of Christian nations. The event exactly fulfilled the prediction. (See Appendix.) When it became known, multitudes were convinced of the correctness of the principles of prophetic interpretation adopted by Miller and his associates, and a wonderful impetus was given to the advent movement. Men of learning and position united with Miller, both in preaching and in publishing his views, and from 1840 to 1844 the work rapidly extended.

1930 – William W. Fletcher, a distinguished SDA leader and Bible professor at Avondale College in Australia, voluntarily resigns from the Church because he cannot accept the traditional SDA teaching of the Sanctuary Doctrine. (See Raymond F. Cottrell, "The Sanctuary Doctrine: asset or liability?")

1930 – A. G. Daniells reveals to the young **Leroy Froom** the existence of thousands of Ellen White documents relating to the Gospel versus legalism debate of 1888, conceding that he had a part in covering up the fact of the existence of these manuscripts. He tells Froom that these documents paint a completely different picture of Adventist history and explains that the Church has misused her writings, manipulating her writings as they chose to further the legalistic goals of those leaders. He charges the young Froom to set the record straight with the Church *after* he is gone by releasing those writings. (See 1971.)

1931 – Ludwig Richard Conradi, the leader of the European Division of Seventh-day Adventists, voluntarily separates himself from the Adventist Church and forfeits his ministerial credentials because he could not prove the traditional SDA Sanctuary Doctrine from the Bible. (See **Raymond F. Cottrell**, "***The Sanctuary Doctrine: Asset or Liability?***") Also, Conradi had come to America to get a better understanding of the writings of Ellen White in 1926. When he compared the earliest editions of her writings with later edition, he found the Adventists had cheated by altering her original statements drastically. He was particularly offended by the cover-up of how long Ellen White hung on to the Shut Door Doctrine, and he was shocked by her statement that God had revealed to her that the Black race was the result of humans and animal sexual unions. In particular, he examined the books from 1847 and compared them with newer editions published in 1851. The later editions were claimed by the publishers to be identical to the original editions, but Conradi discovered this claim was false. See the article, "ADVENTISM," by Göran Waldeck at <http://goran.waldeck.se/ADVALLA.html>

1932 – Now an older SDA pastor, **J. H. Wierts** completes his research on the lunar Sabbath problem and has published a 283 page manuscript regarding the implications it has for Sabbath-keeping. The General Conference is not interested. Our reference, again, is www.4angelspublications.com/amadon.php (See also 1938, when a committee at the General Conference looks into the problem and scuttles the whole thing when they realize the whole thing is probably correct. See 1995 when the same thing happens and a similar committee is disbanded when at least three committee members, reportedly theologians from the SDA seminary at Andrews University, are convicted that the Sabbath should wander through the week according to the lunar calendar.

1932 – William W. Fletcher publishes his paper, "**Reasons for My Faith.**" **Raymond F. Cottrell**, who is conceded by many to be the greatest Seventh-day Adventist theologian of all time, stated years later that Fletcher's arguments were superior to those of his opponents. (Cottrell, "The Sanctuary Doctrine: asset or liability?")

1932 – The official paper of the Central Union Conference of Seventh-day Adventists, the *Central Union Reaper*, in its June 12th issue, reports that a friend of the anti-SDA, anti-EGW publication, ***The Gathering Call*** (an anti-SDA/EGW publication published by ex-SDA, **A. F. Ballenger**), offers a cash reward to those who can find a specific example of Ellen White's plagiarism:

Turning now to another section of the May-June, 1933, number of *The Gathering Call*, we find on pages 22, 23, and 24— a most remarkable bit of literature. It is entitled, "Five Dollars Premium Offered." It reads in part as follows: A friend of *The Gathering Call* authorizes us to offer five dollars in cash to the first one who will locate what he believes is a plagiarized paragraph found on pages 601 and 602 of the old edition, and pages 641 and 642 of the new edition of "*Patriarchs and Prophets*," in any publication printed before 1890. [That is, printed by the SDA Church prior to 1890.]

As we will note in other places the fact that the issue of plagiarism was openly discussed in an official Church paper— the *Central Union Reaper*— is very interesting in light of Dr. Robert Olson's 1979 denial that he had any knowledge of Ellen White being guilty of any significant copying of the writings of other authors.

1933 - *In Defense of the Faith*, by **William H. Branson** (Review and Herald, 1933, 398 pages), is published. Branson attempts to refute Canright, but his basic arguments are disproved decades later, either by the direct testimony of, or by the inadvertent "hostile witness" of Dr. Samuele Bacchiocchi in 1977. Branson seeks to prove that the Roman Catholic Church really did "change the day," but Dr. Bacchiocchi later proved that the adoption of Sunday observance was universal centuries before there was a Roman Catholic Church or a pope. J. N. Andrews wrote about the almost immediate adoption of Sunday observance by Christians as early as 1859. Why Branson thought he could write a successful rebuttal of Canright is difficult to fathom. Andrews conceded that Sabbath abandonment took place in the Second Century back in writings he published in 1859 and 1873. Canright disproved even the possibility of the sun worship/Roman Catholic Church Sabbath "apostasy" theory to the point of over-kill, and it was the writings of Canright that Branson wrote his book to refute! It helps to understand why he would attempt such an impossible task when we remember that his paycheck came from the Church.

1933 - "*The White Elephant of Seventh-Day-Adventism?*" by **R. Vowless** (New Plymouth, New Zealand, P.F. Burrows Ltd., Eliot Street, New Plymouth, accessed at: www.truthorfables.com/white_elephant.htm) is published, proving that Adventist leaders knew even as early as 1933 that Ellen White did wholesale copying from other authors for her *Conflict of the Ages* series and other books. Here is a remarkable quotation from this pamphlet:

Turning to the Bible again, I read: "God who at sundry times and in divers manners spake in times past unto the fathers by the prophets," Hebrews 1:1; and "For the prophecy came not in old time by the will of man: but holy men of God spake as they were moved by the Holy Ghost," 2 Peter, 1: 21.

I do not know how the S.D.A.'s interpret the above Scriptures; for, Mrs. White, the prophetess of the remnant church, is recognized, as, perhaps, one of the world's greatest plagiarists. Let anyone compare the "*The Great Controversy*," by Mrs. E. G. White, with the book entitled "*History of the Reformation*," by D'Aubign'e; "*The History of Protestantism*," by J. A. Wylie; "*History of the Waldenses*," by Wylie; "*History of the Sabbath*," by Andrews; and "*Sanctuary*," by Smith. Then they will soon see where her inspirations came from. Also, it would be found interesting to compare her first edition of "The Great Controversy" with the last edition, a very marked difference will be found in thought and expression. The criticism was so strong against her plagiarism that she was forced to make the alterations.

"*Patriarchs and Prophets*" by Mrs. E. G. White, received some wonderful help from Adam Clarke's Commentaries as we cannot help but notice when comparing the different paragraphs. It is now becoming a well-known fact that "*Steps to Christ*" was written by Miss Fanny Bolton, without any dictation or assistance whatever from Mrs. White— yet it carries Mrs. White's name. Is this in keeping with the eighth commandment? Some people think if they keep the fourth, it does not matter so much about the others.

Editor's note: It is questionable if Vowless is correct about this fact being well-known. We believe that few Adventists knew about it then, and we are certain that the vast majority of Adventists do not know it now. Additionally, the General Conference of Seventh-day Adventists disputes the credibility of her story on the basis that Fanny Bolton was mentally ill and claims that she was confined to a mental institution at three different times.

Some of their pastors say that "all the critics of Mrs. White could not put together one chapter of *Desire of Age[s]* by the same author." No, perhaps not, and it is very evident that Mrs. White was not able to produce

many of them, or, in fact, any of them. *Desire of Ages* was culled from other authors on the “Life of Christ,” special mention may be made of Geikie's “—*Life of Christ*. Again, it is interesting to compare her first edition of *Desire of Ages* with the latter and again notice the changes in thought and expression; and even as late as 1926, *Desire of Ages* was undergoing another revision. I trust that Mrs. White's critics are more honest than to copy the words of another author's pen in order to write a chapter of *Desire of Ages*.

We hear so much about her Health Reform Teachings, but they do not mention that the teachings were taken from three other doctors' books written by Drs. Cole, Jackson, and Thrall.

Editor's note: For more information, see the book, *Prophetess of Health*, by Ron Numbers

In 1883 she published “*Sketches from the Life of Paul*,” and in the preface there was found this statement: “The writer of this book, having received special help from the Spirit of God, is able to throw light upon the teachings of Paul and the application to our own time, as no other authors are prepared to do.” This book was copied so strongly from “Life and Epistles of the Apostle Paul,” by Conybeare and Howson, that Conybeare and Howson served notice upon “The Review and Herald Publishing Association,” that, unless the book was taken off the market, they would bring a suit against them for plagiarism. Mr. H. W. Kellogg who was then manager of the Publishing House informed Mrs. White that they would not undertake to publish any more copies of such, unless she would stand for the responsibilities of meeting the threatened suit. Needless to say, no more have been printed and her order for a new edition, which had just been previously booked, was withdrawn. Dr. Stewart published a booklet of eighty-nine pages in which he arranged parallel columns of quotations taken from Mrs. White's book, “*Sketches from the life of Paul*,” and the book by Conybeare and Howson just mentioned, and the quotations read like this: Conybeare and Howson's) “The judges sat in the open air, upon seats hewn out in rock, on a platform which was ascended by a flight of stone steps immediately from the Agora.” (Mrs. White's): “The judges sat in the open air, upon seats hewn out in the rock, on a platform which was ascended by a flight of stone steps from the valley below.”

In the preface, where it is said “Having received special help from the Spirit of God”, why did they not speak the truth and write..... “having received special help from Conybeare and Howson”?

As this is only an introduction to some of the things which I have found out, I shall not say more here about this wicked plagiarism which is put down as the “Precious rays of light shining from the throne of God.” And I would never dare say or intimate that God was a plagiarist, would you?

This quote is astonishing in view of **Dr. Robert Olson's** denial of any knowledge of charges of serious plagiarism on the part of Ellen White as late as 1979. Walter Rea only discovered by 1982 what **Vowless** knew in 1933 and Canright knew in 1889. Since Canright may have been the single greatest enemy of Adventism, and since the Church had published so much material to attempt to refute his arguments, it strains the imagination to think that Dr. Olson knew nothing about Ellen White's problem with plagiarism.

1934 – Frank M. Wilcox's book, *The Testimony of Jesus*, is published by The Review and Herald Publishing Association, revealing inexcusable lying and deceit on the part of the author. If the **1919 Bible Conference Minutes** had not been discovered in 1974, we could look back at the life and ministry of Wilcox and say he was an honest soul who was simply deceived by the claims of Ellen White. However, Wilcox was one of most outspoken critics of Ellen White in that secret meeting. Here is what he said in those Minutes:

I would like to ask, Brother Daniells, if it could be accepted as a sort of rule that Sister White might be mistaken in details, but in the general policy and instruction she was an authority. . . It seems to me I would have to accept what she says on some of those general policies or I would have to sweep away the whole thing. Either the Lord has spoken through her or he has not spoken through her; **and if it is a matter of deciding in my own judgment whether he has or has not, then I regard her books the same as every other book published.** I think it is one thing for a man to stultify his conscience, and it is another thing to stultify his judgment. It is one thing for me to lay aside my conscience, and it is another thing for me to change my judgment over some view that I hold.

In his book on Ellen White, Wilcox stultifies his own conscience, presents himself as a staunch believer in her prophetic gift, and makes outrageous claims for her, like this one:

Are the writings of Mrs. White verbally inspired? Was she given the exact words in which her thoughts are expressed? She never made any such claim. Indeed, she states very positively that such was not the case. Nor did the pioneers in this movement ever believe or teach verbal inspiration for the writings of the messenger of the Lord.

It is amazing how much Wilcox “forgot” during the 14 years since the **1919 Bible Conference**. He lies through his teeth, and this fact is painfully clear. Here are a couple of those statements Ellen White made that Wilcox “forgot:”

When writing these precious books, if I hesitated, the very word I wanted to express the idea was given to me. (*Selected Messages*, vol. 3, pp. 51, 52). 1907.

....yet the words I employ in describing what I have seen are my own, unless they be those spoken to me by an angel, which I always enclose in marks of quotation. (*Review and Herald*, Oct. 8, 1867, quoted in *Selected Messages*, vol.1, p. 37).

Apparently Wilcox was willing to sell his soul and stultify his conscience for the sake of Adventism, his position, and his pay check.

1936 – A. G. Daniells, former General Conference President and one of the most vocal critics of Ellen White’s claim to be directly inspired in the **1919 Bible Conference**, publishes his defense of her inspiration, entitled *The Abiding Gift of Prophecy*. He seems to have forgotten that he knew Ellen White was a fraud back in 1919. Perhaps he was trying to redeem himself for the destructive role he played in the Conference. To see what he said about Ellen White in 1919, access the 1919 Bible Conference Minutes with a Google Search. (Cited in E. F. Ballenger, *Facts about Seventh-day Adventists*, posted at ex.sda.com.)

1936 - World nations draft The Treaty of Montreux, which gives Turkey the “legal” right to unilaterally close the Dardanelles and Bosphorus sea lanes from the Mediterranean to the Black Sea. While Adventists are focused the development of Sunday laws and the pope of Rome, the events that are preparing the status of things for the end-times anti-Christ are totally unnoticed.

1938 - In the January 13 issue of the *Review and Sabbath Herald*, an article based on Elder W. A. Spicer's lectures given at the World's Education Conference held at Blue Ridge, NC on August 19th and 20th of 1937 presents his defense of Ellen G. White's extensive plagiarisms in her book, *The Great Controversy*. Among other excuses for her literary thefts, Elder Spicer said, “The carefulness among later writers in giving credit, did not obtain so essentially a generation or two ago.” This deception was exposed in the anti SDA/EGW publication, *The Gathering Call*, January-February 1938, pp.16-23, published by Edward S. Ballenger. (Courtesy Robert K. Sanders)

http://www.truthorfables.com/Great_Controversy_Plagiarism.htm

Ballenger adds:

This is not true. It did obtain. In 1891 T. DeWitt Talmage, in his book FROM MANGER TO THRONE, gives credit to thirty-three authorities from whom he drew his material; and Edersheim, in his LIFE AND TIMES OF JESUS THE MESSIAH, published in 1883, cites no less than 300 authorities. It was always recognized as a sin and a crime to use other people's thoughts, without credit. Some had tried to excuse Mrs. White's plagiarisms because of her youth and inexperience; but, when she wrote GREAT CONTROVERSY she was fifty-seven years old. She had already been writing nearly forty years.

Did Elder Spicer Tell the Truth?

Elder Spicer saw that when Mrs. White's attention was called to the fact that she had not given credit for some material that she used, "She immediately gave instructions to her helpers to go through her books, and mark every sentence or paragraph she had taken from those historians, and insert the proper punctuation for introducing a quotation. ... She saw to it herself that this was done for the next edition of the book." Notice, he says: "She immediately gave instruction." We have the first, the third, and the ninth editions of GREAT CONTROVERSY, and several editions after that which are not numbered; and not one of them gave credit for the facts and thoughts she used from other authors. She published many editions after her attention was called to her plagiarisms before she gave credit. It must have taken her

helpers a long time to search out her plagiarized portions. GREAT CONTROVERSY was first published in 1884, and proper credits were not given until the edition of 1911, a period of 27 years. You can put all the confidence you care to on Elder Spicer's "immediately."

1938 – Former SDA, **Edward S. Ballenger**, publicly identifies the primary literary sources Ellen G. White plagiarized.

The writers from whom Mrs. W. borrowed freely were as follows:

D'Aubigne, whose *History of the Reformation* was published between 1835 and 1853. Wylie, whose *History of Protestantism* was published about 1875 or 1876. Conybeare and Howson, whose *Life and Epistles of St. Paul* was published in various editions, 1854, 1869, etc.

See Ballenger's article, "Does Elder Spicer Play Fair with Young Educators?" *The Gathering Call*, January-February 1938, pp.16-23, courtesy Robert K. Sanders of TruthOrFables.Com

1938 – **J. H. Wierts** finally gets the General Conference interested in studying his 283 page manuscript about the lunar calendar and its Sabbath-keeping implications. The GC appoints a research committee to investigate. The committee is not allowed to finish its work, so the existence of the problem was never acknowledged. (Source = 4 Angels Publications.com.) Amazingly Wierts' incriminating document has been "lost" by the General Conference. The vote to authorize the study of his manuscript took place on November 1, 1938. In an undated letter to Grace Amadon, committee member, M. L. Andreasen expresses concern that the "shifts" in when the weeks begin would cause utter confusion to the Church. Here is what he said, courtesy of the article, "The Lunar Sabbath and the Church" from the 4 Angel's Publications website:

If an explanation were possible, and the people were at last adjusted to the shift in the feast day and the stability of the seventh day, it might be supposed that in time they would get used to the arrangement. But they would no sooner have become accustomed to this, till another shift is made. Now they shift back to where they were before. . . . There is no uniformity, and just as the people get used to a certain arrangement the day is changed again. Such is more than the common people can understand, and if we go to the people now with such a proposition, we must expect that confusion will result. And our enemies will not be slow to point out the difficulties and ring the changes on them. (M. L. Andreasen, undated letter to Grace Amadon, Grace Amadon Collection, Box 2, Folder 4, Center for Adventist Research, Andrews University, emphasis supplied.)

1939 – **Grace Amadon** – An Adventist woman who became a well-respected astronomer is asked to do research in conjunction with the lunar calendar question. She continuously finds evidence that the lunar calendar is the one used by the ancient Hebrews to calculate their Sabbath days, but she doesn't like what she finds, and constantly looks for ways to falsify her data. Many of her written statements testify to this struggle. Later her falsifications of the evidence were uncovered by expert astronomers and researchers. See: www.4angelspublications.com/articles/Lunar_Sabbath_SDA_Church.php)

1939 – Howard C. Fulton, pastor of the Belden Avenue Baptist Church in Chicago, responds in writing to an inquiry by a certain Brother Keithley in regard to whether or not D. M. Canright recanted his rejection of Adventism before he died. Canright had been pastor emeritus of a Baptist church in Grand Rapids, Michigan. He says that he has a written statement from Canright's daughter that Canright's Seventh-day Adventist niece, who had cared for him during his last days in the hospital prior to his death, emphatically denied that he had recanted. Courtesy of the personal library of Robert K. Sanders of Truth or Fables.Com is a reproduction of that letter. Please scroll down to the next page to view it, as it takes up an entire page:

THE **B**OOK
OF
LORD
LESSED HOPE

Belden Avenue Baptist Church

Belden Avenue and North Halsted St.
Chicago, Ill.

"Christ and the Bible Only and Always"

Howard C. Fulton, Pastor

CHURCH OFFICE, 2309 N. HALSTED ST.

PHONE, LINCOLN 2586

Nov., 9, 1939.

Dear brother Keithley,

So you are having inquiries about our good old brother Canright, well I used to have them quite frequently when I was pastor at Berean.

The dear old brother was true to the faith once for all delivered to the saints to the very end. He did not recant on his death bed.

I used to call on him before he died and was present and took part in his funeral services.

I have a statement from his daughter Mrs. Geniveve C. Dey, Hillsdale, Mich. to the effect that her cousin who was a devoted Adventist, and who was very kind to brother Canright in the hospital, declares in writing, that as much as she wishes it were so, that brother Canright repudiated his writings on his death bed, "THERE IS ABSOLUTELY NO GROUND FOR ANY SUCH STATEMENTS AND SHE EVEN SAYS THAT SHE WOULD LIKE TO KNOW WHO IS TELLING SUCH A FALSEHOOD." Now this is the statement of Canright's niece who is an Adventist herself, and I have it in writing from Canright's daughter.

May be seeing you when we are home to grandpa's house for Thanksgiving Dinner.

Yours cordially,

H. C. Fulton

WHAT ADVENTISTS KNEW: 1940 — 1959

1944 - William C. Irvine and A. McD. Redwood publish their fifteenth edition of **SDA Exposed**. The book's main focus for decades has been on Ellen White's blasphemous heresies, comparing them with Christian doctrine. Fifteen editions of this work were published between 1917, two years after her death, and the last one in 1944. (See 1917.)

1944 - Pacific Press publishes a book entitled *Palestine in Prophecy*. It unequivocally-declared that there would be no national restoration for the Jews:

Palestine and Jerusalem do not have a bright future in this present world, and those who are holding the hope of a national restoration for the Jews are following a theological will-o'-the-wisp.

Commentary: It seems like the General Conference of Seventh-day Adventists is blinded to the need to read the Bible and think about these things for themselves. They have the "Lesser Light" to lead them to the Greater Light of Scripture in the work of their prophetess, Ellen G. White. She said it-- that Jerusalem would never be rebuilt-- and they believed it.

1945 – **Harold E. Snide**, Bible professor at Southern Junior College (now Southern Adventist University), discovers serious problems with the Church's Sanctuary Doctrine and goes to the General Conference in Washington, DC to dialogue with Adventist leaders. He withdraws from the Church in 1945. (See Cottrell, "Sanctuary Doctrine: asset or liability?")

1947 – The Seventh-day Adventist Church officially took the doctrinal position that a Jewish state would never be re-established in Palestine. In 1947, the Pacific Press published another book-- *The Jews and Palestine*. In this book, Adventists proclaimed:

The God of heaven who overthrew the city and nation and who because of their apostasy dispersed the inhabitants to the ends of the earth, forever settles the question of a complete return and restitution in old Canaan by asserting that it "cannot be."

1948 – **Israel becomes a Nation and Jews begin to pour into their new country.** This event supports the clear teaching of Scripture, but utterly defies the prediction of William Miller that Jerusalem would never be rebuilt. More importantly, it defies a statement by Ellen White-- her "I was shown" declaration-- that Jerusalem would never be rebuilt. In 1948 Seventh-day Adventist leadership should have declared Ellen G. White to be a false prophet and jettisoned all the theological baggage that came with her.

1950 – **E. S. Ballenger** publishes ***Facts about Seventh-day Adventists***. This book outlines the lies and deceptions of SDA leaders from the very beginning of the Advent Movement with a special emphasis on proving that the Whites covered up the fact that they taught the **Shut Door Doctrine** and did not work to save lost sinners for many years beyond what they claimed. Ballenger's book provides irrefutable evidence that after SDA leaders discovered the fact that the Whites had deceived the Church in regard to the cover-up, joined the Whites as active participants in the deception. In her suppressed very early writings, Ellen White claimed to have received the principles of the Shut Door Doctrine in vision from God. Like a number of other anti-EGW writers over the years, Ballenger discusses and documents the extensive plagiarism of Ellen White, complete with comparison studies. This book, or booklet, had to have been known to SDA leaders in the 1950's, since Ballenger published it as part of his anti-SDA, anti-EGW circulated publication, ***The Gathering Call***, which he published for over 28 years. The information in this book was obtained through an extensive career in Adventist leadership which spanned decades before he discovered the deceptions of the Whites and the Church. That Adventist leaders were again confronted with the facts about the cover-up of the Shut Door teachings of the Whites in 1950's makes the White Estate's continued denials after the 1950's appear to be down-right "criminal." You can access Ballenger's ***Facts about Seventh-day Adventists*** at www.ex-sda.com. How is it possible that **Dr. Robert Olson**, as Secretary of the White Estate later on, had no knowledge of the existence of this book by **E. S. Ballenger**?

1950 – SDA historian and theologian, **Leroy Froom**, publishes ***The Prophetic Faith of our Fathers***, a four volume set on the history of Adventism. He betrays the fact that a number of key pioneers of Adventism knew about the **lunar Sabbath** concept through their association with William Miller. Froom listed the following SDA pioneers as ones who knew that the Karaite Jews kept the Sabbath according to the lunar calendar and that this concept is key to understanding how to calculate the "right" date for the 1844 cleansing of the sanctuary: Sylvester Bliss, Apollos Hale, Josiah Litch, Joshua V.

Himes, Nathaniel Southard, Nathan Whiting, and others. (See Volume 4, p. 796.)

Editor's note: From this key admission it is clear that some of the most important Adventist leaders of all time had to know that the Church was not keeping the Sabbath according to the biblical model. Since the Sabbath in their minds is a "moral" law, their refusal to follow the "truth" as they saw it represented willful disobedience to what they would have understood as the plain will of God. Most likely the fear of reducing the membership and the tithes of the Seventh-day Adventist Church was the primary motivator in this matter.

1951 – The Church publishes **Frank D. Nichol's** book, *Ellen G. White and Her Critics*. This book represents the largest single collection of desperate attempts to explain away the failed prophecies of Ellen White and crazy things she said. Here is a classic example of Nichol's gift for explaining away the obvious:

From Chapter 24 of *Ellen G. White and Her Critics* (F. D. Nichol, 1951):

Mrs. White wrote: "When England does declare war, all nations will have an interest of their own to serve, and there will be general war, general confusion."—*Testimonies*, vol. 1, p. 259.

"England did not declare war." "Her prophecy was a complete failure."

Again we need the context in order to see what Mrs. White is setting forth:

England is studying whether it is best to take advantage of the present weak condition of our nation, and venture to make war upon her. She is weighing the matter, and trying to sound [out] other nations. She fears, if she should commence war abroad, that she would be weak at home, and that other nations would take advantage of her weakness. Other nations are making quiet yet active preparations for war, and are hoping that England will make war with our nation, for then they would improve the opportunity to be revenged on her for the advantage she has taken of them in the past, and the injustice done them. A portion of the Queen's subjects are waiting a favorable opportunity to break their yoke; but if England thinks it will pay, she will not hesitate a moment to improve her opportunities to exercise her power, and humble our nation. When England does declare war, all nations will have an interest of their own to serve, and there will be general war, general confusion."—*Ibid.*, p. 259.

Note the conditional character of these statements: "She fears, if she should commence war abroad, that she would be weak at home." "But if England thinks it will pay." Then follows the sentence: "When England does declare war..." It is evident that Mrs. White is here using the word "when" as a synonym for "if," which is good English. In fact, if we do not thus understand the word "when" in this connection, we have an unusual situation— a series of problematical "ifs" is followed by a simple statement that England is going to declare war. Thus, Mrs. White's last sentence would make pointless her preceding sentences.

A similar use of the word "when" is found on the preceding page in her work: "When our nation observes the fast which God has chosen, then will he accept their prayers as far as the war is concerned." No one, least of all the critics, will argue that the word "when" in this connection introduces a simple statement concerning a future fact that will undebatably happen.

1951 – **Francis D. Nichol**, in his 1951 book, *Ellen G. White and Her Critics*, on p. 621, cites the very letter that **Skip Baker** photographed in 1980 which proved that Ellen White believed in the Doctrine of the Shut Door for much longer than she claimed to have believed it. Nichols betrayed this knowledge in a footnote that states, "This date is established by a letter from Mrs. White to Joseph Bates, written from Gorham, Maine, July 13, 1847." Why didn't Nichol's print this letter? His attempts to defend Ellen G. White's visions against the charge they taught Shut Door Doctrines, totally ignored the fact that Ellen did believe in the shut door as revealed in the 1847 Bates' letter. At this point in time the Shut Door meant that the door of mercy was closed to the world as taught and renounced by William Miller.

Credit to Cult Help Awareness and Information Library at:

http://www.culthelp.info/index.php?option=com_content&task=view&id=659&Itemid=8

1952 - **Edward S. Ballenger**, a former Seventh-day Adventist, provided a statement, witnessed and co-signed by SDA physician, **Dr. Charles D. Willis** of Riverside, California, that Fannie Bolton, one of Ellen White's literary assistants, told him that she wrote *Steps to Christ*— a book which credited Ellen White as its author. (The reproduction of this letter is courtesy of

There is controversy about Fannie Bolton's claim to have written **Steps to Christ**. The White Estate says that she was committed to a mental institution several times, and a number of her statements suggest mental instability. However, the controversy surrounding her claims tells us a lot about how Ellen White's books were put together and drastically edited by her literary assistants. **It is easier to “prove” that Ellen White did not “write” the book herself than it is prove that Fannie Bolton wrote it.** The White Estate said that the book was largely compiled from her own earlier works. We know that Ellen had several literary assistants who extensively edited her work. Merritt G. Kellogg, a very credible witness with a reputation of being a very godly man and a good Seventh-day Adventist, reported that Fannie Bolton had told him that she wrote many articles that were published under Ellen's name in denominational papers. Merritt stated that Fannie expressed to him that she felt “great distress of mind” about this fact and felt like the people were being deceived about the inspiration of what she wrote. He also reported that SDA minister and leader, George B. Starr had been told the same thing by her. Your authors conclude that while we cannot prove that Fannie Bolton wrote Steps to Christ, we can prove that Ellen White did NOT write it. That she did NOT write the book is the case if you hold her to the standard of what people mean when they say something like, “I have written a book about the migration of Monarch butterflies,” or “I have written a book that refutes the myth that Ellen White was a prophet of God.”

1954 - George E. Mendenhall, an Evangelical scholar, publishes **Law And Covenant in Israel and the Ancient Near East**. He presented research which indicates that the 10 Commandments were modeled after the treaties of Israel's neighboring countries. In such covenants, a purely ceremonial regulation was placed in the very center of the actual list of requirements of the agreement— a ritual that the subjected nation had to perform on a regular basis to help them remember the great conqueror to whom they must do homage and exactly what he was requiring of them. His findings are ignored by Adventist leaders and scholars.

1955 – Raymond F. Cottrell and a special committee attempt to prepare a chapter on the **Sanctuary Doctrine** for the new **S.D.A. Bible Commentary**. The committee finds no biblical support for the doctrine and is in a quandary about how to approach the task the General Conference has given them to explain what Adventists believe with support from the Bible. (See Cottrell, “*The Sanctuary Doctrine: Asset or Liability?*”)

1958 – The General Conference assigns Dr. Raymond F. Cottrell the task of revising the chapter on the Investigative Judgment (Sanctuary Doctrine) for the classic SDA book, **Bible Readings**. Here is Dr. Cottrell's explanation of what happened:

In 1958 the Review and Herald Publishing Association needed new printing plates for the classic book, *Bible Readings*, and it was decided to revise it where necessary to agree with the *Commentary*. Coming again to the Book of Daniel I determined to try once more to find a way to be absolutely faithful to both Daniel and the traditional Adventist interpretation of 8:14, but again found it impossible. I then formulated six questions regarding the Hebrew text of the passage and its context, which I submitted to every college teacher versed in Hebrew and every head of the religion department in all of our North American colleges— all personal friends of mine. Without exception they replied that there is no linguistic or contextual basis for the traditional Adventist interpretation of Daniel 8:14.” (See Cottrell, “The Sanctuary Doctrine: asset or liability?”)

1959 – On May 5, 1959 a special issue of the *Review & Herald* showcases a beautiful painting and article designed to cover-up the fact that Ellen White taught the Shut Door Doctrine during her earliest years as a prophetess after claiming she had received such instruction in a vision from God; and that while she believed and taught this unfortunate doctrine, the Advent believers made no effort to seek and save lost souls. Ellen White taught until much later than she or the Church would like to admit, that the door of probation had closed for everyone except for their small band of Adventist believers. Deceptively, the *Review & Herald* painting shows Ellen White looking upward at a globe of light hovering over the Eastern U. S. and then shooting around the entire world. The article/painting falsely represents this November 1848 vision as containing instruction from God on how to reach the world with the Advent message through the publishing work. On page 39 they have recorded an explanation of this painting. Here is an extended quotation from E. S. Ballenger, **Facts about Seventh-day Adventists** (1950), posted at www.ex-sda.com:

Harry Anderson has sought, in this beautiful painting, to capture a scene in the early history of the Advent

Movement. Mrs. E. G. White thus describes the scene she saw in her vision of the beginnings of the publishing work:

“At a meeting held in Dorchester, Mass., November, 1848, I had been given a view of the proclamation of the sealing message, and of the duty of the brethren to publish the light that was shining upon our pathway.”

“After coming out of vision, I said to my husband: 'I have a message for you. You must begin to print a small paper and send it out to the people. Let it be small at first; but as the people read, they will send you means with which to print, and it will be a success from the first. From this small beginning it was shown to be like streams of light that went clear round the world.'” — *Life Sketches of Ellen G. White*, p. 125.

It was in July, 1849, that James White responded to this vision by starting the publication of *Present Truth*, which was shortly renamed *Review and Herald*. From this small beginning has indeed grown a world work, as Mrs. White forecast in vision.

In the background of this picture are shown James White and Joseph Bates taking notes.

We wrote to the Review & Herald Publishing House asking permission to reproduce this painting. They refused to grant our request.

THE EDITOR GUILTY

The most important portion of this description of the cover is found also on page 5 from the pen of the editor. In addition to quoting that portion referring to light going around the world, the editor also says: “James White believed that he had present truth to present to the world.” This statement is represented as being taken from one of Mrs. White's earliest visions which was given her at Dorchester, Mass., Nov. 1848. The vision from which this was taken has never appeared complete in any of Mrs. White's publications. We have a complete copy of this vision which we expect to reproduce in the next issue of the *Gathering Call*. The length of it prevents our using it in this issue. That portion which relates to seeing the lights going around the world is not in the Dorchester vision.

Joseph Bates wrote this vision while Mrs. White spoke it; and *there is no reference whatsoever to light streaming clear around the world*. It is a disgrace to any people to publish such illustrations or such statements in regard to the Dorchester vision.

MRS. WHITE WAS 58 YEARS OLD WHEN SHE FIRST SAW LIGHTS GOING AROUND THE WORLD

The first time that Mrs. White gave utterance to seeing lights encircling the globe was when she was visiting Europe, in 1885 or 1886. It was first published in the RH July 26, 1887. If Mrs. White saw this in 1848, why was it not published until 1887, nearly 40 years later? In proof of this we reproduce her first publication of her seeing lights going clear around the world. It is found on page 379 of the old edition of *Gospel Workers*, published in 1892.

In my very girlhood the Lord saw fit to open before me the glories of heaven. I was in vision taken to heaven, and the angel said to me, “Look!” I looked to the world as it was in dense darkness. The agony that came over me was indescribable as I saw this darkness. Again the word came, “Look ye!” And again I looked intensely over the world, and I began to see jets of light like stars dotted all through this darkness; and then I saw another and another added light, and so all through this moral darkness the star like lights were increasing.

In this Dorchester vision Mrs. White saw that they should begin printing the message but she had no idea of printing the message for the world, for in that vision she stated that they had received the “shut door,” which meant that they believed probation had closed.

Another illustration is presented in this Special on page 7. It represents James White and his wife together with other workers bowing around a stack of their first paper, the *Present Truth*, and asking God's blessing to go with it as they mailed it out to their friends. *Present Truth* was an 8-page paper which was edited by James White from July 1849 to November, 1850. The eleven issues were bound together and had a wide circulation in the early days. Mrs. White states that they bowed around every issue of this

paper and asked God's blessing upon it. There was hardly a number of this paper that did not contain arguments trying to prove that probation had closed in 1844. One number is largely given to the shut door.

Mrs. White's Topsham vision given on Sabbath, March 24, 1849, contains the positive evidence that she believed and taught the "shut door." Those who have copies of this *Present Truth* will find the portion relating to the shut door at the bottom of col. 1, page 22. It is this portion of the Topsham vision that is omitted from all of Mrs. White's subsequent reproductions. James White, Mrs. White, Joseph Bates, Hiram Edson and others of the pioneers wrote for the *Present Truth* condemning the 1st-day Adventists and other churches for trying to save sinners, because God had rejected all of the world excepting the Advent believers.

MRS. WHITE ASKING GOD'S BLESSING ON THE SHUT DOOR

The inconsistency of these pioneers including James White and his wife bowing down and asking God's blessing to attend the contents of this document which was saturated with the teachings of the "shut door," and then a century later, trying to make all people believe that Mrs. White was shown in vision that they were called to publish and send the message clear around the world, is a shame to any people.

Quoted in E. S. Ballenger, *Facts About Seventh-day Adventists* (1950), posted at www.ex-sda.com

WHAT ADVENTISTS KNEW: 1960-1971

The Golden Age of Adventism continued during the 1960's. Canright seems forgotten. The Sabbath, Ellen White, and the Sanctuary Doctrine appear to be beyond question to the typical SDA pastor or lay member. However, top Adventist leaders still know there is a serious problem with the Sanctuary Doctrine. The best minds in the Church are secretly trying to find biblical support for this teaching. Adventism flourishes, membership increases dramatically, and Adventist education expands. Prophetic seminars utilizing bogus dates from "history" are used to deceive hundreds of thousands of people into thinking the Seventh-day Adventist Church is the true Church of Bible prophecy for the last days and that all other churches are Babylon. Adventists do not question Colossians 2:14-17, and if they ever do, they are told that the Sabbath in the third position is merely a reference to the monthly and annual ceremonial Sabbaths. No one seems to notice that the syntax of this passage forces it to target the weekly Sabbath of the Decalogue. The typical Adventist is ignorant of the fact that the adoption of Sunday observance by Christians was virtually immediate, making it impossible that sun worship or the Roman Catholic Church were responsible for the Christian adoption of Sunday as its day of worship. They have no clue that the Eastern Orthodox Church controlled the Western Church during the earlier centuries when Sunday observance became universal. The lunar Sabbath issue seems to have disappeared, and almost no one will hear about it during this period of SDA history.

1960 – Meridith Kline publishes "*The Two Tables of the Covenant*," in the *Westminster Theological Journal* (1960), pages 133-146. This highly respected Evangelical scholar presented additional research which supported the **1954** findings of **George E. Mendenhall** that the 10 Commandments covenant between God and Israel was modeled after the covenants made between the countries of the Middle East, in that a ceremonial requirement was always placed in the middle of the actual laws that governed what a subjected nation must do for the conquering king. As in 1954, Adventists and scholars ignore his findings.

1961 – The General Conference president gives **Dr. Raymond F. Cottrell** the task of solving the Investigative Judgment problem. Cottrell sends a questionnaire out to a large number of Adventist scholars and theologians to poll their opinions. The analysis of Cottrell's survey indicates there is widespread concern that the doctrine cannot be supported from the Bible alone. The General Conference orders the formation of a top secret committee. The committee's task is to meet until it can find the biblical support the Church needs to validate the Sanctuary Doctrine-Investigative Judgment concept. The committee includes an elite group of SDA Bible scholars and theologians.

(See Raymond F. Cottrell, "The Sanctuary Doctrine: asset or liability?")

1966-1967 (CIRCA) - **Kerry Wynne**, a student at Pacific Union College, interviews **Dr. Robert Olson** regarding Wynne's interest in preparing for the Seventh-day Adventist ministry. Dr. Olson is Chairman of the Religion Department at this time,

prior to assuming his duties a few years later as Secretary of the White Estate. Wynne questions Dr. Olson in regard to some doubts he has about Ellen White, including charges that she is a false prophet. Dr. Olson explains that these charges stem mostly from a disgruntled apostate Seventh-day Adventist leader by the name of D. M. Canright, who left the Church because he felt his talents were not adequately appreciated by Ellen and James White. He says that Canright was a bitter man and that his charges against Ellen White were based on the desire to seek revenge. (It has been many years since this interview, and Wynne is only claiming to recall the gist of what Dr. Olson said.) He suggested that to allay his fears he should go to the Pacific Union College Library and check out the book, ***The Life of Mrs. E. G. White***, by **D. M. Canright**. Wynne follows Dr. Olson's advice, checks out the book, and reads it quickly. Canright's tone seems a bit angry, and Wynne, unable to grasp the full implications of what he was reading, decides that Dr. Olson is right. Wynne concludes that Ellen White is a true prophet of God and continues in this belief until he reads the *People Magazine* story about the Fox Sisters. (See 1999.) Since Canright made a big deal about Ellen White's plagiarism in the book that Dr. Olson recommended, this brief interview nearly proves that Dr. Olson knew of her plagiarism when he denied any knowledge of such charges just prior to the exposure of her extensive plagiarism by Walter Rea. (See 1979.)

1966 – SDA theologian, **Leroy Froom**, concedes in his book, ***The Conditionalist Faith of Our Fathers*** (Review and Herald Publishing) that no Christian thinker before the 12th Century can clearly be claimed to be a “conditionalist.” This means that prior to this time, no known Christian teacher could positively be identified as one who did not believe that the soul is created immortal at conception. Noted in the article, “*Examination of Conditional Immortality, “Soul Sleep” and “Annihilationism” – A Biblical Response to a Seventh-day Adventist,*” which appeared in the March 1996 issue of FidoNet OpenBible— a Catholic project that defends and articulates orthodox Christian teaching.

1967 - The war between Israel and the Arabs takes place. For the first time since around 688 AD, the Jews have access to the Temple Mount. In Darren Jack's prophetic chart, 1967 is arrived at by adding 2300 years to 334 BC, the Battle of Granicus, and the contextually allowable start date for the 2300 day prophecy.

1968 – The secret General Conference's Sanctuary Doctrine Committee disbands without reaching any conclusion. The committee studied 48 papers by competent SDA Bible scholars and theologians. The total failure of the committee to find support for the doctrine is kept secret. The existence of this secret committee will not be known until Dr. Raymond F. Cottrell retires from the Church and can write and speak what he wants without fear of losing his employment with the Church. (See Cottrell, “The Sanctuary Doctrine: asset or liability?”)

1971 – The Church publishes the epic, ***Movement of Destiny***, by **Leroy Froom**. He concedes that a massive cover-up of Ellen White's writings related to the Gospel versus the legalism crisis of 1888 had been deliberately perpetrated by the Church. This confession, made under pressure from some elements from within the Church who had heard of the existence of these writings, is astonishing. However, Froom is far from honest with his readers. He still maintains that the documents in question no longer exist when he knows they are locked away safely in the vault. (Search for Norris, All Experts, Seventh-day Adventists, article “White Estate”) According to insider Norris, Froom conspired with Arthur White to cover up what Ellen White actually said about Gospel related topics and the Investigative Judgment. In fact, as Froom lay dying he called his son to his side and ordered him to burn boxes of his research that he had utilized in the writing of ***Movement of Destiny***. Norris says, “Scholars have long known that this large book, which claims to be the official story of 1888, is fiction.”

WHAT ADVENTISTS KNEW: 1972 TO 1983

1972 - By 1972 it is apparent to WWCG leaders and followers that the European Union prophecies of Herbert W. Armstrong, the Church's prophet and founder, cannot possibly come true for at least another 20 years. The Church's leaders and followers become suspicious that Armstrong is not a prophet like he claims to be. (Wikipedia article, “Grace Communion International”) Note another interesting parallel between Adventism and Armstrongism. Absolute proof that their respective prophets were frauds surfaced about the same time—only two years apart. Also observe, as we have already pointed out, this revelation of their respective deceptions appears to have created the environment of hypocrisy on the part of church leadership that led to an explosion of financial and moral corruption within less than 10 years.

1972 – *Time Magazine* reports (May 15th edition) that The Worldwide Church of God's **Herbert W. Armstrong** said that Garner Ted [his son] was “in the bonds of Satan,” but observes that the elder Armstrong did not elaborate on the subject. *Time* speculates, however that Herbert was forced to come to grips publicly with Garner Ted's alleged continuing problems

with gambling and adultery, including his sexual escapades with Ambassador College coeds. **Garner Ted Armstrong** was soon relieved of his star role within the church. (*Wikipedia* article, "Grace Communion International")

1972 (AUTUMN) – SDA historian, denominational leader, and former employee of Dr. J.H. Kellogg in the later years of the doctor's life, **Alonzo H. Baker**, publishes an article in the Autumn edition of *Spectrum*, "My Years With John Harvey Kellogg," that shows that Dr. Kellogg remained a Christian and Sabbath-keeper until the day that he died, thus providing proof that Ellen White's claim that God showed her that Kellogg was a Pantheist was fraudulent. He also reports that he saw, with his very own eyes, the testimony (letter) from Ellen White in which she stated that God had shown her that he was constructing buildings in Chicago that he never built.

1974 – (Some authorities say 1975) – **Dr. F. Donald Yost** receives special permission to do research in the vault at the General Conference in Washington, DC. In the very back of the vault he finds a brown package hidden under a pile of dust. He opens it up and finds the stenographer's transcript of a secret meeting of top SDA leaders at the 1919 Bible Conference. He removes the package from the vault. In reading it he discovers that almost without exception, each key Adventist leader expresses his or her conviction that Ellen White is essentially a fraud. This amazing document will be published 5 years later (1979) in *Spectrum*, Volume 10, No. 1. (*Spectrum* is a liberal Seventh-day Adventist related independent publication that is barely tolerated by the Church) These leaders discuss whether the Church should tell the truth about her or continue the cover-up including the pros and cons of either choice. If a cover-up plan is to be implemented, they wrestle with the problem of how they would keep the truth about her from their seminary students.

1974 – Andrews University history professor **Donald R. McAdams** publishes *Ellen White and the Protestant Historians*. His work exposes Ellen White's extensive plagiarism of a host of Protestant writers and historians. He wrote his book, he said, because his students complain that her account of history often differs with that of accepted historical sources. In March he sends a letter to Arthur White, then director of the White Estate, detailing his findings. McAdams' findings are disturbing:

What we find when we examine the historical portions of the *Great Controversy* (those events from the fall of Jerusalem in 70 AD. through the French Revolution) is that entire chapters at the time are simply selective abridgments of protestant historians. ... In the samples I have examined there is not one historical fact in her text that is not in their text. [pp. 16, 17]

What we find when we examine the historical portions of the *Great Controversy* is that large sections are selective abridgments and adaptations of historians. Ellen White was not just borrowing paragraphs here and there that she ran across in her reading, but in fact following the historians page after page, leaving out much material, but using their sequence, some of their ideas, and often their words. In the examples I have examined I have found no historical fact in her text that is not in their text. The hand-written manuscript on John Huss follows the historian so closely that it does not even seem to have gone through an intermediary stage, but rather from the historian's printed page to Mrs. White's manuscript, including historical errors and moral exhortations. The material taken from the historians is not an insignificant part, but, if my samples are characteristic, a substantial part of the book. – Dr. Donald McAdams, unpublished manuscript, "Ellen G. White and the Protestant Historians: The Evidence from an Unpublished Manuscript on John Huss," p. 19.

1974 – Andrews University history professor **Donald R. McAdams** also discovers uncomfortable similarities between Ellen White's book, *The Great Controversy*, and Hastings' series by the same name. Evidence shows that Ellen White got her concept, most of her material, and her theology for her book, *The Great Controversy*, from a book published in 1858 by an early First Day Advent writer by the name of **H. L. Hastings**, entitled *The Great Controversy Between God and Man— Its Origin Progress and End*. McAdams thinks he sees a similarity of chapter titles and order, as well as content and theological approach. (Cited in **Douglas Hackleman's**, "*Ellen White's Habit*," referencing McAdams, *Ellen G. White and the Protestant Historians*, 1974) As mentioned earlier, Kevin Morgan, a Seventh-day Adventist Ellen White and Sabbath scholar, made an exhaustive study of this question in his book, *White Lie Soap*, in Chapter 6, which presents a well-researched study that suggests that her use of his materials was minimal. For example, he successfully demonstrates that if she did borrow some elements of his work, she could not be accused of copying because she demonstrated original thought synthesis and her work reflected a very different theological focus. Both McAdams and Morgan are excellent scholars. Note that McAdams merely pointed out similarities he thought he saw and seems to have stopped short of

accusing her of plagiarism. The question is really, did Ellen White get her “inspiration” for the Great Controversy theme from a vision-- her claimed “Lovett’s Grove Vision-- or from her exposure to Hastings’ book?

1975 – The events prophesied to take place in **Herbert W. Armstrong’s book, 1975 in Prophecy**, do not come to pass as foretold. Both the leaders and the membership of **The Worldwide Church of God** suffer severe disillusionment as perceptive individuals learn that their prophet is a fraud. (*Wikipedia* article, “Grace Communion International”) This event probably fostered the hypocrisy of the WWCG’s leaders, which may have created conditions suitable for the growth of the corruption that broke loose in 1979.

1976 – **Dr. Ronald Numbers**, then a professor at the Church’s medical school, Loma Linda University, publishes his blockbuster book, ***Prophetess of Health***. He outlines conclusive evidence that proves Ellen White got her ideas about health reform from other authors who wrote about health issues and who preceded her by as much as 20 years— in particular a certain Dr. Jackson. He demonstrates that the larger problem is that she lied when she claimed that she had received this information in visions from God. The Church has no answer for his charges because the evidence is compelling.

1977 – **Dr. Samuele Bacchiocchi** publishes his iconoclastic scholarly defense of the Sabbath, ***From Sabbath to Sunday***. He concedes that Christians had universally adopted Sunday observance by 140 AD., proving that Ellen White lied when she claimed that God had shown her in vision that the Roman Catholic Church and the pope had “changed the day.” He concedes that the Sabbath mentioned by St. Paul in Colossians 2:14-17 is a reference to the weekly Sabbath of the Decalogue, flatly contradicting traditional SDA teaching on this point. The ramifications of these astonishing concessions to the anti-Sabbatarians are profound: (1) it contradicted Ellen White’s claim that all the ceremonial laws were nailed to the cross. (2) It required the necessity for Bacchiocchi to teach that the Sabbath and the other Jewish ordinances listed by Paul were not the “shadows” which Paul referred to but instead were the extra rules and regulations of the Judaizers, created by them to make the observance of this set of Jewish ordinances more rigorous. (3) Concept #2 forced Bacchiocchi to develop the theory that Paul validated all the ordinances in Paul’s list of Jewish ordinances for continuance into the Christian era, rather than indicating that they were to be discarded as mere “shadows.” Concepts #2 and #3 combined forced Bacchiocchi to adopt the unenviable position to conclude that Christians must keep the Jewish dietary laws and annual Sabbaths along with the monthly New Moons if they are going to believe that Colossians 2:14-17 does not abrogate the Jewish Sabbath. This book launched the current anti-Sabbatarian movement by its colossal failure to defend the Sabbath in a believable way.

1978-1979 – **Researcher Tom Norris** discovers the suppressed writings of Ellen White related to the 1888 debate between the Gospel and legalism in the vaults of the newly formed General Conference Archives. These documents prove that Ellen White’s son, **Arthur White**, had been hiding thousands of documents about this 1888 debate over righteousness by faith that tell a very different story about Ellen White from what Froom and the White Estate had been teaching about her. Furthermore, the discovery uncovers some of the actual documents from this 1888 debate that the White Estate and the *Review* claimed no longer existed. Here is what Norris says:

More than that, there were thousands of rare Ellen White documents from the 1888 period that were discovered hidden in the White Estate. Here was a large and stunning collection of 1888 materials that had been deliberately hidden from the church all these years. No wonder Arthur White tried to keep the White Estate off limits to any researchers or scholars. He, and Froom, and others, had been perpetrating a massive fraud on the Adventist Community. Although this historic discovery took place in 1978-79, just before Glacier View, the leaders were in no mood to admit that such a major scandal was taking place. Besides, the conservatives were in control and such a discovery would destroy their agenda to eliminate the evangelicals and promote their legalistic version of Ellen White’s theology that they had so badly misunderstood.” (Search for Norris, All Experts, Seventh-day Adventists, White Estate.)

1978 – **Ingemar Linden** publishes ***The Last Trump***. A former Seminary Bible and homiletics teacher, his book proves Ellen White had taught the Shut Door Doctrine much later than she admitted, contrary to the denials of the Church, and supported his claim by quoting from previously unreleased portions of a letter Ellen White had written to **Joseph Bates** on July 13, 1847. This upset **Arthur White**, who was director of the White Estate at the time. Notice that SDA leaders continued to deny that Ellen White taught the Shut Door Doctrine long after Linden proved she had taught it. (See **Douglas Hackleman**, “**Ellen White’s Habit.**”)

1978 – The **Worldwide Church Of God** disfellowships **Garner Ted Armstrong**, the son of **Herbert W. Armstrong**, a final

time because of his adulterous behavior, including allegations that he frequently had sex with co-ed's at the Church's Ambassador College, and as the result of his rivalrous contentions with his father's favorite younger leader, **Stanley Rader**.

1978 - Another significant year in the "sanctified speculations" of Darren Jack's prophetic time periods, which focus on events that affect the modern Nation of Israel. In 1978, 688 + 1,290 years = 1978. Our evaluation of this correlation is that it is interesting, and even remarkable, but not definitive. 1978 is the third most significant year in modern Jewish history, when Israel gave the Sinai Peninsula to Egypt in exchange for peace as part of the Camp David Peace Accord, thus beginning the current 'land-for-peace process."

1979 (JANUARY) – **Dr. Robert Olson**, then Secretary of the White Estate, states there is nothing to the rumors that Ellen White borrowed extensively from other authors. He lies. Dr. Olson has had access to the **1919 Bible Conference Minutes** since they were discovered in 1974 or 1975. In the **1919 Bible Conference Minutes**, the delegates discuss the length and breadth of Ellen White's plagiarism, including her wholesale copying of a book by two English authors and re-labeling it **Sketches from the Life of Paul**. The delegates mention how she lifted virtually the entire book from these authors yet claimed that God had given her the information in vision. Walter Rea documents the presentation during which Dr. Olson made this deceitful statement in his book, **The White Lie**. Keep in mind that the 1919 Bible Conference Minutes had been available to Dr. Olson since 1974 or 1975 and it would have been the single most important document he had ever seen since it proved these early SDA leaders knew Ellen White was a fraud:

At an afternoon presentation by Olson in January 1979 at Loma Linda University in California, someone in the audience asked about Mrs. White's borrowing from published sources. Olson's reply was to the effect that there was nothing to it, that all of her writings were her own. He then volunteered that there was some minister in Southern California making waves with allegations about borrowed material for her key book, *The Desire of Ages*, but that there was nothing to these rumors.

To say that I was in a state of shock after the meeting is to put it mildly. My file at that very time already held several letters from that same Olson encouraging me to keep sending him my comparisons of Ellen with her contemporaries. Furthermore, he had personally talked with me when he was in California only a short time before and had sought my promise that I would not publish any report on my work until he and the White Estate staff had been given additional time to survey the material.

I had agreed to his request, and the fact of the agreement had been recorded in the in-house memo that he wrote afterward and that I held in my files. (*The White Lie*, Introduction)

1979 (FEBRUARY) – Andrews University theology student, Aage Rendalen demonstrates that Ellen White's son, Willie White, did not believe in the testimonies of his own mother, and cites the A. R. Henry Libel Case. See the paper, **"Mrs. White Vs. The Facts: A Paper Submitted in Partial Fulfillment of the Course THST 616, Doctrine of Revelation and Inspiration,"** pp. 9-10, by Aage Rendalen, Andrews University Theological Seminary, February 1979.

1979 (APRIL) – **The Worldwide Church Of God's** corruption problems break loose as **Mike Wallace** of the CBS program **60 Minutes** interviews the Church's legal and financial adviser, **Stanley Rader**, before a national audience. Wallace presents documentary evidence of lavish secret expenditures, conflict of interest insider deals, posh homes and lifestyles of Church officials, and the heavy involvement of Stanley Rader himself in financial manipulation. Rader abruptly terminates the interview. This interview was aired April 15, 1979. Garner Ted Armstrong had blamed Stanley Rader for his two-time ousting from his father's church. Garner Ted and other former and discontented members of the Worldwide Church of God prompted the State of California to investigate charges of malfeasance by Rader and others who were connected with WWCG's Ambassador International Cultural Foundation (AICF) which had been founded in 1975 as a tax-exempt world-wide charitable organization. In this year California Attorney, General George Deukmejian, brought civil charges against the Church, and the Church was placed into an investigative financial receivership for one year. Note these interesting facts: (1) As we have reviewed, this financial corruption broke out about the same time and apparently for many of the same reasons that caused financial corruption to break out in the Seventh-day Adventist Church at this time, including the increasing hypocrisy that developed as the top leaders in both churches came to realize that their respective prophets were frauds. (2) Both churches started tax-exempt, world-wide charities that got into serious legal trouble. The problems with the Adventist Development and Relief Agency in later years were virtually identical. A tax-free charitable organization appears to give religious organizations a blank check to take government money and other funds and cause the money to disappear without

doing anything to help the people for whom it is intended. It makes for a lot of good-paying jobs and expense accounts.

1979 (MAY) – *Spectrum* Magazine publishes the **1919 Bible Conference Minutes in its May issue. This event provided absolute proof that Adventist leaders had known for certain that Ellen White was a fraud for a very long time. The Church admits nothing and continues to present her as a true prophet.**

1979 (SEPTEMBER) - Robert Olson, Secretary of the White Estate, publishes a short paper about the 1919 Bible Conference Minutes. (See Olson, Robert W., “*The 1919 Conference and Bible and History Teachers' Council.*” Washington, DC: Ellen G. White Estate, September 24, 1979.. Heritage Room DF [BIBLE CONFERENCE – 1919]). After 1979 there is no excuse for the SDA Church to continue to promote Ellen White as a true prophetess, to continue to deny that she was guilty of plagiarism on a massive scale, and to evade the issue that whether she plagiarized or not,— she lied about the sources of her material. While we are not certain when the *1919 Bible Conference Minutes* fell into Dr. Olson's hands between the time of its theft from the vault in 1974 and its publication by ***Spectrum*** in May of 1979, Dr. Olson's 1979 article proves that he had full access to it by no later than 1979.

1980 – Skip Baker, then General Conference Photographer, convinces vault official, Ron Graybill, to release the 1847 letter Ellen White wrote to **Joseph Bates**. Baker is shocked by its release to him. He makes numerous photographs of the letter. He notes the letter clearly proves that Ellen White believed in and taught the Shut Door Doctrine as late as 1847— a fact that Adventist leaders had vehemently denied for well over 100 years. He discovers that much of the letter had been intentionally mutilated to keep the contents beyond page 3 from being legible. However, there is enough damaging evidence on the first page to prove that she taught the Shut Door at the time. To see a photograph of this letter, access it at:

www.truthorfables.com/EGW_to_J.Bates_1847.htm

1980 – Dr. Desmond Ford, guest professor of religion at Pacific Union College and on loan at the time from Avondale College in Australia, is put on trial at Glacier View Ranch near Denver, Colorado, for his views on the **Sanctuary Doctrine**. He had disclosed in a forum lecture at Pacific Union College that he cannot find biblical support for this doctrine and that its teachings appear to be fundamentally anti-Gospel. About 40 top SDA theologians and biblical scholars are present at the trial. They vote unanimously in favor of six of his eight points. Ford is defrocked and forced to earn a living outside of Church employment. **Neal C. Wilson**, then General Conference president, flies back to General Conference Headquarters in Washington, DC and announces that the Glacier View Committee unanimously agreed that Dr. Ford's views are wrong and that he should be defrocked. (See Cottrell, “The Sanctuary Doctrine: asset or liability?”)

1980 - News that an Adventist pastor, **Dr. Walter Rea**, had found evidence of plagiarism in the writings of the Church's prophetess, Ellen G. White, reaches the ears of **John Dart**, the religion editor of the *Los Angeles Times*. Dart interviewed Dr. Rea in his home, and very quickly publishes a story with banner headlines that read, “*Plagiarism Found in Prophet Books,*” (October 20, 1980). The story is syndicated to 1,000 newspapers and reported on worldwide radio and TV. Dr. Rea is fired from the Church in November. (See Walter Rea, ***Pirates of Privilege***, p. 76 in the spiral-bound edition available from Dr. Desmond Ford's, Good News Unlimited organization in Australia.)

1980 – The Church forms a committee in Glendale, California to study the evidence they already have that Ellen White borrowed extensively from the writings of other authors without giving credit to her sources. Eighteen key scholars from across the country met to examine the evidence. They receive orders to work with Dr. Rea in their study. The committee concludes that the evidence is alarming and that further study is needed. Unfortunately, the committee acts without the consent of the Church's high administrative council, **PREXAD**. PREXAD blocks any further activity by the Glendale Committee and announces its own plan to deal with the issues. (See Walter Rea, ***Pirates of Privilege***, p. 75 of the spiral bound edition from Good News Unlimited)

1980 – Dr. Donald R. McAdams, SDA history professor from Andrews University, tells the Glendale Committee:

*If every paragraph in the book **Great Controversy**, written by Ellen White, was properly footnoted, then every paragraph would have to be footnoted.*

1981 – Circa 1981 – A group of about 40 SDA biblical scholars and theologians sign a statement which came to be known as the “**Atlanta Affirmation.**” This document, sent to General Conference President, **Neal C. Wilson**, rebukes him for lying about what happened at Glacier View and for the way he treated Dr. Ford both before and after the Glacier View trial. (See

1981 – Robert D. Brinsmead, a highly controversial independent Seventh-day Adventist theologian with a large following in the United States in earlier years, publishes his classic paper, “**Sabbatarianism Re-examined.**” Brinsmead’s paper, the writing of which is evidently prompted by his keen perception that Dr. Bacchiocchi’s 1977 book came closer to destroying the case for Sabbatarianism than to defending it, refutes Bacchiocchi’s fanciful Sabbath theology and painfully exposes the impossibilities of Sabbatarianism. A brilliant writer, Brinsmead disproves the entire Sabbath concept with the most up-to-date scholarly research and lock-step logic.

1981 – The Church’s Davenport Scandal breaks loose with the bankruptcy of SDA physician and real estate developer, **Dr. Donald J. Davenport**. This scandal exposes Adventist corruption on an unimaginable scale, including bribery, kick-backs, illegal conflicts of interest, and cover-up. Many Church entities are shown to have been involved— state and regional conferences, Adventist institutions like Pacific Union College, and a wide variety of Adventist leaders, including the General Conference president and six union conference presidents. The Davenport Scandal shows Adventist leaders behaving as if they do not believe in Heaven or Hell, or the unique SDA doctrines of the Investigative Judgment, the inspiration of Ellen White, and the Sabbath.

1981 – Dale Ratzlaff, who is later to be described by SDA Bible professor **Judd Lake** as the “fountainhead of all [SDA] critics,” leaves the Church because he cannot find biblical support for the Church’s Doctrine of the Investigative Judgment (Sanctuary Doctrine). He continues to keep the Sabbath for a while and later writes his devastating critique of the Investigative Judgment entitled **Cultic Doctrine of Seventh-day Adventists**. Later, he will publish a comprehensive anti-Sabbatarian book entitled **Sabbath in Crisis**, which is now renamed **Sabbath in Christ**. (See also 1990) His book on the Sabbath will later become one of two documents written by former SDA authors that influence **The Worldwide Church of God** to turn its back on the Sabbatarian heritage it had shared with Seventh-day Adventists from the very beginning. (See also 1995.)

1981 - The General Conference presents the **Ramik Report**; the findings of a Roman Catholic lawyer hired by the Church to investigate the claim that Ellen White was a plagiarist. Attorney Ramik finds that Ellen White is not guilty of plagiarism and that her borrowing of the ideas of others was not extensive and exact enough to constitute plagiarism. This would be farcical were it not so pathetic. Lawyers do not make a determination of innocence or guilt; they defend a client as best they can in court, and the court makes the determination. This scenario has Ramik acting as judge and jury, acquitting his own client of any wrongdoing. “Ladies and gentlemen of the SDA, I find my defendant, the late Ellen White, innocent of the charge of plagiarism. Case dismissed. Make your check payable to Dillar, Ramik & Wight, Ltd.”

The Ramik Report fails to address the real question, “Is Ellen White a liar?” Ramik apparently did not research to see where Ellen White repeatedly claimed that God had shown her something in vision that she had copied from a human writer. The Church failed to have Ramik address the real problem, and that is that true prophets of God do not lie. Of course, Ramik was not hired to determine the credibility of his client.

1982 – SDA physician, **Dr. Donald Davenport’s** Ponzi scheme collapses, bilking numerous Adventist institutions and individuals out of mega-millions of dollars. Many SDA institutions lost all of their investment funds, and in many cases they lost money that had been designated as tithe.

1982 – Robert D. Brinsmead publishes another block-buster paper on the Sabbath, “**A Digest of the Sabbath Question.**” This paper provides additional scholarly proof for the points he made in his 1981 paper and is written in his usual brilliant style. These two papers confront SDA leaders with biblical and historical evidence that prove that Sabbatarianism is impossible— not merely questionable.

1982 - Dr. Walter Rea publishes his block-buster anti-Ellen White classic, **The White Lie**. Extensively-researched, this book explains the extent of her plagiarism with many specific examples, and it details the cover-up of the Ellen White problem by Adventist leaders. Rea’s book effectively destroys the Ellen White myth, and Adventist leaders should have raised the “White” flag of surrender and repudiated the Church’s claim that she was a prophet of God. Rea eloquently demonstrates that the biggest problem with Ellen White was not simply her plagiarism, but that she repeatedly lied every time she made the blasphemous claim that God gave her the information she copied.

1982 – The Ellen G. White Estate in conjunction with the Ministerial Association of the General Conference and the SDA

controlled Biblical Research Institute publish the paper, "***The Truth About the White Lie.***" The paper put a nice spin on the interpretation of the events surrounding the problems with Ellen White's copying. It was revised in 1999. Since it is the 1999 edition that your authors have access to, see 1999 for examples of bold-faced deception in this document.

1982 – The Church commissions **Dr. Fred Veltman**, then head of the religion department at Pacific Union College, to study the charges of Walter Rea that Ellen White had plagiarized most of the material she put into her book, ***The Desire of Ages***. Dr. Veltman launches an eight-year study focused on this one book.

1982 – **D. A. Carson** (editor) publishes ***From Sabbath to Lord's Day***, a collection of scholarly papers written by his team of biblical scholars to answer Dr. Samuele Bacchiocchi's book, ***From Sabbath to Sunday***. This project, which took his team many years to complete, relates the discovery that Moses clearly worded Genesis 2, Exodus 16, and Exodus 20 in such a way as to indicate that the Sabbath Ordinance was not instituted at Creation– that it was given to the followers of God for the first time with the giving of the manna at the time of the Exodus, and that the newly given Sabbath Commandment was merely modeled after Creation Week. The Carson scholars also added greatly to our understanding of why Christians "abandoned" Sabbath-keeping and embraced Sunday observance. Their findings provide additional evidence that any variation of the apostasy-conspiracy approach– whether it be Ellen White's Roman Catholic Church theory, Samuele Bacchiocchi's Jewish Persecution Theory, The Dual Day Theory proposed by the General Conference, or Strand's Out Of Easter Theory, does not fit the facts. Note that Dr. Bacchiocchi never addressed the Hebrew linguistics problems in any of his subsequent books on the Sabbath. Note also that the Seventh-day Adventist Sabbath scholars who attempted to develop more respectable theories to replace Dr. Bacchiocchi's "New Sabbatarianism" failed to even mention them also, much less try to refute them. They simply ignored them. Proper scholarship demands that one examine any and all relevant evidence, and address it accordingly.

1983 – The Church fires **Dr. Ron Graybill**, a research assistant for 13 years and the Associate Secretary of the Ellen G. White Estate, after his Johns Hopkins University doctoral dissertation, "**The Power of Prophecy: Ellen G. White and the Women Religious Founders of the Nineteenth Century,**" was leaked out. Without his consent or knowledge, copies of the dissertation, which he had placed on a five-year embargo, are circulated to Adventist leaders throughout the world. He took the liberty to use material that the White Estate had placed in a top secret category. It is highly significant to observe that someone who had unlimited access to Ellen White's entire collection of writings for over 13 years finally determined that she was a fraud. His paper was skeptical of her prophetic gifts, her character and integrity, and he provided evidence that suggested that she produced her visions whenever necessary to maintain her authority. (See Walter Rea's book, ***Pirates of Privilege***, p. 72-73, spiral bound edition available from Dr. Desmond Ford's Australian organization, Good News Unlimited. This book is also available at various websites.

Later we will have more to say about how the release of this damaging evidence to select Church leaders made them accountable to stop the Ellen White fraud, but that no such thing happened.

WHAT ADVENTISTS KNEW: 1984 TO 1990

By the end of the 1980's, Adventist leaders have proof to the point of over-kill, thanks to the publication of D. A. Carson's 1982 book, ***From Sabbath to Lord's Day***, that its Sabbath doctrine is biblically and historically impossible, the primary proof for such being the Hebrew linguistics of Genesis and Exodus, including the Exodus story. They have known that Ellen White was a fraud since 1919—a fact proven by the ***1919 Bible Conference Minutes*** and the plagiarism of Dr. Walter Rea as published in his 1982 book, ***The White Lie***. Despite the unraveling of any credibility for their special doctrines, Adventist leaders show absolutely no interest in renouncing their false teachings and joining the larger Christian community. Additional revelations of SDA deceptions and cover-ups continue to surface, but leadership is unmoved. The Church quietly acknowledges that Ellen White lied about the sources of information she had claimed came straight from the throne of God in vision, but still refuse to renounce her as a false prophet.

1984 – **Walter Rea's 1984 book, *Pirates of Privilege*, is not published.** Earlier, Rea had been fired in November of 1980 for uncovering the fact that Ellen White plagiarized the writings of other authors while claiming that she got that information in visions from God. He was 60 years old at the time the Church fired him, and had served the Denomination faithfully for many decades. Adventist leaders attempted to deny him his retirement benefits as well. Dr. Rea took the Church to court

and won back his retirement benefits. However, he was forced to agree not to publish *Pirates of Privilege* in order to have his retirement benefits reinstated. Thus, every cent paid by the Church to Walter Rea after his firing represents, in a real sense of the word, out-right bribery in the form of "hush money." Truth became the true victim of the Church.

Read Pirates of Privilege at: www.truthorfables.com

1984 – Robert Olson, in his *Advent Review* (February 23, 1984) article, “*Ellen G. White's use of Historical Sources in The Great Controversy*,” concedes:

There is no question in Ellen G. White's mind about the overall inspiration of *The Great Controversy*, although possibly 50 percent or more of the material was drawn from other sources.

1986 – Adventist seminary student, **Bruce Weaver**, discovers a newspaper account of a wild meeting at **Israel Dammon's** home and a transcript of the court record. It shows that Ellen White lied about her participation in the same fanaticism that she condemned later. (See Bruce Weaver's story at *Ellen White Exposed*, taken from *Adventist Currents*, Vol. 3, Number 1, 1988.) See also 1874. His article can be found at the following link: <http://www.ellenwhiteexposed.com/israel.htm>

1986 – The transcript of a 1907 meeting between Kellogg and two General Conference officials is released to the public. This transcript, recorded by a stenographer, documents what was said when they came to excommunicate him. This document, “*Interview at Dr. J. H. Kellogg's House, October 7, 1907 Between Geo. W. Amadon, Elder A. C. Bordeau, and Dr. J. H. Kellogg*” provides evidence that the source of information in her testimonies was of human origin; that her opposition to Dr. Kellogg's book, *The Living Temple*, was based on her concern for financial gain, and that the Chicago Buildings Vision was a serious blunder. Additionally it furnishes evidence that her son, Willie White, did not believe his own mother's testimonies were inspired. This material is so devastating to the view that Ellen White was an inspired prophet of God that Adventist leaders have suggested that the transcript is not genuine. Also, SDA apologists warn Church members not to read the document because its sophistries can lead them away from the “TRUTH”. One of the common methods employed in cults is the control over information, telling people what sources of information they can, and cannot, avail themselves.

1987 – The White Estate publishes a shoddy, disorganized, and difficult-to-read release of hundreds of Ellen White's writings related to the Gospel versus legalism debate of 1888. There is no acknowledgment that the very fact that these documents actually exist represents a huge scandal. The released document is so shoddy that it suggests that the Church deliberately made it so difficult to study that few people would have the courage to struggle through it. Tom Norris, the Adventist researcher who, earlier, had been given unlimited access to these documents, says this regarding this event:

The late publication of this large collection of 1888 materials from the White Estate proves that they were hiding and suppressing Ellen White's writings, and acting in bad faith all during the Righteousness by Faith debates of the 1970's and even during Glacier View, and beyond. Arthur White was indeed guilty of misleading and deceiving generations of SDA's, including the scholars and the critics about Ellen Whites Gospel theology and her role in 1888. And thus the SDA leaders have been caught perpetrating a massive fraud about Ellen White and the fundamentals of Adventist theology. Here is the largest scandal that the denomination has ever faced, and yet few today are even aware that such a scandal exists because it has never been acknowledged, much less confessed or explained. And thus this massive fraud is still ongoing in nature even though the White Estate managed to publish the hidden documents some time ago.” (Search for Norris, All Experts, Seventh-day Adventists, White Estate.)

WHAT ADVENTISTS KNEW: 1990 – PRESENT

1990 – Dr. Fred Veltman completes his study of the *Desire of Ages*. He concludes that Ellen White had plagiarized the vast majority of her material from other writers, including writers of religious fiction, and that there is hardly a single idea that is unique to Ellen White in the *Desire of Ages*. His findings are published in the December 1990 issue of *Ministry* (pp. 11-14). Amazingly, Dr. Veltman concedes that he has no explanation for her lying about receiving direct, divine inspiration for things that she copied from the writings of others.

Dr. Veltman named the books she copied and questioned her honesty. In earlier editions of *The Great Controversy*, she had essentially claimed that God was the Source of most of her information. As more and more well-read individuals noticed that she had copied large sections of the work of other writers, she was forced to claim less influence from divine revelation and

more from human sources. On our historical timeline you can see the evolving claims about the level of inspiration she claimed for its content. Here is Dr. Veltman's response to a key question he was assigned to answer in his study:

3. How do you harmonize Ellen White's use of sources with her statements to the contrary? Do you think the introductory statement to *The Great Controversy* constitutes an adequate admission of literary dependence?"

I must admit at the start that in my judgment this is the most serious problem to be faced in connection with Ellen White's literary dependency. It strikes at the heart of her honesty, her integrity, and therefore her trustworthiness.

As of now I do not have - nor, to my knowledge, does anyone else have - a satisfactory answer to this important question. The statement from *The Great Controversy* comes rather late in her writing career and is too limited in its reference to historians and reformers. Similar admissions do not appear as prefaces to all her writings in which sources are involved, and there is no indication that this particular statement applies to her writings in general.

See: http://www.truthorfables.com/Desire_of_Ages_Veltman.h

You can find the entire **Veltman Report** by accessing:

http://www.truthorfables.com/Desire_of_Ages_Veltman.htm

1990 – Dale Ratzlaff publishes his anti-Sabbatarian book, ***Sabbath in Crisis***. As you may recall, Ratzlaff had left Adventism in 1980 because he could not find biblical support for the Sanctuary Doctrine. He remained a Sabbath-keeper for several years after his apostasy from the Church. Eventually he began to look into other Adventist doctrines, including the Sabbath. Among the sources he studied were the Brinsmead papers. As a result of this study, he rejected Sabbatarianism and began to work on *Sabbath in Crisis*. This book has now been re-named ***Sabbath in Christ***. Ratzlaff's book appears to be one of the most complete treatises on the impossibilities of Sabbatarianism available today. Together with the Brinsmead papers, *Sabbath in Crisis/ Sabbath in Christ* has led the way in forging the current anti-Sabbatarian movement that is threatening the very existence of Adventism, particularly in North America.

1994 – George R. Knight, SDA theologian and author, reprints Thomas M. Preble's 1845 pro-Sabbatarian tract in his 1994 book, ***1844 And the Rise of Sabbatarian Adventism***, compiled and edited by George R. Knight, 1994, and published by Review and Herald Publishing Association, ISBN 0-8280-0850-7. Interestingly, it seems he did not let his readers know that Preble studied his way out of Adventism and became a major force in opposition to the three distinctive doctrines of Adventism—the Sabbath, Ellen White, and the 1844 sanctuary doctrine. Perhaps Knight didn't know Preble apostatized later.

1995 - Dr. Samuele Bacchiocchi publishes ***The Sabbath in the New Testament***. In this new book he appears to have opened to the possibility that the Sabbath of Colossians 2:14-17 was a reference to a ceremonial Sabbath feast day—perhaps an annual one— in essence, a return to the traditional SDA position on this text. He seems to have traded the difficulties of his iconoclastic views for the impossibilities of the traditional Adventist interpretation of this passage. By now, however, the damage has already been done. His 1977 views have already helped to launch the new anti-Sabbatarian movement that is challenging the Seventh-day Adventist denomination.

1995 – The Worldwide Church of God renounces Sabbatarianism after studying the writings of former Adventists, **Robert D. Brinsmead** and **Dale Ratzlaff**. This repudiation of Sabbatarianism represents one of the most significant events in the history of modern Christianity. Since the Seventh-day Adventist Church and The Worldwide Church of God ultimately developed out of one group of Advent believers immediately after the Great Disappointment of 1844, the implications of this development are devastating to Adventism.

1995 – Robert Folkenberg, Sr., then General Conference President of the SDA, responding to agitation about the **lunar Sabbath** (which began to emerge in California and Washington) commissions a study group to investigate the lunar calendar/Sabbath issue. The committee consists of five scholars from the seminary at Andrews University plus a representative from the Ministerial Department of the North American Division, plus **Robert M. Johnston**, Professor of New Testament and Christian Origins, at the seminary at Andrews University, who was chosen to chair the committee. There is evidence that three of the five members from Andrews University were convicted that the lunar Sabbath was biblical and

became sympathetic to the idea that the Church needed to reform its practices accordingly. The committee was shut down and its findings suppressed. (See 4 Angels Publications web-site.)

1997 – Dirk Anderson switches his website devoted to defending Ellen White to exposing her as a fraud after Dale Ratzlaff challenged him to read D. M. Canright's 1919 book, *Life of Mrs. E. G. White, Seventh-day Adventist Prophet— Her False Claims Refuted*. Since 1997 Brother Anderson's anti-EGW website has become the repository of one of the largest collections of original documents as well as research papers written by Dirk Anderson and others, exposing the fraudulent claims of Ellen White and the Church's cover-up of its knowledge that she was a fraud.

His research is so devastating to Adventism that the Seventh-day Adventist Church successfully brought legal action against him that forced him to give up his original Internet domain name. This tactic made it more difficult for Internet users to find his website. His last known web address now redirects to: <http://www.exadventist.com>

1997 – Robert K. Sanders, who left Adventism some years prior to 1997 after discovering problems with Ellen G. White and the Sanctuary Doctrine, launches his anti-SDA, anti-Ellen White, and anti-Sabbatarian website, **Truth or Fables**. Since 1997 Truth or Fables has provided a substantial collection of anti-SDA documents not available anywhere else, including well-researched biblical studies by Sanders and others who exhaustively deal with the problematic teachings of Adventism and Sabbatarianism. Sander's website also features a collection of documents that deal with the extensive corruption which has plagued the Seventh-day Adventist Church since the 1970's. His ministry includes a small panel of experts who dialogue directly with individuals who have specific questions about Sabbatarianism, Ellen White, and other SDA issues. His ministry helps many people throw off the deceptions of Adventism and embrace the Gospel of Jesus as outlined by Paul in his writings. Go to TRUTH OR FABLES and read his testimony at: http://www.truthorfables.com/My_Testimony.htm

1998 – Dr. Samuele Bacchiocchi publishes *Sabbath under Crossfire* in response to the growing threat of the new anti-Sabbatarian movement that he inadvertently started by his catastrophic embarrassment of Sabbatarianism represented by his book, *From Sabbath to Sunday*, back in 1977. Bacchiocchi ignores the newer key arguments of the anti-Sabbatarians, such as the Hebrew linguistics of the Creation Story; the improved understanding by scholars of the diversity in the Early Church, and the similarity between the structure of the 10 Commandments and the treaties of Israel's neighbors. More importantly, as you will recall, he brought further embarrassment to Adventists by enlarging on the requirement that Christians must keep the Jewish dietary laws, annual Sabbath feast days, and monthly New Moons, *in addition* to the weekly Sabbath of the Decalogue. Significantly he appeared to have modified his position that the Sabbath of Colossians 2:14-17 was a reference to the weekly Sabbath of the Decalogue, allowing the possibility that it was a reference to ceremonial events that lasted an entire week (*Sabbath Under Crossfire*, 1998). (See also **1995** for another modification in his view of Colossians 2:14-17.)

1998 – Revelation of disgusting financial corruption at the tax-exempt Adventist Relief and Development Agency comes to light, thanks to General Conference whistle-blower and chief financial officer, David Dennis, who uncovered the scandal. Millions of dollars of government funding and private donations fail to make it to their intended recipients. This organization created a lot of nice jobs for Adventists and provided more than generous expense accounts to pay them well for mismanaging the funds. **Note the parallel, here, with the financial scandal that corrupted The Worldwide Church of God's charitable and cultural organization, which surfaced in 1979.**

1999 – The Truth about the White Lie is revised and re-released. This document was prepared by the staff of the Ellen G. White Estate in cooperation with the Biblical Research Institute and the Ministerial Association of the General Conference of Seventh-day Adventists. First published August 1982. Revised January 1999. An excerpt follows:

FROM THE CHURCH'S PUBLICATION: THE TRUTH ABOUT THE WHITE LIE:

It has been rumored that Ellen White was threatened with a lawsuit for her literary borrowing, from Conybeare and Howson's *Life and Epistles of the Apostle Paul*. What are the facts?

In spite of A. G. Daniell's faulty memory in this regard, Mrs. White was never accused of plagiarism by the British authors Conybeare and Howson, nor was she threatened with a lawsuit, nor was her book withdrawn because of criticisms of its use of sources. In the 1890's there was a letter of inquiry about *Sketches from the Life of Paul* addressed to the Review and Herald Publishing Association by one of the several American publishers of Conybeare and Howson, the T.Y. Crowell Co. of New York. Large quantities of Conybeare and Howson's book had earlier been purchased from the Crowell Co. to give

away as prizes to those who would secure subscriptions to the *Signs of the Times*. W. C. White, the only source of information about this letter, “indicates that it was written in a kindly spirit” and contained “no threats of prosecution, nor any complaints as to plagiarism.

When the Crowell Company was quizzed about the matter some thirty years later, they replied:

We publish Conybeare's *Life and Epistles of the Apostle Paul*, but this is not a copyrighted book and we would have no legal grounds for action against your book and we do not think that we have ever raised any objection or made any claim such as you speak of.

Like many of Ellen White's books, *Sketches From the Life of Paul* was out of print for some time while Mrs. White worked toward enlarging it into *The Acts of the Apostles*, but aside from scurrilous speculation and faulty memories, **there is no evidence that this had anything to do with any alleged criticism of Ellen White's use of Conybeare and Howson.**

A little research from the anti-SDA, anti-Sabbatarian author, Max Chugg, clearly demonstrates the perfidy of the above White-washing:

REBUTTAL FROM “THE TRUTH ABOUT THE WHITE LIE REFUTED”

A. G. Daniells was the president of the General Conference and when he made his comments about this book, he was speaking as Moderator at the 1919 Bible Conference. Are we asked to believe that this man would be asked to chair such a meeting if he was prone to memory failure? And even if he was, he gave ample opportunity to those prominent Adventists at the meeting to disagree with him.

His remarks were:

Yes, and now take that “Life of Paul,” I supposed you know all about it and knew that claims were put up against her, charges made of plagiarism, even by the Authors of the book, Conybeare and Howson, and were liable to make the denomination trouble because there was so much of their book put into the *Life of Paul* without any credit of quotation marks I found it out and I read it with Brother Palmer when he found it, and we got Conybeare and Howson, and we got Wylie's *History of the Reformation*, and we read word for word, page after page, and no quotations, no credit, and really I did not know the difference until I began to compare them. I supposed it was Sister White's own work. The poor sister said, “Why, I didn't know about quotations and credits. My Secretary should have looked after that, and the publishing house should have looked after it.

<http://www.ellenwhiteexposed.com/rea/truth.htm>

This account of the matter by the White Estate and SDA Church is a White Lie itself. Conybeare and Howson were British authors, and they had a publisher in England. It was the English publisher and the authors themselves who threatened the lawsuit! This is the same White Estate that we have to face when it comes to finding out the truth about anything.

1999 – *People Magazine* publishes an article about the **Fox Sisters**, who started the Spiritualist Movement in the mid 1800's. This information calls into question Ellen White's integrity with her comment about being shown in vision that the “rappings” were not the result of “human trickery.” The article tells the story about how these sisters confessed, decades later, that they made up the story about the rappings at their farm house and that they deceived people during their séances by tying a string to their toes which activated a rock placed against the wall. After touring the country for decades giving lectures and séances, they toured the country lecturing about how they had managed to deceive everyone. **The author of the article uses exactly the same words as Ellen White, just turned around**, stating that the Fox Sisters confessed that their spirit manifestations WERE THE RESULT OF HUMAN TRICKERY. Whether there was a supernatural component to what the Fox Sisters were doing, this *People Magazine* article brings to mind the fact that Ellen White said in the **Great Controversy** that Spiritualism would soon pervade all the main-line churches and that it would be considered a sin to talk against the spirit manifestations within these churches. Nothing of the sort has happened. Even more strangely, an eye-witness to one of Ellen White's early visions observed the phenomena of table tipping– a term synonymous with Spiritualism at the time.

See this link for the story of the Fox Sisters: www.ellenwhiteexposed.com/egw54.htm

2002 – Dr. Raymond F. Cottrell, widely acknowledged to be the greatest Seventh-day Adventist theologian of all time, presents his paper, “**The Sanctuary Doctrine: asset or liability?**” at the San Diego Forum on February ninth. His presentation exposes not only the impossibilities of the Doctrine of the Investigative Judgment, but the perfidy of Adventist leaders spanning over many decades of Church history. Wisely, Dr. Cottrell waited until his retirement from the Church to present this paper. There is no question but that he would have been fired if he had presented his views while being actively employed by the Church. It is possible that we would never have known about this scandalous cover-up if it had not been for his willingness to reveal what happened after his retirement.

2004 – An “Independent” SDA-related ministry satellite broadcaster **3ABN**, opens the floodgates to a huge scandal when its governing board dismisses the organization's key figure's wife, Linda Shelton, alleging sexual misconduct. This event led to scrutiny of financial and other irregularities, which would later come to nearly threaten the existence of this very large pro-SDA broadcasting network.

2006 – **Laura Lee Vornholt-Jones**, hearing about the lunar Sabbath concept from influences outside of Adventism, begins researching the subject and discovers a reference to the Grace Amadon Collection. (Grace Amadon was a committee member appointed in 1939 to the committee established by the General Conference to explore the lunar Sabbath Question. She had collected a large number of documents, including letters and papers, related to her work with the committee.) Vornholt-Jones pooled financial resources with friends and family and purchased everything from the collection that was copyable.

2007 – In October of 2007, **Laura Lee Vornholt-Jones** and her associated family and friends published the results of their research in ***The Great Calendar Controversy***. They mailed copies of their new book to SDA church leaders in the Pacific Northwest, including the North Pacific Union.

2007 – In December of 2007, someone in Canada sent copies of ***The Great Calendar Controversy*** and three hundred pages of documents copied from the Grace Amadon Collection along with a request for an investigation to a wide variety of Adventist leaders including Elder Jan Paulsen, then president of the General Conference; Orville Parchment, then vice president of the General Conference; Dr. Angel Rodriguez, head of the Bible Research Institute; Elder Don Schneider, president of the North American Division; Elder Dan Jackson, president of the Canadian Union Conference; Dr. Denis Fortin, Dean of Theology at the seminary at Andrews University; Dr. Jacques Doukhan of Andrews University; Elder Doug Batchelor, director of Amazing Facts, headquartered in Sacramento, California; and others. PDF copies were also mailed to 600 Adventist leaders throughout the world. Also, in this same month hard copies of the book were mailed to all the SDA pastors and conference leaders in Canada.

2007 – Plans to merge two huge SDA “independent” ministries, **Amazing Facts** and **3ABN** are scrapped by the Church due to the growing scandal at 3ABN.

2007 – **Dr. Jacques Doukhan**, Professor of Hebrew and Old Testament Exegesis at Andrews University, lectures to a group of Adventists in Spokane, Washington. He states that when the biblical, lunar Biblical calendar is used, the Sabbath will “fall differently.” This lecture began another wave of agitation about the lunar calendar/Sabbath concept that, in turn, led to the excommunication of a number of Seventh-day Adventists who were among those who began asking the General Conference of Seventh-day Adventists to consider the matter and reform the Church.

2007 – The Church publishes its first “scholarly” attempt to defend its Sabbath doctrine in 30 years, almost certainly timed to commemorate the 30-year anniversary of the publication of Dr. Samuele Bacchiocchi's 1977 book, ***From Sabbath to Sunday***. The author is **Dr. Skip MacCarty**, Associate Pastor of the Pioneer Memorial Church at Andrews University where the Seventh-day Adventist Seminary is located. This author takes his readers on a theological wild goose chase to bring them around and around to accept, hook, line, and sinker, the convoluted theological gymnastics of his predecessor, Dr. Samuele Bacchiocchi. MacCarty ignores the impossibilities of the arguments in defense of Sabbatarianism in regards to the Hebrew linguistics of the Creation Story and the biblical prerequisite of circumcision for Sabbath-keeping, and slicks over the impossibilities of Colossians 2:14-17 in the same manner as Bacchiocchi. However, MacCarty fails to spell out to his readers that what he and Dr. Bacchiocchi teach about Colossians 2:14-17 absolutely requires Adventists and Sabbatarians to keep all the Jewish ordinances mentioned by Paul, including the Jewish dietary laws and annual Sabbath feast days and monthly New Moons. He states that a discussion of Early Church history is beyond the scope of his book, and for good reason. The facts of the history of the Early Church are devastating to Sabbatarianism.

2008 - The Andrews University Press publishes a book by SDA scholar, **Dr. Ron du Preez**, entitled **Judging the Sabbath: Discovering What Can't Be Found in Colossians 2:16**, which refutes Dr. Bacchiocchi's and Dr. MacCarty's concession that the Sabbath of Colossians 2:14-16 is a reference to the weekly Sabbath of the Decalogue. Du Preez looks at Old Testament texts that list sets of Jewish holy day classifications and concludes that St. Paul is merely teaching against the animal sacrifices that are associated with this list of holy days. He confines his discussion only to Colossians 2:14-17, ignoring the problems associated with the Hebrew linguistics of Genesis and Exodus which rule out the possibility of a Sabbath commandment at Creation and that Sabbath observance is dependent on the ordinance of circumcision. Du Preez' pivotal argument is invalidated by the research of Evangelical scholars. He ignores the extreme difficulty with the concept that St. Paul would be teaching the first Christians not to judge each other on the basis of whether or not they were offering animal sacrifices on Jewish holy days.

2009 – The Church has beefed up its propaganda campaign to defend Ellen White, but it is unable to defend the Sabbath doctrine in any kind of meaningful way. The only defense for the Sabbath “left” to Adventists is that it supposedly was given to the entire world at Creation— an argument invalidated by the Hebrew linguistics of the Creation story in Genesis, Exodus 16, and Exodus 20, as well as the exegetical context of the Creation account itself. The propaganda effort to defend Ellen White seems to be focused on technicalities and ignores the problem that she told a falsehood when she claimed direct, divine inspiration from God for the things she copied! A visit to www.ellenwhite.info will give you an excellent sampling of this propaganda. Here are some highlights:

Her nearly total plagiarism of Conybeare and Howson's book on the life of the Apostle Paul, which Ellen White called **Sketches from the Life of Paul**, is defended with the excuse that copyright laws were different in her day and that the **Conybeare and Howson** book was in the public domain. There is no mention of the fact that she claimed in her introduction to the book that God had revealed this information to her in vision.

Her accusation of plagiarism of multiple sources for the **Desire of Ages** is defended with a few short comparison clips and the explanation that her critics make too much out of the similarities they noticed. This fanciful defense is in total denial of the Seventh-day Adventist Church's official eight-year study of plagiarism in this book by Dr. Fred Veltman, who, after eight years of exhaustive study at Church expense, said these things:

In practical terms, this conclusion declares that one is not able to recognize in Ellen White's writings on the life of Christ any general category of content or catalog of ideas that is unique to her. We found source parallels for theological, devotional, narrative, descriptive, and spiritual materials, whether in reference to biblical or extra-biblical content.

QUESTION - “How do you harmonize Ellen White's use of sources with her statements to the contrary? Do you think the introductory statement to *The Great Controversy* constitutes an adequate admission of literary dependence?”

ANSWER - I must admit at the start that in my judgment this is the most serious problem to be faced in connection with Ellen White's literary dependency. **It strikes at the heart of her honesty, her integrity, and therefore her trustworthiness.** . . . As of now I do not have - nor, to my knowledge, does anyone else have - a satisfactory answer to this important question. The statement from *The Great Controversy* comes rather late in her writing career and is too limited in its reference to historians and reformers. Similar admissions do not appear as prefaces to all her writings in which sources are involved, and there is no indication that this particular statement applies to her writings in general.

See: truthorfables.com/Desire_of_Ages_Veltman.htm

Therefore, www.ellenwhite.info fails to disclose that the real problem with Ellen White's wholesale copying of Conybeare and Howson's book, *Sketches from the Life of Paul*, in that she lied when she claimed that God directly revealed this information to her when she actually copied it from a human source.

2009 – The first Seventh-day Adventists members are disfellowshipped by the Church for their belief in the lunar Sabbath concept. These are members in the Upper Columbia Conference, the same conference whose pastors had listened to Andrews University professor, Jacques Doukhan concede in a worker's meeting that the Bible calendar— the lunar calendar—would cause the Sabbath to fall at other times than it does according to a fixed calendar.

2010 – Robert Folkenberg Jr., son of the former General Conference President and at the time president of the Upper Columbia Conference, summons the Vornholts to a meeting and offers them three options: (1) Cease to believe in the lunar Sabbath and believe again in the fixed Sabbath. (2) Withdraw their memberships. (3) Be disfellowshipped. On May 25, 2010, the Vornholts were disfellowshipped.

2010 - The arrest of former 3ABN president **Tommy Shelton** is announced by Fairfax County, Virginia Police on March 16, 2010, following a two-year investigation of allegations that he molested children while pastoring churches previous to 2004. Subsequently, Tommy Shelton pleads guilty to child molestation on July 19, 2010. However, we note that the molestations did not take place in Seventh-day Adventist Churches.

2016 - The date suggested by the “sanctified speculation” of contemporary prophetic analyst, Darren Jack, as what might be the beginning of a seven-year “time of trouble” for our world and which is centered on the events that involve the Islamic anti-Christ and the Nation of Israel. In this year Turkey was transformed into an Islamic state by a dictator who had stated his intent to re-establish the Caliphate and to be the caliph himself. This person, Erdogan, has attacked Syria and has gathered his army the border of Israel near the Golan Heights where one of the largest oil reserves in the world is hidden beneath its sands. The armies of Russia, The United States, Libya, Israel, and Hezbollah are focused on this one point. 2016 does look like a significant year now that we understand that Israel is to endure until the End of Time as a sovereign nation and the anti-Christ is Islam-- not the pope of Rome. This date is determined by the understanding that the 70th week consisted of seven years. There has to be a period of something like seven years of trouble before the period of time known as the Day of the Lord begins.

2016 (October) - An Islamic cleric under the Turkish dictator, Erdogan, issues a public statement that when Turkey re-establishes the Caliphate, the Caliphate will work toward rebuilding the “Prophet” Solomon’s Temple. Recall that Erdogan has declared his intent to re-establish the Caliphate and to be the caliph. This Islamic cleric points out that Islamic prophecy has foretold this event, that Jewish prophecies have foretold this event, and that Christians have labeled the caliph as the anti-Christ. (See the last chapter in this book, our prophetic up-date, for documentation.)

2023 - The date suggested by the “sanctified speculation” of contemporary prophetic analyst, Darren Jack, as the beginning of the period of time known as The Day of the Lord. It is the last date in history that can be surmised by a study of Daniel and Revelation’s prophetic time periods if his assumptions are correct. Under Darren Jack’s theory, the 70th week of the 70-week prophetic period is cut off from the previous time period of 69 weeks. If 2023 is possibly the beginning of the Time of the Lord, counting back seven years takes us to 2016, which might be the beginning of the Time of Trouble. The prophecies of Daniel and other of the major and minor prophets of Israel do not clearly define what the Day of the Lord will be in any kind of detail. **688 + 1,335 years = 2023** is determined by taking Daniel’s last statement, in Daniel 12, that he who endures to the end of the 1,335 days will be blessed and starting the prophecy in 688 AD, the year that Islamic authorities denied Jews access to the Temple Mount and the Dome of the Rock, was built over the site that the Muslims thought the Jewish temple had once stood.

=====

After reviewing the extent of deception of the Church from the very beginning of the Advent Movement, it is difficult to comprehend why “truth” needs so many lies to protect and defend it. We now know that, not only did Adventist leaders cover-up the truth about the impossibilities of the Sabbath Doctrine, the fraudulent claims of Ellen White, and the absurdities of the Doctrine of the Investigative Judgment, but they also misused the writings of their own prophetess to force the Church into submission regarding legalism. It should not come as any surprise then, that the Adventist leaders, since the unprecedented events of 1995 in regard to **The Worldwide Church of God**, have shown no interest whatsoever in fundamental doctrinal reform.

While there seems to be corruption of one degree or another in Christian churches, the degree of it in Adventism and Armstrongism is way out of proportion to their relatively small sizes. This phenomenon of Adventism and Armstrongism is consistent with our view that when church leaders have to live a life of hypocrisy on a day-to-day basis— knowing that almost nothing they teach is the truth— an environment favorable to the development of moral and financial corruption is created.

The information on the Salamanca Vision has been taken from *Adventist Currents*, September 1986.

CHAPTER SEVEN

ELLEN MAKES BILLIONS FOR THE CHURCH WITH HER UN-BIBLICAL TITHING DOCTRINE

Kerry Wynne

ELLEN MAKES BILLIONS FOR THE CHURCH WITH HER UN-BIBLICAL TITHING DOCTRINE

Be sure to set aside a tenth of all that your fields produce each year. Eat the tithe of your grain, new wine and oil, and the firstborn of your herds and flocks in the presence of the LORD your God at the place he will choose as a dwelling for his Name, so that you may learn to revere the LORD your God always. But if that place is too distant and you have been blessed by the LORD your God and cannot carry your tithe (because the place where the LORD will choose to put his Name is so far away), then exchange your tithe for silver, and take the silver with you and go to the place the LORD your God will choose. Use the silver to buy whatever you like: cattle, sheep, wine or other fermented drink, or anything you wish. Then you and your household shall eat there in the presence of the LORD your God and rejoice. And do not neglect the Levites living in your towns, for they have no allotment or inheritance of their own. —Deut. 14:22 through Deut. 14:29 (NIV)

The Seventh-day Adventist Church is the biggest “little” Church in the world. Adventists are known for giving more money per capita than the members of any other denomination. Its business operations span the globe with churches, publishing houses, food factories, hospitals, colleges, and universities. It operates a world-wide social services agency, the Adventist Development and Relief Agency (ADRA), which, itself, takes in more money each year than the Church receives from all other sources combined. The Church's combined business operations require a bureaucracy of many thousands of church employees and leaders.

There are other Sabbatarian denominations, but none of them have turned their belief system into a lasting income creating machine like the Seventh-day Adventists. The Worldwide Church of God did so on a smaller scale and for a much shorter period of time, and for largely the same reasons, but better world communications made it more difficult for its false prophet to get away with his deceptions. We reason, then, that it is the Adventist belief that Ellen White is a true prophet of God that is responsible for the financial success of Adventism, and we view this as a crime because SDA leaders know, and have known for a very long time, that her prophetic claims were false. The story of the coming together of the Adventist money-making machine is an interesting study of deception itself.

In the first years of Adventism, the business model chosen to finance the Church was conceived by James White and called “**Systematic Benevolence**.” James’ system was adopted by the Advent believers after Ellen White was “shown” “in vision” that it was the system God wanted for His Church. Interestingly, the Whites rejected the twisted and non-biblical “Levitical” tithing system that the Church would adopt later because it was thought to be insufficient to fund the grand scale of “the work.”

“**We do not urge the Israelitish tithing system** as embracing the whole duty of the believers in the third [angel's] message....That system was necessary in God's plan of the Levitical priesthood; but in closing message presents a far greater call for something of the kind.” *R&H, April 9, 1861, p. 164.* [Cited in Sanders, TITHING NOT A LAW FOR CHRISTIANS at www.truthorfables.com]

Editor's note: “but in closing message presents a far greater call...” James White is referring to an article about giving that appeared in an Adventist Movement publication for which we do not have a reference and which may have been lost to scholars by now.

The Systematic Benevolence system, however, proved to be a failure in generating enough income to fund the visionary plans of the Whites for the Church. Apparently the angel who showed Ellen White that the Systematic Benevolence plan was the one he wanted for the Church was lying about the plan’s potential for success. Ironically, it was D.M. Canright who introduced the so-called “Levitical” tithing system that has made the Seventh-day Adventist Church the biggest little money-making Church of all time:

Dudley M. Canright: in a series of articles in 1876, **emphasized Malachi 3:8-11** as “the Bible plan of supporting the Ministry.” **He urged Adventists to adopt this plan** to glorify God.... *R&H, February 17, 1876, p. 50, 51. See also Spectrum 1986, Adventist Tithesaying— the Untold Story, p. 139.* [Cited in Robert K. Sanders, “Tithing Not a Law for Christians”]

A little common sense should tell us that the True God could not say that both systems were the best one, but, sure enough, Ellen White’s angelic “guide” gave her a second vision “showing” her that the “Levitical” tithing system developed by D.M.

Canright was the right plan for the Adventists. Neither system was Levitical, much less “biblical.” Perhaps the “god” who “blessed” D.M. Canright’s “Levitical” tithing system saw its potential to create financial corruption and misery for poor Adventist believers who would be moved by the deception of this lie to give up food for their children in order to pay their tithe. Canright’s system, “blessed” by Ellen White’s “god”, was so perverted from the biblical model of tithing that it could not have even been used in Israel during the Theocracy, much less than in the Christian dispensation! It appears these early Adventist leaders were so busy looking for biblical and historical evidence to prove that the Seventh-day Adventist Church was the one and only true church that they didn’t have time to study what the Bible actually taught about tithing and a host of other more important things. Their neglect created a monster, as we have seen. For now, let us consider what the Old Testament teaches about tithing and how Adventists unlawfully used, and continue to use, the threat of a non-existent Bible teaching in a hypocritical effort to separate Adventist believers from their hard-earned money. You will be amazed, later, to see how these Adventist leaders were using the tithe money back-handedly by the 1970’s to create personal gain for themselves!

THE LEVITICAL TITHING SYSTEM IN SCRIPTURE

by William H. Hohmann

A biblical tithe is defined as being the tenth of the increase of crops and livestock. These things are dependent upon the land, and under the economy of Israel, the land is what produced wealth. If Israel received rain in season, and the weather was favorable, the land produced abundantly, and all prospered. This reflected the blessings of God bestowed upon the people through the land.

If drought struck Israel, and the resultant shortage of food was extant, both people and livestock suffered, and the people did not prosper. There were other factors that could affect the production of food, such as foreign invasions where such forces devoured the produce and livestock of the land as they proceeded, and the ravages of insects and other pests such as mice, locusts and rats that could devastate the land. These things were perceived as God withholding His blessings due to the collective sins of the people.

The Israelites were commanded to tithe of the increase of their produce and livestock. This tithe was used, or distributed, in basically three ways:

Tithes were given to the Levites.

Tithes were given to the widow, orphan, poor, and destitute foreigner (stranger).

Tithe was used by the owner of the tithe at the festivals held in Jerusalem.

The post exilic Rabbis were confused by this division of the tithe, and concluded there were, instead, three separate tithes. To these rabbinical teachers of the law, everything had to be spelled out exactly, and the ambiguity of the tithe law as codified did not fit their sensibilities. It also appears that there was some heavy early editing of the Scriptures related to tithing.

These are the same Rabbis that are identified in Scripture as the ones who added their own twists to the law, making many points of law overly burdensome. Is it any wonder therefore that they would conclude there were three tithes, taking up to 30% of the increase of those who grew crops and raised livestock?

When the Scriptures surrounding tithing are examined, these three ways the tithe were allocated and used include the support of the Levites! Were the Levites triple-dipping their fellow Israelites?

[Ed. Note: Remember that the tithe the Israelites paid was only on agricultural products— not their incomes from employment or trades. Also, keep in mind that we are talking about the rabbinical twisting of the tithing laws rather than the tithing laws as set forth in the Torah. – K. Wynne]

There was only one tithe. If there were two tithes, or three tithes, then, instead of 10% of one’s increase, it was actually 20% or 30%! Imagine your government informing you, as a parallel, that they were going to tax your income at the rate of, say, 15%, but then informed you that you were required to pay three income taxes! You may well complain, and they would respond with, “hey, your “tax” is only 15%, quit griping!

In this light, look at how a person’s tithes were to be handled in the third year:

At the end of three years thou shalt bring forth all the tithe of thine increase the same year, and shalt lay it up within thy gates: And the Levite, (because he hath no part nor inheritance with thee,) and the stranger, and the fatherless, and the widow, which are within thy gates, shall come, and shall eat and be satisfied; that the LORD thy God may bless thee in all the work of thine hand which thou doest. — Deut. 14:28-29

When thou hast made an end of tithing all the tithes of thine increase the third year, which is the year of tithing, and hast given it unto the Levite, the stranger, the fatherless, and the widow, that they may eat within thy gates, and be filled; — Deuteronomy 26:12

In the third year, the tithe was to be brought to the gates of whatever city one was near to, and provided to the poor, and also to the Levites who shared in the tithe the other two years.

In many respects, the law was ambiguous when it came to how the person with a tithe was to divide it up. Perhaps this was intentional. A land owner who controlled the basis of nearly all wealth had to decide how generous or how stingy he was going to be in relation to the Levites and poor of the land. A land owner with much in the way of crops and/or livestock, along with his family, could only consume so much of the tithe of their land at the festivals held in Jerusalem. Those, then, who had much could give much from that tithe of the land.

Those who had little may well have only been able to give a little.

In this regard, consider the command not to harvest the corners of one's fields:

And when ye reap the harvest of your land, thou shalt not make clean riddance of the corners of thy field when thou reapest, neither shalt thou gather any gleaning of thy harvest: thou shalt leave them unto the poor, and to the stranger: I am the LORD your God. — Leviticus 23:22

How far in from the corners did this entail? If the land owner wanted to be generous, he could leave a large corner, for example. But also note the purpose of leaving the corners and gleaning was so that the poor of the land could go there and collect food for themselves to eat. So tithing was not the only means whereby the poor attained sustenance. Could this then have been a test designed by God to search out a land owner's heart? The law said to give a portion of his tithe to the poor. How much was left up to the owner of the tithe. How much of the corners of his fields he left for them was also up to him. Merely complying with the law did not reveal the heart of a person. Their behavior outside the confines of the law could.

These, then, were some of the things that were performed by those who owned land wherein they raised livestock and produce from the ground and their responsibilities in relation to the rest of the people.

In regard to all these instructions, God made this statement, more than once:

Now therefore hearken, O Israel, unto the statutes and unto the judgments, which I teach you, for to do them, that ye may live, and go in and possess the land which the LORD God of your fathers giveth you. Ye shall not add unto the word which I command you, neither shall ye diminish ought from it, that ye may keep the commandments of the LORD your God which I command you. — Deuteronomy 4:1-2

What thing soever I command you, observe to do it: thou shalt not add thereto, nor diminish from it. — Deuteronomy 12:32

This last citation comes from a chapter in Deuteronomy where God addresses the Israelites in regards to tithes. So now the logical question that is raised by all this— Why do so many churches, especially Seventh-day Adventists, violate the very law they claim was not to be altered even down to jots and tittles, and to which God specifically commanded in relation to the tithing law that it was to be observed as commanded; that no one was to “add thereto, nor diminish from it?”

Tithes were never commanded of the people based on their income. Only those who had crops and/or livestock tithed.

Jesus had an interesting observation in relation to this sort of behavior:

This people draweth nigh unto us with their mouth, and honoureth us with their lips; but their heart is far from us. But in vain they do worship us, teaching for doctrines the commandments of men. —

Is demanding tithes of people based on their wages biblical? No! But they have their excuses; their rationales for altering the same law they claim is unalterable down to jots and tittles as well as the tithing law that was commanded by God not to be added to or anything taken away from. Even a bank robber has his rationale and excuses.

The most common rationale put forth for altering the unalterable is to claim the change in circumstances today:

“There is no Levitical priesthood to give tithes to. We live at a time where we no longer have an agrarian society.”

What sort of society did we have in 1888 when the SDA produced their version of the tithing law that they commanded of the members, upon pain of eternal damnation should they not tithe? An agrarian society! They were not interested in livestock and produce. Adventist leaders were, and still are, interested only in money. Furthermore they are not interested in you sharing your tithes among the widow and orphan and the poor. They want it all. Oh, they may throw a bone to an occasional widow and orphan all right, but it was never the responsibility of the Levites to turn around and give the poor of the tithe they were given; it was up to the individual whose tithe it was to begin with.

What does a wolf want? How would a wolf go about getting it? Would a wolf, disguised as a minister of God, resort to dire warnings of what will happen to you should you fail to tithe of your wages to them? Would they resort to claims of faithlessness on your part?

Adventists have rationalized, perhaps in the name of adapting the so-called “principles” of the Old Testament tithing laws to fit the culture of more modern, less agrarian-focused times; that they have the right to alter the teachings of Scripture to create a financial tool that brings in enough money to fund their aspirations for the “Work.” This tampering of Scripture is hypocritical because Adventists, citing Daniel 7:25, accuse the papacy of being guilty of changing “times and laws” in regard to the so-called change of the Sabbath.

The apostle Paul made his case to the churches in I Corinthians that those who preached the Gospel had a right to live of the Gospel. They were entitled to support. But was this support through the Old Covenant law of tithing? No, for Paul does not use tithing as a justification, but rather the command not to muzzle the ox that treads out the grain as an analogy. Ministers were to be provided for through free will offerings, and not by compulsion. It can be a hard concept for many to understand, but once something is a requirement, then it is no longer done through faith and love. It is done out of fear of retribution.

Now Peter and John went up together into the temple at the hour of prayer, being the ninth hour. And a certain man lame from his mother's womb was carried, whom they laid daily at the gate of the temple which is called Beautiful, to ask alms of them that entered into the temple; Who seeing Peter and John about to go into the temple asked an alms. And Peter, fastening his eyes upon him with John, said, Look on us. And he gave heed unto them, expecting to receive something of them. Then Peter said, Silver and gold have I none; but such as I have give I thee: In the name of Jesus Christ of Nazareth rise up and walk. — Acts 3:1-6

What would have been the circumstances here if the early church were indeed paying tithes of their wages to the ministry? Would Peter have been without gold or silver?

To claim the tithing law changed to accommodate the changing times is hypocrisy. If you level the false accusation against other Christians and their faith by demanding they explain how it is they could “change” the day of “worship” from the Sabbath to Sunday, while changing that same law yourself when it comes to tithing, it is the greatest expression of hypocrisy. If anything, you are more guilty than those who worship on Sundays, for nowhere in the Scriptures does it say the people were to gather on weekly Sabbaths for the sake of communal worship! The Christian law of Liberty allows believers to worship whenever and wherever they so desire.

Adventists have demonstrated themselves to be guilty of the very crimes they have charged against others. Even Jesus Christ commanded His followers not to make such condemnative judgments as Adventists do even now. The end result is to find yourself condemned by God for the things you condemned in others.

CHAPTER EIGHT

THE REMNANT: A LEXICAL AND EXEGETICAL ANALYSIS

Elce “Thunder” Lauriston

New to the 11th Edition

Elce "Thunder" Lauriston

New to the 11th Edition

Identifying the Last Days and the Remnant

The Seventh-day Adventists Position on the Remnant

The Seventh-day Adventist Church's "remnant church" concept denotes a faithful minority group of Christians (themselves), who stand over against the much larger body of Christians that make up apocalyptic "Babylon", the fallen churches.¹ On the basis of the historicist method of prophetic interpretation, which looks for specific historical events as the fulfillment of the apocalyptic visions, the "remnant" in Rev 12:17 is understood to be a symbolic description of the Seventh-day Adventist movement.² The three identifying marks of the "remnant church" are said to be its appearance in the end-time after 1798 (the end of the 1260 years of Papal persecution and supremacy), the 7th day (Saturday) Sabbath doctrine ("the commandments of God"), and the prophetic gift manifested by Ellen White ("the testimony of Jesus/the Spirit of Prophecy").³ For some, its minority status also seems to be an identifying mark.⁴ No other church except the Seventh-day Adventist Church has these features. Clifford Goldstein, a prominent Adventist apologist, posits that the Seventh-day Adventist Church has its remnant status because it has been given a "fuller revelation of Jesus Christ" and it has been given "far more light than any other faith." He states:

No matter how much hypocrisy, compromise, sin, and apostasy there may be in this movement, it has been blessed with a fuller revelation of Christ and of present truth than any other corporate faith.What's crucial is that the Seventh-day Adventist Church, like ancient Israel, has been given far more light than any other faith, and that light alone gives it corporate remnant status.⁵

Goldstein further argues that no amount of wickedness or immorality within the Church can relegate it from its remnant status:

Indeed, however pathetic--even "wretched, miserable, poor, blind, and naked"--we are, the Adventist church remains the remnant church, if for no other reason than it possesses the remnant truth. No matter how many child molesters, libertines, hypocrites, fanatics, or other unconverted degenerates suck the power and spirit out of the body, we are still corporately the remnant because we alone have the remnant truth. And it is ultimately truth, not holiness, that distinguishes God's corporate remnant people today just as it did in the days of ancient Israel.⁶

Ellen White had set the stage for such exclusivist mentality when she wrote,

In a special sense Seventh-day Adventists have been set in the world as watchmen and light bearers. To them has been entrusted the last warning for a perishing world. On them is shining wonderful light from the word of God. They have been given a work of the most solemn import--the proclamation of the first, second, and third angels' messages. There is no other work of so great importance. They are to allow nothing else to absorb their attention. The most solemn truths ever entrusted to mortals have been given us to proclaim to the world. The proclamation of these truths is to be our work.⁷

She opines further that the Seventh day Adventist Church is the only object on earth on which Christ bestows His supreme regard:

We should remember that the church, enfeebled and defective though it be, is the only object on earth on which Christ bestows His supreme regard. He is constantly watching it with solicitude, and is

1 Ministerial Association General Conference of SDA, *Seventh-day Adventists Believe* (Boise, ID: Pacific Press Publishing Association, 1988, 2005), 192-197.

2 Angel M. Rodriguez, *Toward A Theology of the Remnant*, unpubl. MS (2000, rev. 2002), 226. (<http://www.adventistbiblicalresearch.org/remnantSDAchurch.org>)

3 *Seventh-day Adventists Believe*, 190-191.

4 Rodriguez, *Toward A Theology of the Remnant*, 180.

5 Clifford Goldstein, *The Remnant: Biblical Reality Or Wishful Thinking?* (Boise, ID: Pacific Press Pub. Assn., 1994), 78.

6 Goldstein, *The Remnant: Biblical Reality Or Wishful Thinking?*, 98.

7 Ellen G. White, *Testimonies for the Church* Vol. 9, p.19

In the clearest term and language, Ellen White expressed that the Seventh day Adventist Church is the “remnant church” and it stands in contradistinction from the “apostate churches.”

The remnant church will be brought into great trial and distress. Those who keep the commandments of God and the faith of Jesus, will feel the ire of the dragon and his hosts. Satan numbers the world as his subjects; he has gained control of the apostate churches; but here is a little company that are resisting his supremacy.⁹

The official position of the Seventh-day Adventist Church on its remnant theology reads as follows:

The universal church is composed of all who truly believe in Christ, but in the last days, a time of widespread apostasy, a remnant has been called out to keep the commandments of God and the faith of Jesus. This remnant announces the arrival of the judgment hour, proclaims salvation through Christ, and heralds the approach of His second advent. This proclamation is symbolized by the three angels of Revelation 14; it coincides with the work of judgment in heaven and results in a work of repentance and reform on earth. Every believer is called to have a personal part in this worldwide witness.¹⁰

A. A Brief Overview of the Remnant

Despite these exclusive, dogmatic, and arrogant claims, the book of Revelation and the entire New Testament presents a different teaching and understanding of the concept of the remnant. A study of the remnant idea in the book of Revelation reveals that the “remnant” are the true end-time followers of the Lamb (14:4) who remain faithful to Him amidst widespread apostasy and persecution (14:12-13). They can be identified by their loyalty to the Word and will of God (“the commandments of God”) and to the testimony of Jesus Christ (“the faith/testimony of/in Jesus”, which is, “the spirit of prophecy” (19:10)). Their patient endurance (14:12) qualifies them as ‘overcomers’ (21:7) who will enter the Holy City (22:14). This remnant concept is presented in the New Testament and the Apocalypse as the vast majority of faithful believers who form the universal body of Christ.

B. When is the Last Days?

Like the New Testament as a whole, the Apocalypse has an eschatological perspective that considers the present as “the last days”, which span the time between the First and the Second Advent of Christ. A careful reading of Scripture will reveal that Jesus’ first Advent ushered in the “last days.” In Malachi 4:5 we read, “Behold, I will send you Elijah the prophet before the great and awesome day of the LORD comes.” This great and dreadful day of the Lord will be ushered by the coming of “Elijah”. In Matthew 11, in no ambiguous terms, Jesus makes it absolutely clear that John the Baptist was “Elijah” who was to come. Matt. 11: 13-14: “For all the Prophets and the Law prophesied until John, ¹⁴and if you are willing to accept it, he is Elijah who is to come.” Elijah, John the Baptist, did come, therefore, the “great and dreadful day of the Lord” came by Jesus first Advent. The Apostles and writers of the New Testament understood this eschatological perspective and unanimously spoke of their day as the last days. Consider these scriptural passages:

"For these are not drunk, as you suppose, for it is just the third hour of the day. ¹⁶ "But this is what was spoken by the prophet Joel: ¹⁷ "And it shall be in the last days," says God, "that I will pour out My Spirit on all flesh, and your sons and your daughters shall prophesy; and your young men shall see visions, and your old men shall dream dreams; ¹⁸ and on My menservants and on My maidservants I will pour out My Spirit in those days; and they shall prophesy. ¹⁹ And I will give wonders in the heaven above, and signs on the earth below, blood and fire and vapor of smoke. ²⁰ The sun shall be turned into darkness, and the moon into blood, before the coming of the great and magnificent Day of the Lord. ²¹ And it shall be that everyone who calls on the name of the Lord shall be saved." - Acts 2:15-20 (cf. Joel 2:28-32).

“And that, knowing the time, that now it is high time to awake out of sleep: for now is our salvation nearer than when we believed. ¹² The night is far spent, the day is at hand: let us therefore cast off the

⁸ White, *Last Day Events*, p.58

⁹ White, *Christian Service*, p.157

¹⁰ *Seventh-day Adventists Believe*, “The Remnant and Its Mission”, 181

works of darkness, and let us put on the armour of light.” - Rom.13:11-12

“Now all these things happened unto them for ensamples: and they are written for our admonition, upon whom the ends of the world are come. ¹² Wherefore let him that thinks he stands take heed lest he fall.” - 1 Cor. 10:11-12

“But the Spirit explicitly says, that in latter times some shall fall away from the faith, giving heed to deceiving spirits and doctrines of demons” - 1Tim 4:1

“But know this, that in the last days perilous times shall come.” - 2Tim 3:1

“God, who at various times and in various ways spoke in time past to the fathers by the prophets, ² has in these last days spoken to us by His Son, whom He has appointed heir of all things, through whom also He made the worlds....” - Heb. 1:1-2

“since it would have been necessary for Him to suffer often since the foundation of the world; but now, once at the consummation of the ages, He has appeared to put away sin through the sacrifice of Himself.” - Heb. 9:26

“Listen now, you rich, weep and howl at your miseries which are coming upon you! ² Your riches have decayed, and your garments have become moth-eaten. ³ Your gold and silver have become corroded, and their poison will be a witness against you and will eat your flesh like fire. You stored up treasure in the last days.” - Jam 5:1-3

“Therefore be patient, brothers, until the coming of the Lord. See how the farmer awaits for the precious fruit of the earth, being patient for it, until it receives the early and late rains. ⁸ You also be patient. Establish your hearts, for the coming of the Lord has drawn near.” - Jam 5:7-8

“knowing that you were not redeemed with corruptible things, like silver or gold, from your futile way of life handed down from your forefathers, ¹⁹ but with the precious blood of Christ, as of a lamb blameless and spotless, ²⁰ having been foreknown indeed before the foundation of the world, He was made manifest in these last times for you.” - 1 Peter 1:18-20

“Now the end of all things is at hand; therefore be of sound mind and self-controlled in your prayers.” - 1Pet. 4:7

“This already, beloved, is the second letter I write to you, in both of which I stir up your pure mind by a reminder, ² to remember the words having been previously spoken by the holy prophets, and the commandment of your apostles of the Lord and Savior; ³ knowing this first: that mockers will come in the last days, walking according to their own lusts, ⁴ and saying, "Where is the promise of His coming? For since the fathers fell asleep, all things continue just as it was from the beginning of creation."” - 2Pet.3:1-4

“Little children, it is the last hour; and just as you have heard that the Antichrist is coming, even now many antichrists have appeared; from this we know that it is the last hour.” - 1 John 2:18

“But you, beloved, remember the words which were spoken beforehand by the apostles of our Lord Jesus Christ, ¹⁸ how they told you that in the last time there would be mockers, walking according to their own ungodly lusts.” - Jude 17-18

“Blessed is he who reads and those who hear the words of this prophecy, and who keep the things having been written in it; for the time is near.” - Rev.1:3

As we read these passages, it is obvious to see that Jesus Christ brought in the eschaton. His coming brought the “last days”, and all of the New Testament authors unanimously recognized and spoke of this, considered their days to be the last days. This fact alone already rules out the Seventh-day Adventist concept of 1798 being the last days.

John Robinson in his book *Redating the New Testament*, demonstrates that the New Testament was completed by the close of the first century AD.¹¹ We can conclude from these observations that the Body of Christ has been in the last days for the past 2,000 years! With this in mind, consequently, all true followers of Christ through the ages until the Second Advent are

considered to be the “remnant” church. Richard Lehmann shares a similar sentiment by stating, “If the theme of the remnant is central to the book of Revelation, it is because the book is addressed to the church. As such, it addresses the remnant of all ages, those who have constituted the true people of God, the church as the body of Christ.”¹² An observation of the congruence of the “remnant” in Rev 12:17 with the “great multitude” of the redeemed in Rev. 7 sufficiently confirms this conclusion.

In the Apocalypse, we see only two groups; the followers of the Lamb (Rev.7:14, 12:10-11, 14:4, 15:2) and the worshippers of the beast (Rev.13:15-17, 14:11, 16:2, 19:20). Undoubtedly, there is only one true church called the “remnant” to which all of God’s people belong, even those who are still in “Babylon” (18:4). Nowhere in the Apocalypse do we find a third group besides apostate “Babylon” and faithful “Jerusalem”. Therefore, if one seeks to confine the “remnant” to a visible church entity, such as the Seventh-day Adventist Church, then one needs to postulate a much larger body of true Christians (“the universal church”), of which Adventists, “the remnant church”, may only be a part. In Revelation 12, the “woman” denotes the people of God, not as individual believers, but in a collective sense as in Gal 4:26, where “Jerusalem that is above” is called by Paul, “the mother of all of us”. According to John, the “woman” is the “mother” of the Male Child (Jesus) and the rest are called “the remnant of her seed” (12:17 KJV) or “the rest of her offspring” (NKJV, RSV, NIV, NEB). The remnant are the children of “her seed”, which is Jesus. If the “remnant” are the children of Jesus, how absurd and arrogant it would be for Adventists to think that they are exclusively Jesus’ children to the exclusion of all other Christians, past, present, and future! Nowhere does the Apocalypse depict the faithful “remnant church” as a minority group among the woman’s “seed” other (unfaithful) children.

J. Ramsey Michaels observes this poignant point,

The woman’s “offspring” in the first instance is Christ (12:5), but the focus of attention is not on the conflict between the dragon and Christ (which is in the past), but on the conflict between the dragon’s “offspring” (not yet identified) and the followers of Christ, those who obey God’s commandments and hold to the testimony of Jesus.¹³ In light of this, the question must be asked, “Who are the remnant?” Undoubtedly, the remnant is the universal Body of Christ, past, present, and future, which consists of all faithful believers throughout the ages until the Second Advent.

A. The Remnant: A lexical Study

Rev 12:17 (EMTV) - “And the dragon was enraged with the woman, and he went off to make war with the rest of her seed, who keep the commandments of God and have the testimony of Jesus.”

The Greek word used for rest/remnant here is *οι λοιποι* (*hoi loipoi*) which literally means “the others” or “the remaining ones”. Without exception, this term is used in the New Testament in a comparison between two groups, whereby “the ones” are set over against “the others, the remaining ones”. Interestingly, the idea of a small rest or minority is not a part of its meaning. In fact, in nearly all instances, “the rest/remnant” forms the majority! In the phrase in Rev. 12:17 “*μετα των λοιπων του σπερματος αυτης*” “*των λοιπων*” is plural and should literally be translated “with the remaining ones of her offspring” or “with the vast majority of her offspring”. I find it rather conniving and deceptive that the Seventh-day Adventist Church translates and interprets this phrase as singular when it is clearly plural in the Greek. The Adventist Church shoddily does this by transferring an Old Testament definition to a New Testament concept.¹⁴ Suffice me to demonstrate that lexically, “*οι λοιποι*” is always the vast majority. This word is used 41 times in the New Testament, however, only some passages will be used to illustrate my point. In the following passages, “*οι λοιποι*” is the word that is used:

- the two invitees who rejected coming to the wedding vs. the rest who seized and killed the king’s servants (Matt. 22:5-6)
- the cares of this world and deceptiveness of riches vs. the other desires that choke the Word (Mk 4:19)
- worrying about food and clothing vs. anxiety over other things (Lk 12:26)
- the two disciples of Emmaus vs. the other disciples of Jesus (Mk 16:12-13)
- Mary Magdalene, Joanna, & Susanna vs. many other women who provided for Jesus and His disciples (Lk 8:2-3)

¹² Richard Lehmann, “The Remnant in the Book of Revelation,” in *Towards a Theology of the Remnant*, 97; cf. 91-94.

¹³ J. Ramsey Michaels, vol. 20, *Revelation*, The IVP New Testament Commentary Series (Downers Grove, IL: InterVarsity Press, 1997), Rev. 12:17.

¹⁴ *Seventh-day Adventists Believe*, “What Is the Remnant?”, 190.

- the disciples of Jesus vs. the other listeners of Jesus (Lk 8:10)
- the pious Pharisee vs. the other (sinful) people (Lk 18:9, 11)
- the 11 disciples vs. the other disciples of Jesus (Lk 24:9)
- the Gentile Christians in Rome vs. the other Gentile believers (Rom 1:13)
- the believing Jews vs. the other (unbelieving) Jews (Rom. 11:7)
- the married Christians in Corinth vs. the other Christians (1 Cor. 7:10-12)
- how to properly eat the Lord's Supper vs. other matters (1 Cor. 11:34)
- the church in Corinth vs. the other churches (2 Cor. 12:13)
- the saints in Ephesus vs. the rest of the Gentiles (Eph.4:17)
- the believers vs. other people (unbelievers) (1 Thess. 4:13; 5:6)
- the letters of Paul vs. the other Scriptures (2 Pet. 3:16)

Sometimes, a single person stands over against a much larger "remnant/rest", as is demonstrated in the following texts:

- the soldier who sought to give Jesus a drink vs. the others who opposed (Matt. 27:48-49)
- Peter vs. the other apostles (Acts 2:37)
- the sick father of Publius vs. the other sick people of Malta (Acts 28:8-9)
- Paul vs. the other apostles (1 Cor. 9:5)
- Peter vs. the other Jewish Christians (Gal 2:11-13)
- Clemens vs. the other fellow workers of Paul (Phil. 4:3)

Only in one instance in the New Testament have I observed that "rest/remnant" does not form the majority and even in that instance, it depicts an equality of number. However, even in this instance, "rest/remnant" cannot be taken literally as it is used in a parabolic context;

- the five wise virgins vs. the other foolish virgins (Matt. 25:11)

From what has been proven so far, the remnant always forms the vast majority, therefore, no doubt should be left in anyone's mind that the remnant Church of Christ is not and cannot ever be a single denomination within Christendom. Rather, it is the believers of all the ages, spanning from the first century AD until the Second Advent of Christ. On this basis alone, we can already conclude that the Seventh-day Adventist Church's claim to be exclusively God's remnant church in these last days is untenable.

B. Use of Remnant/Rest in the Apocalypse

Within the Book of Revelation itself, we can ascertain the meaning of "remnant/rest" within the contexts with which it is used. The word "οἱ λοιποὶ" is used 8 times in the Apocalypse (Rev. 2:24, 3:2, 8:13, 9:20, 11:13, 12:17, 19:21, 20:5) and I find it rather interesting that they are all plural in the Greek. And just like the rest of its usage in the New Testament, in the Apocalypse "the ones" are compared against "the others", with "the others" constituting the majority:

- the church in Thyatira vs. the rest in Thyatira (2:24)
- the dead church of Sardis vs. the rest that are about to die (3:1-2)
- the sound of the 4th Angel vs. the remaining sounds of the 3 Angels (8:13)

- One-third of mankind vs. the rest of mankind (9:18, 20)
- the seven thousand killed by the earthquake vs. the living rest who glorified God (11:13)
- the persecution of the woman and her Son vs. the persecution of the rest of her children (12:17)
- the Beast and false prophet being thrown in the Lake of Fire vs. the rest being killed by the sword (19:21)
- the souls of the faithful martyrs living and reigning with Christ for a 1000 yrs. vs. the rest of the dead not living until the 1000 yrs. expiration (20:4-5)

By the Apocalypse's usage of "rest/remnant" in the plural, as well as its consistency in always forming the majority, no arbitrary, scholastic dishonesty should be made to make the "remnant" of Revelation 12:17 the minority or a single denomination, namely the Seventh-day Adventist Church. The concept of remnant in the New Testament is always the vast majority. There is no way of getting around that!

The Remnant: Marks of Its Identity

The Commandments of God

In Revelation 12:17, the Seventh-day Adventist Church finds its *raison d'être* - reason for existence. In this text, it finds two marks of identification of the remnant that it applies to itself, namely, those who "keep the commandments of God" and "have the testimony of Jesus" which is "the spirit of prophecy" (19:10). The "commandments of God" are said to refer to the Ten Commandments, and in a special sense the 7th day (Saturday) Sabbath, and the "testimony of Jesus/ the spirit of prophecy" is said to refer to the ministry and writings of Ellen G. White.¹⁵ In fact, one has to vow that one believes in Ellen G. White and her writings before one is accepted into Seventh-day Adventist Church membership and fellowship.¹⁶ Furthermore, one has to also vow that one believes and accepts that "the Seventh-day Adventist Church is the remnant church of Bible prophecy and that people of every nation, race, and language are invited and accepted into its fellowship...."¹⁷ However, exegetical analysis of this text along with the overarching theme of the Apocalypse and the New Testament in general, reveals a different picture. We already established that remnant or rest in this text is plural and always forms the majority. We will now focus on the phrases "commandments of God" and "testimony of Jesus." The Greek word for "commandments" that is used in the phrase "commandments of God" is *εντολη* (*entole*) and it means an order, a command, a charge, an instruction, an injunction, a precept, and an authoritative prescription.¹⁸ It is used in a variety of ways in the New Testament and connotes various things, however, it is never used to mean or connote the Ten Commandment Law exclusively. The Greek word that almost always refers to the Old Testament Law consisting of 613 commandments, which includes the Ten Commandments, is *νομος* and it is not used in this passage nor in the entire Apocalypse for that matter. Here are some ways *εντολη* is used:

- of official decrees (John 11:57)
- of persons in high position (father to son - Luke 15:29, Apostles to believers -Acts 17:15, Col.4:10)
- of Jewish myths and prevaricate teachings (Tit. 1:14)
- of specific commandments of the OT Law (Luke 23:56, Rom.7:8-9, Heb. 7:18, 9:19)
- of ceremonial commands of the OT Law (Heb.7:5, 16, 18)
- the plural often stands for the totality of the legal ordinances of the OT Law (Mat. 5:19, 19:17, Mk 10:19, Luke 18:20)
- of single commandments (Eph. 6:2, Mat. 22:36, 38, Mk 10:5, Rom. 13:9)

¹⁵ P. Gerard Damsteegt, *Foundations of the Seventh-day Adventist Message and Mission* (Berrien Springs, MI: Andrews University Press, 1988, 1990, 1995, and on demand), 243.

¹⁶ The Secretariat, General Conference of Seventh-day Adventists, *Seventh-day Adventist Church Manual* (Doral, FL: Inter-American Division Publishing Association, 2005, 2007), 32.

¹⁷ Ibid, 32.

¹⁸ Joseph H. Thayer, *Thayer's Greek-English Lexicon of the New Testament 8th Edition* (Peabody, MA: March 2007), 218.

-of Divine commands (1 Cor. 7:19, 1John 3:23, 4:21)

-of God's commands to Christ (John 10:18, 14:31, 15:10)

-of the commands of Jesus (John 13:34-35, 14:15, 21, 15:10, 12, 1 Cor. 14:37)

-collectively, the whole body of the moral precepts of Christianity/ the whole Christian Religion becomes a command/the New Law (1 Tim. 6:11-14, 2 Pet.2:20-21, 3:1-2)

Given the various uses of *εντολη* in the New Testament, it cannot be referring to the Ten Commandment Law here. The most reasonable meaning for "commandments of God" in this text would be the whole body of Christian precepts and moral commands because exegetically and contextually, the subject of Revelation 12 is Jesus Christ and the Christian Church. Another reason the phrase "commandments of God" in this text cannot be referring to the Ten Commandments and the Sabbath is the fact that the Old Covenant/the Law that God made with Israel, which is and includes the Ten Commandments, has been abrogated and is not binding on New Testament Christians. Let us consider such explicit teachings from these passages:

-The Ten Commandments are the Covenant between God and Israel (Ex. 24:12, 34:27-28, Deut. 4:13, 9:9)

-The Covenant was not made with the Patriarchs and Gentile Nations, only with Israel (Deut. 5:2-3, Neh. 9:13-14, Ps. 147:19-20, Rom. 9:3-4)

-If a stranger/Gentile wanted to enter into and keep the Covenant/Law, he had to be physically circumcised first (Ex.12:44, 48, Is. 56:6-7, Ez. 44:9, John 7:22-23)

-Physical circumcision is abolished in the in the New Testament (Rom.2:28-29, 1Cor.7:18-19, Gal.5:6, 6:15, Col.3:11)

-The Covenant/the Law by the time of the New Testament consisted of 613 commandments, 248 mandates and 365 prohibitions,¹⁹ of which Israel had to keep ALL (Ex. 19:8, Deut. 17:19, 27:26, 28:58-59, 29:29, 31:12, 32:46, 2 Chron. 33:8, Jam. 2:8, 10-11 cf. Lev.19:18, Ex.20:13-14)

-The Old Covenant/The Law/the Ten Commandments are abolished, abrogated, nailed to the Cross (Rom. 7:1-6, Gal. 4:21-31, 2 Cor. 3, Eph. 2:11-18, Col.2:11-17, Heb. 8:6-13)

-The New Testament Church/the New Israel of God is under a New Covenant with different and better stipulations and commandments (Matt. 26:26-28, 2 Cor. 3, Eph. 2:11-19, Phil.3:1-11, Heb. 7:22-27, Heb.8, 10:19-23, John 13:34-35, 14:15, 1 Cor.13, 1 John 3:23, 4:7-13, 20-21, 2 John 6-7 etc.)

For these two reasons and more, the phrase "commandments of God" in this text cannot be referring to the Ten Commandments nor the 7th day (Saturday) Sabbath. We will now explore what is meant by the "testimony of Jesus."

A. The Testimony of Jesus

The Seventh-day Adventist Church couples this phrase with Rev. 19:10, which says, "The testimony of Jesus is the spirit of prophecy", and believes it refers to the prophetic ministry of Ellen G. White and the gamut of her writings, which are affectionately referred to as the "Spirit of Prophecy".²⁰ Be that as it may, the question we want to answer is "what is the testimony of Jesus in this text?" The Greek word for testimony here is *μαρτυρια* (marturia) and its basic definitions are 1) a witnessing, a testifying, 2) a testifying of what one holds to be true, 3) evidence that one gives (before a judge), 4) evidence that one gives in support of one's faith, belief, etc.²¹ However, just like any other Greek word, its meaning has to be understood within the context with which it is used. Here are some meanings of *μαρτυρια* in different contexts:

-that which someone witnesses or states concerning a person or thing (Acts 22:18; 1 Tim. 3:7; Titus 1:13).

-the testimony of John the Baptist concerning Jesus (John 1:19; 5:36)

¹⁹ John F. MacArthur, Jr., *Romans*, MacArthur New Testament Commentary (Chicago: Moody Press, 1991), 366.

²⁰ *Seventh-day Adventists Believe*, "The Spirit of Prophecy in the Seventh-day Adventist Church", 255.

²¹ Zodhiates, Spiros, *The Complete Word Study Dictionary: New Testament*. electronic ed. (Chattanooga, TN: AMG Publishers, 2000)

- the declarations of Jesus concerning Himself (John 5:31; 8:13, 14)
- a declaration by a witness who speaks with the authority of one who knows (John 5:34; 3 John 1:1)
- the announcement of the gospel, the apostolic preaching of Christ as determined by the Apostle's testimony (Rev. 1:1-2)
- the office committed to the prophets of testifying concerning future events (1 Cor. 1:4-7, Rev. 11:3, 7)
- through the Holy Spirit, the Christian's blessed consciousness of currently possessing eternal life and of reconciliation with God obtained by baptism and the expiatory death of Christ (1 John 5:9-13), etc²²

With these varied meanings of μαρτυρία/testimony, what does it mean in this text? If we take a quick analysis of the passage and examine the persecution motif carried out by the dragon, the answer becomes very obvious. Firstly, the dragon sought to destroy the Male Child (Jesus) (v.2-5), and when that failed he then turned his wrath on the woman (v.6, 13-16), and when that failed too, he launched his attack on the rest of her seed (v.17) who are keeping God's commandments and the testimony of Jesus. Now if we look at verses 10 and 11, the "testimony of Jesus" is explicitly defined in this passage. "10 Then I heard a loud voice in heaven saying, "Now have come the salvation and the power and the kingdom of our God, and the authority of His Christ, because the accuser of our brothers, the one who accused them before our God day and night, has been thrown out of heaven. 11 And they overcame him by the blood of the Lamb and by the word of their testimony, and they did not love their lives to the death." Note carefully that the dragon accuses the brethren, he is enraged with the woman, and went to make war with the rest of her seed, but "they" that is, the objects of his accusations, anger, and war, namely, the brethren, the woman, and the rest of her seed "overcame him by the blood of the Lamb (Jesus) and by the word of their testimony (μαρτυρία)". "The blood of the Lamb" refers to Jesus' once and for all sacrifice for sins on the Cross (John 19:28-30, Heb.9:26-28, 1Pet.1:18-20), and "their testimony" is simply the witness they bore concerning Jesus who saved them by His sacrifice. Their acceptance of the all-sufficient, complete, atoning sacrifice of Jesus, their personal faith and trust in Jesus, and their testimony about Jesus, coupled with them not loving their lives to the death, namely, preferring to die rather than deny Jesus, enabled them to overcome the dragon. That is the testimony of Jesus in this passage! John, the author of Revelation, agrees with my exegetical conclusion, when he records that he was banished to the Isle of Patmos, whether under Nero's persecution in the late AD 60's or under Domitian in AD 95²³, "for the Word of God and for the testimony of Jesus Christ" (Rev.1:9). The Greek phrase here is "διὰ τον λόγον του θεού και διὰ την μαρτυρίαν Ιησού χριστού" is profound and greatly helps us to understand the similar phrase in chap. 12:17. When the preposition δια (dia) is used with the accusative case, it means "because of, on account of (stating a purpose)". In this text, δια is giving the reason for which the action (banishment) had taking place. In other words, John is saying that he suffered tribulation and was banished to the Isle of Patmos because of his resolute faith in the Word of God, namely, "keeping the commandments of God" (in 1 John 2:3-5, commandments of God is interchangeable with the word of God) and because of his personal testimony (μαρτυρία) about Jesus, that is, his faith and trust in, and witness about Jesus Christ. It is this personal faith and trust in, and witness about Jesus that is the "spirit of prophecy". To further elucidate this point, let me ask a question based on Rev.19:10. In that text the angel said to John, "...I am your fellow servant, and of your brothers who have the testimony of Jesus...", so here, the angel claims to possess the testimony of Jesus just like the "brothers" of John. So the question must be asked, do angels have faith and trust in Jesus and a witness about Jesus? The answer is a resounding yes! Angels and believers have the "testimony of Jesus" and this "testimony of Jesus" is not confined to a single individual, to the writings of that individual, nor to a single denomination. Every true believer in Christ has the testimony of Jesus (1 John 5:9-12). The universal Body of Christ from the first century AD until the Second Advent had and will continue to have the testimony of Jesus, the spirit of prophecy. If the Seventh-day Adventist Church cannot accept and understand this biblical truth, they run the risk of committing theological travesty and intellectual absurdity because wherever the phrase "testimony of Jesus" is used in Scripture, they will have to read them in the following manner;

1 Cor. 1:6-7- Even as Ellen White and her Writings (Testimony of Jesus) was confirmed among you, so that you come behind in no gift....

Rev. 1:2- who bore witness to the word of God and to Ellen White and her Writings (Testimony of Jesus Christ), and to all things that he saw.

²² Thayer, *Thayer's Greek-English Lexicon of the New Testament 8th Edition*, "μαρτυρία" 391.

²³ Philip Schaff and David Schley Schaff, vol. 1, *History of the Christian Church* (New York: Charles Scribner's Sons, 1910), 386.

Rev. 2:9- I John... was on the island that is called Patmos for the word of God and for Ellen White and her Writings (the Testimony of Jesus Christ)

Rev. 12:17- And the dragon was enraged with the woman and went to make war with the rest of her offspring, who keep the commandments of God and have Ellen White and her Writings (Testimony of Jesus)

Rev. 19:10- (An angel speaking to John) I am your fellow servant, and of your brethren who have Ellen White and her Writings (Testimony of Jesus). For Ellen White and her Writings (Testimony of Jesus) is the spirit of prophecy.

Rev. 20:4- And I saw thrones, and they sat on them, and judgment was given to them, and the souls of those who had been beheaded on account of Ellen White and her writings (the testimony of Jesus), and on account of the word of God, and those who had not worshiped the beast or his image, and they did not receive the mark on their forehead or on their hand. And they came to life and reigned with Christ for the thousand years.

I hope that there is still left within the Seventh-day Adventist Church some sense of scholarly honesty and humility to accept what the Bible teaches, rather than to allow itself to commit reductio ad absurdum (reduced to insanity), and to commit such Biblical blasphemy by injecting Ellen White and her writings everywhere that they see "testimony of Jesus" is mentioned in Scripture. Yet, this seems to be exactly what it is doing!

Conclusion

The Remnant Church of God is not the Seventh-day Adventist Church. It has never been, nor will it ever be. Rather than being a single denomination within Christendom, the Remnant Church is Christendom, the Body of Christ. Evidence within the Apocalypse and the New Testament, as a whole, demonstrates that God's Remnant Church are believers from the First Century AD straight into the Second Advent of Christ. And this truth, rather than being a tool to create sectarian exclusivity, dogmatism, and arrogance, it creates a sense of humility, brotherhood, respect, mutual cooperation among the various denominations, and Christian inclusivity as we, the Remnant, the Body of Christ, anticipate His imminent return.

CHAPTER NINE

UNPARALLELED HYPOCRISY AND ITS FRUITS

Kerry Wynne

UNPARALLELED HYPOCRISY AND ITS FRUITS

Church Corruption During The 1970's

Prior to 1970 there were no large-scale financial scandals in the Seventh-day Adventist Church. Prior to 1970 only a select few leaders at the top seemed to have known that Ellen White was a fraud. Everything changed in the 1970's. In the 1970's one unsavory revelation after another surfaced. More leaders became aware of the problems. In order to keep their jobs they had to teach others what they themselves knew was untrue. Searing their consciences to the Ellen White problem seems to have opened the door to other kinds of dishonesty. Since the 1970's Adventism has been plagued with one serious scandal after another to this very day. There is a major unresolved scandal at the time of this writing of which most Seventh-day Adventists know nothing. **Douglas Hackleman** of *Members for Church Accountability* says in his salient book on the phenomenon of Adventist Church corruption, *Who Watches, Who Cares?—Misadventures in Stewardship*:

Since the late 1970's, the Seventh-day Adventist denomination has been buffeted by a concatenation of corporate church financial scandals that have resulted in the unnecessary loss of hundreds of millions of dollars. Ours are lesser losses, in absolute terms, than those of the United Nations food-for-oil fraud, or than the betrayals of stockholders by Enron, WorldCom or Arthur Anderson. But the church losses may be considered more serious because they continue in waves, one after another, and because we believe each instance not only betrays the institution and the members that comprise it but the Higher Source whose selected stewards we claim to be.

(1970-1971) THE ABORTION SCANDAL

1970-1971 witnessed to one of the most corrupt, if not the most corrupt turnaround by the leadership of the SDA. The SDA Castle Memorial Hospital in Kailua, Hawaii, was being faced with pressure from those in the state to provide abortion services, seeing as they claimed to be a "full service" hospital. Hawaii had recently repealed its anti-abortion laws. Some of the SDA hospitals had already compromised by offering "therapeutic abortions" where the guidelines were poorly defined. By taking an ambivalent stance, the leadership of the SDA turned a blind eye to this business within its hospitals. The most vocal critics have been those within the organization, but their protests have been met with silence from the leadership of the church. Although deploring the situation, many remain members of the SDA, following their conditioning in this regard, where "lip" service seems to be perceived as sufficient regardless of the lack of any personal action or response in any active, responsible manner. This attitude is reflected in the belief system regarding even the Sabbath command. Somehow, just acknowledging the Sabbath as "required" frees them from following through with complying with what is actually *required*.

Most godly people would be, and should be appalled and horrified by this practice given tacit approval by a church that calls itself "Christian". When you consider this is a church that places the Ten Commandments at the apex of importance to them, it becomes even more unbelievable that they would, in turn, justify the taking of the most innocent of lives without the due process demanded by that law they claim to be moral and a reflection of the very Character and Nature of God.

For further information, see the following links:

Abortion: history of Adventist guidelines — [George B. Gainer](#)

<https://www.ministrymagazine.org/archive/1991/08/abortion-history-of-adventist-guidelines>

The Hands of Jesus – Elective Abortions in Adventist Hospitals (Sermon Transcript) - Pastor Tony Brandon - Baker City Seventh-day Adventist Church

<http://religiousliberty.tv/unsurpassable-worth-tony-brandons-sermon-abortion-adventist-hospitals-transcribed.html>

Investigation into our Adventist involvement with the Abortion Industry, by Nic Samojluk

<https://adventlife.wordpress.com/2012/03/21/investigation-into-our-adventist-involvement-with-the-abortion-industry-by-nic-samojluk/>

(1979-1980) THE DAVENPORT SCANDAL COMPLETE WITH

“HUSH MONEY” PAYMENTS BY THE CHURCH!

With the Davenport Scandal, we see Adventist leaders *en masse* participating in fraudulent business practices. By fate or Providence we find one fearless man, Walter Rea, placed in a unique position to be forced, by his conscience, to expose not only the lying claims of Ellen White, but a financial scandal that ran broad and deep. Even a writer of soap opera scripts would have a difficult time coming up with something more captivating than the Walter Rea's exposé of the Davenport Scandal.

While doing some research on Ellen White, Dr. Walter Rea noticed strong similarities between extensive sections of Ellen White's books with the writings of the authors of books that she kept in her personal library. In short, he discovered massive plagiarism of the writings of those authors. This problem was particularly of concern because she had claimed that God had shown her these things in vision. He approached SDA leaders with his findings, but his discoveries were not welcome. After being double-crossed by the Church he was defrocked and fired. Subsequently he published the *New York Times* best-seller, ***The White Lie***, in 1982.

At the same time Dr. Rea was a member of several Church finance committees. His work on these committees gave him the ability to monitor the ever-increasing misuse of Church tithe funds in the shaky and illegal investment schemes of Dr. Donald Davenport, a Seventh-day Adventist physician and real estate developer. Dr. Davenport promised Adventist denominational entities and church leaders, the latter who were treated as private investors, a much higher than average return on their official church and individual investments. In fact, he usually paid individual investors, many of whom were high-ranking Church officials, a higher rate of interest than he paid the church entities who invested with him.

Soon something happened that would later add greatly to the Church's damage control challenges. Dr. Davenport and his wife divorced. His wife was a member of the Adventist church Dr. Rea was pastoring at the time, and she came to him with their divorce decree in hand, asking for advice. Immediately Dr. Rea noted that Dr. Davenport's disclosure of their financial assets and liabilities was far shy of what he knew about the extent of the Church's investments with him. He knew this as a result of the inside knowledge he had of the Church's ties with Davenport. To make a long story short, the Church fired Dr. Rea and took away his retirement benefits for his exposé of Ellen White. Dr. Rea was able to get those retirement benefits restored by agreeing not to publish his book about the Davenport Scandal, ***Pirates of Privilege***, which Rea would otherwise have published in 1984.

As of the time of the writing of this chapter for *Lying For God* (Fall 2009), Dr. Rea was 87 years old and was enjoying every penny of the “hush money” the Church has been paying him not to expose the extent of their financial iniquities over the last few decades. Wonder of wonders! Adventist leaders are guilty of bribery, and showing themselves willing to do almost anything to cover up the TRUTH about their lies and wrong-doings! The statute of limitations of the California court case that prohibited Dr. Rea from publishing this book has expired, and ***Pirates of Privilege*** is available now at a few places on the Internet and from Dr. Desmond Ford's Australian website, ***Good News for Adventists***. Recently Amazing Lies Publications reformatted this book for electronic publication. It is posted by us on SCRIBD.com with Dr. Rea's permission.

(1985) HARRIS PINE MILLS

For years the Church owned Harris Pine Mills, a large furniture manufacturing operation that had been donated to the Church by Harris himself in 1951. By 1984 its annual income had reached nearly \$60 million and it employed 2,282 Adventist students. There was a financial set-back in 1985, and Douglas Hackleman gives us the details:

[In 1985 financial and management difficulties panicked the chairman of the board, Neal C. Wilson, who was also president of the GC Corporation. As chairman of the board, Neal Wilson forced Harris into Chapter 7 bankruptcy, even though its assets outweighed its debits by roughly \\$15 million. After changing the liquidation filing to a more flexible Chapter 11 reorganization status, bankruptcy trustee John Mitchell told the February 6, 1987, *East Oregonian*, “It’s the best situation I’ve ever seen for restructuring. Harris Pine basically is back in operation. . . . We should be able to restructure and be profitable by the end of June.”](#)

[Wilson has never explained why, when the bankruptcy trustee made clear that the business was recoverable, he was unwilling to be reunited with the business that, weeks earlier, he had described to](#)

Adventist Review readers as “this marvelous asset.”

Eventually most of Harris’ timber holdings became the property of the Louisiana-Pacific Corporation. Harris’ primary lumberyard and sawmill in Pendleton, Oregon, is now the site of a Wal-Mart store. The loss to the denomination is incalculable.

See http://www.advmca.org/html/rmc_conf_review.html

Members for Church Accountability

PO Box 1072, Morrison, CO 80465

advoca@aol.com

1990 – DAVID DENNIS NARROWLY ESCAPES GC OUSTING FOR GOOD ACCOUNTING

David Dennis, General Conference auditor, with a reputation for tight accounting practices and the courage to confront GC leaders with account discrepancies, was nearly railroaded out of office by a host of GC leaders who were smarting at his attempts to restrain their questionable business practices. **Elder Russell R. Standish** and 15 other retired General Conference leaders successfully protested and blocked, by only one vote, a scandalous attempt to oust him. These individuals were verbally abused at a union conference meeting by then union president Elder Robert H. Carter and two other union conference presidents. (Standish, *The Twenty-eight Fundamentals: apostasy proclaimed in silence*, p. 121. excerpts posted at Google Books.)

1992 - LAKE REGION CONFERENCE SCANDAL #1

The Lake Region Conference’s first scandal is reported in the independent SDA-related journal, *The Remnant Herald*, No.2, December 1992, p. 10 as quoted in the Russell R. Standish book, *The Twenty-eight Fundamentals: apostasy proclaimed in silence*:

The Indianapolis Star of August 3, 1992, reported the Lake Region Conference which used unauthorized church funds to build a shopping mall in Chicago and also mortgaged the Shiloh Church in Chicago without the knowledge or consent of the members, in order to generate capital, has been sued by two banks because of loan defaults. Already the Cole Taylor Bank of Chicago has won its case for \$2,260,000 and the Lloyd’s Bank of London is suing for 43,521,475 plus \$34,931 in interest. The case is pending. Since the Lake Region Conference “has 22 cents in assets for every dollar of liability,” the court in the first case has ruled that the Seventh-day Adventist church organization must pay the shortfall in the Conference’s ability to repay the debt. It is likely that the situation is worse. On November 11, Colin and I spoke about this matter to one General Conference official and he informed us that other banks were also suing and that the total cost to our church could be twelve million dollars. Thus dishonest activities by a Conference President [Elder L. R. Palar] have led to loss of large sums for the work of God’s church. The offending Conference President is still a denominational employee with current ministerial credentials.

1994 - FAMILY ENRICHMENT RESOURCES

In 1994 the Church devised a scheme to consolidate and improve its profits from selling religious books and videos. The project was financed largely with tithe funds. This disastrous program lost 1.6 million dollars within a two year period. The consolidated organization was called Family Enrichment Resources. The story is well-worth reading and was reported by Richard Sheldon of *Members for Church Accountability*. The bungling use of church funds, including excess tithe monies, is particularly striking in this case.

Again, see: www.advmca.org/html/rmc_conf_review.html

1998 – PRESIDENT FOLKENBERG, THE SQUELCHING OF THE LUNAR SABBATH, AND HIS OUSTING

Recall that it was during the term of General Conference presidency of Robert S. Folkenberg, that a committee he tolerated to be set up to evaluate the arguments for and against the lunar Sabbath concept was disbanded after three of the committee members decided that the evidence for it was beyond dispute and urged Church leadership to following suit with appropriate changes to the Church's practice. There were other members of the lunar Sabbath committee that voiced support for it as well, but according to the testimony of some of the other members of the disbanded committee, three of the delegates who were in favor of the lunar Sabbath were theologians from the Church's seminary at Andrews University. All the records of that committee vanished without a trace.

In the early 1990's the Church elected an individual with a track record of questionable financial activities to the exalted position of President of the General Conference. Not long after taking office, Robert S. Folkenberg maneuvered his younger brother, Robert, into a contractual position with ADRA, the **Adventist Development and Relief Agency**, and later, to the position of Associate Treasurer of the General Conference in charge of dispensing Global Mission funds to Eastern Europe. This brazen nepotism on the part of President Folkenberg should have raised red flags everywhere because his brother, Robert Folkenberg, had embroiled the Columbia Union Conference in the Davenport Scandal (See historical time-line for late 70's and early 80's.), causing that conference to lose huge sums of money back in the 1970's. With the connection of Robert with ADRA, the agency became even further plagued with financial irregularities. In 1998 President Robert S. Folkenberg was forced out of office because of his questionable business dealings with a Sacramento businessman by the name of James Monroe. Not surprisingly, Brother Donald resigned at the same time!

Monroe, who was convicted of eight counts of fraud in 1987 and incarcerated from 1989 until January 1, 1992, claimed he had given Folkenberg \$8,000,000 in trust and that his money was missing. Monroe threatened to sue President Folkenberg and, by extension, the Seventh-day Adventist Church, if he did not get his money back. It appears that he did get all or most of his money back, but that the money came from the Church in the form of a Church insurance policy, rather from President Folkenberg himself. The story of how the Church came to lose an undetermined amount of money to settle with Monroe is almost stranger than fiction.

According to Standish, it appears that Folkenberg had somehow used a General Conference insurance policy to settle the \$8,000,000 loss, but Folkenberg and his attorney, a Mr. Prochnower, did not go through Adventist Risk Management Services through the normal channels to obtain the policy or to achieve the settlement with James Monroe. Standish concludes the story on page 142:

When a GC representative called the insurance company to inquire about the money paid to Folkenberg, the claims representative refused to speak to him. The representative said that the GC would have to speak to Folkenberg's attorney because Prochnower had told the insurance company that the settlement was confidential and ordered the company's employees not to speak about it to General Conference representatives.

The GC representative replied, "What do you mean, you can't speak to me? We pay the premiums on these policies!"

To which the claims representative replied that the GC would have to speak to Folkenberg's attorney.

The GC representative called Prochnower who refused to speak about the settlement, claiming attorney-client privilege.

"We've opposed a settlement since we first became aware of this case," the GC representative stated to Prochnower, but he refused to discuss the matter.

"We may never know exactly what happened or how much money was spent," stated the GC source who was admittedly "very angry" about the situation. (Article entitled "Folkenberg Uses Insurance Money Secretly" – parenthesis in the original).

As far as we have discovered, The General Conference does not yet know the amount which the Insurance Company had paid to settle the law suit claims of Mr. Moore against Elder Folkenberg.

1998 - ADRA SCANDAL COMES TO LIGHT

In 1994 David Dennis' lawsuit against the Church for his wrongful dismissal as General Conference auditor alleged that the **Adventist Development and Relief Agency** was guilty of serious financial and ethical misconduct. The court records show that Dennis charged that Adventist leaders had tolerated the misuse of millions of dollars in charitable donations and overseas government relief by ADRA. Our source is a report from the ultra-conservative Adventist "reform" organization, Pilgrim's Rest, HCR 77, Box 38A, Beersheba Springs, TN 37305 USA. (This organization's point-of-view is that the cause of the Church's abysmal corruption is its failure to follow the writings of Ellen G. White and does not share the views of your authors.) The reporter summarizes and comments on August 14th, 1998 *Los Angeles Times* article about ADRA which carries this title and sub-title, **"A HISTORY OF COMPLAINTS DOGS ADVENTIST AID AGENCY: Questionable spending, poor oversight alleged. Group, which gets U.S. funds, says controls are tighter now."**

Here are some selected things uncovered by the *Los Angeles Times* reporter, summarized by Pilgrim's Rest, and further condensed by us to focus on the most important facts:

Tennis courts at a Seventh-day Adventist-owned and operated compound were built with funds provided by a Rwandan government agency. These "government" funds represented money from a kick-back by corrupt government agents in the area who had been funneled a large shipment of food and supplies by ADRA which was intended for the poor people of the country, but which ended up being retained by these local better-off Rwandans for their own personal use. A second tennis court was built near-by with "government" funds because the first court had been built at an angle that forced the SDA churchmen who played on it to have to look into the sun. This crime was settled with the Government of Rwanda by a promise from ADRA that it would not engage in corrupt activity in the future. The auditor who dealt with this situation, Wayne Vail, expressed disgust that with all the poverty in the country, funds intended to minister to the poor had been diverted for such a shameful purpose.

In Haiti during the summer of 1997, auditor Vail investigated a complaint from government officials who were questioning the misuse of ADRA funds. One example was that ADRA employees repeatedly visited Miami at government expense to purchase supplies that were available on the Island.

During a two year period, ADRA received \$85,000,000 in federal cash from the U.S. government and tens of millions of dollars from other nations and private donors. Out of 400 such organizations that received government funding, ADRA had the third highest overhead.

Records from The Agency for International Development, the U.S. Government agency that funnels money to ADRA and other world relief organizations, show "a vexing pattern of warnings, upbraidings, and occasional funding suspensions of ADRA during the last decade."

In just one year's auditing period, 1995, AID auditors found \$2,800,000 in improper ADRA billings and suspected that ADRA "had charged the government twice for the same items, amounting to hundreds of thousands of dollars in possible double-billings."

In 1997, AID auditors reported that ADRA's overhead rate was the second highest of the 10 biggest recipients of government money. Overhead expenses reflect salaries, travel and other administrative expenses subsidized by the government. Its 11.1% over-head rate was just behind that of Pathfinder International, a family planning, abortion group, and well above the average 7.4% of this group of the 10 largest recipients of government money.

Over a two year period, \$85,000,000 was received by ADRA, and at an 11.1% rate of over-head, that would mean a non-profit "profit" of \$9,435,000.

Confirming the allegations of David Dennis in his suit against the General Conference for his illegal dismissal from his position of auditor, the *Los Angeles Times* said, "Federal records show that in some cases, documentation to substantiate the expenditure of millions of U.S. dollars was found to be 'inadequate or nonexistent.'"

In the last four years (previous to the date of the article), government auditors "have questioned nearly \$5,000,000 in ADRA billings for public relations, fund-raising and rent."

The writer of this Pilgrim's Rest article adds that the General Conference is not permitted to audit any monies handled by ADRA, yet "in a given year, more money passes through the hands of ADRA than through all the rest of the Seventh-day Adventist Church."

For the complete story, use this link: <http://www.sdadefend.com/MINDEX-K-L/LA-times.pdf>

2001 – SDA CHURCH SETTLES OUT-OF-COURT WITH DAVID DENNIS

October 30, 2001, **David Dennis** withdrew his lawsuit against the General Conference for his unjust dismissal as General Conference auditor. By this time the Church had spent an estimated five to seven million dollars to settle with Dennis out-of-court. These legal fees came from tithe funds because tithe money is what funds the operations of the General Conference in the first place. By the time the Church reached this out-of-court settlement with Dennis, his charges of wrong-doing had been proven to be right on target—especially his warnings about Folkenberg's financial activities and the squandering of government and private donor funds by ADRA.

About the time all of this trouble between Dennis and the General Conference erupted, a woman came forward alleging that she and Dennis had sex when she was a house-keeper for his family while the Dennises were serving the Church in Singapore during the 1970's. His accuser had an extensive history of major psychological problems. Dennis denied these charges, confronted his General Conference accusers with the absurdities of their charges, and pointed out numerous cases where the General Conference had tolerated adultery at the highest levels and had even paid the legal bills of these adulterers in order to help them retain their employment with the General Conference.

It is ironic that the Church goes out of its way to protect adulterous leaders and ministers. In our next entry you will see that the Church has even hired an outside consulting firm to help "retain" its adulterous pastors in the service of the Church. An Adventist leader can lose his job and retirement benefits for questioning unsupportable Bible doctrines and the false claims of the Church's blasphemous prophetess, or for trying to stop the financial crimes of other leaders, but he can commit adultery and find the Church right there to reach down with a helping hand! By using such a flimsy, questionable, and unsupportable excuse to get rid of whistle blower David Dennis, the General Conference of Seventh-day Adventists has forfeited the trust and respect of every Seventh-day Adventist in the world forever, whether the Church's teachings are true or not. It is difficult to imagine how the General Conference could descend any deeper into the abyss of iniquity. There seems no limit to what Adventist leaders will do to continue on their pathway of hypocrisy, evil-doing, and lying in the name of God.

By taking shelter under the special protections afforded to religious organizations under the First Amendment and by spending these huge amounts of money in legal fees to keep Dennis' suit out of court, the Church maneuvered him into a position where he was forced to give up his legal battle against the General Conference and to settle out of court. (The First Amendment is interpreted to give religious organizations special protections against law suits which seem to be religiously motivated.) Additionally the Church declined to testify against itself, which appears to represent a disgusting appeal (for a church) to the provisions of the 5th Amendment.

David Dennis published a book in September 2009 which tells the story from beginning to end. You can order his book, ***Fatal Accounts— the Audacity of an Adventist Auditor's Quest for Transparency***. You can order this book from the liberal, barely tolerated, SDA-related journal, *Adventist Today*.

2004 – CHURCH HIRES OUTSIDE FIRM TO DEAL WITH CLERGY IMMORALITY

By 2004, so many Adventist pastors were involved in adultery that the Church had to hire an outside consulting firm to salvage these ministers so they could continue in their denominational employment. According to the late ultra conservative SDA researcher, **Russell Standish**, one union president boasted to his brother, **Colin Standish**, he had "saved" at least 17 ministers from being dismissed from the Adventist ministry. Standish tells the story of how a certain Adventist pastor known throughout the Adventist world for his books and speaking engagements was retained in the ministry, despite nearly watertight evidence that he had committed adultery. The accused adulterer's secretary, Judy Wright, was convinced of his guilt

and wrote a letter to Elder Thomas Mostert, President of the Pacific Union Conference, and to Elder Steven Gifford, President of the Southeastern California Conference, regarding what her disgraced boss told her one day. She wrote:

[The Union President] stopped by my office and offered his help. He said he had counseled a number of other ministers through similar crises and that every one of them is still in the ministry. He [the accused pastor] said [the Union President] advised me to deny everything. In fact, it sounded like he thought I should deny everything, whether I was guilty or not. (Letter dated April 16, 1989. *The bracketed words were inserted by Standish to facilitate clarity. See Standish, p. 137.*)

2005 – LAKE REGION CONFERENCE SCANDAL #2

The Lake Region Conference is the focus of a Federal probe, accused of financial irregularities and immigration violations (*South Bend Tribune*, 25th July, 2005, cited in Russell R. Standish, ***The twenty-eight Fundamentals: apostasy proclaimed in silence***, p. 117.):

The Lake Region Conference of the Seventh-day Adventist Church is under federal investigation in connection with misuse of funds and illegal immigration activities, which could threaten the organization's non-profit status.

The revelations shocked many of the estimated 730 delegates who attended a special meeting Sunday.

The following people were put on paid administrative leave in the wake of auditing and illegal immigration practices in the Lake Region Conference of the Seventh-day Adventist Church, based in Chicago:

Hugo Gambetta, vice president for multicultural ministries. He was stripped of his ministerial credentials and license on Friday. He has been on paid administrative leave since July 11.

Treasurer Leroy B. Hampton resigned last week after his July 11 suspension.

Four pastors, all ministers in Chicago churches, are on paid leave: Ciro Aviles, Osmin Hernandez, William Rojas, and Alfredo Solis.

“There's been a lot of instances of lying and a case of personal enrichment,” Walter Wright, president of the Lake Union Conference, told delegates (*South Bend Tribune*, 25 July, 2005).”

JULY 1996 – EMBEZZLEMENT OF FUNDS BY AN AUSTRALIAN CONFERENCE TREASURER

Rob van Buuren of the South Australian Conference confesses to “borrowing” huge sums of money. The Adelaide *Advertiser* reported this in its story:

A former senior official with an Adelaide fundamentalist church is being investigated over allegedly defrauding the church of almost \$500,000.

Money is believed to have been siphoned from the Seventh-Day Adventist Church [sic] over a six year period.

The funds had been given to the official by Adelaide members in the form of trust funds and deceased estates.

He allegedly used the money to support a failing family cleaning business.

The Seventh-day Adventist Church [sic] president, Pastor Neil Watts, said yesterday the official had “succumbed to the temptation to borrow some money.” “The whole thing is very said,” he said.

Pastor Watts said the official “confessed” his actions to the church and planned to repay some funds, although it is not expected he will be able to reimburse the full amount. (The Adelaide *Advertiser*, 28th August, 1996, p. 1).

Standish reports that later the same newspaper ran a follow-up story on this event with a headline that read, 'SEVEN YEARS OF SIN—CHURCH TREASURER JAILED FOR STEALING \$906,000.' The writer of this story tersely observed, "Even Robert Adriaan Van Buuren must have sensed the irony as he ordered the personalized number plate ROB for his gleaming new Holden Statesman in 1991."

BEYOND 2005

Call it business as usual for the Seventh-day Adventist Church. ADRA continues to operate out of control. The General Conference president who took over after the ousting of Folkenberg, Jan Paulsen, refused to investigate, discipline, and prosecute those who were guilty of criminal activity at the GC and ADRA. If Ellen White was correct, whether she was inspired or not, those who do not rise up to stop sin in the camp are just as guilty as those who perpetrate the sin. Paulsen said he "prayed" about it and decided that prosecution of the guilty would not accomplish any real good for the Church.

Meanwhile, ADRA continues to solicit SDA believers with their mailing campaigns that show pictures of impoverished children in foreign lands which play on the sympathies of the reader, successfully inducing many sincere Church members to part with their hard-earned cash. Wynne points out that his elderly mother still receives requests for money from ADRA. ADRA's money is "blood money," since Adventists and other supporters would not give if they knew the truth about the organizations scandalous operations.

EPILOGUE

The Church, confronted with absolute proof that Ellen White was a fraud, repeatedly throughout the history of Adventism, continued to display her as the inspired mouthpiece of God. Additionally confronted with the impossibilities of the Sabbath and Investigative Judgment doctrines, it forged ahead telling the same old lies it has told now for almost 140 years. This hypocrisy has obviously stultified the consciences of Adventist leaders and clergy to the point where they behave as if there is no Heaven to win or Hell to shun, much less believe in the Sabbath, Ellen White, and the Investigative Judgment.

By now the Adventist Church has become a mammoth business operation that is, to many, a culture of business, rather than a vehicle to preserve and foster the Christian Faith. Many Pastors and Church leaders do not believe what they are teaching others, and this hypocrisy opens the door to sin. When it comes to money, the Church has everything to lose and nothing to gain by coming to grips with the fact that, to the point of over-kill, Adventism has been proven to be absolutely FALSE. As we have seen, there appears to be a direct correlation between what Adventist leaders learned in the 1970's about the impossibilities of Adventism with the development of the unstoppable corruption that has plagued the Church ever since.

Adventist teachers, pastors, college professors, and leaders at all levels are nearly powerless to stand up and call the three pillars of Adventism by their right name—LIES— because they will lose their jobs. Unless reform happens all at once, from the top down, and with as many people as possible on the same page, Adventism may someday implode.

Conservative Adventists like the late Russell Standish and his (living) brother, Colin, and Vance Ferrell of Pilgrim's Rest, are right, up to a point, that Adventism has become corrupt by its failure to follow the counsels of Ellen White. While there are probably several reasons why Adventist leaders do not wish to follow the EGW "Blueprint" for the Church, one contributing factor is certainly that they know that the source of the testimonies they ignore was either her vivid imagination, an out-right lie, or a word from below. A truly perceptive Adventist leader understands that her blasphemy-approaching doctrines and ability to lie straight-faced through her teeth in the name of God came from her spirit guide — the "angel" from Hell who accompanied her for over 26 years.

No other church in the history of the Faith has been so characterized by widespread pathological lying and the perverseness of its leaders, clergy, and educators who continue, day after day, to teach others what they themselves know is absolutely not true. The Holy Spirit works on the hearts of everyone who comes into the world. Like Mormons, Adventists generally have no clue of what the Adventist Church really teaches. Some of the leaders may actually believe these things, but woe be to those who know the truth about the Adventist "truth" and continue to teach it! It would be better that a millstone were wrapped around their neck and they were tossed into the deepest spot in the Ocean.